











The Cambridge Edition of the Poets

---

SPENSER

EDITED BY

R. E. NEIL DODGE

## The Cambridge Poets

*edited by*

BROWNING	Horace E. Scudder
ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING	Harriet Waters Preston
BURNS	W. E. Henley
BYRON	Paul E. More
CHAUCER	F. N. Robinson
DRYDEN	George R. Noyes
ENGLISH AND SCOTTISH POPULAR BALLADS	Helen Child Sargent, George L. Kittredge
HOLMES	Horace E. Scudder
KEATS	Horace E. Scudder
LONGFELLOW	Horace E. Scudder
AMY LOWELL	—————
JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL	Horace E. Scudder
MILTON	Harris Francis Fletcher
POPE	Henry W. Boynton
SCOTT	Horace E. Scudder
SHAKESPEARE	William Allan Neilson
SHELLEY	George E. Woodberry
SPENSER	R. E. Neil Dodge
TENNYSON	William J. Rolfe
THOREAU	Henry Seidel Canby
WHITTIER	Horace E. Scudder
WORDSWORTH	A. J. George



*The*  
*Complete Poetical Works*  
*of*  
SPENSER



Buckingham Palace

HOUGHTON MIFFLIN COMPANY BOSTON

*Cambridge Edition*

The Riverside Press Cambridge

COPYRIGHT, 1908, BY HOUGHTON, MIFFLIN AND COMPANY

COPYRIGHT, 1936, BY R. E. NEIL DODGE

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

TWELFTH PRINTING R

**The Riverside Press**

CAMBRIDGE · MASSACHUSETTS

PRINTED IN THE U.S.A.

## PREFACE

THE text of Spenser given in this volume is the result of a double collation. First, the copy to be sent to the printer was collated throughout with the original editions in the British Museum; then the proof-sheets of the greater part, as they came from the press, were collated with other copies of the same editions obtained in this country. The *Faery Queen* (except for a few pages), *Complaints*, *Colin Clout's Come Home Again*, *Astrophel*, and the *Four Hymns* were thus collated a second time, and, in effect, the *Shepherd's Calendar*, too, though, for that, recourse was had not to the original itself, but to the photographic facsimile of Dr. Sommer. *Daphnaïda*, the *Amoretti* and *Epithalamion*, the *Prothalamion*, the four *Commendatory Sonnets*, and the matter in the Appendix could not be collated twice, because copies of the original editions were not in this country accessible.

For most of these separate volumes or single pieces there could be no dispute about the text to be adopted as standard, for they were published but once during the poet's lifetime, and the collected folios of 1609 and 1611, issued ten years after his death, could pretend to no superior authoritativeness. For them the standard text was manifestly that of the first edition. Three, however, were published during his lifetime more than once: the *Shepherd's Calendar* in 1579, 1581, 1586, 1591, and 1597; *Daphnaïda* in 1591 and 1596; the first three books of the *Faery Queen* in 1590 and 1596. Concerning these there might be doubt. As to the *Shepherd's Calendar*, whoever will study the long list of variants of all kinds in the successive editions of that volume will probably note (1) that the first edition contains several perfectly obvious misprints or blunders corrected in the later; (2) that of those changes in the later editions which are not the mere correction of obvious blunders in the first, a considerable proportion are changes which mar the style; (3) that most others are changes which are neither for the better nor for the worse, which are mere changes; (4) that not more than one or two could fairly be called improvements. A poet, for instance, who has written

‘Up, then, Melpomene ! thou mournefulst Muse of nyne !’

does not deliberately change *thou* to *the* ; and if a poet has written of Abel

‘So lowted he unto his Lord,  
Such favour couth he fynd,  
That sithens never was abhord  
The simple shepheards kynd,’

he does not take the trouble to change *sithens never* to *never sithens*. When one notes, too, that these changes are mostly such as might result from careless reading of copy, and that those which cannot be misreadings merely reduce archaic irregularities to the level of academic evenness, one inclines to attribute them to the printer. When one notes, finally, that the first edition contains fewer obvious blunders and misprints than the later, these later will hardly seem more trustworthy. The same is true of *Daphnaïda*: the two or three changes found in the second edition by no means bear the mark of authenticity. If, indeed, we had any fair reason to suppose that Spenser, like Ronsard and Tasso, was given to the revision of his work, that after he had once completed a poem and seen it in print, he would study it anew with an eye to perfecting it in detail, we might give more credit to the variants of these later editions. Such revision as we know him to have

undertaken, however, was confined to bringing unpublished manuscript, as the phrase goes, 'up to date,' for printing. We have no reason to suppose that, if the printed poem were reissued, he at all concerned himself with revision of its text. For the *Shepherd's Calendar* and *Daphnaïda*, therefore, the text adopted is in each case that of the first edition.

For the first three books of the *Faery Queen* the problem is somewhat different. Since these were not an independent poem, but merely the first installment of his *magnum opus*, Spenser found occasion, when he republished them in 1596 along with the first issue of the second three books, to make certain changes. He altered the original conclusion of Book III, that it might lead up more directly to Book IV. Certain inconsistencies of detail having perhaps been pointed out to him, he got rid of them with as little effort as might suffice — somewhat clumsily. He rewrote a line or two which did not please him. In one place he inserted a new stanza. These changes, not more than a dozen or so in all, are unmistakably his work. Unfortunately, there are many others in this second edition which resemble only too closely the variants in later editions of the *Shepherd's Calendar*. They bear every mark, that is, of being mere blunders of the printer due to hasty reading of copy: they do not spoil the sense, but they are too trivial and purposeless to be ascribed to the poet himself; sometimes they spoil the poetry. Under these circumstances the problem of the editor was not simple. He could not follow the first edition and ignore the authentic changes of the poet; nor did he wish to follow the second into all the changes that were mere printer's blunders; nor, of course, was there any certain test by which the changes of the poet might be distinguished from those of the printer. In the end, it seemed best to adopt the readings of the second edition as generally authoritative, but occasionally to retain those of the first when they were beyond fair question more characteristic, when, that is, one could not believe that Spenser would deliberately change from the earlier to the later.

It is not only in verbal readings, however, that the two editions differ; they differ also in spelling. The spelling of 1590 is somewhat like that of the *Shepherd's Calendar*, markedly archaic; that of 1596 is like that of the second three books of the poem, published at the same time, very much more modern. The difference extends to the forms of words: *hether* usually becomes *hither*; *lenger*, *longer*; *then*, *than*, etc. Now, it may be that the poet, having adopted for his second three books more modern spelling, and, in some cases, more modern forms of words, authorized his printer to reprint the first books in that style. Nobody who knows his work will for one minute suppose that he went through the first books himself and made all the changes necessary, together with hundreds of others absolutely unnecessary — for a good quarter of the differences in spelling are altogether without significance. In any case, the first edition of these books is printed much more correctly than the second; it represents a definite stage in Spenser's spelling and use of archaic word-forms; and there appears to be no compelling reason why, when an editor adopts the changes in phrasing, not more than two or three to the canto, which appear in the later edition, he should also adopt extensive changes in spelling which are of altogether doubtful authenticity and which serve no other purpose than to give a kind of external uniformity of appearance to the first and the second three books. The spelling of 1590 has therefore been retained.

The cantos on Mutability first appeared in the folio of 1609. In general, however, that and the folio of 1611 do no more than emend for the first time (without known authority) certain readings of the earlier texts which are untenable. Some of these emendations have been adopted — for want of better. Another set, adopted or suggested at



random by various modern editors, calls for particular notice. Here and there in the *Faery Queen*, in perhaps twenty cases, the system of the stanza is shattered by an impossible rhyme, by a rhyme-word which does not even make assonance with its fellows. In some instances the blunder is beyond all correction; in most the correction lies open to every eye. *Play* is set down where the rhyme calls for *sport*; *enclose* where the rhyme calls for *contain*, *spyde* for *saw*, *place* for *stead*, etc. Some editors have treated these cases capriciously, now correcting, now leaving uncorrected; some have systematically refrained from correction, on the ground that the carelessness was probably of the poet's own commission. And so it may have been: in copying his manuscript fair he may have set down one word for another of the same meaning, or if he worked his stanza out in his mind before committing it to paper, he may have blundered in the mere writing. To maintain, however, that when he set down *play* as a rhyme to *support*, *resort*, *port*, he did not really intend to set down *sport*, is to credit him with singular obtuseness, and to print *play*, when there is at least an even chance that the blunder was the printer's, is surely to push fidelity to one's text beyond the bounds of reason. In these cases, therefore, the word demanded by rhyme and declared by sense is in this edition unhesitatingly adopted. All such emendations, and others, are noted, of course, in the List of Rejected Readings.

For the spelling, it is that of the original texts, but with three modifications: (1) the old use of capitals is made to conform to modern practice; (2) contractions are commonly expanded (e. g. *Lo.* to *Lord*); and (3) in some few cases, when the old division of words might puzzle the reader, it is disregarded — e. g. *for thy* (therefore) is uniformly printed *forthy*. The punctuation is modernized — with care not to falsify the sense.

The Glossary was built up on the principle of recording all words and phrases which in modern poetry would be obsolete or markedly archaic. Later, some of this material was transferred to the Notes. The scheme of division is that all words obsolete in form will be found in the Glossary, and such words, modern in form but obsolete in sense, as are of frequent occurrence. Rarer examples of modern words in obsolete senses will be found in the Notes, with due machinery of cross references. It is hoped that without much difficulty the 'general reader' may be able to acquaint himself with the exact meaning of any word or phrase which puzzles him. If he is annoyed by the inclusion of much that he could understand unaided, he is begged to remember that one purpose of Notes and Glossary is to furnish an approximately complete list of Spenser archaisms.

The debt of the editor of any classic to his predecessors must necessarily be great. That of the present editor was too great to be acknowledged in detail. To indicate in the Notes and elsewhere the source of every explanation or idea would have been to load them with the names of most who have labored in this field: all that could be done was to mark direct quotations. For some of the matter here offered for the first time he is furthermore indebted to various learned colleagues and friends, who helped him to what he could not find unaided; to others he owes much in the way of criticism and direct assistance. His thanks are particularly due to the Principal Librarian of the British Museum and to the Librarian of Harvard College for the use of those early editions of Spenser without which he could never have undertaken the most important part of his work.

R. E. N. D.

MADISON, WISCONSIN, March 1, 1908.



# TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE		PAGE
BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH . . . . .	xi	COLIN CLOUT'S COME HOME AGAIN . . . . .	686
THE SHEPHEARDES CALENDER.		ASTROPHEL.	
JANUARIE . . . . .	9	ASTROPHEL . . . . .	699
FEBRUARIE . . . . .	11	THE MOURNING MUSE OF THESTYLIS . . . . .	704
MARCH . . . . .	16	A PASTORALL AEGLOGUE UPON THE DEATH OF SIR PHILLIP SIDNEY, KNIGHT, &c. . . . .	708
APRILL . . . . .	18	AN ELEGIE, OR FRIENDS PASSION, FOR HIS ASTROPHILL . . . . .	710
MAYE . . . . .	23	AN EPITAPH UPON THE RIGHT HON- OURABLE SIR PHILLIP SIDNEY, KNIGHT: LORD GOVERNOR OF FLUSHING . . . . .	713
JUNE . . . . .	29	ANOTHER OF THE SAME . . . . .	714
JULYE . . . . .	32	AMORETTI AND EPITHALAMION.	
AUGUST . . . . .	36	G. W. SENIOR, TO THE AUTHOR . . . . .	717
SEPTEMBER . . . . .	39	AMORETTI . . . . .	717
OCTOBER . . . . .	44	EPITHALAMION . . . . .	735
NOVEMBER . . . . .	48	FOWRE HYMNES.	
DECEMBER . . . . .	52	AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOVE . . . . .	742
COMPLAINTS.		AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF BEAUTIE . . . . .	746
THE RUINES OF TIME . . . . .	59	AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE . . . . .	750
THE TEARES OF THE MUSES . . . . .	69	AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE . . . . .	754
VIRGILS GNAT . . . . .	79	PROTHALAMION . . . . .	759
PROSOPOPOIA: OR MOTHER HUB- BERDS TALE . . . . .	89	COMMENDATORY SONNETS . . . . .	762
RUINES OF ROME (BY BELLAY) . . . . .	108	APPENDIX . . . . .	764
MUOPOTMOS: OR THE FATE OF THE BUTTERFLIE . . . . .	115	A LIST OF REJECTED READINGS . . . . .	774
VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE . . . . .	122	NOTES . . . . .	779
THE VISIONS OF BELLAY . . . . .	125	A CATALOGUE OF PERSONS, PLACES, ANIMALS, AND THINGS . . . . .	814
THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH . . . . .	128	GLOSSARY . . . . .	823
THE FAERIE QUEENE.		INDEX OF FIRST LINES . . . . .	847
COMMENDATORY VERSES . . . . .	138	INDEX OF TITLES . . . . .	851
DEDICATORY SONNETS . . . . .	140		
BOOK I. THE LEGEND OF THE KNIGHT OF THE RED CROSSE . . . . .	144		
BOOK II. THE LEGEND OF SIR GUYON . . . . .	230		
BOOK III. THE LEGEND OF BRITO- MARTIS . . . . .	325		
BOOK IV. THE LEGEND OF CAM- BEL AND TRIAMOND . . . . .	417		
BOOK V. THE LEGEND OF ARTEGALL . . . . .	502		
BOOK VI. THE LEGEND OF SIR CALIDORE . . . . .	582		
TWO CANTOS OF MUTABILITIE . . . . .	660		
DAPHNAÏDA . . . . .	677		





## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH

WHEN we read, toward the close of *Hesperides*,

‘A wearied pilgrim, I have wandered here  
Twice five-and-twenty, bate me but one year,’

we are sure that at the time of so writing Robert Herrick was forty-nine years old. If we could put equal trust in the similar record of sonnet LX of the *Amoretti*, we should know the exact year of the birth of Edmund Spenser, for beyond reasonable doubt that sonnet dates from the closing months of 1593. The record is, that

‘since the winged god his planet cleare  
Began in me to move, one yeare is spent:  
The which doth longer unto me appeare,  
Then al those fourty which my life outwent.’

In prose: it is now a year since I fell in love; that twelvemonth seems longer to me than all the forty of my previous life. To deduct 41 from 1593 is to get 1552, which has accordingly found general acceptance as the poet’s birth-year, and indeed is not in any respect improbable. One need only note that ‘al those fourty’ is a phrase somewhat too conveniently round to inspire confidence, that it might serve equally well for thirty-nine or forty-one, and thereby spoil the foregoing calculation.

The place of his birth is recorded in the classic passage of the *Prothalamion*: —

‘At length they all to mery London came,  
To mery London, my most kyndly nurse,  
That to me gave this lifes first native sourse;  
Though from another place I take my name,  
An house of auncient fame.’

That is, though he was born, and presumably bred, in the capital, his paternal forbears were not Londoners. What was their native seat he nowhere tells us, but his most assiduous biographer, Dr. Grosart, has collected sufficient evidence to place them in eastern Lancashire, where, among many families of the name, were the Spensers of Hurstwood, lesser gentry of that region. These might well enough stand for the ‘house of auncient fame.’ It is likely, though, that this phrase includes a more distinguished family, the Spencers of Althorpe, with whom the poet frequently claims kinship. To the three daughters of that house are dedicated ‘The Tears of the Muses,’ ‘Mother Hubberd’s Tale,’ and ‘Muiopotmos,’ and they are the ‘Phyllis, Charillis, and sweet Amaryllis’ of *Colin Clout’s Come Home Again*,

‘the sisters three,  
The honor of the noble familie  
Of which I meanest boast my selfe to be,  
And most that unto them I am so nie.’

In any case, it is obvious that Spenser held himself to be of gentle birth. He never felt the need of establishing his gentility after the manner of Shakespeare.

That the name of his mother was Elizabeth<sup>1</sup> is all he tells us about either parent. We know, however, that his father most probably belonged to the guild of the Merchant

<sup>1</sup> See *Amoretti* LXXIV.

Tailors, and Dr. Grosart seeks to identify him with a John Spenser mentioned in the guild records, October, 1566, as 'a free journeyman' in the 'arte or mysterie of cloth-makynge.' Whoever he may have been, the poet's father was not well-to-do, for as late as the early months of 1569, the name of his son is entered among the 'poore schollers' in the 'scholls about London' who were presented with gowns from the estate of Robert Nowell; and in the accounts of the same fund, for the same year, is a second charitable item: '28 Aprill. To Edmond Spensore, scholler of the M'chante Tayler Schoole, at his gowinge to Penbrocke Hall in Chambridge, Xs.' At the university, too, in November, 1570, and in April, 1571, we find the poet still receiving aid from this fund.

Narrowness of means, however, did not harm the boy's education. The school of the Merchant Tailors, founded in 1560, was taught by Richard Mulcaster, and under his charge was becoming as good as any in London. Mulcaster, indeed, was in every way a remarkable teacher — a man of system, strict, even harsh, a believer in the educative powers of the rod, master, too, of wide and thorough learning. He certainly could train efficient scholars and men, and if he did not do well by Edmund Spenser, his pupil's later achievement does not declare the failure. It was while still under his training, that the youthful poet first appeared in print. The verse translations in Van der Noot's *Theatre*<sup>1</sup> cannot claim the dignity of an independent volume of juvenilia; they were quite possibly paid for at the classic rate of a penny a line; they cannot be said to bear witness to even the most ordinary knowledge of French; yet they do make evident that the boy's schooling, formal or informal, had brought him a very pretty command of his mother tongue and the faculty of turning out good verse to order.

On May 20, 1569, a short while before the *Theatre* was put on the market, Spenser matriculated at Pembroke Hall, Cambridge, as a sizar. There he remained for seven years. In January, 1573, he proceeded B. A., in June, 1576, he commenced M. A.; then, whether that a fellowship was denied him, or that he did not care for one, he left the university for good. His life there cannot have been always pleasant. As a sizar, or 'poor scholar,' his circumstances, if not painfully narrow, were at any rate far from easy. His health, too, was apparently uncertain, for at intervals we find his name on the sick list, once for seven weeks. On one occasion he seems to have been in trouble with the authorities for neglect of curriculum work or other such offence. That, in his own way, he nevertheless studied and read effectively is obvious from the varied learning which he later made manifest.

It was at Cambridge that Spenser first met Gabriel Harvey, the Hobbinal of his pastoral verse. Harvey was older than he by at least a year or two and much his senior in academic rank, for he came to Pembroke as fellow in November, 1570, when Spenser was still very far from his B. A. How early they became friends we cannot tell; it is sufficiently curious that they ever became friends at all. For Harvey was one of those exorbitantly superior people who make enemies right and left without knowing why, and, in spite of all that can be said for him, a 'ferocious pedant;' about the last man, one would think, to win the regard of Spenser. Yet he seems to have been kindly enough at bottom, and perhaps his serene self-conceit was offensive chiefly to the commonplace. As for his pedantry (which is nowadays being denied), one must bear in mind Spenser's own predilection for learning, which in those early years, before his genius had humanized his knowledge, may well have been somewhat indiscriminating. The course of their friendship was long. For a period, while Spenser was feeling his way to full self-possession, Harvey played the part of counsellor and guide, a part which found half-jesting,

<sup>1</sup> See Appendix I.

half-serious acceptance. Then, at about the time when their fundamental differences were becoming too seriously apparent, Spenser went to Ireland, and thereafter there could be no occasion for breach.

From Harvey's letters of 1573 we learn of a singular war at Pembroke. It was brought on, to his own wondering dismay, by Harvey himself, who, in the normal and unconscious exercise of his self-conceit, had contrived to exasperate some of his colleagues beyond all measure. When the time came for him to commence M. A., these men suddenly broke out, and for three months succeeded in blocking his path; then, having been discomfited, avenged themselves by shabby persecution. Nor did their enmity subside, for when, in 1578, his tenure of the fellowship expired, not even the influence of Leicester could secure its extension for a year. Such open animosities as these can hardly have failed to involve or affect Spenser. They and his supposed conflict with the authorities may serve to explain why, instead of taking a fellowship, the natural goal of such a career as his, he left the university on obtaining his second degree.

In any case, it was apparently not to a regular occupation that he retired, but to a sojourn of several months among his kinsfolk of eastern Lancashire. In that out-of-the-way and unpromising corner of the country there could of course be no settled career for a man of his gifts; there could at best be leisure for infinite verse-making, and, as auxiliary interest, leisure to fall in love. He seems to have found both. Who Rosalind was and what befell him at her hands are topics that belong rather to the history of the *Shepherd's Calendar* than to the concrete life of the poet: at all events, she furnished him matter for verses a plenty. In the end, 'for speciall occasion of private affayres,' says E. K. in the gloss to 'June,' 'and for his more preferment, removing out of the North-parts, [he] came into the South, as Hobbinoll indeede advised him privately.' Hobbinol, that is Harvey, might well think it time that his friend should begin life in earnest.

To do that it was not sufficient that he should compose poems and put them on the market. In those days the reading public was almost ludicrously small; even pamphleteering and playwriting were not yet recognized occupations, and pure poetry, however popular, would not keep a man in bread. All the poets of that day were first men of another calling, then poets. For any impecunious young bard who could claim gentility and whose tastes were aristocratic, the natural course was to attach himself to the service of some nobleman, and to use his poetry, as best he might, for the furthering of his personal claims. To barter it for money was moreover in some degree to discredit his gentility.

When, therefore, Spenser came south again, perhaps in 1577, it was to obtain preferment with the great. We have evidence, not altogether conclusive, that in that year he was with Sir Henry Sidney in Ireland, acting as one of his secretaries; in any case, by 1578 we get a glimpse of him as secretary to Bishop Young of Rochester (the Roffynn of the September eclogue), who, as Master of Pembroke, had known him from the outset of his university days. Then, in the autumn of 1579, when the first of his extant letters is sent to Cambridge, we find him 'in some use of familiarity' with 'the twoo worthy gentlemen,' Philip Sidney and Edward Dyer, admitted to audience with the Queen, and employed as confidential emissary by the Earl of Leicester. There is reference in that letter to a coming mission to France; he is on the point of setting out; and in the Epistle of E. K., prefixed to the *Shepherd's Calendar* and dated in the preceding April, he is said to be 'for long time furre estraunged,' that is, far away from home, or out of the country, and not soon to return. It is evident that he was cultivating aristocratic connections to some purpose.



He was also cultivating the Muse, and with assiduity. These years are the period of his most multifarious poetizing. They are marked not only by the publication of the *Shepherd's Calendar*, but by the beginnings of the *Faery Queen*, by the first two *Hymns*, by 'Virgil's Gnat,' 'Mother Hubbard's Tale,' and the 'Tears of the Muses' (all five not to be published till long years later), and by a notable array of 'lost works,' recorded here and there in the Harvey letters, in the commentary of E. K., and in Ponsonby's preface to *Complaints*. Many of these last, indeed, presumably belong to other periods of his life, but a number may fairly be set down to the years from 1577 to 1580. Some may possibly have survived under the disguise of other titles; one, at least, the *Pageants*, of which E. K. quotes a line,<sup>1</sup> would seem to have been used for the building up of the *Faery Queen*.<sup>2</sup> Another, *Dreams* (of which *My Slumber*<sup>3</sup> may be no more than an earlier title), is mentioned in the postscript of the second letter to Harvey as equipped with commentary and illustrations, all ready for the press. Then there are *Legends* and the *Court of Cupid*,<sup>4</sup> the latter title suggestive of a well-known episode in the *Faery Queen*,<sup>5</sup> and the *Dying Pelican*.<sup>6</sup> A *Sennight's Slumber*, *The Hell of Lovers*, and *Purgatory*, mentioned by Ponsonby,<sup>7</sup> would seem, by evident subject matter, to belong also to this early period; the others on Ponsonby's list, except the *Dying Pelican*, already noted, may be later. Harvey has not a little to say<sup>8</sup> about nine comedies named after the Muses, which he likens, somewhat ambiguously, to those of Ariosto. Finally, there are *Stemmata Dudleiana*,<sup>9</sup> which may have been utilized in 1590 for the 'Ruins of Time,' though it was probably composed in neo-classical metre; *Epithalamion Thamesis*,<sup>10</sup> also in that metre, a work projected, but probably cut off by the departure, within a brief space, for Ireland; and a treatise entitled *The English Poet*,<sup>11</sup> which, together with the nine comedies, may be regarded as the most serious loss of all. Even if we attribute most of these works to an earlier period, it is evident that, once embarked upon his career in London, Spenser plied his various faculties with keen enthusiasm.

That with so much poetry on hand he should have given so little to the press, was due apparently to discretion. In the circle to which he was now beginning to be admitted on terms of some familiarity, publication in print would probably be regarded as not quite 'the thing,' if it were made the deliberate means of earning money. A passage in the first letter to Harvey<sup>12</sup> is suggestive. The poet hesitates to publish his *Calendar* because, among other considerations, 'I was minded for a while to have intermitted the uttering [i. e. giving out] of my writings; leaste, by over-much cloying their [his patrons'] noble eares, I should gather a contempt of my self, or else seeme rather for gaine and commoditie to doe it, for some sweetnesse that I have already tasted.' The 'uttering' referred to is probably not by means of the press, but by more or less public presentation to the patron; yet if such could by too great frequency win a poor gentleman contempt, much more would the other. Except, then, for the *Calendar*, Spenser contented himself with seeing his poems circulate in manuscript among the literary coteries at court; even *Dreams*, reported as ready for the press, was apparently, in the end, withheld.

The letters to and from Harvey, which tell us so much about Spenser's literary activities, tell us also of a certain club, founded, it would appear, by Philip Sidney and Edward Dyer, and named the Areopagus. Just what it stood for is not altogether clear; perhaps

<sup>1</sup> See p. 31, l. 77.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 7, l. 263.

<sup>3</sup> See p. 57.

<sup>4</sup> See p. 772, l. 77 ff.

<sup>5</sup> Bk. II, c. iii, st. 22-31, especially st. 25, l. 1.

<sup>6</sup> Bk. VI, c. viii, st. 19 ff.

<sup>7</sup> See p. 773.

<sup>8</sup> See p. 44.

<sup>9</sup> See p. 769, l. 76.

<sup>10</sup> See p. 772, l. 99.

<sup>11</sup> See p. 772, l. 127.

<sup>12</sup> See p. 768, l. 15 ff.



its founders, inspired by the recent work of the Pléiade in France, aimed at a general reformation of English poetry, then, beyond doubt, in very debatable plight. If so, they soon became involved, to the exclusion of almost all other topics, in the problem of prosody. England had produced but one really eminent poet, Chaucer, and his metres could no longer be perfectly understood; the great bulk of contemporary verse was metrically thin or slipshod. Might it not be true, then, as Roger Ascham had maintained in his *Schoolmaster* a few years before, that English poetry could never hope to rival that of Greece and Rome till it had discarded barbarous rhyme and equipped itself with genuine quantitative measures? These young men were poets, but they had not yet found themselves in poetry. They were also good scholars. To them, therefore, the doctrine of Ascham seemed worth putting to the proof. What should determine English quantities, whether, as Archdeacon Drant maintained, the law of Rome, or, as Harvey would have it, the natural accent of words, was matter for excellent debate. In the mean time experiment in various metres went on apace, the results of which now chiefly survive in the pages of Sidney's *Arcadia*.

What may have been the membership of the Areopagus we have now small means of determining. Fulke Greville was probably of the number, and almost all accounts of the club reckon in Spenser, too, perhaps with reason. He was certainly much interested in the proceedings, avowed himself a convert to its main doctrine, composed and projected works in the new style, and discussed quantitative standards with Harvey — all as if he were considerably more than half in earnest. Yet when he refers to this foundation of Sidney and Dyer he speaks of it as 'their' club;<sup>1</sup> and though he writes that they have 'drawen mee to their faction,'<sup>2</sup> he apparently means no more than that they have converted him to their views; and the total impression left by the letters is that he was an interested outsider, admitted to a kind of indirect participation in the debates, by favor of the two leaders. They had him, he says, 'in some use of familiarity.' Perhaps, however, in the interval between the first of these epistles and his departure for Ireland, he may have been received into formal membership. It may be, too, that in the same period his relations with Sidney became more intimate, though to speak, as some biographers do, of 'friendship' (in the sense in which Fulke Greville styled himself 'the friend of Sir Philip Sidney') is surely to exaggerate. Sidney was his especial patron in letters, had possibly been the means of his finding employment with Leicester; but if there had been any substantial friendship between them, Spenser would hardly have waited till 1590 to commemorate that chivalric death which in 1586 so stirred all England.

At the time of his second letter to Harvey, Spenser might seem, to all appearances, in very prosperous trim. The *Shepherd's Calendar*, recently given out, had been accorded a veritable triumph, and had moreover brought him in enough money to make Harvey almost jealous. He was under the direct patronage of Sidney, in confidential employment by the powerful Earl of Leicester, on good terms at the court, and able, if we are to trust the gallant messages of Harvey, to live only too agreeably in private. Yet in the later passages of the letters there are signs of disquietude, if not disappointment. His project for an *Epithalamion Thamesis* in neo-classic measures, 'a worke, beleewe me, of much labour,' ends

'O Tite, siquid ego,  
Ecquid erit pretij?'

which might be taken for motto to the melancholy October eclogue of the *Calendar*; and in Harvey's reply the note is unmistakable: 'I have little joy to animate and encourage

<sup>1</sup> See p. 769, l. 61.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 769, l. 67.

. . . you . . . to goe forward, unlesse ye might make account of some certaine ordinarie wages, or at the leastwise have your meate and drinke for your dayes workes.' 'Certaine ordinarie wages' were just what Spenser lacked. His verse had brought him reputation and some money; but he could not expect to live by it, and it was apparently not helping him to preferment in active service, to a really settled career. Work as confidential emissary for Leicester might be very pleasant, but it was precarious, and unless the earl secured for him some regular office, his future would be very doubtful. When next we hear of him, accordingly, he has left England, as secretary to Arthur Lord Grey of Wilton, the Queen's new Deputy to Ireland. Thenceforth his life is one of virtual exile.

It was on August 12, 1580, that Grey, with his numerous viceregal suite, landed at Dublin. The sword of state was in the south, with his predecessor Pelham, who was ravaging Munster in hopes of starving out the great Desmond rebellion; and till Pelham's return there could be no formal investiture. But between them lay the rebel Baltinglas, newly revolted, and Grey was not the man to wait upon a ceremony, when he had the power to act. By virtue of his patent, he at once assumed control, and gathering such forces as were at hand, marched into Wicklow. There in the savage valley of Glendalough, or Glenmalure, he came upon the rebel forces. Against the advice of his oldest captains, he rashly attacked in front. His men, partly raw recruits, were disconcerted by the roughness of the ground and the fire of hidden enemies; in the end, 'through God's appointment,' they were completely routed. The loss of life was not great, but several distinguished officers fell, shot down in the action or captured and killed in cold blood. Returning to Dublin, he had barely time to be formally installed in office, when news arrived that a body of Spaniards had landed on the coast of Kerry, for the support of the Desmond rebels. Here was a danger far more serious than any temporary check by the Irish. In slow and painful marches, impeded by the autumn floods, he made his way across the island toward the southwest, to find, upon arrival, that the foreigners were blockaded by an English fleet in a little fort on the shores of Smerwick Bay, the so-called Fort del Oro. The sequel was short and stern. Two days of regular siege and bombardment reduced the garrison to extremities. They surrendered at discretion. Their leaders came out and were held for ransom; the remainder, some six hundred in all, mostly Italians (for the expedition had been set afoot by the Pope), were simply massacred. A number of non-combatants, including women, were hanged. Three special victims, a renegade Englishman, an Irishman of some note, and a Catholic friar, before hanging had their arms and legs broken.

From the account which Spenser gives of this affair in his treatise on Ireland, it has been inferred that he was present in person. Since he was not the official secretary, who might be expected to remain chiefly at the capital, but secretary by private appointment, he would be likely enough to follow his patron about. If he did, he must have seen rapid and rough service in most quarters of the island, for Grey went to and fro like a shuttle. The hanging of rebels, the pressing of men to death, the cutting off of the ears of rascally purveyors, the burning of crops in Munster, and the horrible desolation of that region, where those who had escaped the sword were barely able to drag themselves about, for famine, — sights like these must have become as familiar to the poet as the dense forest valleys, the bogs, and the innumerable streams of his new home. His picture of the famine in the south is evidently that of an eyewitness: 'Out of every corner of the woodes and gliunes they came creeping foorth upon theyr handes, for theyr legges could not beare them; they looked like anatomyes of death; they spake like ghostes crying out of theyr graves; they did eate of the dead carrions; happy were they yf they

could finde them; yea, and one another soone after, insoemuch as the very carcasses they spared not to scrape out of theyr graves; and yf they founde a plotte of water-cresses or sham-rokes, there they flocked as to a feast for the time, yet not able long to continue therewithall; that in shorte space there were none almost left, and a most populous and plentifull countrey suddaynly made voyde of man or beast.' At the capital itself he might witness conditions not altogether different, for there the streets were full of Irish 'poor souls,' so famished that once, when a horse was burned in its stable, a crowd of them set upon the half-roasted carcass and devoured it whole. Barnaby Googe, the eclogue writer, who reports this scene in August, 1582, remarks that Dublin is so changed for the worse (since 1574) that he hardly knows it.

This general misery Spenser saw only through the eyes of Grey, whose policy was that there could be no talk of building up 'before force have planed the ground for the foundation.' Years later, when he came to elaborate a scheme of his own for the reformation of the island, he could conceive of no other beginning than the absolute and final putting down of rebellion by the sword and by famine. That done, there would be opportunity to reform with some effect, upon a settled and orderly plan. What the Irish thought of Grey there can be no need to ask. Burghley and the Queen called his severity mere violence and his rule 'a gulf of consuming treasure,' — ignorant that, in their day, the gulf was not to be closed, though they sent into it Curtius after Curtius. To the poet, this 'blondy man' was one 'whom, who that well knewe, knewe him to be most gentell, affable, loving, and temperate, but that the necessitye of that present state of thinges enforced him to that violence, and almost chaunged his very naturall disposition.' The stern Puritan Deputy, who could not away with the Queen's desire to be lenient in matters of religion, he transfigured, years later, into Arthegall, the champion of Justice, the real, though not the titular, hero of the *Faery Queen*.

When Grey left Ireland in August, 1582, Spenser remained behind. His service had brought him various grants of lands and houses forfeited by rebels, and he had been appointed, in March, 1581, Registrar or Clerk of the Faculties in the Court of Chancery, a position of honor and profit. In Ireland he might now look to a career: if he returned to England, he could have no serious prospects at all. Much, therefore, as he must have regretted his exile, he found resolution to bear with it for at least some years longer. How he might fare for intellectual companionship may be guessed from the account of the gathering at Lodowick Bryskett's cottage near Dublin, (probably of this same year,) quoted at length in all the longer biographies. There we see a party of English officers and civilians, among them the poet himself, listening to a three-day discourse on moral philosophy and discussing the same with the zest of amateurs temporarily unoccupied. They are all very respectful to Spenser, who is recognized as a professional. He, one suspects, must have been thinking the while of his former intercourse with Sidney and Dyer. He was, of course, not the only man of letters at the Irish capital, but in that raw and provincial atmosphere he must often have felt himself very much alone. Luckily, he could have the new books sent over to him from London without great difficulty.

Spenser was not dependent altogether upon the proceeds of his office: grants had been made him, as aforesaid, from time to time, out of various forfeited estates of rebels, which he must have had opportunity enough to profit by. Finally, in June, 1586, his name appears among those of the English 'undertakers' who were to colonize the attainted Desmond lands in Munster. Just two years from then, in June, 1588, he resigned his Dublin clerkship, which he had originally obtained by 'purchase' from his friend Lodowick Bryskett, and obtained, again by 'purchase' from the same friend, the office of



Clerk of the Council of Munster. It is perhaps from this time that he began to reside regularly upon his new estate, at the castle of Kilcolman.

It was a 'seignory' of a little over three thousand acres. To the north stood the western end of the Ballahoura hills, the 'Old Father Mole' of his verse, from which the river Awbeg, his 'Mulla,' flowed in a great half-circle to the west and south. To the east another stream, the Bregog, ran down from the same hills, to meet the Awbeg, their united waters then flowing off southeast for a few miles to the great river of the district, the Blackwater. Toward the centre of this rough circle of hills and streams stood the castle, on a rise of ground. Thirty miles to the southeast, near Youghal, lay the twelve-thousand-acre seignory of Sir Walter Raleigh, also an undertaker, and beyond him the eleven thousand acres allotted to Sir Christopher Hatton. Twenty-five miles to the south lay the city of Cork, the fairest of those parts; to the north, at an equal distance, the city of Limerick, the capital of the Munster presidency and therefore the place of his official duties as Clerk of the Council. To the west and northeast lay wilder country.

These seignories were held upon a rental proportioned to their size, and upon condition that the land be colonized by English households, also in proportion. Great pains were taken that the 'mere Irish' should not find means to get a fresh foothold. The undertakers were to furnish their quota of armed men to the regular forces, but, in the early years, if need be, they were also to be protected by garrisons. They were to pay no taxes for a time, and were to be allowed, for a time, the free importation of goods from England. Some, of course, like Hatton and Raleigh, were absentees, but the great majority were supposed to be in residence, and perhaps did mainly reside.

The situation of the latter was not altogether pleasant. About them on every side were native gentry who, having come through the storm of the late rebellion without attainder, were disposed to defend as they best might what little power was left them. These men saw land to which they had claims, real or imaginary, absorbed into this seignory or that, and when they protested, were asked by the commissioners for their title deeds, or other proof of ownership, as little to be expected in that country as Irish glibs in England. Hence hard words, jealousies, and fears on both sides. The special antagonist of Spenser was Lord Roche. They were at law more than once. Roche accused the poet of trying to steal land from him by false representations of title, of occupying the said land, of threatening his tenants and taking away their cattle, and of beating the servants and bailiffs who resisted. On his side, the poet filed countercharges: they are interesting. 'He [Roche] relieved one Kedagh O'Kelley, his foster brother, a proclaimed traitor; has imprisoned men of Mr. Verdons, Mr. Edmund Spenser, and others. He speaks ill of Her Majesty's government and hath uttered words of contempt of Her Majesty's laws, calling them unjust. He killed a fat beef of Teig O'Lyne's, because Mr. Spenser lay in his house one night as he came from the sessions at Limerick. He also killed a beef of his smith's for mending Mr. Piers' plough iron. He has forbidden his people to have any trade or conference with Mr. Spenser or Mr. Piers or their tenants.' To seek for the right and the wrong in such quarrels is to find a hopeless mixture. Roche, no doubt, was a violent man; yet it was surely hard dealing to bring against him as a crime that he had protected his own foster brother. In any case, with feuds like this on their hands, with outlaws in every recess of that thickly forested region, with native discontent and sense of injury awaiting another chance to rebel, the undertakers can hardly have expected a life of settled peace.

It was after a year of this colonizing that, in the summer of 1589, Spenser was visited by Sir Walter Raleigh. The two had probably met before in service under Lord Grey,

perhaps at the gloomy Fort del Oro, where Raleigh was one of the two captains 'put in' for the work of general slaughter. A twelvemonth afterward, the brilliant officer had gone to court, where he had quickly made himself the leading favorite of the Queen. Now, being driven from court, as the gossips said, by the new favorite, Essex, he was back for a time in Ireland, on a visit to the estates recently granted him there as undertaker. He found his old acquaintance at Kilcolman near by, and his old acquaintance showed him the manuscript of the *Faery Queen*.

Spenser had begun this poem ten years back, in England; since coming over with Grey he had worked at no other poetry or prose that we know of, except perhaps a casual sonnet or two; yet he had been able to complete only three books of the projected twelve. Probably he had found the early years of his service in Ireland too distracting for sustained poetical effort. Parts of the work he had shown long before this to various friends of his exile, perhaps even to Raleigh, but the three books as a whole Raleigh must now have seen for the first time. Their effect upon his imaginative and sanguine mind can easily be guessed. Here was a poet, once famous, with a new magnificent poem, hidden away in a God-forsaken corner among savages. He must be taken to court, he must present his work to the Queen; she could not fail to find room in her service for the author of *Gloriana*. In any case, he must make himself known again at the capital, where by this time he and the old fame of his *Shepherd's Calendar* were 'quite forgot.' But Raleigh's visit and the sequel are best read between the lines of *Colin Clout's Come Home Again*.

Spenser and his new friend crossed the seas together in the autumn. On December 1 the *Faery Queen* was registered with the Stationers' Company for publication, and about that time, or earlier, the poet was doubtless being accorded those audiences with Elizabeth of which *Colin Clout* informs us, audiences for the reading of his poem, which she was graciously pleased to applaud. With her graciousness to cheer him, and with the backing of Raleigh, he is not likely to have missed very much his old patrons, Sidney and Leicester, by this time dead. In their place was the Countess of Pembroke (for whom he now commemorated them in belated panegyric, at the suggestion of friends), and besides her, there were his noble relatives, the three daughters of Sir John Spencer of Althorpe — and others. The list of distinguished personages, indeed, whose names appear in his verse, or in the inscriptions of his longer poems and sonnets, makes clear that he was now at the very centre of courtly life. Meanwhile he was working with a will. There was his *Faery Queen* to see through the press, and he was also revising old poems and composing new, as means of commending himself. He probably hoped for a substantial reward.

What he hoped for chiefly was perhaps some place in the government service at the capital. For this, however, he had to reckon with Burghley, and Burghley did not believe in poets. The great lord treasurer might recollect him, too, as a former *protégé* of his old enemy, Leicester; possibly he had, ten years earlier, set a precedent for denying him office — when the poet had been obliged to content himself with a private secretaryship in Ireland. An uncompromising biographer might also note the later complaint of Bacon (himself a disappointed suitor for office) that 'in the times of the Cecils able men were, of purpose, suppressed.' In any case, whatever the cause, there can be no doubt that Burghley showed himself unfavorable to Spenser. An apocryphal story relates that when the Queen ordered the payment of a hundred pounds, in recognition of the poet's genius, the treasurer objected to the amount; whereupon she replied, 'Then give him what is reason;' whereupon the treasurer let the matter rest altogether, till the

poet, by a rhymed appeal to his sovereign, secured the hundred pounds and a censure for his enemy. The truth, as far as we know it, is, that in February, 1591, some sixteen months after his arrival in London and nearly, if not quite, a year after the appearance of his poem, Spenser received the grant of a pension of £50, and that he received no other substantial recognition of his genius. Fifty pounds a year and the doubtful profits of a small Munster seignory would not support him suitably in London. He was no more inclined than he had been ten years earlier to attempt literature as a profession. If he had hoped to get footing at the capital, therefore, he bore the disappointment as he might, and set out for home. His opinion of Burghley he left behind him in 'Mother Hubbard's Tale.'

This poem appeared in the volume entitled *Complaints*, which was entered upon the Stationers' register, as approved by the official censors, December 29, 1590. Since Ponsonby, in his opening address, speaks of the poet's 'departure over sea,' and since the volume bears the date of 1591, which would not be given it till the official beginning of the new year on March 25, it may be supposed that Spenser went home in the late winter or early spring, before the volume was ready for sale. On the preceding New Year's<sup>1</sup> he had signed the dedication of *Daphnaïda* at London; on the following 27th of December, he signed the dedication of *Colin Clout's Come Home Again* at Kilcolman. This poetic acknowledgment of Raleigh's patronage was presumably sent over to his friend in manuscript at once, though it was not to be published till 1595.

Back at Kilcolman again, Spenser fell into the old round of official duties (executed in part, no doubt, by deputy) and of seignorial cares. By this time he could probably command more leisure, much of which he would give to pushing on with his *Faery Queen*. But a new adventure now befell him: he met the woman whom he was to marry. She was a certain gentlewoman, Elizabeth Boyle, of kin to that Richard Boyle who later became the first Earl of Cork. Her home seems to have been at Kilcoran, near Youghal, on the coast to the southeast of Spenser's domain. If we are to believe the story of the *Amoretti*, which is altogether consistent, he began his wooing late in 1592; the marriage was of June 11, 1594. These are the bare facts. Those who wish the romance, which rests upon well-documented facts of its own, must turn to the *Amoretti* and *Epithalamion* themselves and read with the inward eye.

Before his marriage Spenser had contrived, with commendable foresight, to finish the second three books of his *Faery Queen*. These he kept by him till he could take them to London himself. The *Amoretti* and *Epithalamion* he sent over to Ponsonby without delay, and Ponsonby published them in the spring of 1595. In the same year, or early in 1596 (for according to the old style the computation was from March 25 to March 24), Ponsonby also brought out *Colin Clout's Come Home Again* and *Astrophel*. By January 20 (old style 1595, new style 1596) the poet himself was in London, for on that date there was registered with the Stationers' Company the second part of the *Faery Queen*. Since one of the main objects of his coming over would be the publication of this work, it is not likely that he had arrived much earlier.

Another object was undoubtedly the furtherance of his material welfare. Not content with what had been done for him in 1591, he was set upon urging his claims a second time. On that former occasion he had appeared under the patronage of Raleigh, which not only had not helped him to full success, but had prevented his wooing the apparently greater influence of Essex; for the two favorites were bitter rivals. Except, then, for a very flattering sonnet to the young earl, he seems at that time to have paid him no court.

<sup>1</sup> For this date see the introduction to *Daphnaïda*.



Perhaps it is to exaggerate to say that he paid him court now, or that Essex was the patron of his second venture. In the *Prothalamion*, his first thought concerning Essex House is that it was once the abode of Leicester,

‘ Whose want too well now feeles my freendles case ; ’

and his following panegyric upon Leicester’s successor contains no hint of patronage. Yet it was Essex who, a little over two years later, was to pay his funeral expenses. In any case, Spenser gained no further reward. The second part of the *Faery Queen* did not heighten the wonder of the first, and therefore did not move Elizabeth to fresh bounty. As for her lord treasurer, the poet could hope for nothing from him after ‘ Mother Hubbard’s Tale.’ The references to his ill humor, set at the beginning and the end of this part, read, in fact, like a challenge.

Spenser was not a lucky courtier. One could wish, indeed, that he had never tried courting, for its influence upon his spirit was malign. Naturally high-minded, he reveals here and there in his verse, under the sting of disappointment, a petulance, somewhat unmanly, that his most radical admirers would fain argue away. Others would fain forget the adulation, sometimes offensive, into which the pursuit of reward too often tempted him. Loitering about the court, in hopes of preferment, was surely no fit business for the poet of the *Faery Queen*. Happily, his experiences there stirred him less often to petulance or gross flattery than to manly disdain.

The dedication of the *Four Hymns* is dated from Greenwich (where the court often lay), September 1, 1596; the *Prothalamion* is probably of the early autumn. Not long afterward Spenser may be thought to have given up his suit and gone home. If he had written less poetry during this second visit than in 1590, one cause may have been that he was busied in prose, for it is probably to 1596 that one must assign his *View of the Present State of Ireland*.<sup>1</sup> This elaborate survey and plan of reform would explain, if further explanation were needed, why the poet was so ill content with his lot. Fifteen years of life in Ireland had not reconciled him in the slightest to Irish manners and customs, or taught him the smallest sympathy with the Irish temperament. Not to speak of his plan for the systematic starving out and strangling of rebellion and for systematic colonizing, he would carry reform even to the point of cutting off the glibs of the natives and taking away their long mantles, because both were convenient to thieves. Even their easy-minded laziness was offence to him. In his general contempt for the Irish and in his advocacy of the sternest measures of repression, he was, of course, not alone among the English of his day; but one judges that he also lacked that faculty of compromise which might have moved him to make the most of disagreeable neighbors.

In 1593, or thereabouts, Spenser had disposed of his clerkship of the Munster Council. On September 30, 1598, not quite two years after his return from England, he was appointed Sheriff of Cork. Within a week the revolt broke out which was to ruin the undertakers of Munster.

The original grants had provided that every undertaker should people his estate with English. A seignory of twelve thousand acres called for the establishment of ninety-two families; smaller seignories, of a number proportionately less. Whether by negligence or sheer inability, however, the undertakers had failed to observe this condition of their tenure. After bringing over a few families, often anything but respectable and sober, they had commonly let their remaining land to natives, just the folk whom the government aimed to supplant, or had allowed it to lie idle. Most of them, perhaps, had not the means

<sup>1</sup> Not included in this volume. It was first printed, long after his death, in 1633.



of financing their venture properly. They had almost all counted on peace and neglected to make provision against attack. When, therefore, the victory of Tyrone in the north inflamed the Irish of Munster to rebellion, the undertakers, who lived far apart, were helpless. The Lord President, Sir Thomas Norris, might have organized them for defence, but the storm came on so rapidly that he lost heart, they thought of nothing but escape to Cork and Waterford with their families, and the whole province, outside the walled towns, was left open to pillage. Here and there an undertaker defended himself as he best might, but the majority simply ran away, if they could. The Irish tenants whom they had admitted upon their estates commonly joined the rebels in the general work of pillage, burning, mutilation, and murder.

With his wife and four children Spenser escaped to Cork. Whether or not he attempted to defend his castle we do not know; we hear only of a certain Edmund M'Shee 'killed by an Englishman at the spoil of Kilcolman.' The story told by Ben Jonson, that an infant child of the poet perished in the flames, is probably apocryphal. At Cork he found time and composure to prepare a review of the situation, for the Queen; then he was sent to London with despatches, which he delivered the day before Christmas. On the 16th of the following January (in modern style, 1599) he died at Westminster. The Earl of Essex took charge of his funeral. Poets attended him to his grave in the Abbey, near Chaucer, and threw in elegies, with the pens that had written them. Queen Elizabeth ordered him a monument — which was never erected.

Spenser's reputation among his contemporaries was of the highest. No other English poet ever won more immediate and abiding recognition than he. The *Shepherd's Calendar* was at once accepted as a masterpiece, and when the *Faery Queen* appeared, there was no one to dispute his right to the heritage of Chaucer. Between 1590 and his death he was held, by general consent, the supreme poet of his time in England. This unanimity of acceptance was due, perhaps, in some measure, to the fact that he was not of that quarrelsome community which praised him, the turbulent literary world of London, but an exile. He had left England at a time when most of the men now seeking fame for themselves were mere youths, and when he returned to their world, at intervals, with fresh poetry, their feeling was in part enthusiasm for its magic, and in part reverence for their senior, who had no share in their quarrels, and whose art was not of their schools, though it instantly made disciples. To speculate how far his remoteness from the growing world of letters may have been favorable to his originality would be futile: it most certainly was favorable to his immediate fame.

What his fame may be to-day is a topic more engaging, but less tangible, and not to be discussed *in extenso* here. One aspect of it, however, may be glanced at. There are some who go to him, as they go to Keats, for the 'life of sensations' which they prefer to the 'life of ideas,' who appreciate nothing but his sensuous delightsomeness. Others, who feel also his grave moral charm, are, like Lowell, impatient of his too overt moralizing. Others yet, like Dowden, accept the moralizing and all. In the main, the trend of unofficial contemporary opinion seems to be against that element in Spenser's poetry which he himself took for the chief of all. He had run the length of the full university curriculum of his day. If one had talked to him of the cultivation of the sensibilities, he would have stared: he had been feeding his brain. To be able to think in poetry, that, he would have said, was the chief end of the poet; and it would grieve him now in Elysium, could he know what moderns have thought about his thinking. Perhaps these moderns are, after all, wrong. It is well enough to say that his thinking too often pro-

---

trudes through his art, like ill-covered wire framework, — but why then, in Dante, call the same phenomenon ‘a residuum of prose in the depths of his poetry’? The failing is all but inevitable to poetic dogmatists. In Spenser, too, as in others, it is merely one manifestation of the faculty that directs his noblest work, that informs the superb energy of the conflict between the Redcross Knight and Despair, and the serenities of the *Hymn in Honor of Beauty*.



THE  
SHEPHEARDES CALENDER

CONTEYNING TWELVE ÆGLOGUES PROPORTIONABLE TO THE TWELVE MONETHES

ENTITLED

TO THE NOBLE AND VERTUOUS GENTLEMAN MOST WORTHY OF ALL  
TITLES BOTH OF LEARNING AND CHEVALRIE  
MAISTER PHILIP SIDNEY

AT LONDON

PRINTED BY HUGH SINGLETON, DWELLING IN CREEDE LANE NEERE UNTO LUDGATE  
AT THE SIGNE OF THE GYLDEN TUNNE, AND ARE THERE TO BE SOLDE

1579

[*The Shepherd's Calendar* was entered on the books of the Stationers' Company December 5, 1579, and was probably published before the end of the following March, when the old year officially expired. The little volume must have had a certain attraction of mysteriousness. It was full of veiled allusions and the secret of its authorship was enticingly dangled before the eyes of readers. The author of the eclogues signed himself 'Immeritô' and was styled by the author of the commentary 'the new poet.' This other signed himself E. K. Yet though the book thus challenged curiosity, the secret seems to have been well enough kept. At court, perhaps, or at Cambridge, it would be penetrated in time by a few, but generally, and at least as a matter of form, the anonymity was acknowledged for a full decade to come. Spenser's main share in the work was confessed when the *Fluery Queen* came out in 1590.

For E. K., his initials seem to have been left, even then, to explain themselves — or perhaps real explanation was not greatly heeded. In either case, who he may have been is now beyond absolute proof. Some recent scholars, arguing from a few special passages and from the apparent intimacy of his knowledge, an intimacy in no way contradicted by occasional rather arch professions of ignorance, have maintained that he was Spenser himself, acting as his own commentator. Their theory is plausible — but only at first sight. It cannot meet the fact that E. K. has in several places plainly misunderstood his text, and it implies that Spenser could write about the men he imitated and about his own work in the tone of such slurs as those, in the beginning of the

'January' gloss and in the argument of 'November,' on the genial Marot. Most critics, therefore, abide by the older opinion that E. K. was Edward Kirke, a contemporary of Spenser and Harvey at Cambridge (sizar, for a time, in their own hall, Pembroke) and of kin, perhaps, to the 'Mistresse Kerke' of Spenser's first letter. This opinion, though but conjectural, clashes with neither fact nor sentiment.

The main riddle of the eclogues themselves is, of course, Rosalinde. Who she was, and how seriously the tale of which she is the faithless heroine must be taken, have busied, it may be thought, only too many minds. For her identity, the evidence comprises three points: that, according to the gloss on 'January,' her poetic name is an anagram of her real; that, according to the gloss on 'April,' she was 'a gentlewoman of no meane house;' and that, to judge by the general tenor of the narrative, her home was in that northeast corner of Lancashire which is unmistakably the scene of the love-eclogues. Yet after much patient work, the most recent of investigators has produced no one but a quite supposititious Rose Dineley, of a surname common in those parts, — and there the matter may rest. Nor need the love-story itself be discussed, or the depth of the poet's passion. Concerning this last, however, one point may be noted. That Rosalinde is celebrated as late as *Colin Clout's Come Home Again*, in 1591, need mean no more than that she was then still, in a sense, the poet's official mistress, remembered with kindly appreciation and not yet displaced by the woman whom shortly afterwards he wooed to good purpose.

Though we do not know her name or the real facts of her story, and though the pastoral



disguise of the eclogues is quite baffling; Rosalinde is none the less a curiously distinct personage. E. K. and Harvey have both recorded her qualities. 'Shee is a gentlewoman of no meane house,' says E. K. in his gloss for 'April,' 'nor endowed with anye vulgare and common gifts both of nature and manners.' Harvey speaks more intimately — in a letter to Spenser of April, 1580. In one part of this, extolling the charms of that mysterious beauty with whom the poet was then solacing his wounded heart, he declares her to be 'another little Rosalinde' (*altera Rosalindula* — the diminutive suggests that the true Rosalinde was of more native dignity); and in another part, upon a matter of literary interest, he appeals to 'his conceite whom gentle Mistresse Rosalinde once reported to have all the intelligences at commaundement, and at another time christened her Segnior Pegaso.' That last fragment tells us more about the real qualities of this 'gentlewoman of no meane house,' and suggests more about her probable dealings with the poet, than all the tuneful lamentations of the eclogues.

The love-story of Rosalinde and Colin Clout is the central theme of the *Calendar*. It gives to what might else have been a collection of independent eclogues the appearance of dramatic continuity, and at the end, in 'December,' it broadens into a kind of tragic allegory of life which closes the round of the months with philosophic dignity. For purposes of artistic centralization, indeed, it was undoubtedly the fittest theme that Spenser could have selected, and it had the special appeal to him of a fresh and perhaps poignant experience. It is not the only theme, however, to be developed with recurrent emphasis. That of the central eclogues, 'May,' 'July,' and 'September,' is elaborated with almost equal amplitude, and with such apparent earnestness that these eclogues have very generally been held to express sincere personal convictions. If that opinion be true (and there is certainly some truth in it), Spenser was, at this stage of his life, more or less a Puritan.

Nothing, indeed, would be more natural than that, in 1579, when the Elizabethan Church was but just emerging from its earlier days of uncertainty, a young man of generous moral instincts, a seeker of the ideal, should sympathize with the main attitude of the Puritans. Among the several parties of the composite and still rather incoherent Anglican communion, they stood most typically for moral earnestness. This temper might sometimes run to extremes; the more violent of them, Cartwright and such, might be root and branch reformers, hewers of Agag in pieces before the

Lord; but the greater part were men whose zeal showed itself chiefly in diligent preaching and urging of their convictions — the need of simplicity in the worship and of earnestness in the service of God. Compared with these men, those higher ecclesiastics who had the difficult task of maintaining the Queen's policy of compromise, and of preserving what could be preserved of the older ceremonies and dignities of religion, might conceivably seem lukewarm and worldly-minded. And among the lower clergy, especially in the rural districts, there were still but too many like the priest in 'Mother Hubbard's Tale,' who had been Catholic and were now half Protestant, ignorant, lazy, worthless. The energy of vital religion might at this time seem to be with the Puritans. The objects of their denunciation were, moreover, not all mere matters of ritual and form, but, many of them, very real abuses.

To what extent Spenser may have held with the Puritans is nevertheless a somewhat perplexed question. One could wish that the allegory of the three eclogues were clearer. A few specific allusions, to be sure, give it an air of actuality, but they do not carry us very far. 'Old Algrind,' the type of the pious and venerable shepherd, is beyond fair question Grindal, Archbishop of Canterbury, then in utter disgrace with the Queen for having refused to put down Puritan 'prophesyings.' Morrell, the 'goteheard prowde,' is quite probably Aylmer, Bishop of London, one of those who helped to do the work that Grindal declined. When we look for definite ideas, however, we find ourselves continually at a balance between the Puritan and the more broadly Protestant. If the sentiment of the first part of 'May' is distinctly Puritan, the remainder of that eclogue, which inveighs against the wiles of the Papists, conveys little more than the general sentiment of the English Reformation. As for the main burden of the eclogues, against the pride, luxury, and corruption of a worldly priesthood, one is perpetually in doubt whether it be directed against the orthodox clergy of the Church of England or against the clergy of the Church of Rome. This ambiguity, to be sure, may be the poet's safeguard against possible ill-consequences: it suggests, however, that he was not a thorough-going partisan. With those who held Anglicanism to be mere Popery he of course had no ties at all, or he would not have admitted E. K.'s comment in 'May' upon *Some gan*, etc. On the whole, then, beyond strong disapproval of abuses in church patronage, such as those described in 'Mother Hubbard's Tale,' and of high living and laziness and spiritual dullness among the clergy, Spenser's Puritan sympathies do not seem to have



extended far. Except for a brief passage upon the intercession of saints, the thought of which is broadly Protestant, there is hardly a glance at dogma.

In two out of the three eclogues, in 'July' and 'September,' Spenser borrows themes and even whole passages from his pastoral forerunner, Mantuan, the satirist of the Roman clergy. How far this borrowing may make against his sincerity is matter for individual judgment. In any case, it exemplifies one of the fundamental characteristics of the *Calendar*. When young Alexander Pope, in the days of his ardent reading among the classics, undertook to compose a set of pastorals, he first fixed his attention on 'the only undisputed authors' of that *genre*, Theocritus and Virgil, then, from a study of their eclogues, derived four absolute types, comprehensive of 'all the subjects which the criticks upon Theocritus and Virgil will allow to be fit for pastoral.' Young Spenser, equally ardent with his books and living in a less formally critical age, proceeded on quite another principle. Since the days of the Greek and Latin fathers of the pastoral there had been a goodly line of successors, under whom the *genre* had developed in many directions. Petrarch, Mantuan, Sannazaro, Marot, to mention but a few of the chief, had each contributed his share of themes and methods. The main development had been in allegory, the use of the pastoral form, that is, for the discussion of contemporary or personal affairs and the introduction of real people. By the time Spenser came to write, then, the literature of the pastoral was immense and surpassingly diverse; it had, moreover, quite lost the peculiar quality of its earliest days, when an idyll was a direct poetic rendering of real life, and had crystallized into a system of conventional symbols, which might still be used by a master with living imaginative effect, but which, without a radical reversion, could hardly again render real life. Out of this literature Spenser adopted types and definite themes, and imitated special passages, with studied care for variety. The types need not here be particularized, but of definite themes, elaborated in part by direct translation or paraphrase, we have, for instance, the religious satire of 'July' and 'September,' out of Mantuan, the complaint of the hard lot of poets, in 'October,' also out of Mantuan, the dirge in 'November' and parts of 'December,' in imitation of Marot, 'March' after Bion. For the general scheme of stringing the loose eclogues on a slight thread of romance, that, too, though perhaps mainly original, had been, in a way, anticipated by Boccaccio and Sannazaro. Of real contributions to the *genre* we find few beyond the use of the

fable and the idea of making an eclogue-series a calendar.

This imitativeness, the eagerness to appropriate interesting or otherwise attractive themes by which to give his work variety, to experiment in various acknowledged styles, is, indeed, the most distinguishing characteristic of the *Calendar*. It is one manifestation of what may be called the voracity of taste in youth. Spenser was doing what Stevenson, in a well-known essay, has told us that he, in his time, did, and that every active young follower of letters must inevitably do, what, in the various performances of his early period, Pope did himself. And as imitation goes hand in hand with experiment, the impulse toward variety in his work shows itself not merely in themes and styles appropriated from earlier pastoral poets, but in the very measures and stanza-forms of his verse. These are strikingly various. There is the irregular accentual verse of 'February' and other eclogues, side by side with the even, finely modulated ten-syllable iambic. There is the ballad measure and stanza of 'July,' side by side with the elaborate and musical eight-line stanza of 'June.' Formal quatrains, now separate, now linked by rhyme; the stanzas, equal in length but vitally different in harmonic effect, of 'January' and 'October;' a lively roundelay, a starched sestina—one could hardly be more varied. Then there are the hymn-strophes of 'April' and 'November.' The strophe of this last, opening sonorously with an alexandrine, sinking through melodious decasyllables to the plaintive shorter verses, and rising at the close into another decasyllable, to fall away in a brief refrain, is as noble a prophecy of the larger stanzaic art of the *Epithalamion* as a young poet could conceivably give. Spenser, indeed, won his supreme mastery of the stanza by long and honest experiment.

The youthfulness of the art is finally evident in the mere arrangement of the eclogues. This reminds one of nothing so much as of that almost mathematical balance with which, as Professor Norton has pointed out, Dante disposed the poems of his *Vita Nuova*. Formality of structure is of course one of the most common characteristics of youthful art. In the *Calendar*, this formality, though less exact than in the *Vita Nuova*, is rather more obvious. The series of eclogues, being in number twelve, has naturally, if one may use the phrase, two centres, 'June' and 'July:' Spenser's plan of arrangement is to place, approximately at a balance on either of these centres, such eclogues as stand in contrast or are supplementary to each other. The eclogues, for instance, in which Colin Clout laments his wretched

case are three: two must round out the series in 'January' and 'December;' the third is placed at one of the centres, 'June.' The two at the extremes are monologues and both in the crude six-line stanza of even iambs that is used nowhere else: the third, at the centre, is a dialogue in an elaborate eight-line stanza that is also used only here. The three religious eclogues, two in accentual couplets, one in ballad measure, balance in like manner upon 'July.' One may note, too, the hymn of praise in 'April' over against the dirge in 'November,' and may feel, perhaps, a balance in the complaint for poets, of 'October,' and the two main tributes, in 'February' and 'June,' to Chaucer. But one might easily push the analysis too far.

It is with Chaucer, the Tityrus of the eclogues, that any survey of them most naturally concludes. Barring a certain mysterious Wrenock, he is the one master whom Colin Clout acknowledges.

'The god of shepherds, Tityrus, is dead,  
Who taught me, homely as I can, to make.'

So says Colin in 'June,' and in 'December' it is said of him that 'he of Tityrus his songs did lere.' How far, then, we inevitably ask ourselves, is Spenser really the disciple of his one great English forerunner? In two prominent characteristics, more or less external, Chaucer's influence upon the *Calendar* is, of course, generally admitted. The irregular accentual verse, which is managed so well in 'February' and often so poorly in other eclogues and incidental passages, though in general of the decadent Chaucerian school, seems to owe much to direct study of the master himself. And for the diction, in its varying degrees of strangeness, if Spenser, to the discontent of Sidney, 'framed his style to an old rustic language,' it was in the main by authority of Chaucer, whose English, now rustic to the modern Elizabethans, was yet their greatest literary tradition. So much can hardly be disputed, and so much does not carry us very far: those who stop there, indeed, must view the professed discipleship as more or less a sentiment. Yet one may fairly believe that

Chaucer's influence is wider and deeper than that. We doubt its extent, perhaps, chiefly when we consider the *Calendar* too much by itself. As, in the *Faery Queen*, the strongest immediate influence might be thought to be that of Ariosto, so, in the *Calendar*, it is unquestionably that of the great pastoral school. If, however, we look, not to themes and methods and merely occasional characteristics of style in this one poem, but to the persistent characteristics of style in Spenser's total achievement, may we not fairly see the influence of Chaucer dominating all others? That archaism which is held to be the chief note of his influence on the *Calendar* is not a garb assumed for the time as appropriate: it is the very body of Spenser's speech. E. K., early in the epistle to Harvey, has suggested its natural growth, which indeed is clear. Reading and rereading the 'auncient poetes' of his own tongue, in chief the master of them all, Spenser's imagination and native sense for language were so saturated with the charm of that older speech that to him it became in the end more real than the speech of his contemporaries, and attracting to itself, by force of sympathetic likeness, provincialisms from a dozen sources, grew to be the living language of his genius. To this, the largest artistic contribution would be Chaucer's. And for that other element of poetry, verse, we can hardly think that Spenser derived from his great forerunner nothing but models for the measures of 'February' and 'August.' It is frequently said that, when the final *e* died out and was forgotten, Chaucer's verse could be read only by accent and with a kind of popular lilt. Yet there were long passages that would still preserve almost their full metrical flow and beauty. If Spenser, then, became master of a verse ideally flowing and musical, he assuredly learned the art of it in no small measure from the golden cadences of Chaucer. From foreign poets, in brief, he might learn and borrow much in a hundred ways, but the one master who can teach a native style is a native artist, and the one great artist of England, prior to 'the new poet,' was Chaucer.]

### TO HIS BOOKE

GOE, little booke: thy selfe present,  
As child whose parent is unkent,  
To him that is the president  
Of noblesse and of chevalree:  
And if that Envie barke at thee,  
As sure it will, for succoure flee  
Under the shadow of his wing;  
And asked, who thee forth did bring,

A shepherds swaine, saye, did thee sing,  
All as his straying flocke he fedde:  
And when his honor has thee redde,  
Crave pardon for my hardyhedde.  
But if that any aske thy name,  
Say thou wert base begot with blame:  
Forthy thereof thou takest shame.  
And when thou art past jeoparddee,  
Come tell me what was sayd of mee:  
And I will send more after thee.

IMMERITÔ.



TO THE MOST EXCELLENT AND  
LEARNED BOTH ORATOR  
AND POETE, MAYSTER  
GABRIELL HARVEY,

HIS VERIE SPECIAL AND SINGULAR GOOD  
FRIEND E. K. COMMENDETH THE GOOD  
LYKING OF THIS HIS LABOUR,  
AND THE PATRONAGE OF  
THE NEW POETE

UNCOUTHE, UNKISTE, sayde the olde famous poete Chaucer: whom for his excellencie and wonderfull skil in making, his scholler Lidgate, a worthy scholler of so excellent a maister, calleth the loadestarre of our language: and whom our Colin Clout in his æglogue calleth Tityrus the god of shepheards, comparing hym to the worthines of the Roman Tityrus, Virgile. Which proverbe, myne owne good friend Maister Harvey, as in that good old poete it served well Pandares purpose, for the bolstering of his baudy brocage, so very well taketh place in this our new poete, who for that he is uncouth (as said Chaucer) is unkist, and unknown to most men, is regarded but of few. But I dout not, so soone as his name shall come into the knowledg of men, and his worthines be sounded in the tromp of Fame, but that he shall be not onely kiste, but also beloved of all, embraced of the most, and wondred at of the best. No lesse, I thinke, deserveth his wittinesse in devising, his pithinesse in uttering, his complaints of love so lovely, his discourses of pleasure so pleasantly, his pastorall rudenesse, his morall wisesnesse, his dewe observing of decorum every where, in personages, in seasons, in matter, in speach, and generally in al seemely sim-  
plycitie of handeling his matter, and framing his words: the which, of many thinges which in him be straunge, I know will seeme the straunGEST, the words them selves being so auncient, the knitting of them so short and intricate, and the whole periode and compasse of speache so delightsome for the roundnesse, and so grave for the straungenesse. And firste of the wordes to speake, I graunt they be something hard, and of most men unused, yet both English, and also used of most excellent authors and most famous poetes. In whom whenas this our poet hath bene much traveiled and

thoroughly redd, how could it be, (as that worthy oratour sayde,) but that walking in the sonne, although for other cause he walked, yet needes he mought be sunburnt; and, having the sound of those auncient poetes still ringing in his eares, he mought needes in singing hit out some of theyr tunes. But whether he useth them by such casualitye and custome, or of set purpose and choyse, as thinking them fittest for such rusticall rudenesse of shepheards, eyther for that theyr rough sounde would make his rymes more ragged and rustical, or els because such olde and obsolete wordes are most used of country folke, sure I think, and think I think not amisse, that they bring great grace and, as one would say, auctoritie to the verse. For albe amongst many other faultes it specially be objected of Valla against Livie, and of other against Saluste, that with over much studie they affect antiquitie, as coveting thereby credence and honor of elder yeeres, yet I am of opinion, and eke the best learned are of the lyke, that those auncient solemne wordes are a great ornament both in the one and in the other; the one labouring to set forth in hys worke an eternall image of antiquitie, and the other carefully discoursing matters of gravitie and importaunce. For if my memory fayle not, Tullie, in that booke wherein he endevoureth to set forth the paterne of a perfect oratour, sayth that oftentimes an auncient worde maketh the style seeme grave, and as it were reverend: no otherwise then we honour and reverence gray heares, for a certein religions regard which we have of old age. Yet nether every where must old words be stuffed in, nor the common dialecte and maner of speaking so corrupted therby, that, as in old buildings, it seme disorderly and ruinous. But all as in most exquisite pictures they use to blaze and portraiet not onely the daintie lineaments of beautye, but also rounde about it to shadow the rude thickets and craggy cliffs, that, by the basenesse of such parts, more excellency may accrew to the principall (for oftines we fynde our selves, I knowe not how, singularly delighted with the shewe of such naturall rudenesse, and take great pleasure in that disorderly order) even so doe those rough and harsh termes enlumine and make more clearly to appeare the brightnesse of brave and glorious

words. So ofentimes a dischorde in 100 musick maketh a comely concordance: so great delight tooke the worthy poete Alceus to behold a blemish in the joynt of a wel shaped body. But if any will rashly blame such his purpose in choyse of old and unwonted words, him may I more justly blame and condemne, or of witlesse headnesse in judging, or of heedelesse hardnesse in condemning: for not marking the compasse of hys bent, he wil judge of the 110 length of his cast: for in my opinion it is one special prayse, of many which are dew to this poete, that he hath laboured to restore, as to theyr rightfull heritage, such good and naturall English words as have ben long time out of use and almost cleare disherited. Which is the onely cause that our mother tonge, which truely of it self is both ful enough for prose and stately enough for verse, hath long time ben counted 120 most bare and barren of both. Which default when as some endevoured to salve and recure, they patched up the holes with peeces and rags of other languages, borrowing here of the French, there of the Italian, every where of the Latine; not weighing how il those tongues accorde with themselves, but much worse with ours: so now they have made our English tongue a gallinaufay or hodgepodge of al other speches. Other 130 some, not so wel seene in the English tonge as perhaps in other languages, if they happen to here an olde word, albeit very naturall and significant, crye out streight way that we speak no English, but gibbrish, or rather such as in old time Evanders mother spake. Whose first shame is, that they are not ashamed, in their own mother tonge straungers to be counted and alienes. The second shame no lesse then the first, that 140 what so they understand not, they streight way deeme to be sencelesse, and not at al to be understode. Much like to the mole in Æsopes fable, that, being blynd her selfe, would in no wise be perswaded that any beast could see. The last more shameful then both, that of their owne country and natural speach, which together with their nources milk they sucked, they have so base regard and bastard judgement, that 150 they will not onely themselves not labor to garnish and beautifie it, but also repine that of other it shold be embellished. Like to the dogge in the maunger, that him

selfe can eate no hay, and yet barketh at the hungry bullock, that so faine would feede: whose currish kinde, though it cannot be kept from barking, yet I conne them thanke that they refrain from byting.

Now, for the knitting of sentences, which 160 they call the joynts and members therof, and for al the compasse of the speach, it is round without roughnesse, and learned wythout hardnes, such indeede as may be perceived of the leaste, understode of the moste, but judged onely of the learned. For what in most English wryters useth to be loose, and as it were ungyrt, in this authour is well grounded, finely framed, and strongly 170 trussed up together. In regard whereof, I scorne and spue out the rakehellie route of our ragged rymers (for so themselves use to hunt the letter) which without learning boste, without judgement jangle, without reason rage and fome, as if some instinct of poetical spirite had newly ravished them above the meanenesse of common capacitie. And being in the midst of all theyr bravery, sodenly eyther for want of matter, 180 or of ryme, or having forgotten theyr former concept, they seeme to be so pained and travailed in theyr remembrance as it were a woman in childebirth, or as that same Pythia, when the traunce came upon her: '*Os rabidum fera corda domans*,' &c. Nethelesse, let them a Gods name feede on theyr owne folly, so they seeke not to darken the beames of others glory. As for Colin, under whose person the Authour selfe is 190 shadowed, how furre he is from such vaunted titles and glorious showes, both him selfe sheweth, where he sayth,

'Of Muses, Hobbin, I conne no skill,'

and

'Enough is me to paint out my unrest,' &c.,

and also appeareth by the basenesse of the name, wherein, it semeth, he chose rather to unfold great matter of argument covertly then, professing it, not suffice thereto 200 accordingly. Which moved him rather in æglogues then other wise to write, doubting perhaps his habilitie, which he little needed, or mynding to furnish our tongue with this kinde, wherein it faulteth, or following the example of the best and most auncient poetes, which devised this kind of wryting, being both so base for the matter, and homely for the manner, at the first to



trye theyr habilities, and, as young birdes <sup>210</sup> that be newly crept out of the nest, by little first to prove theyr tender wyngs, before they make a greater flyght. So flew Theocritus, as you may perceiue he was all ready full fledged. So flew Virgile, as not yet well feeling his winges. So flew Mantuane, as being not full sould. So Petrarque. So Boccace. So Marot, Sanazarus, and also diuers other excellent both Italian and French poetes, whose foting this author every <sup>220</sup> where followeth, yet so as few, but they be wel sented, can trace him out. So finally flyeth this our new poete, as a bird whose principals be scarce growen out, but yet as that in time shall be hable to keepe wing with the best.

Now, as touching the generall dryft and purpose of his *Æglogues*, I mind not to say much, him selfe labouring to conceale it. Onely this appeareth, that his unstayed <sup>230</sup> yought had long wandred in the common labyrinth of Love; in which time, to mitigate and allay the heate of his passion, or els to warne (as he sayth) the young shepherds, sc. his equalls and companions, of his unfortunate folly, he compiled these xij *Æglogues*, which, for that they be proportioned to the state of the xij monethes, he termeth the *Shepherds Calendar*, applying an olde name to a new worke. Hereunto <sup>240</sup> have I added a certain glosse or scholion, for the exposition of old wordes and harder phrases: which maner of glosing and commenting, well I wote, wil seeme straunge and rare in our tongue: yet for so much as I knew many excellent and proper devises, both in wordes and matter, would passe in the speedy course of reading, either as unknown, or as not marked, and that in this kind, as in other, we might be equal to the <sup>250</sup> learned of other nations, I thought good to take the paines upon me, the rather for that, by meanes of some familiar acquaintance, I was made privie to his counsell and secret meaning in them, as also in sundry other works of his: which albeit I know he nothing so much hateth as to promulgate, yet thus much have I adventured upon his friendship, him selfe being for long time furre estranged; hoping that this will the rather <sup>260</sup> occasion him to put forth divers other excellent works of his, which slepe in silence, as his *Dreames*, his *Legendes*, his *Court of Cupide*, and sondry others; whose commen-

dations to set out were verie wayne, the thinges, though worthy of many, yet being knownen to few. These my present paynes if to any they be pleasurable or profitable, be you judge, mine own good Maister Harvey, to whom I have, both in respect of <sup>270</sup> your worthinesse generally, and otherwyse upon some particular and special considerations, vowed this my labour, and the maydenhead of this our common frends poetrie, himselfe having already in the beginning dedicated it to the noble and worthy gentleman, the right worshipfull Maister Philip Sidney, a special favourer and maintainer of all kind of learning. Whose cause, I pray you sir, yf envie shall stur up any wrongful <sup>280</sup> accusation, defend with your mighty rhetoricke and other your rare gifts of learning, as you can, and shield with your good wil, as you ought, against the malice and outrage of so many enemies as I know wilbe set on fire with the sparks of his kindled glory. And thus recommending the Author unto you, as unto his most special good frend, and my selfe unto you both, as one making singuler account of two so very good and <sup>290</sup> so choise frends, I bid you both most hartely farwel, and commit you and your most commendable studies to the tuition of the Greatest.

Your owne assuredly to be commaunded,  
E. K.

#### POST SCR.

Now I trust, Maister Harvey, that upon sight of your special frends and fellow poets doings, or els for envie of so many <sup>300</sup> unworthy quidams, which catch at the garland which to you alone is dewe, you will be perswaded to pluck out of the hatefull darknesse those so many excellent English poemmes of yours which lye hid, and bring them forth to eternall light. Trust me, you doe both them great wrong, in depriving them of the desired sonne, and also your selfe, in smothering your deserved prayses; and all men generally, in withholding <sup>310</sup> from them so divine pleasures which they might conceive of your gallant English verses, as they have already doen of your Latine poemmes, which, in my opinion, both for invention and elocution are very delicate and superexcellent. And thus againe I take my leave of my good Maister Harvey. From my lodging at London, thys 10 of April, 1579.



## THE GENERALL ARGUMENT OF THE WHOLE BOOKE

LITTLE, I hope, needeth me at large to discourse the first originall of *Æglogues*, having already touched the same. But, for the word *Æglogues*, I know, is unknown to most, and also mistaken of some the best learned (as they think) I will say somewhat thereof, being not at all impertinent to my present purpose.

They were first of the Greekes, the inventours of them, called *Æglogai*, as it were *αἰγῶν*, or *αἰγονόμων, λόγοι*, that is, Gotheards tales. For although in Virgile and others the speakers be more shepherds then goatheards, yet Theocritus, in whom is more ground of authoritie then in Virgile, this specially from that deriving, as from the first head and welspring, the whole invencion of his *Æglogues*, maketh gotheards the persons and authors of his tales. This being, who seeth not the grossnesse of such as by colour of learning would make us beleve that they are more rightly termed *Eclogai*; as they would say, extraordinary discourses of unnecessary matter? which difinition, albe in substance and meaning it agree with the nature of the thing, yet no whit answereth with the *ἀνάλυσις* and interpretation of the word. For they be not termed *Eclogues*, but *Æglogues*: which sentence this authour very well observing, upon good judgement, though indeede few gotheards have to doe herein, nethelless doubteth not to call them by the used and best known name. Other curious discourses hereof I reserve to greater occasion.

These xij *Æglogues*, every where answering to the seasons of the twelve monethes, may be well divided into three formes or ranckes. For eyther they be plaintive, as the first, the sixth, the eleventh, and the twelfth; or recreative, such as all those be which containe matter of love, or commendation of special personages; or moral, which for the most part be mixed with some satyricall bitterness: namely the second, of reverence dewe to old age, the fifth, of coloured deceit, the seventh and ninth, of dissolute shepherds and pastours, the tenth, of contempt of poetrie and pleasaunt wits. And to this division may every thing herein be reasonably applied: a few onely

except, whose speciall purpose and meaning I am not privie to. And thus much generally of these xij *Æglogues*. Now will we speake particularly of all, and first of the first, which he calleth by the first monethes name, Januarie: wherein to some he may seeme fowly to have faulted, in that he erroneously beginneth with that moneth which beginneth not the yeare. For it is wel known, and stoutely mainteyned with stronge reasons of the learned, that the yeare beginneth in March; for then the sonne reneweth his finished course, and the seasonable spring refresheth the earth, and the plesance thereof, being buried in the sadnesse of the dead winter now worne away, reliveth. This opinion mayntaine the olde astrologers and philosophers, namely the reverend Andalo, and Macrobius in his holydayes of Saturne; which account also was generally observed both of Grecians and Romans. But saving the leave of such learned heads, we mayntaine a custome of counting the seasons from the moneth January, upon a more speciall cause then the heathen philosophers ever coulde conceive, that is, for the incarnation of our mighty Saviour and eternall Redeemer, the Lord Christ, who, as then renewing the state of the decayed world, and returning the compasse of expired yeres to theyr former date and first commencement, left to us his heires a memoriall of his birth in the ende of the last yeere and beginning of the next: which reckoning, beside that eternall monument of our salvation, leaneth also upon good prooffe of special judgement. For albeit that in elder times, when as yet the count of the yere was not perfected, as afterwarde it was by Julius Cæsar, they began to tel the monethes from Marches beginning, and according to the same, God (as is sayd in Scripture) comaunded the people of the Jewes to count the moneth *Abib*, that which we call March, for the first moneth, in remembrance that in that moneth he brought them out of the land of *Ægypt*, yet according to tradition of latter times it hath bene otherwise observed, both in government of the Church and rule of mightiest realmes. For from Julius Cæsar, who first observed the leape yeere, which he called *Bissextilem Annum*, and brought into a more certain course the odde wandring dayes which of the Greekes were called

ἐπεμβαίνοντες, of the Romanes *intercalares* (for in such matter of learning I am forced to use the termes of the learned) the monethes have bene nombred xij, which in the first <sup>110</sup> ordinaunce of Romulus were but tenne, counting but ccciiij dayes in every yeare, and beginning with March. But Numa Pompilius, who was the father of al the Romain ceremonies and religion, seeing that reckoning to agree neither with the course of the sonne, nor of the moone, thereunto added two monethes, January and February: wherein it seemeth, that wise king minded upon good reason to begin the yeare at <sup>120</sup> Januarie, of him therefore so called *tantumquam janua anni*, the gate and entraunce of the yere, or of the name of the god *Janus*, to which god for that the old Paynims attributed the byrth and beginning of all creatures new comming into the worlde, it seemeth that he therefore to him assigned the beginning and first entraunce of the yeare. Which account for the most part hath hether-to continued: notwithstanding that <sup>130</sup> the Ægyptians beginne theyr yeare at September, for that, according to the opinion of the best rabbins and very purpose of the Scripture selfe, God made the worlde in that moneth, that is called of them *Tisri*. And therefore he commaunded them to keepe the feast of Pavilions in the end of the yeare, in the xv. day of the seventh moneth, which before that time was the first.

But our authour, respecting nether the <sup>140</sup> subtiltie of thone parte, nor the antiquitie of thother, thinketh it fittest, according to the simplicitie of commen understanding, to begin with Januarie, wening it perhaps no decorum that shepheard should be seene in matter of so deepe insight, or canvase a case of so doubtful judgment. So therefore beginneth he, and so continueth he throughout.

## JANUARYE

## ÆGLOGA PRIMA

## ARGUMENT

IN this fyrst Æglogue Colin Cloute, a shepheardes boy, complaineth him of his unfortunate love, being but newly (as semeth) enamoured of a countrie lasse called Rosalinde: with which strong affection being very sore traveled, he compareth his carefull case to the

sadde season of the yeare, to the frostie ground, to the frosen trees, and to his owne winter-beaten flocke. And lastlye, fynding himselfe robbed of all former pleasaunce and delights, hee breaketh his pipe in peeeces, and casteth him selfe to the ground.

## COLIN CLOUTE.

A SHEPEHEARDS boye (no better doe him call)

When winters wastful spight was almost spent,

All in a sunneshine day, as did befall,  
Led forth his flock, that had bene long ypent.

So faynt they woxe, and feeble in the folde,

That now nunethes their feete could them uphold.

All as the sheepe, such was the shepeheards looke,

For pale and wanne he was, (alas the while!)  
May seeme he lov'd, or els some care he tooke:

Well couth he tune his pipe, and frame his stile.

Tho to a hill his faynting flocke he ledde,  
And thus him playnd, the while his shepe there fedde.

'Ye gods of love, that pitie lovers payne,  
(If any gods the paine of lovers pitie,) Looke from above, where you in joyes remaine,

And bowe your eares unto my dolefull dittie.

And Pan, thou shepheards god, that once didst love,

Pitie the paines that thou thy selfe didst prove.

'Thou barrein ground, whome winters wrath hath wasted,

Art made a myrrhour to behold my plight:  
Whilome thy fresh spring flowrd, and after hasted

Thy sommer prowde with daffadillies dight,  
And now is come thy wynters stormy state,

Thy mantle mard wherein thou maskedst late.

'Such rage as winters reigneth in my heart.  
My life bloud friesing with unkindly cold:

Such stormy stoures do breede my balefull  
 smart,  
 As if my yeare were wast and woxen old.  
 And yet, alas ! but now my spring be-  
 gonue,  
 And yet, alas ! yt is already donne. 30

‘ You naked trees, whose shady leaves are  
 lost,  
 Wherein the byrds were wont to build their  
 bowre,  
 And now are clothd with mosse and hoary  
 frost,  
 Insteade of bloosmes, wherwith your buds  
 did flowre:  
 I see your teares, that from your boughes  
 doe raine,  
 Whose drops in drery ysicles remaine.

‘ All so my lustfull leafe is drye and sere,  
 My timely buds with wayling all are wasted;  
 The blossome which my braunch of youth  
 did beare  
 With breathed sighes is blowne away and  
 blasted; 40  
 And from mine eyes the drizling teares  
 descend,  
 As on your boughes the ysicles depend.

‘ Thou feeble flocke, whose fleece is rough  
 and rent,  
 Whose knees are weake through fast and  
 evill fare,  
 Mayst wnesse well by thy ill government,  
 Thy maysters mind is overcome with  
 care.  
 Thou weake, I wanne; thou leane, I quite  
 forlorne:  
 With mourning pyne I; you with pyning  
 mourne.

‘ A thousand sithes I curse that carefull  
 hower  
 Wherein I longd the neighbour towne to  
 see: 50  
 And eke tenne thousand sithes I blesse the  
 stoure  
 Wherein I sawe so fayre a sight as shee.  
 Yet all for naught: such sight hath bred  
 my bane.  
 Ah, God ! that love should breede both joy  
 and payne !

‘ It is not Hobbinol wherefore I plaine,  
 Albee my love he seeke with dayly suit:

His clownish gifts and curtsies I disdaine,  
 His kiddes, his cracknelles, and his early  
 fruit.

Ah, foolish Hobbinol ! thy gyfts bene  
 vayne:

Colin them gives to Rosalind againe. 60

‘ I love thilke lasse, (alas ! why doe I love ?)  
 And am forlorne, (alas ! why am I lorne ?)  
 Shee deignes not my good will, but doth  
 reprove,  
 And of my rurall musick holdeth scorne.  
 Shepheards devise she hateth as the  
 snake,  
 And laughes the songes that Colin Clout  
 doth make.

‘ Wherefore, my pype, albee rude Pan thou  
 please,  
 Yet for thou pleasest not where most I  
 would:  
 And thou, unlucky Muse, that wontst to  
 ease  
 My musing mynd, yet canst not, when thou  
 should: 70  
 Both pype and Muse shall sore the while  
 aby.’  
 So broke his oaten pype, and downe dyd  
 lye.

By that, the welked Phœbus gan availle  
 His weary waine, and nowe the frosty  
 Night

Her mantle black through heaven gan over-  
 haile.

Which seene, the pensife boy, halfe in des-  
 pight,

Arose, and homeward drove his sonned  
 sheepe,

Whose hanging heads did seeme his care-  
 full case to weepe.

COLINS EMBLEME.

*Anchôra speme.*

#### GLOSSE

*Colin Cloute* is a name not greatly used, and  
 yet have I sene a poesie of Maister Skeltons  
 under that title. But indeede the word Colin  
 is Frenche, and used of the French poete Marot  
 (if he be worthy of the name of a poete) in a  
 certein æglogue. Under which name this poete  
 secretly shadoweth himself, as sometime did  
 Virgil under the name of Tityrus, thinking :



much fitter then such Latine names, for the great unlikelyhoode of the language. <sup>10</sup>

*Unnethes*, scarcely.

*Couthe* commeth of the verbe *Conne*, that is, to know or to have skill. As well interpreteth the same the worthy Sir Tho. Smitt, in his booke of government : wherof I have a perfect copie in wryting, lent me by his kinsman, and my verye singular good freend, Maister Gabriel Harvey : as also of some other his most grave and excellent wrytings.

*Sythe*, time. <sup>20</sup>

*Neighbour towne*, the next towne : expressing the Latine *vicina*.

*Stoure*, a fitt.

*Sere*, withered.

*His clownish gyfts* imitateth Virgils verse,

'Rusticus es Corydon, nec munera curat Alexis.'

*Hobbinol* is a fained country name, whereby, it being so commune and usuall, seemeth to be hidden the person of some his very speciall and most familiar freend, whom he entirely and <sup>30</sup> extraordinarily beloved, as peradventure shall be more largely declared hereafter. In this place seemeth to be some savour of disorderly love, which the learned call *pæderastice* : but it is gathered beside his meaning. For who that hath red Plato his dialogue called *Aleybiades*, Xenophon, and Maximus Tyrius, of Socrates opinions, may easily perceive that such love is muche to be alowed and liked of, specially so meant as Socrates used it : who sayth, that <sup>40</sup> in deede he loved Aleybiades extremely, yet not Aleybiades person, but hys soule, which is Aleybiades owne selfe. And so is *pæderastice* much to be preferred before *gynerastice*, that is, the love whiche enflameth men with lust toward womankind. But yet let no man thinke, that herein I stand with Lucian, or his develish disciple Unico Aretino, in defence of execrable and horrible sinnes of forbidden and unlawful fleshlinesse. Whose abominable error is <sup>50</sup> fully confuted of Perionius, and others.

*I love*, a pretie epanorthosis in these two verses. and withall a paronomasia or playing with the word, where he sayth, *I love thilke lasse* (*alas*, &c.

*Rosalinde* is also a feigned name, which, being wel ordered, wil bewray the very name of hys love and mistresse, whom by that name he coloureth. So as Ovide shadoweth hys love under the name of Corynna, which of <sup>60</sup> some is supposed to be Julia, thenperor Augustus hys daughter, and wyfe to Agryppa. So doth Arnutius Stella every where call his lady Asteris and Ianthis, albe it is wel known that her right name was Violantilla : as witnesseth Statius in his *Epithalamium*. And so the famous paragone of Italy, Madonna Cœlia, in her letters envelopeth her selfe under the name of

Ziina : and Petrona under the name of Bell-  
ochia. And this generally hath bene a com- <sup>70</sup>  
mon custome of counterfeiting the names of  
secreet personages.

*Avail*, bring downe.

*Overhaile*, drawe over.

#### EMBLEME.

His *Embleme* or *poesye* is here under added in Italian, *Anchóra speme* : the meaning wherof is, that notwithstanding his extreme passion and lucklesse love, yet, leaning on hope, he is some what recomforted.

## FEBRUARIE

### ÆGLOGA SECUNDA

#### ARGUMENT

THIS Æglogue is rather morall and generall then bent to any secrete or particular purpose. It specially conteyneth a discourse of old age, in the persone of Thenot, au olde shepheard, who, for his crookednesse and unlustinesse, is scorned of Cuddie, an unhappy heardmans boye. The matter very well accordeth with the season of the moneth, the yeare now drouping, and, as it were, drawing to his last age. For as in this time of yeare, so then in our bodies, there is a dry and withering cold, which congealeth the crudled blood, and frieseth the wether-beaten flesh, with stormes of fortune and hoare frosts of care. To which purpose the olde man telleth a tale of the Oake and the Bryer, so lively and so feelingly, as, if the thing were set forth in some picture before our eyes, more plainly could not appeare.

#### CUDDIE. THENOT.

*Cud.* Ah for pittie ! wil rancke winters  
rage

These bitter blasts never ginne tasswage ?  
The kene cold blowes through my beaten  
hyde,

All as I were through the body gryde.  
My ragged routes all shiver and shake,  
As doen high towers in an earthquake :  
They wont in the wind wagge their wrigle  
tailes,

Perke as peacock : but nowe it avales.

*The.* Lewdly complainest thou, laesie  
ladde,

Of winters wracke, for making thee sadde.  
Must not the world wend in his commun  
course, <sup>11</sup>

From good to badd, and from badde to  
worse,

From worse unto that is worst of all,  
 And then returne to his former fall?  
 Who will not suffer the stormy time,  
 Where will he live tyll the lusty prime?  
 Selfe have I worne out thrise threttie  
 yeares,

Some in much joy, many in many teares;  
 Yet never complained of cold nor heate,  
 Of sommers flame, nor of winters threat; 20  
 Ne ever was to fortune foeman,  
 But gently tooke that ungently came:  
 And ever my flocke was my chiefe care;  
 Winter or sommer they mought well fare.

*Cud.* No marveile, Thenot, if thou can  
 beare

Cherefully the winters wrathfull cheare:  
 For age and winter accord full nie,  
 This chill, that cold, this crooked, that  
 wrye;

And as the lowring wether lookes downe,  
 So semest thou like Good Fryday to  
 frowne. 30

But my flowring youth is foe to frost,  
 My shippe unwont in stormes to be tost.

*The.* The soveraigne of seas he blames  
 in vaine,

That, once seabate, will to sea againe.  
 So loytring live you little heardgroomes,  
 Keeping your beastes in the budded  
 broomes:

And when the shining sunne laugheth once,  
 You deemen the spring is come attonce.  
 The gyme you, fond flyes, the cold to scorne,  
 And, crowing in pypes made of greene  
 corne, 40

You thinke to be lords of the yeare.  
 But eft, when ye count you freed from feare,  
 Comes the breme winter with chamfred  
 browes,

Full of wrinkles and frostie furrowes,  
 Drerily shooting his stormy darte,  
 Which cruddles the blood, and pricks the  
 harte.

Then is your carelesse corage accoied,  
 Your carefull heards with cold bene an-  
 noied:

Then paye you the price of your surquedrie,  
 With weeping, and wayling, and misery. 50

*Cud.* Ah, foolish old man! I scorne thy  
 skill,

That wouldest me my springing youngth to  
 spil.

I deeme thy braine emperished bee  
 Through rusty elde, that hath rotted thee:  
 Or sicker thy head veray tottie is,

So on thy corbe shoulder it leanes amisse.  
 Now thy selfe hast lost both lopp and topp,  
 Als my budding braunch thou wouldest  
 cropp:

But were thy yeares greene, as now bene  
 myne,

To other delights they would encline. 60  
 Tho wouldest thou learne to caroll of love,  
 And hery with hymnes thy lasses glove:  
 Tho wouldest thou pype of Phyllis prayse:  
 But Phyllis is myne for many dayes:  
 I wonne her with a gyrdle of gelt,  
 Embost with buegle about the belt:

Such an one shepeheards woulde make full  
 faine,

Such an one would make thee younge  
 againe.

*The.* Thou art a fon, of thy love to  
 boste;

All that is lent to love wyll be lost. 70

*Cud.* Seest howe brag yond bullocke  
 beares,

So smirke, so smoothe, his pricked eares?  
 His hornes bene as broade as rainebowe  
 bent,

His dewelap as lythe as lasse of Kent.

See howe he venteth into the wynd.

Weenest of love is not his mynd?

Seemeth thy flocke thy counsell can,  
 So lustlesse bene they, so weake, so wan,  
 Clothed with cold, and hoary wyth frost. 80  
 Thy flocks father his corage hath lost:  
 Thy ewes, that wont to have blowen bags,  
 Like wailefull widdowes hangen their crags:  
 The rather lambes bene starved with cold,  
 All for their maister is lustlesse and old.

*The.* Cuddie, I wote thou kenst little  
 good,

So vainely tadvaunce thy headlessehood.

For youngth is a bubble blown up with  
 breath,

Whose witt is weakenesse, whose wage is  
 death,

Whose way is wildernesse, whose yune  
 penaunce,

And stoopegallaunt age, the hoste of gree-  
 vauce. 90

But shall I tel thee a tale of truth,  
 Which I cond of Tityrus in my youth,  
 Keeping his sheepe on the hils of Kent?

*Cud.* To nought more, Thenot, my mind  
 is bent,

Then to heare novells of his devise:

They bene so well thewed, and so wise,

What ever that good old man bespake.



*The.* Many meete tales of youth did he make,

And some of love, and some of chevalrie:  
But none fitter then this to applie. 100  
Now listen a while, and hearken the end.

There grewe an aged tree on the greene,  
A goodly Oake sometime had it bene,  
With armes full strong and largely displayd,

But of their leaves they were disarayde:  
The bodie bigge, and mightely pight,  
Thoroughly rooted, and of wonderous hight:  
Whilome had bene the king of the field,  
And mochell mast to the husband did yielde,  
And with his nuts larded many swine. 110  
But now the gray mosse marred his rine,  
His bared boughes were beaten with stormes,

His toppe was bald, and wasted with wormes,

His honor decayed, his braunches sere.

Hard by his side grewe a bragging Brere,  
Which proudly thrust into thelement,  
And seemed to threat the firmament.

Yt was embellisht with blossomes fayre,  
And thereto aye wonned to repayre 119  
The shepherds daughters, to gather flowres,  
To peinct their girlonds with his colowres:  
And in his small bushes used to shrowde  
The sweete nightingale singing so lowde:  
Which made this foolish Brere waxe so bold,

That on a time he cast him to scold  
And snebbe the good Oake, for he was old.

‘Why standst there,’ quoth he, ‘thou brutish blocke?’

Nor for fruit nor for shadowe serves thy stocke.

Seest how fresh my flowers bene spreadde,  
Dyed in lilly white and cremsin redde, 130  
With leaves engrained in lusty greeue,  
Colours meete to clothe a mayden queene?  
Thy wast bignes but combers the grownd,  
And dirks the beauty of my blossomes round.

The mouldie mosse, which thee accloieth,  
My sinamon smell too much annoieth.  
Wherefore soone, I rede thee, hence remove,  
Least thou the price of my displeasure prove.’

So spake this bold Brere with great disdain:

Little him answered the Oake againe, 140  
But yielded, with shame and greefe adawed,  
That of a weede he was overawed.

Yt chaunced after upon a day,  
The husbandman selfe to come that way,  
Of custome for to surwee his grownd,  
And his trees of state in compasse rownd.  
Him when the spitefull Brere had espyed,  
Causlesse complained, and lowdly cryed  
Unto his lord, stirring up sterne strife:

‘O my liege lord, the god of my life, 150  
Pleaseth you ponder your suppliants plaint,  
Caused of wrong, and cruell constraint,  
Which I your poore vassall dayly endure:  
And but your goodnes the same recure,  
Am like for desperate doole to dye,  
Through felonous force of mineemie.’

Greatly aghast with this piteous plea,  
Him rested the goodman on the lea,  
And badde the Brere in his plaint proceede.  
With painted words tho gan this proude weede 160

(As most useu ambitious folke)  
His colowred crime with craft to cloke.

‘Ah my soveraigne, lord of creatures all,  
Thou placer of plants both humble and tall,  
Was not I planted of thiue owne hand,  
To be the primrose of all thy land,  
With flowring blossomes to furnish the prime,

And scarlot berries in sommer time?  
How falls it then, that this faded Oake,  
Whose bodie is sere, whose braunches broke, 170

Whose naked armes stretch unto the fyre,  
Unto such tyrannie doth aspire;  
Hindring with his shade my lovely light,  
And robbing me of the swete sonnes sight?  
So beate his old boughes my tender side,  
That oft the blood springeth from wounds wyde:

Untimely my flowres forced to fall,  
That bene the honor of your coronall.  
And oft he lets his cancker wormes light  
Upon my braunches, to worke me more spight: 180

And oft his hoarie locks downe doth cast,  
Where with my fresh flowretts bene defast.  
For this, and many more such outrage,  
Craving your goodlihead to aswage  
The ranckorous rigour of his might,  
Nought aske I, but onely to hold my right;  
Submitting me to your good sufferance,  
And praying to be garded from greevance.’

To this the Oake cast him to replie  
Well as he couth: but his enimie 190  
Had kindled such coles of displeasure,  
That the good man noulde stay his leasure,

But home him hasted with furious heate,  
 Encreasing his wrath with many a threate.  
 His harmefull hatchet he hent in hand,  
 (Alas, that it so ready should stand !)  
 And to the field alone he speedeth,  
 (Ay little helpe to harme there needeth.)  
 Anger nould let him speake to the tree,  
 Enaunter his rage mought cooled bee; <sup>200</sup>  
 But to the roote bent his sturdy stroke,  
 And made many wounds in the wast Oake.  
 The axes edge did oft turne againe,  
 As halfe unwilling to cutte the graine:  
 Smed, the sencelesse yron dyd feare,  
 Or to wrong holy eld did forbear.  
 For it had bene an auncient tree,  
 Sacred with many a mysteree,  
 And often crost with the priestes crewe,  
 And often halowed with holy water dewe.  
 But sike fancies weren foolerie, <sup>211</sup>  
 And broughten this Oake to this miserye.  
 For nought mought they quitten him from  
 decay:

For fiercely the goodman at him did laye.  
 The blocke oft groned under the blow,  
 And sighed to see his neare overthrow.  
 In fine, the steele had pierced his pitth:  
 Tho downe to the earth he fell forthwith:  
 His wonderous weight made the grounde  
 to quake,  
 Thearth shronke under him, and seemed to  
 shake. <sup>220</sup>

There lyeth the Oake, pitied of none.  
 Now stands the Brere like a lord alone,  
 Puffed up with pryde and vaine pleasaunce:  
 But all this glee had no continuance.  
 For eftsones winter gan to approche,  
 The blustering Boreas did encroche,  
 And beate upon the solitarie Brere:  
 For nowe no succoure was seene him nere.  
 Now gan he repent his pryde to late:  
 For naked left and disconsolate, <sup>230</sup>  
 The byting frost nipt his stalke dead,  
 The watrie wette weighed downe his head,  
 And heaped snowe burdned him so sore,  
 That nowe upright he can stand no more:  
 And being downe, is trodde in the durt  
 Of cattell, and brouzed, and sorely hurt.  
 Such was thend of this ambitious Brere,  
 For scorning eld —

*Cud.* Now I pray thee, shepherd, tel it  
 not forth:

Here is a long tale, and little worth. <sup>240</sup>  
 So longe have I listened to thy speche,  
 That graffed to the ground is my breche:  
 My hartblood is welnig<sup>b</sup> forne, I feelee,

And my galage growne fast to my heele:  
 But little ease of thy lewd tale I tasted.  
 Hye thee home, shepherd, the day is nigh  
 wasted.

THENOTS EMBLEME.

*Iddio, perchè è vecchio,  
 Fa suoi al suo essempio.*

CUDDIES EMBLEME.

*Niuno vecchio  
 Spaventa Iddio.*

GLOSSE

*Kene*, sharpe.

*Gride*, perced: an olde word much used of  
 Lidgate, but not found (that I know of) in  
 Chaucer.

*Ronts*, young bullockes.

*Wracke*, ruine or violence, whence commeth  
 shipwracke: and not *wreake*, that is vengeance  
 or wrath.

*Foeman*, a foe.

*Thenot*, the name of a shepherd in Marot  
 his *Æglogues*. <sup>11</sup>

*The soveraigne of seas* is Neptune the god  
 of the seas. The saying is borrowed of Minus  
 Publianus, which used this proverb in a verse,  
 ‘Improbè Neptunum accusat, qui iterum naufragium  
 facit.’

*Heardgromes*, Chaucers verse almost whole.

*Fond Flyes*: He compareth carelesse slug-  
 gardes, or ill husbandmen, to flyes, that so  
 soone as the sunne shineth, or yt wexeth any  
 thing warme, begin to flye abroade, when  
 sodeinly they be overtaken with cold. <sup>21</sup>

*But eft when*, a verie excellent and lively  
 description of winter, so as may bee indiffer-  
 ently taken, eyther for old age, or for winter  
 season.

*Breme*, chill, bitter.

*Chamfred*, chapt, or wrinkled.

*Accoied*, plucked downe and daunted.

*Surquedrie*, pryde.

*Elde*, olde age. <sup>30</sup>

*Sicker*, sure.

*Tottie*, wavering.

*Corbe*, crooked.

*Herie*, worshippe.

*Phyllis*, the name of some mayde unknowne,  
 whom Cuddie, whose person is secrete, loved.  
 The name is usuall in Theocritus, Virgile, and  
 Mantuane.

*Belte*, a girdle or wast band.

*A fon*, a foole. <sup>40</sup>

*Lythe*, soft and gentle.

*Venteth*, snuffeth in the wind.

*Thy flocks father*, the ramme.

*Craggs, neckes.*

*Rather lumbes*, that be ewed early in the beginning of the yeare.

*Youth is*, a verye moral and pitthy allegorie of youth, and the lustes thereof, compared to a wearie wayfaring man.

*Tityrus*: I suppose he meanes Chaucer, 50 whose prayse for pleasaunt tales cannot dye, so long as the memorie of hys name shal live, and the name of poetrie shal endure.

*Well thewed*, that is, *bene moratae*, full of morall wisenesse.

*There grew*: This tale of the Oake and the Brere he telleth as learned of Chaucer, but it is cleane in another kind, and rather like to Æsopes fables. It is very excellent for pleasaunt descriptions, being altogether a 60 certaine icon or hypotyposis of disdainfull younkers.

*Embellisht*, beautified and adorned.

*To wonne*, to haunt or frequent.

*Sneb*, checke.

*Why standst*: The speach is scorneful and very presumptuous.

*Engrained*, dyed iu grain.

*Accloiethe*, encombreth.

*Adawed*, daunted and confounded. 70

*Trees of state*, taller trees, fitte for timber wood.

*Sterne strife*, said Chancer, sc. fell and sturdy.

*O my liege*, a maner of supplication, wherein is kindly coloured the affection and speache of ambitious men.

*Coronall*, garlande.

*Flourets*, young blossomes.

*The Primrose*, the chiefe and worthiest.

*Naked armes*, metaphorically ment of the 80 bare boughes, spoyled of leaves. This colourably he speaketh, as adjudging hym to the fyre.

*The blood*, spoken of a blocke, as it were of a living creature, figuratively, and (as they say) *κατ' εικασμόν*.

*Hoarie lockes*, metaphorically for withered leaves.

*Hent*, caught.

*Nould*, for would not. 90

*Ay*, evermore.

*Wounds*, gashes.

*Enaunter*, least that.

*The priestes crewe*, holy water pott, wherewith the popishe priest used to sprinkle and hallowe the trees from mischaunce. Such blindness was in those times, which the poete supposeth to have bene the finall decay of this aunient Oake.

*The blocke oft groned*, a livelye figure, 100 whiche geveth sence and feeling to unsensible creatures, as Virgile also sayeth: '*Saxa gemunt gravido*,' &c.

*Boreas*, the northerne wynd, that bringeth the moste stormie weather.

*Glee*, chere and jollitie.

*For scorning eld*: And minding (as shoulde seme) to have made ryme to the former verse, he is conningly cutte of by Cuddye, as disdayning to here any more. 110

*Galuge*, a startuppe or clownish shoe.

#### EMBLEME.

This embleme is spoken of Thenot, as a moral of his former tale: namelye, that God, which is himselfe most aged, being before al ages, and without beginninge, maketh those whom he loveth like to himselfe, in heaping yeares unto theyre dayes, and blessing them wyth longe lyfe. For the blessing of age is not given to all, but unto those whome God will so blesse: and albeit that many evil men 120 reache unto such fulnesse of yeares, and some also wexe olde in myserie and thraldome, yet therefore is not age ever the lesse blessing. For even to such evil men such number of yeares is added, that they may in their last dayes repent, and come to their first home. So the old man checketh the rashheaded boy for despysing his gray and frosty heares.

Whom Cuddye doth counterbuff with a byting and bitter proverbe, spoken indeede at 130 the first in contempt of old age generally. For it was an old opinion, and yet is continued in some mens conceipt, that men of yeares have no feare of god at al, or not so much as younger folke. For that being rypened with long experience, and having passed many bitter brunts and blastes of vengeance, they dread no stormes of Fortune, nor wrathe of gods, nor daunger of menne, as being eyther by longe and ripe wisdomedome armed against all mis- 140 chaunces and adversitie, or with much trouble hardened against all troublesome tydes: lyke unto the Ape, of which is sayd in Æsops fables, that oftentimes meeting the Lyon, he was at first sore aghast and dismayed at the grimmes and austeritie of hys countenance, but at last being acquainted with his lookes, he was so furre from fearing him, that he would familiarly gybe and jest with him: suche longe experience breedeth in some men securitie. Although 150 it please Erasmus, a great clerke and good old father, more fatherly and favourablye to construe it, in his Adages, for his own behoofe, that by the proverbe, '*Nemo senex metuit Jovem*,' is not meant, that old men have no feare of God at al, but that they be furre from superstition and idolatrous regard of false gods, as is Jupiter. But his greate learning notwithstanding, it is to plaine to be gainsayd. that olde men are muche more enclined to such fond fooleries, then younger heades.



## MARCH

## ÆGLOGA TERTIA

## ARGUMENT

IN this Æglogue two shepherds boyes, taking occasion of the season, beginne to make purpose of love, and other pleasaunce which to springtime is most agreeable. The speciall meaning hereof is to give certaine markes and tokens to know Cupide, the poets god of love. But more particularlye, I thinke, in the person of Thomalin is meant some secreete freend, who scorned Love and his knights so long, till at length him selfe was entangled, and unwares wounded with the dart of some beautifull regard, which is Cupides arrow.

## WILLYE. THOMALIN.

*Wil.* Thomalin, why sytten we soe,  
As weren overwent with woe,

Upon so fayre a morow ?  
The joyous time now nigheth fast,  
That shall alegge this bitter blast,  
And slake the winters sorowe.

*Tho.* Sicker, Willye, thou warnest well:  
For winters wrath beginnes to quell,  
And pleasant spring appeareth.

The grasse nowe ginnes to be refresht, 10  
The swallow peepes out of her nest,  
And clowdie welkin cleareth.

*Wil.* Seest not thilke same hawthorne stude,  
How bragly it beginnes to budde,  
And utter his tender head ?

Flora now calleth forth eche flower,  
And bids make ready Maias bowre,  
That newe is upryst from bedde.  
Tho shall we sporten in delight,  
And learne with Lettice to wexe light, 20  
That scornefully lookes askance;

Tho will we little Love awake,  
That nowe sleepeth in Lethe lake,  
And pray him leaden our daunce.

*Tho.* Willye, I wene thou bee assott:  
For lustie Love still sleepeth not,  
But is abroad at his game.

*Wil.* How kenst thou that he is awoke ?  
Or hast thy selfe his slomber broke ?  
Or made previe to the same ? 30

*Tho.* No, but happely I hym spyde,  
Where in a bush he did him hide,  
With winges of purple and blewe.  
And were not that my sheepe would stray,  
The previe marks I would bewray,  
Whereby by chaunce I him knewe

*Wil.* Thomalin, have no care forthy;  
My selfe will have a double eye,  
Ylike to my flocke and thine:

For als at home I have a syre, 40  
A stepdame eke, as whott as fyre,  
That dewly adayes counts mine.

*Tho.* Nay, but thy seeing will not serve,  
My sheepe for that may chaunce to swerve,  
And fall into some mischief.

For sithens is but the third morowe  
That I chaunst to fall a sleepe with sorowe,  
And waked againe with griefe:

The while thilke same unhappye ewe,  
Whose clouted legge her hurt doth shewe,  
Fell headlong into a dell, 51

And there unjoynted both her bones:  
Mought her necke bene joynted attones,  
She shoulde have neede no more spell.

Thelf was so wanton and so wood,  
(But now I trowe can better good)  
She mought ne gang on the greene.

*Wil.* Let be, as may be, that is past:  
That is to come, let be forecast.

Now tell us what thou hast seene. 60

*Tho.* It was upon a holiday,  
When shepherdes groomes han leave to  
play,

I cast to goe a shooting.  
Long wandring up and downe the land,  
With bowe and bolts in either hand,

For birds in bushes tooting,  
At length within an yvie todde  
(There shrouded was the little god)  
I heard a busie bustling.

I bent my bolt against the bush, 70  
Listening if any thing did rushe,  
But then heard no more rustling.

Tho peeping close into the thicke,  
Might see the moving of some quicke,  
Whose shape appeared not:

But were it faerie, feend, or snake,  
My courage earnd it to awake,  
And manfully thereat shotte.

With that sprong forth a naked swayne,  
With spotted winges like peacocks trayne,  
And laughing lope to a tree, 81

His gylden quiver at his backe,  
And silver bowe, which was but slacke,  
Which lightly he bent at me.

That seeing I, levelde againe,  
And shott at him with might and maine,  
As thicke as it had hayed.

So long I shott that al was spent:  
Tho pumie stones I hastily hent,

And threwe; but nought availed: 90

He was so wimble and so wight,  
 From bough to bough he lepped light,  
 And oft the punies latched.  
 Therewith affrayd I ranne away:  
 But he, that earst seemd but to playe,  
 A shaft in earnest snatched,  
 And hit me running in the heele:  
 For then, I little smart did feelee;  
 But soone it sore encreased.  
 And now it ranckleth more and more, 100  
 And inwardly it festreth sore,  
 Ne wote I how to cease it.  
*Wil.* Thomalin, I pittie thy plight.  
 Perdie, with Love thou diddest fight:  
 I know him by a token.  
 For once I heard my father say,  
 How he him caught upon a day,  
 (Whereof he wilbe wroken)  
 Entangled in a fowling net,  
 Which he for carrion crows had set, 110  
 That in our peeretree haunted.  
 Tho sayd, he was a winged lad,  
 But bowe and shafts as then none had,  
 Els had he sore be daunted.  
 But see, the welkin thicks apace,  
 And stouping Phebus steepes his face:  
 Yts time to hast us homeward.

## WILLYES EMBLEME.

*To be wise and eke to love,  
 Is graunted scarce to god above.*

## THOMALINS EMBLEME.

*Of hony and of gaule in love there is store:  
 The honye is much, but the gaule is more.*

## GLOSS

This Æglogue seemeth somewhat to resemble that same of Theocritus, wherein the boy likewise telling the old man, that he had shot at a winged boy in a tree, was by hym warned to beware of mischief to come.

*Overwent*, overgone.

*Alegge*, to lessen or aswage.

*To quell*, to abate.

*Welkin*, the skie.

*The swallow*, which bird useth to be counted the messenger, and as it were, the fore-runner, of springe.

*Flora*, the goddess of flowres, but indede (as saith Tacitus) a famous harlot, which, with the abuse of her body having gotten great riches, made the people of Rome her heyre: who, in remembrance of so great beneficence, appointed a yearely feste for the memoriall of her, calling her, not as she was, nor as some doe think, *Andronico*. but *Flora*: making 20

her the goddess of all floures, and doing yerely to her solemne sacrifice.

*Maia's bower*, that is, the pleasaunt field, or rather the Maye bushes. *Maia* is a goddess and the mother of *Mercurie*, in honour of whome the moneth of *Maye* is of her name so called, as sayth *Macrobius*.

*Lettice*, the name of some country lasse.

*Ascaunce*, askewe or asquint.

*Forthy*, therefore.

*Lethe* is a lake in hell, which the poetes call the lake of forgetfulness. For *Lethe* signifieth forgetfulness. Wherein the soules being dipped, did forget the cares of their former lyfe. So that by Love sleeping in *Lethe* lake, he meaneth he was almost forgotten, and out of knowledge, by reason of winters hardnesse, when all pleasures, as it were, sleepe and weare oute of mynde.

*Assotte*, to dote. 30

*His slomber*: To breake Loves slomber is to exercise the delightes of love and wanton pleasures.

*Winges of purple*, so is he feyned of the poetes.

*For als*: He imitateth Virgils verse,

'Est mihi nanque domi pater, est injusta noverca, &c.'

*A dell*, a hole in the ground.

*Spell* is a kinde of verse or charme, that in elder tymes they used often to say over every thing that they would have preserved, as the nightspel for theeves, and the woodspell. And herehence, I thinke, is named the gospell, as it were Gods spell or worde. And so sayth Chaucer, 'Listeneth Lordings to my spell.'

*Gange*, goe.

*An yvie todde*, a thicke bush.

*Swaine*, a boye: for so is he described of the poetes to be a boye, sc. alwayes freshe and lustie: blindfolded, because he maketh no difference of personages: wyth divers coloured winges, sc. ful of flying fancies: with bowe and arrow, that is, with glaunce of beautye, which prycketh as a forked arrowe. He is sayd also to have shafts, some leaden, some golden: that is, both pleasure for the gracious and loved, and sorow for the lover that is disdayned or forsaken. But who liste more at large to behold Cupids colours and furniture, let him reade ether *Propertius*, or *Moschus* his *Idyllion* of *wandring Love*, being now most excellently translated into Latine, by the singular learned man *Angelus Politianus*: whych worke I have seene, amongst other of thys poets doings, very wel translated also into Englishe rymes.

*Wimble and wighte*, quicke and deliver.

*In the heele* is very poetically spoken, and not without special judgement. For I remember that in *Homer* it is sayd of *Thetis*, that shee tooke her young babe *Achilles*, being newly 80



borne, and, holding him by the heele, dipped him in the River of Styx. The vertue whereof is, to defend and keepe the bodyes washed therein from any mortall wound. So Achilles being washed al over, save onely his hele, by which his mother held, was in the rest invulnerable: therefore by Paris was feyned to bee shotte with a poysoned arrowe in the heele, whiles he was busie about the marying of Polyxena in the temple of Apollo: which mysticall 90 fable Eustathius unfolding saytb: that by wounding in the hele is meant lustfull love. For from the heele (as say the best phisitions) to the previe partes there passe certaine veines and slender synnewes, as also the like come from the head, and are carryed lyke little pypes belynd the eares: so that (as saytb Hipocrates) yf those veynes there be cut asonder, the partie straighte becometh cold and unfruitful. Which reason our poete wel weighing, mak- 100 eth this shepheards boye of purpose to be wounded by Love in the beele.

*Latched, caught.*

*Wroken, revenged.*

*For once:* In this tale is sette out the simplicitye of shepheards opinion of Love.

*Stouping Phæbus* is a periphrasis of the sunne setting.

#### EMBLEME.

Hereby is meant, that all the delights of love, wherein wanton youth walloweth, be but 110 follye mixt with bitternesse, and sorow sawced with repentaunce. For besides that the very affection of love it selfe tormenteth the mynde, and vexeth the body many wayes, with unrestfulness all nyght, and wearines all day, seeking for that we can not have, and fynding that we would not have: even the selfe things which best before us lyked, in course of time and chaung of ryper yeares, whiche also therewithall cbaungeth our wonted lyking and 120 former fantasies, will then seeme lothsome and breede us annoyaunce, when yougthes flowre is withered, and we fynde our bodyes and wits aunswere not to suche vayne jollitie and lustfull pleasaunce.

#### APRILL

#### ÆGLOGA QUARTA

#### ARGUMENT

THIS Æglogue is purposely intended to the honor and prayse of our most gracious soveraigne, Queene Elizabeth. The speakers herein be Hobbinoll and Thenott, two shepheards: the which Hobbinoll, being before mentioned greatly to have loved Colin, is here set forth

more largely, complayning him of that boyes great misadventure in love, whereby his mynd was alienate and witdrawen not onely from him, who moste loved him, but also from all former delightes and studies, aswell in pleasaunt pyping as conning ryming and singing, and other his laudable exercises. Whereby he taketb occasion, for prooffe of bis more excellencie and skill in poetrie, to recorde a songe which the sayd Colin sometime made in honor of her Majestie, whom abruptlye be terneth Elysa.

#### THENOTT. HOBBINOLL.

*The.* Tell me, good Hobbinoll, what garres thee greeete?

What! hath some wolfe thy tender lambes ytorne?

Or is thy bagpype broke, that soundes so sweete?

Or art thou of thy loved lasse forlorne?

Or bene thine eyes attemptred to the yeare,  
Quenching the gasping furrowes thirst  
with rayne?

Like April shoure, so stremes the trickling  
teares

Adowne thy cheeke, to quenche thy  
thristye payne.

*Hob.* Nor thys, nor that, so muche doeth  
make me mourne,

But for the ladde whome long I lovd so  
deare

Nowe loves a lasse that all his love doth  
scorne:

He, plongd in payne, his tressed locks  
dooth teare.

Shepheards delights he dooth them all for-  
swear,

Hys pleasaunt pipe, whych made us meri-  
ment,

He wylfully hath broke, and doth forbear  
His wonted songs, wherein he all outwent.

*The.* What is he for a ladde you so lament?  
Ys love such pinching payne to them that  
prove?

And hath he skill to make so excellent,  
Yet hath so little skill to brydle love? 20

*Hob.* Colin thou kenst, the southerne shep-  
heardes boye:

Him Love hath wounded with a deadly  
darte.

Whilome on him was all my care and joye,  
Forcing with gyfts to winne his wanton  
heart.

But now from me hys madding mynd is  
starte,  
And woes the widdowes daughter of the  
glenne:  
So nowe fayre Rosalind hath bredde hys  
smart,  
So now his frend is chaunged for a frenne.

*The.* But if hys ditties bene so trimly dight,  
I pray thee, Hobbinoll, recorde some  
one, <sup>30</sup>  
The whiles our flockes doe graze about in  
sight,  
And we close shrowded in thys shade  
alone.

*Hob.* Contented I: then will I singe his  
laye  
Of fayre Elisa, queene of shepherdes all;  
Which once he made, as by a spring he laye,  
And tuned it unto the waters fall.

‘Ye daynty Nymphs, that in this blessed  
brooke  
Doe bathe your brest,  
Forsake your watry bowres, and hether  
looke,  
At my request. <sup>40</sup>  
And eke you Virgins that on Parnasse dwell,  
Whence floweth Helicon, the learned well,  
Helpe me to blaze  
Her worthy praise  
Which in her sexe doth all excell.

‘Of fayre Elisa be your silver song,  
That blessed wight:  
The flowre of virgins, may shee flourish long  
In princely plight.  
For shee is Syrinx daughter without spotte,  
Which Pan, the shepherds god, of her  
begot: <sup>51</sup>  
So sprong her grace  
Of heavenly race,  
No mortall blemishe may her blotte.

‘See, where she sits upon the grassie greene,  
(O seemely sight!)  
Yelad in scarlot, like a mayden queene  
And ermines white.  
Upon her head a cremosin coronet,  
With damaske roses and daffadillies set: <sup>60</sup>

Bayleaves betweene,  
And primroses greene,  
Embellish the sweete violet.

‘Tell me, have ye seene her angelick face,  
Like Phœbe fayre?  
Her heavenly haveour, her princely gracc,  
Can you well compare?  
The redde rose medled with the white yfere,  
In either cheeke depeincten lively chere.  
Her modest eye, <sup>70</sup>  
Her majestie,  
Where have you seene the like, but there?

‘I sawe Phœbus thrust out his golden hedde,  
Upon her to gaze:  
But when he sawe how broade her beames  
did spredde,  
It did him amaze.  
He blusht to see another sunne belowe,  
Ne durst againe his fyrye face out showe:  
Let him, if he dare,  
His brightnesse compare <sup>80</sup>  
With hers, to have the overthrowe.

‘Shewe thy selfe, Cynthia, with thy silver  
rayes,  
And be not abasht:  
When shee the beames of her beauty dis-  
plays,  
O how art thou dasht!  
But I will not match her with Latonaes  
seede;  
Such follie great sorow to Niobe did breede:  
Now she is a stone,  
And makes dayly mone,  
Warning all other to take heede. <sup>90</sup>

‘Pan may be proud, that ever he begot  
Such a bellibone,  
And Syrinx rejoyse, that ever was her lot  
To beare such an one.  
Soone as my younglings cryen for the dam,  
To her will I offer a milkwhite lamb:  
Shee is my goddesse plaine,  
And I her shepherds swayne,  
Albee forswonck and forswatt I am.

‘I see Calliope speede her to the place, <sup>100</sup>  
Where my goddesse shines,  
And after her the other Muses trace,  
With their violines.  
Bene they not bay braunches which they  
doe beare,  
All for Elisa in her hand to weare?

So sweetely they play,  
And sing all the way,  
That it a heaven is to heare.

'Lo, how finely the Graces can it foote  
To the instrument: 110  
They dauncen deffly, and singen soote,  
In their meriment.  
Wants not a fourth Grace, to make the  
daunce even?  
Let that rowme to my Lady be yeven:  
She shalbe a Grace,  
To fyll the fourth place,  
And reigne with the rest in heaven.

'And whither remnes this bevie of ladies  
bright,  
Raunged in a rowe?  
They bene all Ladyes of the Lake behight,  
That unto her goe. 121  
Chloris, that is the chieftest nymph of al,  
Of olive braunches beares a coronall:  
Olives bene for peace,  
When wars doe surcease:  
Such for a princesse bene principall.

'Ye shepheards daughters, that dwell on  
the greene,  
Hye you there apace:  
Let none come there, but that virgins bene,  
To adorne her grace. 130  
And when you come whereas shee is in place,  
See that your rudenesse doe not you dis-  
grace:  
Binde your fillets faste,  
And gird in your waste,  
For more finesse, with a tawdrie lace.

'Bring hether the pincke and purple cul-  
lambine,  
With gelliflowres;  
Bring coronations, and sops in wine,  
Worne of paramoures;  
Stowe me the ground with daffadowndil-  
lies, 140  
And cowslips, and kingcups, and loved lil-  
lies:  
The pretie pawnee,  
And the chevisaunce,  
Shall match with the fayre flowre delice.

'Now ryse up, Elisa, decked as thou art,  
In royall aray;  
And now ye daintie damsells may depart  
Echeone her way.

I feare I have troubled your troupes to  
louge:

Let Dame Eliza thanke you for her song:  
And if you come hether 151  
When damsines I gether,  
I will part them all you among.'

*The.* And was thilk same song of Colins  
owne making?

Ah, foolish boy, that is with love yblent!  
Great pittie is, he be in such taking,  
For naught caren, that bene so lewdly  
bent.

*Hob.* Sicker, I hold him for a greater  
fon,

That loves the thing he cannot purchase.  
But let us homeward, for night draweth  
on, 160

And twincling starres the daylight hence  
chase.

THENOTS EMBLEME.

*O quam te memorem, virgo?*

HOBBINOLS EMBLEME.

*O dea certe!*

## GLOSSE

*Gars thee greete*, causeth thee weepe and  
complain.

*Forlorne*, left and forsaken.

*Attempred to the yeare*, agreeable to the sea-  
son of the yeare, that is Aprill, which moneth  
is most bent to shoures and seasonable rayne:  
*to quench*, that is, to delaye the drought, caused  
through drynesse of March wyndes.

*The Ladde*, Colin Clout.

*The Lasse*, Rosalinda. 10

*Tressed locks*, wrethed and curled.

*Is he for a ladde?* A straunge manner of  
speaking, sc. what maner of ladde is he?

*To make*, to rime and versifye. For in this  
word, *making*, our olde Englishe poetes were  
wont to comprehend all the skil of poetrye, ac-  
cording to the Greeke woorde ποιειν, to make,  
whence commeth the name of poetes.

*Colin thou kenst*, knowest. Seemeth hereby  
that Colin perteyneth to some Southern noble 20  
man, and perhaps in Surrye or Kent, the rather  
bicause he so often nameth the Kentish downes,  
and before. *As lythe as lasse of Kent*.

*The widowes*: He calleth Rosalind the  
widowes daughter of the glenne, that is, of a  
country hamlet or borough, which I thinke is  
rather sayde to colour and concele the person,  
then simply spoken. For it is well known,



even in spighte of Colin and Hobbinoll, that shee is a gentlewoman of no meane house, nor so endewed with anye vulgare and common gifts both of nature and manners: but suche indeede, as neede nether Colin be ashamed to have her made knowne by his verses, nor Hobbinol be greved, that so she should be commended to immortallitie for her rare and singular vertues: specially deserving it no lesse then eyther Myrto, the most excellent poete Theocritus his dearling, or Lauretta, the divine Petrarches goddesse, or Himera, the worthy poete 40 Stesichorus hys idole: upon whom he is sayd so much to have doted, that, in regard of her excellencie, he scorned and wrote against the beauty of Helena. For which his præsumptuous and unheedie hardinesse, he is sayde by vengeance of the gods, thereat being offended, to have lost both his eyes.

*Frenne*, a straunger. The word, I thinke, was first poetically put, and afterwarde used in common custome of speach for *forenne*. 50  
*Dight* adorned.

*Laye*, a songe, as roundelays and virelays.

In all this songe is not to be respected, what the worthinesse of her Majestie deserveth, nor what to the highnes of a prince is agreeable, but what is moste comely for the meannesse of a shepheards witte, or to conceive, or to utter. And therefore he calleth her Elysa, as through rudenesse tripping in her name: and a shepheards daughter, it being very unfit that a 60 shepheards boy, brought up in the shepfold, should know, or ever seme to have heard of a queenes roialty.

*Ye duintie* is, as it were, an exordium *ad preparandos animos*.

*Virgins*, the nine Muses, daughters of Apollo and Memorie, whose abode the poets faine to be on Parnassus, a hill in Greece, for that in that countrie specially florished the honor of all excellent studies. 70

*Helicon* is both the name of a fountaine at the foote of Parnassus, and also of a mountaine in Bæotia, out of which floweth the famous spring Castalius, dedicate also to the Muses: of which spring it is sayd, that, when Pegasus, the winged horse of Perseus, (whereby is meant fame and flying renowme) strooke the grownde with his hoofe, sodenly thereout sprange a wel of moste cleare and pleasaunte water, which fro thence forth was consecrate to the 80 Muses and ladies of learning.

*Your silver song* seemeth to imitate the lyke in Hesiodus ἀργύρεον μέλος.

*Syrinx* is the name of a nymphe of Arcadie, whom when Pan being in love pursued, she, flying from him, of the gods was turned into a reede. So that Pan, catching at the reedes in stede of the damosell, and puffing hard, (for he

was almost out of wind) with hys breath made the reedes to pype: which he seeing, tooke of 90 them, and, in remembrance of his lost love, made him a pype thereof. But here by Pan and Syrinx is not to bee thoughte, that the shephearde simplye meante those poetically gods: but rather supposing (as seemeth) her graces progenie to be divine and immortall (so as the paynims were wont to judge of all kinges and princes, according to Homeres saying,

‘Θυμὸς δὲ μέγας ἐστὶ διοτρεφέος βασιλῆος  
Τιμὴ δ’ ἐκ Διὸς ἐστὶ, φιλεῖ δὲ ἐμνήστια Ζεὺς,’ 100

could devise no parents in his judgement so worthy for her, as Pan the shepheards god, and his best beloved Syrinx. So that by Pan is here meant the most famous and victorious king, her highnesse father, late of worthy memorye, King Henry the Eyght. And by that name, oftymes (as hereafter appeareth) be noted kings and mighty potentates; and in some place Christ himselfe, who is the verye Pan and god of shepheards. 110

*Cremosin coronet*: He deviseth her crowne to be of the finest and most delicate flowers, in stede of perles and precious stones, wherewith princes diademes use to bee adorned and embost.

*Embellish*, beautifye and set out.

*Phebe*, the moone, whom the poets faine to be sister unto Phæbus, that is, the sunne.

*Medled*, mingled.

*Yfere*, together. By the mingling of the 120 redde rose and the white is meant the uniting of the two principall houses of Lancaster and of Yorke: by whose longe discord and deadly debate this realm many yeares was sore traveiled, and almost cleane decayed. Til the famous Henry the Seventh, of the line of Lancaster, taking to wife the most vertuous Princesse Elisabeth, daughter to the fourth Edward of the house of Yorke, begat the most royal Henry the Eyght aforesayde, in whom was 130 the firste union of the whyte rose and the redde.

*Calliope*, one of the nine Muses; to whome they assigne the honor of all poetical invention, and the firste glorie of the heroically verse. Other say that shee is the goddesse of rhetoric: but by Virgile it is manifeste, that they mystake the thyng. For there, in hys Epigrams, that arte semeth to be attributed to Polymnia, saying,

‘Signat cuncta manu loquiturque Polymnia gestu:’ 140

which seemeth specially to be meant of action and elocation, both special partes of rhetoric: besyde that her name, which (as some construe it) importeth great remembrance, containeth another part; but I holde rather with them, which call her Polymnia, or Polymnia, of her good singing.



*Bay branches* be the signe of honor and victory, and therefore of myghty conquerors worn in theyr triumphes, and eke of famous poets, as saith Petrarch in hys Sonets,

'Arbor vittoriosa triumphale,  
Honor d'imperadori e di poeti,' &c.

*The Graces* be three sisters, the daughters of Jupiter, (whose names are Aglaia, Thalia, Euphrosyne; and Homer onely addeth a fourth, sc. Pasithea) otherwise called Charites, that is, thanks: whom the poetes feyned to be the goddesses of al bountie and comelines, which therefore (as sayth Theodontius) they make three, 160 to wete, that men first ought to be gracious and bountiful to other freely, then to receive benefits at other mens hands curteously, and thirdly, to requite them thankfully: which are three sundry actions in liberalitie. And Bocace saith, that they be painted naked (as they were indeede on the tombe of C. Julius Cæsar) the one having her backe toward us, and her face fromwarde, as proceeding from us: the other two toward us, noting double thanke 170 to be due to us for the benefite we have done.

*Deaffly*, finelye and nimbly.

*Soote*, sweete.

*Meriment*, mirth.

*Bevie*: A beavie of ladyes is spoken figuratively for a company or troupe: the terme is taken of larkes. For they say a bevie of larkes, even as a covey of partridge, or an eye of pheasaunts.

*Ladies of the Lake* be Nymphes. For it 180 was an olde opinion amongst the auncient heathen, that of every spring and fountaine was a goddesse the soveraigne. Whiche opinion stucke in the myndes of men not many yeares sithence, by meanes of certain fine fablers and lowd lyers, such as were the authors of King Arthure the Great, and such like, who tell many an unlawfull leasing of the Ladies of the Lake, that is, the Nymphes. For the word Nympe in Greeke signifieth well water, or 190 otherwise a spouse or bryde.

*Behight*, called or named.

*Cloris*, the name of a nymph, and signifieth greenesse; of whome is sayd, that Zephyrus, the westerne wind, being in love with her, and coveting her to wyfe, gave her for a dowrie the chiefedome and soveraintye of al flowres and greene herbes, growing on earth.

*Olive bene*: The olive was wont to be the ensigne of peace and quietnesse, eyther for 200 that it cannot be planted and pruned, and so carefully looked to as it ought, but in time of peace: or els for that the olive tree, they say, will not growe neare the firre tree, which is dedicate to Mars the god of battaile, and used most for speares and other instruments of warre. Whereupon is finely feigned, that

when Neptune and Minerva strove for the naming of the cite of Athens, Neptune striking the ground with his mace, caused a 210 horse to come forth, that importeth warre, but at Minervaes stroke sprong out an olive, to note that it should be a nurse of learning, and such peaceable studies.

*Binde your*: Spoken rudely, and according to shepheardes simplicitie.

*Bring*: All these be names of flowers. *Sops in wine*, a flowre in colour much like to a coronation, but differing in smel and quantitie. *Flowre delice*, that which they use to mis- 220 terme *Flowre de Luce*, being in Latine called *Flos delitarum*.

*A bellibone*, or a bonibell, homely spoken for a fayre mayde or bonilasse.

*Forswonck and forswatt*, overlaboured and sunneburnt.

*I saw Phæbus*, the sunne. A sensible narration, and present view of the thing mentioned, which they call *παρουσία*.

*Cynthia*, the moone, so called of *Cynthus* a hyll, where she was honoured. 231

*Latonaes seede* was Apollo and Diana. Whom when as Niobe the wife of Amphion scorned, in respect of the noble fruit of her wombe, namely her seven sonnes, and so many daughters, Latona, being therewith displeased, commaunded her sonne Phæbus to slea al the sonnes, and Diana al the daughters: whereat the unfortunate Niobe being sore dismayed, and lamenting out of measure, was feigned 240 of the poetes to be turned into a stone upou the sepulchre of her children: for which cause the shepheard sayth, he will not compare her to them, for feare of like mysfortune.

*Now rise* is the conclusion. For having so decked her with prayes and comparisons, he returneth all the thanck of hys laboure to the excellencie of her Majestie.

*When damsins*, a base reward of a clownish giver. 250

*Yblent*, Y is a poetically addition: *blent*, blinded.

#### EMBLEME.

This poesye is taken out of Virgile, and there of him used in the person of Æneas to his mother Venus, appearing to him in likeness of one of Dianaes damosells: being there most divinely set forth. To which similitude of divinitie Hobbinoll comparing the excelency of Elisa, and being through the worthynes of Colins song, as it were, overcome with the huge- 260 nesse of his imagination, brusteth out in great admiration, (*O quam te memorem virgo?*) being otherwise unable, then by soddein silence, to expresse the worthinesse of his concept. Whom Thenot answereth with another part of the like verse, as confirming by his graunt and ap-

provaunce, that Elisa is no whit inferiour to the majestie of her of whome that poete so boldly pronounced *O dea certe*.

## MAYE

## ÆGLOGA QUINTA

## ARGUMENT

IN this fift Æglogue, under the persons of two shepheards, Piers and Palinodie, be represented two formes of pastoures or ministers, or the Protestant and the Catholique: whose chiefe talke standeth in reasoning whether the life of the one must be like the other. With whom having shewed that it is daungerous to mainteine any fellowship, or give too much credit to their colourable and feyned goodwill, he telleth him a tale of the Foxe, that by such a counterpoynt of craftines deceived and devoured the credulous Kidde.

## PALINODE. PIERS.

*Pal.* Is not thilke the mery moneth of May,

When love lads masken in fresh aray?  
How falles it then, we no merrier bene,  
Ylike as others, girt in gawdy greene?  
Our blonket liveries bene all to sadde  
For thilke same season, when all is ycladd  
With pleasaunce: the grownd with grasse,  
the wods

With greene leaves, the bushes with blooming buds.

Youghthes folke now flocken in every where,  
To gather may buskets and smelling breere:  
And home they hasten the postes to dight,  
And all the kirke pillours eare day light,  
With hawthorne buds, and swete eglandine,

And girlonds of roses and sopps in wine.  
Such merimake holy saints doth queme,  
But we here sytten as drownd in a dreine.

*Piers.* For yunkers, Palinodie, such folies fitte,

But we tway bene men of elder witt.

*Pal.* Sicker, this morrowe, ne lenger agoe,  
I sawe a shole of shepheardes outgoe<sup>20</sup>  
With singing, and shouting, and jolly ehere:  
Before them yode a lusty tabriere,  
That to the many a horne pype playd,  
Whereto they dauncen eche one with his mayd.

To see those folkes make such jouysaunce,  
Made my heart after the pype to daunce.

Tho to the greene wood they speeden hem all,

To fetchen home May with their musicall:  
And home they bringen in a royall throne,  
Crowned as king; and his queene attone<sup>30</sup>  
Was Lady Flora, on whom did attend  
A fayre flocke of faeries, and a fresh bend  
Of lovely nymphs. O that I were there,  
To helpen the ladyes their maybush beare!  
Ah, Piers! bene not thy teeth on edge, to  
thinke

How great sport they gaynen with little swinck?

*Piers.* Perdie, so farre am I from envie,  
That their fondnesse inly I pitie.

Those faytours little regarden their charge,  
While they, letting their sheepe runne at  
large,<sup>40</sup>

Passen their time, that should be sparely spent,

In lustihede and wanton meryment.

Thilke same bene shepheardes for the Devils stedde,

That playen while their flockes be unfedde.  
Well is it seene, theyr sheepe bene not their owne,

That letten them runne at randon alone.

But they bene hyred for little pay

Of other, that earen as little as they

What fallen the flocke, so they han the fleece,<sup>49</sup>

And get all the gayne, paying but a peece.

I muse what account both these will make,

The one for the hire which he doth take,

And thother for leaving his lords taske,

When great Pan account of shepherdes shall aske.

*Pal.* Sicker, now I see thou speakest of spight,

All for thou lackest somedele their delight.

I (as I am) had rather be envied,

All were it of my foe, then fonly pitied:

And yet, if neede were, pitied would be,

Rather then other should scorne at me: <sup>60</sup>

For pittied is mishappe that nas remedie,

But scorned bene dedes of fond foolerie.

What shoulde shepheards other things tend,

Then, sith their God his good does them send,

Reapen the fruite thereof, that is pleasure,

The while they here liven, at ease and leasure?

For when they bene dead, their good is ygoe,

They sleeppen in rest, well as other moe.

Tho with them wends what they spent in  
cost,

But what they left behind them is lost. 70

Good is no good, but if it be spend:

God giveth good for none other end.

*Piers.* Ah, Palinodie! thou art a worldes  
child:

Who touches pitch mought needes be de-  
filde.

But shepheards (as Algrind used to say)

Mought not live ylike as men of the laye:

With them it sits to care for their heire,

Enaunter their heritage doe impaire:

They must provide for meanes of mainte-  
naunce,

And to continue their wont countenaunce. 80

But shepheard must walke another way,

Sike worldly sovenance he must foresay.

The sonne of his loines why should he regard

To leave enriched with that he hath spard?

Should not thilke God that gave him that  
good

Eke cherish his child, if in his wayes he  
stood?

For if he mislive in leudnes and lust,

Little bootes all the welth and the trust

That his father left by inheritauce:

All will be soone wasted with misgovern-  
aunce. 90

But through this, and other their miscre-  
aunce,

They maken many a wrong chevisaunce,

Heaping up waves of welth and woe,

The floddes whereof shall them overflowe.

Sike mens follie I cannot compare

Better then to the apes folish care,

That is so enamoured of her young one,

(And yet, God wote, such cause hath she  
none)

That with her hard hold, and straight em-  
bracing,

She stoppeth the breath of her young-  
ling. 100

So often times, when as good is meant,

Evil ensueth of wrong entent.

The time was once, and may againe re-  
torne,

(For ought may happen, that hath bene be-  
forne)

When shepeheards had none inheritauce,

Ne of land, nor fee in sufferauce,

But what might arise of the bare sheepe,

(Were it more or lesse) which they did  
keepe.

Well vvis was it with shepheards thoe:

Nought having, nought feared they to for-  
goe. 110

For Pan himselfe was their inheritauce,  
And little them served for their maynte-  
naunce.

The shepheards God so wel them guided,

That of nought they were unprovided,

Butter enough, honye, milke, and whay,

And their flockes fleeces, them to araye.

But tract of time, and long prosperitie,

(That nource of vice, this of insolencie,)

Lulled the shepheards in such securitie,

That not content with loyall obeysaunce, 120

Some gan to gape for greedie governaunce,

And match them selfe with mighty poten-  
tates,

Lovers of lordship and troublers of states.

Tho gan shepheards swaines to looke a loft,

And leave to live hard, and learne to ligge  
soft:

Tho, under colour of shepeheards, some-  
while

There crept in wolves, ful of fraude and  
guile,

That often devoured their owne sheepe,

And often the shepheards that did hem  
keepe.

This was the first sourse of shepheards  
sorowe, 130

That now will be quitt with baile nor bor-  
rowe.

*Pal.* Three thinges to beare bene very  
burdenous,

But the fourth to forbear is outrageous:

Wemen that of loves longing once lust,

Hardly forbearen, but have it they must:

So when choler is inflamed with rage,

Wanting revenge, is hard to asswage:

And who can counsell a thristie soule,

With patience to forbear the offred bowle?

But of all burdens that a man can beare, 140

Moste is, a fooles talke to beare and to  
heare.

I wene the geaunt has not such a weight,

That beares on his shoulders the heavens  
height.

Thou findest faulte where nys to be found,

And buiddest strong warke upon a weake  
ground:

Thou raylest on right withouten reason,

And blamest hem much, for small en-  
cheason.

How shouldest shepheardes live, if not so?

What! should they pynen in payne and  
woe?



Nay saye I thereto, by my deare bor-  
rowe, 150

If I may rest, I will live in sorrowe.

Sorrowe ne neede be hastened on:

For he will come, without calling, anone.

While times endure of tranquillitie,

Usen we freely our felicitie.

For when approchen the stormie stowres,

We mought with our shoulders beare of the  
sharpe showres.

And sooth to sayne, nought seemeth sike  
strife,

That shepheardes so witen ech others life,

And layen her faults the world beforne, 160

The while their foes done eache of hem  
scorne.

Let none mislike of that may not be mended:  
So conteck soone by concord mought be  
ended.

*Piers.* Shepheard, I list none accordaunce  
make

With shepheard that does the right way  
forsake.

And of the twaine, if choice were to me,

Had lever my foe then my freend he be.

For what concord han light and darke sam?

Or what peace has the lion with the lambe?

Such faitors, when their false harts bene  
hidde, 170

Will doe as did the Foxe by the Kidde.

*Pal.* Now *Piers*, of fellowship, tell us that  
saying:

For the ladde can keepe both our flocks  
from straying.

*Piers.* Thilke same Kidde (as I can well  
devise)

Was too very foolish and unwise.

For on a tyme in sommer season,

The Gate her dame, that had good reason,

Yode forth abroad unto the greene wood,

To brouze, or play, or what shee thought  
good.

But, for she had a motherly care 180

Of her young sonne, and wit to beware,

Shee set her youngling before her knee,

That was both fresh and lovely to see,

And full of favour as kidde mought be.

His vellet head began to shoote out,

And his wreathed horns gan newly sprout;

The blossomes of lust to bud did beginne,

And spring forth ranckly under his chinne.

'My sonne,' quoth she, (and with that gan  
weepe;

For carefull thoughts in her heart did  
creepe) 190

'God blesse thee, poore orphane, as he  
mought me,

And send thee joy of thy jollitee.

Thy father,' (that word she spake with  
payne;

For a sigh had nigh rent her heart in twaine)

'Thy father, had he lived this day,

To see the braunche of his body displaie,

How would he have joyed at this sweete  
sight!

But ah! false Fortune such joy did him  
spight,

And cutte of hys dayes with untimely woe,  
Betraying him into the traines of hys foe.

Now I, a wayfull widdowe behight, 201

Of my old age have this one delight,

To see thee succede in thy fathers steade,

And florish in flowres of lustyhead:

For even so thy father his head upheld,

And so his hauy hornes did he weld.'

Tho marking him with melting eyes,

A thrilling throbbe from her hart did aryse,

And interrupted all her other speache

With some old sorowe that made a newe  
breache: 210

Seemed shee sawe in the younglings face

The old lineaments of his fathers grace.

At last her solein silence she broke,

And gan his newe budded beard to stroke.

'Kiddie,' quoth shee, 'thou kenst the great  
care

I have of thy health and thy welfare,

Which many wyld beastes ligen in waite

For to entrap in thy tender state:

But most the Foxe, maister of collusion;

For he has voued thy last confusion. 220

Forthy, my Kiddie, be ruld by mee,

And never give trust to his trecheree.

And if he chaunce come when I am abroad,

Sperre the yate fast, for feare of fraude;

Ne for all his worst, nor for his best,

Open the dore at his request.'

So schooled the Gate her wanton sonne,

That ansverd his mother, all should be done.

Tho went the pensife damme out of dore,

And chaunst to stomble at the threshold

flore: 230

Her stombling steppe some what her  
amazed,

(For such as signes of ill luck bene dis-  
praised)

Yet forth shee yode, thereat halfe aghast:

And Kiddie the dore sperred after her fast.

It was not long after shee was gone,

But the false Foxe came to the dore anone:



Not as a foxe, for then he had be keud,  
But all as a poore pedler he did wend,  
Bearing a trusse of tryffles at hys backe,  
As bells, and babes, and glasses, in hys  
packe. 240

A biggen he had got about his brayne,  
For in his headpeace he felt a sore payne:  
His hinder heele was wrapt in a clout,  
For with great cold he had gotte the gout.  
There at the dore he cast me downe hys  
pack,

And layd him downe, and groned, ' Alack !  
alack !

Ah, deare Lord ! and sweete Saint Char-  
tee !

That some good body woulde once pitie  
mee !

Well heard Kiddie al this sore constraint,  
And lengd to know the cause of his com-  
plaint: 250

Tho, creeping close behind the wickets  
clink,

Prevelie he peeped out through a chinck:  
Yet not so previlie but the Foxe him spyed:  
For deceitfull meaning is double eyed.

' Ah, good young maister ! ' then gan he  
crye,

' Jesus blesse that sweete face I espye,  
And keepe your corpsc from the carefull  
stounds

That in my carrion carcas abounds.'

The Kidd, pittying hys heavinesse,  
Asked the cause of his great distresse, 260  
And also who and whence that he were.

Tho he, that had well ycond his lere,  
Thus medled his talke with many a teare:  
' Sicke, sicke, alas ! and little lack of dead,  
But I be relieved by your beastlyhead.  
I am a poore sheepe, albe my coloure donne:  
For with long traveile I am brent in the  
sonne.

And if that my grandsire me sayd be true,  
Sicker, I am very sybbe to you:

So be your goodlihead doe not disdayne 270  
The base kinred of so simple swaine.

Of mercye and favour then I you pray,  
With your ayd to forstall my neere decay.'

Tho out of his packe a glasse he tooke,  
Wherein while Kiddie unwares did looke,  
He was so enamored with the newell,  
That nought he deemed deare for the jewell.  
Tho opened he the dore, and in came  
The false Foxe, as he were starke lame. 279  
His tayle he elapt betwixt his legs twayne,  
Lest he should be descried by his trayne.

Being within, the Kidde made him good  
glee,

All for the love of the glasse he did see.  
After his chere, the pedler can chat,  
And tell many lesings of this aud that,  
And how he could shewe many a fine knack.  
Tho shewed his ware and opened his packe,  
All save a bell, which he left behind  
In the basket for the Kidde to fynd.

Which when the Kidde stooped downe to  
catch, 290

He popt him in, and his basket did latch;  
Ne stayed he once, the dore to make fast,  
But raune awaye with him in all hast.

Home when the doubtfull damme had her  
hyde,

She mought see the dore stand open wyde.  
All agast, lowdly she gan to call

Her Kidde; but he nould answeere at all.  
Tho on the flore she sawe the merchandise

Of which her sonne had sette to dere a prise.  
What helpe? her Kidde shee knewe well  
was gone: 300

Shee weeped, and wayled, and made great  
mone.

Such end had the Kidde, for he nould  
warned be

Of craft coloured with simplicitie:  
And such end, perdie, does all hem remayne  
That of such falsers freendship bene fayne.

*Pal.* Truly, Piers, thou art beside thy wit,  
Furthest fro the marke, weening it to hit.

Now I pray thee, lette me thy tale borrowe  
For our Sir John to say to morrowe

At the kerke, when it is holliday: 310  
For well he meanes, but little can say.

But and if foxes bene so crafty as so,  
Much needeth all shepheards hem to knowe.

*Piers.* Of their falshode more could I re-  
count:

But now the bright sunne gynneth to dis-  
mount;

And, for the deawie night now doth nye,  
I hold it best for us home to hyc.

PALINODES EMBLEME.

Πᾶς μὲν ἄπιστος ἀπιστεῖ.

PIERS HIS EMBLEME.

Τὶς δ' ἄρα πίστις ἀπιστῶ;

GLOSSE

*Thilke*, this same moneth. It is applyed to  
the season of the moneth, when all menne de-

light them selves with pleasaunce of fieldes,  
and gardens, aud garments.

*Bloncket liveries, gray coates.*

*Yclad*, arrayed. Y redoundeth, as before.

*In every where*, a straunge, yet proper kind  
of speaking.

*Bushets*, a diminutive, sc. little bushes of  
hawthorne. 10

*Kirke*, church.

*Queme*, please.

*A shole*, a multitude; taken of fishe, whereof  
some going in great companies, are sayde to  
swimme in a shole.

*Yode*, went.

*Jouyssance*, joye.

*Swinck*, labour.

*Inly*, entirely.

*Faytours*, vagabonds. 20

*Great Pan* is Christ, the very God of all  
shepheards, which calleth himselfe the greate  
and good shepherd. The name is most rightly  
(me thinkes) applyed to him, for Pan signifieth  
all, or omnipotent, which is onely the Lord  
Jesus. And by that name (as I remember) he  
is called of Eusebius, in his fift booke *De Pre-  
parat. Evang.*; who thereof telleth a proper  
storye to that purpose. Which story is first re-  
corded of Plutarch, in his booke of the ceas- 30  
ing of oracles, and of Lavetere translated, in his  
booke of walking sprights. Who sayth, that  
about the same time that our Lord suffered his  
most bitter passion for the redemption of man,  
certain passengers, sayling from Italy to Cy-  
prus and passing by certain isles called *Paxæ*,  
heard a voyce calling alowde 'Thamus,  
Thamus!' (now Thamus was the name of an  
Ægyptian, which was pilote of the ship) who,  
giving eare to the cry, was bidden, when he 40  
came to Palodes, to tel that the great Pan was  
dead: which he doubting to doe, yet for that  
when he came to Palodes, there sodeinly was  
such a calme of winde, that the shippe stode  
still in the sea unmoved, he was forced to cry  
alowd, that Pan was dead: wherewithall there  
was heard suche piteous outeries and dread-  
full shrieking, as hath not bene the like. By  
whych Pan, though of some be understoode the  
great Satanas, whose kiugdome at that time 50  
was by Christ conquered, the gates of hell  
broken up, and death by death delivered to  
eternall death, (for at that time, as he sayth,  
all oracles surceased, and enchanted spirits,  
that were wont to delude the people, thence-  
forth held theyr peace) and also at the de-  
maund of the Emperoure Tiberius, who that  
Pan should be, answer was made him by the  
wisest and best learned, that it was the sonne  
of Mercurie and Penelope, yet I think it 60  
more properly meant of the death of Christ, the  
onely and very Pan, then suffering for his flock.

*I as I am* seemeth to imitate the common  
proverb, *Malim invidere mihi omnes, quam miser-  
escere.*

*Nas* is a syncope, for *ne has*, or *has not*: as  
*would* for *would not*.

*Tho with them* doth imitate the epitaph of  
the ryotous king Sardanapalus, whych he caused  
to be written on his tombe in Greeke: which 70  
verses be thus translated by Tullie.

'Hæc habui quæ edi, quæque exaturata libido  
Hausit, at illa manent multa ac præclara relictæ.'

Which may thus be turned into English.

'All that I eate did I joye, and all that I greedily  
gorged:

As for those many goodly matters left I for others.'

Much like the epitaph of a good olde Erle of  
Devonshire, which, though much more wise-  
dome bewraieth then Sardanapalus, yet hath a  
smacke of his sensuall delights and beastli- 80  
nesse. The rhymes be these:

'Ho, ho! who lies here?  
I the good Erle of Devonshire,  
And Maulede my wife, that was ful deare:  
We lived together iv. yeare.  
That we spent, we had:  
That we gave, we have:  
That we left, we lost.'

*Algrind*, the name of a shepheard.

*Men of the lay*, lay men. 90

*Enaunter*, least that.

*Sovenaunce*, remembraunce.

*Miscreaunce*, despeire, or misbeliefe.

*Chevisaunce*, sometime of Chancer used for  
gaine: sometime of other for spoyle, or bootie,  
or enterprise, and sometime for chieffdome.

*Pan himselfe*, God: according as is sayd in  
Deuteronomie, that, in division of the laude of  
Canaan, to the tribe of Levie no portion of  
heritage should bee allotted, for GOD him- 100  
selfe was their inheritance.

*Some gan*, meant of the Pope, and his Anti-  
christian prelates, which usnrpe a tyrannical  
dominion in the Church, and with Peters coun-  
terfet keyes open a wide gate to al wickednesse  
and insolent government. Nought here spoken,  
as of purpose to deny fatherly ruie and godly  
governance (as some maliciously of late have  
done, to the great unreste and hinderaunce of  
the Church) but to displaye the pride and 110  
disorder of such as, in steede of feeding their  
sheepe, indeede feede of theyr sheepe.

*Sourse*, welspring and originall.

*Borrowe*, pledge or snertie.

*The geaunte* is the greate Atlas, whom the  
poetes feign to be a huge geaunt, that beareth  
Heaven on his shoulders: being in deede a mer-  
velous highe mountaine in Mauritania, that  
now is Barbarie, which, to mans seeming, per-  
ceth the cloudes, and seemeth to touch the 120  
heavens. Other thinke, and they not amisse.

that this fable was meant of one Atlas, king of the same countrey, (of whome may bee, that that hil had his denomination) brother to Prometheus, who (as the Grekes say) did first fynd out the hidden courses of the starres, by an excellent imagination: wherefore the poetes feigned, that he susteyned the firmament on hys shoulders. Many other conjectures neede-lesse be told hereof. 130

*Warke, worke.*

*Encheason, cause, occasion.*

*Deare borow, that is our Saviour, the comen pledge of all mens debts to death.*

*Wyten, blame.*

*Nought seemeth, is unseemely.*

*Conteck, strife, contention.*

*Her, theyr, as useth Chaucer.*

*Han, for have.*

*Sam, together.* 140

This tale is much like to that in Æsops fables, but the catastrophe and end is farre different. By the Kidde may be understode the simple sorte of the faythfull and true Christians. By hys dame, Christe, that hath alreadye with carefull watchewords (as heere doth the gote) warned his little ones, to beware of such doubling deceit. By the Foxe, the false and faithlesse Papistes, to whom is no credit to be given, nor felowshippe to be used. 150

*The Gate, the Gote: northerly spoken, to turne O into A.*

*Yode, went: afforesayd.*

*She set, a figure called Fictio, which useth to attribute reasonable actions and speeches to unreasonable creatures.*

*The bloosmes of lust* be the young and mossie heares, which then beginne to sproute and shoote forth, when lustfull heate beginneth to kindle.

*And with, a very poetical πᾶθος.* 160

*Orphane, a youngling or pupill, that needeth a tutour and governour.*

*That word, a pathetical parenthesis, to encrease a carefull hyperbaton.*

*The braunch of the fathers body is the child.*

*For even so* alluded to the saying of Andromache to Ascanius in Virgile.

‘Sic oculos, sic ille manus, sic ora ferebat.’

*A thrilling throb, a percing sighe.*

*Liggen, lye.* 170

*Maister of collusion, sc. coloured guile, because the Foxe, of al beasts, is most wily and crafty.*

*Sperre the yate, shut the dore.*

*For such:* The gotes stombling is here noted as an evill signe. The like to be marked in all histories: and that not the leaste of the Lorde Hastingues in King Rycharde the Third his dayes. For beside his daungerous dreame (whiche was a shrewde prophecie of his mishap that folowed) it is sayd that in the morning, 180

ryding toward the Tower of London, there to sitte uppon matters of counsell, his horse stombed twice or thrise by the way: which of some, that, ryding with hym in his company, were privie to his neere destenie, was secretly marked, and afterward noted for memorie of his great mishap that enseeded. For being then as merye as man might be, and least doubting any mortall daunger, he was, within two howres after, of the tyranne put to a shamefull deathe. 190

*As belles:* By such trifles are noted, the reliques and ragges of popish superstition, which put no smal religion in belles, and babies, sc. idoles, and glasses, sc. paxes, and such lyke trumperies.

*Great cold:* For they boast much of their outward patience, and voluntarye sufferance, as a worke of merite and holy humblenesse.

*Sweete S. Charitie,* the Catholiques comen othe, and onely speache, to have charitye 200 alwayes in their mouth, and sometime in their outward actions, but never inwardly in fayth and godly zeale.

*Clincke, a key hole.* Whose diminutive is clicket, used of Chaucer for a key.

*Stoundes, fittes:* aforesayde.

*His lere, his lesson.*

*Medled, mingled.*

*Bestlihead, agreeing to the person of a beast.*

*Sibbe, of kynne.* 210

*Newell, a newe thing.*

*To forestall, to prævent.*

*Glee, chere:* afforesayde.

*Deare a price,* his lyfe, which he lost for those toyes.

*Such ende* is an epiphonema, or rather the morall of the whole tale, whose purpose is to warne the Protestaunt beware, howe he geveth credit to the unfaythfull Catholique: whereof we have dayly proofes sufficient, but one 220 moste famous of all, practised of late yeares in Fraunce, by Charles the Nynth.

*Fayne, gladdie or desyrous.*

*Our Sir John,* a Popishe priest. A saying fit for the grosenesse of a shepherd, but spoken to taunte unlearned priestes.

*Dismount, descende or set.*

*Nye, draweth nere.*

#### EMBLEME.

Both these emblemes make one whole hexametre. The first spoken of Palinodie, as in 230 reproche of them that be distrustfull, is a peece of Theognis verse, intending, that who doth most mistrust is most false. For such experience in falshod breedeth mistrust in the mynd, thinking no lesse guile to lurke in others then in hymselfe. But Piers thereto strongly replyeth with another peece of the same verse, saying, as in his former fable, what fayth then is



there in the faythlesse? For if fayth be the  
ground of religion, which fayth they dayly <sup>240</sup>  
false, what hold then is there of theyr religion?  
And thys is all that they saye.

## JUNE

## ÆGLOGA SEXTA

## ARGUMENT

THIS Æglogue is wholly vowed to the com-  
playning of Colins ill successe in his love. For  
being (as is aforesaid) enamoured of a coun-  
try lasse, Rosalind, and having (as seemeth) founde  
place in her heart, he lamenteth to his deare  
frend Hobbinoll, that he is nowe forsaken un-  
faithfully, and in his steede Menalcas, another  
shepherd, received disloyally. And this is the  
whole argument of this Æglogue.

## HOBBINOL. COLIN CLOUTE.

*Hob.* Lo, Collin, here the place whose  
pleasaunt syte  
From other shades hath weand my wan-  
dring mynde.

Tell me, what wants me here to worke de-  
lyte?

The simple ayre, the gentle warbling wynde,  
So calme, so coole, as no where else I fynde,  
The grassye ground with daintye daysies  
dight,

The bramble bush, where byrds of every  
kynde

To the waters fall their tunes attemper  
right.

*Col.* O happy Hobbinoll! I blesse thy  
state,  
That Paradise hast found, whych Adam  
lost. <sup>10</sup>

Here wander may thy flock, early or late,  
Withouten dreade of wolves to bene ytost:  
Thy lovely layes here mayst thou freely  
boste.

But I, unhappy man, whom cruell Fate  
And angry gods pursue from coste to coste,  
Can nowhere fynd to shroude my lucklesse  
pate.

*Hob.* Then if by me thou list advised be,  
Forsake the soyle that so doth the bewitch;  
Leave me those hilles, where harbrough nis  
to see,  
Nor holybush, nor brere, nor winding  
witche. <sup>20</sup>

And to the dales resort, where shepheards  
ritch,  
And fruitfull flocks, bene every where to  
see.

Here no night ravens lodge, more black  
then pitche,  
Nor elvish ghosts, nor gastly owles doe  
flee.

But frendly Faeries, met with many Graces,  
And lightfote Nymphes, can chace the lin-  
gring night

With heydeguyes and trimly trodden traces  
Whilst systers nyne, which dwell on Par-  
nasse hight,

Doe make them musick for their more de-  
light;

And Pan himselve, to kisse their christall  
faces, <sup>30</sup>

Will pype and daunce, wheu Phœbe shineth  
bright:

Such pierlesse pleasures have we in these  
places.

*Col.* And I, whylst youth and course of  
carelesse yeeres

Did let me walke withouten linkes of love,  
In such delights did joy amongst my peeres:  
But ryper age such pleasures doth reprove;  
My fancye eke from former follies move  
To stayer steps: for time in passing weares,  
(As garments doen, which wexeu old  
above)

And draweth newe delightes with hoary  
heares. <sup>40</sup>

Tho couth I sing of love, and tune my  
pype

Unto my plaintive pleas in verses made;  
Tho would I seeke for queene apples un-  
rype,

To give my Rosalind, and in sommer shade  
Dight gaudy girlonds was my comen trade,  
To crowne her golden locks; but yeeres  
more rype,

And losse of her, whose love as lyfe I wayd,  
Those weary wanton toyes away dyd wype.

*Hob.* Colin, to heare thy rymes and  
roundelayes,

Which thou were wont on wastfull hylls to  
sing, <sup>50</sup>

I more delight then larke in sommer dayes:  
Whose echo made the neyghbour groves to  
ring,



And taught the byrds, which in the lower  
 spring  
 Did shroude in shady leaves from sonny  
 rayes,  
 Frame to thy songe their chereful cherip-  
 ing,  
 Or hold theyr peace, for shame of thy swete  
 layes.

I sawe Calliope wyth Muses moe,  
 Soone as thy oaten pype began to sound,  
 Theyr yvory luyts and tamburins forgoe,  
 And from the fountaine, where they sat  
 around, 60  
 Renne after hastely thy silver sound.  
 But when they came where thou thy skill  
 didst showe,  
 They drewe abacke, as halfe with shame  
 confound,  
 Shepheard to see, them in theyr art outgoe.

Col. Of Muses, Hobbinol, I conne no  
 skill:  
 For they bene daughters of the hyghest  
 Jove,  
 And holden scorne of homely shepheards  
 quill.  
 For sith I heard that Pan with Phœbus  
 strove,  
 Which him to much rebuke and daunger  
 drove,  
 I never lyst presume to Parnasse hyll, 70  
 But, pyping lowe in shade of lowly grove,  
 I play to please my selfe, all be it ill.

Nought weigh I, who my song doth prayse  
 or blame,  
 Ne strive to winne renowne, or passe the  
 rest:  
 With shepheard sittes not followe flying  
 fame,  
 But feede his flocke in fields where falls  
 hem best.  
 I wote my rymes bene rough, and rudely  
 drest:  
 The fyttter they my carefull case to frame:  
 Enough is me to paint out my unrest,  
 And poore my piteous plaints out in the  
 same. 80

The god of shepheards, Tityrus, is dead,  
 Who taught me, homely as I can, to make.  
 He, whilst he lived, was the soveraigne  
 head  
 Of shepheards all that bene with love ytake:

Well couth he wayle his woes, and lightly  
 slake  
 The flames which love within his heart had  
 bredd,  
 And tell us mery tales, to keepe us wake,  
 The while our sheepe about us safely fedde.

Nowe dead he is, and lyeth wrapt in lead,  
 (O why should Death on hym such outrage  
 showe?) 90  
 And all hys passing skil with him is fledde,  
 The fame whereof doth dayly greater growe.  
 But if on me some little drops would  
 flowe  
 Of that the spring was in his learned hedde,  
 I soone would learne these woods to wayle  
 my woe,  
 And teache the trees their trickling teares  
 to shedde.

Then should my plaints, causd of discourte-  
 see,  
 As messengers of all my painfull plight,  
 Flye to my love, where ever that she bee,  
 And pierce her heart with poynt of worthy  
 wight, 100  
 As shee deserves, that wrought so deadly  
 spight.  
 And thou, Menalcas, that by trecheree  
 Didst underfong my lasse to wexe so light.  
 Shoulddest well be knowne for such thy vil-  
 lanee.

But since I am not as I wish I were,  
 Ye gentle shepheards, which your flocks do  
 feede,  
 Whether on hylls, or dales, or other where,  
 Beare witnesse all of thys so wicked deede;  
 And tell the lasse, whose flowre is woxe a  
 weede,  
 And faultlesse fayth is turned to faithlesse  
 fere, 110  
 That she the truest shepheards hart made  
 bleede  
 That lyves on earth, and loved her most  
 dere.

Hob. O carefull Colin! I lament thy case:  
 Thy teares would make the hardest flint to  
 flowe.  
 Ah, faithlesse Rosalind, and voide of grace,  
 That art the roote of all this ruthfull woe!  
 But now is time, I gesse, homeward to goe:  
 Then ryse, ye blessed flocks, and home  
 apace.

Least night with stealing steppes doe you  
forsloe,  
And wett your tender lambes that by you  
trace.

120

COLINS EMBLEME.

*Già speme spenta.*

## GLOSSE

*Syte*, situation and place.

*Paradise*. A Paradise in Greeke signifieth a garden of pleasure, or place of delights. So he compareth the soile wherein Hobbinoll made his abode, to that earthly Paradise, in Scripture called Eden, wherein Adam in his first creation was placed: which, of the most learned, is thought to be in Mesopotamia, the most fertile and pleasaunte country in the world (as may appeare by Diodorus Syculus description of it, in the hystorie of Alexanders conquest thereof :) lying betweene the two famous ryvers, (which are sayd in Scripture to flowe out of Paradise) Tygris and Euphrates, whereof it is so denominate.

*Forsake the soyle*. This is no poetical fiction, but unfeynedly spoken of the poete selfe, who for speciall occasion of private affayres, (as I have bene partly of himselfe informed) and for his more preferment, removing out of the Northparts, came into the South, as Hobbinoll indeede advised him privately.

*Those hylles*, that is the North countreye, where he dwelt.

*Nis*, is not.

*The dales*, the Southpartes. where he nowe abyde, which thonghe they be full of hylles and woodes (for Kent is very hyllye and woodye; and therefore so called: for *Kantsh* in the Saxons tongue signifieth woodie,) yet in respect of the Northpartes they be called dales. For indeede the North is counted the higher countreye.

*Night ravens*, &c. By such hatefull byrdes, hee meaneth all misfortunes (whereof they be tokens) flying every where.

*Frendly faeries*. The opinion of faeries and elves is very old, and yet sticketh very religiously in the myndes of some. But to roote that raucke opinion of elves oute of mens hearts, the truth is, that there be no such thinges. nor yet the shadowes of the things, but onely by a sort of bald friers and knavish shavelings so feigned; which, as in all other things, so in that, soughte to nousell the comen people in ignoraunce, least, being once acquainted with the truth of things, they woulde in tyme smell out the untruth of theyr packed pelfe and massepenie religion. But the sooth is, that when all Italy was distraiete into the

factions of the Guelphes and the Gibelins, being two famous houses in Florence, the name began, through their great mischiefes and many outrages, to be so odious, or rather dreadful, in the peoples eares, that if theyr children at any time were frowarde and wanton, they woulde say to them that the Guelph or the Gibeline came. Which words nowe from them (as many thinge els) be come into our usage, and, for Guelphes and Gibelines, we say elves and goblins. No otherwise then the Frenchmen used to say of that valiaunt captain, the very scourge of Fraunce, the Lord Thalbot, afterward Erle of Shrewsbury; whose noblesse bred such a terrour in the hearts of the French, that oft times even great armies were defaicted and put to flyght at the onely hearing of hys name. In somuch that the French women, to affray theyr chyldren, woulde tell them that the Talbot commeth.

70

*Many Graces*. Though there be indeede but three Graces or Charites (as afore is sayd) or at the utmost but foure, yet in respect of many gyftes of bounty, there may be sayde more. And so Musæus sayth, that in Heroes cyther eye there satte a hundred Graces. And by that authoritye, thys same poete, in his Pageaunts, saith 'An hundred Graces on her eyelledde satte,' &c.

*Haydequies*, a country daunce or rownd. The concept is, that the Graces and Nymphes doe daunce unto the Muses and Pan his musicke all night by moonelight. To signifie the pleasauntnesse of the soyle.

*Peeres*, equalles and fellow shepheards.*Queneapples unripe*, imitating Virgils verse,

'Ipse ego cana legam tenera lanugine mala.'

*Neighbour groves*, a straunge phrase in English, but word for word expressing the Latin *vicina nemora*.

95

*Spring*, not of water, but of young trees springing.

*Calliope*, afforesayde. Thys staffe is full of verie poetical invention.

*Tamburines*, an olde kind of instrument, which of some is supposed to be the clarion.

*Pan with Phæbus*. The tale is well knowne, howe that Pan and Apollo, striving for excellencye in musicke, chose Midas for their judge Who, being corrupted wyth partial affection, gave the victorie to Pan undeserved: for which Phæbus sette a payre of asses eares upon hys head, &c.

*Tityrus*. That by Tityrus is meant Chaucer, hath bene already sufficiently sayde, and by thys more playne appeareth, that he sayth, he tolde merye tales. Such as be hys Canterbury Tales. Whom he calleth the god of poetes for hys excellencye, so as Tullie calleth Lentulus, *Deum vitæ suæ*, sc. the god of hys lyfe.

110

To make, to versifie.

O why, a pretye epanorthosis or correction.

Discurtesie. He meaneth the falsenesse of his lover Rosalinde, who, forsaking hym, hadde chosen another.

Poynte of worthy wite, the pricke of deserved blame.

Menalcas, the name of a shepheard in Virgile; but here is meant a person unknowne and secrete, agaynst whome he often bitterly invayeth.

Underfonge, undermynde and deceive by false suggestion.

#### EMBLEME.

You remember that in the fyrst Æglogue, Colins poesie was *Anchora speme*: for that as then there was hope of favour to be found in tyme. But now being cleane forlorne and rejected of her, as whose hope, that was, is cleane extinguished and turned into despayre, he renounceth all comfort, and hope of goodnesse to come: which is all the meaning of this embleme.

### JULYE

#### ÆGLOGA SEPTIMA

#### ARGUMENT

THIS Æglogue is made in the honour and commendation of good shepheardes, and to the shame and dispraise of proude and ambitious pastours: such as Morrell is here imagined to bee.

#### THOMALIN. MORRELL.

Thom. Is not thilke same a goteheard prowde,

'That sittes on yonder bancke,  
Whose straying heard them selfe doth shrowde

Emong the bushes rancke?

Mor. What ho! thou jollye shepheards swayne,

Come up the hyll to me:  
Better is then the lowly playne,  
Als for thy flocke and thee.

Thom. Ah, God shield, man, that I should clime,

And learne to looke alofte;

This reede is ryfe, that oftentime  
Great clymbers fall unsoft.

In humble dales is footing fast,

The trode is not so tickle,

And though one fall through heedlesse hast,  
Yet is his misse not mickle.

And now the Sonne hath reared up

His fyriefooted teme,  
Making his way betweene the Cuppe  
And golden Diademe:

The rampant Lyon hunts he fast,  
With Dogge of noysome breath,  
Whose balefull barking brings in hast  
Pyne, plagues, and dreery death.  
Agaynst his cruell scorching heate  
Where hast thou coverture?

The wastefull hylls unto his threate  
Is a playne overture.

But if thee lust to holden chat  
With seely shepherds swayne,  
Come downe, and learne the little what  
That Thomalin can sayne.

Mor. Syker, thous but a laesie loord,  
And rekes much of thy swinck,  
That with fond termes, and weetlesse words,  
To blere myne eyes doest thinke.

In evill houre thou hentest in hond  
Thus holy hylles to blame,

For sacred unto saints they stond,  
And of them han theyr name.

St. Michels Mount who does not know,  
That wardes the westerne coste?

And of St. Brigets Bowre, I trow,  
All Kent can rightly boaste:

And they that con of Muses skill  
Sayne most-what, that they dwell  
(As goteheards wont) upon a hill,  
Beside a learned well.

And wonned not the great god Pan  
Upon Mount Olivet,

Feeding the blessed flocke of Dan,  
Which dyd himselfe beget?

Thom. O blessed sheepe! O shepheard  
great,

That bought his flocke so deare,  
And them did save with bloudy sweat  
From wolves, that would them teare!

Mor. Besyde, as holy fathers sayne,  
There is a hyllye place,

Where Titan ryseth from the mayne,  
To renne hys dayly race:

Upon whose toppe the starres bene stayed,  
And all the skie doth leane;

There is the cave where Phebe layed  
The shepheard long to dreame.

Whilome there used shepheards all  
To feede theyr flocks at will,

Till by his folly one did fall,  
That all the rest did spill.

And sithens shepheardes bene foresayd  
From places of delight:



Forthy I weene thou be affrayd  
 To clime this hilles height.  
 Of Synah can I tell thee more,  
 And of Our Ladyes Bowre:  
 But little needes to strow my store,  
 Suffice this hill of our.  
 Here han the holy Faunes recourse,  
 And Sylvanes haunten rathe;  
 Here has the salt Medway his sourse,  
 Wherein the Nymphes doe bathe; 80  
 The salt Medway, that trickling stremis  
 Adowne the dales of Kent,  
 Till with his elder brother Themis  
 His brackish waves be meynt.  
 Here growes melampode every where,  
 And teribinth, good for gotes:  
 The one, my madding kiddes to smere,  
 The next, to heale theyr throtes.  
 Hereto, the hills bene nigher heven,  
 And thence the passage ethe: 90  
 As well can prove the piercing levin,  
 That seeldome falls byneth.  
*Thom.* Syker, thou speakes lyke a lewde  
 lorrell,  
 Of heven to demen so:  
 How be I am but rude and borrell,  
 Yet nearer wayes I knowe.  
 To kerke the narre, from God more farre,  
 Has bene an old sayd save,  
 And he that strives to touch the starres  
 Oft stombles at a strawe. 100  
 Alsoone may shepheard clymbe to skye,  
 That leades in lowly dales,  
 As goteherd prowd, that, sitting hye,  
 Upon the mountaine sayles.  
 My seely sheepe like well belowe,  
 They neede not melampode:  
 For they bene hale enough, I trowe,  
 And liken theyr abode.  
 But, if they with thy gotes should yede,  
 They soone myght be corrupted, 110  
 Or like not of the frowie fede,  
 Or with the weedes be glutted.  
 The hylls where dwelled holy saints  
 I reverence and adore:  
 Not for themselfe, but for the sayncts  
 Which han be dead of yore.  
 And nowe they bene to heven forewent,  
 Theyr good is with them goe,  
 Theyr sample onely to us lent,  
 That als we mought doe soe. 120  
 Shepherds they weren of the best,  
 And lived in lowlye leas:  
 And sith theyr soules bene now at rest,  
 Why done we them disease?

Such one he was (as I have heard  
 Old Algrind often sayne)  
 That whilome was the first shepheard,  
 And lived with little gayne:  
 As meeke he was as meeke mought be,  
 Simple as simple sheepe, 130  
 Humble, and like in eche degree  
 The flocke which he did keepe.  
 Often he used of hys keepe  
 A sacrifice to bring,  
 Nowe with a kidde, now with a sheepe  
 The altars hallowing.  
 So lowted he unto hys Lord,  
 Such favour coult he fynd,  
 That sithens never was abhord  
 The simple shepherds kynd. 140  
 And such, I weene, the brethren were  
 That came from Canaan,  
 The brethren twelve, that kept yfere  
 The flockes of mighty Pan.  
 But nothing such thilk shepheard was  
 Whom Ida hyll dyd beare,  
 That left hys flocke to fetch a lasse,  
 Whose love he bought to deare.  
 For he was proude, that ill was payd,  
 (No such mought shepherds bee) 150  
 And with lewde lust was overlayd:  
 Tway things doen ill agree.  
 But shepheard mought be meeke and  
 mylde,  
 Well eyed as Argus was,  
 With fleshly follyes undefyled,  
 And stoute as steede of brasse.  
 Sike one (sayd Algrin) Moses was,  
 That sawe hys Makers face,  
 His face, more cleare then christall glasse,  
 And spake to him in place. 160  
 This had a brother, (his name I knewe)  
 The first of all his cote,  
 A shepheard trewe, yet not so true  
 As he that earst I hote.  
 Whilome all these were lowe and lief,  
 And loved their flocks to feede,  
 They never stroven to be chiefe,  
 And simple was theyr weede.  
 But now (thanked be God therefore)  
 The world is well amend, 170  
 Their weedes bene not so nighly wore;  
 Such simplesse mought them shend:  
 They bene yclad in purple and pall,  
 So hath theyr God them blist,  
 They reigne and rulen over all.  
 And lord it as they list  
 Ygyrt with belts of glitterand gold,  
 (Mought they good sheepeheard bene)



Theyr Pan theyr sheepe to them has  
sold;

I saye as some have seene. 180

For Palinode (if thou him ken)

Yode late on pilgrimage

To Rome, (if such be Rome) and then

He sawe thilke misusage.

For shephecards, sayd he, there doen leade,

As lordes done other where;

Theyr sheepe han crustes, and they the  
bread;

The chippes, and they the chere:

They han the fleece, and eke the flesh;

(O seely sheepe the while !) 190

The corne is theyrs, let other thresh,

Their hands they may not file.

They han great stores and thriftye stockes,

Great freendes and feeble foes:

What neede hem caren for their flocks ?

Theyr boyes can looke to those.

These wisards weltre in welths waves,

Pampred in pleasures deepe;

They han fatte kernes, and leany knaves,

Their fasting flockes to keepe. 200

Sike mister men bene all misgone,

They heapen hylles of wrath:

Sike syrlye shepheards han we none,

They keepen all the path.

*Mor.* Here is a great deale of good mat-  
ter

Lost for lacke of telling.

Now sicker I see, thou doest but clatter:

Harne may come of melling.

Thou medlest more then shall have chanke,

To wyten shepheards welth: 210

When folke bene fat, and riches rancke,

It is a signe of helth.

But say me, what is Algrin, he

That is so oft bynempt ?

*Thom.* He is a shepheard great in gree,

But hath bene long ypent.

One daye he sat upon a hyll,

As now thou wouldest me:

But I am taught, by Algrins ill,

To love the lowe degree. 220

For sitting so with bared scalpe,

An eagle sored hye,

That, weening hys whyte head was chalke,

A shell fish downe let flye:

She weend the shell fishe to have broake,

But therewith bruzd his brayne;

So now, astonied with the stroke,

He lyes in lingring payne.

*Mor.* Ah, good Algrin ! his hap was ill,

But shall be bett in time. 230

Now farwell, shepheard, sith thys hyll  
Thou hast such doubt to climbe.

THOMALINS EMBLEME.

*In medio virtus.*

MORRELLS EMBLEME.

*In summo felicitas.*

### GLOSSE

*A goteheard.* By gotes, in scripature, be represented the wicked and reprobate, whose pastour also must needes be such.

*Banck* is the seate of honor.

*Straying heard,* which wander out of the waye of truth.

*Als,* for also.

*Clymbe,* spoken of ambition.

*Great clymbers,* according to Seneca his verse.

'Decidunt celsa, graviore lapsu.' 10

*Mickle,* much.

*The sonne,* a reason why he refuseth to dwell on mountaines, because there is no shelter against the seorching sunne, according to the time of the yeare, whiche is the whotest moneth of all.

*The Cupp and Diademe* be two signes in the firmament, through which the sonne maketh his course in the moneth of July.

*Lion.* Thys is poetically spoken, as if the 20 Sunne did hunt a Lion with one dogge. The meaning whereof is, that in July the soune is in Leo. At which tyme the Dogge starre, which is called Syrius, or Canicula, reigneth with immoderate heate, causing pestilence, droughth, and many diseases.

*Overture,* an open place. The word is borrowed of the French, and used in good writers.

*To holden chatt,* to talke and prate.

*A lorde* was wont among the old Britons 30 to signifie a lorde. And therefore the Danes, that long time usurped theyr tyrannie here in Brytanie, were called, for more dread and dignitie, Lurdanes, sc. *Lord Danes.* At which time it is sayd, that the insolencie and pryde of that nation was so outragious in thys realme, that if it fortun'd a Briton to be going over a bridge, and sawe a Dane set foote upon the same, he muste retorne back, till the Dane were cleane over, or els abyde the pryce of 40 his displeasure, which was no lesse then present death. But being afterwarde expelled, that name of Lurdane became so odious unto the people, whom they had long oppressed. that even at this daye they use, for more reproche, to call the quartane ague the Fever Lurdane.

*Recks much of thy swinck,* counts much of thy paynes.

Weetelesse, not understoode.

*St. Michels Mount* is a promontorie in the west part of England. 51

*A hill*, Parnassus afforesayd.

*Pan*, Cbrist.

*Dan*. One tryhe is put for the whole nation per synecdochen.

*Where Titan*, the sonne. Which story is to he redde in Diodorus Syculus of the hyl Ida; from whence he sayth, all night time is to bee seene a mightye fire, as if the skye burned, which toward morning heginneeth to gatber into a 60 rownd forme, and thereof ryseth the sonne, whome the poetes call Titan.

*The shepheard* is Endymion, whom the poets fayne to have bene so beloved of Phœbe, sc. the moone, that he was hy her kept a sleepe in a cave by the space of xxx yeares, for to enioye his companye.

*There*, that is, in Paradise, where, through error of shepheards understanding, he sayth, that all shepheards did use to feede theyr 70 flocks, till one, (that is Adam) by hys follye and disohedience, made all the rest of hys ofspring he deharred and shutte out from thence.

*Synah*, a hill in Arabia, where God appeared.

*Our Ladyes Bowre*, a place of pleasure so called.

*Faunes or Sylvanes* be of poetes feigned to be gods of the woode. 80

*Medway*, the name of a ryver in Kent, which, running by Rochester, meeteth with Thames; whom he calleth his elder brother, both because he is greater, and also falletb sooner into the sea.

*Meynt*, mingled.

*Melampode and terebinth* be hearbes good to cure diseased gotes: of thone speaketh Mantuane, and of thother Theocritus.

Τερμίνθου τράγων ἔσχατον ἀκρέμονα. 90

*Nigher heaven*. Note the shepheards simplenesse, which supposeth that from the hylls is nearer waye to heaven.

*Levin*, lightning; which he taketh for an argument to prove the nighnes to heaven, because the lightning doth comenly light on hygh mountaynes, according to the saying of the poete:

'Feriuntque summos fulmina montes.'

*Lorrell*, a losell. 100

*A borrell*, a playne fellowe.

*Narre*, nearer.

*Hale*, for hole.

*Yede*, goe.

*Frowye*, mustye or mossie.

*Of yore*, long agoe.

*Forewente*, gone afore.

*The firste shepheard* was Abell the righteous, who (as Scripture sayth) bent hys mind to keeping of sheepe, as did hys brother Cain 110 to tilling the grownde.

*His keepe*, hys charge, sc. his flocke.

*Louted*, did honour and reverence.

*The brethren*, the twelve sonnes of Jacob, which were shepemaisters, and lyved onely thereupon.

*Whom Ida*, Paris, which being the sonne of Priamus king of Troy, for his mother Hecubas dreame, which, beug with child of hym, dreamed shee broughte forth a firebrand, 120 that set all the towre of Ilium on fire, was cast forth on the byll Ida; where being fostered of shepheards, he eke in time became a shepheard, and lastly came to knowledge of his parentage.

*A lasse*. Helena, the wyfe of Menelaus king of Lacedemonia, was hy Venus, for the golden aple to her geven, then promised to Paris, who thereupon with a sorte of lustye Troyanes, stole her out of Lacedemonia, and kept her in 130 Troye: which was the cause of the tenne yeares warre in Troye, and the moste famous citee of all Asia most lamentably sacked and defaced.

*Argus* was of the poets devised to be full of eyes, and therefore to hym was committed the keeping of the transformed cow, 10: so called, because that, in the print of a coves foote, there is figured an I in the midst of an O.

*His name*: he meaneth Aaron: whose name, for more decorum, the shephearde sayth he 140 hath forgot, lest his remembraunce and skill in antiquities of holy writ should seeme to exceede the meanenesse of the person.

*Not so true*, for Aaron, in the absence of Moses, started aside, and committed idolatry.

*In purple*, spoken of the popes and cardinales, which use such tyrannical colours and pompous paynting.

*Belts*, girdles. 149

*Glitterand*, glittering, a participle used sometime in Chaucer, hut altogether in J. Goore.

*Theyr Pan*, that is, the Pope, whom they count theyr god and greatest shepheard.

*Palinode*, a shephearde, of whose report he seemeth to speake all thys.

*Wisards*, greate learned heads.

*Welter*, wallowe.

*Kerne*, a churl or farmer.

*Sike mister men*, snehe kinde of men.

*Surly*, stately and powde. 160

*Melling*, medling.

*Bett*, better.

*Bynempte*, named.

*Gree*, for degree.

*Algrin*, the name of a shepheard afforesayde, whose myshap he allndeth to the chaunce that

happened to the poet Æschylus, that was  
brayned with a shellfishe.

## EMBLEM.

By thys poesye Thomalin confirmeth that  
which in hys former speech by sondry rea- 170  
sons he had proved. For being both hymselfe  
sequestred from all ambition, and also abhor-  
ring it in others of hys cote, he taketh occasion  
to prayse the meane and lowly state, as that  
wherein is safetie without feare, and quiet  
without danger; according to the saying of  
olde philosophers, that vertue dwelleth in the  
middest, being environed with two contrary  
vices: whereto Morrell replieth with contin-  
uance of the same philosophers opinion, 180  
that albeit all bountye dwelleth in mediocritie,  
yet perfect felicity dwelleth in supremacie.  
For they say, and most true it is, that happi-  
nesse is placed in the highest degree, so as if  
any thing be higher or better, then that streight  
way ceaseth to be perfect happines. Much like  
to that which once I heard alleaged in defence  
of humilitey, out of a great doctour, 'Suorum  
Christus humillimus:' which saying a gentle  
man in the company taking at the rebownd, 190  
beate backe again with lyke saying of another  
doctoure, as he sayde, 'Suorum Deus altissi-  
mus.'

## AUGUST

## ÆGLOGA OCTAVA

## ARGUMENT

IN this Æglogue is set forth a delectable  
controversie, made in imitation of that in  
Theocritus: whereto also Virgile fashioned his  
third and seventh Æglogue. They choose for  
umpere of their strife, Cuddie, a neatheards  
boye, who, having ended their cause, reciteth  
also himselfe a proper song, whereof Colin, he  
sayth, was authour.

WILLYE. PERIGOT. CUDDIE.

*Wil.* Tell me, Perigot, what shalbe the  
game,

Wherefore with myne thou dare thy mu-  
sick matche?

Or bene thy bagpipes renne farre out of  
frame?

Or hath the crampe thy joynts benomd  
with ache?

*Per.* Ah! Willye, when the hart is ill  
assayde,

How can bagpipe or joynts be well apayd?

*Wil.* What the foule evill hath thee so  
bestadde?

Whilom thou was peregall to the best,  
And wont to make the jolly shepheards  
gladde

With pyyping and dauncing, didst passe the  
rest. 10

*Per.* Ah! Willye, now I have learnd a  
newe daunce:

My old musick mard by a newe mischaunce.

*Wil.* Mischiefe mought to that newe mis-  
chaunce befall,

That so hath raft us of our meriment!  
But reede me, what payne doth thee so  
appall?

Or lovest thou, or bene thy younglings  
miswent?

*Per.* Love hath misled both my younglings  
and mee:

I pyne for payne, and they my payne to  
see.

*Wil.* Perdie and wellawaye! ill may they  
thrive:

Never knewe I lovers sheepe in good  
plight. 20

But and if in rymes with me thou dare  
strive,

Such fond fantasies shall soone be put to  
flight.

*Per.* That shall I doe, though mocheill worse  
I fared:

Never shall be sayde that Perigot was  
dared.

*Wil.* Then loe, Perigot, the pledge which  
I plight!

A mazer ywrought of the maple warre:  
Wherein is enchased many a fayre sight  
Of beres and tygres, that maken fiers  
warre;

And over them spred a goodly wild  
vine,

Entrailed with a wanton yvie-twine. 30

Thereby is a lambe in the wolves jawes:  
But see, how fast renneth the shepheard  
swayne,

To save the innocent from the beastes  
pawes;

And here with his shepehooke hath him  
slayne.

Tell me, such a cup hast thou ever sene?  
Well mought it beseme any harvest queene



*Per.* Thereto will I pawne yonder spotted  
lambe;  
Of all my flocke there nis sike another;  
For I brought him up without the dambe.  
But Colin Clout rafte me of his brother, 40  
That he purchast of me in the playne field:  
Sore against my will was I forst to yield.

*Wil.* Sicker, make like account of his  
brother.

But who shall judge the wager wonne or  
lost?

*Per.* That shall yonder heardgrome, and  
none other,

Which over the pousse hetherward doth  
post.

*Wil.* But, for the sunnebeame so sore doth  
us beate,

Were not better to shunne the scortching  
heate?

*Per.* Well agreed, Willy: then sitte thee  
downe, swayne:

Sike a song never heardest thou but Colin  
sing. 50

*Cud.* Gyne when ye lyst, ye jolly shep-  
heards twayne:

Sike a judge as Cuddie were for a king.

*Per.* It fell upon a holly eve,

*Wil.* Hey ho, hollidaye!

*Per.* When holly fathers wont to shrieve:

*Wil.* Now gynneth this roundelay.

*Per.* Sitting upon a hill so hye,

*Wil.* Hey ho, the high hyll!

*Per.* The while my flocke did feede thereby,

*Wil.* The while the shepherd selfe did  
spill; 60

*Per.* I saw the bouneing Bellibone,

*Wil.* Hey ho, bonibell!

*Per.* Tripping over the dale alone;

*Wil.* She can trippe it very well:

*Per.* Well decked in a frocke of gray,

*Wil.* Hey ho, gray is greete!

*Per.* And in a kirtle of greene saye;

*Wil.* The greene is for maydens meete.

*Per.* A chapelet on her head she wore,

*Wil.* Hey ho, chapelet! 70

*Per.* Of sweete violets therein was store,

*Wil.* She sweeter then the violet.

*Per.* My sheepe did leave theyr wanted  
foode,

*Wil.* Hey ho, seely sheepe!

*Per.* And gazd on her, as they were wood,

*Wil.* Woode as he that did them keepe.

*Per.* As the bonilasse passed bye,

*Wil.* Hey ho, bonilasse!

*Per.* She rovde at me with glauncing eye,

*Wil.* As cleare as the christall glasse: 80

*Per.* All as the sunnye beame so bright,

*Wil.* Hey ho, the sunne beame!

*Per.* Glaunceth from Phœbus face forth-  
right,

*Wil.* So love into thy hart did streame:

*Per.* Or as the thonder cleaves the cloudes,

*Wil.* Hey ho, the thonder!

*Per.* Wherein the lightsome levin shroudes,

*Wil.* So cleaves thy soule a sonder:

*Per.* Or as Dame Cynthias silver raye,

*Wil.* Hey ho, the moonelight! 90

*Per.* Upon the glyttering wave doth playe:

*Wil.* Such play is a pitteous plight.

*Per.* The glaunce into my heart did glide,

*Wil.* Hey ho, the glyder!

*Per.* Therewith my soule was sharply gryde:

*Wil.* Such woundes soone wexen wider.

*Per.* Hasting to raunch the arrow out,

*Wil.* Hey ho, Perigot!

*Per.* I left the head in my hart roote:

*Wil.* It was a desperate shot. 100

*Per.* There it ranckleth ay more and  
more,

*Wil.* Hey ho, the arrowe!

*Per.* Ne can I find salve for my sore:

*Wil.* Love is a curelesse sorrowe.

*Per.* And though my bale with death I  
bought,

*Wil.* Hey ho, heavie cheere!

*Per.* Yet should thilk lasse not from my  
thought:

*Wil.* So you may buye gold to deare.

*Per.* But whether in paynefull love I  
pyne,

*Wil.* Hey ho, pinching payne! 110

*Per.* Or thrive in welth, she shalbe mine:

*Wil.* But if thou can her obtaine.

*Per.* And if for gracelesse greefe I dye,

*Wil.* Hey ho, gracelesse grieefe!

*Per.* Witnesse, shee slewe me with her  
eye:

*Wil.* Let thy follye be the priefe.

*Per.* And you, that sawe it, simple shepe,

*Wil.* Hey ho, the fayre flocke!

*Per.* For priefe thereof, my death shall  
weepe,

*Wil.* And mone with many a mocke. 120

*Per.* So learnd I love on a hollye eve,

*Wil.* Hey ho, holidaye!

*Per.* That ever since my hart did greve.

*Wil.* Now endeth our roundelay.

*Cud.* Sicker, sike a roundle never heard I none.

Little lacketh Perigot of the best,  
And Willye is not greatly overgone,  
So weren his undersongs well addrest.

*Wil.* Herdgrome, I fear me thou have a squint eye:

Areede uprightly, who has the victorie? <sup>130</sup>

*Cud.* Fayth of my soule, I deeme ech have gayned.

Forthy let the lambe be Willye his owne;

And for Perigot so well hath hym payned,  
To him be the wroughten mazer alone.

*Per.* Perigot is well pleased with the doome,

Ne can Willye wite the witelesse herd-groome.

*Wil.* Never dempt more right of beautye, I weene,

The shepheard of Ida that judged beauties queene.

*Cud.* But tell me, shepherds, should it not yshend

Your roundels fresh to heare a doolefull verse <sup>140</sup>

Of Rosalend, (who knowes not Rosalend?)  
That Colin made, ylke can I you rehearse.

*Per.* Now say it, Cuddie, as thou art a ladde:

With mery thing its good to medle sadde.

*Wil.* Fayth of my soule, thou shalt yerounded be

In Colins stede, if thou this song areede:

For never thing on earth so pleaseth me

As him to heare, or matter of his deede.

*Cud.* Then listneth ech unto my heavy laye,

And tune your pypes as ruthful as ye may.

‘Ye wastefull woodes beare witnesse of my woe, <sup>151</sup>

Wherein my plaints did oftentimes resound:

Ye earelesse byrds are privie to my cryes,  
Which in your songs were wout to make a part:

Thou pleasaunt spring hast luld me oft a sleepe,

Whose streames my tricklinge teares did ofte augment.

‘Resort of people doth my greefs augment,  
The walled townes do worke my greater woe:

The forest wide is fitter to resound  
The hollow echo of my carefull cryes: <sup>160</sup>

I hate the house, since thence my love did part,

Whose waylefull want debarres myne eyes from sleepe.

‘Let stremes of teares supply the place of sleepe:

Let all, that sweete is, voyd: and all that may augment

My doole drawe neare. More meete to wayle my woe

Bene the wild woddes, my sorrowes to resound,

Then bedde, or bowre, both which I fill with cryes,

When I them see so waist, and fynd no part

‘Of pleasure past. Here will I dwell apart  
In gastfull grove therefore, till my last sleepe <sup>170</sup>

Doe close mine eyes: so shall I not augment,

With sight of such a chaunge, my restlesse woe.

Helpe me, ye banefull byrds, whose shrieking sound

Ys signe of dreery death, my deadly cryes

‘Most ruthfully to tune. And as my cryes  
(Which of my woe cannot bewray least part)

You heare all night, when nature craveth sleepe,

Increase, so let your yrksome yells augment.

Thus all the night in plaints, the daye in woe

I vowed have to wayst, till safe and sound

‘She home returne, whose voyces silver sound <sup>181</sup>

To cheerefull songs can chaunge my cherelesse cryes.

Hence with the nightingale will I take part,  
That blessed byrd, that spends her time of sleepe

In songs and plaintive pleas, the more taugment

The memory of hys misdeede, that bred her woe.

'And you that feele no woe, / when as the  
sound  
Of these my nightly cryes / ye heare apart,  
Let breake your sounder sleepe / and pitie  
augment.' 189

*Per.* O Colin, Colin, the shepheards joye,  
How I adnirre ech turning of thy verse !  
And Cuddie, fresh Cuddie, the liefest boye,  
How dolefully his doole thou didst re-  
hearse !

*Cud.* Then blowe your pypes, shepheards,  
til you be at home:  
The night nigheth fast, yts time to be gone.

PERIGOT HIS EMBLEME.

*Vincenti gloria victi.*

WILLYES EMBLEME.

*Vinto non vitto.*

CUDDIES EMBLEME.

*Felice chi può.*

GLOSSE

*Bestadde*, disposed, ordered.

*Peregall*, equall.

*Whilome*, once.

*Rafte*, bereft, deprived.

*Miswent*, gon a straye.

*Ill may*, according to Virgile.

'Infelix o semper ovīs pecus.'

*A mazer.* So also do Theocritus and Virgile  
feigne pledges of their strife. 9

*Enchased*, engraven. Such pretie descriptions  
every where nseth Theocritus to bring in his  
Idyllia. For which speciall cause, indede, he  
by that name termeth his Æglogues: for Idyl-  
lion in Greke signifieth the shape or picture of  
any thyng, wherof his booke is ful. And not,  
as I have heard some fondly guesse, that they  
be called not Idyllia, but Hædilia, of the gote-  
heards in them.

*Entrailed*, wrought betwene. 19

*Harvest queene*, the manner of country folke  
in harvest tyme.

*Pousse*, pease.

*It fell upon.* Perigot maketh hys song in  
prayse of his love, to whom Willy answereth  
every under verse. By Perigot who is meant,  
I can not uprightly say: but if it be who is  
supposed, his love deserveth no lesse prayse  
then he giveth her.

*Greete*, weeping and complaint.

*Chaplet*, a kind of garlond lyke a crowne. 30

*Leven*, lightning.

*Cynthia* was sayd to be the moone.

*Gryde*, perced.

*But if*, not unlesse.

*Squint eye*, partiall judgement.

*Ech have*, so saith Virgile,

'Et vitula tu dignus, et hic,' &c.

So by enterchaunge of gyfts Cuddie pleaseth  
both partes.

*Doome*, judgement. 40

*Dempt*, for deemed, judged.

*Wite the witelesse*, blame the blamelesse.

*The shepherd of Ida* was sayd to be Paris.

*Beauties queene*, Venns, to whome Paris ad-  
judged the goldden apple, as the pryce of her  
beautie.

EMBLEME.

The meaning hereof is very ambiguous: for  
Perigot by his poesie claming the conquest,  
and Willye not yeelding, Cuddie the arbiter of  
theyr cause, and patron of his own, semeth so  
to challenge it, as his dew, saying, that he is  
happy which can,—so abruptly ending; but  
hee meaneth eyther him that can win the beste,  
or moderate him selfe being best, and leave of  
with the best.

SEPTEMBER

ÆGLOGA NONA

ARGUMENT

HEREIN Diggon Davie is devised to be a  
shepherd that, in hope of more gayne, drove  
his sheepe into a farre countrye. The abuses  
whereof, and loose living of popish prelates,  
by occasion of Hobbinsols demaund, he dis-  
conrsseth at large.

HOBBINOL. DIGGON DAVIE.

*Hob.* Diggon Davie, I bidde her god  
day:

Or Diggon her is, or I missaye.

*Dig.* Her was her while it was daye  
light,

But now her is a most wretched wight.

For day, that was, is wightly past,

And now at earst the dirke night doth  
hast.

*Hob.* Diggon, areede, who has thee so  
dight?

Never I wist thee in so poore a plight.

Where is the fayre flocke thou was wont  
to leade?

Or bene they chaffred? or at mischief  
dead? 10



*Dig.* Ah! for love of that is to thee  
moste leefe,  
Hobbinol, I pray thee gall not my old griefe:  
Sike question ripeth up cause of uewe woe,  
For one opened mote unfold many moe.

*Hob.* Nay, but sorrow close shrouded in  
hart,  
I know, to kepe is a burdenous smart.  
Eche thing imparted is more eath to beare:  
When the rayne is fah, the cloudes wexen  
cleare.

And nowe, sithence I sawe thy head last,  
Thrise three moones bene fully spent and  
past: 20  
Since when thou hast measured much  
grownd,  
And wandred, I wene, about the world  
rounde,  
So as thou can many thinges relate:  
But tell me first of thy flocks astate.

*Dig.* My sheepe bene wasted, (wae is me  
therefore!)  
The jolly shepheard that was of yore  
Is nowe nor jollye, nor shephearde more.  
In forrein costes, men sayd, was plentye:  
And so there is, but all of miserye.  
I dempt there much to have eeked my  
store, 30

But such eeking hath made my hart sore.  
In tho countryes whereas I have bene,  
No being for those that truely mene,  
But for such as of guile maken gayne,  
No such countrye as there to remaine.  
They setten to sale their shops of shame,  
And maken a mart of theyr good name.  
The shepheards there robben one another,  
And layen baytes to beguile her brother.  
Or they will buy his sheepe out of the  
cote, 40  
Or they will carven the shepheards throte.  
The shepheards swayne you cannot wel ken,  
But it be by his pryde, from other men:  
They looken bigge as bulls that bene bate,  
And bearen the cragge so stiffe and so  
state

As cocke on his dunghill crowing cranck.  
*Hob.* Diggon, I am so stiffe and so stanck,  
That uneth may I stand any more:  
And nowe the westerne wind bloweth sore,  
That nowe is in his chiefe sovereigntee, 50  
Beating the withered leafe from the tree.  
Sitte we downe here under the hill:  
Tho may we talke and tellen our fill,  
And make a mocke at the blustering blast.  
Now say on, Diggon, what ever thou hast.

*Dig.* Hobbin, ah, Hobbin! I curse the  
stounde

That ever I cast to have lorne this ground.  
Wel-away the while I was so fonde  
To leave the good that I had in hande,  
In hope of better, that was uncouth: 60  
So lost the dogge the flesh in his mouth.  
My seely sheepe (ah, seely sheepe!)  
That here by there I whilome usd to keepe,  
All were they lustye, as thou didst see,  
Bene all sterved with pyne and penuree.  
Hardly my selfe escaped thilke payne,  
Driven for neede to come home agayne.

*Hob.* Ah, fon! now by thy losse art taught  
That seeldome chaunge the better brought.  
Content who lives with tryed state 70  
Neede feare no chaunge of frowning fate;  
But who will seeke for unknowne gayne,  
Oft lives by losse, and leaves with payne.

*Dig.* I wote ne, Hobbin, how I was be-  
witcht

With vayne desyre and hope to be enrich;  
But, sicker, so it is as the bright starre  
Seemeth ay greater when it is farre.  
I thought the soyle would have made me  
rich;

But nowe I wote it is nothing sich.  
For eyther the shepheards bene ydle and  
still, 80  
And ledde of theyr sheepe what way they  
wyll,

Or they bene false, and full of covetise,  
And casten to compasse many wrong em-  
prise.

But the more bene fraught with fraud and  
spight,

Ne in good nor goodnes taken delight,  
But kindle coales of conteck and yre,  
Wherewith they sette all the world on fire:  
Which when they thinken agayne to quench,  
With holy water they doen hem all drench.  
They saye they con to heaven the high  
way, 90

But, by my soule, I dare undersaye  
They never sette foote in that same troade,  
But balk the right way and strayen abroad.  
They boast they han the devill at com-  
maund,

But aske hem therefore what they han  
paund:

Marrie! that great Pan bought with deare  
borrow,

To quite it from the blacke bowre of sor-  
rowe.

But they han sold thilk same long agoe:

Forthy woulde drawe with hem many  
moe.

But let hem gange alone a Gods name; <sup>100</sup>  
As they han brewed, so let hem beare blame.

*Hob.* Diggon, I praye thee speake not so  
dirke.

Such myster saying ine seemeth to mirke.

*Dig.* Then, playnely to speake of shep-  
heards most what,

Badde is the best (this English is flatt.)

Their ill haviour garres men missay

Both of their doctrine, and of their faye.

They sayne the world is much war then it  
wont,

All for her shepheards bene beastly and  
blont:

Other sayne, but how truely I note, <sup>110</sup>

All for they holden shame of theyr cote.

Some sticke not to say, (whote cole on her  
tongue !)

That sike mischiefe graseth hem emong,  
All for they casten too much of worlds  
care,

To deck her dame, and enrich her heyre:

For such encheason, if you goe nye,

Fewe chymneis reeking you shall espye:

The fatte oxe, that wont ligge in the stal,

Is nowe fast stalled in her crumenall.

Thus chatten the people in theyr steads, <sup>120</sup>

Ylike as a monster of many heads:

But they that shooten neerest the pricke

Sayne, other the fat from their beards doen  
lick:

For bigge bulles of Basan brace hem about,  
That with theyr hornes butten the more  
stoute;

But the leane soules treaden under foote.

And to seeke redresse mought little boote;

For liker bene they to pluck away more,

Then ought of the gotten good to restore:

For they bene like foule wagmoires over-  
grast, <sup>130</sup>

That if thy galage once sticketh fast,

The more to wind it out thou doest swinke,

Thou mought ay deeper and deeper sinck.

Yet better leave of with a little losse,

Then by much wrestling to leese the grosse.

*Hob.* Nowe, Diggon, I see thou speakest  
to plaine:

Better it were a little to feyne,

And cleanly cover that cannot be cured:

Such il as is forced mought nedes be en-  
dured.

But of sike pastoures howe done the flocks  
creepe ? <sup>140</sup>

*Dig.* Sike as the shepheards, sike bene  
her sheepe:

For they nill listen to the shepheards voyce,  
But if he call hem at theyr good choyce:

They wander at wil and stray at pleasure,  
And to theyr foldes yeed at their owne lea-  
sure.

But they had be better come at their cal;

For many han into mischiefe fall,

And bene of ravenous wolves yrent,

All for they nould be buxome and bent.

*Hob.* Fye on thee, Diggon, and all thy  
foule leasing ! <sup>150</sup>

Well is knowne that sith the Saxon king,

Never was wolfe seene, many nor some,

Nor in all Kent, nor in Christendome:

But the fewer wolves (the soth to sayne,)

The more bene the foxes that here remaine.

*Dig.* Yes, but they gang in more secrete  
wise,

And with sheepes clothing doen hem dis-  
guise:

They walke not widely as they were wont,

For feare of raungers and the great hunt,

But prively prolling to and froe, <sup>160</sup>

Enaunter they mought be inly knowe.

*Hob.* Or prive or pert yf any bene,

We han great bandogs will teare their  
skinne.

*Dig.* Indeede, thy Ball is a bold bigge  
curre,

And could make a jolly hole in theyr furre.

But not good dogges hem needeth to chace,

But heedly shepheards to discerne their face:

For all their craft is in their countenance,

They bene so grave and full of maynte-  
naunce.

But shall I tell thee what my selfe knowe <sup>170</sup>

Chaunced to Roffynn not long ygoe?

*Hob.* Say it out, Diggon, what ever it  
hight,

For not but well mought him betight:

He is so meeke, wise, and merciable,

And with his word his worke is convenable.

Colin Clout, I wene, be his selfe boye,

(Ah for Colin, he whilome my joye!)

Shepheards sich, God mought us many send,

That doen so carefully theyr flocks tend.

*Dig.* Thilk same shepherd mought I  
well marke: <sup>180</sup>

He has a dogge to byte or to barke;

Never had shepherd so kene a kurre,

That waketh and if but a leafe sturre.

Whilome there wouned a wicked wolfe,

That with many a lambe had glutted his gulfe.

And ever at night wont to repayre  
Unto the flocke, when the welkin shone  
faire,

Yeladde in clothing of seely sheepe,  
When the good old man used to sleepe.  
Tho at midnight he would barke and ball, <sup>190</sup>  
(For he had eft learned a curre call,)  
As if a wolfe were among the sheepe.  
With that the shepheard would breake his  
sleepe,

And send out Lowder (for so his dog hote)  
To raunge the fields with wide open throte.  
Tho, when as Lowder was farre awaye,  
This wolvishe sheepe would catchen his  
pray,

A lambe, or a kidde, or a weanell wast:  
With that to the wood would he speede  
him fast.

Long time he used this slippery pranck, <sup>200</sup>  
Ere Roffy could for his laboure him thanck.  
At end, the shepheard his practise spyed,  
(For Roffy is wise, and as Argus eyed)  
And when at even he came to the flocke,  
Fast in theyr folds he did them locke,  
And tooke out the wolfe in his counterfect  
cote,

And let out the sheepes bloud at his throte.

*Hob.* Marry, Diggon, what should him  
affraye

To take his owne where ever it laye ?  
For had his wesand bene a little widdier, <sup>210</sup>  
He would have devoured both hiddier and  
shidder.

*Dig.* Mischiefe light on him, and Gods  
great curse!

Too good for him had bene a great deale  
worse:

For it was a perilous beast above all,  
And eke had he cond the shepherds call,  
And oft in the night came to the shepecote,  
And called Lowder, with a hollow throte,  
As if it the old man selfe had bene.

The dog his maisters voice did it weene,  
Yet halfe in doubt he opened the dore, <sup>220</sup>  
And ranne out, as he was wont of yore.  
No sooner was out, but, swifter then  
thought,

Fast by the hyde the wolfe Lowder caught:  
And had not Roffy renne to the steven,  
Lowder had be slaine thilke same even.

*Hob.* God shield, man, he should so ill  
have thrive,

All for he did his devoyre belive.  
If sike bene wolves as thou hast told,  
How mought we, Diggon, hem behold ?

*Dig.* How, but with heede and watch-  
fulnessse 230

Forstallen hem of their wilnesse ?  
Forthy with shepheard sittes not playe,  
Or sleepe, as some doen, all the long day:  
But ever liggien in watch and ward,  
From soddein force theyr flocks for to gard.

*Hob.* Ah, Diggon ! thilke same rule were  
too straight,

All the cold season to wach and waite:  
We bene of fleshe, men as other bee:  
Why should we be bound to such miseree ?  
What ever thing lacketh chaungeable  
rest, 240

Mought needes decay, when it is at best.

*Dig.* Ah ! but Hobbinol, all this long tale  
Nought caseth the care that doth me for-  
haile.

What shall I doe ? what way shall I wend,  
My piteous plight and losse to amend ?  
Ah, good Hobbinol ! mought I thee praye  
Of ayde or counsell in my decaye.

*Hob.* Now by my soule, Diggon, I lament  
The haplesse mischief that has thee hent.  
Nethelasse thou seest my lowly saile, <sup>250</sup>  
That froward fortune doth ever availe.

But were Hobbinnoll as God mought please,  
Diggon should soone find favour and ease.  
But if to my cotage thou wilt resort,  
So as I can I wil thee comfort:

There mayst thou ligge in a vetchy bed,  
Till fayrer fortune shewe forth her head.

*Dig.* Ah, Hobbinol, God mought it thee  
requite !

Diggon on fewe such freendes did ever lite.

#### DIGGONS EMBLEME.

*Inopem me copia fecit.*

#### GLOSSE

The dialecte and phrase of speache, in this  
dialogue, seemeth somewhat to differ from the  
comen. The cause whereof is supposed to be,  
by occasion of the party herein meant, who,  
being very freend to the author hereof, had  
bene long in forraigne cuntryes, and there seene  
many disorders, which he here recounteth to  
Hobbinnoll.

*Bidde her*, bidde good morrow. For to  
*bidde*, is to praye, whereof commeth *beades* <sup>10</sup>  
for prayers, and so they say, to bidde his  
beades, sc. to saye his prayers.

*Wightly*, quicklye, or sodenlye.

*Chaffred*, solde.

*Dead at mischiefe*, an unusuall speache, but



much usurped of Lidgate, and sometime of Chaucer.

*Leefe*, deare.

*Ethe*, easie.

*Thrise thre moones*, nine mouethes. 20

*Measured*, for traveled.

*Wae*, woe, Northernly.

*Eeked*, encreased.

*Carven*, cutte.

*Kenne*, know.

*Cragge*, neck.

*State*, stoutely.

*Stuuck*, wearie or fainte.

*And nowe*. He applieth it to the tyme of the yeare, which is in thend of harvest, which 30 they call the fall of the leafe: at which tyme the western wynde beareth most swaye.

*A nocke*, imitating Horace, '*Debes ludibrium ventis*.'

*Lorne*, left.

*Soote*, swete.

*Uncouth*, unknown.

*Here by there*, here and there.

*As the brighte*, translated out of Mantuane.

*Emprise*, for enterprise. *Per syncopen*. 40

*Contek*, strife.

*Trode*, path.

*Marrie that*, that is, their soules, which hy popish exorcismes and practices they damne to hell.

*Blacke*, hell.

*Gange*, goe.

*Mister*, maner.

*Mirke*, obscure.

*Warre*, worse. 50

*Crumenall*, purse.

*Brace*, compasse.

*Encheson*, occasion.

*Overgrast*, overgrown with grasse.

*Galage*, shoe.

*The grosse*, the whole.

*Buxome and bent*, meeke and obedient.

*Saxon king*, King Edgare that reigned here in Brytanye in the yeare of our Lord [957-975] which king caused all the wolves, whereof 60 then was store in thys countrie. by a proper policie to be destroyed. So as never since that time there have ben wolves here founde, unlesse they were brought from other countrys. And therefore Hohhinoll rehuketh him of untruth, for saying there he wolves in England.

*Nor in Christendome*. This saying seemeth to be strange and unreasonable: but indeede it was wont to be an olde proverbe and comen phrase. The original whereof was, for that 70 most part of England in the reigne of King Ethelbert was christened, Kent onely except, which remayned long after in mysbeliefe and unchristened: so that Kent was counted no part of Christendome.

*Great hunt*, executyng of lawes and justice.

*Enaunter*, least that.

*Inly*, inwardly: afforesayde.

*Prevely or pert*, openly, sayth Chaucer.

*Roffy*, the name of a shepehearde in 80 Marot his *Æglogue* of Rohin and the Kinge. Whome he here commendeth for greate care and wise governance of his flock.

*Colin Cloute*. Nowe I thinke no man doubteth hut by Colin is ever meante the authour selfe: whose especial good freend Hohhinoll sayth he is, or more rightly Mayster Gabriel Harvey: of whose special commendation, aswell in poetrye as rhetorike and other choyce learning, we have lately had a sufficient tryall in di- 90 verse his workes, hut specially in his *Musarum Lachryme*, and his late *Gratulationum Valdinensium*, which hoke, in the progresse at Audley in Essex, he dedicated in wryting to her Majestie. afterward presenting the same in print unto her Highnesse at the worshipfull Maister Capells in Hertfordshire. Beside other his sundrye most rare and very notable writyngs, partly under unknown tytles, and partly under counterfayt names, as hys *Tyrannomastix*, 100 his *Ode Natalitia*, his *Rameidos*, and especially that parte of *Philomusus*, his divine *Anticosmopolita*, and divers other of lyke importance. As also, by the names of other shepheardes, he covereth the persons of divers other his familiar freendes and best acquaytaunce.

This tale of Roffy seemeth to colour some particular action of his. But what, I certeinlye know not.

*Wonned*, haunted. 110

*Welkin*, skie: afforesaid.

*A weanell waste*, a weaned youngling.

*Hidder and shidder*, he and she, male and female.

*Steven*, noyse.

*Belive*, quickly.

*What ever*, Ovids verse translated.

'Quod caret alterna requie durabile non est.'

*Forehaile*, drawe or distresse.

*Vetchie*, of pease strawe. 120

# EMBLEME.

This is the saying of Narcissus in Ovid. For when the foolishhe boye, by beholding hys face in the brooke, fell in love with his owne likeness: and not hable to content him selfe with much looking thereon, he cryed out, that plentye made him poore, meaning that much gazing had bereft him of sence. But our Diggon useth it to other purpose, as who that by tryall of many wayes had fonde the worst, and through greate plentye was fallen into 130 great pennurie. This poesie I knowe to have bene much used of the anthon, and to suche like effecte as fyrste Narcissus spake it.

## OCTOBER

## ÆGLOGA DECIMA

## ARGUMENT

IN Cuddie is set out the perfecte paterne of a poete, whiche, finding no maintenaunce of his state and studies, complayneth of the contempte of Poetrie, and the causes thereof: specially having bene in all ages, and even amongst the most barbarous, alwayes of singular account and honor, and being indede so worthy and commendable an arte: or rather no arte, but a divine gift and heavenly instinct, not to bee gotten by laboure and learning, but adorned with both, and poured into the witte by a certain *ἐθουσιασμός* and celestiall inspiration; as the author hereof els where at large discourseth in his booke called *The English Poete*, which booke being lately come to my hands, I mynde also by Gods grace, upon further advisement, to publish.

## PIERCE. CUDDIE.

*Piers.* Cuddie, for shame! hold up thy heavey head,  
And let us cast with what delight to chace  
And weary thys long lingring Phœbus race.  
Whilome thou wout the shepheards laddes  
to leade  
In rymes, in ridles, and in bydding base:  
Now they in thee, and thou in sleepe art  
dead.

*Cud.* Piers, I have pyped erst so long  
with payne,  
That all mine oten reedes bene rent and  
wore:  
And my poore Muse hath spent her spared  
store,  
Yet little good hath got, and much lesse  
gayne.  
Such pleasaunce makes the grashopper so  
poore,  
And ligge so layd, when winter doth her  
straine.

The dapper ditties that I wont devise,  
To feede youtnes fancie and the flocking  
fry,  
Delighten much: what I the bett forthy?  
They han the pleasure, I a sclender prise:  
I beate the bush, the byrds to them doe  
flye:  
What good thereof to Cuddie can arise?

*Piers.* Cuddie, the prayse is better then  
the price,  
The glory eke much greater then the gayne:  
O what an honor is it, to restraine<sup>21</sup>  
The lust of lawlesse youth with good ad-  
vice,  
Or pricke them forth with pleasaunce of  
thy vaine,  
Whereto thou list their trayned willes  
entice!

Soone as thou gynst to sette thy notes in  
frame,  
O how the rurall routes to thee doe cleave!  
Seemeth thou doest their soule of sense  
bereave,  
All as the shepherd, that did fetch his  
dame  
From Plutoes balefull bowre withouten  
leave:  
His musicks might the hellish hound did  
tame.<sup>30</sup>

*Cud.* So praysen babes the peacocks  
spotted traine,  
And wondren at bright Argus blazing  
eye;  
But who rewards him ere the more forthy?  
Or feedes him once the fuller by a graine?  
Sike prayse is smoke, that sheddeth in the  
skye,  
Sike words bene wynd, and wasten soone in  
vayne.

*Piers.* Abandon then the base and viler  
clowne:  
Lyft up thy selfe out of the lowly dust,  
And sing of bloody Mars, of wars, of  
giusts:  
Turne thee to those that weld the awful  
crowne,  
To doubted knights, whose woundlesse<sup>40</sup>  
armour rusts,  
And helmes unbruized wexen dayly browne.  
There may thy Muse display her fluttryng  
wing,  
And stretch her selfe at large from east to  
west:  
Whither thou list in fayre Elisa rest,  
Or if thee please in bigger notes to sing,  
Advance the worthy whome shee loveth  
best,  
That first the white beare to the stake did  
bring.

And when the stubborne stroke of stronger  
 stounds  
 Has somewhat slackt the tenor of thy  
 string,<sup>50</sup>  
 Of love and lustihead tho mayst thou sing,  
 And carrol lowde, and leade the myllers  
 rownde,  
 All were Elisa one of thilke same ring.  
 So mought our Cuddies name to heaven  
 sownde.

*Cud.* Indeede the Romish Tityrus, I  
 heare,  
 Through his Mecœnas left his oaten reede,  
 Whereon he earst had taught his flocks to  
 feede,  
 And laboured lands to yield the timely eare,  
 And eft did sing of warres and deadly drede,  
 So as the heavens did quake his verse to  
 here.<sup>60</sup>

But ah! Mecœnas is yclad in claye,  
 And great Augustus long ygoe is dead,  
 And all the worthies ligger wrapt in leade,  
 That matter made for poets on to play:  
 For, ever, who in derring doe were drede,  
 The loftie verse of hem was loved aye.

But after vertue gan for age to stoupe,  
 And mighty manhode brought a bedde of  
 ease,  
 The vaunting poets found nought worth a  
 pease  
 To put in preace emong the learned troupe.  
 Tho gan the streames of flowing wittes to  
 cease,<sup>71</sup>  
 And sonnebright honour pend in shamefull  
 coupe.

And if that any buddes of poesie  
 Yet of the old stocke gan to shoote agayne,  
 Or it mens follies mote be forst to fayne,  
 And rolle with rest in rymes of rybandrye,  
 Or, as it sprong, it wither must agayne:  
 Tom Piper makes us better melodie.

*Piers.* O pierlesse Poesye, where is then  
 thy place?  
 If nor in princes pallace thou doe sitt,<sup>80</sup>  
 (And yet is princes pallace the most fitt)  
 Ne brest of baser birth doth thee embrace.  
 Then make thee winges of thine aspyring  
 wit,  
 And, whence thou camst, flye backe to  
 heaven apace.

*Cud.* Ah, Percy! it is all to weake and  
 wanne,  
 So high to sore, and make so large a  
 flight;  
 Her peece pyneons bene not so in plight:  
 For Colin fittes such famous flight to  
 scanne:  
 He, were he not with love so ill bedight,  
 Would mount as high and sing as soote as  
 swanne.<sup>90</sup>

*Piers.* Ah, fon! for love does teach him  
 climbe so hie,  
 And lyftes him up out of the loathsome  
 myre:  
 Such immortall mirrhor as he doth ad-  
 mire  
 Would rayse ones mynd above the starry  
 skie,  
 And cause a caytive corage to aspire;  
 For lofty love doth loath a lowly eye.

*Cud.* All otherwise the state of poet  
 stands:  
 For lordly Love is such a tyranne fell,  
 That, where he rules, all power he doth ex-  
 pell.  
 The vaunted verse a vacant head de-  
 maundes,<sup>100</sup>  
 Ne wont with crabbed Care the Muses  
 dwell:  
 Unwisely weaves, that takes two webbes in  
 hand.

Who ever casts to compasse weightye  
 prise,  
 And thinks to throwe out thondring words  
 of threate,  
 Let powre in lavish cups and thriftie bitts  
 of meate;  
 For Bacchus fruite is frend to Phœbus  
 wise,  
 And when with wine the braine begins to  
 sweate,  
 The numbers flowe as fast as spring doth  
 ryse.

Thou kenst not, Percie, howe the ryme  
 should rage.  
 O if my temples were distaind with wine,  
 And girt in girlonds o' wild yvie twine,<sup>111</sup>  
 How I could reare the Muse on stately  
 stage,  
 And teache her tread aloft in buskin fine,  
 With quaint Bellona in her equipage!



But ah! my corage cooles ere it be warme;

Fortly content us in thys humble shade,  
Where no such troublous tydes han us assayde.

Here we our slender pipes may safely charme.

*Piers.* And when my gates shall han their bellies layd,

Cuddie shall have a kidde to store his farne.

CUDDIES EMBLEME.

*Agitante calescimus illo, &c.*

### GLOSSE

This Æglogue is made in imitation of Theocritus his xvi. Idilion, wherein hee reprov'd the tyranne Hiero of Syracuse for his nigardise towardes poetes, in whome is the power to make men immortal for their good dedes, or shameful for their naughty lyfe. And the lyke also is in Mantuane. The style hereof, as also that in Theocritus, is more loftye then the rest, and applyed to the heighte of poeticall witte.

*Cuddie.* I doubt whether by Cuddie be 10 specified the authour selfe, or some other. For in the eyght Æglogue the same person was brought in, singing a cantion of Colius making, as he sayth. So that some doubt that the persons be different.

*Whilome*, sometime.

*Oaten reedes*, Avena.

*Ligge so layde*, lye so faynt and unlustye.

*Dapper*, pretye.

*Frye* is a bold metaphore, forced from the 20 spawning fishes: for the multitude of young fish be called the frye.

*To restraine.* This place seemeth to conspyre with Plato, who in his first booke *de Legibus* sayth, that the first invention of poetry was of very vertuous intent. For at what time an infinite number of youth usually came to their great solemne feastes called Panegyrica, which they used every five yeere to hold, some learned man, being more hable then the rest for speciall gyftes of wytte and musicke, would take upon him to sing fine verses to the people, in prayse eyther of vertue or of victory or of immortality, or such like. At whose wonderful gyft al men being astonied and as it were ravished with delight, thinking (as it was indeed) that he was inspired from above, called him *vatem*: which kinde of men afterwarde framing their verses to lighter musick (as of musick be many kinds, some sadder, some 40 lighter, some martiall, some heroical: and so

diversely eke affect the myndes of men) found out lighter matter of poesie also, some playing wyth love, some scorning at mens fashions, some powred out in pleasures: and so were called poetes or makers.

*Sence bereave.* What the secrete working of musick is in the myndes of men, aswell appeareth hereby, that some of the auncient philosophers, and those the moste wise, as 50 Plato and Pythagoras, held for opinion, that the mynd was made of a certaine harmonie and musicall numbers, for the great compassion and likenes of affection in thone and in the other, as also by that memorable history of Alexander: to whom when as Timotheus the great musitian playd the Phrygian melodie, it is said that he was distraught with such unwonted fury, that streight way rysing from the table in great rage, he caused himselfe to be 60 armed, as ready to goe to warre, (for that musick is very warlike:) and immediatly wheu as the musitian chaunged his stroke into the Lydian and Ionique harmony, he was so furr from warring, that he sat as styl, as if he had bene in matters of counsell. Such might is in musick. Wherefore Plato and Aristotle forbid the Arcadian melodie from children and youth. For that being altogether on the fyft and vii. tone, it is of great force to molifie 70 and quench the kindly courage, which useth to burne in yong brests. So that it is not incredible which the poete here sayth, that musick can bereave the soule of sence.

*The shepherd that*, Orpheus: of whom is sayd, that by his excellent skil in musick and poetry, he recovered his wife Eurydice from hell.

*Argus eyes.* Of Argus is before said, that Juno to him committed hir husband Jupiter 80 his paragon, Iô, because he had an hundred eyes: but afterwarde Mercury, wyth hys musick lulling Argus aslepe, slew him and brought Iô away, whose eyes it is sayd that Juno, for his eternall memory, placed in her byrd the peacocks tayle: for those coloured spots indeede resemble eyes.

*Woundlesse armour*, unwounded in warre, doe rust through long peace.

*Display*, a poeticall metaphore: whereof 90 the meaning is, that, if the poet list showe his skill in matter of more dignitie then is the homely Æglogue, good occasion is him offered of higher vein and more heroicall argument in the person of our most gracious sovereign, whom (as before) he calleth Elisa. Or if mater of knighthood and chevalrie please him better, that there be many noble and valiaunt men, that are both worthy of his payne in their deserved prayses, and also favourers of hys 100 skil and faculty.

*The worthy.* He meaneth (as I guesse) the most honorable and renowned the Erle of Leycester, whom by his cognisance (although the same be also proper to other) rather then by his name he bewrayeth, being not likely that the names of noble princes be known to country clowne.

*Slack,* that is when thou chaungest thy verse from stately discourse, to matter of more 110 pleasaunce and delight.

*The millers,* a kind of daunce.

*Ring,* company of dauncers.

*The Romish Titirus,* wel knowne to be Virgile, who by Mecænas means was brought into the favour of the Emperour Augustus, and by him moved to write in loftier kinde then he erst had doen.

*Whereon.* In these three verses are the three severall workes of Virgile intended. For 120 in teaching his flocks to feede, is meant his *Æglogues*. In labouring of lands, is hys *Bucoliques*. In singiug of wars and deadly dreade, is his divine *Æneis* figured.

*In derring doe,* in manhoode and chevalrie.

*For ever.* He sheweth the cause why poetes were wout be had in such honor of noble men, that is, that by them their worthines and valor shold through theyr famous posies be commended to al posterities. Wherefore it is 130 sayd, that Achilles had never bene so famous, as he is, but for Homers immortal verses: which is the only advantage which he had of Hector. And also that Alexander the Great, comming to his tombe in Sigeus, with naturall teares blessed him, that ever was his hap to be honoured with so excellent a poets work, as so renowned and ennobled onely by hys meanes. Which being declared in a most eloquent oration of Tullies, is of Petrarch no 140 lesse worthely sette forth in a sonet.

'Giunto Alexandro a la famosa tomba  
Del fero Achille, sospirando disse:  
O fortunato, che si chiara tromba Trovasti,' &c.

And that such account hath bene alwayes made of poetes, aswell sheweth this. that the worthy Scipio, in all his warres against Carthage and Numantia, had evermore in his company, and that in a most familiar sort, the good olde poet Ennius: as also that Alexander, destroy- 150 ing Thebes, when he was enforced, that the famous lyrick poet Pindarus was borne in that citie, not onely commaunded streightly, that no man should, upon payne of death, do any violence to that house, by fire or otherwise: but also specially spared most, and some highly rewarded, that were of hys kinne. So favoured he the only name of a poete. Whych prayse otherwise was in the same man no lesse famous, that when he came to ransacking of King 160 Darius coffers, whom he lately had over-

throwen, he founde in a little coffer of silver the two bookes of Homers works, as layd up there for speciall jewels and riches, which he, taking thence, put one of them dayly in his bosome, and thother every night layde under his pillowe. Such honor have poetes alwayes found in the sight of princes and noble men: which this author here very well sheweth, as els where more notably. 170

*But after.* He sheweth the cause of contempt of poetry to be idlenesse and basenesse of mynd.

*Pent,* shut up in slouth, as in a coope or cage.

*Tom Piper,* an ironically sarcasmus, spoken in derision of these rude wits, whych make more account of a ryming ryband, then of skill grounded upon learning and judgment.

*Ne brest,* the meaner sort of men.

*Her peece of pineons,* unperfect skil. Spoken wyth humble modestie. 181

*As soote as swanne.* The comparison seemeth to be strange: for the swanne hath ever wonne small commendation for her swete singing: but it is sayd of the learned that the swan, a little before hir death, singeth most pleasantly, as prophecying for a secrete instinct her neere destinie. As wel sayth the poete elsewhere in one of his sonetts.

'The silver swanne doth sing before her dying day,  
As shee that feesles the deepe delight that is in  
death,' &c. 191

*Immortall myrrhour,* Beauty, which is an excellent object of poetical spirites, as appeareth by the worthy Petrarchs saying,

'Fiorir faceva il mio debile ingegno,  
A la sua ombra, et crescer ne gli affanni.'

*A caytive corage,* a base and abject minde.

*For lofty love.* I think this playing with the letter to be rather a fault then a figure, aswel in our English tongue, as it hath bene al- 200 ways in the Latine, called *Cucozelon*.

*A vacant* imitateth Mantuanes saying, 'vacuum curis divina cerebrum Poscit.'

*Lavish cups* resembleth that comen verse, 'Fœcundi calices quem non fecere disertum?'

*O if my.* He seemeth here to be ravished with a poetical furie. For (if one rightly mark) the numbers rise so ful, and the verse groweth so big, that it seemeth he hath forgot the meanness of shepheards state and stile. 210

*Wild yvie,* for it is dedicated to Bacchus. and therefore it is sayd, that the Mænades (that is, Bacchus franticke priestes) used in theyr sacrifice to carry thyrsos, which were pointed staves or javelins, wrapped about with yvie.

*In buskin.* It was the maner of poetes and plaiers in tragedies to were buskins, as also in comedies to use stockes and light shoes. So that the buskin in poetry is used for tragical matter, as is said in Virgile, 'Sola Sophocleo 220

tua carmina digna cothurno.' And the like in Horace, 'Magnum loqui, nitique cothurno.'

*Queint*, strange. *Bellona*; the goddess of battaile, that is, Pallas, which may therefore wel be called queint, for that (as Lucian saith) when Jupiter hir father was in traveile of her, he caused his sonne Vulcane with his axe to hew his head. Out of which leaped forth lustely a valiant damsell armed at all poyntes, whom seeing Vulcane so faire and comely, lightly <sup>230</sup> leaping to her, proffered her some cortesie, which the lady disdeigning, shaked her speare at him, and threatned his saucinesse. Therefore such straungenesse is well applied to her.

*Æquipage*, order.

*Tydes*, seasons.

*Charme*, temper and order: for charmes were wont to be made by verses, as Ovid sayth, 'Aut si carminibus.'

#### EMBLEME.

Hereby is meant, as also in the whole <sup>240</sup> course of this Æglogue, that poetry is a divine instinct and unnatural rage passing the reache of comen reason. Whom Piers answereth epiphonematicos, as admiring the excellency of the skylle, whereof in Cuddie hee hadde alreadye hadde a taste.

### NOVEMBER

#### ÆGLOGA UNDECIMA

##### ARGUMENT

In this xi. Æglogue he bewayleth the death of some mayden of greate bloud, whom he calleth Dido. The personage is secrete, and to me altogether unknowne, albe of him selfe I often required the same. This Æglogue is made in imitation of Marot his song, which he made upon the death of Loys the Frenche Queene: but farre passing his reache, and in myne opinion all other the Eglogues of this booke.

##### THENOT. COLIN.

*The.* Colin, my deare, when shall it please thee sing,

As thou were wont, songs of some jouissance?

Thy Muse to long slombreth in sorrowing,  
Lulled a sleepe through loves misgovernance:

Now somewhat sing whose endles sovernaunce

Emong the shepheards swaines may aye remaine,

Whether thee list thy loved lasse advaunce,  
Or honor Pan with hymnes of higher vaine.

*Col.* Thenot, now nis the time of merimake, <sup>9</sup>

Nor Pan to herye, nor with love to playe:  
Sike myrth in May is meetest for to make,  
Or summer shade, under the cocked haye.  
But nowe sadde winter welked hath the day,

And Phœbus, weary of his yerely taske,  
Ystabled hath his steedes in lowlye laye,  
And taken up his ynne in Fishes haske.

Thilke sollein season sadder plight doth aske,

And loatheth sike delightes as thou doest prayse:

The mornefull Muse in myrth now list ne maske,

As shee was wont in youngth and sommer dayes. <sup>20</sup>

But if thou algate lust light virelayes,  
And looser songs of love, to underfong,  
Who but thy selfe deserves sike Poetes prayse?

Relieve thy oaten pypes that sleepe long.

*The.* The nightingale is soveraigne of song,

Before him sits the titmose silent bee:

And I, unfitte to thrust in skilfull thronge,  
Should Colin make judge of my fooleree.

Nay, better learne of hem that learned bee,  
And han be watered at the Muses well: <sup>30</sup>

The kindly dewe drops from the higher tree,

And wets the little plants that lowly dwell  
But if sadde winters wrathe, and season chill,

Accorde not with thy Muses meriment,  
To sadder times thou mayst attune thy quill,

And sing of sorrowe and deathes dreeriment:

For deade is Dido, dead, alas! and drent,  
Dido, the greate shephearde his daughter sheene:

The fayrest may she was that ever went,  
Her like shee has not left behinde I weene.

And if thou wilt bewayle my wofull tene, <sup>41</sup>  
I shall thee give yond cosset for thy payne:

And if thy rymes as rownd and rufull bene  
As those that did thy Rosaliud complayne,

Much greater gyfts for guerdon thou shalt gayne

Then kidde or cosset, which I thee bynempt.



Then up, I say, thou jolly shepeheard  
swayne,

Let not my small demaund be so contempt.

*Col.* Thenot, to that I choose thou doest  
me tempt:

But ah ! to well I wote my humble vaine,  
And howe my rymes bene rugged and un-  
kempt: 51

Yet, as I conne, my conning I will strayne.

Up, then, Melpomene, thou mournefulst  
Muse of nyne !

Such cause of mourning never hadst afore:

Up, grieslie ghostes ! and up my ruffull  
ryne !

Matter of myrth now shalt thou have no  
more:

For dead shee is that myrth thee made of  
yore.

Dido, my deare, alas ! is dead,

Dead, and lyeth wrapt in lead:

O heavie herse ! 60

Let streaming teares be poured out in store:

O carefull verse !

Shepheards, that by your flocks on Kentish  
downes abyde,

Waile ye this wofull waste of Natures  
warke:

Waile we the wight whose presence was  
our pryde:

Waile we the wight whose absence is our  
carke.

The sonne of all the world is dimme and  
darke:

The earth now lacks her wonted light,

And all we dwell in deadly night:

O heavie herse ! 70

Breake we our pypes, that shrild as lowde  
as larke:

O carefull verse !

Why doe we longer live, (ah, why live we  
so long ?)

Whose better dayes death hath shut up in  
woe ?

The fayrest floure our gyrlond all emong

Is faded quite, and into dust ygoe.

Sing now, ye shepheards daughters, sing no  
moe

The songs that Colin made in her  
prayse,

But into weeping turne your wanton  
layes:

O heavie herse ! 80

Now is time to die. Nay, time was long  
ygoe:

O carefull verse !

Whence is it that the flouret of the field  
doth fade,

And lyeth buried long in winters bale:

Yet soone as spring his mantle doth dis-  
playe,

It floureth fresh, as it should never fayle ?

But thing on earth that is of most availe,

As vertues braunch and beauties budde,

Reliven not for any good.

O heavie herse ! 90

The braunch once dead, the budde eke  
needes must quaile:

O carefull verse !

She, while she was, (that was, a woful word  
to sayne !)

For beauties prayse and plesaunce had no  
pere:

So well she couth the shepherds euter-  
tayne

With cakes and cracknells and such country  
chere.

Ne would she scorne the simple shepheards  
swauiue,

For she would cal hem often heame,

And give hem curds and clouted creame.

O heavie herse ! 100

Als Colin Cloute she would not once dis-  
dayne.

O carefull verse !

But nowe sike happy cheere is turnd to  
heavie chaunce,

Such plesaunce now displast by dolours  
dint:

All musick sleepes where Death doth leade  
the daunce,

And shepherds wonted solace is extinct.

The blew in black, the greene in gray, is  
tinct;

The gaudie girlonds deck her grave,

The faded flowres her corse embrace.

O heavie herse ! 110

Morne nowe, my Muse, now morne with  
teares besprint.

O carefull verse !

O thou greate shepheard, Lobbin, how great  
is thy grieve !

Where bene the nosegayes that she dight  
for thee ?

The colourd chaplets, wrought with a  
chiefe,  
The knotted rushringes, and gilte rose-  
maree ?

For slee deemed nothing too deere for thee.  
Ah ! they bene all yclad in clay,  
One bitter blast blewe all away.

O heaue herse ! 120

Thereof nought remaines but the memoree.  
O carefull verse !

Ay me ! that dreerie Death should strike  
so mortall stroke,  
That can undoe Dame Natures kindly  
course :

The faded lockes fall from the loftie oke,  
The fouds do gaspe, for dryed is theyr  
sourse,

And fouds of teares flowe in theyr stead  
perforse.

The mantled medowes mourne,

Theyr sondry colours tourne.

O heaue herse ! 130

The heavens doe melt in teares without re-  
morse.

O carefull verse !

The feeble flocks in field refuse their  
former foode,

And hang theyr heads, as they would learne  
to weepe :

The beastes in forest wayle as they were  
woode,

Except the wolves, that chase the wandring  
sheepe,

Now she is gon that safely did hem keepe.

The turtle, on the bared braunch,

Laments the wound that Death did  
launch.

O heaue herse ! 140

And Philomele her song with teares doth  
steepe.

O carefull verse !

The water nymphs, that wont with her to  
sing and daunce,

And for her girlond olive braunches beare,  
Now balefull boughes of cypres doen ad-  
vaunce :

The Muses, that were wont greene bayes  
to weare,

Now bringen bitter eldre braunches seare :

The Fatall Sisters eke repent

Her vitall threde so soone was spent.

O heaue herse ! 150

Morne now, my Muse, now morne with  
heavie cheare.

O carefull verse !

O trustlesse state of earthly things, and  
slipper hope

Of mortal men, that swincke and sweate for  
nought,

And shooting wide, doe misse the marked  
scope :

Now have I learnd, (a lesson derely  
bought)

That nys on earth assuraunce to be sought :

For what might be in earthlie mould,

That did her buried body hould.

O heaue herse ! 160

Yet saw I on the beare when it was brought.

O carefull verse !

But maugre Death, and dreaded sisters  
deadly spight,

And gates of Hel, and fyrie furies forse,

She hath the bonds broke of eternall night,

Her soule unbodied of the burdenous corpse.

Why then weepes Lobbin so without re-  
morse ?

O Lobb ! thy losse no longer lament ;

Dido nis dead, but into heaven hent.

O happye herse ! 170

Cease now, my Muse, now cease thy sor-  
rowes sourse :

O joyfull verse !

Why wayle we then ? why weary we the  
gods with playnts,

As if some evill were to her betight ?

She raignes a goddesse now among the  
saintes,

That whilome was the saynt of shepheards  
light :

And is enstalled nowe in heavens hight.

I see thee, blessed soule, I see,

Walke in Elisian fieldes so free.

O happy herse ! 180

Might I once come to thee ! O that I  
might !

O joyfull verse !

Unwise and wretched men, to weete whats  
good or ill,

Wee deeme of death as doome of ill de-  
sert :

But knewe we, fooles, what it us bringes  
until,

Dye would we dayly, once it to expert.

No daunger there the shepheard can astert:  
 Fayre fieldes and pleasaunt layes there  
 bene,  
 The fieldes ay fresh, the grasse ay greene:  
 O happy herse! 190  
 Make hast, ye shepheards, thether to revert:  
 O joyfull verse!

Dido is gone afore (whose turne shall be  
 the next?)

There lives shee with the blessed gods in  
 blisse,

There drincks she nectar with ambrosia  
 mixt,

And joyes enjoyes that mortall men doe  
 misse.

The honor now of highest gods she is,  
 That whilome was poore shepheards  
 pryde,

While here on earth she did abyde.

O happy herse! 200

Ceasse now, my song, my woe now wasted  
 is.

O joyfull verse!

*The.* Ay, francke shepheard, how bene  
 thy verses meint

With doolful pleasaunce, so as I ne wotte  
 Whether rejoyce or weepe for great con-  
 strainte!

Thyne be the cossette, well hast thow it  
 gotte.

Up, Colin, up, ynough thou morned hast:  
 Now gynnes to mizzle, hye we homeward  
 fast.

COLINS EMBLEME.

*La mort ny mord.*

#### GLOSSE

*Jouisaunce*, myrth.

*Sovenauce*, remembraunce.

*Herie*, honour.

*Welked*, shortned, or empayred. As the  
 moone being in the waine is sayde of Lidgate  
 to welk.

*In lowly lay*, according to the season of the  
 moneth November, when the sonne draweth  
 low in the south toward his tropick or returne.

*In Fishes haske*. The sonne reigneth, that 10  
 is, in the signe Pisces all November. A *haske*  
 is a wicker pad, wherein they use to cary fish.

*Virelaies*, a light kind of song.

*Bee watred*. For it is a saying of poetes, that  
 they have dronk of the Muses well Castalias,  
 whereof was before sufficiently sayd.

*Dreiment*, dreery and heavy cheere.

*The great shepheard* is some man of high  
 degree, and not, as some vainely suppose, God  
 Pan. The person both of the shephearde and 20  
 of Dido is unknown, and closely buried in the  
 authors conceipt. But out of donbt I am, that  
 it is not Rosalind, as some imagin: for he  
 speaketh soone after of her also.

*Shene*, fayre and shining.

*May*, for mayde.

*Tene*, sorrow.

*Guerdon*, reward.

*Bynempt*, bequethed. 29

*Cosset*, a lambe brought up without the dam.

*Unkempt*, incompti; not comed, that is, rude  
 and unhansome.

*Melpomene*, the sadde and waylefull Muse,  
 used of poets in honor of tragedies: as saith  
 Virgile,

'Melpomene tragico proclamat maesta boatu.'

*Up griesly gosts*, the maner of tragicall  
 poetes, to call for helpe of furies and damned  
 ghostes: so is Hecuba of Euripides, and Tan-  
 talus brought in of Seneca; and the rest of 40  
 the rest.

*Herse* is the solemne obsequie in funeralles.

*Wast of*, decay of so beautifull a peece.

*Carke*, care.

*Ah why*, an elegant epanorthosis, as also  
 soone after: *nay, time was long ago*.

*Flouret*, a diminutive for a little floure. This  
 is a notable and sententions comparison 'A  
 minor ad majus.'

*Reliven not*, live not againe, sc. not in theyr 50  
 earthly bodies: for in heaven they enjoy their  
 due reward.

*The braunch*. He meaneth Dido, who being,  
 as it were, the mayne braunch now withered,  
 the buddes, that is, beautie (as he sayd afore)  
 can no more flourish.

*With cakes*, fit for shepheards bankets.

*Heame*, for home: after the northerne pro-  
 nonncing.

*Tinct*, deyed or stayned. 60

*The gaudie*. The meaning is, that the things  
 which were the ornaments of her lyfe are made  
 the honor of her funerall, as is used in burialls.

*Lobbin*, the name of a shepherd, which seem-  
 eth to have bene the lover and deere frende of  
 Dido.

*Rushrings*, agreeable for such base gyftes.

*Faded lockes*, dried leaves. As if Nature  
 her selfe bewayled the death of the mayde.

*Sourse*, spring. 70

*Mantled medowes*, for the soudry flowres are  
 like a mantle or coverlet wrought with many  
 colours.

*Philomele*, the nightingale: whome the poetes  
 faine once to have bene a ladye of great beauty  
 till, being ravished by hir sisters husbände



she desired to be turned into a byrd of her name. Whose complaintes be very well set forth of Maister George Gaskin, a wittie gentleman, and the very chefe of our late rymers, 80 who, and if some partes of learning wanted not (albee it is well knowen he altogyther wanted not learning) no doubt would have attayned to the excellencye of those famous poets. For gifts of wit and naturall promptnesse appeare in hym abundantly.

*Cypresse*, used of the old paynims in the furnishing of their funerall pompe, and properly the signe of all sorow and heavynesse.

*The fatall sisters*, Clotho, Lachesis, and 90 Atropos, daughters of Herebus and the Nighte, whom the poetes fayne to spinne the life of man, as it were a long threde, which they drawe out in length, till his fatal howre and timely death be come; but if by other casualtie his dayes be abridged, then one of them, that is, Atropos, is sayde to have cut the threde in twain. Hereof commeth a common verse.

'Clotho colum bajulat, Lachesis trahit, Atropos occat.'

*O trustlesse*, a gallant exclamation, moral- 100 ized with great wisdom, and passionate wyth great affection.

*Beare*, a frame, wheron they use to lay the dead corse.

*Furies*, of poetes be feyned to be three, Persephone, Alecto, and Megera, which are sayd to be the authours of all evill and mischiefe.

*Eternall night* is death or darknesse of hell.

*Betight*, happened. 110

*I see*, a lively icon or representation, as if he saw her in heaven present.

*Elysian fieldes* be devised of poetes to be a place of pleasure like Paradise, where the happye soules doe rest in peace and eternal happynesse.

*Dye would*, the very expresse saying of Plato in Phædone.

*Astert*, befall unwares.

*Nectar and ambrosia* be feigned to be the 120 drink and foode of the gods: ambrosia they liken to manna in scripture, and nectar to be white like creme, whereof is a proper tale of Hebe, that spilt a cup of it, and stayned the heavens, as yet appeareth. But I have already discoursed that at large in my Commentarye upon the *Dreames* of the same authour.

*Meynt*, mingled.

#### EMBLEME.

Which is as much to say as, *death biteth not*. For although by course of nature we be 130 borne to dye, and being ripened with age, as with a timely harvest, we must be gathered in time, or els of our selves we fall like rotted ripe

fruite fro the tree: yet death is not to be counted for evill, nor (as the poete sayd a little before) as doome of ill desert. For though the trespasse of the first man brought death into the world, as the guerdon of sinne, yet being overcome by the death of one that dyed for al, it is now made (as Chaucer sayth) the 140 grene path way to life. So that it agreeth well with that was sayd, that Death byteth not (that is) hurteth not at all.

## DECEMBER

### ÆGLOGA DUODECIMA

#### ARGUMENT

THIS Æglogue (even as the first beganne) is ended with a complaynte of Colin to God Pan: wherein, as weary of his former wayes, he proportioneth his life to the foure seasons of the yeaere, comparing hys youthe to the spring time, when he was fresh and free from loves follye; his manhoode to the sommer, which, he sayth, was consumed with greate heate and excessive drouth, caused throughe a comet or blasinge starre, by which hee meaneth love, which passion is comenly compared to such flames and immoderate heate; his riper yeaeres hee resembleth to an unseasonable harveste, wherein the fruites fall ere they be rype; his latter age to winters chyll and frostie season, now drawing neare to his last ende.

THE gentle shepherd satte beside a springe,  
All in the shadowe of a bushye brere,  
That Colin hight, which wel could pype and  
singe,

For he of Tityrus his songs did lere.  
There as he satte in secrete shade alone,  
Thus gan he make of love his piteous  
mone.

'O soveraigne Pan, thou god of shepheards  
all,

Which of our tender lambkins takest keepe,  
And when our flocks into mischaunce  
mought fall,

Doest save from mischiefe the unwary  
sheepe, 10

Als of their maisters hast no lesse regard  
Then of the flocks, which thou doest watch  
and ward:

'I thee beseche (so be thou deigne to heare  
Rude ditties, tund to shepheards oaten  
reede,

Or if I ever sonet song so cleare  
 As it with pleasaunce mought thy fancie  
 feede)  
 Hearken awhile, from thy greene cabinet,  
 The rurall song of carefull Colinet.

‘Whilome in youth, when flowrd my joyfull  
 spring,  
 Like swallow swift I wandred here and  
 there: 20  
 For heate of heedlesse lust me so did sting,  
 That I of doubted daunger had no feare.  
 I went the wastefull woodes and forest  
 wyde,  
 Withouten dreade of wolves to bene espyed.

‘I wont to raunge amydd the mazie  
 thickette,  
 And gather nuttes to make me Christmas  
 game;  
 And joyed oft to chace the trembling  
 pricket,  
 Or hunt the hartlesse hare til shee were  
 tame.  
 What recked I of wintrye ages waste?  
 Tho deemed I, my spring would ever  
 laste. 30

‘How often have I scaled the craggie oke,  
 All to dislodge the raven of her nest!  
 Howe have I wearied, with many a stroke,  
 The stately walnut tree, the while the  
 rest  
 Under the tree fell all for nuts at strife!  
 For ylike to me was libertee and lyfe.

‘And for I was in thilke same looser yeares,  
 (Whether the Muse so wrought me from  
 my birth,  
 Or I to much beleaved my shepherd peres,)  
 Somedele ybent to song and musicks  
 mirth, 40  
 A good olde shephearde, Wrenock was his  
 name,  
 Made me by arte more cunning in the  
 same.

‘Fro thence I durst in derring doe compare  
 With shepherds swayne what ever fedde  
 in field:  
 And if that Hobbinol right judgement bare,  
 To Pan his owne selfe pype I neede not  
 yield:  
 For if the flocking nymphes did folow Pan,  
 The wiser Muses after Colin ranne.

‘But ah! such pryde at length was ill re-  
 payde:  
 The shepherds god (perdie, god was he  
 none) 50  
 My hurtlesse pleasaunce did me ill up-  
 braide;  
 My freedome lorne, my life he left to  
 mone.  
 Love they him called that gave me check-  
 mate,  
 But better mought they have behote him  
 Hate.

‘Tho gan my lovely spring bid me farewell,  
 And sommer season sped him to display  
 (For Love then in the Lyons house did  
 dwell)  
 The raging fyre that kindled at his ray.  
 A comett stird up that unkindly heate,  
 That reigned (as men sayd) in Venus  
 seate. 60

‘Forth was I ledde, not as I wout afore,  
 When choise I had to choose my wandring  
 waye,  
 But whether Luck and Loves unbridled lore  
 Would leade me forth on Fancies bitte to  
 playe.  
 The bush my bedde, the bramble was my  
 bowre,  
 The woodes can witnesse many a wofull  
 stowre.

‘Where I was wont to seeke the honey bee,  
 Working her formall rowmes in wexen  
 frame,  
 The grieslie todestoole growne there  
 mought I se,  
 And loathed paddocks lording on the  
 same: 70  
 And where the chaunting birds luld me a  
 sleepe,  
 The ghastrlie owle her grievous ymne doth  
 keepe.

‘Then as the springe gives place to elder  
 time,  
 And bringeth forth the fruite of sommers  
 pryde,  
 Also my age, now passed youngthly pryme,  
 To thinges of ryper reason selfe applyed,  
 And leard of lighter timber cotes to  
 frame,  
 Such as might save my sheepe and me fro  
 shame.

'To make fine cages for the nightingale,  
And baskets of bulrushes, was my wont: 80  
Who to entrappe the fish in winding sale  
Was better seene, or hurtful beastes to  
hont ?

I learned als the signes of heaven to ken,  
How Phœbe fayles, where Venus sittes and  
when.

'And tryed time yet taught me greater  
things:

The sodain rysing of the raging seas,  
The soothe of byrds by beating of their  
wings,

The power of herbs, both which can hurt  
and ease,

And which be wont tenrage the restlesse  
sheepe,

And which be wont to worke eternall  
 sleepe. 90

'But ah, unwise and witlesse Colin Cloute !  
That kydst the hidden kinds of many a  
wede,

Yet kydst not ene to cure thy sore hart  
roote,

Whose ranckling wound as yet does rifelye  
bleede !

Why livest thou stil, and yet hast thy  
deathes wound ?

Why dyest thou stil, and yet alive art  
founde ?

'Thus is my sommer worne away and  
wasted,

Thus is my harvest hastened all to rathe:  
The eare that budded faire is burnt and  
blasted,

And all my hoped gaine is turnd to scathe.  
Of all the seede that in my youth was  
sowne, 101

Was nought but brakes and brambles to be  
mowne.

'My boughes with bloosmes that crowned  
were at firste,

And promised of timely fruite such store,  
Are left both bare and barrein now at  
erst:

The flattring fruite is fallen to grownd  
before,

And rotted ere they were halfe mellow  
ripe:

My harvest, wast, my hope away dyd  
wipen.

'The fragrant flowres that in my garden  
grewe

Bene withered, as they had bene gathered  
long: 110

Theyr rootes bene dryed up for lacke of  
dewe,

Yet dewed with teares they han be ever  
among.

Ah ! who has wrought my Rosalind this  
spight,

To spil the flowres that should her girlond  
dight ?

'And I, that whilome wont to frame my  
pype

Unto the shifting of the shepheards foote,  
Sike follies now have gathered as too  
ripe,

And cast hem out as rotten and unsoote.

The loser lasse I cast to please nomore:

One if I please, enough is me therefore. 120

'And thus of all my harvest hope I have  
Nought reaped but a weedye crop of care:  
Which, when I thought have thresht in  
swelling sheave,

Cockel for corne, and chaffe for barley,  
bare.

Soone as the chaffe should in the fan be  
fynd,

All was blowne away of the wavering wynd.

'So now my yeare drawes to his latter  
terne,

My spring is spent, my sommer burnt up  
quite,

My harveste hasts to stirre up Winter  
sterne,

And bids him clayme with rigorous rage  
hys right: 130

So nowe he stormes with many a sturdy  
stoure,

So now his blustering blast eche coste doth  
scoure.

'The carefull cold hath nypt my rugged  
rynde,

And in my face deepe furrowes eld hath  
pight:

My head besprent with hoary frost I fynd,  
And by myne eie the crow his clawe dooth  
wright.

Delight is layd abedde, and pleasure past;  
No sonne now shines, cloudes han all over-  
cast.



'Now leave, ye shepheards boyes, your  
merry glee;  
My Muse is hoarse and weary of thys  
stounde: 140

Here will I hang my pype upon this tree;  
Was never pype of reede did better sounde.  
Winter is come, that blowes the bitter  
blaste,  
And after winter dreerie death does hast.

'Gather ye together, my little flocke,  
My little flock, that was to me so lief:  
Let me, ah! lette me in your folds ye lock,  
Ere the breme winter breede you greater  
griefe.

Winter is come, that blowes the balefull  
breath, 149  
And after winter commeth timely death.

'Adieu, delightes, that lulled me asleepe;  
Adieu, my deare, whose love I bought so  
deare;  
Adieu, my little lambes and loved sheepe;  
Adieu, ye woodes, that oft my witnesse  
were;  
Adieu, good Hobbinol, that was so true:  
Tell Rosalind her Colin bids her adieu.'

## COLINS EMBLEME.

[*Vivitur ingenio : cætera mortis erunt.*]

## GLOSSE

*Tityrus*, Chaucer, as hath bene oft sayd.

*Lambkins*, young lambes.

*Als of their semeth* to expresse Virgils verse.

'Pan curat oves oviumque magistros.'

*Deigne*, vouchsafe.

*Cabinet*, *Colinet*, diminutives.

*Mazie*: For they be like to a maze whence it  
is hard to get out agayne.

*Peres*. felowes and companions.

*Musick*, that is poetry, as Terence sayth, 10  
'Qui artem tractant musicam,' speking of  
poetes.

*Derring doe*, aforesayd.

*Lions house*. He imagineth simply that Cupid,  
which is Love, had his abode in the whote signe  
Leo, which is in middest of somer; a pretie  
allegory, whereof the meaning is, that love in  
him wrought an extraordinarie heate of lust.

*His ray*, which is Cupides beame or flames  
of love. 20

*A comete*, a hlinging starre, meant of beautie,  
which was the cause of his whote love.

*Venus*, the goddesse of beauty or pleasure.  
Also a signe in heaven, as it is here taken. So

he meaneth that heautie, which hath alwayes  
aspect to Venus, was the cause of all his un-  
quietnes in love.

*Where I was*, a fine discription of the chaunge  
of hys lyfe and liking; for all things nowe  
seemed to hym to have altered their kindly 30  
course.

*Lording*: spoken after the maner of pad-  
docks and frogges sitting, which is indeed  
lordly, not removing nor looking once a side,  
unlesse they be sturred.

*Then as*: the second part. That is, his  
manhoode.

*Cotes*, sheepcotes: for such be the exercises  
of shepheards.

*Sal*, or salow, a kind of woodde like wyl- 40  
low, fit to wreath and hynde in leapes to catch  
fish withall.

*Phæbe fayles*, the eclipse of the moone,  
which is alwayes in Cauda or Capite Draconis,  
signes in heaven.

*Venus*, sc. Venus starre, otherwise called  
Hesperus, and Vesper, and Lucifer, both be-  
cause he seemeth to be one of the brightest  
starres, and also first ryseth, and setteth last.  
All which skill in starres being convenient 50  
for shepheardes to knowe, Theocritus and the  
rest use.

*Raging seas*. The cause of the swelling and  
ebbing of the sea commeth of the course of  
the moone, sometime encreasing, sometime  
wayning and decreasing.

*Sooth of byrdes*, a kind of sooth saying used  
in elder tymes, which they gathered by the fly-  
ing of hyrds: first (as is sayd) invented by the  
Thuscanes, and from them derived to the 60  
Romanes, who, (as is sayd in Livie) were so  
supersticiously rooted in the same, that they  
agreed that every noble man should put his  
sonne to the Thuscanes, by them to be brought  
up in that knowledge.

*Of herbes*: That wonderous thinges he  
wrought hy herbes, aswell appeareth by the  
common working of them in our bodies, as also  
hy the wonderful enchauntments and sorceries  
that have bene wrought hy them; insomuch 70  
that it is sayde that Circe, a famous sorceresse,  
turned men into sondry kinds of heastes and  
monsters, and onely hy herbes: as the poete  
sayth,

'Dea sæva potentibus herbis,' &c.

*Kidst*, knewest.

*Eare*, of corne.

*Scathe*, losse, hinderaunce.

*Ever among*, ever and anone.

*Thus is my*, the thyrd parte, wherein is set 80  
forth his ripe yeres as an untimely harvest,  
that bringeth little fruite.

*The fragraunt flowres*. sundry studies and  
laudable partes of learning, wherein how our

poete is seene, he they witnesse, which are privie to his study.

*So now my yeere*, the last part, wherein is described his age, by comparison of wyntrye stormes.

*Carefull cold*, for care is sayd to coole the blood. 91

*Glee*, mirth.

*Hoary frost*, a metaphore of hoary heares scattred lyke to a gray frost.

*Breeme*, sharpe and hitter.

*Adieu delights* is a conclusion of all, where in sixe verses he comprehendeth briefly all that was touched in this booke. In the first verse his delights of youth generally: in the second, the love of Rosalind: in the thyrde, the keeping of sheepe, which is the argument of all *Æglogues*: in the fourth, his complaints: and in the last two, his professed frendship and good will to his good friend Hohhinoll.

#### EMBLEME.

The meaning wherof is, that all thinges perish and come to theyr last end, hut workes of learned wits and monuments of poetry abide for ever. And therefore Horace of his Odes, a work though ful indede of great wit and learning, yet of no so great weight and importance, boldly sayth,

'Exegi monumentum ære perennius,  
Quod nec imber [edax], nec aquilo vorax,' &c.

'Therefore let not be envied, that this poete in his Epilogue sayth, he hath made a Calendar that shall endure as long as time, &c.,

folowing the ensample of Horace and Ovid in the like.

'Grande opus exegi, quod nec Jovis ira, nec ignis,  
Nec ferrum poterit nec edax abolere vetustas,' &c.

LOE! I have made a Calender for every yeare,  
That steele in strength, and time in durance,  
shall outweare:  
And if I marked well the starres revolution,  
It shall continewe till the worlds dissolution,  
To teach the ruder shepherd how to feede his sheepe,  
And from the falsers fraud his folded flocke to keepe.  
Goe, lyttle Calender! thou hast a free passeporte:  
Goe but a lowly gate emongste the meaner sorte:  
Dare not to match thy pype with Tityrus hys style,  
Nor with the Pilgrim that the Ploughman playde awchyle:  
But followe them farre off, and their high steppes adore:  
The better please, the worse despise; I aske no more.

MERCE NON MERCEDE.

# COMPLAINTS

CONTAINING SUNDRIE SMALL POEMES OF THE WORLDS VANITIE  
WHEREOF THE NEXT PAGE MAKETH MENTION

BY ED. SP.

LONDON

IMPRINTED FOR WILLIAM PONSONBIE, DWELLING IN PAULES CHURCHYARD  
AT THE SIGNE OF THE BISHOPS HEAD

1591

## A NOTE OF THE SUNDRIE POEMES CONTAINED IN THIS VOLUME

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. The Ruines of Time.                   | 6. Mniopotmos, or The Tale of the But-<br>terflie. |
| 2. The Teares of the Muses.              | 7. Visions of the Worlds Vanitie.                  |
| 3. Virgils Gnat.                         | 8. Bellayes Visions.                               |
| 4. Prosopopoia, or Mother Hubberds Tale. | 9. Petrarches Visions.                             |
| 5. The Ruines of Rome: by Bellay.        |  |

---

## THE PRINTER TO THE GENTLE READER

SINCE my late setting forth of the *Faerie Queene*, finding that it hath found a favourable passage amongst you, I have sithence endeavoured by all good meanes (for the better encrease and accomplishment of your delights,) to get into my handes such smale poemes of the same authors as I heard were disperst abroad in sundrie hands, and not easie to bee come by, by himselve; some of them having bene diverslie imbeziled and purloyned from him, since his departure over sea. Of the which I have by good meanes gathered together these fewe parcels present, which I have caused to bee imprinted altogether, for that they al seeme to containe like matter of argument in them, being all com-

plaints and meditations of the worlds vanitie, verie grave and profitable. To which effect I understand that he besides wrote sundrie others, namelie, *Ecclesiastes* and *Canticum Canticorum* translated, *A Senights Slumber*, *The Hell of Lovers*, his *Purgatorie*, being all dedicated to ladies, so as it may seeme he ment them all to one volume: besides some other pamphlets looselie scattered abroad: as *The Dying Pellican*, *The Howers of the Lord*, *The Sacrifice of a Sinner*, *The Seven Psalmes*, &c., which when I can either by himselve or otherwise attaine too, I meane likewise for your favour sake to set forth. In the meane time, praying you gentlie to accept of these, and graciouslie to entertaine the 'new poet,' I take leave.

---

[Though *Complaints* was not published till 1591, a year after the first issue of the *Faery Queen*, the poems of which it is composed are more properly to be classed with the *Shepherd's Calendar*. Most of them might have been printed, though perhaps not exactly as they now stand, before 1580; the others are best understood in company with these. The *Calendar* and *Complaints*, indeed, taken together, are the record of Spenser's growth to maturity.

The circumstances of the publication are very oddly confused. In the opening address

the credit for the whole enterprise is assumed by 'the Printer,' Ponsonby, who, we are told, hunted the poems out and made up and issued the volume by his own efforts. This work, we gather, was mainly prosecuted after the poet's 'departure over sea'—his return, that is, to Ireland early in 1591. And the volume certainly was published after his 'departure.' Yet we know that it had been made ready for printing while he was still in England. It appears on the Stationers' Register for December 29, 1590, as approved by one of the official



censors : at that time, therefore, the copy must have been at least approximately complete. Three of the poems, moreover, 'The Tears of the Muses,' 'Mother Hubbard's Tale,' and 'Muiopotmos,' the central poems of the volume, bear signs of having been prepared for the press by himself and issued individually — 'Muiopotmos' in 1590. The plausible address of 'the Printer,' in fine, is not wholly to be trusted. What, then, is to be made of it? According to Dr. Grosart, it was devised by the poet as a blind, in the manner of Swift. For such a device one seeks a reason. May this be that, as, in 1579 (by the first letter to Harvey), he was shy of 'seeming to utter his writings for gaine and commoditie,' so now, but a year after the issue of the *Faery Queen*, he was loth to accept the full responsibility of a second considerable volume? Any account of the publication, however, must be very largely conjectural.

The chronology of the poems is less in doubt. Though two or three of them are somewhat hard to place, the majority can at least be grouped in certain main periods with reasonable probability. First of all is the group that belongs to his university days, 1570-1576, and his subsequent sojourn in Lancashire: 'The Visions of Petrarch,' 'The Visions of Bellay,' 'Ruins of Rome,' and, perhaps, 'Visions of the World's Vanity.' Following upon these days is what may loosely be called his first London period, during which, until it ended with his departure for Ireland in 1580, his headquarters were probably in the capital. These three years were of marked literary activity. To them belong most, if not all, of the *Calendar*, and presumably the greater number of his so-called 'lost works,' besides the beginnings of the *Faery Queen*; to them belong also some of the most important 'complaints,' 'Virgil's Gnat,' 'Mother Hubbard's Tale,' and, less certainly, 'The Tears of the Muses.' Then follow the years of service in Ireland, till Raleigh brought him back in 1589. During this period he would seem to have given his leisure for poetry almost exclusively to the *Faery Queen*. Of the two remaining 'complaints,' 'The Ruins of Time' was written shortly after his return to England, and 'Muiopotmos' perhaps at about the same time.

'The Ruins of Time' and 'Muiopotmos' were composed not long before publication and probably needed no retouching. 'Mother Hubbard's Tale' and 'The Tears of the Muses,' early poems, were to some extent revised for the press. The others, one may think, were allowed to appear as first finished, or were at most but casually retouched. For, from the general tenor of his output, one infers that Spenser was not very sedulous in the revision of work once

completed, and these poems were relatively unimportant — all but one, translations. They are not, like their companions, dedicated to people alive and influential in 1590: their chief function, indeed, would seem to be to fill out the volume. If Ponsoby really had a share in the collecting of *Complaints*, it must have been these, or some of them, that he gathered.

To the reader of *Complaints* one name recurs more frequently than others, that of Joachim Du Bellay, who, from 1549 to his early death in 1560, was one of the leaders of the new school of poetry in France. From him Spenser translated 'The Visions of Bellay' and 'Ruins of Rome,' and from him chiefly he must have acquired those poetic theories of the Pléiade which are the staple of 'The Tears of the Muses.' Du Bellay is a personality of great attractiveness. Not so distinguished an artist as his colleague Ronsard, he had qualities of mind and character that win us more: dignity untouched by arrogance, guarded from it by native sense of fitness, the distinction of a finely congruous nature; in especial, a singularly penetrating and human melancholy. On any Elizabethan author of a volume of 'complaints' his influence might be among the deepest of that day. It is noteworthy, however, that his really central work, the *Regrets*, does not seem to have touched Spenser at all. And indeed, the 'life-long vein of melancholy' which Dr. Grosart detects in 'the newe poete' must have been, at best, rather thin. His elegies are hardly convincing. When he strikes the note of personal disappointment, his verse occasionally betrays a feeling akin to sadness, but the bulk of his really characteristic and genuine work is anything but sad. In the *Faery Queen* one may search far and wide, in vain, for a touch of that peculiar feeling which pervades the romance-epic of the genuinely melancholy Tasso. His most constant mood would seem rather to have been a serenity neither sad nor cheerful. In any case, one will not infer his temperament from the professed melancholy of his earlier work. That much of the *Calendar* is gloomy, that he wrote a whole volume of 'complaints,' was to have been expected: work in that vein was a convention of the days into which he was born. The cosmopolitan pastoral invited, if it did not impose, a strain of lamentation, and in England, since the days of Sir Thomas Wyatt, love-poetry in the manner and tone of the plaintive Petrarch, meditations upon the vanity of life, elegies, stories of the falls of the mighty had formed, in good measure, the staple of serious poetry. Spenser's early work but continues a convention already well established.]

## THE RUINES OF TIME

## DEDICATED

TO THE RIGHT NOBLE AND BEAUTIFULL  
LADIE, THE LADIE MARIE  
COUNTESS OF PEMBROOKE

MOST honourable and bountifull Ladie, there bee long sithens deepe sowed in my brest the seede of most entire love and humble affection unto that most brave knight, your noble brother deceased; which taking roote began in his life time somewhat to bud forth, and to shew themselves to him, as then in the weakenes of their first spring: and would in their riper strength (had it pleased High God till then to drawe out his daies) spired forth fruit of more perfection. But since God hath disdeigned the world of that most noble spirit, which was the hope of all learned men, and the patron of my young Muses; together with him both their hope of anie further fruit was cut off, and also the tender delight of those their first blossoms nipped and quite dead. Yet sithens my late cuming into England, some frends of mine (which might much prevaile with me, and indeede commaund me) knowing with howe straight bandes of duetie I was tied to him, as also bound unto that noble house, (of which the chiefe hope then rested in him) have sought to revive them by upbraiding me, for that I have not shewed anie thankfull remembrance towards him or any of them, but suffer their names to sleep in silence and forgetfulnesse. Whome chieflie to satisfie, or els to avoide that fowle blot of unthankfulnesse, I have conceived this small poeme, intituled by a generall name of *The Worlds Ruines*: yet speciallie intended to the renowing of that noble race, from which both you and he sprong, and to the eternizing of some of the chiefe of them late deceased. The which I dedicate unto your Ladiship as whome it most speciallie concerneth, and to whome I acknowledge my selfe bounden, by manie singular favours and great graces. I pray for your honourable happinesse: and so humblie kisse your handes.

Your Ladiships ever  
humble at commaund,  
E. S.

[‘The Ruins of Time’ is mainly official verse, melodious and uninspired. It is the one poem of the volume confessedly written to order — confessedly, in the frank and dignified letter of dedication. Had Sidney alone been Spenser’s theme, or Sidney and Leicester, both his early patrons, this poem might perhaps have been comparable with *Daphnida*, but the great house to which they belonged having recently lost other distinguished members besides, Spenser saw fit to undertake a sort of necrology of the Dudleys, and the issue was perfunctoriness. Perhaps he was busy with other matters. Perhaps, too, as some have inferred, he built his poem up in good part of earlier material. It certainly is composite and ill-digested, and the device of the ‘visions’ clearly harks back to the days of his artistic apprenticeship. If he did take recourse to his early manuscripts, he may possibly have helped himself with *Stemmata Dudleiana*, mentioned in the postscript of the second letter to Harvey. On these points, however, we have ground for nothing more definite than surmise.]

## THE RUINES OF TIME

It chaunced me on day beside the shore  
Of silver streaming Thamesis to bee,  
Nigh where the goodly Verlame stood of  
yore,  
Of which there now remaines no memorie,  
Nor anie little moniment to see,  
By which the travailer that fares that way  
*This once was she* may warned be to say.

There on the other side, I did behold  
A woman sitting sorrowfullie wailing,  
Rending her yeolow locks, like wyrie golde  
About her shoulders careleslie downe trailing,  
And streames of teares from her faire eyes  
forth railing.  
In her right hand a broken rod she held,  
Which towards heaven shee seemd on high  
to weld.

Whether she were one of that rivers  
nymphes,  
Which did the losse of some dere love lament,  
I doubt; or one of those three fatall impes  
Which draw the dayes of men forth in extent;  
Or th’ auncient genius of that citie brent;  
But seeing her so piteonslie perplexed,  
I (to her calling) askt what her so vexed.

'Ah! what delight,' quoth she, 'in earthlie thing,  
Or comfort can I, wretched creature, have?  
Whose happines the heavens envying,  
From highest staire to lowest step me drave,  
And have in mine owne bowels made my grave,  
That of all nations now I am forlorne,  
The worlds sad spectacle, and Fortunes scorne.'

Much was I mooved at her piteous plaint,  
And felt my heart nigh riven in my breast,<sup>30</sup>  
With tender ruth to see her sore constraint;  
That shedding teares a while I still did rest,  
And after did her name of her request.  
'Name have I none,' quoth she, 'nor anie being,  
Bereft of both by Fates unjust decreeing.

'I was that citie which the garland wore  
Of Britaines pride, delivered unto me  
By Romane victors, which it wonne of yore;  
Though nought at all but ruines now I bee,  
And lye in mine owne ashes, as ye see:<sup>40</sup>  
Verlame I was; what bootes it that I was,  
Sith now I am but weedes and wastfull gras?

'O vaine worlds glorie, and unstedfast state  
Of all that lives on face of sinfull earth!  
Which from their first untill their utmost date  
Tast no one hower of happines or merth,  
But like as at the ingate of their berth  
They crying creep out of their mothers wombe,  
So wailing backe go to their wofull toomb.

'Why then dooth flesh, a bubble glas of breath,<sup>50</sup>  
Hunt after honour and advauncement vaine,  
And reare a trophee for devouring death  
With so great labour and long lasting paine,  
As if his daies for ever should remaine?  
Sith all that in this world is great or gaie  
Doth as a vapour vanish, and decaie.

'Looke backe, who list, unto the former ages,  
And call to count, what is of them become:  
Where be those learned wits and antique sages,  
Which of all wisdome knew the perfect somme?<sup>60</sup>

Where those great warriors, which did overcome  
The world with conquest of their might and maine,  
And made one meare of th' earth and of their raine?

'What nowe is of th' Assyrian Lyonesse,  
Of whome no footing now on earth appears?  
What of the Persian Beares outrageousnesse,  
Whose memorie is quite worne out with yeares?  
Who of the Grecian Libbard now ought heares,  
That overran the East with greedie powre,  
And left his whelps their kingdomes to devoure?<sup>70</sup>

'And where is that same great seven headed beast,  
That made all nations vassals of her pride,  
To fall before her feete at her beheast,  
And in the necke of all the world did ride?  
Where doth she all that wondrous welth nowe hide?  
With her own weight down pressed now shee lies,  
And by her heaps her hugeness testifies.

'O Rome, thy ruine I lament and rue,  
And in thy fall my fatall overthrowe,  
That whilom was, whilst heavens with equall vewe<sup>80</sup>  
Deign'd to behold me, and their gifts bestowe,  
The picture of thy pride in pompous shew:  
And of the whole world as thou wast the empresse,  
So I of this small Northerne world was princesse.

'To tell the beawtie of my buildings fayre,  
Adorn'd with purest golde and precious stone,  
To tell my riches, and endowments rare,  
That by my foes are now all spent and gone,  
To tell my forces, matchable to none,  
Were but lost labour, that few would beleeve,<sup>90</sup>  
And with rehearsing would me more agreeve.



‘High towers, faire temples, goodly theaters,  
 Strong walls, rich porches, princelie palaces,  
 Large streetes, brave houses, sacred sepulchers,  
 Sure gates, sweete gardens, stately galleries  
 Wrought with faire pillours, and fine imageries,  
 All those (O pitie!) now are turnd to dust,  
 And overgrown with blacke oblivions rust.

‘Thereto, for warlike power and peoples store,  
 In Britannie was none to match with mee,  
 That manie often did abie full sore: 101  
 Ne Troynovant, though elder sister shee,  
 With my great forces might compared bee;  
 That stout Pendragon to his perill felt,  
 Who in a siege seaven yeres about me dwelt.

‘But long ere this, Bunduca Britonnesse  
 Her mightie hoast against my bulwarkes brought,  
 Bunduca, that victorious conqueresse,  
 That, lifting up her brave heroïck thought  
 Bove womens weaknes, with the Romanes fought, 110  
 Fought, and in field against them thrice prevailed:  
 Yet was she foyld, when as she me assailed.

‘And though at last by force I conquered were  
 Of hardie Saxons, and became their thrall,  
 Yet was I with much bloodshed bought full deere,  
 And prizde with slaughter of their generall:  
 The moniment of whose sad funerall,  
 For wonder of the world, long in me lasted;  
 But now to nought, through spoyle of time,  
 is wasted.

‘Wasted it is, as if it never were, 120  
 And all the rest that me so honord made,  
 And of the world admired ev’rie where,  
 Is turnd to smoake, that doth to nothing fade;  
 And of that brightnes now appears no shade,

But greislie shades, such as doo haunt in hell  
 With fearfull fiends, that in deep darknes dwell.

‘Where my high steeples whilom usde to stand,  
 On which the lordly faulcon wont to towre,  
 There now is but an heap of lyme and sand,  
 For the shriche-owle to build her balefull bowre: 130  
 And where the nightingale wont forth to powre  
 Her restles plaints, to comfort wakefull lovers,  
 There now haunt yelling mewes and whining plovers.

‘And where the christall Thamis wont to slide  
 In silver channell, downe along the lee,  
 About whose flowrie bankes on either side  
 A thousand nymphes, with mirthfull jollitee,  
 Were wont to play, from all annoyance free,  
 There now no rivers course is to be seene,  
 But moorish feunes, and marshes ever Greene. 140

‘Seemes that that gentle river, for great grieve  
 Of my mishaps, which oft I to him plained,  
 Or for to shunne the horrible mischiefe,  
 With which he saw my cruell foes me pained,  
 And his pure streames with guiltles blood oft stained,  
 From my unhappie neighborhood farre fled,  
 And his sweete waters away with him led.

‘There also where the winged ships were seene  
 In liquid waves to cut their fomie waie,  
 And thousand fishers numbred to have been, 150  
 In that wide lake looking for plenteous praie  
 Of fish, which they with baits usde to betraie,  
 Is now no lake, nor anie fishers store,  
 Nor ever ship shall saile there anie more.

‘They all are gone, and all with them is gone:  
 Ne ought to me remaines, but to lament

My long decay, which no man els doth  
mone,  
And mourne my fall with dolefull dreriment.

Yet it is comfort in great languishment,  
To be bemoned with compassion kinde, <sup>160</sup>  
And mitigates the anguish of the minde.

'But me no man bewaileth, but in game,  
Ne sheddeth teares from lamentable eie:  
Nor anie lives that mentioneth my name  
To be remembred of posteritie,  
Save one, that maugre Fortunes injurie,  
And Times decay, and Envies cruell tort,  
Hath writ my record in true-seeming sort.

'Camdben, the nourice of antiquitie,  
And lanterne unto late succeeding age, <sup>170</sup>  
To see the light of simple veritie  
Buried in ruines, through the great outrage  
Of her owne people, led with warlike rage,  
Camdben, though Time all moniments obscure,  
Yet thy just labours ever shall endure.

'But whie (unhappie wight) doo I thus  
crie,  
And grieve that my remembrance quite is  
raced  
Out of the knowledge of posteritie,  
And all my antique moniments defaced?  
Sith I doo dailie see things highest placed,  
So soone as Fates their vitall thred have  
shorne, <sup>181</sup>  
Forgotten quite as they were never borne.

'It is not long, since these two eyes beheld  
A mightie Prince, of most renowned race,  
Whom England high in count of honour  
held,  
And greatest ones did sue to gaine his  
grace;  
Of greatest ones he greatest in his place,  
Sate in the bosome of his Sovereaine,  
And *Right and loyall* did his word main-  
taine.

'I saw him die, I saw him die, as one <sup>190</sup>  
Of the meane people, and brought foorth  
on beare;  
I saw him die, and no man left to mone  
His dolefull fate that late him loved deare:  
Scarse anie left to close his eylds neare;  
Scarse anie left upon his lips to laie  
The sacred sod, or requiem to saie.

'O trustlesse state of miserable men,  
That builde your blis on hope of earthly  
thing,  
And vainly thinke your selves halfe happie  
then,  
When painted faces with smooth flattering  
ing <sup>200</sup>  
Doo fawne on you, and your wide praises  
sing,  
And when the courting masker louteth  
lowe,  
Him true in heart and trustic to you trow!

'All is but fained, and with oaker dide,  
That everie shower will wash and wipe  
away,  
All things doo change that under heaven  
abide,  
And after death all friendship doth decaie.  
Therefore, what ever man bearest worldlie  
sway,  
Living, on God and on thy selfe relie;  
For when thou diest, all shall with thee  
die. <sup>210</sup>

'He now is dead, and all is with him dead,  
Save what in heavens storehouse he up-  
laid:  
His hope is faild, and come to passe his  
dread,  
And evill men (now dead) his deeds up-  
braid:  
Spite bites the dead, that living never baid.  
He now is gone, the whiles the foxe is  
crept  
Into the hole the which the badger swept.

'He now is dead, and all his glorie gone,  
And all his greatnes vapoured to nought,  
That as a glasse upon the water shone, <sup>220</sup>  
Which vanisht quite, so soone as it was  
sought:  
His name is worne alreadie out of thought,  
Ne anie poet seekes him to revive;  
Yet manie poets honoured him alive.

'Ne doth his Colin, carelesse Colin Cloute,  
Care now his idle bagpipe up to raise,  
Ne tell his sorrow to the listning rout  
Of shepherd groomes, which wont his songs  
to praise:  
Praise who so list, yet I will him dispraise,  
Untill he quite him of this guiltic blame: <sup>230</sup>  
Wake, shepheards boy, at length awake for  
shame!

‘ And who so els did goodnes by him gaine,  
 And who so els his bounteous minde did  
 trie,  
 Whether he shepheard be, or shepherds  
 swaine,  
 (For manie did, which doo it now denie)  
 Awake, and to his song a part applie:  
 And I, the whilest you mourne for his de-  
 cease,  
 Will with my mourning plaints your plaint  
 increase.

‘ He dyde, and after him his brother dyde,  
 His brother prince, his brother noble  
 peere, <sup>240</sup>  
 That whilst he lived was of none envyde,  
 And dead is now, as living, counted deare,  
 Deare unto all that true affection beare,  
 But unto thee most deare, O dearest dame,  
 His noble spouse and paragon of fame.

‘ He, whilst he lived, happie was through  
 thee,  
 And, being dead, is happie now much more;  
 Living, that lincked chaunst with thee to  
 bee,  
 And dead, because him dead thou dost adore  
 As living, and thy lost deare love deplore. <sup>250</sup>  
 So whilst that thou, faire flower of chastitie,  
 Dost live, by thee thy lord shall never die.

‘ Thy lord shall never die, the whiles this  
 verse  
 Shall live, and surely it shall live for ever:  
 For ever it shall live, and shall rehearse  
 His worthie praise, and vertues dying never,  
 Though death his soule doo from his bodie  
 sever.  
 And thou thy selfe herein shalt also live;  
 Such grace the heavens doo to my verses  
 give.

‘ Ne shall his sister, ne thy father die, <sup>260</sup>  
 Thy father, that good earle of rare renowne,  
 And noble patrone of weake povertie;  
 Whose great good deeds, in countrey and in  
 towne,  
 Have purchast him in heaven an happie  
 crowne;  
 Where he now liveth in eternall blis,  
 And left his sonne t’ ensue those steps of  
 his.

‘ He, noble bud, his grandsires livelie hayre,  
 Under the shadow of thy countenance

Now ginnes to shoote up fast, and flourish  
 fayre  
 In learned artes and goodlie govern-  
 aunce, <sup>270</sup>  
 That him to highest honour shall advaunce.  
 Brave impe of Bedford, grow apace in  
 bountie,  
 And count of wisdome more than of thy  
 countie.

‘ Ne may I let thy husbands sister die,  
 That goodly ladie, sith she eke did spring  
 Out of this stocke and famous familie,  
 Whose praises I to future age doo sing,  
 And foorth out of her happie womb did  
 bring  
 The sacred brood of learning and all  
 honour,  
 In whom the heavens powrde all their gifts  
 upon her. <sup>280</sup>

‘ Most gentle spirite breathed from above,  
 Out of the bosome of the Makers blis,  
 In whom all bountie and all vertuous  
 love  
 Appeared in their native propertis,  
 And did enrich that noble breast of his  
 With treasure passing all this worldes  
 worth,  
 Worthie of heaven it selfe, which brought  
 it forth.

‘ His blessed spirite, full of power divine  
 And influence of all celestially grace,  
 Loathing this sinfull earth and earthlie  
 slime, <sup>290</sup>  
 Fled backe too soone unto his native place,  
 Too soone for all that did his love em-  
 brace,  
 Too soone for all this wretched world,  
 whom he  
 Robd of all right and true nobilitie.

‘ Yet ere his happie soule to heaven went  
 Out of this fleshlie goale, he did devise  
 Unto his heavenlie Maker to present  
 His bodie, as a spotles sacrifice;  
 And chose, that guiltie hands of enemies  
 Should powre forth th’ offering of his guilt-  
 les blood: <sup>300</sup>  
 So life exchanging for his countries good.

‘ O noble spirite, live there ever blessed,  
 The worlds late wonder, and the heavens  
 new joy,



Live ever there, and leave me here distressed  
With mortall cares, and cumbrous worlds  
anoy.

But where thou dost that happines enjoy,  
Bid me, O bid me quicklie come to thee,  
That happie there I maie thee alwaies  
see.

‘Yet, whilst the Fates affoord me vitall  
breath,

I will it spend in speaking of thy praise, <sup>310</sup>  
And sing to thee, untill that timelie death  
By heavens doome doo ende my earthlie  
daies:

Thereto doo thou my humble spirite raise,  
And into me that sacred breath inspire,  
Which thou there breathest perfect and  
entire.

‘Then will I sing; but who can better  
sing

Than thine owne sister, peerles ladie bright,  
Which to thee sings with deep harts sorrow-  
ing,

Sorrowing tempered with deare delight,  
That her to heare I feeble my feeble spright  
Robbed of sense, and ravished with joy: <sup>321</sup>  
O sad joy, made of mourning and anoy!

‘Yet will I sing; but who can better sing,  
Than thou thy selfe, thine owne selves  
valiance,

That, whilst thou livedst, madest the for-  
rests ring,

And fields resound, and flockes to leap and  
daunce,

And shepherds leave their lambs unto mis-  
chance,

To runne thy shrill Arcadian pipe to heare:  
O happie were those dayes, thrice happie  
were!

‘But now more happie thou, and wretched  
wee, <sup>330</sup>

Which want the wonted sweetnes of thy  
voice,

Whiles thou now in Elisian fields so free,  
With Orpheus, and with Linus, and the  
choise

Of all that ever did in rimes rejoyce,  
Conversest, and doost heare their heavenlie  
layes,

And they heare thine, and thine doo better  
praise.

‘So there thou livest, singing evermore,  
And here thou livest, being ever song  
Of us, which living loved thee afore,  
And now thee worship, mongst that blessed  
throng <sup>340</sup>

Of heavenlie poets and heroes strong.  
So thou both here and there immortal  
art,

And everie where through excellent desart.

‘But such as neither of themselves can  
sing,

Nor yet are sung of others for reward,  
Die in obscure oblivion, as the thing  
Which never was, ne ever with regard  
Their names shall of the later age be heard,  
But shall in rustie darknes ever lie,  
Unles they mentiond be with infamie. <sup>350</sup>

‘What booteth it to have been rich alive?  
What to be great? what to be gracious?

When after death no token doth survive  
Of former being in this mortall hous,  
But sleepest in dust dead and inglorious,  
Like beast, whose breath but in his nos-  
trels is,

And hath no hope of happinesse or blis.

‘How manie great ones may remembred be,  
Which in their daies most famouslie did  
florish,

Of whome no word we heare, nor signe  
now see, <sup>360</sup>

But as things wipt out with a sponge to-  
perishe,

Because they, living, cared not to cherishe  
No gentle wits, through pride or covetize,  
Which might their names for ever mem-  
orize!

‘Provide therefore (ye princes) whilst ye  
live,

That of the Muses ye may friended bee,  
Which unto men eternitie do give:  
For they be daughters of Dame Memorie  
And Jove, the father of Eternitie,  
And do those men in golden thrones repose,  
Whose merits they to glorifie do chose. <sup>371</sup>

‘The seven fold yron gates of grislie Hell,  
And horrid house of sad Proserpina,  
They able are with power of mightie spell  
To breake, and thence the soules to bring  
awaie

Out of dread darknesse to eternall day.

And them immortall make, which els would  
die  
In foule forgetfulnesse, and nameles lie.

‘So whilome raised they the puissant brood  
Of golden girt Alcmena, for great merite,  
Out of the dust to which the Oetæan wood  
Had him consum’d, and spent his vitall  
spirite, <sup>382</sup>  
To highest heaven, where now he doth inherite  
All happinesse in Hebes silver bowre,  
Chosen to be her dearest paramoure.

‘So raisde they eke faire Ledaes warlick  
twinnes,  
And interchanged life unto them lent,  
That, when th’ one dies, th’ other then be-  
ginnes  
To shew in heaven his brightnes orient;  
And they, for pittie of the sad wayment, <sup>390</sup>  
Which Ôrpheus for Eurydice did make,  
Her back againe to life sent for his sake.

‘So happie are they, and so fortunate,  
Whom the Pierian sacred sisters love,  
That freed from bands of impacable fate,  
And power of death, they live for aye  
above,  
Where mortall wreakes their blis may not  
remove:  
But with the gods, for former vertues  
meede,  
On nectar and ambrosia do feede.

‘For deeds doe die, how ever noblie donne,  
And thoughts of men do as themselves  
decay, <sup>401</sup>  
But wise wordes taught in numbers for to  
ruune,  
Recorded by the Muses, live for ay,  
Ne may with storming showers be washt  
away;  
Ne bitter breathing windes with harmfull  
blast,  
Nor age, nor envie, shall them ever wast.

‘In vaine doo earthly princes then, in vaine,  
Seeke with pyramides, to heaven aspired,  
Or huge colosses, built with costlie paine,  
Or brasen pillours, never to be fired, <sup>410</sup>  
Or shrines, made of the mettall most de-  
sired,  
To make their memories for ever live:  
For how can mortall immortalitie give?

‘Such one Mausolus made, the worlds great  
wonder,

But now no remnant doth thereof remaine:  
Such one Marcellus, but was torne with  
thunder:

Such one Lisippus, but is worne with raine:  
Such one King Edmond, but was rent for  
gaine.

All such vaine moniments of earthlie masse,  
Devour’d of Time, in time to nought doo  
passe. <sup>420</sup>

‘But Fame with golden wings aloft doth  
flie,

Above the reach of ruinous decay,  
And with brave plumes doth beate the  
azure skie,  
Admir’d of base-borne men from farre  
away:

Then who so will with vertuous deeds assay  
To mount to heaven, on Pegasus must ride,  
Aud with sweete poets verse be glorifide.

‘For not to have been dipt in Lethe lake  
Could save the sonne of Thetis from to die;  
But that blinde bard did him innortall  
make <sup>430</sup>

With verses, dipt in deaw of Castalie:  
Which made the Easterne couquerour to  
crie,

O fortunate yong-man, whose vertue found  
So brave a trompe thy noble acts to sound !

‘Therefore in this halfe happie I doo read  
Good Melibæ, that hath a poet got  
To sing his living praises being dead,  
Deserving never here to be forgot,  
In spight of envie, that his deeds would  
spot:

Since whose decease, learning lies unre-  
garded, <sup>440</sup>  
And men of armes doo wander unrewarded.

‘Those two be those two great calamities,  
That long agoe did grieve the noble spright  
Of Salomon with great indignities;  
Who whilome was alive the wisest wight:  
But now his wisdom is disprooved quite:  
For he that now welds all things at his will  
Scorns th’ one and th’ other in his deeper  
skill.

‘O grieve of griefes ! O gall of all good  
heartes !

To see that vertue should dispised bee <sup>450</sup>

Of him that first was raisde for vertuous  
parts,  
And now, broad spreading like an aged  
tree,  
Lets none shoot up, that nigh him planted  
bee.  
O let the man of whom the Muse is scorned,  
Nor alive nor dead, be of the Muse  
adorned !

‘ O vile worlds trust, that with such vaine  
illusion  
Hath so wise men bewicht and overkest,  
That they see not the way of their confu-  
sion !  
O vainesse to be added to the rest,  
That do my soule with inward grieve in-  
fest !  
Let them behold the piteous fall of mee,  
And in my case their owne ensample see. <sup>460</sup>

‘ And who so els that sits in highest seate  
Of this worlds glorie, worshipped of all,  
Ne feareth change of time, nor fortunes  
threate,  
Let him behold the horror of my fall,  
And his owne end unto remembrance call;  
That of like ruine he may warned bee,  
And in himselfe be moov’d to pittie mee.’

Thus having ended all her piteous plaint, <sup>470</sup>  
With dolefull shrikes shee vanished away,  
That I, through inward sorrowe wexen  
faint,  
And all astonished with deepe dismay  
For her departure, had no word to say;  
But sate long time in sencelesse sad af-  
fright,  
Looking still, if I might of her have sight.

Which when I missed, having looked long,  
My thought returned greeved home againe,  
Renewing her complaint with passion  
strong,  
For ruth of that same womans piteous  
paine;  
Whose wordes recording in my troubled <sup>480</sup>  
braine,  
I felt such anguish wound my feeble heart,  
That frozen horror ran through everie  
part.

So inlie greeving in my groning brest,  
And deepelie musing at her doubtfull  
speach,

Whose meaning much I labored foorth to  
wreste,  
Being above my slender reasons reach,  
At length, by demonstration me to teach,  
Before mine eies strange sights presented  
were,  
Like tragicke pageants seeming to appeare.

## I

I saw an image, all of massie gold, <sup>491</sup>  
Placed on high upon an altare faire,  
That all which did the same from farre  
beholde  
Might worship it, and fall on lowest staire.  
Not that great idoll might with this com-  
paire,  
To which th’ Assyrian tyrant would have  
made  
The holie brethren falslie to have praid.

But th’ altare on the which this image  
staid  
Was (O great pitie!) built of bricke  
clay,  
That shortly the foundation decayd, <sup>500</sup>  
With showres of heaven and tempests  
worne away:  
Then downe it fell, and low in ashes lay,  
Scorned of everie one which by it went;  
That I, it seing, dearelie did lament.

## II

Next unto this a stathie towre appeared,  
Built all of richest stone that might hee  
found,  
And nigh unto the heavens in height up-  
reared,  
But placed on a plot of sandie ground:  
Not that great towre which is so much re-  
nownd  
For tongues confusion in Holie Writ, <sup>510</sup>  
King Ninus worke, might be compar’d to it.

But O vaine labours of terrestriall wit,  
That buildes so stronglie on so frayle a  
soyle,  
As with each storme does fall away and  
flit,  
And gives the fruit of all your travailes  
toyle,  
To be the pray of Tyne, and Fortunes  
spoyle !  
I saw this towre fall sodainlie to dust,  
That nigh with grieve thereof my heart  
was burst.



## III

Then did I see a pleasant paradize,  
 Full of sweete flowres and daintiest de-  
 lights, <sup>520</sup>  
 Such as on earth man could not more devise,  
 With pleasures choyce to feed his cheerefull  
 sprights:  
 Not that which Merlin by his magicke  
 slights  
 Made for the gentle Squire, to entertaine  
 His fayre Belphebe, could this gardine  
 staine.

But O short pleasure bought with lasting  
 paine!

Why will hereafter anie flesh delight  
 In earthlie blis, and joy in pleasures vaine,  
 Since that I sawe this gardine wasted quite,  
 That where it was scarce seemed anie  
 sight? <sup>530</sup>

That I, which once that beautie did beholde,  
 Could not from teares my melting eyes with-  
 holde.

## IV

Soone after this a giaunt came in place,  
 Of wondrous power, and of exceeding stat-  
 ure,

That none durst vewe the horror of his face;  
 Yet was he milde of speach, and meeke of  
 nature.

Not he, which in despight of his Creatour  
 With railing tearmes defied the Jewish  
 hoast,

Might with this mightie one in hugenes  
 boast.

For from the one he could to th' other  
 coast <sup>540</sup>

Stretch his strong thighes, and th' ocean  
 overstride,

And reatch his hand into his enemies hoast.  
 But see the end of pompe and fleshlie pride:  
 One of his feete unwares from him did  
 slide,

That downe hee fell into the deepe abisse,  
 Where drown'd with him is all his earthlie  
 blisse.

## V

Then did I see a bridge, made all of golde,  
 Over the sea from one to other side,  
 Withouten prop or pillour it t' upholde,  
 But like the coulored rainbowe arched  
 wide: <sup>550</sup>

Not that great arche which Trajan edi-  
 fide,

To be a wonder to all age ensuing,  
 Was matchable to this in equall vewing.

But ah! what bootes it to see earthlie thing  
 In glorie or in greatnes to excell,  
 Sith time doth greatest things to ruine  
 bring?

This goodlie bridge, one foote not fastned  
 well,

Gan faile, and all the rest downe shortlie  
 fall,

Ne of so brave a building ought remained,  
 That grieve thereof my spirite greatly  
 pained. <sup>560</sup>

## VI

I saw two beares, as white as anie milke,  
 Lying together in a mightie cave,  
 Of milde aspect, and haire as soft as  
 silke,

That salvage nature seemed not to have,  
 Nor after greedie spoyle of blood to crave:  
 Two fairer beasts might not elsewhere be  
 found,

Although the compast world were sought  
 around.

But what can long abide above this ground  
 In state of blis, or stedfast happinesse?

The cave in which these beares lay sleeping  
 sound <sup>570</sup>

Was but earth, and with her owne weighti-  
 nesse

Upon them fell, and did unwares oppresse;  
 That, for great sorrow of their sudden  
 fate,

Henceforth all worlds felicitie I hate.

¶ Much was I troubled in my heaveie  
 spright,

At sight of these sad spectacles forepast,  
 That all my senses were bereaved quight,  
 And I in minde remained sore agast,  
 Distraught twixt feare and pitie; when at  
 last

I heard a voyce, which loudly to me  
 called, <sup>580</sup>

That with the suddein shrill I was ap-  
 palled.

'Behold,' said it, 'and by ensample see,  
 That all is vanitie and grieve of minde.'

Ne other comfort in this world can be,  
But hope of heaven, and heart to God inclinde;  
For all the rest must needs be left behinde.  
With that it bad me to the other side  
To cast mine eye, where other sights I  
spide.

## I

Upon that famous rivers further shore,  
There stood a snowie swan, of heavenly  
hiew 590  
And gentle kinde, as ever fowle afore;  
A fairer one in all the goodlie crieu  
Of white Strimonian brood might no man  
view:  
There he most sweetly sung the prophecie  
Of his owne death in dolefull elegie.

At last, when all his mourning melodie  
He ended had, that both the shores re-  
sounded,  
Feeling the fit that him forewarnd to die,  
With loftie flight above the earth he  
bounded,  
And out of sight to highest heaven  
mounted, 600  
Where now he is become an heavenly  
signe:  
There now the joy is his, here sorrow mine.

## II

Whilest thus I looked, loe ! adowne the lee  
I sawe an harpe, stroong all with silver  
twyne,  
And made of golde and costlie yvorie,  
Swimming, that whilome seemed to have  
been  
The harpe on which Dan Orpheus was  
seene  
Wylde beasts and forrests after him to  
lead,  
But was th' harpe of Philisides now dead.

At length out of the river it was reard, 610  
And borne above the cloudes to be divin'd,  
Whilst all the way most heavenly noyse  
was heard  
Of the strings, stirred with the warbling  
wind,  
That wrought both joy and sorrow in my  
mind:

So now in heaven a signe it doth appeare,  
The Harpe well knowne beside the North-  
ern Beare.

## III

Soone after this I saw on th' other side  
A curious coffer made of heben wood,  
That in it did most precious treasure hide,  
Exceeding all this baser worldes good: 620  
Yet through the overflowing of the flood  
It almost drowned was and done to nought,  
That sight thereof much griev'd my pensive  
thought.

At length, when most in perill it was  
brought,  
Two angels, downe descending with swift  
flight,  
Out of the swelling streame it lightly caught,  
And twixt their blessed armes it carried  
quight  
Above the reach of anie living sight:  
So now it is transform'd into that starre,  
In which all heavenly treasures locked are.

## IV

Looking aside I saw a stately bed, 631  
Adorned all with costly cloth of gold,  
That might for anie princes couche be red,  
And deckt with daintie flowres, as if it  
shold  
Be for some bride, her joyous night to hold:  
Therein a goodly virgine sleeping lay;  
A fairer wight saw never summers day.

I heard a voyce that called farre away,  
And her awaking bad her quickly dight,  
For lo ! her bridegrome was in readie ray  
To come to her, and seeke her loves de-  
light: 641  
With that she started up with cherefull  
sight;  
When suddainly both bed and all was gone,  
And I in languor left there all alone.

## V

Still as I gazed, I beheld where stood  
A knight all arm'd, upon a winged steed,  
The same that was bred of Medusaes blood,  
On which Dan Perseus, borne of heavenly  
seed,  
The faire Andromeda from perill freed:  
Full mortally this knight ywounded was,  
That streames of blood foorth flowed on the  
gras. 651

Yet was he deckt (small joy to him,  
alas !)  
With manie garlands for his victories,

And with rich spoyles, which late he did  
 purchas  
 Through brave atcheivements from his ene-  
 mies:  
 Fainting at last through long infirmities,  
 He smote his steed, that straight to heaven  
 him bore,  
 And left me here his losse for to deplore.

## VI

Lastly, I saw an arke of purest golde  
 Upon a brazen pillour standing hie, 660  
 Which th' ashes seem'd of some great  
 prince to hold,  
 Enclosde therein for endles memorie  
 Of him whom all the world did glorifie:  
 Seemed the heavens with the earth did dis-  
 agree,  
 Whether should of those ashes keeper bee.

At last me seem'd wing footed Mercurie,  
 From heaven descending to appease their  
 strife,  
 The arke did beare with him above the  
 skie,  
 And to those ashes gave a second life, 669  
 To live in heaven, where happines is rife:  
 At which the earth did grieve exceedingly,  
 And I for dole was almost like to die.

## L'ENVOY

Immortall spirite of Philisides,  
 Which now art made the heavens orna-  
 ment,  
 That whilome wast the worldes chiefst  
 riches,  
 Give leave to him that lov'de thee to lament  
 His losse, by lacke of thee to heaven hent,  
 And with last duties of this broken verse,  
 Broken with sighes, to decke thy sable  
 herse.

And ye, faire ladie, th' honor of your  
 daies 680  
 And glorie of the world, your high thoughts  
 scorne,  
 Vouchsafe this moniment of his last praise  
 With some few silver dropping teares t'  
 adorne:  
 And as ye be of heavenlie off-spring borne,  
 So unto heaven let your high minde aspire,  
 And loath this drosse of sinfull worlds de-  
 sire.

FINIS.

## THE TEARES OF THE MUSES

BY ED. SP.

LONDON

IMPRINTED FOR WILLIAM  
 PONSONBIE, DWELLING IN PAULES  
 CHURCHYARD AT THE SIGNE OF  
 THE BISHOPS HEAD

1591

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE  
THE LADIE STRANGE

Most brave and noble Ladie, the things  
 that make ye so much honored of the world  
 as ye bee, are such as (without my simple  
 lines testimonie) are throughlie knownen to  
 all men; namely, your excellent beautie,  
 your vertuous behavior, and your noble  
 match with that most honourable lord, the  
 verie paterne of right nobilitie: but the  
 causes for which ye have thus deserved of  
 me to be honoured (if honour it be at all)  
 are, both your particular bounties, and also  
 some private bands of affinitie, which it  
 hath pleased your Ladiship to acknow-  
 ledge. Of which whenas I found my selfe  
 in no part worthe, I devised this last slen-  
 der meanes, both to intimate my humble  
 affection to your Ladiship, and also to make  
 the same universallie knownen to the world;  
 that by honouring you they might know  
 me, and by knowing me they might honor  
 you. Vouchsafe, noble Lady, to accept this  
 simple remembrance, thogh not worthy of  
 your self, yet such as perhaps, by good ac-  
 ceptance therof, ye may hereafter cull out  
 a more meet and memorable evidence of  
 your own excellent deserts. So recom-  
 mending the same to your Ladiships good  
 liking, I humbly take leave.

Your Ladiships humbly ever  
 Ed. Sp.

[To what period this poem may belong has  
 been somewhat disputed. On the whole, it  
 would seem, like 'Mother Hubbard's Tale,' to  
 be early work revised, for though the allusions  
 in the lament of Thalia refer that passage to  
 1589 or 1590, there are good grounds for be-  
 lieving that the poem first took form before  
 1580. Its doleful account of the state of  
 literature, for instance, is quite at odds with



that survey in *Colin Clout's Come Home Again* (of 1591) wherein Spenser deals so sympathetically with his fellow poets, and is not unlike in tone to various passages in the *Calendar*. One can hardly understand, moreover, how, in 1590, even as a matter of convention, he could take so dismal a view of English literature. In 1580, on the other hand, before Sidney, Greene, Marlowe, and their fellows of the first great generation had begun to write, when, Spenser himself excepted, Lyly with his *Euphues* was the one brilliant name in English letters, such a view is quite conceivable. The matter might be argued much further, to the same result.

The general tone of the poem, its mental attitude, cannot but impress a modern reader somewhat unpleasantly. The complaint that 'mightie peeres' no longer care for the immortality which only poets can confer, that poets and scholars, 'the learned,' are left without patronage, may be set down partly to a trying personal experience. The note of contempt, however, and of arrogance that one is glad to believe youthful, the complaint of universal vulgarity, the cry that Ignorance and Barbarism have quite laid waste the fair realm of the Muses — all this comes near, in the end, to seeming insufferable. If the Areopagus, the select literary club in which Sidney and Dyer and Fulke Greville, with perhaps Spenser himself, discussed the condition of English letters and planned great reforms, if this *cénacle* is fairly represented by 'The Tears of the Muses,' it must have been, one thinks, a more than usually supercilious clique of young radicals. Yet what may be distasteful in the poem is not so much the underlying opinions, which for 1579 or 1580 are quite intelligible, as the particular tone or mood. In this one almost suspects an echo of Ronsard. For in the great movement by which, thirty years before the Areopagus and in much the same way, the Pléiade endeavored to regenerate French literature, Ronsard is notably distinguished from his colleagues by an odd faculty for making their common views offensive or ridiculous. His rampant egotism and utter deficiency in the sense of humor lured him at times, like his greater descendant Victor Hugo, into strange extravagances. Now, the members of the Areopagus knew the poets of the Pléiade well, especially Ronsard and Du Bellay. They seem to have felt that their own problem in England was not unlike that which these men had met in France. In them they found ideals with which they sympathized, opinions which seemed to be of value for their own difficulties. That the poet was directly inspired of God (or

the gods), that great men could obtain immortality from the poets alone, that poetry must go hand in hand with learning; that the arch enemy of the Muses was Ignorance, that poetry in their day languished because the great were given over to luxury and the vulgar would listen only to a horde of unlearned and base rhymesters, — these theories of the Pléiade and various precepts for the elevation of their own mother tongue to a place beside the tongues of Greece and Rome were caught at by the youthful members of the Areopagus with very lively interest. In the work of Spenser they may be traced unmistakably, chiefly in 'October,' 'The Ruins of Time,' and 'The Tears of the Muses.' This last, unhappily, voices them in a tone which, as so often in Ronsard and rarely in Du Bellay, makes sympathy quite impossible.]

### THE TEARES OF THE MUSES

REHEARSE to me, ye sacred sisters nine,  
The golden brood of great Apolloes wit,  
Those piteous plaints and sorowfull sad  
time,

Which late ye powred forth as ye did sit  
Beside the silver springs of Helicone,  
Making your musick of hart-breaking mone.

For since the time that Phœbus foolish  
some,  
Ythundered through Joves avengefull  
wrath,

For traversing the charret of the Sunne  
Beyond the compasse of his pointed path,  
Of you, his mournfull sisters, was lamented,

Such mournfull tunes were never since invented.

Nor since that faire Calliope did lose  
Her loved twinnes, the dearlings of her  
joy,

Her Palici, whom her unkindly foes,  
The Fatall Sisters, did for spight destroy,  
Whom all the Muses did bewaile long space,  
Was ever heard such wayling in this place.

For all their groves, which with the heavenly  
noyses

Of their sweete instruments were wont to  
sound,

And th' hollow hills, from which their silver  
voyses

Were wont redoubled echoes to rebound,

Did now rebound with nought but rufull  
cries,  
And yelling shrieks throwne up into the  
skies.

The trembling streames which wont in  
chanelles cleare  
To romble gently downe with murmur soft,  
And were by their right tunefull taught to  
beare  
A bases part amongst their consorts oft,  
Now forst to overflowe with brackish teares,  
With troublous noyse did dull their daintie  
eares. 30

The joyous nymphes and lightfoote faeries  
Which thether came to heare their musick  
sweet,  
And to the measure of their melodies  
Did learne to move their nimble shifting  
feete,  
Now hearing them so heavily lament,  
Like heavily lamenting from them went.

And all that els was wont to worke de-  
light  
Through the divine infusion of their skill,  
And all that els seemd faire and fresh in  
sight,  
So made by nature for to serve their will, 40  
Was turned now to dismall heavinesse,  
Was turned now to dreadfull uglinesse.

Ay me! what thing on earth, that all thing  
breeds,  
Might be the cause of so impatient plight?  
What furie, or what feend with felon deeds  
Hath stirred up so mischievous despight?  
Can grieve then enter into heavenly harts,  
And pierce immortall breasts with mortall  
smarts?

Vouchsafe ye then, whom onely it concernes,  
To me those secret causes to display; 50  
For none but you, or who of you it learnes,  
Can rightfully aread so dolefull lay.  
Begin, thou eldest sister of the crew,  
And let the rest in order thee ensew.

## CLIO.

Heare, thou great Father of the Gods on  
hie,  
That most art dreaded for thy thunder  
darts:

And thou our syre, that raigst in Castalie  
And Mount Parnasse, the god of goodly  
arts:

Heare and behold the miserable state  
Of us thy daughters, dolefull desolate. 60

Behold the fowle reproach and open shame,  
The which is day by day unto us wrought  
By such as hate the honour of our name,  
The foes of learning and each gentle  
thought;  
They, not contented us themselves to scorne,  
Doo seeke to make us of the world forlorne.

Ne onely they that dwell in lowly dust,  
The sonnes of darknes and of ignoraunce;  
But they whom thou, great Jove, by doome  
unjust 69  
Didst to the type of honour earst advaunce;  
They now, puft up with sdeignfull insolence,  
Despise the brood of blessed Sapience.

The sectaries of my celestiall skill,  
That wont to be the worlds chiefe orna-  
ment,  
And learned impes that wont to shoote up  
still,  
And grow to hight of kingdomes govern-  
ment,  
They underkeep, and with their spredding  
armes  
Doo beat their buds, that perish through  
their harmes.

It most behoves the honorable race  
Of mightie peeres true wisdomes to sus-  
taine, 80  
And with their noble countenaunce to grace  
The learned forheads, without gifts or  
gaine:  
Or rather learnd themselves behoves to  
bee;  
That is the girlond of nobilitie.

But ah! all otherwise they doo esteeme  
Of th' heavenly gift of wisdomes influence,  
And to be learned it a base thing deeme;  
Base minded they that want intelligence:  
For God himselfe for wisdomes most is  
praised,  
And men to God thereby are nighest raised.

But they doe onely strive themselves to  
raise 91  
Through pompous pride, and foolish vanitie;

In th' eyes of people they put all their  
praise,  
And onely boast of armes and auncestrie:  
But vertuous deeds, which did those armes  
first give  
To their grandsyres, they care not to atchive.

So I, that doo all noble feates professe  
To register, and sound in trump of gold,  
Through their bad dooings, or base sloth-  
fulnessse,  
Finde nothing worthie to be writ, or told:  
For better farre it were to hide their  
names,  
Than telling them to blazon out their  
blames.

So shall succeeding ages have no light  
Of things forepast, nor moniments of tyme,  
And all that in this world is worthie hight  
Shall die in darknesse, and lie hid in slime:  
Therefore I mourne with deep harts sorrow-  
ing,  
Because I nothing noble have to sing.

With that she raynd such store of stream-  
ing teares,  
That could have made a stonie heart to  
weep,  
And all her sisters rent their golden heares,  
And their faire faces with salt humour  
steep.  
So ended shee: and then the next anew  
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensew.

## MELPOMENE.

O who shall powre into my swollen eyes  
A sea of teares that never may be dryde,  
A brasen voice that may with shrilling cryes  
Pierce the dull heavens and fill the ayer  
wide,  
And yron sides that sighing may endure,  
To waile the wretchednes of world im-  
pure?

Ah, wretched world! the den of wicked-  
nesse,  
Deformd with filth and fowle iniquitie;  
Ah, wretched world! the house of heavi-  
nesse,  
Fild with the wreaks of mortall miserie;  
Ah, wretched world, and all that is therein!  
The vassals of Gods wrath, and slaves of sin.

Most miserable creature under sky  
Man without understanding doth appeare;  
For all this worlds affliction he thereby,  
And Fortunes freakes, is wisely taught to  
beare:  
Of wretched life the onely joy shee is,  
And th' only comfort in calamities.

She armes the brest with constant patience  
Against the bitter throwes of dolours darts,  
She solaceth with rules of sapience  
The gentle minds, in midst of worldlie  
smarts:  
When he is sad, shee seeks to make him  
merie,  
And doth refresh his sprights when they be  
werie.

But he that is of reasons skill bereft,  
And wants the staffe of wisdom him to  
stay,  
Is like a ship in midst of tempest left  
Withouten helme or pilot her to sway:  
Full sad and dreadfull is that ships event:  
So is the man that wants intendment.

Whie then doo foolish men so much despize  
The precious store of this celestiall riches?  
Why doo they banish us, that patronize  
The name of learning? Most unhappie  
wretches!

The which lie drowned in deep wretchednes,  
Yet doo not see their owne unhappines.

My part it is and my professed skill  
The stage with tragick buskin to adorne,  
And fill the scene with plaint and outeries  
shrill  
Of wretched persons, to misfortune borne:  
But none more tragick matter I can finde  
Than this, of men depriv'd of sense and  
miude.

For all mans life me seemes a tragedy,  
Full of sad sights and sore catastrophes;  
First comming to the world with weeping  
eye,  
Where all his dayes, like dolorous tro-  
phees,  
Are heapt with spoyles of fortune and of  
feare,  
And he at last laid forth on balefull beare.

So all with rufull spectacles is fild,  
Fit for Megera or Persephone:



But I, that in true tragedies am skild,  
The flowre of wit, finde nought to busie me:  
Therefore I mourne, and pitifully mone,  
Because that mourning matter I have none.

Then gan she wofully to waile, and wring  
Her wretched hands in lamentable wise; 170  
And all her sisters, thereto answering,  
Threw forth lowd shrieks and drierie dole-  
full cries.

So rested she: and then the next in rew  
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensew.

## THALIA.

Where be the sweete delights of learnings  
treasure,  
That wont with counick sock to beautefie  
The painted theaters, and fill with pleasure  
The listners eyes, and eares with melodie;  
In which I late was wont to raine as queene,  
And maske in mirth with graces well be-  
seene ? 180

O, all is gone ! and all that goodly glee,  
Which wont to be the glorie of gay wits,  
Is layd abed, and no where now to see;  
And in her roome unseemly Sorrow sits,  
With hollow browes and greisly counte-  
naunce,  
Marring my joyous gentle dalliaunce.

And him beside sits ugly Barbarisme,  
And brutish Ignorance, ycrept of late  
Out of dredd darknes of the deep abyssme,  
Where being bredd, he light and heaven  
does hate: 190  
They in the mindes of men now tyrannize,  
And the faire scene with rudenes foule dis-  
guize.

All places they with follie have possest,  
And with vaine toyes the vulgare enter-  
taine;  
But me have banished, with all the rest  
That whilome wont to wait upon my traine,  
Fine Counterfesaunce and unhurtfull Sport,  
Delight and Laughter deckt in seemly sort.

All these, and all that els the comick stage  
With seasoned wit and goodly pleasance  
graced, 200  
By which mans life in his likest image  
Was limned forth, are wholly now defaced;

And those sweete wits which wont the like  
to frame  
Are now despizd, and made a laughing game.

And he, the man whom Nature selfe had  
made  
To mock her selfe, and truth to imitate,  
With kindly counter under mimick shade,  
Our pleasant Willy, ah ! is dead of late:  
With whom all joy and jolly meriment  
Is also deaded, and in dolour drent. 210

In stead thereof scoffing Scurrilitie,  
And scornfull Follie with Contempt is crept,  
Rolling in rymes of shameles ribaudrie  
Without regard, or due decorum kept;  
Each idle wit at will presumes to make,  
And doth the learneds taske upon him take.

But that same gentle spirit, from whose pen  
Large streames of homie and sweete nectar  
flowe,  
Scorning the boldnes of such base-borne  
men,  
Which dare their follies forth so rashlie  
throwe, 220  
Doth rather choose to sit in idle cell,  
Than so himselfe to mockerie to sell.

So am I made the servant of the manie,  
And laughing stocke of all that list to  
scorne,  
Not honored nor cared for of anie;  
But loath'd of losels as a thing forlorne:  
Therefore I mourne and sorrow with the  
rest,  
Untill my cause of sorrow be redrest.

Therewith she lowdly did lament and shrike  
Pouring forth streames of teares abun-  
dantly; 230  
And all her sisters, with compassion like,  
The breaches of her singulfs did supply.  
So rested shee: and then the next in rew  
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensew.

## EUTERPE.

Like as the dearling of the summers pryde,  
Faire Philomele, when winters stormie  
wrath  
The goodly fields, that earst so gay were  
dyde  
In colours divers, quite despoyled hath,

All comfortlesse doth hide her chearlesse  
head

During the time of that her widowhead: 240

So we, that earst were wont in sweet accord  
All places with our pleasant notes to fill,  
Whilest favourable times did us afford  
Free libertie to chaunt our charmes at  
will,

All comfortlesse upon the bared bow,  
Like wofull culvers, doo sit wayling now.

For far more bitter storme than winters  
stowre

The beautie of the world hath lately wasted,  
And those fresh buds, which wont so faire  
to flowre,

Hath marred quite, and all their blossoms  
blasted: 250

And those yong plants, which wont with  
fruit t' abound,

Now without fruite or leaves are to be  
found.

A stonie coldnesse hath benumbd the sence  
And livelie spirits of each living wight,  
And dimd with darknesse their intelligence,  
Darknesse more than Cymerians daylie  
night:

And monstrous Error, flying in the ayre,  
Hath mard the face of all that semed fayre.

Image of hellish horreur, Ignorance, 259  
Borne in the bosome of the black abyse,  
And fed with Furies milke, for sustenance  
Of his weake infancie, begot amisse  
By yawning Sloth on his owne mother  
Night;

So hee his sonnes both syre and brother  
hight:

He, armd with blindnesse and with boldnes  
stout,

(For blind is bold) hath our fayre light  
defaced;

And gathering unto him a ragged rout  
Of faunes and satyres, hath our dwellings  
raced,

And our chast bowers, in which all vertue  
rained,

With brutishnesse and beastlie filth hath  
stained. 270

The sacred springs of horsefoot Helicon,  
So oft bedeawed with our learned layes,

And speaking streames of pure Castalion,  
The famous wnesse of our wonted praise,  
They trampled have with their fowle foot-  
ings trade,

And like to troubled puddles have them made.

Our pleasant groves, which planted were  
with paines,

That with our musick wont so oft to ring,  
And arbors sweet, in which the shepheards  
swaines

Were wont so oft their pastoralls to sing,  
They have cut downe, and all their plea-  
saunce mard, 281

That now no pastorall is to bee hard.

In stead of them, fowle goblins and shriek-  
owles

With fearfull howling do all places fill;  
And feeble Eccho now laments and howles,  
The dreadfull accents of their outeries shrill.  
So all is turned into wilderness,  
Whilest Ignorance the Muses doth oppresse.

And I, whose joy was earst with spirit full  
To teach the warbling pipe to sound aloft,  
My spirits now dismayd with sorrow dull,  
Doo mone my miserie in silence soft. 292  
Therefore I mourne and waile incessantly,  
Till please the heavens afford me remedy.

Therewith shee wayled with exceeding woe,  
And pitious lamentation did make,  
And all her sisters, seeing her doo soe,  
With equall plaints her sorrowe did partake.  
So rested shee: and then the next in rew  
Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensew. 300

#### TERPSICHORE.

Who so hath in the lap of soft delight  
Beene long time luld, and fed with pleasures  
sweet,

Feareles through his own fault or Fortunes  
spight,

To tumble into sorrow and regret,  
Yf chauce him fall into calamitie,  
Findes greater burthen of his miserie.

So wee, that earst in joyance did abound,  
And in the bosome of all blis did sit,  
Like virgin queenes with laurell garlands  
croud,

For vertues meed and ornament of wit, 310

Sith Ignorance our kingdome did confound,  
Bee now become most wretched wightes on  
ground.

And in our royall thrones, which lately  
stood  
In th' hearts of men to rule them care-  
fully,  
He now hath placed his accursed brood,  
By him begotten of fowle Infamy;  
Blind Error, scornefull Follie, and base  
Spight,  
Who hold by wrong that wee should have  
by right.

They to the vulgar sort now pipe and sing,  
And make them merrie with their fooler-  
ies; 320

They cherelie chaunt and rymes at randon  
fling,

The fruitfull spawne of their ranke fan-  
tasies;

They feede the eares of fooles with flat-  
tery,

And good men blame, and losels magnify.

All places they doo with their toyes pos-  
sesse,

And raigne in liking of the multitude;

The schooles they fill with fond newfangle-  
nesse,

And sway in court with pride and rashnes  
rude;

Mongst simple shepherds they do boast  
their skill,

And say their musicke matcheth Phœbus  
quill. 330

The noble hearts to pleasures they allure,  
And tell their Prince that learning is but  
vaine;

Faire ladies loves they spot with thoughts  
impure,

And gentle mindes with lewd delights dis-  
taine;

Clerks they to loathly idlenes entice,  
And fill their bookes with discipline of  
vice.

So every where they rule and tyrannize,  
For their usurped kingdomes maintenaunce,  
The whiles we silly maides, whom they dis-  
pize  
And with reprochfull scorne discounte-  
nanee, 340

From our owne native heritage exilede,  
Walk through the world of every one re-  
vilde.

Nor anie one doth care to call us in,  
Or once vouchsafeth us to entertaine,  
Unlesse some one perhaps of gentle kin,  
For pitties sake, compassion our paine,  
And yeeld us some reliefe in this distresse;  
Yet to be so reliev'd is wretchednesse.

So wander we all carefull comfortlesse,  
Yet none doth care to comfort us at all; 350  
So seeke we helpe our sorrow to redresse,  
Yet none vouchsafes to answere to our call:  
Therefore we mourne and pittillesse com-  
plaine,  
Because none living pittietieth our paine.

With that she wept and wofullie way-  
mented,

That naught on earth her grieve might  
pacifie;

And all the rest her dolefull din augmented  
With shrieks and groanes and grievous  
agonie.

So ended shee: and then the next in rew  
Began her piteous plaint, as doth ensew. 360

## ERATO.

Ye gentle spirits breathing from above,  
Where ye in Venus silver bowre were bred,  
Thoughts halfe devine, full of the fire of  
love,

With beawtie kindled and with pleasure  
fed,

Which ye now in securitie possesse,  
Forgetfull of your former heavinesse:

Now change the tenor of your joyous layes,  
With which ye use your loves to deifie,  
And blazon foorth an earthlie beauties  
praise

Above the compasse of the arched skie: 370  
Now change your praises into piteous cries,  
And eulogies turne into elegies.

Such as ye wont, whenas those bitter  
stounds

Of raging love first gan you to torment,  
And launch your hearts with lamentable  
wounds

Of secret sorrow and sad languishment,



Before your loves did take you unto grace;  
Those now renew, as fitter for this place.

For I that rule in measure moderate  
The tempest of that stormie passion, 380  
And use to paint in rimes the troublous  
state

Of lovers life in likest fashion,  
Am put from practise of my kindlie skill,  
Banisht by those that love with leawdnes  
fill.

Love wont to be schoolmaster of my skill,  
And the devicefull matter of my song;  
Sweete love devoyd of villanie or ill,  
But pure and spotles, as at first he sprong  
Out of th' Almightyes bosome, where he  
nests;

From thence infused into mortall breasts. 390

Such high concept of that celestiall fire,  
The base-borne brood of Blindnes cannot  
gesse,

Ne ever dare their dunghill thoughts aspire  
Unto so loftie pitch of perfectnesse,  
But rime at riot, and doo rage in love;  
Yet little wote what doth thereto behove.

Faire Cytheree, the mother of delight  
And queene of beautie, now thou maist go  
pack;

For lo! thy kingdome is defaced quight,  
Thy scepter rent, and power put to wrack;  
And thy gay sonne, that winged God of  
Love, 401

May now goe prune his plumes like ruffed  
dove.

And ye three twins, to light by Venus  
brought,

The sweete companions of the Muses late,  
From whom what ever thing is goodly  
thought

Doth borrow grace, the fancie to aggrate,  
Go beg with us, and be companions still,  
As heretofore of good, so now of ill.

For neither you nor we shall anie more  
Finde entertainment, or in court or schoole:  
For that which was accounted hereto-  
fore 411

The learneds meed is now lent to the foole;  
He sings of love, and maketh loving layes,  
And they him heare, and they him highly  
prayse.

With that she powred foorth a brackish  
flood

Of bitter teares, and made exceeding mone;  
And all her sisters, seeing her sad mood,  
With lowd laments her answered all at one.  
So ended she: and then the next in rew  
Began her grieved plaint, as doth ensew. 420

#### CALLIOPE.

To whom shall I my evill case complaine,  
Or tell the anguish of my inward smart,  
Sith none is left to remedie my paine,  
Or deignes to pitie a perplexed hart;  
But rather seekes my sorrow to augment  
With fowle reproach, and cruell banish-  
ment?

For they to whom I used to applie  
The faithfull service of my learned skill,  
The goodly off-spring of Joves progenie,  
That wont the world with famous acts to  
fill; 430

Whose living praises in heroïck style,  
It is my chiefe profession to compyle;

They all corrupted through the rust of time,  
That doth all fairest things on earth deface,  
Or through unnoble sloth, or sinfull crime,  
That doth degenerate the noble race,  
Have both desire of worthie deeds forlorne,  
And name of learning utterly doo scorne.

Ne doo they care to have the auncestrie  
Of th' old heroës memorizd anew; 440  
Ne doo they care that late posteritie  
Should know their names, or speak their  
praises dew:

But die forgot from whence at first they  
sprong,

As they themselves shalbe forgot ere long.

What bootes it then to come from glorious  
Forefathers, or to have been nobly bredd?  
What oddes twixt Irus and old Inachus,  
Twixt best and worst, when both alike are  
dedd,

If none of neither mention should make,  
Nor out of dust their memories awake? 450

Or who would ever care to doo brave deed,  
Or strive in vertue others to excell,  
If none should yeeld him his deserved  
meed,

Due praise, that is the spur of dooing well?

For if good were not praised more than ill,  
None would choose goodnes of his owne  
freewill.

Therefore the nurse of vertue I am hight,  
And golden trompet of eternitie,  
That lowly thoughts lift up to heavens hight,  
And mortall men have powre to deifie: <sup>460</sup>  
Bacchus and Hercules I raisd to heauen,  
And Charlemaine, amongst the starris  
seaven.

But now I will my golden clarion rend,  
And will henceforth immortalize no more,  
Sith I no more finde worthie to commend  
For prize of value, or for learned lore:  
For noble peeres, whom I was wont to raise,  
Now onely seeke for pleasure, nought for  
praise.

Their great revenues all in sumptuous pride  
They spend, that nought to learning they  
may spare; <sup>470</sup>  
And the rich fee which poets wont divide  
Now parasites and sycophants doo share:  
Therefore I mourne and endlesse sorrow  
make,  
Both for my selfe and for my sisters sake.

With that she lowdly gan to waile and  
shrike,  
And from her eyes a sea of teares did powre,  
And all her sisters, with compassion like,  
Did more increase the sharpnes of her  
showre.  
So ended she: and then the next in rew  
Began her plaint, as doth herein ensew. <sup>480</sup>

#### URANIA.

What wrath of gods, or wicked influence  
Of starres conspiring wretched men t' afflict,  
Hath powrd on earth this noyous pestilence,  
That mortall mindes doth inwardly infect  
With love of blindnesse and of ignorance,  
To dwell in darkenesse without sovenance?

What difference twixt man and beast is left,  
When th' heavenlie light of knowledge is  
put out,  
And th' ornaments of wisdom are bereft?  
Then wandreth he in error and in doubt, <sup>490</sup>  
Unweeting of the danger hee is in,  
Through fleshes frailtie and deceit of sin.

In this wide world in which they wretches  
stray,  
It is the onelie comfort which they have,  
It is their light, their loadstarre and their  
day;  
But hell and darkenesse and the grislie grave  
Is ignorance, the enemy of grace,  
That mindes of men borne heavenlie doth  
debace.

Through knowledge we behold the worlds  
creation,  
How in his cradle first he fostred was; <sup>500</sup>  
And judge of Natures cunning operation,  
How things she formed of a formelesse mas:  
By knowledge wee do learne our selves to  
knowe,  
And what to man, and what to God, wee  
owe.

From hence wee mount aloft unto the skie,  
And looke into the christall firmament;  
There we behold the heavens great hier-  
archie,  
The starres pure light, the spheres swift  
movement,  
The spirites and intelligences fayre,  
And angels waighting on th' Almightyes  
chayre. <sup>510</sup>

And there, with humble minde and high in-  
sight,  
Th' eternall Makers majestie wee vieve,  
His love, his truth, his glorie, and his might,  
And mercie more than mortall men can vew.  
O soveraigne Lord, O soveraigne happinesse,  
To see thee, and thy mercie measurelesse!

Such happines have they that doo embrace  
The precepts of my heavenlie discipline;  
But shame and sorrow and accursed case  
Have they that scorne the schoole of arts  
divine, <sup>520</sup>  
And banish me, which do professe the skill  
To make men heavenly wise through hum-  
bled will.

How ever yet they mee despise and spight,  
I feede on sweet contentment of my thought,  
And please my selfe with mine owne selfe-  
delight,  
In contemplation of things heavenlie  
wrought:  
So loathing earth, I looke up to the sky,  
And being driven hence, I thether fly.

Thence I behold the miserie of men,  
Which want the blis that wisdom would  
them breed, 530  
And like brute beasts doo lie in loathsome  
den  
Of ghostly darkenes, and of gastlie dreed:  
For whom I mourne, and for my selfe com-  
plaine,  
And for my sisters eake, whom they dis-  
daine.

With that shee wept and waild so pityous-  
lie,  
As if her eyes had beene two springing  
wells:  
And all the rest, her sorrow to supplie,  
Did throw forth shrieks and cries and dreery  
yells.  
So ended shee: and then the next in rew  
Began her mournfull plaint, as doth ensew.

## POLYHYMNIA.

A dolefull case desires a dolefull song, 541  
Without vaine art or curious complements,  
And squallid fortune, into basenes flong,  
Doth scorne the pride of wonted ornaments.  
Then fittest are these ragged rimes for mee,  
To tell my sorrowes that exceeding bee.

For the sweet numbers and melodious mea-  
sures,  
With which I wout the winged words to tie,  
And make a tunefull diapase of pleasures,  
Now being let to runne at libertie 550  
By those which have no skill to rule them  
right,  
Have now quite lost their naturall delight.

Heapes of huge words uphoorded hideously,  
With horrid sound, though having little  
sence,  
They thinke to be chiefe praise of poëtry;  
And thereby wanting due intelligence,  
Have mard the face of goodly poësie,  
And made a monster of their fantasie.

Whilom in ages past none might professe,  
But princes and high priests, that secret  
skill; 560  
The sacred lawes therein they wout ex-  
presse,  
And with deepe oracles their verses fill:  
Then was shee held in soveraigne dignitie,  
And made the noursling of nobilitie.

But now nor prince nor priest doth her  
maintayne,  
But suffer her prophaned for to bee  
Of the base vulgar, that with hands un-  
cleane

Dares to pollute her hidden mysterie;  
And treadeth under foote hir holie things,  
Which was the care of kesars and of kings.

One onelie lives, her ages ornament, 571  
And myrrour of her Makers majestie;  
That with rich bountie and deare cherish-  
ment

Supports the praise of noble poësie:  
Ne onelie favours them which it professe,  
But is her selfe a peereles poëtresse.

Most peereles prince, most peereles poë-  
tresse,  
The true Pandora of all heavenly graces,  
Divine Elisa, sacred Emperesse:  
Live she for ever, and her royall p'laces 580  
Be filld with praises of divinest wits,  
That her eternize with their heavenlie writs.

Some few beside this sacred skill esteeme,  
Admirers of her glorious excellence,  
Which being lightned with her beawties  
beme,  
Are thereby filld with happie influence,  
And lifted up above the worlde's gaze,  
To sing with angels her immortall praise.

But all the rest, as borne of salvage brood,  
And having beene with acorns alwaies  
fed, 590  
Can no whit savour this celestiall food,  
But with base thoughts are into blindnesse  
led,  
And kept from looking on the lightsome  
day:  
For whome I waile and weepe all that I  
may.

Eftsoones such store of teares shee forth  
did powre,  
As if shee all to water would have gone;  
And all her sisters, seeing her sad stowre,  
Did weep and waile and made exceeding  
mone;  
And all their learned instruments did  
breake:  
The rest untold no living tongue can  
speake. 600

FINIS.



## VIRGILS GNAT

LONG SINCE DEDICATED  
TO THE MOST NOBLE AND EXCELLENT LORD,  
THE EARLE OF LEICESTER, LATE  
DECEASED

WRONG'D, yet not daring to expresse my  
paine,

To you (great Lord) the causer of my care,  
In cloudie teares my case I thus complaine  
Unto your selfe, that onely privie are:  
But if that any Œdipus unware

Shall chauce, through power of some di-  
vining spright,

To reade the særete of this riddle rare,  
And know the purporte of my evill plight,  
Let him rest pleased with his owne insight,  
Ne further seeke to glose upon the text:  
For grieve enough it is to grieved wight  
To feele his fault, and not be further  
vext.

But what so by my selfe may not be shoven,  
May by this Gnatts complaint be easily  
known.

[ 'Virgil's Gnat' may be thought to follow close upon the latest of the sonnet series. The main period to which it belongs is, in any case, certain, for in the title it is described as 'long since dedicated' to the Earl of Leicester; it deals with some mishap in the personal relations of the poet with that nobleman, and such relations would seem to have been confined to the years 1577-1580. What the mishap may have been has remained, on the other hand, obscure. The curious must divine it as they best may from the sonnet of dedication and from the main allegory, always remembering that the poem is not an invention based upon the circumstances, but a mere paraphrase of the pseudo-Virgilian *Culex*. Of greater moment is the style, which, moving in a freer course than is natural to the sonnet, wins nearer than that of the 'Visions' and 'Ruins of Rome' to the cadences of the *Faery Queen*. The use of *ottava rima*, the stanza of the great Italian romances, points forward, too.]

## VIRGILS GNAT

WE now have playde (Augustus) wantonly,  
Tuning our song unto a tender Muse,  
And like a cobweb weaving slenderly,  
Have onely playde: let thus much then ex-  
cuse

This Gnats small poeme, that th' whole  
history

Is but a jest, though envie it abuse:

But who such sports and sweet delights  
doth blame,

Shall lighter seeme than this Gnats idle  
name.

Hereafter, when as season more secure  
Shall bring forth fruit, this Muse shall  
speak to thee <sup>10</sup>

In bigger notes, that may thy sense allure,  
And for thy worth frame some fit poesie:

The golden ofspring of Latona pure,  
And ornament of great Joves progenie,  
Phœbus, shall be the author of my song,  
Playing on yvorie harp with silver strong.

He shall inspire my verse with gentle mood,  
Of poets prince, whether he woon beside  
Faire Xanthus sprinckled with Chimæras  
blood,

Or in the woods of Astery abide, <sup>20</sup>  
Or whereas Mount Parnasse, the Muses  
brood,

Doth his broad forehead like two hornes di-  
vide,

And the sweete waves of sounding Castaly  
With liquid foote doth slide downe easily.

Wherefore ye sisters, which the glorie bee  
Of the Pierian streames, fayre Naiades,  
Go too, and dauncing all in companie,  
Adorne that god: and thou holie Pales,  
To whome the honest care of husbandrie  
Returneth by continuall successe, <sup>30</sup>  
Have care for to pursue his footing light,  
Through the wide woods and groves with  
green leaves dight.

Professing thee I lifted am aloft  
Betwixt the forrest wide and starrie sky:  
And thou most dread (Octavius) which oft  
To learned wits givest courage worthily,  
O come (thou sacred childe) come sliding  
soft,

And favour my beginnings graciously:  
For not these leaves do sing that dreadfull  
stound,

When giants bloud did staiue Phlegrean  
ground; <sup>40</sup>

Nor how th' halfe horsy people, Centaures  
hight,  
Fought with the bloudie Lapithæes at bord;

Nor how the East with tyrannous despight  
Burnt th' Attick towres, and people slew  
with sword;

Nor how Mount Athos through exceeding  
might

Was digged downe; nor yron bands aboard  
The Pontick sea by their huge navy cast,  
My volume shall renowne, so long since past:

Nor Hellespont trampled with horses feete,  
When flocking Persians did the Greeks  
affray;

But my soft Muse, as for her power more  
meete,

Delights (with Phœbus friendly leave) to  
play

An easie running verse with tender feete.  
And thou (dread sacred child) to thee alway  
Let everlasting lightsome glory strive,  
Through the worlds endles ages to survive.

And let an happie roome remaine for thee  
Mongst heavenly ranks, where blessed  
soules do rest;

And let long lasting life with joyous glee,  
As thy due meede that thou deservest  
best,

Hereafter many yeares remembred be  
Amongst good men, of whom thou oft are  
blest;

Live thon for ever in all happinesse:  
But let us turne to our first businesse.

The fiery Sun was mounted now on hight  
Up to the heavenly towers, and shot each  
where

Out of his golden charet glistering light;  
And fayre Aurora with her rosie heare  
The hatefull darknes now had put to flight;  
When as the shepheard, seeing day ap-  
peare,

His little goats gan drive out of their stalls,  
To feede abroad, where pasture best befalls.

To an high mountaines top he with them  
went,

Where thickest grasse did cloath the open  
hills:

They, now amongst the woods and thickets  
ment,

Now in the valleies wandering at their wills,  
Spread themselves farre abroad through  
each descent;

Some on the soft greene grasse feeding their  
fills;

Some, clambring through the hollow cliffes  
on hy,

Nibble the bushie shrubs, which growe  
thereby.

Others the utmost boughs of trees doe crop,  
And brouze the woodbine twigges, that  
freshly bud;

This with full bit doth catch the utmost top  
Of some soft willow, or new grown stud;  
This with sharpe teeth the bramble leaves  
doth lop,

And chaw the tender prickles in her cud;  
The whiles another high doth overlooke  
Her owne like image in a christall brooke.

O the great happines which shepheards have,  
Who so loathes not too much the poore es-  
tate

With minde that ill use doth before deprave,  
Ne measures all things by the costly rate  
Of riotise, and semblants outward brave!  
No such sad cares, as wont to macerate  
And rend the greedie mindes of covetous  
men,

Do ever creepe into the shepheards den.

Ne cares he if the fleece which him arayes  
Be not twice steeped in Assyrian dye;  
Ne glistering of golde, which underlayes  
The summer beames, doe blinde his gazing  
eye;

Ne pictures beautie, nor the glauncing rayes  
Of precious stones, whence no good commeth  
by;

Ne yet his cup embost with imagery  
Of Bætus or of Alcons vanity.

Ne ought the welky pearles esteemeth hee,  
Which are from Indian seas brought far  
away:

But with pure brest from carefull sorrow  
free,

On the soft grasse his limbs doth oft dis-  
play,

In sweete spring time, when flowres varietie  
With sundrie colours paints the sprinckled  
lay;

There, lying all at ease from guile or spight,  
With pype of fennie reedes doth him delight.

There he, lord of himselfe, with palme be-  
dight,

His looser locks doth wrap in wreath of  
vine:

There his milk dropping goats be his delight,  
 And fruitfull Pales, and the forrest greene,  
 And darkesome caves in pleasaunt vallies  
 pight,  
 Wheras continuall shade is to be seene,  
 And where fresh springing wells, as chris-  
 tall neate,  
 Do alwayes flow, to quench his thirstie  
 heate. 120

O who can lead then a more happie life  
 Than he, that with cleane minde and heart  
 sincere,  
 No greedy riches knowes nor blondie strife,  
 No deadly fight of warlick fleete doth  
 feare,  
 Ne runs in perill of foes cruell knife,  
 That in the sacred temples he may reare  
 A trophee of his glittering spoyles and  
 treasure,  
 Or may abound in riches above measure ?

Of him his God is worshipt with his sythe,  
 And not with skill of craftsman pol-  
 ished: 130  
 He joyes in groves, and makes himselfe  
 full blythe  
 With sundrie flowers in wilde fieldes gath-  
 ered;  
 Ne frankincens he from Panchæa buyth:  
 Sweete Quiet harbours in his harmeles  
 head,  
 And perfect Pleasre buildes her joyous  
 bowre,  
 Free from sad cares, that rich mens hearts  
 devowre.

This all his care, this all his whole inde-  
 vour,  
 To this his minde and senses he doth bend,  
 How he may flow in quiet matchles trea-  
 sour,  
 Content with any food that God doth send;  
 And how his limbs, resolv'd through idle  
 leisour, 141  
 Unto sweete sleepe he may securely lend,  
 In some coole shadow from the scorching  
 heat,  
 The whiles his flock their chawed cuds do  
 cate.

O flocks, O faunes, and O ye pleasaunt  
 springs  
 Of Tempe, where the countrey nymphs are  
 rife,

Through whose not costly care each shep-  
 heard sings  
 As merrie notes upon his rusticke fife  
 As that Ascrean bard, whose fame now  
 rings  
 Through the wide world, and leads as joy-  
 full life, 150  
 Free from all troubles and from worldly  
 toyle,  
 In which fond men doe all their dayes tur-  
 moyle.

In such delights whilst thus his carelesse  
 time  
 This shepherd drives, upleaning on his  
 batt,  
 And on shrill reedes chaunting his rustick  
 rime,  
 Hyperion, throwing foorth his beames full  
 hott,  
 Into the highest top of heaven gan clime,  
 And the world parting by an equall lott,  
 Did shed his whirling flames on either side,  
 As the great Ocean doth himselfe divide. 160

Then gan the shepherd gather into one  
 His stragling goates, and drave them to a  
 foord,  
 Whose cærule streame, rombling in pible  
 stone,  
 Crept under mosse as greene as any goord  
 Now had the sun halfe heaven overgone,  
 When he his heard back from that water  
 foord  
 Drave from the force of Phœbus boyling  
 ray,  
 Into thicke shadowes, there themselves to  
 lay.

Soone as he them plac'd in thy sacred wood  
 (O Delian goddess) saw, to which of  
 yore 170  
 Came the bad daughter of old Cadmus  
 brood,  
 Cruell Agave, flying vengeance sore  
 Of King Nictileus for the guiltie blood  
 Which she with cursed hands had shed be-  
 fore;  
 There she halfe frantick having slaine her  
 sonne,  
 Did shrowd her selfe like punishment to  
 shonne.

Here also playing on the grassy greene,  
 Woodgods, and satyres, and swift dryades,



With many fairies oft were dauncing seene.  
Not so much did Dan Orpheus repressse <sup>180</sup>  
The streames of Hebrus with his songs, I  
weene,

As that faire troupe of woodie goddesses  
Staied thee (O Peneus) powring foorth to  
thee,

From chcereful lookes, great mirth and  
gladsome glee.

The verie nature of the place, resounding  
With gentle murmure of the breathing  
ayre,

A pleasant bowre with all delight abounding  
In the fresh shadowe did for them prepayre,  
To rest their limbs with wearines redound-  
ing.

For first the high palme trees, with  
braunches faire, <sup>190</sup>

Out of the lowly vallies did arise,  
And high shoote up their heads into the  
skyes.

And them amongst the wicked lotos grew,  
Wicked, for holding guilefully away  
Ulysses men, whom rapt with sweetenes  
new,

Taking to hoste, it quite from him did stay;  
And eke those trees, in whose transformed  
hew

The Sunnes sad daughters waylde the rash  
decay

Of Phaeton, whose limbs with lightening  
rent

They gathering up, with sweete teares did  
lament. <sup>200</sup>

And that same tree, in which Demophoon,  
By his disloyalty lamented sore,  
Eternall hurte left unto many one:

Whom als accompanied the oke, of yore  
Through fatall charmes transformd to such  
an one:

The oke, whose acornes were our foode, be-  
fore

That Ceres seede of mortall men were  
knowne,

Which first Triptoleme taught how to be  
sowne.

Here also grew the rougher rinded pine,  
The great Argoan ships brave ornament, <sup>210</sup>  
Whom golden fleece did make an heavenly  
signe;

Which coveting, with his high tops extent,

To make the mountaines touch the starres  
divine,

Decks all the forrest with embellishment;  
And the blacke holme that loves the watrie  
vale;

And the sweete cypresse, signe of deadly  
bale.

Emongst the rest the clambring yvie grew,  
Knitting his wanton armes with grasping  
hold,

Least that the poplar happely should rew  
Her brothers strokes, whose boughes she  
doth enfold <sup>220</sup>

With her lythe twigs, till they the top sur-  
view,

And paint with pallid greene her buds of  
gold.

Next did the myrtle tree to her approach,  
Not yet unmindfull of her olde reproach.

But the small birds, in their wide boughs  
embowring,

Chaunted their sundrie tunes with sweete  
consent;

And under them a silver spring, forth  
powring

His trickling streames, a gentle murmure  
sent;

Thereto the frogs, bred in the slimie scow-  
ring

Of the moist moores, their jarring voyces  
bent; <sup>230</sup>

And shrill grasshoppers chirped them  
around:

All which the ayrie echo did resound.

In this so pleasant place this shepheards  
flocke

Lay everie where, their wearie limbs to  
rest,

On everie bush, and everie hollow rocke,  
Where breathe on them the whistling wind  
mote best;

The whiles the shepheard self, tending his  
stocke,

Sate by the fountaine side, in shade to  
rest,

Where gentle slumbring sleep oppressed  
him,

Displaid on ground, and seized everie lim.

Of trecherie or traines nought tooke he  
keep, <sup>241</sup>

But, looslie on the grassie greene dispredd,

His dearest life did trust to careles sleep;  
Which, weighing down his drouping drowsie  
hedd,

In quiet rest his molten heart did steep,  
Devoid of care, and feare of all falshedd:  
Had not inconstant Fortune, bent to ill,  
Bid strange mischance his quietnes to spill.

For at his wonted time in that same place  
An huge great serpent, all with speckles  
pide, 250

To drench himselfe in moorish slime did  
trace,

There from the boyling heate himselfe to  
hide:

He, passing by with rolling wreathed pace,  
With brandisht tongue the emptie aire did  
gride,

And wrapt his scalie boughts with fell de-  
spight,

That all things seem'd appalled at his sight.

Now more and more having himselfe en-  
rolde,

His glittering breast he lifteth up on hie,  
And with proud vaunt his head aloft doth  
holde; 259

His creste above, spotted with purple die,  
On everie side did shine like scalie golde,  
And his bright eyes, glauncing full dread-  
fullie,

Did seeme to flame out flakes of flashing  
fyre,

And with sterne lookes to threaten kindled  
yre.

Thus wise long time he did himselfe dispace  
There round about, when as at last he spide,  
Lying along before him in that place,  
That flocks grand captaine and most trustie  
guide:

Eftsoones more fierce in visage and in pace,  
Throwing his fire eyes on everie side, 270  
He commeth on, and all things in his way  
Full stearnly rends, that might his passage  
stay.

Much he disdaines, that anie one should  
dare

To come unto his haunt; for which intent  
He inly burns, and gins straight to prepare  
The weapons which Nature to him hath  
lent;

Fellie he hisseth, and doth fiercely stare,  
And hath his jawes with angrie spirits rent,

That all his tract with bloudie drops is  
stained,

And all his foldes are now in length out-  
strained. 280

Whom, thus at point prepared, to prevent,  
A litle noursling of the humid ayre,  
A Gnat, unto the sleepe shepheard went,  
And marking where his ey-lids, twineckling  
rare,

Shewd the two pearles which sight unto him  
lent,

Through their thin coverings appearing  
fayre,

His little needle there infixing deep,  
Warnd him awake, from death himselfe to  
keep.

Wherewith enrag'd, he fiercely gan upstart,  
And with his hand him rashly bruizing,  
slewe, 290

As in avengement of his heedles smart,  
That streight the spirite out of his senses  
flew,

And life out of his members did depart:  
When suddenly casting aside his vew,  
He spide his foe with felonous intent,  
And fervent eyes to his destruction bent.

All suddenly dismaid, and hartles quight,  
He fled abacke, and, catching hastie holde  
Of a yong alder hard beside him pight,  
It rent, and streight about him gan be-  
holde 300

What god or fortune would assist his might.  
But whether god or fortune made him bold  
Its hard to read: yet hardie will he had  
To overcome, that made him lesse adrad.

The scalie backe of that most hideous snake  
Enwrapped round, oft faining to retire,  
And oft him to assaile, he fiercely strake  
Whereas his temples did his creast front  
tyre;

And, for he was but slowe, did slowth off  
shake,

And gazing ghastly on (for feare and yre 310  
Had blent so much his sense, that lesse he  
feard;)

Yet, when he saw him slaine, himselfe he  
cheard.

By this the Night forth from the darksome  
bowre

Of Herebus her teemed steedes gan call,

And laesie Vesper in his timely howre  
 From golden Oeta gan proceede withall;  
 Whenas the shepheard after this sharpe  
     stowre,  
 Seing the doubled shadowes low to fall,  
 Gathering his straying flocke, does home-  
     ward fare,  
 And unto rest his wearie joynts prepare. 320

Into whose sense so soone as lighter sleepe  
 Was entered, and now loosing everie lim,  
 Sweete slumbring deaw in carelesnesse did  
     steepe,  
 The image of that Gnat appeard to him,  
 And in sad tearmes gan sorrowfully weepe,  
 With greislie countenance and visage grim,  
 Wailing the wrong which he had done of  
     late,  
 In steed of good, hastning his cruell fate.

Said he, 'What have I, wretch, deserv'd,  
     that thus  
 Into this bitter bale I am outcast, 330  
 Whilest that thy life more deare and pre-  
     cious  
 Was than mine owne, so long as it did last ?  
 I now, in lieu of paines so gracions,  
 Am tost in th' ayre with everie windie blast:  
 Thou, safe delivered from sad decay,  
 Thy careles limbs in loose sleep dost dis-  
     play.

'So livest thou; but my poore wretched  
     ghost  
 Is forst to ferrie over Lethes river, 338  
 And, spoyld of Charon, too and fro am tost.  
 Seest thou, how all places quake and quiver,  
 Lightned with deadly lamps on everie post ?  
 Tisiphone each where doth shake and shiver  
 Her flaming fire brond, encountring me,  
 Whose lockes uncombed cruell adders be.

'And Cerberus, whose many monthes doo  
     bay,  
 And barke out flames, as if on fire he fed;  
 Adowne whose necke, in terrible array,  
 Ten thousand snakes, cralling about his hed,  
 Doo hang in heapes, that horribly affray,  
 And bloodie eyes doo glister firie red; 350  
 He oftentimes me dreadfullie doth threaten,  
 With painfull torments to be sorely beaten.

'Ay me ! that thankes so much should faile  
     of meed !  
 For that I thee restor'd to life againe,

Even from the doore of death and deadlie  
     dreed.

Where then is now the guerdon of my  
     paine ?

Where the reward of my so piteous deed ?  
 The praise of pitie vanisht is in vaine,  
 And th' antique faith of justice long agoone  
 Out of the land is fled away and gone. 360

'I saw anothers fate approaching fast,  
 And left mine owne his safetic to tender;  
 Into the same mishap I now am cast,  
 And shun'd destruction doth destruction  
     render:

Not unto him that never hath trespass,  
 But punishment is due to the offender:  
 Yet let destruction be the punishment,  
 So long as thankfull will may it relent.

'I carried am into waste wildernesse, 369  
 Waste wildernes, amongst Cymerian shades,  
 Where endles paines and hideous heavinesse  
 Is round about me heapt in darksome glades.  
 For there huge Othos sits in sad distresse,  
 Fast bound with serpents that him oft in-  
     vades,  
 Far of beholding Ephialtes tide,  
 Which once assaid to burne this world so  
     wide.

'And there is mournfull Tityus, mindefull  
     yet  
 Of thy displeasure, O Latona faire;  
 Displeasure too implacable was it,  
 That made him meat for wild foules of the  
     ayre: 380  
 Much do I feare among such fiends to sit;  
 Much do I feare back to them to repayre,  
 To the black shadowes of the Stygian shore,  
 Where wretched ghosts sit wailing ever-  
     more.

'There next the utmost brinck doth he abide,  
 That did the bankets of the gods bewray,  
 Whose throat, through thirst, to nought  
     nigh being dride,  
 His sense to seeke for ease turnes every  
     way:  
 And he that in avengement of his pride,  
 For scorning to the sacred gods to pray, 390  
 Against a mountaine rolls a mightie stone,  
 Calling in vaine for rest, and can have none.

'Go ye with them, go, cursed damosells,  
 Whose bridale torches foule Erynnis tynde,



And Hymen, at your spousalls sad, foretells  
 Tydings of death and massacre unkinde:  
 With them that cruell Colchid mother  
 dwells,  
 The which conceiv'd in her revengefull  
 minde,  
 With bitter woundes her owne deere babes  
 to slay,  
 And mured troupes upon great heapes to  
 lay. 400

'There also those two Pandionian maides,  
 Calling on Itis, Itis evermore,  
 Whom, wretched boy, they slew with guiltie  
 blades;  
 For whome the Thracian king lamenting  
 sore,  
 Turn'd to a lapwing, fowlie them upbraydes,  
 And fluttering round about them still does  
 sore;  
 There now they all eternally complaine  
 Of others wrong, and suffer endles paine.

'But the two brethren borne of Cadmus  
 blood,  
 Whilst each does for the soveraignty con-  
 tend, 410  
 Blinde through ambition, and with ven-  
 geance wood,  
 Each doth against the others bodie bend  
 His cursed steele, of neither well withstood,  
 And with wide wounds their carcasses doth  
 rend;  
 That yet they both doe mortall foes re-  
 maine,  
 Sith each with brothers bloudie hand was  
 slaine.

'Ah (waladay!) there is no end of paine,  
 Nor chaunge of labour may intreated bee:  
 Yet I beyond all these am carried faine,  
 Where other powers farre different I  
 see, 420  
 And must passe over to th' Elisian plaine:  
 There grim Persephone, encountering mee,  
 Doth urge her fellow Furies earnestlie,  
 With their bright firebronds me to terrifie.

'There chast Alceste lives inviolate,  
 Free from all care, for that her husbands  
 daies  
 She did prolong by changing fate for fate:  
 Lo! there lives also the immortall praise  
 Of womankind, most faithfull to her mate,  
 Penelope; and from her farre awayes 430

A rulesse rout of yongmen, which her woo'd,  
 All slaine with darts, lie wallowed in their  
 blood.

'And sad Eurydice thence now no more  
 Must turne to life, but there detained bee,  
 For looking back, being forbid before:  
 Yet was the guilt thereof, Orpheus, in thee.  
 Bold sure he was, and worthie spirite bore,  
 That durst those lowest shadowes goe to  
 see,  
 And could beleieve that anie thing could  
 please 439  
 Fell Cerberus, or Stygian powres appease.

'Ne feard the burning waves of Phlegeton,  
 Nor those same mournfull kingdomes, com-  
 passed  
 With rustie horror and fowle fashion,  
 And deep digd vawtes, and Tartar covered  
 With bloodie night, and darke confusion,  
 And judgement seates, whose judge is  
 deadlie dred,  
 A judge that, after death, doth punish sore  
 The faults which life hath trespassed be-  
 fore.

'But valiant fortune made Dan Orpheus  
 bolde:  
 For the swift running rivers still did stand,  
 And the wilde beasts their furie did with-  
 hold, 451  
 To follow Orpheus musicke through the  
 land:  
 And th'okes, deep grounded in the earthly  
 molde,  
 Did move, as if they could him understand;  
 And the shrill woods, which were of sence  
 bereav'd,  
 Through their hard barke his silver sound  
 receav'd.

'And eke the Moone her hastie steedes did  
 stay,  
 Drawing in teemes along the starrie skie;  
 And didst (O monthly virgin) thou delay  
 Thy nightly course, to heare his melody?  
 The same was able, with like lovely lay,  
 The Queene of Hell to move as easily, 462  
 To yeeld Eurydice unto her fere,  
 Backe to be borne, though it unlawfull  
 were.

'She (ladie) having well before approoved,  
 The feends to be too cruell and severe.

Observ'd th' appointed way, as her be-  
hooved,  
Ne ever did her ey-sight turne areere,  
Ne ever spake, ne cause of speaking  
mooved:

But cruell Orpheus, thou much crueller,  
Seeking to kisse her, brok'st the gods  
decree, <sup>471</sup>  
And thereby mad'st her ever damn'd to be.

'Ah! but sweete love of pardon worthie  
is,  
And doth deserve to have small faults re-  
mitted;

If Hell at least things lightly done amis  
Knew how to pardon, when ought is  
omitted:

Yet are ye both received into blis,  
And to the seates of happie soules ad-  
mitted,

And you beside the honourable band  
Of great heroës doo in order stand. <sup>480</sup>

'There be the two stout sonnes of Aeacus,  
Fierce Peleus, and the hardie Telamon,  
Both seeming now full glad and joyeous  
Through their syres dreadfull jurisdiction,  
Being the judge of all that horrid hous:  
And both of them, by strange occasion,  
Renown'd in choyce of happie marriage  
Through Venus grace, and vertues cariage.

'For th' one was ravisht of his owne bond-  
maide,

The faire Ixione, captiv'd from Troy: <sup>490</sup>  
But th' other was with Thetis love assaid,  
Great Nereus his daughter and his joy.

On this side them there is a yongman layd,  
Their match in glorie, mightie, fierce and  
coy,

That from th' Argolick ships, with furious  
yre,  
Bett back the furie of the Trojan fyre.

'O who would not recount the strong di-  
vorces

Of that great warre, which Trojanes oft  
behelde,

And oft beheld the warlike Greekish  
forces,

When Teucrian soyle with bloodie rivers  
swelde, <sup>500</sup>

And wide Sigæan shores were spred with  
corse,

And Simois and Xanthus blood outwelde,

Whilst Hector raged with outrageous  
minde,  
Flames, weapons, wounds in Greeks fleete  
to have tynde?

'For Ida selfe, in ayde of that fierce fight,  
Out of her mountaines ministred supplies,  
And like a kindly nourse, did yeeld (for  
spight)

Store of firebronds out of her nourseries  
Unto her foster children, that they might  
Inflame the navie of their enemies, <sup>510</sup>  
And all the Rhætean shore to ashes turne,  
Where lay the ships which they did seeke  
to burne.

'Gainst which the noble sonne of Tela-  
mon

Opposd' himselfe, and thwarting his huge  
shield,

Them battell bad; gainst whom appeard  
anon

Hector, the glorie of the Trojan field:  
Both fierce and furious in contention  
Encountred, that their mightie strokes so  
shrild

As the great clap of thunder, which doth  
ryve

The ratling heavens, and cloudes asunder  
dryve. <sup>520</sup>

'So th' one with fire and weapons did con-  
tend

To cut the ships from turning home againe  
To Argos; th' other strove for to defend  
The force of Vulcane with his might and  
maine.

Thus th' one Aeacide did his fame extend:  
But th' other joy'd, that, on the Phrygian  
playne

Having the blood of vanquisht Hector  
shedd,

He compast Troy thrice with his bodie  
dedd.

'Againe great dole on either partie grewe,  
That him to death unfaithfull Paris sent;  
And also him that false Ulysses slewe, <sup>531</sup>  
Drawne into danger through close ambush-  
ment:

Therefore from him Laërtes sonne his  
vewe

Doth turne aside, and boasts his good event  
In working of Strymonian Rhæsus fall,  
And efte in Dolons slye surprysall.

'Again the dreadfull Cycones him dismay,  
 And blacke Læstrigones, a people stout:  
 Then greedie Scilla, under whom there bay  
 Manie great bandogs, which her gird  
 about: 540  
 Then doo the Aetnean Cyclops him affray,  
 And deep Charybdis gulphing in and out:  
 Lastly the squalid lakes of Tartarie,  
 And griesly feends of hell him terrifie.

'There also goodly Agamemnon bosts,  
 The glorie of the stock of Tantalus,  
 And famous light of all the Greekish hosts,  
 Under whose conduct most victorious,  
 The Dorick flames consum'd the Iliack  
 posts.  
 Ah! but the Greekes themselves more  
 dolorous, 550  
 To thee, O Troy, paid penance for thy  
 fall,  
 In th' Hellespont being nigh drowned all.

'Well may appeare, by prooffe of their mis-  
 chaunce,  
 The chaungfull turning of mens slipperie  
 state,  
 That none, whom fortune freely doth ad-  
 vance,  
 Himselfe therefore to heaven should ele-  
 vate:  
 For loftie type of honour, through the  
 glaunce  
 Of envies dart, is downe in dust prostrate;  
 And all that vaunts in worldly vanitie  
 Shall fall through fortunes mutabilitie. 560

'Th' Argolicke power returning home  
 againe,  
 Enricht with spoyles of th' Eriethonian  
 towre,  
 Did happie winde and weather entertaine,  
 And with good speed the fomie billowes  
 scowre:  
 No signe of storme, no feare of future  
 paine,  
 Which soone ensued them with heavie  
 stowre.  
 Nereis to the seas a token gave,  
 The whiles their crooked keeles the surges  
 clave.

'Suddenly, whether through the gods de-  
 cree, 569  
 Or haplesse rising of some froward starre,

The heavens on everie side enclowded bee:  
 Black stormes and fogs are blownen up from  
 farre,  
 That now the pylote can no loadstarre see,  
 But skies and seas doo make most dread-  
 full warre;  
 The billowes striving to the heavens to  
 reach,  
 And th' heavens striving them for to im-  
 peach.

'And, in avengement of their bold attempt,  
 Both sun and starres and all the heavenly  
 powres  
 Conspire in one to wreake their rash con-  
 tempt,  
 And downe on them to fall from highest  
 towres: 580  
 The skie, in pieces seeming to be rent,  
 Throwes lightning forth, and haile, and  
 harmful showres,  
 That death on everie side to them appeares,  
 In thousand formes, to worke more ghastly  
 feares.

'Some in the greedie fouds are sunke and  
 drent;  
 Some on the rocks of Caphareus are  
 throwne;  
 Some on th' Euboick cliffs in pieces rent;  
 Some scattred on the Hercæan shores un-  
 knowne;  
 And manie lost, of whom no monument  
 Remaines, nor memorie is to be showne:  
 Whilst all the purchase of the Phrigian  
 pray, 591  
 Tost on salt billowes, round about doth stray.

'Here manie other like heroës bee,  
 Equall in honour to the former crue,  
 Whom ye in goodly seates may placed see,  
 Descended all from Rome by linage due,  
 From Rome, that holds the world in sove-  
 reigntie,  
 And doth all nations unto her subdue:  
 Here Fabii and Decii doo dwell,  
 Horatii that in vertue did excell. 600

'And here the antique fame of stout Camill  
 Doth ever live; and constant Curtius,  
 Who, stifly bent his vowed life to spill  
 For countreyes health, a gulph most hideous  
 Amidst the towne with his owne corps did  
 fill,  
 T'appease the powers; and prudent Mutius,



Who in his flesh endur'd the scorching flame,  
To daunt his foe by ensample of the same.

' And here wise Curius, companion  
Of noble vertues, lives in endles rest; 610  
And stout Flaminius, whose devotion  
Taught him the fires scorn'd furie to detest;  
And here the praise of either Scipion  
Abides in highest place above the best,  
To whom the ruin'd walls of Carthage  
vow'd,  
Trembling their forces, sound their praises  
lowd.

' Live they for ever through their lasting  
praise:  
But I, poore wretch, am forced to retourne  
To the sad lakes, that Phœbus sunnie rayes  
Doo never see, where soules doo alwaies  
mourne; 620  
And by the wayling shores to waste my  
dayes,  
Where Phlegeton with quenchles flames  
doth burne;  
By which just Minos righteous soules doth  
sever  
From wicked ones, to live in blisse for ever.

' Me therefore thus the cruell fiends of  
hell,  
Girt with long snakes and thousand yron  
chaynes,  
Through doome of that their cruell judge,  
compell,  
With bitter torture and impatient paines,  
Cause of my death and just complaint to  
tell.  
For thou art he whom my poore ghost com-  
plaines 630  
To be the author of her ill unwares,  
That careles hear'st my intollerable cares.

' Them therefore as bequeathing to the  
winde,  
I now depart, returning to thee never,  
And leave this lamentable plaint behinde.  
But doo thou haunt the soft downe rolling  
river,  
And wilde greene woods, and fruitful pas-  
tures minde,  
And let the flitting aire my vaine words  
sever.  
Thus having said, he heavily departed  
With piteous crie, that anie would have  
smarted. 640

Now, when the sloathfull fit of lifes sweete  
rest  
Had left the heavie shepheard, wondrous  
cares  
His inly grieved minde full sore opprest;  
That balefull sorrow he no longer beares  
For that Gnats death, which deeply was  
imprest,  
But bends what ever power his aged yeares  
Him lent, yet being such as through their  
might  
He lately slue his dreadfull foe in fight.

By that same river lurking under greene,  
Eftssoones he gins to fashion forth a place,  
And squaring it in compasse well beseene,  
There plotteth out a tombe by measured  
space: 652  
His yron headed spade tho making cleene,  
To dig up sods out of the flowrie grasse,  
His worke he shortly to good purpose  
brought,  
Like as he had conceiv'd it in his thought.

An heape of earth he hoorded up on hie,  
Enclosing it with banks on everie side,  
And thereupon did raise full busily  
A little mount, of greene turffs edifice; 660  
And on the top of all, that passers by  
Might it behold, the toomb he did provide  
Of smoothest marble stone in order set,  
That never might his luckie scape forget.

And round about he taught sweete flowres  
to growe,  
The rose engrained in pure scarlet die,  
The lilly fresh, and violet belowe,  
The marigolde, and cherefull rosemarie,  
The Spartan mirtle, whence sweet gum  
does flowe,  
The purple hyacinthe, and fresh cost-  
marie, 670  
And saffron, sought for in Cilician soyle,  
And lawrell, th' ornament of Phœbus toyle:

Fresh rhododaphne, and the Sabine flowre,  
Matching the wealth of th' auncient frank-  
incence,  
And pallid yvie, building his owne bowre,  
And box, yet mindfull of his olde offence,  
Red anaranthus, lucklesse paramour:  
Oxeye still greene, and bitter patience;  
Ne wants there pale Narcisse, that, in a  
well  
Seeing his beautie, in love with it fell. 680

And whatsoever other flowre of worth,  
 And whatso other hearb of lovely hew  
 The joyous Spring out of the ground brings  
 forth,  
 To cloath her selfe in colours fresh and  
 new,  
 He planted there, and reard a mount of  
 earth,  
 In whose high front was writ as doth ensue:

*To thee, small Gnat, in lieu of his life saved,  
 The Shepheard hath thy deaths record en-  
 graved.*

FINIS.

PROSOPOPOIA  
 OR  
 MOTHER HUBBERDS TALE  
 BY ED. SP.

DEDICATED TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE  
 THE LADIE COMPTON AND  
 MOUNTEGLE

LONDON

IMPRINTED FOR WILLIAM  
 PONSONBIE, DWELLING IN PAULES  
 CHURCHVARD AT THE SIGNE OF  
 THE BISHOPS HEAD

1591

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE,  
 THE LADIE COMPTON AND  
 MOUNTEGLE

MOST faire and vertuous Ladie: having often sought opportunitie by some good meanes to make knowne to your Ladiship the humble affection and faithfull dnetie which I have alwaies professed, and am bound to beare, to that house from whence yee spring, I have at length found occasion to remember the same, by making a simple present to you of these my idle labours; which having long sithens composed in the raw conceipt of my youth, I lately amongst other papers lighted upon, and was by others, which liked the same, mooved to set them forth. Simple is the device, and the composition meane, yet carrieth some delight, even the rather because of the simplicitie and meannesse thus personated. The same I beseech your Ladiship take in good part, as a pledge of that profession which I have

made to you, and keepe with you untill, with some other more worthie labour, I do redeeme it out of your hands, and discharge my utmost dutie. Till then, wishing your Ladiship all increase of honour and happinesse, I humble take leave.

Your Ladiships ever  
 humbly,  
 Ed. Sp.

['Mother Hubbard's Tale' is of the same period with 'Virgil's Gnat.' In the dedicatory letter of 1591 it is said to have been 'long sithens composed in the raw conceipt of my youth,' and 'long sithens' is limited by the satire on court life to the years from 1577 to 1580. A probable glance at the disgrace of Leicester in 1579 (l. 628) may limit it still more. Yet beside this very reference is one, equally probable, to events of ten years later, and other such insertions may be found. It would appear, therefore, that when, during his second sojourn at court, Spenser 'lighted upon' this early poem and was 'mooved to set it forth,' he to some extent revised and enlarged it.

The most obvious characteristic of 'Mother Hubbard's Tale' is the range of its satire. The career of the Ape and the Fox is a kind of rogues' progress through the three estates to the crown. They begin among the common people, rise from thence to the clergy and from thence to the court, among the nobility; in the end they cap the climax of their villainies by making themselves king and prime minister. The satire is mainly concentrated, to be sure, upon life at the court and the intrigues of those in power, topics of direct personal concern to Spenser, yet the poem as a whole does survey, however imperfectly and unsymmetrically, some of the main conditions of life in the nation at large. In this it harks back unmistakably to *Piers Plowman*. Though the satiric scope is of Langland, however, there is much in the style to suggest the vein of Chaucer, and the *dramatis personæ* and stage-setting are those of *Reynard the Fox*. The combination results at times in curious contrasts. In their first sojourn at court, the Fox and the Ape are among lords and ladies, suitors, a world of men, from the midst of which emerges the figure of the 'brave courtier:' in their second sojourn there, this world is suddenly transformed; for lords and ladies, suitors, men, we have the animals of Caxton's book, the Wolf, the Sheep, the Ass, and their like; it is the court of King Lion. Yet so spontaneous and creative are the acts of the poet's imagination that at no point in the long range of this satire are we checked

by the sense of incongruity. The strange succession of scenes and figures, all admirably alive, the variety of artistic effects ranging from grotesqueness to romantic beauty, the sudden eruptions of strong personal feeling from levels of cool satire, the fluctuations of the style from crudity to masterliness, produce, in a small way, the sense of a world almost as real as that of the *Faery Queen*. This is mediæval satire at its best. The Italians, with whom Spenser was at this time rapidly becoming familiar, had already, for at least two generations, been cultivating the classic Roman form, and their lead had been followed by the head of the new English school, Sir Thomas Wyatt: one might expect that Spenser, who from boyhood had been steeped in the classics, should also adopt this revived form. Nothing shows better the independence of his artistic eclecticism, his gift for taking here, there, and everywhere whatever appeals to his imagination, than the mediævalism of this his one satire.]

#### PROSOPOPOIA: OR MOTHER HUBBERDS TALE

It was the month in which the righteous  
Maide,  
That, for disdain of sinfull worlds up-  
braide,  
Fled back to heaven, whence she was first  
conceived,  
Into her silver bowre the Sunne received;  
And the hot Syrian Dog on him awayting,  
After the chafed Lyons cruell bayting,  
Corrupted had th' ayre with his noysome  
breath,  
And powr'd on th' earth plague, pestilence,  
and death.  
Emongst the rest a wicked maladie  
Raign'd amongst men, that manie did to  
die,  
Depriv'd of sense and ordinarie reason;  
That it to leaches seemed strange and  
geason.  
My fortune was, mougst manie others moe,  
To be partaker of their common woe;  
And my weake bodie, set on fire with  
griefe,  
Was rob'd of rest and naturall reliefe.  
In this ill plight, there came to visite mee  
Some friends, who, sorie my sad case to  
see,  
Began to comfort me in chearfull wise,  
And meanes of gladsome solace to devise.

But seeing kindly sleep refuse to doe<sup>21</sup>  
His office, and my feeble eyes forgoe,  
They sought my troubled sense how to de-  
ceave  
With talke, that might unquiet fancies  
reave;  
And sitting all in seates about me round,  
With pleasant tales (fit for that idle  
stound)  
They cast in course to waste the wearie  
howres:  
Some tolde of ladies, and their paramoures;  
Some of brave knights, and their renowned  
squires;  
Some of the faeries and their strange at-  
tires;  
And some of giaunts hard to be beleaved;<sup>30</sup>  
That the delight thereof me much re-  
leaved.  
Amongst the rest a good old woman was,  
Hight Mother Hubberd, who did farre  
surpas  
The rest in honest mirth, that seem'd her  
well:  
She, when her turne was come her tale to  
tell,  
Tolde of a strange adventure, that betided  
Betwixt the Foxe and th' Ape by him mis-  
guided;  
The which, for that my sense it greatly  
pleased,  
All were my spirite heavie and diseased,<sup>40</sup>  
Ile write in termes, as she the same did  
say,  
So well as I her words remember may.  
No Muses aide me needes heretoo to call;  
Base is the style, and matter meane withall.  
¶ Whilome (said she) before the world  
was civill,  
The Foxe and th' Ape, disliking of their  
evill  
And hard estate, determined to seeke  
Their fortunes farre abroad, lyeke with his  
lyeke:  
For both were craftie and unhappie witted;  
Two fellows might no where be better  
fitted.<sup>50</sup>  
The Foxe, that first this cause of griefe did  
finde,  
Gan first thus plaine his case with words  
unkinde:  
' Neighbour Ape, and my goship eke be-  
side,  
(Both two sure bands in friendship to be  
tide,)



To whom may I more trustely complaine  
 The evill plight that doth me sore con-  
 straine,  
 And hope thereof to finde due remedie?  
 Heare then my paine and inward agonie.  
 Thus manie yeares I now have spent and  
 worne,  
 In meane regard, and basest fortunes  
 scorne, 60  
 Dooing my cuntry service as I might,  
 No lesse I dare saie than the prowdest  
 wight;  
 And still I hoped to be up advaunced,  
 For my good parts; but still it hath mis-  
 chaunced.  
 Now therefore that no lenger hope I see,  
 But froward fortune still to follow mee,  
 And losels lifted up on high, where I did  
 looke,  
 I meane to turne the next leafe of the  
 booke.  
 Yet ere that anie way I doo betake,  
 I meane my gossip privie first to make.' 70  
 'Ah, my deare gossip!' answer'd then the  
 Ape,  
 'Deeply doo your sad words my wits  
 awhape,  
 Both for because your grieve doth great  
 appeare,  
 And eke because my selfe am touched  
 neare:  
 For I likewise have wasted much good time,  
 Still wayting to preferment up to clime,  
 Whilest others alwayes have before me  
 stept,  
 And from my beard the fat away have  
 swept;  
 That now unto despaire I gin to growe,  
 And meane for better winde about to  
 throwe. 80  
 Therefore to me, my trustie friend, aread  
 Thy councell: two is better than one head.'  
 'Certes,' said he, 'I meane me to disguise  
 In some straunge habit, after uncouth wize,  
 Or like a pilgrime, or a lymiter,  
 Or like a gipsen, or a juggeler,  
 And so to wander to the worldes ende,  
 To seeke my fortune, where I may it mend:  
 For worse than that I have I cannot meete.  
 Wide is the world, I wote, and everie  
 streete 90  
 Is full of fortunes and adventures straunge,  
 Continuallie subject unto chaunge.  
 Say, my faire brother, now, if this device  
 Doth like you, or may you to like entice.'

'Surely,' said th' Ape, 'it likes me wondrous  
 well;  
 And would ye not poore fellowship expell,  
 My selfe would offer you t' accompanie  
 In this adventures chauncefull jeopardie.  
 For to wexe olde at home in idlenesse  
 Is disadventrous, and quite fortunelesse: 100  
 Abroad, where change is, good may gotten  
 bee.'  
 The Foxe was glad, and quickly did agree:  
 So both resolv'd, the morrow next ensuing,  
 So soone as day appeared to peoples vewing.  
 On their intended journey to proceede;  
 And over night, whatso theretoo did neede  
 Each did prepare, in readines to bee.  
 The morrow next, so soone as one might  
 see  
 Light out of heavens windowes forth to  
 looke,  
 Both their habiliments unto them tooke, 110  
 And put themselves (a Gods name) on their  
 way.  
 Whenas the Ape, beginning well to wey  
 This hard adventure, thus began t' advise:  
 'Now read, Sir Reynold, as ye be right  
 wise,  
 What course ye weene is best for us to  
 take,  
 That for our selves we may a living make.  
 Whether shall we professe some trade or  
 skill?  
 Or shall we varie our device at will,  
 Even as new occasion appeares?  
 Or shall we tie our selves for certaine  
 yeares 120  
 To anie service, or to anie place?  
 For it behoves, ere that into the race  
 We enter, to resolve first hereupon.'  
 'Now surely, brother,' said the Foxe anon,  
 'Ye have this matter motioned in season:  
 For everie thing that is begun with reason  
 Will come by readie meanes unto his end;  
 But things miscounselled must needs mis-  
 wend.  
 Thus therefore I advize upon the case:  
 That not to anie certaine trade or place, 130  
 Nor anie man, we should our selves applie;  
 For why should he that is at libertie  
 Make himselfe bond? Sith then we are  
 free borne,  
 Let us all servile base subjection scorne;  
 And as we bee somes of the world so wide,  
 Let us our fathers heritage divide,  
 And chalenge to our selves our portions dew  
 Of all the patrimonie, which a few 132

Now hold in hugger mugger in their hand,  
And all the rest doo rob of good and land.  
For now a few have all, and all have nought,  
Yet all be brethren ylike dearly bought.  
There is no right in this partition,  
Ne was it so by institution  
Ordaigned first, ne by the law of Nature,  
But that she gave like blessing to each  
    creature,

As well of worldly livelode as of life,  
That there might be no difference nor strife,  
Nor ought cald mine or thine: thrice happie  
    then

Was the condition of mortall men. 150  
That was the golden age of Saturne old,  
But this might better be the world of gold:  
For without golde now nothing wilbe got.  
Therefore (if please you) this shalbe our  
    plot:

We will not be of anie occupation;  
Let such vile vassalls, borne to base voca-  
    tion,

Drudge in the world, and for their living  
    droyle,

Which have no wit to live withouten toyle.  
But we will walke about the world at plea-  
    sure,

Like two free men, and make our ease a  
    treasure. 160

Free men some beggers call; but they be  
    free,

And they which call them so more beggers  
    bee:

For they doo swinke and sweate to feed the  
    other,

Who live like lords of that which they doo  
    gather,

And yet doo never thanke them for the  
    same,

But as their due by nature doo it clame.

Such will we fashion both our selves to bee,  
Lords of the world, and so will wander free  
Where so us listeth, uncontrol'd of anie.

Hard is our hap, if we (emongst so manie)  
Light not on some that may our state  
    amend; 171

Sildome but some good commeth ere the  
    end.'

Well seemd the Ape to like this ordinaunce:  
Yet, well considering of the circumstaunce,  
As pausing in great doubt, awhile he staid,  
And afterwards with grave advizement  
    said:

'I cannot, my lief brother, like but well  
The purpose of the complot which ye tell:

For well I wot (compar'd to all the rest  
Of each degree) that beggers life is best:  
And they that thinke themselves the best  
    of all 181

Offt-times to begging are content to fall.  
But this I wot withall, that we shall ronne  
Into great daunger, like to bee undonne,  
Thus wildly to wander in the worlds eye,  
Without pasport or good warrantie,  
For feare, least we like rogues should be re-  
    puted,

And for eare marked beasts abroad be  
    bruted.

Therefore I read that we our counsell  
    call,

How to prevent this mischiefe ere it fall,  
And how we may, with most securitie, 191  
Beg amongst those that beggers doo defic.'  
'Right well, deere gossip, ye advized  
    have,'

Said then the Foxe, 'but I this doubt will  
    save:

For ere we farther passe, I will devise  
A pasport for us both in fittest wize,  
And by the names of souldiers us protect;  
That now is thought a civile begging  
    sect.

Be you the souldier, for you likest are  
For manly semblance, and small skill in  
    warre: 200

I will but wayte on you, and, as occasion  
Falls out, my selfe fit for the same will  
    fashion.'

The pasport ended, both they forward  
    went;

The Ape clad souldierlike, fit for th' in-  
    tent,

In a blew jacket with a crosse of redd  
And manie slits, as if that he had shedd  
Much blood through many wounds therein  
    receaved,

Which had the use of his right arme be-  
    reaved.

Upon his head an old Scotch cap he wore,  
With a plume feather all to peeces tore:  
His breeches were made after the new  
    cut, 211

*Al Portugese*, loose like an emptie gut;  
And his hose broken high above the heel-  
    ing,

And his shooes beaten out with traveling.  
But neither sword nor dagger he did  
    beare;

Seemes that no foes revengement he did  
    feare:

In stead of them a handsome bat he held,  
On which he leaned, as one farre in elde.  
Shame light on him, that through so false  
illusion

Doth turne the name of souldiers to abu-  
sion, 220

And that, which is the noblest mysterie,  
Brings to reproach and common infamie.  
Long they thus travailed, yet never met  
Adventure, which might them a working  
set:

Yet manie waies they sought, and manie  
tryed;

Yet for their purposes none fit espyed.  
At last they chaunst to meete upon the way  
A simple Husbandman in garments gray;  
Yet, though his vesture were but meane and  
base,

A good yeoman he was of honest place, 230  
And more for thrift did care than for gay  
clothing:

Gay without good is good hearts greatest  
loathing.

The Foxe, him spying, bad the Ape him  
dight

To play his part, for loe ! he was in sight  
That (if he er'd not) should them enter-  
taine,

And yeeld them timely profite for their  
paine.

Eftsoones the Ape himselfe gan up to  
reare,

And on his shoulders high his bat to beare,  
As if good service he were fit to doo;

But little thrift for him he did it too: 240  
And stoutly forward he his steps did straine,  
That like a handsome swaine it him be-  
came.

When as they nigh approached, that good  
man,

Seeing them wander loosly, first began  
T' enquire, of custome, what and whence  
they were.

To whom the Ape: 'I am a souldiere,  
That late in warres have spent my deerest  
blood,

And in long service lost both limbs and  
good;

And now, constrain'd that trade to over-  
give,

I driven am to seeke some meanes to  
live: 250

Which might it you in pitie please t' af-  
ford,

I would be readie, both in deed and word,

To doo you faithfull service all my dayes.  
This yron world' (that same he weeping  
sayes)

'Brings downe the stowtest hearts to lowest  
state:

For miserie doth bravest mindes abate,  
And make them seeke for that they wont  
to scorne,

Of fortune and of hope at once forlorne.'  
The honest man, that heard him thus com-  
plaine,

Was griev'd, as he had felt part of his  
paine; 260

And, well disposd' him some reliefe to  
showe,

Askt if in husbandrie he ought did knowe,  
To plough, to plant, to reap, to rake, to  
sowe,

To hedge, to ditch, to thrash, to thetch, to  
mowe;

Or to what labour els he was prepar'd:  
For husbands life is labourous and hard.  
Whenas the Ape him hard so much to  
talke

Of labour, that did from his liking balke,  
He would have slipt the collar handsonly,  
And to him said: 'Good sir, full glad  
am I 270

To take what paines may anie living wight:  
But my late maymed limbs lack wonted  
night

To doo their kindly services, as needeth:  
Scarce this right hand the mouth with diet  
feedeth;

So that it may no painfull worke endure,  
Ne to strong labour can it selfe enure.  
But if that anie other place you have,  
Which asks small paines, but thriftines  
to save,

Or care to overlooke, or trnst to gather,  
Ye may me trust as your owne ghostly  
father.' 280

With that the Husbandman gan him avize,  
That it for him were fittest exercise  
Cattell to keep, or grounds to oversee;  
And asked him, if he could willing bee  
To keep his sheep, or to attend his swyne,  
Or watch his mares, or take his charge of  
kyne.

'Gladly,' said he, 'what ever such like  
paine

Ye put on me, I will the same sustaine:  
But gladliest I of your fleecie sheepe  
(Might it yon please) would take on me the  
keep. 290



For ere that unto armes I me betooke,  
 Unto my fathers sheepe I usde to looke,  
 That yet the skill thereof I have not loste:  
 Thereto right well this curdog by my coste'  
 (Meaning the Foxe) 'will serve, my sheepe  
 to gather,  
 And drive to follow after their belwether.'  
 The Husbandinan was meanly well content,  
 Triall to make of his endeavourment,  
 And home him leading, lent to him the charge  
 Of all his flocke, with libertie full large, <sup>300</sup>  
 Giving accompt of th' annuall increce  
 Both of their lambes, and of their woolley  
 fleece.  
 Thus is this Ape become a shepherd  
 swaine,  
 And the false Foxe his dog: (God give  
 them paine)  
 For ere the yeare have halfe his course  
 out-run,  
 And doo returne from whence he first  
 begun,  
 They shall him make an ill accompt of  
 thrift.  
 Now whenas Time, flying with winges swift,  
 Expired had the terme, that these two  
 javels  
 Should render up a reckning of their  
 travels <sup>310</sup>  
 Unto their master, which it of them sought,  
 Exceedingly they troubled were in thought,  
 Ne wist what answer unto him to frame,  
 Ne how to scape great punishment, or  
 shame,  
 For their false treason and vile theeverie.  
 For not a lambe of all their flockes sup-  
 ply  
 Had they to shew; but ever as they bred,  
 They slue them, and upon their fleshes  
 fed:  
 For that disguised dog lov'd blood to spill,  
 And drew the wicked shepherd to his  
 will. <sup>320</sup>  
 So twixt them both they not a lambkin  
 left,  
 And when lambes fail'd, the old sheepes  
 lives they reft;  
 That how t' acquite themselves unto their  
 lord  
 They were in doubt, and flatly set aboard.  
 The Foxe then counsel'd th' Ape for to re-  
 quire  
 Respite till morrow t' auswere his desire:

For times delay new hope of helpe still  
 breeds.  
 The goodman granted, doubting nought  
 their deeds,  
 And bad, next day that all should readie be.  
 But they more subtill meaning had than  
 he: <sup>330</sup>  
 For the next morrowes meed they closely  
 ment,  
 For feare of afterclaps, for to prevent:  
 And that same evening, when all shrowded  
 were  
 In careles sleep, they, without care or  
 feare,  
 Cruelly fell upon their flock in folde,  
 And of them slew at pleasure what they  
 wolde:  
 Of which whenas they feasted had their  
 fill,  
 For a full complement of all their ill,  
 They stole away, and tooke their hastie  
 flight, <sup>339</sup>  
 Carried in clowdes of all-concealing night.  
 So was the Husbandman left to his losse,  
 And they unto their fortunes change to  
 tosse.  
 After which sort they wandered long  
 while,  
 Abusing manie through their cloaked guile:  
 That at the last they gan to be descryed  
 Of everie one, and all their sleights es-  
 pyed:  
 So as their begging now them failed quyte;  
 For none would give, but all men would  
 them wyte.  
 Yet would they take no paines to get their  
 living,  
 But seeke some other way to gaine by  
 giving, <sup>350</sup>  
 Much like to begging, but much better  
 named;  
 For manie beg, which are thereof ashamed.  
 And now the Foxe had gotten him a gowne,  
 And th' Ape a cassocke sidelong hanging  
 downe;  
 For they their occupation meant to change,  
 And now in other state abroad to range:  
 For since their souldiers pas no better  
 spedd,  
 They forg'd another, as for clerkes booke-  
 redd.  
 Who passing forth, as their adventures  
 fell,  
 Through manie haps, which needs not here  
 to tell, <sup>360</sup>

At length chaunst with a formall Priest to  
meete,  
Whom they in civill manner first did greete,  
And after askt an almes for Gods deare  
love.  
The man straight way his choler up did  
move,  
And with reproachfull tearmes gau them  
revile,  
For following that trade so base and vile;  
And askt what license or what pas they  
had.  
'Ah!' said the Ape, as sighing wondrous  
sad,  
'Its an hard case, when men of good de-  
serving  
Must either driven be perforce to sterving,  
Or asked for their pas by everie squib, <sup>371</sup>  
That list at will them to revile or snib:  
And yet (God wote) small oddes I often  
see  
Twixt them that aske, and them that asked  
bee.  
Natheles because you shall not us mis-  
deeme,  
But that we are as honest as we seeine,  
Yee shall our pasport at your pleasure see,  
And then ye will (I hope) well mooved bee.'  
Which when the Priest beheld, he vew'd it  
nere,  
As if therein some text he studying were,  
But little els (God wote) could thereof  
skill: <sup>381</sup>  
For read he could not evidence nor will,  
Ne tell a written word, ne write a letter,  
Ne make one tittle worse, ne make one  
better.  
Of such deep learning little had he neede,  
Ne yet of Latine, ne of Greeke, that  
breede  
Doubts mongst divines, and difference of  
texts,  
From whence arise diversitie of sects,  
And hatefull heresies, of God abhor'd.  
But this good Sir did follow the plaine  
word, <sup>390</sup>  
Ne medled with their controversies vaine:  
All his care was, his service well to saine,  
And to read homelies upon holidayes;  
When that was done, he might attend his  
playes:  
An easie life, and fit High God to please.  
He, having overlookt their pas at ease,  
Gan at the length them to rebuke againe,  
That no good trade of life did entertaine,

But lost their time in wandring loose  
abroad;  
Seeing the world, in which they bootles  
load, <sup>400</sup>  
Had wayes enough for all therein to live;  
Such grace did God unto his creatures  
give.  
Said then the Foxe: 'Who hath the world  
not tride  
From the right way full eath may wander  
wide.  
We are but novices, new come abroad,  
We have not yet the tract of anie troad,  
Nor on us taken anie state of life,  
But readie are of anie te make preife.  
Therefore might please you, which the  
world have proved,  
Us to advise, which forth but lately moved,  
Of some good course, that we might under-  
take, <sup>411</sup>  
Ye shall for ever us your bondmen make.'  
The Priest gan wexe halfe proud to be so  
praide,  
And thereby willing to affoord them aide;  
'It seemes,' said he, 'right well that ye be  
clerks,  
Both by your wittie words and by your  
werks.  
Is not that name enough to make a living  
To him that hath a whit of Natures giv-  
ing?  
How manie honest men see ye arize  
Daylie thereby, and grow to goodly prize?  
To deanes, to archdeacons, to commissar-  
ies, <sup>421</sup>  
To lords, to principalls, to prebendaries;  
All jolly prelates, worthie rule to beare,  
Who ever them envie: yet spite bites neare.  
Why should ye doubt, then, but that ye like-  
wise  
Might unto some of those in time arise?  
In the meane time to live in good estate,  
Loving that love, and hating those that hate.  
Being some honest curate, or some vicker,  
Content with little in condition sicker.' <sup>430</sup>  
'Ah! but,' said th' Ape, 'the charge is  
wondrous great,  
To feed mens soules, and hath an heavie  
threat.'  
'To feede mens soules,' quoth he, 'is not in  
man:  
For they must feed themselves, doo what  
we can.  
We are but charg'd to lay the meate before:  
Eate they that list, we need to doo no more.

But God it is that feedes them with his  
grace,  
The bread of life powr'd downe from hea-  
venly place.

Therefore said he, that with the budding rod  
Did rule the Jewes, *All shalbe taught of  
God.* 440

That same hath Jesus Christ now to him  
raught,

By whom the flock is rightly fed and taught:  
He is the shepheard, and the priest is hee;  
We but his shepheard swaines ordain'd to  
bee.

Therefore herewith doo not your selfe dis-  
may;

Ne is the paines so great, but beare ye may;  
For not so great, as it was wont of yore,  
It's now a dayes, ne halfe so streight and  
sore.

They whilome used duly everie day  
Their service and their holie things to say,  
At morne and even, besides their anthemes  
sweete, 451

Their penie masses, and their complynes  
meete,

Their dirges, their trentals, and their shrifts,  
Their memories, their singings, and their  
gifts.

Now all those needlesse works are laid  
away;

Now once a weeke, upon the Sabbath day,  
It is enough to doo our small devotion,  
And then to follow any merrie motion.

Ne are we tyde to fast, but when we list,  
Ne to weare garments base of wollen  
twist, 460

But with the finest silkes us to aray,  
That before God we may appeare more gay,  
Resembling Aarons glorie in his place:

For farre unfit it is, that person base  
Should with vile cloaths approach Gods  
majestie,

Whom no uncleannes may approachen nie:  
Or that all men, which anie master serve,  
Good garments for their service should de-  
serve,

But he that serves the Lord of Hoasts Most  
High,

And that in highest place, t' approach him  
nigh, 470

And all the peoples prayers to present  
Before his throne, as on ambassage sent  
Both too and fro, should not deserve to  
weare

A garment better than of wooll or heare.

Beside, we may have lying by our sides  
Our lovely lasses, or bright shining brides:  
We be not tyde to wilfull chastitie,  
But have the gospell of free libertie.'

By that he ended had his ghostly sermon,  
The Foxe was well induc'd to be a parson;  
And of the Priest eftsoones gan to enquire,  
How to a benefice he might aspire. 482

'Marie, there,' said the Priest, 'is arte in-  
deed:

Much good deep learning one thereout may  
reed;

For that the ground-worke is, and end of  
all,

How to obtaine a beneficiall.  
First therefore, when ye have in handsome  
wise

Your selfe attyred, as you can devise,  
Then to some noble man your selfe applye,  
Or other great one in the worldes eye, 490  
That hath a zealous disposition  
To God, and so to his religion.

There must thou fashion eke a godly zeale,  
Such as no carpers may contrayre reveale:  
For each thing fained ought more warie  
bee.

There thou must walke in sober gravitee,  
And seeme as saintlike as Saint Radegund:  
Fast much, pray oft, looke lowly on the  
ground,

And unto everie one doo curtesie meeke:  
These lookes (nought saying) doo a bene-  
fice seeke, 500

And be thou sure one not to lacke or long.  
But if thee list unto the court to throng,  
And there to hunt after the hoped pray,  
Then must thou thee dispose another way:  
For there thou needs must learne to laugh,  
to lie,

To face, to forge, to scoffe, to companie,  
To crouche, to please, to be a beetle stock  
Of thy great masters will, to scorne, or  
mock:

So maist thou chaunce mock out a benefice,  
Unlesse thou canst one conjure by device,  
Or cast a figure for a bishoprick: 511  
And if one could, it were but a schoole  
trick.

These be the wayes, by which without re-  
ward

Livings in court be gotten, though full hard.  
For nothing there is done without a fee:  
The courtier needes must recompenced bee  
With a benevolence, or have in gage  
The primitias of your parsonage:



Scarse can a bishoprick forpas them by,  
 But that it must be gelt in privitie. <sup>520</sup>  
 Doo not thou therefore seeke a living there,  
 But of more private persons seeke els-  
 where,  
 Whereas thou maist compound a better  
 penie,  
 Ne let thy learning question'd be of anie.  
 For some good gentleman, that hath the  
 right  
 Unto his church for to present a wight,  
 Will cope with thee in reasonable wise;  
 That if the living yerely doo arise  
 To fortie pound, that then his yongest sonne  
 Shall twentie have, and twentie thou hast  
 wonne: <sup>530</sup>  
 Thou hast it wonne, for it is of franke gift,  
 And he will care for all the rest to shift;  
 Both that the bishop may admit of thee,  
 And that therein thou maist maintained bee.  
 This is the way for one that is unlearn'd  
 Living to get, and not to be discern'd.  
 But they that are great clerkes have nearer  
 wayes,  
 For learning sake to living them to raise:  
 Yet manie eke of them (God wote) are  
 driven,  
 T' accept a benefice in peeces riven. <sup>540</sup>  
 How saist thou (friend) have I not well dis-  
 courst  
 Upon this common place (though plaine,  
 not wourst) ?  
 Better a short tale than a bad long shriving.  
 Needes anie more to learne to get a living ?'  
 'Now sure, and by my hallidome,' quoth he,  
 'Ye a great master are in your degree:  
 Great thanks I yeeld you for your dis-  
 cipline,  
 And doo not doubt, but duly to encline  
 My wits theretoo, as ye shall shortly heare.'  
 The Priest him wisht good speed, and well  
 to fare. <sup>550</sup>  
 So parted they, as eithers way them led.  
 But th' Ape and Foxe ere long so well them  
 sped,  
 Through the Priests holesome counsell  
 lately tought,  
 And throug their own faire handling wisely  
 wrought,  
 That they a benefice twixt them obtained;  
 And craftie Reynold was a priest ordained,  
 And th' Ape his parish clarke procur'd to  
 bee.  
 Then made they reveill route and goodly  
 glee. <sup>558</sup>

But ere long time had passed, they so ill  
 Did order their affaires, that th' evill will  
 Of all their parishners they had constraind;  
 Who to the ordinarie of them complain'd,  
 How fowlie they their offices abnsd',  
 And them of crimes and heresies accusd';  
 That pursivants he often for them sent:  
 But they neglected his commaundement.  
 So long persisted obstinate and bolde,  
 Till at the length he published to holde  
 A visitation, and them cyted thether:  
 Then was high time their wits about to  
 geather. <sup>570</sup>  
 What did they then, but made a composition  
 With their next neighbor priest, for light  
 condition,  
 To whom their living they resigned quight  
 For a few pence, and ran away by night.  
 So passing through the countrey in disguise,  
 They fled farre off, where none might them  
 surprize,  
 And after that long straied here and there,  
 Through everie field and forrest farre and  
 nere;  
 Yet never found occasion for their tourne,  
 But, almost sterv'd, did much lament and  
 mourne. <sup>580</sup>  
 At last they channst to meete upon the way  
 The Mule, all deckt in goodly rich aray,  
 With bells and bosses, that full lowdly rung,  
 And costly trappings, that to ground downe  
 hung.  
 Lowly they him saluted in meeke wise;  
 But he through pride and fatnes gan despise  
 Their meanesse; scarce vouchsafte them to  
 requite.  
 Whereat the Foxe deep groning in his sprite,  
 Said: 'Ah, Sir Mule! now blessed be the  
 day,  
 That I see you so goodly and so gay <sup>590</sup>  
 In your attyres, and eke your silken hyde  
 Fil'd with round flesh, that everie bone  
 doth hide.  
 Seemes that in fruitfull pastures ye doo live,  
 Or Fortune doth you seeret favour give.'  
 'Foolish Foxe!' said the Mule, 'thy  
 wretched need  
 Praiseth the thing that doth thy sorrow  
 breed.  
 For well I weene, thou canst not but envie  
 My wealth, compar'd to thine owne mis-  
 erie,  
 That art so leane and meagre waxen late,  
 That scarce thy legs uphold thy feeble  
 gate.' <sup>600</sup>

'Ay me!' said then the Foxe, 'whom evill  
hap  
Unworthy in such wretchednes doth wrap,  
And makes the scorne of other beasts to  
bee.

But read (faire sir, of grace) from whence  
come yee?

Or what of tidings you abroad doo heare?  
Newes may perhaps some good unweeting  
beare.'

'From royall court I lately came,' said  
he,

'Where all the braverie that eye may see,  
And all the happinesse that heart desire,  
Is to be found; he nothing can admire, <sup>610</sup>  
That hath not seene that heavens portrac-  
ture:

But tidings there is none, I you assure,  
Save that which common is, and knowne to  
all,

That courtiers as the tide doo rise and fall.'

'But tell us,' said the Ape, 'we doo you  
pray,

Who now in court doth beare the greatest  
sway:

That, if such fortune doo to us befall,  
We may seeke favour of the best of all.'

'Marie,' said he, 'the highest now in grace,  
Be the wilde beasts, that swiftest are in  
chase; <sup>620</sup>

For in their speedie course and nimble  
flight

The Lyon now doth take the most delight:  
But chieffie joyes on foote them to beholde,  
Enchaste with chaine and circulet of golde.  
So wilde a beast so tame ytaught to bee,  
And buxome to his bands, is joy to see;  
So well his golden circlet him beseemeth:  
But his late chayne his Liege unmeete es-  
teemeth;

For so brave beasts she loveth best to see  
In the wilde forrest raunging fresh and  
free. <sup>630</sup>

Therefore if fortune thee in court to live,  
In case thou ever there wilt hope to thrive,  
To some of these thou must thy selfe  
apply:

Els as a thistle-downe in th' ayre doth flie,  
So vainly shalt thou too and fro be tost,  
And loose thy labour and thy fruitles cost.  
And yet full few which follow them, I see,  
For vertues bare regard advaunced bee,  
But either for some gainfull benefit,  
Or that they may for their owne turnes be  
fit. <sup>640</sup>

Nath'les, perhaps ye things may handle soe,  
That ye may better thrive than thousands  
moe.'

'But,' said the Ape, 'how shall we first  
come in,

That after we may favour seeke to win?'

'How els,' said he, 'but with a good bold  
face,

And with big words, and with a stately  
page,

That men may thinke of you, in generall,  
That to be in you, which is not at all:

For not by that which is, the world now  
deemeth,

(As it was wont) but by that same that  
seemeth. <sup>650</sup>

Ne do I doubt, but that ye well can fashion  
Your selves theretoo, according to occa-  
sion:

So fare ye well; good courtiers may ye  
bee.'

So, prouddie neighing, from them parted  
hee.

Then gan this craftie couple to devise,  
How for the court themselves they might  
aguize:

For thither they themselves meant to ad-  
dresse,

In hope to finde there happier successe.

So well they shifted, that the Ape anon  
Himselfe had cloathed like a gentleman, <sup>660</sup>  
And the slie Foxe, as like to be his groome;  
That to the court in seemly sort they come.  
Where the fond Ape, himselfe uprearing hy  
Upon his tiptoes, stalketh stately by,  
As if he were some great magnifico,  
And boldlie doth amongst the boldest go;  
And his man Reynold, with fine counterfe-  
saunce,

Supports his credite and his countenance.  
Then gan the courtiers gaze on everie side,

And stare on him, with big lookes basen  
wide, <sup>670</sup>

Wondring what mister wight he was, and  
whence:

For he was clad in strange accoustrements,  
Fashion'd with quaint devises never seene  
In court before, yet there all fashions beene:  
Yet he them in newfangelnesse did pas.

But his behaviour altogether was  
*Alla Turchesca*, much the more admyr'd,  
And his lookes loftie, as if he aspyr'd

To dignitie, and sdeign'd the low degree;  
That all which did such strangenesse in  
him see <sup>680</sup>

By secrete meanes gan of his state enquire,  
 And privily his servant thereto hire:  
 Who, throughly arm'd against such cover-  
   ture,  
 Reported unto all, that he was sure  
 A noble gentleman of high regard,  
 Which through the world had with long  
   travel far'd,  
 And seene the manners of all beasts on  
   ground;  
 Now here arriv'd, to see if like he found.  
 Thus did the Ape at first him credit gaine,  
 Which afterwards he wisely did maintaine  
 With gallant showe, and daylie more aug-  
   ment 691  
 Through his fine feates and courtly com-  
   plement;  
 For he could play, and daunce, and vauce,  
   and spring,  
 And all that els pertaines to reveling,  
 Onely through kindly aptnes of his joynts.  
 Besides he could doo manie other poynts,  
 The which in court him served to good  
   stead:  
 For he mongst ladies could their fortunes  
   read  
 Out of their hands, and merie leasings  
   tell,  
 And juggle finely, that became him well:  
 But he so light was at legier demaine, 701  
 That what he toucht came not to light  
   again;  
 Yet would he laugh it out, and proudly  
   looke,  
 And tell them that they greatly him mis-  
   tooke.  
 So would he scoffe them out with mockerie,  
 For he therein had great felicitie;  
 And with sharp quips joy'd others to deface,  
 Thinking that their disgracing did him  
   grace:  
 So whilst that other like vaine wits he  
   pleased  
 And made to laugh, his heart was greatly  
   eased. 710  
 But the right gentle minde would bite his  
   lip,  
 To heare the javell so good men to nip:  
 For though the vulgar yeeld an open eare,  
 And common courtiers love to gybe and  
   fleare  
 At everie thing, which they heare spoken  
   ill,  
 And the best speaches with ill meaning  
   spill;

Yet the brave courtier, in whose beauteous  
   thought  
 Regard of honour harbours more than  
   ought,  
 Doth loath such base condition, to backbite  
 Anies good name for envie or despite. 720  
 He stands on tearmes of honourable minde,  
 Ne will be carried with the common winde  
 Of courts inconstant mutabilitie,  
 Ne after everie tattling fable flie;  
 But heares and sees the follies of the rest,  
 And thereof gathers for himselfe the best.  
 He will not creeze, nor crouche with  
   fained face,  
 But walkes upright with comely stedfast  
   pace,  
 And unto all doth yeeld due curtesie;  
 But not with kissed hand belowe the  
   knee, 730  
 As that same apish crue is wont to doo:  
 For he disdaines himselfe t' embase there-  
   too.  
 He hates fowle leasings, and vile flatterie,  
 Two filthie blots in noble gentrie;  
 And lothefull idlenes he doth detest,  
 The canker worme of everie gentle brest;  
 The which to banish with faire exercise  
 Of knightly feates, he daylie doth devise:  
 Now menaging the mouthes of stubborne  
   steedes,  
 Now practising the prooffe of warlike  
   deedes, 740  
 Now his bright armes assaying, now his  
   speare,  
 Now the nigh aymed ring away to beare:  
 At other times he casts to sew the chace  
 Of swift wilde beasts, or ruine on foote a  
   race,  
 T' enlarge his breath (large breath in  
   armes most needfull)  
 Or els by wrestling to wex strong and  
   heedfull,  
 Or his stiffe armes to stretch with eughen  
   bowe,  
 And manly legs, still passing too and fro,  
 Without a gowned beast him fast beside;  
 A vaine ensample of the Persian pride, 750  
 Who after he had womme th' Assyrian foe,  
 Did ever after scorne on foote to goe.  
 Thus when this courtly gentleman with  
   toyle  
 Himselfe hath wearied, he doth recoyle  
 Unto his rest, and there with sweete de-  
   light  
 Of musicks skill revives his toyled spright;



Or els with loves and ladies gentle sports,  
 The joy of youth, himselfe he recomforts:  
 Or lastly, when the bodie list to pause,  
 His minde unto the Muses he withdraws;  
 Sweete Ladie Muses, ladies of delight, <sup>761</sup>  
 Delights of life, and ornaments of light:  
 With whom he close confers, with wise  
 discourse,

Of Natures workes, of heavens continuall  
 course,

Of forreine lands, of people different,  
 Of kingdomes change, of divers govern-  
 ment,

Of dreadfull battailes of renowned knights;  
 With which he kindleth his ambitious  
 sprights

To like desire and praise of noble fame,  
 The onely upshot whereto he doth ayme.  
 For all his minde on honour fixed is, <sup>771</sup>  
 To which he levels all his purposis,  
 And in his princes service spends his dayes,  
 Not so much for to gaine, or for to raise  
 Himselfe to high degree, as for his grace,  
 And in his liking to winne worthe place,  
 Through due deserts and comely earriage,  
 In whatso please employ his personage,  
 That may be matter meete to gaine him  
 praise;

For he is fit to use in all assayes, <sup>780</sup>  
 Whether for armes and warlike amenaunce,  
 Or else for wise and civill governaunce.

For he is praetiz'd well in polieie,  
 And thereto doth his courting most applie:  
 To learne the enterdeale of princes strange,  
 To marke th' intent of counsells, and the  
 echange

Of states, and eke of private men some-  
 while,

Supplanted by fine falshood and faire guile;  
 Of all the which he gathereth what is fit  
 T' enrich the storehouse of his powerfull  
 wit, <sup>790</sup>

Which through wise speaches and grave  
 conference

He daylie eekes, and brings to excellence.  
 Such is the rightfull courtier in his kinde:  
 But unto such the Ape lent not his minde;  
 Such were for him no fit companions,  
 Such would descrie his lewd conditions:  
 But the yong lustie gallants he did chose  
 To follow, meete to whom he might dis-  
 close

His witlesse pleasance and ill pleasing vaine.  
 A thousand wayes he them could enter-  
 taine, <sup>800</sup>

With all the thriftles games that may be  
 found;

With mumming and with masking all  
 around,

With dice, with cards, with balliards farre  
 unfit,

With shuttelcocks, misseeming manlie wit,  
 With courtizans, and costly riotize,

Whereof still somewhat to his share did  
 rize:

Ne, them to pleasure, would he sometimes  
 scorne

A pandares coate (so basely was he borne);  
 Thereto he could fine loving verses frame,  
 And play the poet oft. But ah! for shame,  
 Let not sweete poets praise, whose onely  
 pride <sup>811</sup>

Is vertue to advaunee, and vice deride,  
 Be with the worke of losels wit defamed,  
 Ne let such verses poetrie be named.

Yet he the name on him would rashly take,  
 Maugre the saered Muses, and it make  
 A servant to the vile affection

Of such as he depended most upon,  
 And with the sugrie sweete thereof allure  
 Chast ladies eares to fantasies impure. <sup>820</sup>

To such delights the noble wits he led  
 Which him reliev'd, and their vaine humours  
 fed

With fruitles follies and unsound delights.  
 But if perhaps into their noble sprights  
 Desire of honor or brave thought of armes  
 Did ever creepe, then with his wicked  
 charmes

And strong conceits he would it drive  
 away,

Ne suffer it to house there halfe a day.

And whenso love of letters did inspire  
 Their gentle wits, and kindly wise desire, <sup>830</sup>  
 That chieffie doth each noble minde adorne,  
 Then he would seoffe at learning, and eke  
 scorne

The sectaries thereof, as people base  
 And simple men, which never came in  
 place

Of worlds affaires, but, in darke eorners  
 mewd,

Muttred of matters, as their bookes them  
 shewd,

Ne other knowledge ever did attaine,  
 But with their gownes their gravitie main-  
 taine.

From them he would his impudent lewde  
 speach

Against Gods holie ministers oft reach, <sup>840</sup>

And mocke divines and their profession:  
What else then did he by progression,  
But mocke High God himselve, whom they  
professe?

But what car'd he for God, or godlinesse?  
All his care was himselve how to advaunce,  
And to uphold his courtly countenance;  
By all the cunning meanes he could devise;  
Were it by honest wayes, or otherwise,  
He made small choyce: yet sure his honestie  
Got him small gaines, but shameles flat-  
terie, 850

And filthie brocage, and unseemly shifts,  
And borowe base, and some good ladies gifts:  
But the best helpe, which chiefly him sus-  
tain'd,

Was his man Raynolds purchase which he  
gain'd.

For he was school'd by kinde in all the skill  
Of close conveyance, and each practise ill  
Of coosinage and cleanly knaverie,  
Which oft maintain'd his masters braverie.  
Besides, he usde another slipprie slight,  
In taking on himselve, in common sight, 860  
False personages fit for everie sted,  
With which he thousands cleanly coosined:  
Now like a merchant, merchants to deceave,  
With whom his credite he did often leave  
In gage, for his gay masters hopelesse dett:  
Now like a lawyer, when he land would lett,  
Or sell fee-simples in his masters name,  
Which he had never, nor ought like the same:  
Then would he be a broker, and draw in  
Both wares and money, by exchange to  
win: 870

Then would he seeme a farmer, that would  
sell

Bargaines of woods, which he did lately fell,  
Or corne, or cattell, or such other ware,  
Thereby to coosin men not well aware;  
Of all the which there came a secret fee  
To th' Ape, that he his countenance might  
bee.

Besides all this, he usd' oft to beguile  
Poore suters, that in court did haunt some  
while:

For he would learne their busines secretly,  
And then informe his master hastely, 880  
That he by meanes might cast them to pre-  
vent,

And beg the sute the which the other ment.  
Or otherwise false Reynold would abuse  
The simple suter, and wish him to chuse  
His master, being one of great regard  
In court, to compas anie sute not hard,

In case his paines were recompenst with  
reason:

So would he worke the silly man by trea-  
son

To buy his masters frivolous good will,  
That had not power to doo him good or  
ill. 890

So pitifull a thing is suters state.  
Most miserable man, whom wicked fate  
Hath brought to court, to sue for had ywist,  
That few have found, and manie one hath  
mist!

Full little knowest thou that hast not tride,  
What hell it is, in suing long to hide:

To loose good dayes, that might be better  
spent;

To wast long nights in pensive discontent;  
To speed to day, to be put back to morrow;  
To feed on hope, to pine with feare and  
sorrow; 900

To have thy Princes grace, yet want her  
Peeres;

To have thy asking, yet waite manie yeeres;  
To fret thy soule with crosses and with  
cares;

To cate thy heart through comfortlesse  
dispaire;

To fawne, to crowche, to waite, to ride, to  
ronne,

To spend, to give, to want, to be undonne.  
Unhappie wight, borne to desastrous end,  
That doth his life in so long tendance  
spend!

Who ever leaves sweete home, where meane  
estate

In safe assurance, without strife or hate, 910  
Findes all things needfull for contentment  
meeke,

And will to court, for shadowes vaine to  
seeke,

Or hope to gaine, himselve will a daw trie:  
That curse God send unto mine enemie!  
For none but such as this bold Ape unblest  
Can ever thrive in that unluckie quest;  
Or such as hath a Reynold to his man,  
That by his shifts his master furnish can.  
But yet this Foxe could not so closely hide  
His craftie feates, but that they were de-  
scribe 920

At length, by such as sate in justice seate,  
Who for the same him fowlie did entreate;  
And having worthily him punished,  
Out of the court for ever banished.  
And now the Ape, wanting his huckster man,  
That wont provide his necessaries, gan

To growe into great lacke, ne could up-  
holde  
His countenance iu those his garments  
olde;

Ne new ones could he easily provide,  
Though all men him uncased gan deride,  
Like as a puppit placed in a play, <sup>931</sup>  
Whose part once past all men bid take away:  
So that he driven was to great distresse,  
And shortly brought to hopelesse wretch-  
ednesse.

Then, closely as he might, he cast to leave  
The court, not asking any passe or leave;  
But ran away in his rent rags by night,  
Ne ever stayd in place, ne spake to wight,  
Till that the Foxe, his copesmate, he had  
found;

To whome complayning his unhappy  
stound, <sup>940</sup>  
At last againe with him in travell joynd,  
And with him far'd some better chaunce  
to fynde.

So in the world long time they wandered,  
And mickle want and hardnesse suffered;  
That them repented much so foolishly  
To come so farre to seeke for misery,  
And leave the sweetnes of contented home,  
Though eating hipps and drinking watry  
fome.

Thus as they them complayned too and fro,  
Whilst through the forest rechlesse they  
did goe, <sup>950</sup>

Lo! where they spide, how in a gloomy  
glade

The Lyon sleeping lay in secret shade,  
His crowne and scepter lying him beside,  
And having doft for heate his dreadfull  
hide:

Which when they sawe, the Ape was sore  
afrayde,

And would have fled with terror all dis-  
mayde.

But him the Foxe with hardy words did  
stay,

And bad him put all cowardize away:  
For now was time (if ever they would  
hope)

To ayme their counsels to the fairest  
scope, <sup>960</sup>

And them for ever highly to advaunce,  
In case the good, which their owne happie  
chaunce

Them freely offred, they would wisely take.  
Scarse could the Ape yet speake, so did he  
quake:

Yet, as he could, he askt how good might  
growe,

Where nought but dread and death do  
seeme in show.

'Now,' sayd he, 'whiles the Lyon sleepeth  
sound,

May we his crowne and mace take from  
the ground,

And eke his skinne, the terror of the wood,  
Wherewith we may our selves (if we thinke  
good) <sup>970</sup>

Make kings of beasts, and lords of forests  
all,

Subject unto that powre imperiall.'

'Ah! but,' sayd the Ape, 'who is so bold a  
wretch,

That dare his hardy hand to those out-  
stretch,

When as he knowes his meede, if he be  
spide,

To be a thousand deathes, and shame be-  
side?'

'Fond Ape!' sayd then the Foxe, 'into  
whose brest

Never crept thought of honor nor brave  
gest,

Who will not venture life a king to be,  
And rather rule and raigne in soveraign  
see, <sup>980</sup>

Than dwell in dust inglorious and bace,  
Where none shall name the number of his  
place?

One joyous houre in blisfull happines,  
I chose before a life of wretchednes.

Be therefore counselled herein by me,  
And shake off this vile harted cowardree.

If he awake, yet is not death the next,  
For we may coulor it with some pretext  
Of this or that, that may excuse the cryme:  
Else we may flye; thou to a tree mayst  
clyme, <sup>990</sup>

And I creepe under ground; both from his  
reach:

Therefore be rul'd to doo as I doo teach.'

The Ape, that earst did nought but chill  
and quake,

Now gan some courage unto him to take,  
And was content to attempt that enterprise,  
Tickled with glorie and rash covetise.

But first gan question, whither should as-  
say

Those royall ornaments to steale away.

'Marie, that shall your selfe,' quoth he  
theretoo,

'For ye be fine and nimble it to doo; <sup>1000</sup>



Of all the beasts which in the forrests bee  
Is not a fitter for this turne than yee:

Therefore, mine owne deare brother, take  
good hart,

And ever thinke a kingdome is your part.<sup>7</sup>  
Loath was the Ape, though praised, to ad-  
venter,

Yet faintly gan into his worke to enter,  
Afraid of everie leafe that stir'd him by,  
And everie stick that underneath did ly:  
Upon his tiptoes nicely he up went,<sup>1009</sup>  
For making noyse, and still his eare he lent  
To everie sound that under heaven blew;  
Now went, now stopt, now crept, now back-  
ward drew,

That it good sport had been him to have  
eyde.

Yet at the last (so well he him applyde)  
Through his fine handling and cleanly play  
He all those royall signes had stolne away,  
And with the Foxes helpe them borne aside  
Into a secret corner unespide.

Whether whenas they came, they fell at  
words,

Whether of them shuld be the lord of  
lords:<sup>1020</sup>

For th' Ape was stryfull and ambitious,  
And the Foxe guilefull and most covetous;  
That neither pleased was, to have the rayne  
Twixt them divided into even twaine,  
But either algates would be lord alone:

For love and lordship bide no paragone.  
'I am most worthie,' said the Ape, 'sith I  
For it did put my life in jeopardie:

Thereto I am in person and in stature  
Most like a man, the lord of everie crea-  
ture;<sup>1030</sup>

So that it seemeth I was made to raigne,  
And borne to be a kingly soveraigne.'

'Nay,' said the Foxe, 'Sir Ape, you are  
astray:

For though to steale the diademe away  
Were the worke of your nimble hand, yet I  
Did first devise the plot by pollicie;  
So that it wholly springeth from my wit:  
For which also I claime my selfe more fit  
Than you to rule: for government of state  
Will without wisdoms soone be ruinate.

And where ye claime your selfe for out-  
ward shape<sup>1041</sup>

Most like a man, man is not like an ape  
In his chiefe parts, that is, in wit and spirite;  
But I therein most like to him doo merite,  
For my slie wyles and subtill craftinesse,  
The title of the kingdome to possesse.

Nath'les (my brother) since we passed  
are

Unto this point, we will appease our jarre;  
And I with reason meete will rest content,  
That ye shall have both crowne and gov-  
ernment,<sup>1050</sup>

Upon condition that ye ruled bee  
In all affaires, and counselled by mee;  
And that ye let none other ever drawe  
Your minde from me, but keepe this as a  
lawe:

And hereupon an oath unto me plight.<sup>7</sup>  
The Ape was glad to end the strife so light,  
And thereto swore: for who would not oft  
swear,

And oft unswear, a diademe to beare?  
Then freely up those royall spoyles he  
tooke;

Yet at the Lyons skin he inly quooke;<sup>1060</sup>  
But it dissembled; and upon his head  
The crowne, and on his backe the skin, he  
did,

And the false Foxe him helped to array.  
Then when he was all dight he tooke his  
way

Into the forest, that he might be seene  
Of the wilde beasts in his new glory sheene.  
There the two first whome he encountred  
were

The Sheepe and th' Asse, who, stricken both  
with feare

At sight of him, gan fast away to flye;  
But unto them the Foxe alowd did cry,<sup>1070</sup>  
And in the kings name bad them both to  
stay,

Upon the payne that thereof follow may.  
Hardly naythles were they restrayned so,  
Till that the Foxe forth toward them did  
goe,

And there dissuaded them from needlesse  
feare,

For that the king did favour to them beare;  
And therefore dreadles bad them come to  
corte:

For no wild beasts should do them any  
torte

There or abroad, ne would his Majestye  
Use them but well, with gracious clemen-  
cy,<sup>1080</sup>

As whome he knew to him both fast and  
true.

So he perswaded them, with homage due  
Themselves to humble to the Ape pros-  
trate,

Who, gently to them bowing in his gate,

Receyved them with chearefull entertayne.  
Thenceforth proceeding with his princely  
trayne,

He shortly met the Tygre, and the Bore,  
Which with the simple Camell rag'd sore  
In bitter words, seeking to take occasion,  
Upon his fleshly corpse to make invasion: 1090  
But soone as they this mock-king did espy,  
Their troublous strife they stinted by and  
by,

Thinking indeed that it the Lyen was.  
He then, to prove whether his powre would  
pas

As currant, sent the Foxe to them streight  
way,

Commaunding them their cause of strife  
bewray;

And, if that wrong on eyther side there  
were,

That he should warne the wronger to ap-  
peare

The morrow next at court, it to defend; 1099  
In the meane time upon the king t' attend.

The subtle Foxe so well his message sayd,  
That the proud beasts him readily obeyd:  
Whereby the Ape in wondrous stomack  
woxe,

Strongly encorag'd by the crafty Foxe;  
That king indeed himselfe he shortly  
thought,

And all the beasts him feared as they ought,  
And followed unto his palaice hye;

Where taking conge, each one by and by  
Departed to his home in dreadfull awe,

Full of the feared sight, which late they  
sawe. 1110

The Ape, thus seized of the regall throne,  
Eftsones by counsell of the Foxe alone  
Gan to provide for all things in assurance,  
That so his rule might lenger have endur-  
ance.

First, to his gate he pointed a strong gard,  
That none might enter but with issue hard:

Then, for the safegard of his personage,  
He did appoint a warlike equipage

Of forreine beasts, not in the forest bred,  
But part by land and part by water fed; 1120

For tyrannie is with strange ayde supported.  
Then unto him all monstrous beasts resorted

Bred of two kindes, as Griffons, Minotaures,  
Crocodiles, Dragons, Beavers, and Cen-  
taures:

With those himselfe he strenghtned mighte-  
lie,

That feare he neede no force of enemye.

Then gan he rule and tyrannize at will,  
Like as the Foxe did guide his graceles  
skill,

And all wylde beasts made vassals of his  
pleasures,

And with their spoyle enlarg'd his private  
treasures. 1130

No care of justice, nor no rule of reason,  
No temperance, nor no regard of season,  
Did thenceforth ever enter in his minde,  
But crueltie, the signe of currish kinde,  
And sdeignfull pride, and wilfull arro-  
gaunce;

Such followes those whom fortune doth ad-  
vaunce.

But the false Foxe most kindly plaid his  
part:

For whatsoever mother wit or arte  
Could worke, he put in prooffe: no practise  
slie,

No counterpoint of cunning policie, 1140  
No reach, no breach, that might him profit  
bring,

But he the same did to his purpose wring.  
Nought suffered he the Ape to give or  
graunt,

But through his hand must passe the fiaunt.  
All offices, all leases by him leapt,

And of them all whatso he likte he kept.  
Justice he solde injustice for to buy,

And for to purchase for his progeny.  
Ill might it prosper, that ill gotten was,

But, so he got it, little did he pas. 1150  
He fed his cubs with fat of all the soyle,

And with the sweete of others sweating  
toyle;

He crammed them with crumbs of bene-  
fices,

And fild their mouthes with meeds of male-  
fices;

He cloathed them with all colours save  
white,

And loded them with lordships and with  
might,

So much as they were able well to beare,  
That with the weight their backs nigh  
broken were.

He chaffred chayres in which churchmen  
were set,

And breach of lawes to privie ferme did  
let; 1160

No statute so established might bee,  
Nor ordinaunce so needfull, but that hee  
Would violate, though not with violence

Yet under colour of the confidence

The which the Ape reposd' in him alone,  
And reekned him the kingdomes corner  
stone.

And ever, wher he ought would bring to  
pas,

His long experience the platforme was:  
And when he ought not pleasing would put  
by,

The cloke was care of thrift, and hus-  
bandry, 1170

For to encrease the common treasures store.  
But his owne treasure he encreased more,  
And lifted up his loftie towres thereby,  
That they began to threat the neighbour  
sky;

The whiles the princes pallaces fell fast  
To ruine, (for what thing can ever last?)  
And whilst the other peeres, for povertie,  
Were forst their auncient houses to let  
lie,

And their olde castles to the ground to fall,  
Which their forefathers, famous over  
all, 1180

Had founded for the kingdomes ornament,  
And for their memories long monument.  
But he no count made of nobilitie,

Nor the wilde beasts whom armes did  
glorifie,

The realmes chiefe strength and girlond of  
the crowne.

All these through fained crimes he thrust  
adowne,

Or made them dwell in darknes of dis-  
grace:

For none but whom he list might come in  
place.

Of men of armes he had but small regard,  
But kept them lowe, and streigned verie  
hard. 1190

For men of learning little he esteemed;  
His wisdom he above their learning  
deemed.

As for the raseall common, least he cared;  
For not so common was his bountie shared:  
'Let God,' said he, 'if please, care for the  
manie,

I for my selfe must care before els anie.'  
So did he good to none, to manie ill,  
So did he all the kingdome rob and pill,  
Yet none durst speake, ne none durst of  
him plaine;

So great he was in grace, and rich through  
gaine. 1200

Ne would he anie let to have acesse  
Unto the prince, but by his owne addresse:

For all that els did come were sure to  
faile;

Yet would he further none but for availe.  
For on a time the Sheepe, to whom of  
yore

The Foxe had promised of friendship store,  
What time the Ape the kingdome first did  
gaine,

Came to the court, her case there to com-  
plaine;

How that the Wolfe, her mortall enemye,  
Had sithence slaine her lambe most cruel-  
lie; 1210

And therefore crav'd to come unto the  
king,

To let him knowe the order of the thing.  
'Soft, Gooddye Sheepe!' then said the  
Foxe, 'not soe:

Unto the king so rash ye may not goe;  
He is with greater matter busied  
Than a lambe, or the lambes owne mothers  
hed.

Ne certes may I take it well in part,  
That ye my cousin Wolfe so fowly thwart,  
And seeke with slaunder his good name to  
blot:

For there was cause, els doo it he would  
not: 1220

Therefore surcease, good dame, and hence  
depart.'

So went the Sheepe away with hevie hart;  
So manie moe, so everie one was used,  
That to give largely to the boxe refused.

Now when high Jove, in whose almightie  
hand

The care of kings and power of empires  
stand,

Sitting one day within his turret hyc,  
From whence he vewes with his blacklid-  
ded eye

Whatso the heaven in his wide vawte con-  
taines,

And all that in the deepest earth re-  
maines, 1230

And troubled kingdome of wilde beasts be-  
helde,

Whom not their kindly soveraigne did  
welde,

But an usurping Ape, with guile suborn'd,  
Had all subverst, he sdeignfully it seorn'd  
In his great heart, and hardly did refraine  
But that with thunder bolts he had him  
slaine,

And driven downe to hell, his dewest meed  
But him avizing, he that dreadfull deed



Forbore, and rather chose with scornfull  
shame 1239

Him to avenge, and blot his brutish name  
Unto the world, that never after anie  
Should of his race be voyd of infamie:  
And his false counsellor, the cause of all,  
To damne to death, or dole perpetuall,  
From whence he never should be quit nor  
stal'd.

Forthwith he Mercurie unto him cal'd,  
And bad him flie with never resting speed  
Unto the forrest, where wilde beasts doo  
breed,

And there enquiring privily, to learne  
What did of late chaunce to the Lyon  
stearne, 1250

That he rul'd not the empire, as he ought;  
And whence were all those plaints unto him  
brought

Of wrongs and spoyles by salvage beasts  
committed;

Which done, he bad the Lyon be remitted  
Into his seate, and those same treachours  
vile

Be punished for their presumptuous guile.  
The sonne of Maia, soone as he receiv'd  
That word, streight with his azure wings he  
cleav'd

The liquid clowdes and lucid firmament;  
Ne staid, till that he came with steep de-  
scent 1260

Unto the place, where his prescript did  
showe.

There stouping, like an arrowe from a  
bowe,

He soft arrived on the grassie plaine,  
And fairly paced forth with easie paine,  
Till that unto the pallace nigh he came.  
Then gan he to himselfe new shape to frame,  
And that faire face, and that ambrosiall  
hew,

Which wents to decke the gods immortall  
crew,

And beautefie the shinie firmament,  
He doft, unitt for that rude rabblement. 1270  
So standing by the gates in strange disguise,  
He gan enquire of some in secret wize,  
Both of the king, and of his government,  
And of the Foxe, and his false blandish-  
ment:

And evermore he heard each one complaine  
Of foule abuses both in realme and raine:  
Which yet to prove more true, he meant to  
see,

And an ey-witnes of each thing to bee.

Tho on his head his dreadfull hat he dight,  
Which maketh him invisible in sight, 1280  
And mocketh th' eyes of all the lookers on,  
Making them thinke it but a vision.

Through power of that, he runnes through  
enemies swerds;

Through power of that, he passeth through  
the herds

Of ravenous wilde beasts, and doth beguile  
Their greedie mouthes of the expected  
spoyle;

Through power of that, his cunning theev-  
eries

He wents to worke, that none the same es-  
pies;

And through the power of that, he putteth  
on

What shape he list in apparition. 1290

That on his head he wore, and in his hand  
He tooke Cadnceus, his snakie wand,  
With which the damned ghosts he gov-  
erneth,

And furies rules, and Tartare tempereth.  
With that he causeth sleep to seize the eyes,  
And feare the harts of all his enemyes;  
And when him list, an universall night  
Throughout the world he makes on everie  
wight,

As when his syre with Alcumena lay.  
Thus dight, into the court he tooke his  
way, 1300

Both through the gard, which never him  
descride,

And through the watchmen, who him never  
spide:

Thenceforth he past into each secrete part,  
Whereas he saw, that sorely griev'd his  
hart,

Each place abounding with fowle injuries,  
And fild with treasure rackt with robberies;  
Each place defilde with blood of guiltles  
beasts,

Which had been slaine, to serve the Apes  
beheasts;

Gluttonie, malice, pride, and covetize,  
And lawlesnes raiguing with riotize; 1310  
Besides the infinite extortions,  
Done through the Foxes great oppressions,  
That the complaints thereof could not be  
tolde.

Which when he did with lothfull eyes be-  
holde,

He would no more endure, but came his  
way,

And cast to seeke the Lion, where he may,

That he might worke the avengement for  
this shame

On those two caytives, which had bred him  
blame;

And seeking all the forrest busily,  
At last he found where sleeping he did ly.  
The wicked weed, which there the Foxe did  
lay, 1321

From underneath his head he tooke away,  
And then him waking, forced up to rize.

The Lion, looking up, gan him avize,  
As one late in a traunce, what had of long  
Become of him: for fantasie is strong.

'Arise,' said Mercurie, 'thou sluggish beast,  
That here liest senseles, like the corpse de-  
ceast,

The whilst thy kingdome from thy head  
is rent,

And thy throne royall with dishonour  
blent: 1330

Arise, and doo thy selfe redeeme from  
shame,

And be aveng'd on those that breed thy  
blame.'

Thereat enraged, soone he gan upstart,  
Grinding his teeth, and grating his great  
hart,

And, rousing up himselfe, for his rough  
hide

He gan to reach; but no where it espide.  
Therewith he gan full terribly to rore,  
And chafte at that indignitie right sore.

But when his crowne and scepter both he  
wanted,

Lord! how he fum'd, and sweld, and rag'd,  
and panted, 1340

And threatned death and thousand deadly  
dolours

To them that had purloyn'd his princely  
honours!

With that in hast, disroabed as he was,  
He toward his owne pallace forth did  
pas;

And all the way he roared as he went,  
That all the forrest with astonishment  
Thereof did tremble, and the beasts therein  
Fled fast away from that so dreadfull din.

At last he came unto his mansion,  
Where all the gates he found fast lockt  
anon, 1350

And manie warders round about them stood:  
With that he roar'd alowd, as he were  
wood,

That all the pallace quaked at the stound,  
As if it quite were riven from the ground,

And all within were dead and hartles left;  
And th' Ape himselfe, as one whose wits  
were reft,

Fled here and there, and everie corner  
sought,

To hide himselfe from his owne feared  
thought.

But the false Foxe, when he the Lion heard,  
Fled closely forth, streightway of death  
afeard, 1360

And to the Lion came, full lowly creeping,  
With fained face, and watrie eyne halfe  
weeping,

T' excuse his former treason and abusion,  
And turning all unto the Apes confusion:  
Nath'les the royall beast forbore beleaving,  
But bad him stay at ease till further preev-  
ing.

Then when he saw no entrance to him  
graunted,

Roaring yet lowder, that all harts it  
daunted,

Upon those gates with force he fiercely  
flewe,

And, rending them in pieces, felly slewe  
Those warders strange, and all that els he  
met. 1371

But th' Ape, still flying, he no where might  
get:

From rowme to rowme, from beame to  
beame he fled,

All breathles, and for feare now almost  
ded:

Yet him at last the Lyon spide, and caught,  
And forth with shame unto his judgement  
brought.

Then all the beasts he causd' assembled  
bee,

To heare their doome, and sad ensample  
see:

The Foxe, first author of that treacherie,  
He did uncase, and then away let flie. 1380

But th' Apes long taile (which then he  
had) he quight

Cut off, and both eares pared of their hight;  
Since which, all apes but halfe their eares  
have left,

And of their tailes are utterlie bereft.

So Mother Hubberd her discourse did  
end:

Which pardon me, if I amisse have pend,  
For weake was my remembrance it to hold,  
And bad her tongue, that it so bluntly  
tolde.

FINIS.

# RUINES OF ROME

BY BELLAY

[The *Songe* of Du Bellay, of which the 'Visions of Bellay' are a rendering, forms a kind of appendix to his *Antiquitez de Rome*. Spenser, having had his attention directed to the former, would naturally read also the latter: the result was this other translation, 'Ruins of Rome.' It is difficult to believe that this work is not also of his university days. In the 'Envoy,' to be sure, he refers to the *Sepmaine* of Du Bartas, first published in 1578, but the 'Envoy,' or that part of it, may very well be an afterthought. Both the weight of antecedent probability and the evidence of style would place the translation proper with the two earliest series of 'visions,' those of Bellay and of Petrarch. They are all three much of a piece. As translations in the larger sense, though often resourceful and apt, they can hardly be said to foretell the rare felicity of his later renderings from Tasso. As poetic exercises, however, they show at least the rudiments of that copious ease which is the mark of his maturer style.]

## I

YE heavenly spirites, whose ashie cinders lie  
Under deep ruines, with huge walls oppress,  
But not your praise, the which shall never die,  
Through your faire verses, ne in ashes rest;  
If so be shrilling voyce of wight alive  
May reach from hence to depth of darkest hell,  
Then let those deep abysses open rive,  
That ye may understand my shreiking yell.  
Thrice having seene, under the heavens veale,  
Your toombs devoted compasse over all,  
Thrice unto you with lowd voyce I appeale,  
And for your antique furie here doo call,  
The whiles that I with sacred horror sing  
Your glorie, fairest of all earthly thing.

## II

Great Babylon her haughtie walls will praise,  
And sharped steeples high shot up in ayre;  
Greece will the olde Ephesian buildings blaze;  
And Nylus nurslings their pyramides faire;  
The same yet vaunting Greece will tell the storie  
Of Joves great image in Olympus placed;

Mausolus worke will be the Carians glorie;  
And Crete will boast the Labyrinth, now raced;

The antique Rhodian will likewise set forth  
The great colosse, erect to Memorie;  
And what els in the world is of like worth,  
Some greater learned wit will magnifie.

But I will sing above all moniments  
Seven Romane hils, the worlds seven wonderments.

## III

Thou stranger, which for Rome in Rome  
here seekest,  
And nought of Rome in Rome perceiv'st at all,  
These same olde walls, olde arches, which thou seest,  
Olde palaces, is that which Rome men call.  
Behold what wreake, what ruine, and what wast,  
And how that she, which with her mightie powre  
Tam'd all the world, hath tam'd herselfe at last,  
The pray of Time, which all things doth devowre.

Rome now of Rome is th' onely funerall,  
And onely Rome of Rome hath victorie;  
Ne ought save Tyber hastning to his fall  
Remaines of all: O worlds inconstancie!  
That which is firme doth flit and fall away,  
And that is fitting doth abide and stay.

## IV

She, whose high top above the starres did sore,  
One foote on Thetis, th' other on the Morning,  
One hand on Scythia, th' other on the More,  
Both heaven and earth in roundnesse compassing,  
Jove, fearing least, if she should greater growe,  
The old giants should once againe arise,  
Her whelm'd with hills, these seven hils, which be nowe  
Tombs of her greatnes, which did threate the skies:  
Upon her head he heapt Mount Saturnal,  
Upon her bellie th' antique Palatine,  
Upon her stomacke laid Mount Quirinal,  
On her left hand the noysome Esquiline,  
And Cælian on the right; but both her feete  
Mount Viminal and Aventine doo meete.



V

Who lists to see what ever nature, arte,  
 And heaven could doo, O Rome, thee let  
 him see,  
 In case thy greatnes he can gesse in harte  
 By that which but the picture is of thee.  
 Rome is no more: but if the shade of Rome  
 May of the bodie yeeld a seeming sight,  
 It's like a corse drawne forth out of the  
 tombe  
 By magicke skill out of eternall night:  
 The corpes of Rome in ashes is entombed,  
 And her great spirite, rejoyned to the  
 spirite  
 Of this great masse, is in the same en-  
 wombed;  
 But her brave writings, which her famous  
 merite,  
 In sight of Time, out of the dust doth  
 reare,  
 Doo make her idole through the world  
 appeare.

VI

Such as the Berecynthian goddesses bright,  
 In her swift charret with high turrets  
 crownde,  
 Proud that so manie gods she brought to  
 light,  
 Such was this citie in her good daies fownd:  
 This citie, more than that great Phrygian  
 mother  
 Renowm'd for fruite of famous progenie,  
 Whose greatnes by the greatnes of none  
 other,  
 But by her selfe, her equall match could  
 see:  
 Rome onely might to Rome compared  
 bee,  
 And onely Rome could make great Rome  
 to tremble:  
 So did the gods by heavenly doome decree,  
 That other earthlie power should not re-  
 semble  
 Her that did match the whole earths  
 puissance,  
 And did her courage to the heavens ad-  
 vaunce.

VII

Ye sacred ruines, and ye tragick sights,  
 Which onely doo the name of Rome retaine,  
 Olde monuments, which of so famous  
 sprights  
 The honour yet in ashes doo maintaine,

Triumphant areks, spyres neighbours to  
 the skie,  
 That you to see doth th' heaven it selfe  
 appall,  
 Alas! by little ye to nothing flie,  
 The peoples fable, and the spoyle of all:  
 And though your frames do for a time  
 make warre  
 Gainst Time, yet Time in time shall ruin-  
 ate  
 Your workes and names, and your last re-  
 liques marre.  
 My sad desires, rest therefore moderate:  
 For if that Time make ende of things so  
 sure,  
 It als will end the paine which I endure.

VIII

Through armes and vassals Rome the world  
 subdu'd,  
 That one would weene that one sole cities  
 strength  
 Both land and sea in roundnes had sur-  
 vew'd,  
 To be the measure of her bredth and  
 length:  
 This peoples vertue yet so fruitfull was  
 Of vertuous nephewes, that posteritie,  
 Striving in power their grandfathers to  
 passe,  
 The lowest earth join'd to the heaven hie;  
 To th' end that, having all parts in their  
 power,  
 Nought from the Romane Empire might  
 be quight;  
 And that though Time doth commonwealths  
 devowre,  
 Yet no time should so low embase their  
 hight,  
 That her head, earth'd in her foundations  
 deep,  
 Should not her name and endles honour  
 keep.

IX

Ye cruell starres, and eke ye gods unkinde,  
 Heaven envious, and bitter stepdame Na-  
 ture,  
 Be it by fortune, or by course of kinde,  
 That ye doo weld th' affaires of earthlie  
 creature;  
 Why have your hands long sithence tra-  
 veiled  
 To frame this world, that doth endure so  
 long?

Or why were not these Romane palaces  
Made of some matter no lesse firme and  
strong ?

I say not, as the common voyce doth say,  
That all things which beneath the moone  
have being

Are temporall, and subject to decay:

But I say rather, though not all agreeing  
With some that weene the contrarie in  
thought,  
That all this whole shall one day come  
to nought.

## X

As that brave sonne of Aeson, which by  
charmes

Atcheiv'd the golden fleece in Colchid land,  
Out of the earth engendred men of armes  
Of dragons teeth, sowne in the sacred sand;  
So this brave towne, that in her youthlie  
daies

An hydra was of warriours glorious,  
Did fill with her renowmed nourslings  
praise

The fire sunnes both one and other hous:  
But they at last, there being then not living  
An Hercules, so rauke seed to represse,  
Emongst themselves with cruell furie striv-  
ing,

Mow'd downe themselves with slaughter  
mercillesse;

Renewing in themselves that rage un-  
kinde,

Which whilom did those earthborn bre-  
thren blinde.

## XI

Mars, shaming to have given so great head  
To his off-spring, that mortall puissaunce,  
Puft up with pride of Romane hardie-  
head,

Seem'd above heavens powre it selfe to ad-  
vaunce,

Cooling againe his former kindled heate,  
With which he had those Romane spirits  
fild,

Did blowe new fire, and with enflamed  
breath

Into the Gothicke colde hot rage instil'd:  
Then gan that nation, th' earths new giant  
brood,

To dart abroad the thunder bolts of warre,  
And, beating downe these walls with furious  
mood

Into her mothers bosome, all did marre;

To th' end that none, all were it Jove his  
sire,  
Should boast himselfe of the Romane  
Empire.

## XII

Like as whilome the children of the earth  
Heapt hils on hils, to scale the starrie skie,  
And fight against the gods of heavenly  
berth,

Whiles Jove at them his thunderbolts let  
flie;

All suddenly with lightning overthrowne,  
The furious squadrons downe to ground did  
fall,

That th' earth under her childrens weight  
did grone,

And th' heavens in glorie triumpht over all:  
So did that haughtie front, which heaped  
was

On these seven Romane hils, it selfe up-  
reare

Over the world, and lift her loftie face  
Against the heaven, that gan her force to  
feare.

But now these scorned fields bemone her  
fall,

And gods secure feare not her force at  
all.

## XIII

Nor the swift furie of the flames aspiring,  
Nor the deep wounds of victours raging  
blade,

Nor ruthlesse spoyle of souldiers blood-  
desiring,

The which so oft thee (Rome) their con-  
quest made;

Ne stroke on stroke of fortune variable,

Ne rust of age hating continuance,

Nor wrath of gods, nor spight of men un-  
stable,

Nor thou opposd' against thine owne puis-  
sance;

Nor th' horrible uprore of windes high  
blowing,

Nor swelling streames of that god snakie-  
paced,

Which hath so often with his overflowing  
Thee drenched, have thy pride so much  
abaced,

But that this nothing, which they have  
thee left,

Makes the world wonder what they from  
thee reft.

XIV

As men in summer fearles passe the foord,  
Which is in winter lord of all the plaine,  
And with his tumbling streames doth beare  
aboord  
The ploughmans hope and shepheards labour vaine:  
And as the coward beasts use to despise  
The noble lion after his lives end,  
Whetting their teeth, and with vaine fool-  
hardise  
Daring the foe, that cannot him defend:  
And as at Troy most dastards of the  
Greekes  
Did brave about the corpes of Hector colde;  
So those which whilome went with pallid  
cheekes  
The Romane triumphs glorie to behold,  
Now on these ashie tombes shew bold-  
nesse vaine,  
And, conquer'd, dare the conquerour dis-  
daine.

XV

Ye pallid spirits, and ye ashie ghoasts,  
Which, joying in the brightnes of your  
day,  
Brought forth those signes of your pre-  
sumptuous boasts  
Which now their dusty reliques do bewray;  
Tell me, ye spirits (sith the darksome  
river  
Of Styx, not passable to soules returning,  
Enclosing you in thrice three wards for  
ever,  
Doo not restraine your images still mourn-  
ing)  
Tell me then (for perhaps some one of you  
Yet here above him secretly doth hide)  
Doo ye not feele your torments to ac-  
crewe,  
When ye sometimes behold the ruin'd pride  
Of these old Romane works, built with  
your hands,  
To have become nought els but heaped  
sands?

XVI

Like as ye see the wrathfull sea from farre,  
In a great mountaine heap't with hideous  
noyse,  
Eftsoones of thousand billowes shouldred  
narre,  
Against a rocke to breake with dreadfull  
poyse:

Like as ye see fell Boreas with sharpe  
blast,  
Tossing huge tempests through the troubled  
skie,  
Eftsoones having his wide wings spent in  
wast,  
To stop his wearie cariere suddenly:  
And as ye see huge flames spread diverslic,  
Gathered in one up to the heavens to spyre,  
Eftsoones consum'd to fall downe feebily:  
So whilom did this monarchie aspyre  
As waves, as winde, as fire spread over  
all,  
Till it by fatall doome adowne did fall.

XVII

So long as Joves great bird did make his  
flight,  
Bearing the fire with which heaven doth us  
fray,  
Heaven had not feare of that presumptuous  
might,  
With which the giaunts did the gods assay.  
But all so soone as scorching sunne had  
brent  
His wings, which wont the earth to over-  
spreadd,  
The earth out of her massie wombe forth  
sent  
That antique horror, which made heaven  
adredd.  
Then was the Germane raven in disguise  
That Romaue eagle seene to cleave asunder,  
And towards heaven freshly to arise  
Out of these mountaines, now consum'd to  
pouder:  
In which the foule that serves to beare  
the lightning  
Is now no more seen flying, nor alighting.

XVIII

These heapes of stones, these old wals which  
ye see,  
Were first enclosures but of salvage soyle;  
And these brave pallaces, which maystred  
bee  
Of Time, were shepheards cottages some-  
while.  
Then tooke the shepheards kingly orna-  
ments,  
And the stout hynde arm'd his right hand  
with steele:  
Eftsoones their rule of yearely presidents  
Grew great, and sixe months greater a great  
deele;



Which, made perpetuall, rose to so great  
 might,  
 That thence th' imperiall eagle rooting  
 tooke,  
 Till th' heaven it selfe, opposing gainst her  
 might,  
 Her power to Peters successor betooke;  
 Who, shepheardlike, (as Fates the same  
 foreseeing)  
 Doth shew that all things turne to their  
 first being.

## XIX

All that is perfect, which th' heaven beauti-  
 fies;  
 All that 's imperfect, borne belowe the  
 moone;  
 All that doth feede our spirits and our eies;  
 And all that doth consume our pleasures  
 soone;  
 All the mishap, the which our daies out-  
 weares;  
 All the good hap of th' oldest times afore,  
 Rome in the time of her great ancesters,  
 Like a Pandora, locked long in store.  
 But destinie this huge chaos turmoyleing,  
 In which all good and evill was enclosed,  
 Their heavenly vertues from these woes  
 assayling,  
 Caried to heaven, from sinfull bondage  
 losed:  
 But their great sinnes, the causers of  
 their paine,  
 Under these antique ruines yet remaine.

## XX

No otherwise than raynie cloud, first fed  
 With earthly vapours gathered in the ayre,  
 Eftsoones in compas arch't, to steepe his  
 hed,  
 Doth plunge himselfe in Tethys bosome  
 faire;  
 And mounting up againe, from whence he  
 came,  
 With his great bellie spreads the dimmed  
 world,  
 Till at the last, dissolving his moist frame,  
 In raine, or snowe, or haile he forth is  
 hord;  
 This citie, which was first but shepherds  
 shade,  
 Uprising by degrees, grewe to such height,  
 That quene of land and sea her selfe she  
 made.  
 At last, not able to beare so great weight,

Her power, disperst, through all the  
 world did vade;  
 To shew that all in th' end to nought  
 shall fade.

## XXI

The same which Pyrrhus and the puis-  
 saunce  
 Of Afrike could not tame, that same brave  
 citie,  
 Which, with stout courage arm'd against  
 mischaunce,  
 Sustain'd the shooke of common enmitie;  
 Long as her ship, tost with so manie  
 freakes,  
 Had all the world in armes against her  
 bent,  
 Was never seene that anie fortmes  
 wreakes  
 Could breake her course begun with brave  
 intent.  
 But when the object of her vertue failed,  
 Her power it selfe against it selfe did  
 arme;  
 As he that having long in tempest sailed,  
 Faine would arive, but cannot for the  
 storme,  
 If too great winde against the port him  
 drive,  
 Doth in the port it selfe his vessell rive.

## XXII

When that brave honour of the Latine  
 name,  
 Which mear'd her rule with Africa and  
 Byze,  
 With Thames inhabitants of noble fame,  
 And they which see the dawning day arize,  
 Her nourslings did with mutinous uprore  
 Harten against her selfe, her conquer'd  
 spoile,  
 Which she had wonne from all the world  
 afore,  
 Of all the world was spoyl'd within a while.  
 So, when the compast course of the un-  
 verse  
 In sixe and thirtie thousand yeares is  
 ronne,  
 The bands of th' elements shall backe re-  
 verse  
 To their first discord, and be quite un-  
 donne:  
 The seedes, of which all things at first  
 were bred,  
 Shall in great Chaos wombe againe be hid.

XXIII

O warie wisdome of the man that would  
That Carthage towres from spoile should  
be forborne,

To th' end that his victorious people should  
With canering laisure not be overorne !

He well foresaw, how that the Romane  
courage,

Impatient of pleasures faint desires,  
Through idlenes would turne to civill rage,  
And be her selfe the matter of her fires.

For in a people given all to ease,  
Ambition is engendred easily;

As in a vicious bodie, grose disease  
Soone growes through humours super-  
fluitie.

That came to passe, when, swolne with  
plenties pride,

Nor prince, nor peere, nor kin, they  
would abide.

XXIV

If the blinde Furie, which warres breedeth  
oft,

Wonts not t' enrage the hearts of equall  
beasts,

Whether they fare on foote, or flie aloft,  
Or armed be with claws, or scalie creasts,  
What fell Erynnis, with hot burning tongs,  
Did grype your hearts, with noysome rage  
imbew'd,

That, each to other working cruell wrongs,  
Your blades in your owne bowels you em-  
brew'd ?

Was this, ye Romanes, your hard destinie ?  
Or some old sinne, whose unappeased guilt  
Pow'd vengeance forth on yon eternallie ?  
Or brothers blood, the which at first was  
spilt

Upon your walls, that God might not en-  
dure

Upon the same to set foundation sure ?

XXV

O that I had the Thracian poets harpe,  
For to awake out of th' infernall shade  
Those antique Cæsars, sleeping long in  
darke,

The which this auncient citie whilome made !  
Or that I had Amphions instrument,  
To quicken with his vitall notes accord  
The stonie joynts of these old walls now  
rent,

By which th' Ausonian light might be re-  
stor'd !

Or that at least I could with pencill fine  
Fashion the pourtraicts of these palacis,  
By paterne of great Virgils spirit divine !  
I would assay with that which in me is  
To builde, with leuell of my loftie style,  
That which no hands can evermore com-  
pyle.

XXVI

Who list the Romane greatnes forth to  
figure,

Him needeth not to seeke for usage right  
Of line, or lead, or rule, or squire, to mea-  
sure

Her length, her breadth, her deepnes, or  
her hight;

But him behooves to vew in compasse round  
All that the ocean graspes in his long armes;  
Be it where the yerely starre doth scorch  
the ground,

Or where colde Boreas blowes his bitter  
stormes.

Rome was th' whole world, and al the world  
was Rome,

And if things nam'd their names doo equal-  
ize,

When land and sea ye name, then name ye  
Rome,

And naming Rome, ye land and sea com-  
prize:

For th' auncient plot of Rome, displayed  
plaine,

The map of all the wide world doth con-  
taine.

XXVII

Thou that at Rome astonisht dost behold  
The antique pride, which menaced the skie,  
These laughtie heapes, these palaces of  
olde,

These wals, these areks, these baths, these  
temples lie,

Judge, by these ample ruines vew, the rest  
The which injurious time hath quite out-  
worne,

Since, of all workmen helde in reckning best,  
Yet these olde fragments are for paterne  
borne:

Then also marke, how Rome, from day to  
day,

Repayring her decayed fashion,  
Renewes herselfe with buildings rich and  
gay;

That one would judge that the Romaine  
Dæmon

Doth yet himselfe with fatall hand enforce,  
 Againe on foote to reare her pouldred corse.

## XXVIII

He that hath seene a great oke drie and dead,  
 Yet clad with reliques of some trophees olde,  
 Lifting to heaven her aged hoarie head,  
 Whose foote in ground hath left but feeble holde,  
 But halfe disbowel'd lies above the ground,  
 Shewing her wreathed rootes, and naked armes,  
 And on her trunke, all rotten and unsound,  
 Onely supports herselfe for meate of wormes,  
 And though she owe her fall to the first winde,  
 Yet of the devout people is ador'd,  
 And manie yong plants spring out of her rinde;  
 Who such an oke hath seene, let him record  
 That such this cities honour was of yore,  
 And amongst all cities florished much more.

## XXIX

All that which Aegypt whilome did devise,  
 All that which Greece their temples to embrace,  
 After th' Ionicke, Atticke, Doricke guise,  
 Or Corinth skil'd in curious workes to grave,  
 All that Lysippus practike arte could forme,  
 Apelles wit, or Phidias his skill,  
 Was wont this auncient citie to adorne,  
 And the heaven it selfe with her wide wonders fill.  
 All that which Athens ever brought forth wise,  
 All that which Afrike ever brought forth strange,  
 All that which Asie ever had of prise,  
 Was here to see. O marvelous great change!  
 Rome, living, was the worlds sole ornament,  
 And dead, is now the worlds sole monument.

## XXX

Like as the seeded field greene grasse first shoves,  
 Then from greene grasse into a stalke doth spring,  
 And from a stalke into an eare forth-growes,  
 Which eare the frutefull graine doth shortly bring;  
 And as in season due the husband mowes  
 The waving lockes of those faire yeallow heares,  
 Which, bound in sheaves, and layd in comely rowes,  
 Upon the naked fields in stackes he reares:  
 So grew the Romane Empire by degree,  
 Till that barbarian hands it quite did spill,  
 And left of it but these olde markes to see,  
 Of which all passers by doo somewhat pill,  
 As they which gleane, the reliques use to gather,  
 Which th' husbandman behind him chanst to scater.

## XXXI

That same is now nought but a champion wide,  
 Where all this worlds pride once was situate.  
 No blame to thee, whosoever dost abide  
 By Nyle, or Gange, or Tygre, or Euphrate;  
 Ne Afrike thereof guiltie is, nor Spaine,  
 Nor the bolde people by the Thamis brincks,  
 Nor the brave warlicke brood of Alemaigne,  
 Nor the borne souldier which Rhine running drinks.  
 Thou onely cause, O Civill Furie, art:  
 Which, sowing in th' Aemathian fields thy spight,  
 Didst arme thy hand against thy proper hart;  
 To th' end that when thou wast in greatest hight  
 To greatnes growne, through long prosperitie,  
 Thou then adowne might'st fall more horrible.

## XXXII

Hope ye, my verses, that posteritie  
 Of age ensuing shall you ever read?  
 Hope ye that ever immortalitie  
 So meane harpes worke may challenge for her meed?



If under heaven anie endurance were,  
 These monuments, which not in paper writ,  
 But in porphyre and marble doo appeare,  
 Might well have hop'd to have obtained it.  
 Nath'les, my lute, whom Phœbus deigned  
 to give,  
 Cease not to sound these olde antiquities:  
 For if that Time doo let thy glorie live,  
 Well maist thou boast, how ever base thou  
 bee,  
 That thou art first which of thy nation  
 song  
 Th' olde honour of the people gowned  
 long.

L'ENVOY

Bellay, first garland of free poësie  
 That France brought forth, though fruit-  
 full of brave wits,  
 Well worthie thou of immortalitie,  
 That long hast traveld by thy learned writs,  
 Olde Rome out of her ashes to revive,  
 And give a second life to dead decayes:  
 Needes must he all eternitie survive,  
 That can to other give eternall dayes.  
 Thy dayes therefore are endles, and thy  
 prayse  
 Excelling all that ever went before;  
 And, after thee, gins Bartas hie to rayse  
 His heavenly Muse, th' Almightye to adore.  
 Live happie spirits, th' honour of your  
 name,  
 And fill the world with never dying fame.

FINIS.

MUIOPOTMOS,

OR

THE FATE OF THE BUTTER-  
 FLIE

BY ED. SP.

DEDICATED TO THE MOST FAIRE AND  
 VERTUOUS LADIE: THE LADIE  
 CAREY

LONDON

IMPRINTED FOR WILLIAM  
 PONSONBIE, DWELLING IN PAULES  
 CHURCHYARD AT THE SIGNE OF  
 THE BISHOPS HEAD

1590

TO THE RIGHT WORTHY AND  
 VERTUOUS LADIE; THE  
 LADIE CAREY

MOST brave and bountifull Lady: for so  
 excellent favours as I have received at your  
 sweet handes, to offer these fewe leaves as  
 in recompence, should be as to offer flowers  
 to the gods for their divine benefites. There-  
 fore I have determined to give my selfe  
 wholly to you, as quite abandoned from my  
 selfe, and absolutely vowed to your services:  
 which in all right is ever held for full re-  
 compence of debt or damage to have the  
 person yeilded. My person I wot wel how  
 little worth it is. But the faithfull minde  
 and humble zeale which I beare unto your  
 Ladship may perhaps be more of price, as  
 may please you to account and use the poore  
 service thereof; which taketh glory to ad-  
 vance your excellent partes and noble ver-  
 tues, and to spend it selfe in honouring you:  
 not so much for your great bounty to my  
 self, which yet may not be unminded; nor  
 for name or kindreds sake by you vouch-  
 safed, beeing also regardable; as for that  
 honorable name, which yee have by your  
 brave deserts purchast to your self, and  
 spred in the mouths of al men: with which  
 I have also presumed to grace my verses,  
 and under your name to commend to the  
 world this sinall poëme; the which beseech-  
 ing your Ladship to take in worth, and of  
 all things therein according to your wonted  
 gracionsnes to make a milde construction,  
 I humbly pray for your happines.

Your Ladships ever

humbly;

E. S.

['Muiopotmos' cannot be dated with certainty.  
 In style it would seem to be more mature than  
 the work of the *Calendar* period; it may have  
 been written in Ireland; one rather associates  
 it with that period of delight in London while  
 the poet was seeing his *Faery Queen* through  
 the press. If the date upon its separate title-  
 page, 1590, is to be trusted, it must have been  
 written, at latest, not long after his arrival in  
 England.

By contrast to the motley and impressive  
 mediævalism of 'Mother Hubbard's Tale,' this  
 poem would seem to be conspicuously Renais-  
 sance Italian. Its subject is a mere nothing:  
 it tells no story that could not be told in full  
 in a stanza, it presents no situation for the

delicate rhetoric of the emotions: it is a mere running frieze of images and scenes, linked in fanciful continuity. It is organized as a mock-heroic poem, but its appeal is essentially to the eye. Myths, invented or real, that seem to form themselves spontaneously into pictures, the landscape of the gardens, fantastic armor, the figured scenes of tapestry richly bordered, these are of a poetry akin to the plastic arts, such as one finds in the *Stanze* of Poliziano. Yet the temper of 'Muiopotmos' is not that of the *Stanze* and their like. It is rather of the air than of the earth. One might think it an emanation of the theme itself and fancy that the frail wings of the butterfly had been spread for the style, delicately colored, ethereal. The poet of the *Faery Queen* never more happily escaped into 'delight with liberty' than here.]

### MUIOPOTMOS: OR THE FATE OF THE BUTTERFLIE

I SING of deadly dolorous debate,  
Stir'd up through wrathfull Nemesis despight,  
Betwixt two mightie ones of great estate,  
Drawne into armes, and proofoe of mortall fight,  
Through prowd ambition and hartswelling hate,  
Whilest neither could the others greater might  
And sdeignfull scorne endure; that from small jarre  
Their wraths at length broke into open warre.

The roote whereof and tragicall effect,  
Vouchsafe, O thou the mournfulst Muse of nyne,

That woultst the tragick stage for to direct,  
In funerall complaints and wayfull tyne,  
Reveale to me, and all the meaues detect  
'Through which sad Clarion did at last declyne

To lowest wretchednes: And is there then  
Such rancour in the harts of mightie men?

Of all the race of silver-winged flies  
Which doo possesse the empire of the aire,  
Betwixt the centred earth and azure skies,  
Was none more favourable, nor more faire,  
Whilst heaven did favour his felicities,  
Then Clarion, the eldest sonne and haire

Of Muscaroll, and in his fathers sight  
Of all alive did seeme the fairest wight.

With fruitfull hope his aged breast he fed  
Of future good, which his yong toward yeares,

Full of brave courage and bold hardyhed,  
Above th' ensample of his equall peares,  
Did largely promise, and to him forered  
(Whilst oft his heart did melt in tender teares)

That he in time would sure prove such an one,

As should be worthie of his fathers throne.

The fresh yong flie, in whom the kindly fire

Of lustfull yongth began to kindle fast,  
Did much disdaine to subject his desire  
To loathsome sloth, or houres in ease to wast,

But joy'd to range abroad in fresh attire,  
Through the wide compas of the ayrie coast,

And with unwearied wings each part t' inquire

Of the wide rule of his renowmed sire.

For he so swift and nimble was of flight,  
That from this lower tract he dar'd to stie  
Up to the clowdes, and thence, with pineons light,

To mount aloft unto the christall skie,  
To vew the workmanship of heavens hight:

Whence downe descending he along would flie

Upon the streaming rivers, sport to finde;  
And oft would dare to tempt the troublous winde.

So on a summers day, when season milde  
With gentle calme the world had quieted,  
And high in heaven Hyperions fierie childe

Ascending, did his beames abroad dispred,  
Whiles all the heavens on lower creatures smilde,

Yong Clarion, with vamtfull lustiehead,  
After his guize did cast abroad to fare,  
And theretoo gan his furnitures prepare.

His breastplate first, that was of substance pure,

Before his noble heart he firmly bound.

That mought his life from yron death assure,  
 And ward his gentle corpes from cruell wound: 60  
 For it by arte was framed to endure  
 The bit of balefull steele and bitter stownd,  
 No lesse than that which Vulcane made to sheild  
 Achilles life from fate of Troyan field.

And then about his shoulders broad he threw  
 An hairie hide of some wilde beast, whom hee  
 In salvage forrest by adventure slew,  
 And reft the spoyle his ornament to bee:  
 Which, spredding all his backe with dreadfull vew,  
 Made all that him so horrible did see 70  
 Thinke him Alcides with the Lyons skin,  
 When the Næmean conquest he did win.

Upon his head, his glistening burganet,  
 The which was wrought by wonderous device,  
 And curiously engraven, he did set:  
 The mettall was of rare and passing price;  
 Not Bilbo steele, nor brasse from Corinth fet,  
 Nor costly oricalche from strange Phœnice;  
 But such as could both Phœbus arrowes ward,  
 And th' hayling darts of heaven beating hard. 80

Therein two deadly weapons fixt he bore,  
 Strongly outlaunched towards either side,  
 Like two sharpe speares, his enemies to gore:  
 Like as a warlike brigandine, applyde  
 To fight, layes forth her threatfull pikes afore,  
 The engines which in them sad death doo hyde:  
 So did this flie outstretch his fearefull hornes,  
 Yet so as him their terrour more adornes.

Lastly his shinie wings, as silver bright,  
 Painted with thousand colours, passing farre 90  
 All painters skill, he did about him dight:  
 Not halfe so manie sundrie colours arre

In Iris bowe, ne heaven doth shine so bright,  
 Distinguished with manie a twinc kling starre,  
 Nor Junoes bird in her ey-spotted traine  
 So manie goodly colours doth containe.

Ne (may it be withouten perill spoken)  
 The Archer god, the some of Cytheree,  
 That joyes on wretched lovers to be wroken,  
 And heaped spoyles of bleeding harts to see, 100  
 Beares in his wings so manie a changefull token.

Ah! my liege lord, forgive it unto mee,  
 If ought against thine honour I have tolde;  
 Yet sure those wings were fairer manifolde.

Full manie a ladie faire, in court full oft  
 Beholding them, him secretly envide,  
 And wisht that two such fannes, so silken soft  
 And golden faire, her love would her provide;  
 Or that, when them the gorgeous flie had doft,  
 Some one, that would with grace be gratifide, 110  
 From him would steale them privily away,  
 And bring to her so precions a pray.

Report is that Dame Venus on a day,  
 In spring when flowres doo clothe the fruitful ground,  
 Walking abroad with all her nymphes to play,  
 Bad her faire damzels, flocking her arownd,  
 To gather flowres, her forehead to array.  
 Amongst the rest a gentle nymph was found,  
 Hight Astery, excelling all the crewe  
 In curteous usage and unstained bewe. 120

Who, being nimbler joynted than the rest,  
 And more industrious, gathered more store  
 Of the fields honour than the others best;  
 Which they in secret harts envying sore,  
 Tolde Venus, when her as the worthiest  
 She praisd', that Cupide (as they heard be fore)  
 Did lend her secret aide in gathering  
 Into her lap the children of the Spring.

Whereof the goddesse gathering jealous feare,  
 Not yet unmindfull how not long agoe 130



Her sonne to Psyche secrete love did beare,  
 And long it close conceal'd, till mickle woe  
 Thereof arose, and manie a rufull teare,  
 Reason with sudden rage did overgoe,  
 And giving hastie credit to th' accuser,  
 Was led away of them that did abuse her.

Eftsoones that damzel, by her heavenly  
 might,  
 She turn'd into a winged butterflie,  
 In the wide aire to make her wandring  
 flight;  
 And all those flowres, with which so plen-  
 teouslie <sup>140</sup>  
 Her lap she filled had, that bred her spight,  
 She placed in her wings, for memorie  
 Of her pretended crime, though crime none  
 were:  
 Since which that flie them in her wings doth  
 beare.

Thus the fresh Clarion, being readie dight,  
 Unto his journey did himselfe addresse,  
 And with good speed began to take his  
 flight:  
 Over the fields, in his franke lustinesse,  
 And all the champion he soared light, <sup>149</sup>  
 And all the countrey wide he did possesse,  
 Feeding upon their pleasures bounteouslie,  
 That none gainsaid, nor none did him envie.

The woods, the rivers, and the medowes  
 green,  
 With his aire-cutting wings he measured  
 wide,  
 Ne did he leave the mountaines bare un-  
 seene,  
 Nor the ranke grassie femmes delights un-  
 tride.  
 But none of these, how ever sweete they  
 beene,  
 Mote please his fancie, nor him cause t'  
 abide:  
 His choicefull sense with everie change doth  
 flit;  
 No common things may please a wavering  
 wit. <sup>160</sup>

To the gay gardins his unstaid desire  
 Him wholly caried, to refresh his sprights:  
 There lavish Nature, in her best attire,  
 Powres forth sweete odors, and alluring  
 sights;  
 And Arte, with her contending, doth aspire  
 T' excell the naturall with made delights:

And all that faire or pleasant may be found  
 In riotous excesse doth there abound.

There he arriving, round about doth flie,  
 From hed to bed, from one to other bor-  
 der, <sup>170</sup>  
 And takes survey, with curious busie eye,  
 Of everie flowre and herbe there set in  
 order;  
 Now this, now that, he tasteth tenderly,  
 Yet none of them he rudely doth disorder,  
 Ne with his feete their silken leaves de-  
 face;  
 But pastures on the pleasures of each place.

And evermore with most varietie,  
 And change of sweetnesse (for all change  
 is sweete)  
 He casts his glutton sense to satisfie;  
 Now sucking of the sap of herbe most  
 meete, <sup>180</sup>  
 Or of the deaw, which yet on them does lie,  
 Now in the sante bathing his tender feete:  
 And then he pearceth on some braunch  
 thereby,  
 To weather him, and his moyst wings to  
 dry.

And then againe he turneth to his play,  
 To spoyle the pleasures of that paradise:  
 The wholsome saulge, and lavender still  
 gray,  
 Ranke smelling rue, and cummin good for  
 eyes,  
 The roses rainging in the pride of May,  
 Sharpe isope, good for greene wounds reme-  
 dies, <sup>190</sup>  
 Faire marigoldes, and bees-alluring thime,  
 Sweete marjoram, and daysies decking  
 prime:

Coole violets, and orpine growing still,  
 Embathed balme, and chearfull galingale,  
 Fresh costinarie, and breathfull camomill,  
 Dull poppie, and drink-quickning setuale,  
 Veyne-healing verven, and hed-purgung dill,  
 Sound savorie, and bazill hartie-hale,  
 Fat colworts, and comforting perseline,  
 Colde lettuce, and refreshing rosmarine. <sup>200</sup>

And whatso else of vertue good or ill  
 Grewe in this gardin, fetcht from farre  
 away,  
 Of everie one he takes, and tastes at will,  
 And on their pleasures greedily doth pray

Then, when he hath both plaid, and fed his fill,  
In the warme sunne he doth himselfe embay,  
And there him rests in riotous suffisaunce  
Of all his gladfulnes and kingly joyaunce.

What more felicitie can fall to creature  
Than to enjoy delight with libertie, <sup>210</sup>  
And to be lord of all the workes of  
Nature,  
To raine in th' aire from earth to highest  
skie,  
To feed on flowres and weeds of glorious  
feature,  
To take what ever thing doth please the  
eie?  
Who rests not pleased with such happines,  
Well worthie he to taste of wretchednes.

But what on earth can long abide in state,  
Or who can him assure of happie day;  
Sith morning faire may bring fowle evening  
late,  
And least mishap the most blisse alter  
may? <sup>220</sup>  
For thousand perills lie in close awaite  
About us daylie, to worke our decay;  
That none, except a God, or God him  
guide,  
May them avoyde, or remedie provide.

And whatso heavens in their secret doome  
Ordained have, how can fraile fleshly wight  
Forecast, but it must needs to issue come?  
The sea, the aire, the fire, the day, the  
night,  
And th' armies of their creatures all and  
some  
Do serve to them, and with importune  
might <sup>230</sup>  
Warre against us, the vassals of their will.  
Who then can save what they dispose to  
spill?

Not thou, O Clarion, though fairest thou  
Of all thy kinde, unhappie happie flie,  
Whose cruell fate is woven even now  
Of Joves owne hand, to worke thy miserie:  
Ne may thee helpe the manie hartie vow,  
Which thy olde sire with sacred pietie  
Hath powred forth for thee, and th' altars  
sprent:  
Nought may thee save from heavens  
avengement. <sup>240</sup>

It fortun'd (as heavens had behight)  
That in this gardin, where yong Clarion  
Was wont to solace him, a wicked wight,  
The foe of faire things, th' author of con-  
fusion,  
The shame of Nature, the bondslave of  
spight,  
Had lately built his hatefull mansion,  
And, lurking closely, in awayte now lay,  
How he might anie in his trap betray.

But when he spide the joyous butterflie  
In this faire plot dispacing too and fro, <sup>250</sup>  
Fearles of foes and hidden jeopardie,  
Lord! how he gan for to bestirre him tho,  
And to his wicked worke each part applie!  
His heart did earne against his hated foe,  
And bowels so with ranckling poyson swelde,  
That scarce the skin the strong contagion  
helde.

The cause why he this flie so maliced  
Was (as in stories it is written found)  
For that his mother which him bore and  
bred,  
The most fine-fingred workwoman on  
ground, <sup>260</sup>  
Arachne, by his meanes was vanquished  
Of Pallas, and in her owne skill confound,  
When she with her for excellence con-  
tended,  
That wrought her shame, and sorrow never  
ended.

For the Tritonian goddessse, having hard  
Her blazed fame, which all the world had  
fil'd,  
Came downe to prove the truth, and due  
reward  
For her prais-worthie workmanship to  
yeild:  
But the presumptuous damzel rashly dar'd  
The goddessse selfe to chalenge to the  
field, <sup>270</sup>  
And to compare with her in curious skill  
Of workes with loome, with needle, and  
with quill.

Minerva did the chalenge not refuse,  
But deign'd with her the paragon to make:  
So to their worke they sit, and each doth  
chuse  
What storie she will for her tapet take.  
Arachne figur'd how Jove did abuse  
Europa like a bull, and on his backe

Her through the sea did beare; so lively  
 seene,  
 That it true sea and true bull ye would  
 weene. 280

She seem'd still backe unto the land to  
 looke,  
 And her play-fellowes aide to call, and  
 feare  
 The dashing of the waves, that up she  
 tooke  
 Her daintie fecte, and garments gathered  
 neare:  
 But (Lord!) how she in everie member  
 shooke,  
 When as the land she saw no more ap-  
 peare,  
 But a wilde wildernes of waters deepe!  
 Then gan she greatly to lament and weepe.

Before the bull she pictur'd winged Love,  
 With his yong brother Sport, light flutter-  
 ing 290  
 Upon the waves, as each had been a dove;  
 The one his bowe and shafts, the other  
 spring  
 A burning teade about his head did move,  
 As in their syres new love both triumph-  
 ing:  
 And manie Nymphes about them flocking  
 round,  
 And manie Tritons, which their hornes did  
 sound.

And round about, her worke she did em-  
 pale  
 With a faire border wrought of sundrie  
 flowres,  
 Enwoven with an yvie winding trayle: 299  
 A goodly worke, full fit for kingly bowres,  
 Such as Dame Pallas, such as Envie pale,  
 That al good things with venomous tooth  
 devowres,  
 Could not accuse. Then gan the goddesse  
 bright  
 Her selfe likewise unto her worke to dight.

She made the storie of the olde debate,  
 Which she with Neptune did for Athens  
 trie:  
 Twelve gods doo sit around in royall state,  
 And Jove in midst with awfull majestie,  
 To judge the strife betweene them stirred  
 late:  
 Each of the gods by his like visnomie 310

Eathe to be knowen; but Jove above them  
 all,  
 By his great lookes and power imperiall.

Before them stands the god of seas in place,  
 Clayming that sea-coast citie as his right,  
 And strikes the rockes with his three-forked  
 mace;  
 Whenceforth issues a warlike steed in sight,  
 The signe by which he chalengeth the place;  
 That all the gods, which saw his wondrous  
 might,  
 Did surely deeme the victorie his due:  
 But seldome seene, forejudgement proveth  
 true. 320

Then to her selfe she gives her Aegide  
 shield,  
 And steelhed speare, and morion on her  
 hedd,  
 Such as she oft is seene in warlicke field:  
 Then sets she forth, how with her weapon  
 dredd  
 She smote the ground, the which streight  
 forth did yield  
 A fruitfull olyve tree, with berries spredd,  
 That all the gods admir'd; then all the  
 storie  
 She compast with a wreathe of olyves  
 hoarie.

Emongst those leaves she made a butterflie,  
 With excellent device and wondrous slight,  
 Fluttring among the olives wantonly, 331  
 That seem'd to live, so like it was in sight:  
 The velvet nap which on his wings doth lie,  
 The silken downe with which his backe is  
 dight,  
 His broad outstretched hornes, his hayrie  
 thies,  
 His glorious colours, and his glistering eies.

Which when Arachne saw, as overlaid  
 And mastered with workmanship so rare,  
 She stood astonied long, ne ought gaine-  
 said, 339  
 And with fast fixed eyes on her did stare,  
 And by her silence, signe of one dismaid,  
 The victorie did yeeld her as her share:  
 Yet did she inly fret, and felly burne,  
 And all her blood to poysonous rancor  
 turne:

That shortly from the shape of womanhed,  
 Such as she was, when Pallas she attempted,



She grew to hideous shape of dryrihed,  
Pined with grieve of follie late repented:  
Eftsoones her white streight legs were  
altered

To crooked crawling shankes, of marrowe  
empted, 350

And her faire face to fowle and loathsome  
hewe,

And her fine corpes to a bag of venim grewe.

This cursed creature, mindfull of that olde  
Enfested grudge, the which his mother  
felt,

So soone as Clarion he did beholde,  
His heart with vengefull malice inly swelt;  
And weaving straight a net with manie a  
folde

About the cave in which he lurking dwelt,  
With fine small cords about it stretched  
wide,

So finely sponne that scarce they could be  
spide. 360

Not anie damzell, which her vauuteth most  
In skilfull knitting of soft silken twyne;  
Nor anie weaver, which his worke doth boast  
In dieper, in damaske, or in lyne;  
Nor anie skil'd in workmanship embost;  
Nor anie skil'd in loupes of fingring fine,  
Might in their divers cunning ever dare,  
With this so curious networke to compare.

Ne doo I thinke that that same subtil gin,  
The which the Lemnian god framde craf-  
tilie, 370

Mars sleeping with his wife to compasse in,  
That all the gods with common mockerie  
Might laugh at them, and scorne their  
shamefull sin,

Was like to this. This same he did applie  
For to entrap the careles Clarion,  
That rang'd each where without suspition.

Suspition of friend, nor feare of foe,  
That hazarded his health, had he at all,  
But waltk at will, and wandred too and  
fro,

In the pride of his freedome principall: 380  
Litle wist he his fatall future woe,  
But was secure; the liker he to fall.  
He likest is to fall into mischancee,  
That is regardles of his governaunce.

Yet still Aragnoll (so his foe was hight)  
Lay lurking covertly him to surprise,

And all his gins, that him entangle might,  
Drest in good order as he could devise.  
At length the foolish flie, without foresight,  
As he that did all daunger quite despise, 390  
Toward those parts came flying careleslie,  
Where hidden was his hatefull enemie.

Who, seeing him, with secrete joy therefore  
Did tickle inwardly in everie vaine,  
And his false hart, fraught with all treasons  
store,

Was fil'd with hope his purpose to obtaine:  
Himselfe he close upgathered more and  
more

Into his den, that his deceitfull traine  
By his there being might not be bewraid,  
Ne anie noyse, ne anie motion made. 400

Like as a wily foxe, that, having spide  
Where on a sunnie banke the lambes doo  
play,

Full closely creeping by the hinder side,  
Lyes in ambushment of his hoped pray,  
Ne stirreth limbe, till, seeing readie tide,  
He rusheth forth, and snatcheth quite away  
One of the litle yonglings unawares:  
So to his worke Aragnoll him prepares.

Who now shall give unto my heavie eyes  
A well of teares, that all may overflow? 410  
Or where shall I finde lamentable cryes,  
And mournfull tunes enough my grieve to  
show?

Helpe, O thou Tragick Muse, me to devise  
Notes sad enough, t' expresse this bitter  
throw:

For loe! the drierie stownd is now arrived,  
That of all happines hath us deprived.

The luckles Clarion, whether cruell Fate  
Or wicked Fortune faultles him misled,  
Or some ungracious blast out of the gate  
Of Aeoles raine perforce him drove on  
hed,

Was (O sad hap and howre unfortunate!)  
With violent swift flight forth caried 422  
Into the cursed cobweb, which his foe  
Had framed for his finall overthroe.

There the fond flie, entangled, struggled  
long,

Himselfe to free thereout; but all in vaine.  
For, striving more, the more in laces stroug  
Himselfe he tide, and wrapt his winges  
twaine

In lymie snares the subtill loupes among;  
That in the ende he breathelesse did re-  
maine, 430  
And all his yougthly forces idly spent  
Him to the mercie of th' avenger lent.

Which when the greisly tyrant did espie,  
Like a grimme lyon rushing with fierce  
might  
Out of his den, he seized greedelie  
On the resistles pray, and with fell sight,  
Under the left wing stroke his weapon slie  
Into his heart, that his deepe groning spright  
In bloodie streames forth fled into the aire,  
His bodie left the spectacle of care. 440

FINIS.

## VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE

[This series of original 'visions' is manifestly of kin to those translated from Petrarch and Du Bellay and, more distantly, to 'Ruins of Rome.' It is unquestionably of later composition, but how much later has been disputed. Some critics, observing that, whereas the sonnets of the three earlier series are in the common Elizabethan form, the sonnets of this are in the special form that Spenser devised for himself, have argued that the interval of time must be considerable. In the first place, however, we have no proof that Spenser may not have devised his own sonnet-form early (we meet it in the dedication to 'Virgil's Gnat,' of *Calendar* days); in the second place, for the three series that were translations he might naturally choose the looser and therefore easier Elizabethan form, when, for original sonnets, he would adopt his own more complicated scheme. This point set aside, there is nothing in the series to denote a much later period: the style is, indeed, distictly immature. One may plausibly conclude that 'Visions of the World's Vanity' was suggested by the earlier 'Visions' and executed not long after them.

The noteworthy fact about these various early poems is that they show Spenser, at the outset of his career, driving full on allegory. Partly by accident and partly by choice, he has committed himself to a special form of the art, from which he later progresses to others more comprehensive. This form is the literary counterpart of a mixed type, in which poetry and the graphic arts are combined, the so-called 'emblem.' The essence of both consists in the expression of an idea by means of a complete image or picture. Thus Du Bellay, having

composed in his *Antiquitez de Rome* ('Ruins of Rome') a series of meditations upon the transitoriness of human grandeur, went on, in his supplementary *Songe* ('Visions of Bellay'), to express those same ideas in a series of poetic pictures. These, when borrowed by Van der Noot for the *Théâtre* of 1568, were made into emblems proper by the addition of engravings that rendered them to the eye. Such emblem books, of engravings and poetry combined, were enormously popular through most of the sixteenth century. They affected the imagination of that period incalculably. Book followed book, edition edition. Mythology, fable, natural history, history were ransacked for themes and illustrations, which were repeated in a dozen forms. Poetry, which, as the 'Visions of Petrarch' show, had long since practised a variety of this art, was stimulated to it afresh. Spenser, in his turn, wrote 'Visions of the World's Vanity,' among which the sonnets on the Scarabee and the Remora, adapted from the first great emblem-writer Alciati, sufficiently declare his indebtedness. The influence may be thought to extend even to the allegory of the *Faery Queen*; for the figures in the procession at the House of Pride and in the Masque of Cupid, with others of their kind, are in a way but figures from the emblem books glorified by a larger art. At this point, however, the emblem as a special type merges in the more common forms of allegory.]

### I

ONE day, whiles that my daylie cares did  
sleepe,  
My spirit, shaking off her earthly prison,  
Began to enter into meditation deepe  
Of things exceeding reach of common rea-  
son;  
Such as this age, in which all good is geason,  
And all that humble is and meane debaced,  
Hath brought forth in her last declining  
season,  
Grieffe of good mindes, to see goodnesse  
disgraced.  
On which when as my thought was throgly  
placed,  
Unto my eyes strange showes presented  
were,  
Picturing that which I in minde embraced,  
That yet those sights empassion me full  
nere.  
Such as they were (faire Ladie) take in  
worth,  
That when time serves, may bring things  
better forth.

II

In summers day, when Phœbus fairly shone,  
I saw a bull as white as driven snowe,  
With gilden hornes embowed like the  
moone,  
In a fresh flowring meadow lying lowe:  
Up to his eares the verdant graspe did  
growe,  
And the gay floures did offer to be eaten;  
But he with fatnes so did overflowe,  
That he all wallowed in the weedes downe  
beaten,  
Ne car'd with them his daintie lips to  
sweeten:  
Till that a brize, a scorned little creature,  
Through his faire hide his angrie sting did  
threaten,  
And vext so sore, that all his goodly feature  
And all his plenteous pasture nought him  
pleased:  
So by the small the great is oft diseased.

III

Beside the fruitfull shore of muddie Nile,  
Upon a sunnie banke outstretched lay,  
In monstrous length, a mightie crocodile,  
That, cram'd with guiltles blood and greedie  
pray  
Of wretched people travailing that way,  
Thought all things lesse than his disdain-  
full pride.  
I saw a little bird, cal'd Tedula,  
The least of thousands which on earth abide,  
That forst this hideous beast to open wide  
The greisly gates of his devouring hell,  
And let him feede, as Nature doth provide,  
Upon his jawes, that with blacke venime  
swell.  
Why then should greatest things the  
least disdaine,  
Sith that so small so mightie can con-  
straine?

IV

The kingly bird, that beares Joves thunder-  
clap,  
One day did scorne the simple scarabee,  
Prond of his highest service and good hap,  
That made all other foules his thralls to  
bee:  
The silly flie, that no redresse did see,  
Spide where the eagle built his towring nest,  
And kindling fire within the hollow tree,  
Burnt up his yong ones, and himselfe dis-  
trest;

Ne suffred him in anie place to rest,  
But drove in Joves owne lap his eggs to  
lay;  
Where gathering also filth him to infest,  
Forst with the filth his eggs to fling away:  
For which when as the foule was wroth,  
said Jove,  
'Lo! how the least the greatest may re-  
prove.'

V

Toward the sea turning my troubled eye,  
I saw the fish (if fish I may it cleepe)  
That makes the sea before his face to flye,  
And with his flaggie finnes doth seeme to  
sweepe  
The fomie waves out of the dreadfull deep,  
The huge Leviathan, Dame Natures wonder,  
Making his sport, that manie makes to weep:  
A sword-fish small him from the rest did  
sunder,  
That, in his throat him pricking softly  
under,  
His wide abysses him forced forth to spewe,  
That all the sea did roare like heavens  
thunder,  
And all the waves were stain'd with filthie  
hewe.  
Hereby I learned have, not to despise  
What ever thing seemes small in com-  
mon eyes.

VI

An hideous dragon, dreadfull to behold,  
Whose backe was arm'd against the dint of  
speare  
With shields of brasse, that shone like  
burnisht golde,  
And forked sting, that death in it did  
beare,  
Strove with a spider, his unequall peare,  
And bad defiance to hisemie.  
The subtill vermin, creeping closely neare,  
Did in his drinke shed poyson privlie;  
Which, through his entrailes spreddin  
diversly,  
Made him to swell, that nigh his bowells  
brnst,  
And him enforst to yeeld the victorie,  
That did so much in his owne greatnesse  
trust.  
O how great vainnesse is it then to  
scorne  
The weake, that hath the strong so oft  
forlorne!



## VII

High on a hill a goodly cedar grewe,  
Of wondrous length and streight proportion,  
That farre abroad her daintie odours  
threwe;

Mongst all the daughters of proud Libanon,  
Her match in beautie was not anie one.  
Shortly within her inmost pith there bred  
A litle wicked worme, perceiv'd of none,  
That on her sap and vitall moysture fed:  
Thenceforth her garland so much honoured  
Began to die, (O great ruth for the same !)  
And her faire lockes fell from her loftie  
head,

That shortly balde and bared she became.  
I, which this sight beheld, was much  
dismayed,  
To see so goodly thing so soone decayed.

## VIII

Soone after this I saw an elephant,  
Adorn'd with bells and bosses gorgeously,  
That on his backe did beare (as batteilant)  
A gilden towre, which shone exceedingly;  
That he himselfe through foolish vanitie,  
Both for his rich attire and goodly forme,  
Was puffed up with passing surquedrie,  
And shortly gan all other beasts to scorne:  
Till that a little ant, a silly worme,  
Into his nostrils creeping, so him pained,  
That, casting downe his towres, he did de-  
forme

Both borrowed pride, and native beautie  
stained.

Let therefore nought, that great is,  
therein glorie,  
Sith so small thing his happines may  
varie.

## IX

Looking far foorth into the ocean wide,  
A goodly ship with banniers bravely dight,  
And flag in her top-gallant, I espide,  
Through the maine sea making her merry  
flight:

Faire blew the winde into her bosome right,  
And th' heavens looked lovely all the while,  
That she did seeme to daunce, as in delight,  
And at her owne felicitie did smile.

All sodainely there clove unto her keele  
A little fish, that men call Remora,  
Which stopt her course, and held her by  
the heele,

That winde nor tide could move her thence  
away.

Straunge thing me seemeth, that so small  
a thing  
Should able be so great an one to wring.

## X

A mighty lyon, lord of all the wood,  
Having his hunger throughly satisfide  
With pray of beasts and spoyle of living  
blood,  
Safe in his dreadles den him thought to  
hide:

His sternesse was his prayse, his strength  
his pride,

And all his glory in his cruell clawes.  
I saw a wasp, that fiercely him defide,  
And bad him battaile even to his jawes;  
Sore he him stong, that it the blood forth  
drawes,

And his proude heart is fild with fretting  
ire:

In vaine he threats his teeth, his tayle, his  
pawes,

And from his bloodie eyes doth sparkle fire;  
That dead himselfe he wisheth for de-  
spight.

So weakest may anoy the most of might.

## XI

What time the Romaine Empire bore the  
raine

Of all the world, and florisht most in might,  
The nations gan their soveraigntie disdain,  
And cast to quitt them from their bondage  
quight:

So, when all shrouded were in silent night,  
The Galles were, by corrupting of a mayde,  
Possest nigh of the Capitol through slight,  
Had not a goose the treachery bewrayde.  
If then a goose great Rome from ruine  
stayde,

And Jove himselfe, the patron of the place,  
Preservd from being to his foes betrayde,  
Why do vaine men mean things so much  
deface,

And in their might repose their most  
assurance,

Sith nought on earth can chalenge long  
endurance ?

## XII

When these sad sights were overpast and  
gone,

My spright was greatly moved in her rest,  
With inward ruth and deare affection,  
To see so great things by so small distrest:

Thenceforth I gan in my engrieved brest  
 To scorne all difference of great and small,  
 Sith that the greatest often are opprest,  
 And unawares doe into daunger fall.  
 And ye, that read these ruines tragicall,  
 Learne by their losse to love the low de-  
 gree,  
 And if that Fortune chaunce you up to call  
 To honours seat, forget not what you be:  
 For he that of himselfe is most secure  
 Shall finde his state most fickle and unsure.

FINIS.

## THE VISIONS OF BELLAY

[‘The Visions of Bellay’ and ‘The Visions of Petrarch,’ which belong together, are presumably the earliest poems of the volume. They are but a remodelling of Spenser’s first known literary work, the translation done in 1569 for Van der Noot’s *Théâtre*: it is more than likely, therefore, that they were executed while that work was still of interest to him, during his early days at Cambridge. The object of the youthful poet in these *rifacimenti* was apparently not to better his translation, but, for merely artistic effect, to turn the irregular stanzas of the Petrarch group and the blank verse poems of the Bellay group into formal sonnets. He does not seem to have consulted his foreign originals afresh, except that he here renders for the first time four sonnets out of Du Bellay which Van der Noot, in transferring the Frenchman’s series to his book, had dropped. The version of 1569 will be found in the Appendix.]

## I

It was the time when rest, soft sliding  
 downe  
 From heavens hight into mens heavy eyes,  
 In the forgetfulness of sleepe doth drowne  
 The carefull thoughts of mortall miseries.  
 Then did a ghost before mine eyes appeare,  
 On that great rivers banek, that runnes by  
 Rome,  
 Which, calling me by name, bad me to reare  
 My lookes to heaven, whence all good gifts  
 do come,  
 And crying lowd, ‘Loe now, beholde,’  
 quoth hee,  
 ‘What under this great temple placed is:  
 Lo, all is nought but flying vanitee!’  
 So I, that know this worlds inconstancies,

Sith onely God surmounts all times de-  
 cay,  
 In God alone my confidence do stay.

## II

On high hills top I saw a stately frame,  
 An hundred cubits high by just assize,  
 With hundreth pillours fronting faire the  
 same,  
 All wrought with diamond after Dorick  
 wize:  
 Nor brick, nor marble was the wall in  
 view,  
 But shining christall, which from top to  
 base  
 Out of her womb a thousand rayons threw  
 On hundred steps of Afrike golds enchase:  
 Golde was the parget, and the seeling bright  
 Did shine all sealy with great plates of  
 golde;  
 The floore of jasp and emeraude was dight.  
 O worlds vainesse! Whiles thus I did be-  
 hold,  
 An earthquake shooke the hill from lowest  
 seat,  
 And overthrew this frame with ruine  
 great.

## III

Then did a sharped spyre of diamond  
 bright,  
 Ten feete each way in square, appeare to  
 mee,  
 Justly proportion’d up unto his hight,  
 So far as archer might his level see:  
 The top thereof a pot did seeme to beare,  
 Made of the mettall which we most do  
 honour,  
 And in this golden vessell couched weare  
 The ashes of a mightie emperour:  
 Upon foure corners of the base were pight,  
 To beare the frame, foure great lyons of  
 gold;  
 A worthy tombe for such a worthy wight.  
 Alas! this world doth nought but grievance  
 hold.  
 I saw a tempest from the heaven descend,  
 Which this brave monument with flash  
 did rend.

## IV

I saw raysde up on yvorie pillours tall,  
 Whose bases were of richest mettalls warke,  
 The chapters alablaster, the fryses christall,  
 The double front of a triumphall arke:

On each side purtraid was a Victorie,  
Clad like a nimph, that wings of silver  
weares,

And in triumphant chayre was set on hie  
The auncient glory of the Romaine peares.  
No worke it seem'd of earthly craftsmans  
wit,

But rather wrought by his owne industry,  
That thunder-dartes for Jove his syre doth  
fit.

Let me no more see faire thing under sky,  
Sith that mine eyes have seene so faire a  
sight

With sodain fall to dust consumed quight.

## V

Then was the faire Dodonian tree far seene  
Upon seaven hills to spread his gladsome  
gleame,

And conquerours bedecked with his greene,  
Along the bancks of the Ausonian streame:  
There many an auncient trophee was ad-  
drest,

And many a spoyle, and many a goodly show,  
Which that brave races greatnes did attest,  
That whilome from the Troyan blood did  
flow.

Ravisht I was so rare a thing to vew;  
When lo! a barbarous troupe of clownish  
fone

The honour of these noble boughs down  
threw:

Under the wedge I heard the tronck to  
grone;

And since, I saw the roote in great dis-  
daine

A twinne of forked trees send forth  
again.

## VI

I saw a wolfe under a rockie cave  
Noursing two whelpes; I saw her litle ones  
In wanton dalliance the teate to crave,  
While she her neck wreath'd from them for  
the nones.

I saw her raunge abroad to seeke her food,  
And roming through the field with greedie  
rage

T' embrew her teeth and clawes with luke-  
warm blood

Of the small heards, her thirst for to as-  
swage.

I saw a thousand huntsmen, which descended  
Downe from the mountaines bordring Lom-  
bardie,

That with an hundred speares her flank wide  
rended:

I saw her on the plaine outstretched lie,  
Throwing out thousand throbs in her  
owne soyle:

Soone on a tree uphang'd I saw her spoyle.

## VII

I saw the bird that can the sun endure  
With feeble wings assay to mount on hight;  
By more and more she gan her wings t'  
assure,

Following th' ensample of her mothers sight:  
I saw her rise, and with a larger flight  
To pierce the cloudes, and with wide pin-  
neous

To measure the most haughtie mountaines  
hight,

Untill she raught the gods owne mansions:  
There was she lost; when suddaine I be-  
helde,

Where, tumbling through the ayre in frie  
fold,

All flaming downe she on the plaine was  
felde,

And soone her bodie turn'd to ashes colde.

I saw the foule that doth the light  
dispipe

Out of her dust like to a worrne arise.

## VIII

I saw a river swift, whose fomy billowes  
Did wash the ground work of an old great  
wall;

I saw it cover'd all with griesly shadowes,  
That with black horror did the ayre appall:  
Thereout a strange beast with seven heads  
arose,

That townes and castles under her brest  
did coure,

And seem'd both milder beasts and fiercer  
foes

Alike with equall ravine to devoure.

Much was I mazde, to see this monsters  
kinde

In hundred formes to change his fearefull  
hew;

When as at length I saw the wrathfull  
winde,

Which blows cold storms, burst out of  
Scithian mew,

That sperst these cloudes, and in so  
short as thought,

This dreadfull shape was vanished to  
nought.



## IX

Then all astoined with this mighty ghoast,  
 An hideous bodie, big and strong, I sawe,  
 With side long beard, and locks down  
 hanging loast,  
 Sterne face, and front full of Saturnlike  
 awe;  
 Who, leaning on the belly of a pot,  
 Poured forth a water, whose out gushing  
 flood  
 Ran bathing all the creakie shore afloat,  
 Whereon the Troyan prince spilt Turnus  
 blood;  
 And at his feete a bitch wolfe suck did  
 yeeld  
 To two young babes: his left the palme  
 tree stout,  
 His right hand did the peacefull olive  
 wield,  
 And head with lawrell garnisht was about.  
 Sudden both palme and olive fell away,  
 And faire greene lawrell branch did quite  
 decay.

## X

Hard by a rivers side a virgin faire,  
 Folding her armes to heaven with thousand  
 throbs,  
 And outraging her cheekes and golden  
 haire,  
 To falling rivers sound thus tun'd her  
 sobs.  
 'Where is,' quoth she, 'this whilom hon-  
 oured face?  
 Where the great glorie and the auncient  
 praise,  
 In which all worlds felicitie had place,  
 When gods and men my honour up did  
 raise?  
 Suffisd' it not that civill warres me made  
 The whole worlds spoile, but that this  
 Hydra new,  
 Of hundred Hercules to be assaide,  
 With seven heads, budding monstrous  
 crimes anew,  
 So many Neroes and Caligulaes  
 Out of these crooked shores must dayly  
 rayse?'

## XI

Upon an hill a bright flame I did see,  
 Waving aloft with triple point to skie,  
 Which, like incense of precious cedar tree,  
 With balmie odours fil'd th' ayre farre and  
 nie.

A bird all white, well feathered on each  
 wing,  
 Hereout up to the throne of gods did flie,  
 And all the way most pleasant notes did  
 sing,  
 Whilst in the smoake she unto heaven did  
 stie.  
 Of this faire fire the scattered rayes forth  
 threw  
 On everie side a thousand shining beames:  
 When sudden dropping of a silver dew  
 (O grievous chance!) gan quench those  
 precious flames;  
 That it, which earst so pleasant sent did  
 yeld,  
 Of nothing now but noyous sulphure  
 smeld.

## XII

I saw a spring out of a rocke forth rayle,  
 As cleare as christall gainst the sunnie  
 beames,  
 The bottome yeallow, like the golden grayle  
 That bright Pactolus washeth with his  
 streames:  
 It seem'd that Art and Nature had assem-  
 bled  
 All pleasure there, for which mans hart  
 could long;  
 And there a noyse alluring sleepe soft  
 trembled,  
 Of manie accords, more sweete than mer-  
 maids song:  
 The seates and benches shone as yvorie,  
 And hundred nymphes sate side by side  
 about:  
 When from nigh hills, with hideous outcrie,  
 A troupe of satyres in the place did rout,  
 Which with their villeine feete the  
 streame did ray,  
 Threw down the seats, and drove the  
 nymphs away.

## XIII

Much richer then that vessell seem'd to bee,  
 Which did to that sad Florentine appeare,  
 Casting mine eyes farre off, I chaunst to  
 see  
 Upon the Latine coast herselfe to reare.  
 But suddenly arose a tempest great,  
 Bearing close envie to these riches rare,  
 Which gan assaile this ship with dreadfull  
 threat,  
 This ship, to which none other might com-  
 pare.

And finally the storme impetuous  
 Sunke up these riches, second unto none,  
 Within the gulfe of greedie Nereus.  
 I saw both ship and mariners each one,  
 And all that treasure, drowned in the  
 maine:  
 But I the ship saw after raisd' againe.

## XIV

Long having deeply gron'd these visions  
 sad,  
 I saw a citie like unto that same,  
 Which saw the messenger of tidings glad,  
 But that on sand was built the goodly  
 frame:  
 It seem'd her top the firmament did rayse,  
 And no lesse rich than faire, right worthie  
 sure  
 (If ought here worthie) of immortall dayes,  
 Or if ought under heaven might firme en-  
 dure.  
 Much wondred I to see so faire a wall:  
 When from the Northerne coast a storme  
 arose,  
 Which, breathing furie from his inward  
 gall  
 On all which did against his course oppose,  
 Into a clowde of dust sperst in the aire  
 The weake foundations of this citie faire.

## XV

At length, even at the time when Morpheus  
 Most trulie doth unto our eyes appeare,  
 Wearie to see the heavens still wavering  
 thus,  
 I saw Typhæus sister comming neare;  
 Whose head, full bravely with a morion  
 hidd,  
 Did seeme to match the gods in majestie.  
 She, by a rivers bancke that swift downe  
 slidd,  
 Over all the world did raise a trophee  
 hie;  
 An hundred vanquisht kings under her  
 lay,  
 With armes bound at their backs in shame-  
 full wize.  
 Whilst I thus mazed was with great affray,  
 I saw the heavens in warre against her  
 rize:  
 Then downe she stricken fell with clap  
 of thonder,  
 That with great noyse I wakte in sudden  
 wonder.

FINIS.

THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH  
FORMERLY TRANSLATED

## I

BEING one day at my window all alone,  
 So manie strange things happened me to  
 see,  
 As much it grieveth me to thinke thereon.  
 At my right hand a hynde appear'd to mee,  
 So faire as mote the greatest god delite;  
 Two eager dogs did her pursue in chace,  
 Of which the one was blacke, the other  
 white:  
 With deadly force so in their cruell race  
 They pincht the haunches of that gentle  
 beast,  
 That at the last, and in short time, I spide,  
 Under a rocke, where she, alas! opprest,  
 Fell to the ground, and there untimely  
 dide.  
 Cruell death vanquishing so noble beau-  
 tie  
 Oft makes me wayle so hard a destenie.

## II

After, at sea a tall ship did appeare,  
 Made all of heben and white yvorie;  
 The sailes of golde, of silke the tackle  
 were:  
 Milde was the winde, calme seem'd the  
 sea to bee,  
 The skie eachwhere did show full bright  
 and faire:  
 With rich treasures this gay ship freighted  
 was:  
 But sudden storme did so turmoyle the aire,  
 And tumbled up the sea, that she (alas!)  
 Strake on a rock, that under water lay,  
 And perished past all recoverie.  
 O how great ruth, and sorrowfull assay,  
 Doth vex my spirite with perplexitie,  
 Thus in a moment to see lost and drown'd  
 So great riches as like cannot be found!

## III

Then heavenly branches did I see arise  
 Out of the fresh and lustie lawrell tree,  
 Amidst the yong greene wood: of Paradise  
 Some noble plant I thought my selfe to see.  
 Such store of birds therein yshrowded were,  
 Chaunting in shade their sundrie melodie,  
 That with their sweetnes I was ravish't  
 nere.  
 While on this lawrell fixed was mine eie,

The skie gan everie where to overcast,  
And darkned was the welkin all about:  
When sudden flash of heavens fire out brast,  
And rent this royall tree quite by the  
roote;

Which makes me much and ever to com-  
plaine;  
For no such shadow shalbe had againe.

## IV

Within this wood, out of a rocke did rise  
A spring of water, mildly rumbling downe,  
Whereto approached not in anie wise  
The homely shepheard, nor the ruder  
clowne;  
But manie Muses, and the nymphes with-  
all,

That sweetly in accord did tune their voyce  
To the soft sounding of the waters fall,  
That my glad hart thereat did much re-  
joyce.

But while herein I tooke my chiefe delight,  
I saw (alas!) the gaping earth devoure  
The spring, the place, and all cleane out of  
sight:

Which yet aggreeves my hart even to this  
houre,

And wounds my soule with rufull me-  
morie,

To see such pleasures gon so suddenly.

## V

I saw a phoenix in the wood alone,  
With purple wings, and crest of golden hewe;  
Strange bird he was, whereby I thought  
anone,

That of some heavenly wight I had the  
vewe;

Untill he came unto the broken tree,  
And to the spring, that late devoured was.  
What say I more? Each thing at last we  
see

Doth passe away: the phoenix there, alas!  
Spying the tree destroid, the water dride,  
Himselfe smote with his beake, as in dis-  
daine,

And so foorthwith in great despight he  
dide:

That yet my heart burnes in exceeding  
paine,

For ruth and pitie of so haples plight.  
O, let mine eyes no more see such a  
sight!

## VI

At last, so faire a ladie did I spie,  
That thinking yet on her I burne and  
quake:

On hearbs and flowres she walked pen-  
sively,

Milde, but yet love she proudly did for-  
sake:

White seem'd her robes, yet woven so they  
were

As snow and golde together had been  
wrought:

Above the wast a darke clowde shrouded  
her,

A stinging serpent by the heele her caught;  
Wherewith she languisht as the gathered  
floure,

And well assur'd she mounted up to joy.

Alas! on earth so nothing doth endure,

But bitter griefe and sorrowfull annoy:

Which make this life wretched and mis-  
erable,

Tossed with stormes of fortune variable.

## VII

When I behold this tickle trustles state  
Of vaine worlds glorie, flitting too and fro,  
And mortall men tossed by troublous fate  
In restles seas of wretchednes and woe,

I wish I might this wearie life forgoe,  
And shortly turne unto my happie rest,  
Where my free spirite might not anie moe  
Be vext with sights, that doo her peace  
molest.

And ye, faire Ladie, in whose bounteous  
brest

All heavenly grace and vertue shrined is,  
When ye these rythmes doo read, and vew  
the rest,

Loath this base world, and thinke of hea-  
vens blis:

And though ye be the fairest of Gods  
creatures,

Yet thinke, that death shall spoyle your  
goodly features.

FINIS.



# THE FAERIE QUEENE

DISPOSED INTO TWELVE BOOKS, FASHIONING

XII MORALL VERTUES

LONDON

PRINTED FOR WILLIAM PONSONBIE

1590

TO THE  
MOST MIGHTIE  
AND  
MAGNIFICENT EMPRESSE

ELIZABETH,  
BY THE  
GRACE OF GOD  
QUEENE OF ENGLAND,  
FRANCE AND  
IRELAND  
DEFENDER OF THE FAITH &C.  
HER MOST HUMBLE  
SERVANT:  
ED. SPENSER

[Dedication of the edition of 1590.]

TO THE MOST HIGH  
MIGHTIE AND MAGNIFICENT EMPRESSE  
RENEWMED FOR PIETIE, VERTUE,  
AND ALL GRATIOUS GOVERNMENT

ELIZABETH  
BY THE GRACE OF GOD QUEENE OF  
ENGLAND FRAUNCE AND IRELAND  
AND OF VIRGINIA,  
DEFENDOUR OF THE FAITH, &C.  
HER MOST HUMBLE SERVAUNT  
EDMUND SPENSER  
DOTH IN ALL HUMILITIE  
DEDICATE, PRESENT AND CONSECRATE  
THESE HIS LABOURS  
TO LIVE WITH THE ETERNITIE  
OF HER FAME

[Dedication of the edition of 1596.]

[When the first three books of the *Faery Queen* were published in 1590, Spenser had been at work upon the poem for at least ten years. The earliest records of its existence are worth transcribing. In the letter to Harvey of April 2, 1580, he writes: 'Nowe, my *Dreames* and *Dying Pellicane* being fully finished . . . and presentlye to bee imprinted, I wil in hande forthwith with my *Faery Queene*, whyche I praye you hartily send me withal expedition, and your frendly letters and long expected judgement wythal, whyche let not be shorte, but in all pointes suche as you ordinarilye use and I extraordinarily desire.' That was in the days just following the publication of the *Calendar*, some three months and a half before he went with Lord Grey to Ireland. There, probably in the year 1582, occurred that gathering in the little cottage near Dublin so memorably recounted by his friend Lodowick Bryskett. Being invited to speak of moral philosophy, its benefits and its nature, Spenser declined: 'For,' said he, 'sure I am that it is not unknowne

unto you that I have already undertaken a work tending to the same effect, which is in heroical verse, under the title of a *Faerie Queene*, to represent all the moral vertues, assigning to every virtue a knight to be the patron and defender of the same: in whose actions and feates of armes and chivalry the operations of that virtue whereof he is the protector are to be expressed, and the vices and unruly appetites that oppose themselves against the same to be beaten downe and overcome. Which work . . . I have already well entred into.' The company were content to await its conclusion.

Eight years passed, completing a decade, with but a quarter of the whole work done, and still this conclusion seemed to the poet within easy reach. The Letter to Raleigh shows him quite confident of achieving his hundred and forty-fourth canto, shows him even planning another hundred and forty-four in sequel. Mortality, that favorite theme of his generation, the theme of *Complaints*, was assuredly not in his mind when he thought of his *Faery Queen*

And, indeed, the second three books were executed much more rapidly than the first, at the rate, it seems, of about a book a year; for they can hardly have been taken up in earnest before his return to Ireland in 1591, and they were completed in the spring of 1594, under the pressure, one may think, of his approaching marriage. How he progressed with them is partly recorded in the thirty-third and the eightieth sonnets of the *Amoretti*. They were not published till 1596, apparently because he could not take them to London earlier.

This eightieth sonnet of the *Amoretti*, which announces the completion of thus much of his poem, declares that, 'being halfe fordonne' (i. e. exhausted), the poet will rest, 'and gather to himself new breath awhile.' That is the last we hear about the further progress of the *Faery Queen* until the publication in 1609, ten years after his death, of the cantos on Mountability. These have been regarded by some as an independent poem (not unlike the *Cinque Canti* of Ariosto) — for the reason, it seems, that they are competent to stand alone. Yet the mere fact that they were numbered VI, VII, and VIII (surely not by the printer) indicates that they are part of a larger whole, and stanza 37 of the first of them gives the clearest possible evidence that they belong to the great romance. Were these cantos, then, all that Spenser found time during four years to compose for the remaining books of his poem, or did he write others, which may have perished in the disaster of 1598? Again, their being numbered as they are is suggestive: Spenser may be thought, at least to have planned this one book in outline, possibly to have executed other parts of it. A generation after his death, Sir James Ware asserted that the *Faery Queen* had been finished, and that the unpublished books had been lost in 1598 'by the disorder and abuse of his servant, whom he had sent before him into England.' The story is, of course, apocryphal (that Spenser could have composed six books in four years is a manifest impossibility; nor would any so extensive a loss have failed to be recorded earlier); yet it may well be that the sack of Kilcolman deprived the world of not a few such fragments as this.

In that letter of April 2, 1580, from which our first knowledge of the *Faery Queen* is derived, Spenser, we have seen, called for the judgment of Harvey upon his new venture. Harvey, never loath to express an opinion, sent back one of those misguided verdicts to which men of his stamp are unluckily prone: it would be a mere curiosity of criticism, did it not by chance record the views of the poet himself. 'To be plaine,' is the summing up, 'I am voyde of al judgement. if your *Nine*

*Comædies* . . . come not neerer Ariostoes comedies . . . than that *Elvish Queene* doth to his *Orlando Furioso*, which, notwithstanding, you wil needesseeme to emulate, and hope to overgo, as you flatly professed your self in one of your last letters.' In undertaking what he must have meant to be the grand work of his life, Spenser, then, was deliberately setting himself to rival Ariosto.

This avowed rivalry is involved in the very origins of his plan. For, first and most obviously, he must build up an extended poem of action: the material in which his didactic purpose was to be worked out, was epic. In this field all the many influences that would control his choice drew him irresistibly to one quarter, the romance. The poetry in which the traditions of his native literature were embodied gave him, for epics, romances. The great legendary hero of his race, the ancestor of his Queen, Arthur, was at the very heart of romance. The highest embodiment of his own spiritual ideals was in chivalry, and chivalry implied romance. Romance, too, satisfied to the full his native delight in color and warmth and magic of beauty. The epics of antiquity, on the other hand, dealt with alien matter, in an alien, though noble, spirit. Such imitations of them as had been made by Trissino, Ronsard, and others, were too utterly dreary to encourage a like attempt, and the *Gerusalemme Liberata* of Tasso, in which the native glamour of romance was to be informed by their more spacious and simpler art, had not yet been given to the world. Nothing could be more natural, then, more inevitable, than that Spenser should set himself to rival the *Orlando Furioso*. In 1580 it still stood as the one really great poem of epic scope that sixteenth-century Europe had produced, the accepted masterpiece, moreover, of that variety of the epic to which he was irresistibly drawn, the romance poem.

But this was not all. Ariosto was furthermore accounted a grave and moral poet, a master in the art of poetic edification. He had come by this repute through the clearness of critical necessities. His fertility and delightfulness, which seemed to revive the lost epical spirit of Homer, had captivated at once all lovers of poetry; but poetry could not in those days be its own *raison d'être*, it must make for moral edification: the inevitable concern of his admirers, therefore, had for generations been to expound the ultimate seriousness of his purpose. His easy-going scepticism, his irreverence, his delight in life and action, moral and immoral, for their own sake, without ethical prepossessions, these qualities they ignored or explained away: his seriousness (sometimes, by force of imaginative sympathy,

very genuine, but more often conventional or factitious) they exalted to a level with the high seriousness of Virgil. The chief engine of their work was allegory. Ariosto, who made free use of whatever might enrich his poem, had adorned it here and there with frankly allegorical episodes: successive commentators had forced a like interpretation upon other passages, till, by 1580, the whole poem was expounded as a many-colored, comprehensive allegory of life, and all its admirers were agreed on its fundamental morality.

Our sage and serious Spenser, then, could find even in the moral aspects of the *Orlando* matter for sincere emulation: in particular, of course, that allegory which had been so thoroughly read into it by commentators. This was, at best, somewhat irregular: it illustrated the moral problems of life, efficiently perhaps, but rather at random: it left room for a more philosophic method. He must have felt that, in this regard, he might safely 'hope to overgo' the Italian. For, with a genuine fervor for allegory, impossible to the more worldly and modern Ariosto, impossible even to those commentators on the *Orlando* who had pushed allegorical interpretation so far, he had conceived a plan of vastly greater scope and more thorough method. His poem was to expound a complete system of Christian ethics, modelled upon the Aristotelian scheme of the virtues and vices, and this main allegory was to be enriched by another, to deal with notable contemporary events and personages.

It is one thing, however, to compose a great poem of action which commentators may find means to interpret allegorically, and quite another to develop a set of ideas allegorically in a great poem of action. For, given the action, it will go hard but some definite spiritual parallel may be found for it (as Tasso, having composed his romance-epic, safeguarded the most seductive passages by *ex post facto* allegorizing): given the set of ideas, however, action, free, self-sustaining, moving of its own impulse in a plain path, is by no means easy to invent. And Spenser's material was unusually stubborn. He had twelve 'private morall vertues,' each to be embodied in a knight, whose 'feates of armes and chivalry' were to show the workings of that virtue with regard to 'the vices and unruly appetites that oppose themselves against the same.' To devise twelve appropriate courses of action was manifestly but to begin: these must furthermore be held together; and how? If he carried them all forward simultaneously, by interweaving, after the manner of the *Orlando Furioso*, he might indeed achieve unity, but he would also confuse the philosophic development of each separate

virtue: if he developed the action of each virtue separately and continuously, the second not begun until the first was ended, he would be composing not one poem but twelve. The alternative was certainly hard. In the philosophic scheme, however, after which his own was planned, Aristotle's, Spenser found the rudiments of a solution. Concerning Magnanimity he read that 'it seems to be a kind of ornament of all the other virtues, in that it makes them better and cannot be without them.' From this hint he developed means of unification. The twelve virtues were to be treated separately, but at the same time brought into relation to the master virtue Magnanimity, — or, as he chose, Magnificence. In narrative terms, there was to be a hero, who, by playing an important, though it might be a brief, part in the enterprise of each knight, should be gradually developed as the central agent of the poem. Epical dignity would be furthered if this hero were historic, and romance pointed to the British Arthur. Then there must be a heroine — who could hardly be Guenevere. At this point the allegory gave an opening to loyalty — or, if one pleases, adulation. For according to Aristotle, the object-matter of Magnanimity is honor, or 'Glory,' and who could better stand for this than Spenser's sovereign, Elizabeth? This choice determined the rest. She could not be introduced *in propria persona*, still less as another historic character. The poet, therefore, invented for her the disguise of Gloriana, Queen of Faery Land. For narrative function he gave her the initiation of the twelve enterprises.

This general outline of action once conceived, the separate parts could be planned as the poem progressed. There was no need that the matter of each book should be determined at the outset; even the conclusion might be left for a time undecided. The one problem to be solved immediately was the beginning. The various enterprises were to start from the court of Gloriana on successive days of her great annual feast. Should this feast be described at the outset in a sort of poem, or should each separate book begin with an account of that particular day of the feast on which the knight of the book was sent forth? One or other of these methods would unquestionably have been the choice of Ariosto, who, as a genuine romance poet, believed in beginning at the beginning. To begin there, however, would not be epic (Ariosto himself had been blamed for just that); the genuine epic poet plunged at once *in medias res*; and the *Faery Queen*, though not epic in formal structure, ought none the less to acknowledge classical law. Spenser, therefore, determined to keep his beginnings, the feast, for retrospective presentment. Since he evi-



dently felt also, however, that this feast was one great pageant, to be preserved entire and not distributed among the several books, it must manifestly, in default of first place, come last. So far his plan might seem to be clear. Yet the account given in the prefatory letter is oddly perplexing. According to one passage, the twelfth and last book is to be devoted entire to the beginnings; according to another, it would seem to be intended for the enterprise of the twelfth knight; and surely, one might expect from it some termination to the quest of Magnificence for Glory, of Arthur for his Faery Queen. One inclines to doubt if Spenser really knew just where his plan was taking him.

So organized, the *Faery Queen* must manifestly be at a disadvantage with other great poems of action. Despite the ingenious device for linking the separate enterprises to the quest of Arthur and the rule of Gloriana, the poem could not have that unity, that centralization of forces, which distinguishes the epics of antiquity. In the six books composed, Arthur does not really become a controlling and guiding power in the action, nor is it likely that all the twelve could have made him that. Gloriana could never have become much more than a kind of presiding divinity, a transcendent looker-on. Nor, in lieu of centralization, could the poem attain the forward energy of the *Orlando Furioso*. Ariosto's romance moves like a broad river, in a dozen currents, now mingling, now separating, ever on, leisurely, irresistibly. In the *Faery Queen*, one enterprise must run its course uninterrupted to the end, and then disappear forever; a fresh start must be made, another enterprise, with new characters, set in motion and followed through; and then a third. That these enterprises succeed each other in time, that certain episodes are carried over from book to book, and certain characters, can hardly create the impression of forward energy. As it progresses, indeed, the poem takes on more and more the external aspect of the *Orlando*, but the ground plan of separate enterprises keeps its action fundamentally different. It moves without clearly perceptible goal.

This peculiarity of organization, however, is hardly the cause that so many have found the *Faery Queen* tedious. They might complain, rather, that the poem is not grounded in action, that in those simple human energies which alone could sustain an epic or a romance at such length it is sadly wanting. And they would complain with some reason. Spenser's knights pass from chivalric feat to chivalric feat with due enterprise, but the eye of their creator is less often upon the doing than the deed. Scene follows scene in the narrative, less often an encounter of active forces than a picture

of spiritual conditions. Spenser, indeed, had not that delight in the realities of living action, that native sense for the situations that lurk in the conflict of living energies, which were the gift of the poet he particularly emulated. The combats of his knights, for example, how often they seem to be repetitions of a set ceremony! To Ariosto each combat is a new and quite peculiar act of life; it is the outbreak of forces that meet in a fresh combination or under fresh conditions; simple or intricate, it has a spirit and growth of its own. That unending recurrence of encounters, therefore, which is the special infirmity of romance, becomes in his poem a manifestation of exuberant vitality. In the *Faery Queen*, on the other hand, spirited as some few of the combats are, particularly those of the second book, one recognizes only too clearly that Spenser's heart is not in this eager work. Nor is it in that active conflict of will with will, of purpose with circumstance, which is the life of the poetry of action. Even in those scenes which are most truly dynamic, not merely picturesque or expository, scenes like the meeting of the Redcross Knight with Despair, the action, the power, is mainly embodied in one personage; there is little interplay of forces. For situations his sense is at times curiously fallible; as when Britomart at the close of her combat with Arthegall, and during and after the negotiations for truce, is left standing, like an image, with her sword uplifted to strike.

It would seem sufficiently clear that such failings as these, in so far as they are failings, spring from a native inaptitude for the poetry of action. Yet how often we hear them and others ascribed to the allegorical design! If, in any passage, the poet's imagination seems to flag, the blame is always on the allegory. The combat of the Redcross Knight with the Dragon is conventional and lifeless — because the allegory obliges Spenser to draw the fighting out to the third day. Medina and her two sisters are desperately uninteresting, the domestic organization of the House of Alma is described in rather ridiculous detail — again because of the allegory. The allegory, in short, is mainly a check or drag upon the poet's naturally spontaneous and fresh imagination. That many of the leading characters, for instance, are too shadow-like, not living men and women in whom one can take a living interest, is what might have been expected; as embodiments of abstractions they could not be other. Bunyan, to be sure, has shown that allegory can be made vital at length, but the length of the *Pilgrim's Progress* is as nothing to that of the *Faery Queen*, and its plan is the perfection of simplicity. To an allegorical scheme, on

the other hand, so vast and so complicated as that devised by Spenser, no poet could have given full imaginative life. Hence, in the end, the poem's peculiar tediousness.

In criticism such as this there is just enough truth to be misleading. The combat of the Redcrosse Knight with the Dragou, Medina and her sisters, the House of Alma — it cannot be denied that these must be charged on the allegory. Yet when we survey the poem from end to end, how many such staring failures do we find, how many failures that can clearly be laid to allegorical pressure? It is true also that, if many of the leading characters are somewhat shadow-like and unreal, the fault may partly be that they personate abstractions. But has Spenser, anywhere in his work at large, shown signs of the power to create substantial men and women? If the *Faery Queen* had been designed as pure romance, would its leading characters have been more human? Is not their remoteness due quite as much to his absorption in the ideal as to his love of mere allegory? Indeed, this supposed domination of the poem by allegory, the allegory of abstractions, will hardly bear the test of simple reading. In the first two books, of course, those with which everybody is familiar, it is indisputable. The Redcrosse Knight and Una, Sir Guyon and his Palmer, and the long array of personages among whom these two champions execute their 'feates of armes and chivalry' very manifestly stand for qualities, ideas, and the like, and the 'feates of armes and chivalry' for successive 'operations' of the spirit. With Book III. however, there comes a sudden and most curious change. Britomart, the heroine, is still nominally of the old order, the formal embodiment of chastity, and she is accompanied by a few figures like Malecasta, also of the old order; but other figures appear, and in the greater number, who can be reduced to abstractions by nothing short of violence. Florimel is no more than a beautiful maiden of romance, faithful to her love amid disasters; Hellenore is but a frail wife, Malbecco, up to the time of his transformation, but an old and jealous husband; and their actions are equally unsymbolic. In a word, barring personal and historic allusions, most of the characters in Book III are no more than men and women of certain general types engaged in actions which are typically moral. One may, of course, with Spenser, call such work allegory, but it is manifestly not that kind of allegory which can hamper free movement of the imagination; and when one notices that it prevails throughout the better part of the remaining books, one wonders at the persistence of the old cry.

Yet after this much-abused allegory of ab-

stractions has ceased to dominate the romance, it still remains a mode of the poet's rarest creative power — among the minor figures. Throughout the poem, indeed, these figures are, on the whole, more vivid than those which lead the action, and when they are particularly vivid it is often because of their allegorical intensity. The main characters draw but little life from the allegory; when they impress us, it is rather as types of ideal humanity; but those others, among whom they move, how often their life is the very quintessence of an emotion or an idea! It is not the procession at the House of Pride, or the Masque of Cupid, that one need cite anew. Splendid as these pageants are, they are mainly ornamental, and the value of allegory as ornament has always been recognized. But those strange figures that play a small but real part in the action, one succeeding another in brief stages, how much of the power of the poem issues from them! We may be indifferent to Arthur, to Belphœbe, to Duesza, to Cambell and Triamond; but Despair and Atin and Guile and the blacksmith Care and Talus (if he be a minor figure), these are unforgettable. They are not human beings; their very life of feature and action is rooted in the immaterialities they embody. If ever abstractions took flesh and walked, it is these. And beside them are half-human creatures, such as Ignaro, to link them with wholly human and delightful creatures such as Phædria, whose charm is forever at odds with her allegorical duty. Surely, had the *Faery Queen* been pure romance, it would have been a much less exquisite creation.

For, in fine, the world of the *Faery Queen* is not altogether the world of romance; it is, if possible, more remote, more strange, more diverse. By its forest fountains meet Venus and Diana, almost within the ken of Christian knights and ladies, and in its castles or upon its open hillsides and heaths, among gentry and retainers and shepherds and very rabble, side by side with giants and monsters, move sheer incarnations of the immaterial. It is a world of jarring elements gathered from antiquity and the Middle Ages and the Renaissance, and harmonized by the serenest of poetic imaginations. In such a world as this, if we can breathe its atmosphere, we shall not crave the vigor and sparkle of movement that are at such full tide in the *Orlando Furioso*, nor even the graver human energies of the great epics: it has a life to which these are not essential. For, externally a poem of action, meant to rival Ariosto's, the *Faery Queen* is at heart but the vision of a contemplative mind to which the main realities of life are beauty and the law of the spirit. If it quickens at rare intervals



into action full and vigorous, the quickening is but for a moment, and when it subsides we are not regretful. Faint in passion, faint even in pathos, the poem appeals most intimately to that 'inward eye' which can read forms and hues of beauty, and feature and bearing as they reveal the spirit, and to the mind that can read the spirit in speech. And this world that Spenser has created can never be to us a mere Kubla Khan paradise of romance. Amid its throng of ideal creatures, though we may not feel the force of the express moral doctrine they enact, we shall feel the force of the poet's own bent. His temper of grave and sweet spirituality, always human, that tone of the mind which is ever the chief spring of moral influence, this will be unescapable, and, in the end, it will be this as much as the pure magic of his imagination that will seem to impart to the poem its peculiar and imperturbable atmosphere.

Spenser was long ago called 'the Rubens of our poets,' and the phrase is still passed about. The vision which it evokes of large, plump, pink-and-white women and of big-limbed, tawny men, of superb physical vigor and of bright magnificence of color, will hardly appeal to the judicious as Spenserian. If one must have a phrase, let it be Charles Lamb's 'the poet of poets,' since that, despite its apparent vagueness, has a meaning. For what finally impresses us in the *Faery Queen* is its triumph over a dozen capital defects by the power of a very few, and those the essential, poetic qualities. Its narrative plan is fundamentally vicious, the narrative execution of the various episodes is weakened again and again by the most singular blunders, it is neither consistent allegory nor consistent romance, it gives over one canto to rhymed genealogy, another to rhymed chronicle, another to a merely ingenious transmutation of the human body almost as crude as that at the conclusion of the *Roman de la Rose*; one might continue the story of its defects, general and particular, for pages. And yet, as unmistakably as the *Divina Commedia*, it has the imaginative and spiritual tone of high poetry. Perhaps just because of these defects, moreover, no poem makes us feel more keenly the mere virtue of style. Spenser's almost unerring sense for language and his apparently inexhaustible power of welling out the most limpid and exquisitely modulated verse, these make poetry of material that his imagination cannot vivify. It is these, too, that have made him master to so many poetic spirits of alien temper. He has taught more poets than almost any other poet in our literature.

The most patent, though not the most inti-

mate, mode of his influence has been his great stanza. Much has been written about its qualities of form, which have been illustrated by a long line of masterpieces; a word, therefore, about its origins may be better worth while, especially since critics have not always remembered that, if he invented this stanza, it was, in part, of necessity. When he began the *Faery Queen*, indeed, the forms among which he might have chosen were few and not all good. Blank verse had not yet been supplied to free movement by generations of dramatic artists; it was a yet new and strange invention. The ten-syllable couplet labored under the name of 'riding rimes' and was associated chiefly with the more humorous passages of the *Canterbury Tales*. Spenser might well have disregarded this prejudice, but it was of weight. In stanzas, the accredited form for high poetry was the rhyme royal, the stanza of his own *Hymns*. This was capable of sweetness and grace, even of vigor: seven lines, however, was rather narrow compass for the more extended harmonies of verse, and the arrangement of the rhymes at the close restricted free movement. Finally, there was the Italian *ottava rima*, the stanza of Ariosto's romance and of his own 'Virgil's Gnat.' For such a poem as he was about to undertake it might seem to have been the most natural form. Yet, admirably adapted to a rapid and flexible style and to the ready interchange of pathos, humor, and lively action, as also to facile sweetness, it was hardly capable of graver modulations, of such higher harmonies as Spenser was then dreaming. The first six lines were too fluent, the distinct couplet at the close was too epigrammatic. In defect, then, of satisfactory models, he was driven to invention. He knew, in Chaucer and Lyndesay, a fine, sonorous old stanza in eight verses, built of two quatrains linked by rhyme. Such linking by rhyme was familiar to him from Marot as well, and he had practised the art in the *Calendar*. He had also there experimented with the alexandrine, had learned to moderate and vary its pendulum movement, and had found that, in combination with other measures, it was capable of the most unexpected sonorities. For his *Faery Queen*, therefore, he merely added to the old stanza that he knew a final alexandrine, and by that simplest combination transfigured them both.

'Beauty making beautiful old rime,  
In praise of ladies dead and lovely knights.'

Those verses of Shakespeare might seem to have been meant for motto to the *Faery Queen*. Read somewhat fantastically, they might also fit the stanza to which the *Faery Queen* owes so much of its abiding charm.]



A LETTER OF THE AUTHORS  
EXPOUNDING HIS WHOLE INTENTION IN  
THE COURSE OF THIS WORKE: WHICH  
FOR THAT IT GIVETH GREAT LIGHT  
TO THE READER, FOR THE BETTER  
UNDERSTANDING IS HEREUNTO  
ANNEXED

TO THE RIGHT NOBLE, AND VALOROUS,  
SIR WALTER RALEIGH KNIGHT, LORD  
WARDEIN OF THE STANNERYES,  
AND HER MAJESTIES LIEF-  
TENANT OF THE COUNTY  
OF CORNEWAYLL

SIR, knowing how doubtfully all allegories may be construed, and this booke of mine, which I have entituled the *Faery Queene*, being a continued allegory, or darke conceit, I have thought good, aswell for avoyding of gealous opinions and misconstructions, as also for your better light in reading therof, (being so by you commanded,) to discover unto you the general intention and meaning, which in the whole course thereof I have fashioned, without expressing of any particular purposes or by accidents therein occasioured. The generall end therefore of all the booke is to fashion a gentleman or noble person in vertuous and gentle discipline: which for that I conceived shoulde be most plausible and pleasing, being coloured with an historicall fiction, the which the most part of men delight to read, rather for variety of matter then for profite of the ensample, I chose the historye of King Arthure, as most fitte for the excellency of his person, being made famous by many mens former workes, and also furthest from the daunger of envy, and suspition of present time. In which I have followed all the antique poets historicall: first Homere, who in the persons of Agamemnon and Ulysses hath ensampled a good governour and a ver-<sup>30</sup> tuous man, the one in his Ilias, the other in his Odysseis; then Virgil, whose like intention was to doe in the person of Æneas; after him Ariosto comprised them both in his Orlando; and lately Tasso dissevered them againe, and formed both parts in two persons, namely that part which they in philosophy call Ethice, or vertues of a private man, coloured in his Rinaldo; the other

named Politice in his Godfredo. By en-<sup>40</sup> sample of which excellent poets, I labour to pourtraict in Arthure, before he was king, the image of a brave knight, perfected in the twelve private morall vertues, as Aristotle hath devised, the which is the purpose of these first twelve bookes: which if I finde to be well accepted, I may be perhaps encouraged to frame the other part of polliticke vertues in his person, after that hee came to be king. To some, I <sup>50</sup> know, this methode will seeme displeasaunt, which had rather have good discipline delivered plainly in way of precepts, or sermoned at large, as they use, then thus clowdily enwrapped in allegoricall devises. But such, me seeme, should be satisfide with the use of these dayes, seeing all things accounted by their shoves, and nothing esteemed of, that is not delightfull and pleasing to commune sence. For this <sup>60</sup> cause is Xenophon preferred before Plato, for that the one, in the exquisite depth of his judgement, formed a commune welth such as it should be, but the other in the persou of Cyrus and the Persians fashioned a governement, such as might best be: so much more profitable and gracious is doctrine by ensample, then by rule. So have I laboured to doe in the person of Arthure: whome I conceive, after his long educa-<sup>70</sup> tion by Timon, to whom he was by Merlin delivered to be brought up, so soone as he was borne of the Lady Igrayne, to have seene in a dream or visiou the Faery Queen, with whose excellent beauty ravished, he awaking resolved to seeke her out, and so being by Merlin armed, and by Timon thoroughly instructed, he went to seeke her forth in Faerye Land. In that Faery Queene I meane glory in my generall intention, <sup>80</sup> but in my particular I conceive the most excellent and glorious person of our soveraine the Queene, and her kingdome in Faery Land. And yet, in some places els, I doe otherwise shadow her. For considering she beareth two persons, the one of a most royall queene or empresse, the other of a most vertuous and beautifull lady, this latter part in some places I doe expresse in Belphebe, fashioning her name according <sup>90</sup> to your owne excellent conceipt of Cynthia, (Phæbe and Cynthia being both names of Diana.) So in the person of Prince Arthure I sette forth magnificence in particular.

which vertue, for that (according to Aristotle and the rest) it is the perfection of all the rest, and containeth in it them all, therefore in the whole course I mention the deedes of Arthure applyable to that vertue which I write of in that booke. But 100 of the xii. other vertues I make xii. other knights the patrones, for the more variety of the history : of which these three bookes contain three. The first of the Knight of the Redcrosse, in whome I expresse holynes : The seconde of Sir Guyon, in whome I sette forth temperance : The third of Britomartis, a lady knight, in whome I picture chastity. But because the beginning of the whole worke seemeth 110 abrupte and as depending upon other antecedents, it needs that ye know the occasion of these three knights severall adventures. For the methode of a poet historical is not such as of an historiographer. For an historiographer discourseth of affayres orderly as they were donne, accounting as well the times as the actions ; but a poet thrusteth into the midst, even where it most concerneth him, and there reconrsing to the 120 thinges forepaste, and divining of thinges to come, maketh a pleasing analysis of all.

The beginning therefore of my history, if it were to be told by an historiographer, should be the twelfth booke, which is the last ; where I devise that the Faery Queene kept her annuall feaste xii. dayes, upon which xii. severall dayes, the occasions of the xii. severall adventures hapned, which being undertaken by xii. severall knights, are in these 130 xii. books severally handled and discoursed. The first was this. In the beginning of the feast, there presented him selfe a tall clownish yongge man, who, falling before the Queen of Faries, desired a boone (as the manner then was) which during that feast she might not refuse : which was that hee might have the atchievement of any adventure, which during that feaste should happen : that being graunted, he rested him 140 on the floore, unfitte through his rusticity for a better place. Soone after entred a faire ladye in mourning weedes, riding on a white asse, with a dwarfe behind her leading a warlike steed, that bore the armes of a knight, and his speare in the dwarfes hand. Shee, falling before the Queene of Faeries, complained that her father and mother, an ancient king and queene, had bene by an huge

dragon many years shut up in a brasen 150 castle, who thence suffred them not to yssew : and therefore besought the Faery Queene to assygne her some one of her knights to take on him that exployt. Presently that clownish person, upstarting, desired that adventure : whereat the Queene much wondering, and the lady much gairesaying, yet he earnestly importuned his desire. In the end the lady told him, that unlesse that armour which she brought would serve him (that is, the ar- 160 mour of a Christian man specified by Saint Paul, vi. Ephes.), that he could not succeed in that enterprise : which being forthwith put upon him with dewe furnitures thereunto, he seemed the goodliest man in al that company, and was well liked of the lady. And eftesoones taking on him knighthood, and mounting on that straunge courser, he went forth with her on that adventure : where beginneth the first booke, vz. 170

A gentle knight was pricking on the playne, &c.

The second day ther came in a palmer bearing an infant with bloody hands, whose parents he complained to have bene slayn by an enchaunteresse called Acrasia : and therefore craved of the Faery Queene, to appoint him some knight to performe that adventure ; which being assigned to Sir Guyon, he presently went forth with that same palmer : which is the beginning of the sec- 180 ond booke and the whole subject thereof. The third day there came in a groome, who complained before the Faery Queene, that a vile enchanter, called Busirane, had in hand a most faire lady, called Amoretta, whom he kept in most grievous torment, because she would not yield him the pleasure of her body. Whereupon Sir Scudamour, the lover of that lady, presently tooke on him that adventre. But being unable 190 to performe it by reason of the hard enchauntments, after long sorrow, in the end met with Britomartis, who succoured him, and reskewed his love.

But by occasion hereof, many other adventures are intermedled, but rather as accidents then intendments : as the love of Britomart, the overthrow of Marinell, the misery of Florimell, the vertuousnes of Belphoebe, the lasciviousnes of Hellenora, 200 and many the like.

Thus much, Sir, I have briefly overronne, to direct your understanding to the wel-head

of the history, that from thence gathering  
the whole intention of the conceit, ye may,  
as in a handfull, gripe al the discourse,  
which otherwise may happily seeme tedious  
and confused. So humbly craving the con-  
tinuance of your honourable favour towards  
me, and th' eternall establishment of your  
happines, I humbly take leave. 211

23. January, 1589.

Yours most humbly affectionate,

Ed. Spenser.

A VISION UPON THIS CONCEPT OF THE  
FAERY QUEENE

ME thought I saw the grave where Laura  
lay,

Within that temple where the vestall flame  
Was wont to burne; and passing by that  
way,

To see that buried dust of living fame,  
Whose tumbe faire Love, and fairer Ver-  
tue kept,

All suddenly I saw the Faery Queene:  
At whose approach the soule of Petrarke  
wept,

And from thenceforth those graces were  
not seene.

For they this Queene attended; in whose  
steed

Oblivion laid him downe on Lauras herse:  
Hereat the hardest stones were seene to  
bleed,

And grones of buried ghostes the hevens  
did perse:

Where Homers spright did tremble all  
for grieffe,

And curst th' accesse of that celestiall  
theife.

ANOTHER OF THE SAME

THE prayse of meaner wits this worke like  
profit brings,

As doth the Cuckoes song delight when  
Philumena sings.

If thou hast formed right true Vertues faee  
herein,

Vertue her selfe can best discern, to whom  
they written bin.

If thou hast Beauty praysd, let her sole  
lookes divine

Judge if ought therein be amis, and mend it  
by her eine.

If Chastitie want ought, or Temperaunce  
her dew,

Behold her princely mind aright, and write  
thy Queene anew.

Meane while she shall perceive, how far  
her vertues sore

Above the reach of all that live, or such as  
wrote of yore:

And thereby will excuse and favour thy  
good will:

Whose vertue can not be exprest, but by  
an angels quill.

Of me no lines are lov'd, nor letters are of  
price,

Of all which speak our English tongue, but  
those of thy device. W. R.

TO THE LEARNED SHEPEHEARD

COLLYN, I see by thy new taken taske,  
Some sacred fury hath enricht thy  
braynes,

That leades thy Muse in haughty verse to  
maske,

And loath the layes that longs to lowly  
swaynes;

That lifts thy notes from shepheardes unto  
kinges,

So like the lively Larke that mounting  
singes.

Thy lovely Rosolinde seemes now for-  
lorne,

And all thy gentle flockes forgotten  
quight;

Thy chaunged hart now holdes thy pypes in  
scorne,

Those pretty pypes that did thy mates  
delight,

Those trusty mates, that loved thee so  
well,

Whom thou gav'st nirth, as they gave thee  
the bell.

Yet, as thou earst, with thysweete rounde-  
layes,

Didst stirre to glee our laddes in homely  
bowers,

So moughtst thou now in these refyned  
layes

Delight the daintie eares of higher  
powers:

And so mought they, in their deepe skan-  
ning skill,

Alow and grace our Collyns flowing quyll.



And faire befall that Faery Queene of thine,  
In whose faire eyes Love linckt with Ver-  
tue sittes:

Enfusing, by those bewties fyers devyne,  
Such high conceites into thy humble  
wittes,

As raised hath poore pastors oaten reede,  
From rustick tunes, to chaunt heroique  
deedes.

So mought thy Roderosse Knight with  
happy hand

Victorious be in that faire Ilands right,  
Which thou dost vayle in type of Faery  
Land,

Elizas blessed field, that Albion hight:  
That shieldes her friendes, and warres her  
mightie foes,  
Yet still with people, peace, and plentie  
flowes.

But (jolly shepheard) though with pleasing  
style

Thou feast the humour of the courtly  
trayne,

Let not conceipt thy settled sence beguile,  
Ne daunted be through envy or disdaine.  
Subject thy dome to her empyring spright,  
From whence thy Muse, and all the world,  
takes light. HOBYNOLL.

FAYRE Thanis streame, that from Ludds  
stately towne

Runst paying tribute to the ocean seas,  
Let all thy nymphes and syrens of renowne  
Be silent, whyle this Bryttane Orpheus  
playes:

Nere thy sweet bankes, there lives that sa-  
cred Crowne,

Whose hand strowes palme and never-dying  
bayes:

Let all at once, with thy soft murmuring  
sowne,

Present her with this worthy poets prayes:  
For he hath taught hye drifts in shepe-  
herdes weedes,

And deepe conceites now singes in Faeries  
deedes. R. S.

GRAVE Muses, march in triumph and with  
prayes;

Our Goddesses here hath given you leave to  
land,

And biddes this rare dispenser of your graces  
Bow downe his brow unto her sacred hand.  
Desertes findes dew in that most princely  
doome,

In whose sweete brest are all the Muses  
bredde:

So did that great Augustus erst in Roome  
With leaves of fame adorne his poets hedde.  
Faire be the guerdon of your *Faery Queene*,  
Even of the fairest that the world hath  
seene. H. B.

WHEN stout Achilles heard of Helens rape  
And what revenge the states of Greece de-  
visd:

Thinking by sleight the fatall warres to scape,  
In womans weedes him selfe he then dis-  
guise:

But this devise Ulysses soone did spy,  
And brought him forth, the chaunce of  
warre to try.

When Spencer saw the fame was spredd so  
large,

Through Faery Land, of their reuowned  
Queene,

Loth that his Muse should take so great a  
charge,

As in such haughty matter to be seene,  
To seeme a shepheard then he made his  
choyce;

But Sydney heard him sing, and knew his  
voice.

And as Ulysses brought faire Thetis sonne  
From his rettyred life to menage armes,  
So Spencer was by Sidneys speeches wonne  
To blaze her fame, not fearing future  
harnes:

For well he knew, his Muse would soone  
be tyred

In her high praise, that all the world ad-  
mired.

Yet as Achilles, in those warlike frayes,  
Did win the palme from all the Greeian  
peeres,

So Spencer now, to his immortall prayse,  
Hath wonne the laurell quite from all his  
feres.

What though his taske exceed a humaine  
witt?

He is excens'd, sith Sidney thought it fitt.  
W. L.

To looke upon a worke of rare devise  
 The which a workman setteth out to view,  
 And not to yield it the deserved prise  
 That unto such a workmanship is dew,  
 Doth either prove the judgement to be  
 naught,  
 Or els doth shew a mind with envy  
 fraught.

To labour to commend a peece of worke  
 Which no man goes about to discommend,  
 Would raise a jealous doubt, that there did  
 lurke  
 Some secret doubt, whereto the prayse did  
 tend:  
 For when men know the goodnes of the  
 wync,  
 'Tis needlesse for the hoast to have a  
 sygne.

Thus then, to shew my judgement to be such  
 As can discerne of colours blacke and white,  
 As alls to free my minde from envies tuch,  
 That never gives to any man his right,  
 I here pronounce this workmanship is  
 such,  
 As that no pen can set it forth too much.

And thus I hang a garland at the dore,  
 Not for to shew the goodnes of the ware,  
 But such hath beene the custome hereto-  
 fore,  
 And customes very hardly broken are.  
 And when your tast shall tell you this is  
 trew,  
 Then looke you give your hoast his ut-  
 most dew. IGNOTO.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE SIR CHRIS-  
 TOPHER HATTON, LORD HIGH CHAUN-  
 CELOR OF ENGLAND, &C.

THOSE prudent heads, that with their coun-  
 sels wise  
 Whylom the pillours of th' earth did sus-  
 taine,  
 And taught ambitious Rome to tyrannise,  
 And in the neck of all the world to rayne,  
 Oft from those grave affaires were wont  
 abstaine,  
 With the sweet Lady Muses for to play:  
 So Ennius the elder Africane,  
 So Maro oft did Cæsars cares allay.

So you, great Lord, that with your counsell  
 sway  
 The burdeine of this kingdom mightily,  
 With like delightes sometimes may eke  
 delay  
 The rugged brow of carefull Policy;  
 And to these ydle rymes lend litle space,  
 Which for their titles sake may find more  
 grace.

TO THE MOST HONOURABLE AND EXCEL-  
 LENT LORD THE EARLE OF ESSEX.  
 GREAT MAISTER OF THE HORSE  
 TO HER HIGHNESSE, AND  
 KNIGHT OF THE NOBLE  
 ORDER OF THE GAR-  
 TER, &C.

MAGNIFICKE Lord, whose vertues excellent  
 Doe merit a most famous poets witt,  
 To be thy living praises instrument,  
 Yet doe not sdeigne to let thy name be  
 writt

In this base poeme, for thee far unfitt:  
 Nought is thy worth disparaged thereby.  
 But when my Muse, whose fethers, no-  
 thing flitt,  
 Doe yet but flagg, and lowly learne to  
 fly,

With bolder wing shall dare alofte to sty  
 To the last praises of this Faery Queene,  
 Then shall it make more famous memory  
 Of thine heroicke parts, such as they  
 beene.

Till then vouchsafe thy noble countenance,  
 To these first labours needed furtheraunce.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE  
 OF OXENFORD, LORD HIGH CHAM-  
 BERLAYNE OF ENGLAND, &C.

RECEIVE, most noble Lord, in gentle gree  
 The unripe fruit of an unready wit,  
 Which by thy countenance doth crave  
 to bee

Defended from foule Envies poisonous  
 bit:

Which so to doe may thee right well  
 befit,

Sith th' antique glory of thine auncestry  
 Under a shady vele is therein writ,  
 And eke thine owne long living memory,  
 Succeeding them in true nobility;  
 And also for the love which thou doest  
 beare

To th' Heliconian ymps, and they to thee,  
They unto thee, and thou to them, most deare.

Deare as thou art unto thy selfe, so love  
That loves and honours thee, as doth behove.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE  
OF NORTHUMBERLAND

THE sacred Muses have made alwaies claime  
To be the nourses of nobility,  
And registres of everlasting fame,  
To all that armes professe and chev-  
alry.

Then, by like right, the noble progeny,  
Which them succeed in fame and worth,  
are tyde

T'embrace the service of sweete poetry,  
By whose endeavours they are glorified;  
And eke from all of whom it is envide  
To patronize the authour of their praise,  
Which gives them life, that els would  
soone have dide,

And crownes their ashes with immortall  
baies.

To thee, therefore, right noble Lord, I  
send

This present of my paines, it to defend.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE  
OF ORMOND AND OSSORY

RECEIVE, most noble Lord, a simple taste  
Of the wilde fruit which salvage soyl hath  
bred,

Which, being through long wars left al-  
most waste,

With brutish barbarisme is overspredd:  
And in so faire a land as may be redd,  
Not one Parnassus nor one Helicone  
Left for sweete Muses to be harboured,  
But where thy selfe hast thy brave man-  
sione:

There in deede dwel faire Graces many  
one,

And gentle nymphes, delights of learned  
wits,

And in thy person without paragone  
All goodly bountie and true honour  
sits.

Such, therefore, as that wasted soyl doth  
yield,

Receive, dear Lord, in worth, the fruit of  
barren field.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE LORD  
CH. HOWARD, LORD HIGH ADMIRAL  
OF ENGLAND, KNIGHT OF THE  
NOBLE ORDER OF THE GAR-  
TER, AND ONE OF HER  
MAJESTIES PRIVIE  
COUNSEL, &C.

AND ye, brave Lord, whose goodly person  
age

And noble deeds, each other garnishing,  
Make you ensample to the present age  
Of th' old heroes, whose famous offspring  
The antique poets wont so much to sing,  
In this same pageaunt have a worthy  
place,

Sith those huge castles of Castilian king,  
That vainly threatned kingdomes to dis-  
place,

Like flying doves ye did before you chace,  
And that proud people, woxen insolent  
Through many victories, didst first de-  
face:

Thy praises everlasting monument  
Is in this verse engraven semblably,  
That it may live to all posterity.

TO THE MOST RENOWNED AND VALIANT  
LORD, THE LORD GREY OF WILTON,  
KNIGHT OF THE NOBLE ORDER  
OF THE GARTER, &C.

MOST noble Lord, the pillor of my life,  
And patrone of my Muses pupillage,  
Through whose large bountie, poured on  
me rife,

In the first season of my feeble age,  
I now doe live, bound yours by vassalage:  
Sith nothing ever may redeeme, nor  
reave

Out of your endlesse debt so sure a gage,  
Vouchsafe in worth this small gift to  
receave,

Which in your noble hands for pledge I  
leave

Of all the rest that I am tyde to ac-  
count:

Rude rymes, the which a rustick Muse  
did weave

In savadge soyle, far from Parnasso  
mount,

And roughly wrought in an unlearned  
loome:

The which vouchsafe, dear Lord, your fa-  
vorable doome.



TO THE RIGHT NOBLE AND VALOROUS  
KNIGHT, SIR WALTER RALEIGH,  
LORD WARDEIN OF THE STAN-  
NERVES, AND LIEFTENAUNT  
OF CORNEWAILE

To thee that art the sommers Nightingale,  
Thy sovaine Goddesses most deare del-  
light,  
Why doe I send this rusticke madrigale,  
That may thy tunefull eare unseason  
quite?

Thon onely fit this argument to write,  
In whose high thoughts Pleasure hath  
built her bowre,  
And dainty Love learnd sweetly to en-  
dite.

My rimes I know unsavory and sowre,  
To tast the streames, that like a golden  
showre

Flow from thy frnitfull head, of thy loves  
praise;

Fitter perhaps to thonder martiall stowre,  
When so thee list thy lofty Muse to  
raise:

Yet till that thou thy poeme wilt make  
knowne,

Let thy faire Cinthias praises bee thus  
rudely showne.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE LORD  
BURLEIGH, LORD HIGH THREA-  
SURER OF ENGLAND

To you, right noble Lord, whose carefull  
brest

To menage of most grave affaires is  
bent,

And on whose mightie shoulders most  
doth rest

The burdein of this kingdomes governe-  
ment,

As the wide compasse of the firmament  
On Atlas mighty shoulders is upstayd,  
Unfitly I these ydle rimes present,  
The labor of lost time, and wit unstayd:

Yet if their deeper sence be inly wayd,  
And the dim vele, with which from  
comme vew

Their fairer parts are hid, aside be layd,  
Perhaps not vaine they may appeare to  
you.

Such as they be, vouchsafe them to receive,  
And wipe their faults out of your censure  
grave.

E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE  
OF CUMBERLAND

REDOUBTED Lord, in whose corageous mind  
The flowre of chevalry, now bloosming  
faire,

Doth promise fruite worthy the noble kind  
Which of their praises have left you the  
haire;

To you this humble present I prepare,  
For love of vertue and of martiall praise;  
To which though nobly ye inclined are,  
As goodlie well ye shew'd in late assaies,  
Yet brave ensample of long passed daies,  
In which trew honor yee may fashioned  
see,

To like desire of honor may ye raise,  
And fill your mind with magnaninitee.  
Receive it, Lord, therefore, as it was ment,  
For honor of your name and high descent.

E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE LORD  
OF HUNSDON, HIGH CHAMBER-  
LAINE TO HER MAJESTY

RENOWMED Lord, that for your worthinesse  
And noble deeds, have your deserved  
place

High in the favour of that Emperesse,  
The worlds sole glory and her sexes grace;  
Here eke of right have you a worthie place,  
Both for your uernes to that Faerie  
Queene,

And for your owne high merit in like cace,  
Of which apparaunt prooffe was to be  
seene,

When that tmultuous rage and fearfull  
deene

Of Northerne rebels ye did pacify,  
And their disloiall powre defaced clene,  
The record of enduring memory.

Live, Lord, for ever in this lasting verse,  
That all posteritie thy honor may reherse.

E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE LORD  
OF BUCKHURST, ONE OF HER MA-  
JESTIES PRIVIE COUNSELL

In vain I thinke, right honourable Lord,  
By this rude rime to memorize thy name,  
Whose learned Muse hath writ her owne  
record

In golden verse, worthy immortal fame:

Thou much more fit (were leasure to the same)  
 Thy gracious Soverains praises to compile,  
 And her imperiall majestie to frame  
 In loftie numbers and heroicke stile.  
 But sith thou maist not so, give leave a while  
 To baser wit his power therein to spend,  
 Whose grosse defaults thy daintie pen may file,  
 And unadvised oversights amend.  
 But evermore vouchsafe it to maintaine  
 Against vile Zoilus backbitings vaine.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE SIR FR.  
 WALSINGHAM, KNIGHT, PRINCIPALL  
 SECRETARY TO HER MAJESTY  
 AND OF HER HONOURABLE  
 PRIVY COUNSELL

THAT Mantuane poetes incompared spirit,  
 Whose girland now is set in highest place,  
 Had not Mecænas, for his worthy merit,  
 It first advaunst to great Augustus grace.  
 Might long, perhaps, have lien in silence bace,  
 Ne bene so much admir'd of later age.  
 This lowly Muse, that learns like steps to trace,  
 Flies for like aide unto your patronage;  
 That are the great Mecenas of this age,  
 As wel to al that civil artes professe,  
 As those that are inspir'd with martial rage,  
 And craves protection of her feeblenesse:  
 Which if ye yield, perhaps ye may her rayse  
 In bigger times to sound your living prayse.  
 E. S.

TO THE RIGHT NOBLE LORD AND MOST  
 VALIAUNT CAPTAIN, SIR JOHN  
 NORRIS, KNIGHT, LORD PRE-  
 SIDENT OF MOUNSTER

WHO ever gave more honourable prize  
 To the sweet Muse then did the martiall crew,  
 That their brave deeds she might immortalize  
 In her shrill tromp, and sound their praises dew ?

Who then ought more to favour her then you,  
 Moste noble Lord, the honor of this age,  
 And precedent of all that armes ensue ?  
 Whose warlike prowesse and manly courage,  
 Tempred with reason and advizement sage,  
 Hath fild sad Belgicke with victorious spoile,  
 In Fraunce and Ireland left a famous gage,  
 And lately shakt the Lusitanian soile.  
 Sith, then, each where thou hast dispredd thy fame,  
 Love him that hath eternized your name.  
 E. S.

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE AND MOST  
 VERTUOUS LADY, THE COUNTESSE  
 OF PENBROKE

REMEMBRAUNCE of that most heroicke spirit,  
 The heavens pride, the glory of our daies,  
 Which now triumpheth through immortal merit  
 Of his brave vertues, crownd with last-  
 ing baies  
 Of hevenlie blis and everlasting praies;  
 Who first my Muse did lift out of the flore,  
 To sing his sweet delights in lowlie laies;  
 Bids me, most noble Lady, to adore  
 His goodly image living evermore  
 In the divine resemblaunce of your face;  
 Which with your vertues ye embellish more,  
 And native beauty deck with hevenlie grace:  
 For his, and for your owne especial sake,  
 Vouchsafe from him this token in good worth to take.  
 E. S.

TO THE MOST VERTUOUS AND BEAUTIFULL  
 LADY, THE LADY CAREW

NE may I, without blot of endlesse blame,  
 You, fairest Lady, leave out of this place,  
 But with remembrance of your gracious name,  
 Wherewith that courtly garland most ye gage,  
 And deck the world, adorne these verses base.  
 Not that these few lines can in them comprise

Those glorious ornaments of heavenly  
 grace,  
 Wherewith ye triumph over feeble eyes,  
 And in subdued harts do tyranyse;  
 For thereunto doth need a golden quill  
 And silver leaves, them rightly to devise;  
 But to make humble present of good  
 will:  
 Which, whenas timely meanes it purchase  
 may,  
 In ampler wise it selfe will forth display.  
 E. S.

TO ALL THE GRATIOUS AND BEAUTIFULL  
 LADIES IN THE COURT

THE Chian peincter, when he was requirde  
 To pourtraiet Venus in her perfect hew,  
 To make his worke more absolute, de-  
 sird  
 Of all the fairest maides to have the vew.  
 Much more me needs, to draw the sem-  
 blant trew  
 Of Beauties Queene, the worlds sole  
 wenderment,  
 To sharpe my sence with sundry beauties  
 vew,  
 And steale from each some part of orna-  
 ment.  
 If all the world to seeke I overwent,  
 A fairer crew yet no where could I see  
 Then that brave court doth to mine eie  
 present,  
 That the worlds pride seemes gathered  
 there to bee.  
 Of each a part I stole by cunning theft:  
 Forgive it me, faire Dames, sith lesse ye  
 have not left. E. S.

THE FIRST BOOKE  
 OF THE FAERIE QUEENE  
 CONTAYNING  
 THE LEGEND OF THE KNIGHT  
 OF THE RED CROSSE  
 OR  
 OF HOLINESSE

I

Lo! I the man, whose Muse whylome did  
 maske,  
 As time her taught, in lowly shephards  
 weeds.

Am now enforst, a farre unfitter taske,  
 For trumpets sterne to chaunge mine oaten  
 reeds,  
 And sing of knights and ladies gentle deeds;  
 Whose praises having slept in silence long,  
 Me, all too meane, the sacred Muse areeds  
 To blazon broade amongst her learned  
 throng:  
 Fierce warres and faithfull loves shall  
 moralize my song.

II

Helpe then, O holy virgin, chiefe of nyne,  
 Thy weaker novice to performe thy will;  
 Lay forth out of thine everlasting seryne  
 The antique rolles, which there lye hidden  
 still,  
 Of Faerie knights, and fayrest Tanaquill,  
 Whom that most noble Briton Prince so long  
 Sought through the world, and suffered so  
 much ill,  
 That I must rue his undeserved wrong:  
 O helpe thou my weake wit, and sharpen  
 my dull tong.

III

And thou, most dreaded impe of highest  
 Jove,  
 Faire Venus sonne, that with thy cruell  
 dart  
 At that good knight so cunningly didst rove,  
 That glorious fire it kindled in his hart,  
 Lay now thy deadly heben bowe apart,  
 And with thy mother mylde come to mine  
 ayde:  
 Come both, and with you bring triumphant  
 Mart,  
 In loves and gentle jollities arraid,  
 After his murtherous spoyles and bloudie  
 rage allayd.

IV

And with them eke, O Goddesse heavenly  
 bright,  
 Mirrour of grace and majestie divine,  
 Great Ladie of the greatest Isle, whose light  
 Like Phœbus lampe throughout the world  
 doth shine,  
 Shed thy faire beames into my feeble eyne,  
 And raise my thoughtes, too humble and  
 too vile,  
 To thinke of that true glorious type of thine,  
 The argument of mine afflicted stile:  
 The which to heare vouchsafe, O dearest  
 dread, a while.



## CANTO I

The patrone of true Holinesse  
 Foule Errour doth defeate :  
 Hypocrisie, him to entrappe,  
 Doth to his home entreate.

## I

A GENTLE knight was pricking on the  
 plaine,  
 Ycladd in mightie armes and silver shielde,  
 Wherein old dints of deepe woundes did  
 remaine,  
 The cruell markes of many' a bloody field;  
 Yet armes till that time did he never wield:  
 His angry steede did chide his foming  
 bitt,  
 As much disdainning to the curbe to yield:  
 Full jolly knight he seemd, and faire did  
 sitt,  
 As one for knightly giusts and fierce en-  
 counters fitt.

## II

But on his brest a bloodie crosse he bore,  
 The deare remembrance of his dying Lord,  
 For whose sweete sake that glorious badge  
 he wore,  
 And dead as living ever him ador'd:  
 Upon his shield the like was also scor'd,  
 For soveraine hope, which in his helpe he  
 had:  
 Right faithfull true he was in deede and  
 word,  
 But of his cheere did seeme too solemne  
 sad;  
 Yet nothing did he dread, but ever was  
 ydrad.

## III

Upon a great adventure he was bond,  
 That greatest Gloriana to him gave,  
 That greatest glorious queene of Faery  
 Lond,  
 To winne him worshippe, and her grace to  
 have,  
 Which of all earthly thinges he most did  
 crave;  
 And ever as he rode his hart did earne  
 To prove his puissance in battell brave  
 Upon his foe, and his new force to learne;  
 Upon his foe, a dragon horrible and stearne.

## IV

A lovely ladie rode him faire beside,  
 Upon a lowly asse more white then snow,

Yet she much whiter, but the same did hide  
 Under a veile, that wimpled was full low,  
 And over all a blacke stole shee did throw:  
 As one that inly mournd, so was she sad,  
 And heavie sate upon her palfrey slow:  
 Seemed in heart some hidden care she had;  
 And by her in a line a milkewhite lambe  
 she lad.

## V

So pure and innocent, as that same lambe,  
 She was in life and every vertuous lore,  
 And by descent from royall lynage came  
 Of ancient kinges and queenes, that had of  
 yore  
 Their scepters stretcht from east to west-  
 erne shore,  
 And all the world in their subjection held,  
 Till that infernall feend with foule uprore  
 Forwasted all their land, and them expeld:  
 Whom to avenge, she had this knight from  
 far compeld.

## VI

Behind her farre away a dwarfe did lag,  
 That lasie seemd, in being ever last,  
 Or wearied with bearing of her bag  
 Of needments at his backe. Thus as they  
 past,  
 The day with cloudes was suddeine overcast,  
 And angry Jove an hideous storme of raine  
 Did poure into his lemans lap so fast,  
 That everie wight to shrowd it did constrain,  
 And this faire couple eke to shroud them-  
 selves were fain.

## VII

Enforst to seeke some covert nigh at hand,  
 A shadie grove not farr away they spide,  
 That promist ayde the tempest to withstand:  
 Whose loftie trees, yelad with sommers  
 pride,  
 Did spred so broad, that heavens light did  
 hide,  
 Not perceable with power of any starr:  
 And all within were pathes and alleies wide,  
 With footing worne, and leading inward  
 farr:  
 Faire harbour that them seemes, so in they  
 entred ar.

## VIII

And forth they passe, with pleasure for-  
 ward led,  
 Joying to heare the birdes sweete harmony,

Which, therein shrouded from the tempest  
dred,  
Seemd in their song to scorne the cruell sky.  
Much can they praise the trees so straight  
and hy,  
The sayling pine, the cedar proud and tall,  
The vine-propp elme, the poplar never dry,  
The builder oake, sole king of forrests all,  
The aspine good for staves, the cypresse  
funerall,

## IX

The laurell, meed of mightie conquerours  
And poets sage, the firre that weepeth still,  
The willow worne of forlorne paramours,  
The engh obedient to the benders will,  
The birch for shaftes, the sallow for the mill,  
The mirrhe sweete bleeding in the bitter  
wound,  
The warlike beech, the ash for nothing ill,  
The fruitfull olive, and the platane round,  
The carver holme, the maple seeldom in-  
ward sound.

## X

Led with delight, they thus beguile the way,  
Untill the blustering storme is overblowne;  
When, weening to returne whence they did  
stray,  
They cannot finde that path, which first was  
showne,  
But wander too and fro in waies uknowne,  
Furthest from end then, when they nearest  
weene,  
That makes them doubt, their wits be not  
their owne:  
So many pathes, so many turnings seene,  
That which of them to take, in diverse  
doubt they been.

## XI

At last resolving forward still to fare,  
Till that some end they finde, or in or out,  
That path they take, that beaten seemd most  
bare,  
And like to lead the labyrinth about;  
Which when by tract they hunted had  
throughout,  
At length it brought them to a hollowe cave,  
Amid the thickest woods. The champion  
stout  
Eftsoones dismounted from his courser  
brave,  
And to the dwarfe a while his needlesse  
spere he gave.

## XII

'Be well aware,' quoth then that ladie milde,  
'Least suddaine mischiefe ye too rash pro-  
voke:  
The danger hid, the place unknowne and  
wilde,  
Breedes dreadfull doubts: oft fire is with-  
out smoke,  
And perill without show: therefore your  
stroke,  
Sir knight, with-hold, till further tryall  
made.'  
'Ah, ladie,' sayd he, 'shame were to revoke  
The forward footing for an hidden shade:  
Vertue gives her selfe light, through darke-  
nesse for to wade.'

## XIII

'Yea, but,' quoth she, 'the perill of this  
place  
I better wot then you; though nowe too late  
To wish you backe returne with foule dis-  
grace,  
Yet wisdomes warnes, whilest foot is in the  
gate,  
To stay the steppe, ere forced to retrate.  
This is the wandring wood, this Errours den,  
A monster vile, whom God and man does  
hate:  
Therefore I read beware.' 'Fly, fly!' quoth  
then  
The fearefull dwarfe: 'this is no place for  
living men.'

## XIV

But full of fire and greedy hardiment,  
The youthfull knight could not for ought  
be staide,  
But forth unto the darksom hole he went,  
And looked in: his glistring armor made  
A litle glooming light, much like a shade,  
By which he saw the ugly monster plaine,  
Halfe like a serpent horribly displaide,  
But th' other halfe did womans shape re-  
taine,  
Most lothsom, filthie, foule, and full of vile  
disdaine.

## XV

And as she lay upon the durtie ground,  
Her huge long taile her den all overspred,  
Yet was in knots and many boughtes up-  
wound,  
Pointed with mortall sting. Of her there  
'red

A thousand yong ones, which she dayly fed,  
Sucking upon her poisonous dugs, eachone  
Of sundrie shapes, yet all ill favored:  
Soone as that uncouth light upon them shone,  
Into her mouth they crept, and suddain all  
were gone.

## XVI

Their dam upstart, out of her den effraide,  
And rushed forth, hurling her hideous taile  
About her cursed head, whose folds dis-  
plaid

Were stretcht now forth at length with-  
out entraile.

She lookt about, and seeing one in mayle,  
Armed to point, sought backe to turne  
again;

For light she hated as the deadly bale,  
Ay wout in desert darknes to remaine,  
Where plain none might her see, nor she  
see any plaine.

## XVII

Which when the valiant Elfe perceiv'd, he  
lept

As lyon fierce upon the flying pray,  
And with his trenchand blade her boldly  
kept

From turning backe, and forced her to stay:  
Therewith enrag'd she loudly gan to bray,  
And turning fierce, her speckled taile ad-  
vaunst,

Threatning her angrie sting, him to dis-  
may:

Who, nought aghast, his mightie hand en-  
haunst:

The stroke down from her head unto her  
shoulder glaunst.

## XVIII

Much daunted with that dint, her sence was  
dazd,

Yet kiudling rage her seife she gathered  
round,

And all attonce her beastly bodie raizd  
With doubled forces high above the ground:  
Tho, wrapping up her wrethed sterne  
arownd,

Lept fierce upon his shield, and her huge  
traine

All suddenly about his body wound,  
That hand or foot to stirr he strove in  
vaine:

God helpe the man so wrapt in Errours  
endlesse traine.

## XIX

His lady, sad to see his sore constraint,  
Cride out, 'Now, now, sir knight, shew  
what ye bee:

Add faith unto your force, and be not faint:  
Strangle her, els she sure will strangle  
thee.'

That when he heard, in great perplexitie,  
His gall did grate for grieve and high dis-  
daine;

And knitting all his force, got one hand free,  
Wherewith he grypt her gorge with so great  
paine,

That soone to loose her wicked bands did  
her constraine.

## XX

Therewith she spewd out of her filthie maw  
A floud of poyson horrible and blacke,  
Full of great humps of flesh and gobbets  
raw,

Which stunk so vildly, that it forst him  
slacke

His grasping hold, and from her turne him  
backe:

Her vomit full of bookes and papers was,  
With loathly frogs and toades, which eyes  
did lacke,

And creeping sought way in the weedy gras:  
Her filthie parbreake all the place defiled  
has.

## XXI

As when old father Nilus gins to swell  
With timely pride above the Aegyptian vale,  
His fattie waves doe fertile slime outwell,  
And overflow each plaine and lowly dale:  
But when his later spring gins to avale,  
Huge heapes of mudd he leaves, wherin  
there breed

Ten thousand kindes of creatures, partly  
male

And partly femall, of his fruitful seed;  
Such ugly monstons shapes elswher may  
no man reed.

## XXII

The same so sore annoyed has the knight,  
That, welnigh choked with the deadly stinke,  
His forces faile, ne can no lenger fight.  
Whose corage when the feend perceivd to  
shrinke,

She poured forth out of her hellish sinke  
Her fruitfull cursed spawne of serpents  
small.



Deformed monsters, fowle, and blacke as  
inke,  
Which swarming all about his legs did crall,  
And him encombred sore, but could not  
hurt at all.

## XXIII

As gentle shepheard in sweete eventide,  
When ruddy Phebus gins to welke in west,  
High on an hill, his flocke to rewen wide,  
Markes which doe byte their hasty supper  
best;  
A cloud of cumbrous gnattes doe him mo-  
lest,  
All striving to infixe their feeble stinges,  
That from their noyance he no where can  
rest,  
But with his clownish hands their tender  
wings  
He brusheth oft, and oft doth mar their  
murmurings.

## XXIV

Thus ill bestedd, and fearefull more of  
shame  
Then of the certeine perill he stood in,  
Halfe furious unto his foe he came,  
Resolvd in minde all suddenly to win,  
Or soone to lose, before he once would lin;  
And stroke at her with more then manly  
force,  
That from her body, full of filthie sin,  
He raft her hatefull heade without remorse:  
A streame of cole black blood forth gushed  
from her corse.

## XXV

Her scattred brood, soone as their parent  
deare  
They saw so rudely falling to the ground,  
Groning full deadly, all with troublous feare,  
Gathred themselves about her body round,  
Weening their wonted entrance to have  
found  
At her wide mouth: but being there with-  
stood,  
They flocked all about her bleeding wound,  
And sucked up their dying mothers bloud,  
Making her death their life, and eke her  
hurt their good.

## XXVI

That detestable sight him much amaze,  
To see th' unkindly impes, of heaven ac-  
curst,

Devoure their dam; on whom while so he  
gazd,  
Having all satisfide their bloody thirst,  
Their bellies swolne he saw with fulnesse  
burst,  
And bowels gushing forth: well worthy  
end  
Of such as drunke her life, the which them  
nurst!  
Now needeth him no lenger labour spend;  
His foes have slaine themselves, with whom  
he should contend.

## XXVII

His lady, seeing all that chaunst, from  
farre,  
Approcht in hast to greet his victorie,  
And saide, 'Faire knight, borne under hap-  
pie starre,  
Who see your vanquisht foes before you lye,  
Well worthie be you of that armory,  
Wherein ye have great glory wonne this  
day,  
And proov'd your strength on a strong eni-  
mie,  
Your first adventure: many such I pray,  
And henceforth ever wish that like succeed  
it may.'

## XXVIII

Then mounted he upon his steede againe,  
And with the lady backward sought to wend;  
That path he kept which beaten was most  
plaine,  
Ne ever would to any by way bend,  
But still did follow one unto the end,  
The which at last out of the wood them  
brought.  
So forward on his way (with God to frend)  
He passed forth, and new adventure sought:  
Long way he traueiled, before he heard of  
ought.

## XXIX

At length they chaunst to meet upon the  
way  
Au aged sire, in long blacke weedes yelad,  
His feete all bare, his beard all hoarie gray,  
And by his belt his booke he hanging had;  
Sober he seemde, and very sagely sad,  
And to the ground his eyes were lowly bent,  
Simple in shew, and voide of malice bad,  
And all the way he prayed as he went,  
And often knockt his brest, as one that did  
repent.

## XXX

He faire the knight saluted, louting low,  
Who faire him quited, as that courteous  
was;

And after asked him, if he did know  
Of straunge adventures, which abroad did  
pas.

‘Ah! my dear sonne,’ quoth he, ‘how should,  
alas!

Silly old man, that lives in hidden cell,  
Bidding his beades all day for his trespas,  
Tydings of warre and worldly trouble tell?  
With holy father sits not with such thinges  
to mell.

## XXXI

‘But if of daunger, which hereby doth dwell,  
And homebredd evil ye desire to heare,  
Of a straunge man I can you tidings tell,  
That wasteth all this countrie farre and  
neare.’

‘Of such,’ saide he, ‘I chiefly doe inquire,  
And shall you well rewarde to shew the  
place,

In which that wicked wight his dayes doth  
weare:

For to all knighthood it is foule disgrace,  
That such a cursed creature lives so long a  
space.’

## XXXII

‘Far hence,’ quoth he, ‘in wastfull wilder-  
nesse,

His dwelling is, by which no living wight  
May ever passe, but thorough great dis-  
tresse.’

‘Now,’ saide the ladie, ‘draweth toward  
night,

And well I wote, that of your later fight  
Ye all forwearied be: for what so strong,  
But, wanting rest, will also want of might?  
The Sunne, that measures heaven all day  
long,

At night doth baite his steedes the ocean  
waves emong.

## XXXIII

‘Then with the Sunne take, sir, your timely  
rest,

And with new day new worke at once begin:  
Untroubled night, they say, gives counsell  
best.’

‘Right well, sir knight, ye have advised  
bin,’

Quoth then that aged man; ‘the way to win

Is wisely to advise: now day is spent;  
Therefore with me ye may take up your in  
For this same night.’ The knight was well  
content:

So with that godly father to his home they  
went.

## XXXIV

A litle lowly hermitage it was,  
Downe in a dale, hard by a forests side,  
Far from resort of people, that did pas  
In travaill to and froe: a litle wyde  
There was an holy chappell edifyde,  
Wherein the hermite dewly wont to say  
His holy thinges each morne and even-tyde:  
Thereby a christall streame did gently play,  
Which from a sacred fountaine welled  
forth alway.

## XXXV

Arrived there, the litle house they fill,  
Ne looke for entertainment, where none  
was:

Rest is their feast, and all thinges at their  
will;

The noblest mind the best contentment has.  
With faire discourse the evening so they pas:  
For that olde man of pleasing wordes had  
store,

And well could file his tongue as smooth  
as glas:

He told of saintes and popes, and evermore  
He strowd an Ave-Mary after and before.

## XXXVI

The drouping night thus creepeth on them  
fast,

And the sad humor loading their eye liddes,  
As messenger of Morpheus, on them cast  
Sweet slombring deaw, the which to sleep  
them biddes:

Unto their lodgings then his guestes he  
riddes:

Where when all drownd in deadly sleepe  
he findes,

He to his studie goes, and there amiddes  
His magick bookes and artes of sundrie  
kindes,

He seekes out mighty charmes, to trouble  
sleepy minds.

## XXXVII

Then choosing out few words most horrible,  
(Let none them read) thereof did verses  
frame;

With which and other spellles like terrible,  
 He bad awake blacke Plutoes griesly dame,  
 And cursed heven, and spake reprochful  
 shame  
 Of highest God, the Lord of life and light:  
 A bold bad man, that dar'd to call by name  
 Great Gorgon, prince of darknes and dead  
 night,  
 At which Cocytus quakes, and Styx is put  
 to flight.

## XXXVIII

And forth he cald out of deepe darknes  
 dredd  
 Legions of sprights, the which, like litle  
 flyes  
 Fluttring about his ever damned hedd,  
 Awaite whereto their service he applies,  
 To aide his friendes, or fray his enimies:  
 Of those he chose out two, the falsest twoo,  
 And fittest for to forge true-seeming lyes;  
 The one of them he gave a message too,  
 The other by him selfe staide, other worke  
 to doo.

## XXXIX

He, making speedy way through spersed  
 ayre,  
 And through the world of waters wide and  
 deepe,  
 To Morpheus house doth hastily repaire.  
 Amid the bowels of the earth full steepe,  
 And low, where dawning day doth never  
 peepe,  
 His dwelling is; there Tethys his wet  
 bed  
 Doth ever wash, and Cynthia still doth  
 steepe  
 In silver dew his ever-drouping hed,  
 Whiles sad Night over him her mantle  
 black doth spread.

## XL

Whose double gates he findeth locked fast,  
 The one faire fram'd of burnisht yvory,  
 The other all with silver overcast;  
 And wakeful dogges before them farre doe  
 lye,  
 Watching to banish Care their enemy,  
 Who oft is wont to trouble gentle Sleepe.  
 By them the sprite doth passe in quietly,  
 And unto Morpheus comes, whom drowned  
 deepe  
 In drowsie fit he findes: of nothing he  
 takes keepe.

## XLI

And more, to lulle him in his slumber soft,  
 A trickling streame from high rock tum-  
 bling downe,  
 And ever drizzling raine upon the loft,  
 Mixt with a murmuring winde, much like  
 the sowne  
 Of swarming bees, did cast him in a swowne:  
 No other noyse, nor peoples troublous cryes,  
 As still are wont t' annoy the walled towne,  
 Might there be heard: but carelesse Quiet  
 lyes,  
 Wrapt in eternall silence farre from eni-  
 myes.

## XLII

The messenger approaching to him spake,  
 But his waste wordes retourn'd to him in  
 vaine:  
 So sound he slept, that nought mought him  
 awake.  
 Then rudely he him thrust, and pusht with  
 paine,  
 Whereat he gan to stretch: but he againe  
 Shooke him so hard, that forced him to  
 speake.  
 As one then in a dreame, whose dryer braine  
 Is tost with troubled sights and fancies  
 weake,  
 He mumbled soft, but would not all his  
 silence breake.

## XLIII

The sprite then gan more boldly him to  
 wake,  
 And threatned unto him the dreaded name  
 Of Hecate: whereat he gan to quake,  
 And, lifting up his lompish head, with blame  
 Halfe angrie asked him, for what he came.  
 'Hether,' quoth he, 'me Archimago sent,  
 He that the stubborn sprites can wisely  
 tame;  
 He bids thee to him send for his intent  
 A fit false dreame, that can delude the  
 sleepers sent.'

## XLIV

The god obayde, and calling forth straight  
 way  
 A diverse dreame out of his prison darke,  
 Delivered it to him, and downe did lay  
 His heavie head, devoide of careful carke;  
 Whose sences all were straight benumbd  
 and starke.  
 He, backe returning by the yvorie dore,



Remounted up as light as chearefull larke,  
And on his litle winges the dreame he bore  
In hast unto his lord, where he him left afore.

## XLV

Who all this while, with charmes and hid-  
den artes,  
Had made a lady of that other spright,  
And fram'd of liquid ayre her tender partes,  
So lively and so like in all mens sight,  
That weaker sence it could have ravisht  
quight:  
The maker selfe, for all his wondrous witt,  
Was nigh beguiled with so goodly sight:  
Her all in white he clad, and over it  
Cast a black stole, most like to seeme for  
Una fit.

## XLVI

Now when that ydle dreame was to him  
brought,  
Unto that Elfin knight he bad him fly,  
Where he slept soundly, void of evil thought,  
And with false shewes abuse his fantasy,  
In sort as he him schooled privily:  
And that new creature, borne without her  
dew,  
Full of the makers guyle, with usage sly  
He taught to imitate that lady trew,  
Whose semblance she did carrie under  
feigned hew.

## XLVII

Thus well instructed, to their worke they  
haste,  
And comming where the knight in slom-  
ber lay,  
The one upon his hardie head him plaste,  
And made him dreame of loves and lust-  
full play,  
That nigh his manly hart did melt away,  
Bathed in wanton blis and wicked joy.  
Then seemed him his lady by him lay,  
And to him playnd, how that false winged  
boy  
Her chaste hart had subdewd to learne  
Dame Pleasures toy.

## XLVIII

And she her selfe, of beantie soveraigne  
queene,  
Fayre Venus, seemde unto his bed to bring  
Her, whom he, waking, evermore did weene  
To bee the chastest flowre that aye did  
spring

On earthly braunch, the daughter of a king,  
Now a loose leman to vile service bound:  
And eke the Graces seemed ail to sing  
*Hymen iö Hymen*, dauncing all around,  
Whylst freshest Flora her with yvie girlond  
crownd.

## XLIX

In this great passion of unwonted lust,  
Or wonted feare of doing ought amis,  
He started up, as seeming to mistrust  
Some secret ill, or hidden foe of his:  
Lo ! there before his face his ladie is,  
Under blacke stole hyding her bayted hooke,  
And as halfe blushing offred him to kis,  
With gentle blandishment and lovely  
looke,  
Most like that virgin true, which for her  
knight him took.

## L

All cleane dismayd to see so uncouth sight,  
And halfe enraged at her shamelesse guise,  
He thought have slaine her in his fierce de-  
spight;  
But hastie heat tempring with sufferance  
wise,  
He stayde his hand, and gan himselfe advise  
To prove his sense, and tempt her faigned  
truth.  
Wringing her hands in wemens pitteous  
wise,  
Tho can she weepe, to stirre up gentle ruth,  
Both for her noble blood, and for her  
teuder youth.

## LI

And sayd, ' Ah sir, my liege lord ~~and my~~  
love,  
Shall I accuse the hidden cruell fate,  
And mightie causes wrought in ~~heaven~~  
above,  
Or the blind god, that doth me thus amate,  
For hoped love to winne me certaine have ?  
Yet thus perforce he bids me do, or die.  
Die is my dew: yet rew my wretched state  
You, whom my hard avenging destinie  
Hath made judge of my life or death in  
differently.

## LII

' Your owne deare sake forst me at first to  
leave  
My fathers kingdom'—There she stopt  
with teares;

Her swollen hart her speech seemd to be-  
reave;  
And then againe begonne: 'My weaker  
yeares,  
Captiv'd to fortune and frayle worldly  
feares,  
Fly to your fayth for succour and sure ayde:  
Let me not die in languor and long teares.'  
'Why, dame,' quoth he, 'what hath ye thus  
dismayd?'  
What frayes ye, that were wont to comfort  
me affrayd?'

## LIII

'Love of your selfe,' she saide, 'and deare  
constraint,  
Lets me not sleepe, but waste the wearie  
night  
In secret anguish and unpittied plaint,  
Whiles you in carelesse sleepe are drowned  
quight.'  
Her doubtfull words made that redoubted  
knight  
Suspect her truth: yet since no' untruth he  
knew,  
Her fawning love with foule disdainfull  
spight  
He would not shend, but said, 'Deare dame,  
I rew,  
That for my sake unknowne such griefe  
unto you grew.'

## LIV

'Assure your selfe, it fell not all to ground;  
For all so deare as life is to my hart,  
I deeme your love, and hold me to you bound;  
Ne let vaine feares procure your needlesse  
smart,  
Where cause is none, but to your rest de-  
part.'  
Not all content, yet seemd she to appease  
Her mournefull plaintes, beguiled of her  
art,  
And fed with words, that could not chose  
but please;  
So slyding softly forth, she turnd as to her  
ease.

## LV

Long after lay he musing at her mood,  
Much griev'd to thinke that gentle dame so  
light,  
For whose defence he was to shed his blood.  
At last dull wearines of former fight  
Having yrockt a sleepe his irkesome spright,

That troublous dreame gan freshly tosse  
his braine  
With bowres, and beds, and ladies deare  
delight:  
But when he saw his labour all was vaine,  
With that misformed spright he backe re-  
turnd againe.

## CANTO II

The guilefull great enchaunter parts  
The Redcrosse Knight from Truth:  
Into whose stead faire Falshood steps,  
And workes him woefull ruth.

## I

By this the northerne wagoner had set  
His sevenfold teme behind the stedfast  
starre,  
That was in ocean waves yet never wet,  
But firme is fixt, and sendeth light from  
farre  
To al that in the wide deepe wandring arre:  
And chearefull Chaunticlere with his note  
shrill  
Had warned once, that Phoebus fiery carre  
In hast was climbing up the easterne hill,  
Full envious that night so long his roome  
did fill:

## II

When those accursed messengers of hell,  
That feigning dreame, and that faire-forged  
spright,  
Came to their wicked maister, and gan tel  
Their bootelesse paines, and ill succeed-  
ing night:  
Who, all in rage to see his skilfull might  
Deluded so, gan threaten hellish paine  
And sad Proserpines wrath, them to af-  
fright.  
But when he saw his threatning was but  
vaine,  
He cast about, and searcht his baleful  
bokes againe.

## III

Eftsoones he tooke that miscreated faire,  
And that false other spright, on whom he  
spred  
A seeming body of the subtile aire,  
Like a young squire, in loves and lustyhed  
His wanton daies that ever loosely led,  
Without regard of armes and dreaded fight:  
Those twoo he tooke, and in a secrete bed,

Covered with darkenes and misdeeming  
 night,  
 Them both together laid, to joy in vaine  
 delight.

## IV

Forthwith he runnes with feigned faithfull  
 hast  
 Unto his guest, who, after troublous sights  
 And dreames, gan now to take more sound  
 repast;  
 Whom suddenly he wakes with fearful  
 frights,  
 As one aghast with feends or damned  
 sprights,  
 And to him cals: 'Rise, rise, unhappy  
 swaine,  
 That here wex old in sleepe, whiles wicked  
 wights  
 Have knit themselves in Venus shameful  
 chaine;  
 Come see, where your false lady doth her  
 honor staine.'

## V

All in amaze he suddenly up start  
 With sword in hand, and with the old man  
 went;  
 Who soone him brought into a secret part,  
 Where that false couple were full closely  
 ment  
 In wanton lust and leud embracement:  
 Which when he saw, he burut with gealous  
 fire,  
 The eie of reason was with rage yblent,  
 And would have slaine them in his furious  
 ire,  
 But hardly was restrained of that aged  
 sire.

## VI

Retourning to his bed in torment great,  
 And bitter angnish of his guilty sight,  
 He could not rest, but did his stout heart  
 eat,  
 And wast his inward gall with deepe de-  
 spight,  
 Yrkesome of life, and too long lingring  
 night.  
 At last faire Hesperus in highest skie  
 Had spent his lampe, and brought forth  
 dawning light;  
 Then up he rose, and clad him hastily;  
 The dwarfe him brought his steed: so both  
 away do fly.

## VII

Now when the rosy fingred Morning faire,  
 Weary of aged Tithones saffron bed,  
 Had spred her purple robe through deawy  
 aire,  
 And the high hils Titan discovered,  
 The royall virgin shooke of drousyhed,  
 And rising forth out of her baser bowre,  
 Lookt for her knight, who far away was  
 fled,  
 And for her dwarfe, that wont to wait each  
 howre:  
 Then gan she wail and weepe, to see that  
 woeful stowre.

## VIII

And after him she rode with so much  
 speede,  
 As her slowe beast could make; but all in  
 vaine:  
 For him so far had borne his light-foot  
 steede,  
 Pricked with wrath and fiery fierce dis-  
 daine,  
 That him to follow was but fruitlesse paine;  
 Yet she her weary limbes would never rest,  
 But every hil and dale, each wood and  
 plaine,  
 Did search, sore grieved in her gentle brest,  
 He so ungently left her, whome she loved  
 best.

## IX

But subtill Archimago, when his guests  
 He saw divided into double parts,  
 And Una wandring in woods and forrests,  
 Th' end of his drift, he praised his divelish  
 arts,  
 That had such might over truc meaning  
 harts:  
 Yet rests not so, but other meanes doth  
 make,  
 How he may worke unto her further smarts:  
 For her he hated as the hissing snake,  
 And in her many troubles did most pleasure  
 take.

## X

He then devisde himselfe how to disguise;  
 For by his mighty science he could take  
 As many formes and shapes in seeming  
 wise,  
 As ever Proteus to himselfe could make:  
 Sometime a fowle, sometime a fish in lake,  
 Now like a foxe, now like a dragon fell,



That of himselfe he ofte for feare would  
quake,  
And oft would flie away. O who can tell  
The hidden powre of herbes, and might of  
magick spel?

## XI

But now seemde best, the person to put on  
Of that good knight, his late beguiled guest:  
In mighty armes he was yelad anon,  
And silver shield; upon his coward brest  
A bloody crosse, and on his craven crest  
A bounch of heares discoloured diversly:  
Full jolly knight he seemde, and wel ad-  
drest,

And when he sate upon his courser free,  
Saint George himselfe ye would have  
deemed him to be.

## XII

But he, the knight whose semblaunt he did  
beare,  
The true Saint George, was wandred far  
away,  
Still flying from his thoughts and gealous  
feare;  
Will was his guide, and griefe led him  
astray.

At last him chaunst to meete upon the way  
A faithlesse Sarazin, all armde to point,  
In whose great shield was writ with letters  
gay

*Sans foy*: full large of limbe and every joint  
He was, and cared not for God or man a  
point.

## XIII

Hee had a faire companion of his way,  
A goodly lady clad in scarlot red,  
Purfled with gold and pearle of rich assay;  
And like a Persian mitre on her hed  
Shee wore, with crowns and owches gar-  
nished,

The which her lavish lovers to her gave:  
Her wanton palfrey all was overspred  
With tinsell trappings, woven like a wave,  
Whose bridle rung with golden bells and  
bosses brave.

## XIV

With faire disport and courting dalliaunce  
Shee intertaine her lover all the way:  
But when she saw the knight his speare  
advancee,  
Shee soone left of her mirth and wanton play,

And bad her knight addresse him to the  
fray:

His foe was nigh at hand. He, pricke with  
pride

And hope to winne his ladies heart that  
day,

Forth spurred fast: adowne his coursers  
side

The red bloud trickling staine the way, as  
he did ride.

## XV

The Knight of the Redcrosse, when him he  
spide

Spurring so hote with rage dispiteous,  
Gan fairely couch his speare, and towards  
ride:

Soone meete they both, both fell and furi-  
ous,

That, daunted with theyr forces hideous,  
Their steeds doe stagger, and amazed stand,  
And eke themselves, too rudely rigorous,  
Astonied with the stroke of their owne  
hand,

Doe backe rebutte, and ech to other yealdeth  
land.

## XVI

As when two rams, stird with ambitious  
pride,

Fight for the rule of the rich fleeced flocke,  
Their horned fronts so fierce on either side  
Doe meete, that, with the terror of the  
shocke

Astonied, both stand sencelesse as a blocke,  
Forgetfull of the hanging victory:

So stood these twaine, unmoved as a rocke,  
Both staring fierce, and holding idely  
The broken reliques of their former cruelty.

## XVII

The Sarazin, sore daunted with the buffe,  
Snatcheth his sword, and fiercely to him  
flies;

Who well it wards, and quyteth cuff with  
cuff:

Each others equall puissance envies,  
And through their iron sides with cruell  
spies

Does seeke to perce: repining courage yields  
No foote to foe. The flashing fier flies,  
As from a forge, out of their burning  
shields,

And streams of purple blond new dies the  
verdant fields.

## XVIII

'Curse on that Crosse,' quoth then the Sarazin,  
 'That keepes thy body from the bitter fitt !  
 Dead long ygoe, I wote, thou haddest bin,  
 Had not that charme from thee forwarned itt.

But yet I warne thee now assured sitt,  
 And hide thy head.' Therewith upon his crest

With rigor so outrageous he smitt,  
 That a large share it hewd out of the rest,  
 And glauncing downe his shield, from blame  
 him fairely blest.

## XIX

Who thereat wondrous wroth, the sleeping spark

Of native vertue gan eftsoones revive,  
 And at his haughty helmet making mark,  
 So hugely stroke, that it the steele did rive,  
 And cleft his head. He, tumbling downe

alive,  
 With bloody mouth his mother earth did kis,

Greeting his grave: his grudging ghost did strive

With the fraile flesh; at last it flitted is,  
 Whether the soules doe fly of men that live amis.

## XX

The lady, when she saw her champion fall,  
 Like the old ruines of a broken towre,  
 Staid not to waile his woefull funerall,  
 But from him fled away with all her powre;  
 Who after her as hastily gan scowre,  
 Bidding the dwarfe with him to bring away  
 The Sarazins shield, signe of the conquere.

Her soone he overtooke, and bad to stay,  
 For present cause was none of dread her to dismay.

## XXI

Shee, turning backe with ruefull countenance,

Cride, 'Mercy, mercy, sir, vouchsafe to shoue

On silly dame, subject to hard mischancee,  
 And to your mighty wil!' Her humblesse low,

In so ritch weedes and seeming glorious show,

Did much emmove his stont heroïcke heart,

And said, 'Deare dame, your sudden overthrow

Much mœth me; but now put feare apart,  
 And tel, both who ye be, and who that tooke  
 your part.'

## XXII

Melting in teares, then gan shee thus lament:

'The wretched woman, whom unhappy howre  
 Hath now made thrall to your commandement,

Before that angry heavens list to lowre,  
 And Fortune false betraide me to your powre,

Was, (O what now availeth that I was ?)  
 Borne the sole daughter of an emperour,  
 He that the wide west under his rule has,  
 And high hath set his throne where Tiberis  
 doth pas.

## XXIII

'He, in the first flowre of my freshest age,  
 Betrothed me unto the onely haire  
 Of a most mighty king, most rich and sage;  
 Was never prince so faithfull and so faire,  
 Was never prince so meeke and debonaire;  
 But ere my hoped day of spousall shone,  
 My dearest lord fell from high honors staire,  
 Into the hands of hys accursed fone,  
 And cruelly was slaine, that shall I ever  
 mone.

## XXIV

'His blessed body, spoild of lively breath,  
 Was afterward, I know not how, convaïd  
 And fro me hid: of whose most innocent death

When tidings came to mee, unhappy maid,  
 O how great sorrow my sad soule assaid!  
 Then forth I went his woefull corse to find,  
 And many yeares throughout the world I  
 straid,

A virgin widow, whose deepe wounded mind  
 With love, long time did languish as the  
 stricken hind.

## XXV

'At last it chaunced this proud Sarazin  
 To meete me wandring; who perforce me  
 led

With him away, but yet could never win  
 The fort, that ladies hold in soveraigne  
 dread.

There lies he now with foule dishonor dead.

Who, whiles he livde, was called prond  
Sansfoy:

The eldest of three brethren, all three bred  
Of one bad sire, whose youngest is Sansjoy,  
And twixt them both was born the blondy  
bold Sansloy.

## XXVI

'In this sad plight, friendlesse, unfortunate,  
Now miserable I Fidessa dwell,  
Craving of yon, in pittie of my state,  
To doe none ill, if please ye not doe well.'  
He in great passion al this while did dwell,  
More bnsying his quicke eies, her face to  
view,  
Then his dull eares, to heare what shee did  
tell;  
And said, 'Faire lady, hart of flint would rew  
The undeserved woes and sorrowes which  
ye shew.

## XXVII

'Henceforth in safe assuranee may ye rest,  
Having both founnd a new friend you to aid,  
And lost an old foe, that did yon molest:  
Better new friend then an old foe is said.'  
With change of chear the seeming simple  
maid  
Let fal her eien, as shamefast, to the earth,  
And yeelding soft, in that she nought gain-  
said,  
So forth they rode, he feining seemely merth,  
And shee coy lookes: so dainty, they say,  
maketh derth.

## XXVIII

Long time they thus together traveled,  
Til, weary of their way, they came at last  
Where grew two goodly trees, that faire  
did spred  
Their armes abroad, with gray mosse over-  
cast,  
And their greene leaves, trembling with  
every blast,  
Made a calme shadowe far in compasse  
round:  
The fearefull shepheard, often there aghast,  
Under them never sat, ne wont there sound  
His mery oaten pipe, but shund th' unlucky  
ground.

## XXIX

But this good knight, soone as he them can  
spie,  
For the coole shade him thither hastily got:

For golden Phoebus, now ymounted hie,  
From fiery wheeles of his faire chariot  
Hurled his beame so scorching ernell hot,  
That living creature mote it not abide;  
And his new lady it endured not.  
There they alight, in hope themselves to  
hide

From the fierce heat, and rest their weary  
limbs a tide.

## XXX

Faire seemely pleasaunce each to other  
makes,

With goodly purposes, there as they sit:  
And in his falsed fancy he her takes  
To be the fairest wight that lived yit;  
Which to expresse, he bends his gentle wit,  
And thinking of those branches greene to  
frame

A girlond for her dainty forehead fit,  
He pluckt a bough; out of whose rifte there  
came

Smal drops of gory blond, that trickled  
down the same.

## XXXI

Therewith a piteous yelling voice was heard,  
Crying, 'O spare with guilty hands to teare  
My tender sides in this rough rynd embard;  
But fly, ah! fly far hence away, for feare  
Least to yon hap that happened to me  
heare,

And to this wretched lady, my deare love;  
O too deare love, love bought with death  
too deare!'

Astond he stood, and up his heare did  
hove,

And with that suddain horror could no  
member move.

## XXXII

At last, whenas the dreadfull passion  
Was overpast, and manhood well awake,  
Yet musing at the straunge occasion,  
And doubting much his sence, he thus be-  
spake:

'What voice of damned ghost from Limbo  
lake,  
Or guilefull spright wandring in empty aire,  
Both which fraile men doe oftentimes mis-  
take,

Sends to my doubtful eares these speeches  
rare,

And ruefull plaints, me bidding guiltlesse  
blood to spare?'



## XXXIII

Then groning deep: 'Nor damned ghost,'  
 quoth he,  
 'Nor guileful sprite to thee these words  
 doth speake,  
 But once a man, Fradubio, now a tree;  
 Wretched man, wretched tree! whose na-  
 ture weake  
 A cruell witch, her cursed will to wreake,  
 Hath thus transformd, and plast in open  
 plaines,  
 Where Boreas doth blow fñll bitter bleake,  
 And scorching sunne does dry my secret  
 vaines:  
 For though a tree I seme, yet cold and heat  
 me paines.'

## XXXIV

'Say on, Fradubio, then, or man or tree,'  
 Quoth then the knight; 'by whose mis-  
 chievous arts  
 Art thou misshaped thus, as now I see?  
 He oft finds med'cine who his grieve im-  
 parts;  
 But double griefs afflict concealing harts,  
 As raging flames who striveth to suppress.'  
 'The author then,' said he, 'of all my smarts,  
 Is one Duessa, a false sorceresse,  
 That many errant knights hath broght to  
 wretchednesse.

## XXXV

'In prime of youthly yeares, when corage  
 hott  
 The fire of love and joy of chevalree  
 First kindled in my brest, it was my lott  
 To love this gentle lady, whome ye see  
 Now not a lady, but a seeming tree;  
 With whome as once I rode accompanyde,  
 Me chaunced of a knight encountred bee,  
 That had a like faire lady by his syde;  
 Lyke a faire lady, but did fowle Duessa hyde.

## XXXVI

'Whose forged beauty he did take in hand  
 All other dames to have exceded farre;  
 I in defence of mine did likewise stand,  
 Mine, that did then shine as the morning  
 starre:  
 So both to batteill fierce arraunged arre;  
 In which his harder fortune was to fall  
 Under my speare: such is the dye of warre:  
 His lady, left as a prise martiall,  
 Did yield her comely person, to be at my  
 call.

## XXXVII

'So doubly lov'd of ladies unlike faire,  
 Th' one seeming such, the other such in-  
 deede,  
 One day in doubt I cast for to compare,  
 Whether in beauties glorie did excede;  
 A rosy girlond was the victors mecde.  
 Both seemde to win, and both seemde won  
 to bee,  
 So hard the discord was to be agreede:  
 Frælissa was as faire as faire mote bee,  
 And ever false Duessa seemde as faire as  
 shee.

## XXXVIII

'The wicked witch, now seeing all this while  
 The doubtfull ballaunce equally to sway,  
 What not by right, she cast to win by guile;  
 And by her hellish science raisd streight  
 way  
 A foggy mist, that overcast the day,  
 And a dull blast, that, breathing on her face,  
 Dimmed her former beauties shining ray,  
 And with foule ugly forme did her dis-  
 grace:  
 Then was she fayre alone, when none was  
 faire in place.

## XXXIX

'Then eride she out, "Fye, fye! deformed  
 wight,  
 Whose borrowed beautie now appeareth  
 plaine  
 To have before bewitched all mens sight;  
 O leave her soone, or let her soone be  
 slaine."  
 Her loathly visage viewing with disdaine,  
 Eftsoones I thought her such as she me  
 told,  
 And would have kild her; but with faigned  
 paine  
 The false witch did my wrathfull hand  
 with-hold:  
 So left her, where she now is turnd to  
 treen mould.

## XL

'Thensforth I tooke Duessa for my dame,  
 And in the witch unweeting joyd long time,  
 Ne ever wist but that she was the same:  
 Till on a day (that day is everie prime,  
 When witches wont do penance for their  
 crime)  
 I chaunst to see her in her proper hew,  
 Bathing her selfe in origane and thyme:

A filthy foule old woman I did vew,  
That ever to have toucht her I did deadly  
rew.

## XLI

'Her neather partes misshapen, monstrous,  
Were hidd in water, that I could not see,  
But they did seeme more foule and hide-  
ous,  
Then womans shape man would beleewe to  
bee.

Thensforth from her most beastly com-  
panie

I gan refraine, in minde to slipp away,  
Soone as appeard safe opportunitie:  
For danger great, if not assurd decay,  
I saw before mine eyes, if I were knowne  
to stray.

## XLII

'The divelish hag, by chaunges of my cheare,  
Perceiv'd my thought; and drown'd in sleepe  
night,  
With wicked herbes and oyntments did be-  
smeare

My body all, through charmes and magicke  
might,

That all my senses were bereaved quight:  
Then brought she me into this desert waste,  
And by my wretched lovers side me pight,  
Where now enclos'd in wooden wals full  
faste,

Banisht from living wights, our wearie  
daies we waste.'

## XLIII

'But how long time,' said then the Elfin  
knight,

'Are you in this misformed hous to dwell?'  
'We may not chaunge,' quoth he, 'this evill  
plight

Till we be bathed in a living well;  
That is the terme prescribed by the spell.'  
'O how,' said he, 'mote I that well out find,  
That may restore you to your wonted well?'  
'Time and sufficed fates to former kynd  
Shall us restore; none else from hence may  
us unbynd.'

## XLIV

The false Duessa, now Fidessa hight,  
Heard how in vaine Fradubio did lament,  
And knew well all was true. But the good  
knight  
Full of sad feare and ghastly dreriment,

When all this speech the living tree had  
spent,  
The bleeding bough did thrust into the  
ground,

That from the blood he might be innocent,  
And with fresh clay did close the wooder  
wound:

Then turning to his lady, dead with feare  
her fownd.

## XLV

Her seeming dead he fownd with feigned  
feare,

As all unweeting of that well she knew,  
And paynd himselfe with busie care to reare  
Her out of carelesse swowne. Her eylyds  
blew,

And dimmed sight, with pale and deadly hew,  
At last she up gan lift: with trembling  
cheare

Her up he tooke, too simple and too trew,  
And oft her kist. At length, all passed feare,  
He set her on her steede, and forward  
forth did beare.

## CANTO III

Forsaken Truth long seekes her love,  
And makes the lyon mylde,  
Marres Blind Devotions mart, and fals  
In hand of leachour vylde.

## I

NOUGHT is there under heav'ns wide hol-  
lownesse,

That moves more deare compassion of mind,  
Then beautie brought t'unworthie wretch-  
ednesse

Through envies snares, or fortunes freakes  
unkind:

I, whether lately through her brightnes  
blynd,

Or through alleageance and fast fealty,  
Which I do owe unto all womankynd,  
Feele my hart perst with so great agony,  
When such I see, that all for pittie I could  
dy.

## II

And now it is empassioned so deepe,  
For fairest Unaes sake, of whom I sing,  
That my frayle eies these lines with teares  
do steepe,

To thinke how she through guyleful hande-  
ling,

Though true as touch, though daughter of  
a king,  
Though faire as ever living wight was fayre,  
Though nor in word nor deede ill meriting,  
Is from her knight divorced in despayre,  
And her dew loves deryv'd to that vile  
witches shayre.

## III

Yet she, most faithfull ladie, all this while  
Forsaken, wofull, solitarie mayd,  
Far from all peoples preace, as in exile,  
In wilderness and wastfull deserts strayd,  
To seeke her knight; who, subtilly betrayd  
Through that late vision which th' en-  
chaunter wrought,  
Had her abandond. She, of nought affrayd,  
Through woods and wastnes wide him daily  
sought;  
Yet wished tydinges none of him unto her  
brought.

## IV

One day, nigh wearie of the yrkesome way,  
From her unhastie beast she did alight,  
And on the grasse her dainty limbs did lay  
In secrete shadow, far from all mens sight:  
From her fayre head her fillet she undight,  
And layd her stole aside. Her angels face  
As the great eye of heaven shyned bright,  
And made a sunshine in the shady place;  
Did never mortall eye behold such heavenly  
grace.

## V

It fortun'd, out of the thickest wood  
A ramping lyon rushed suddeinly,  
Hunting full greedy after salvage blood:  
Soone as the royall virgin he did spy,  
With gaping mouth at her ran greedily,  
To have attonce devourd her tender corse;  
But to the pray when as he drew more ny,  
His bloody rage aswaged with remorse,  
And with the sight amazd, forgat his furi-  
ous forse.

## VI

In stead thereof he kist her wearie feet,  
And lickt her lilly hands with fawning tong,  
As he her wronged innocence did weete.  
O how can beautie maister the most strong,  
And simple truth subdue avenging wrong!  
Whose yielded pryde and proud submission,  
Still dreading death, when she had marked  
long,

Her hart gan melt in great compassion,  
And drizzling teares did shed for pure affec-  
tion.

## VII

'The lyon, lord of everie beast in field,'  
Quoth she, 'his princely puissance doth  
abate,  
And mightie proud to humble weake does  
yield,  
Forgetfull of the hungry rage, which late  
Him prickt, in pittie of my sad estate:  
But he, my lyon, and my noble lord,  
How does he find in cruell hart to hate  
Her that him lov'd, and ever most adord  
As the god of my life? why hath he me  
abhor'd?'

## VIII

Redounding teares did choke th' end of her  
plaint,  
Which softly ecchoed from the neighbour  
wood;  
And sad to see her sorrowfull constraint,  
The kingly beast upon her gazing stood;  
With pittie calmd, downe fell his angry  
mood.  
At last, in close hart shutting up her payne,  
Arose the virgin borne of heavenly brood,  
And to her snowy palfrey got agayne,  
To seeke her strayed champion if she might  
attayne.

## IX

The lyon would not leave her desolate,  
But with her went along, as a strong gard  
Of her chaste person, and a faythfull mate  
Of her sad troubles and misfortunes hard:  
Still, when she slept, he kept both watch  
and ward,  
And when she wakt, he wayted diligent,  
With humble service to her will prepar'd:  
From her fayre eyes he tooke cominande-  
ment,  
And ever by her lookes conceived her in-  
tent.

## X

Long she thus travelld through deserts  
wyde,  
By which she thought her wandring knight  
shold pas,  
Yet never shew of living wight espyde;  
Till that at length she found the troden gras  
In which the tract of peoples footing was,



Under the steepe foot of a mountaine hore:  
The same she followes, till at last she has  
A damzell spyde slow footing her before,  
That on her shoulders sad a pot of water  
bore.

## XI

To whom approching, she to her gan call,  
To weet if dwelling place were nigh at hand;  
But the rude wench her answerd nought  
at all;  
She could not heare, nor speake, nor under-  
stand;  
Till, seeing by her side the lyon stand,  
With suddaine feare her pitcher downe she  
threw,  
And fled away: for never in that land  
Face of fayre lady she before did vew,  
And that dredd lyons looke her cast in  
deadly hew.

## XII

Full fast she fled, ne ever lookt behynd,  
As if her life upon the wager lay,  
And home she came, whereas her mother  
blynd  
Sate in eternall night: nought could she say,  
Bnt, suddaine catching hold, did her dis-  
may  
With quaking hands, and other signes of  
feare:  
Who, full of ghastly fright and cold affray,  
Gan shut the dore. By this arrived there  
Dame Una, weary dame, and entrance did  
requere.

## XIII

Which when none yielded, her unruly page  
With his rude clawes the wicket open rent,  
And let her in; where, of his cruell rage  
Nigh dead with feare, and faint astonish-  
ment,  
Shee found them both in darkesome corner  
pent;  
Where that old woman day and night did  
pray  
Upon her beads, devoutly penitent:  
Nine hundred *Pater nosters* every day,  
And thrise nine hundred *Aves*, she was wont  
to say.

## XIV

And to augment her painefull penance  
more,  
Thrise every weeke in ashes shee did sitt,

And next her wrinkled skin rough sacke-  
cloth wore,  
And thrise three times did fast from any bitt:  
But now for feare her beads she did for-  
gett.

Whose needelesse dread for to remove away,  
Faire Una framed words and count'naunce  
fitt:

Which hardly doen, at length she gan them  
pray  
That in their cotage small that night she  
rest her may.

## XV

The day is spent, and commeth drowsie  
night,

When every creature shrowded is in sleepe:  
Sad Una downe her laies in weary plight,  
And at her feete the lyon watch doth keepe:  
In stead of rest, she does lament, and weepe  
For the late losse of her deare loved knight,  
And sighes, and grones, and evermore does  
steepe

Her tender brest in bitter teares all night;  
All night she thinks too long, and often  
lookes for light.

## XVI

Now when Aldeboran was mounted hye  
Above the shinie Cassiopeias chaire,  
And all in deadly sleepe did drowned lye,  
One knocked at the dore, and in would fare;  
He knocked fast, and often curst, and sware,  
That ready entraunce was not at his call:  
For on his backe a heavy load he bare  
Of nightly stelths and pillage severall,  
Which he had got abroad by purchas  
criminall.

## XVII

He was, to weete, a stout and sturdy thiefe,  
Wont to robbe churches of their ornaments,  
And poore mens boxes of their due reliefe,  
Which given was to them for good intents;  
The holy saints of their rich vestiments  
He did disrobe, when all men carelesse slept,  
And spoild the priests of their habiliments;  
Whiles none the holy things in safety kept,  
Then he by conning sleights in at the win-  
dow crept.

## XVIII

And all that he by right or wrong could  
find  
Unto this house he brought, and did bestow

Upon the daughter of this woman blind,  
 Abessa, daughter of Corceca slow,  
 With whom he whoredome usd, that few  
     did know,  
 And fed her fatt with feast of offerings,  
 And plenty, which in all the land did grow;  
 Ne spared he to give her gold and rings:  
 And now he to her brought part of his  
     stolen things.

## XIX

Thus, long the dore with rage and threats  
     he bett,  
 Yet of those fearfull women none durst rize,  
 (The lyon frayed them,) him in to lett:  
 He would no lenger stay him to advize,  
 But open breakes the dore in furious wize,  
 And entring is; when that disdainfull beast,  
 Encountring fierce, him suddein doth sur-  
     prize,  
 And seizing cruell clawes on trembling  
     brest,  
 Under his lordly foot him proudly hath sup-  
     prest.

## XX

Him booteth not resist, nor succour call,  
 His bleeding hart is in the vengers hand;  
 Who streight him rent in thousand peeces  
     small,  
 And quite dismembred hath: the thirsty  
     land  
 Dronke up his life; his corse left on the  
     strand.  
 His fearefull freends weare out the wofull  
     night,  
 Ne dare to weepe, nor seeme to understand  
 The heavie hap which on them is alight;  
 Affraid, least to themselves the like mis-  
     happen might.

## XXI

Now when broad day the world discovered  
     has,  
 Up Una rose, up rose the lyon eke,  
 And on their former journey forward pas,  
 In waies unknowne, her wandring knight to  
     seeke,  
 With paines far passing that long wandring  
     Greeke,  
 That for his love refused deitye;  
 Such were the labours of this lady meeke,  
 Still seeking him, that from her still did flye;  
 Then furthest from her hope, when most  
     she weened nye.

## XXII

Soone as she parted thence, the fearfull  
     twayne,  
 That blind old woman and her daughter dear,  
 Came forth, and finding Kirkrapine there  
     slayne,  
 For anguish great they gan to rend their  
     heare,  
 And beat their brests, and naked flesh to  
     teare.  
 And when they both had wept and wayld  
     their fill,  
 Then forth they ran like two amazed deare,  
 Halfe mad through malice and revenging  
     will,  
 To follow her, that was the causer of their  
     ill.

## XXIII

Whome overtaking, they gan loudly bray,  
 With hollow houlng and lamenting cry,  
 Shamefully at her rayling all the way,  
 And her accusing of dishonesty,  
 That was the flowre of faith and chastity;  
 And still, amidst her rayling, she did pray  
 That plagues, and mischiefes, and long mis-  
     ery  
 Might fall on her, and follow all the way,  
 And that in endlesse error she might ever  
     stray.

## XXIV

But when she saw her prayers nought pre-  
     vaile,  
 Shee backe retourned with some labour lost;  
 And in the way, as shee did weepe and waile,  
 A knight her mett in mighty armes embost,  
 Yet knight was not for all his bragging  
     bost,  
 Bnt subtile Archimag, that Una sought  
 By traynes into new troubles to have toste:  
 Of that old woman tidings he besought,  
 If that of such a lady shee could tellen  
     ought.

## XXV

Therewith she gan her passion to renew,  
 And cry, and curse, and raile, and rend her  
     heare,  
 Saying, that harlott she too lately knew,  
 That causd her shed so many a bitter teare,  
 And so forth told the story of her feare.  
 Much seemed he to mone her haplesse  
     chaunce,  
 And after for that lady did inquire;

Which being taught, he forward gan ad-  
vaunce  
His fair enchanted steed, and eke his  
charmed launce.

## XXVI

Ere long he came where Una traveild slow,  
And that wilde champion wayting her be-  
syde:  
Whome seeing such, for dread hee durst  
not show  
Him selfe too nigh at hand, but turned  
wyde  
Unto an hil; from whence when she him  
spyde,  
By his like seeming shield her knight by  
name  
Shee weend it was, and towards him gan  
ride:  
Approching nigh, she wist it was the same,  
And with faire fearefull humblesse towards  
him shee came;

## XXVII

And weeping said, 'Ah! my long lacked  
lord,  
Where have ye bene thus long out of my  
sight?  
Much feared I to have bene quite abhord,  
Or ought have done, that ye displeasen  
might,  
That should as death unto my deare heart  
light:  
For since mine eie your joyous sight did  
mis,  
My chearefull day is turnd to chearelesse  
night,  
And eke my night of death the shadow  
is;  
But welcome now, my light, and shining  
lampe of blis.'

## XXVIII

He thereto meeting said, 'My dearest dame,  
Far be it from your thought, and fro my  
wil,  
To thinke that knighthood I so much should  
shame,  
As you to leave, that have me loved stil,  
And chose in Faery court, of meere good-  
wil,  
Where noblest knights were to be found  
on earth:  
The earth shall sooner leave her kindly  
skil

To bring forth fruit, and make eternall  
derth,  
Then I leave you, my liefe, yborn of  
heavenly berth.

## XXIX

'And sooth to say, why I lefted you so long,  
Was for to seeke adventure in straunge  
place,  
Where Archimago said a felon strong  
To many knights did daily worke disgrace;  
But knight he now shall never more de-  
face:  
Good cause of mine excuse, that mote ye  
please  
Well to accept, and ever more embrace  
My faithfull service, that by land and seas  
Have vowd you to defend. Now then your  
plaint appease.'

## XXX

His lovely words her seemd due recom-  
pence  
Of all her passed paines: one loving howre  
For many yeares of sorrow can dispence:  
A dram of sweete is worth a pound of  
sowre:  
Shee has forgott how many a woeful stowre  
For him she late endurd; she speakes no  
more  
Of past: true is, that true love hath no  
powre  
To looken backe; his eies be fixt before.  
Before her stands her knight, for whom she  
toyl'd so sore.

## XXXI

Much like as when the beaten marinere,  
That long hath wandred in the ocean wide,  
Ofte soust in swelling Tethys saltish teare,  
And long time having tand his tawney hide  
With blustering breath of heaven, that none  
can bide,  
And scorching flames of fierce Orions  
hound,  
Soone as the port from far he has espide,  
His chearfull whistle merily doth sound,  
And Nereus crownes with cups; his mates  
him pledg around.

## XXXII

Such joy made Una, when her knight she  
found;  
And eke th' enchaunter joyous seemde no  
lesse



Then the glad marchant, that does vew  
from ground  
His ship far come from watrie wildernesse;  
He hurles out vowes, and Neptune oft doth  
blesse.

So forth they past, and all the way they  
spent

Discoursing of her dreadful late distresse,  
In which he askt her, what the lyon meut:  
Who told her all that fell in journey, as she  
went.

## XXXIII

They had not ridden far, when they might  
see

One striking towards them with hastie heat,  
Full strongly armd, and on a courser free,  
That through his fiersnesse fomed all with  
sweat,

And the sharpe yron did for anger eat,  
When his hot ryder spurd his chauffed side;  
His looke was sterne, and seemed still to  
threat

Cruell revenge, which he in hart did hyde;  
And on his shield *Sans loy* in bloody lines  
was dyde.

## XXXIV

When nigh he drew unto this gentle payre,  
And saw the red-crosse, which the knight  
did beare,

He burnt in fire, and gan eftsoones prepare  
Himselfe to batteill with his couched speare.  
Loth was that other, and did faint through  
feare,

To taste th' mntried dint of deadly steele;  
But yet his lady did so well him cheare,  
That hope of new good hap he gan to feele;  
So bent his speare, and spurd his horse  
with yron hcele.

## XXXV

But that prond Payuim forward came so  
ferce

And full of wrath, that with his sharphead  
speare

Through vainly crossed shield he quite did  
perce;

And had his staggering steed not shronke  
for feare,

Through shield and body eke he should him  
beare:

Yet so great was the puissance of his push,  
That from his sadle quite he did him  
beare:

He, tombling rudely downe, to ground did  
rush,  
And from his gored wound a well of bloud  
did gush.

## XXXVI

Dismounting lightly from his loftie steed,  
He to him lept, in minde to reave his life,  
And prondly said: 'Lo there the worthie  
meed

Of him that slew Sansfoy with bloody kuife!  
Henceforth his ghost, freed from repining  
strife,

In peace may passeu over Lethe lake,  
When mourning altars, purgd with eninies  
life,

The black infernall Furies doen aslake:  
Life from Sansfoy thou tookst, Sansloy  
shall from thee take.'

## XXXVII

Therewith in haste his helmet gan unlace,  
Till Una eride, 'O hold that heave hand,  
Deare sir, what ever that thou be in place!  
Enough is, that thy foe doth vanquisht stand  
Now at thy mercy: mercy not withstand:  
For he is one the truest knight alive,  
Thongh conquered now he lye on lowly  
land,

And whilest him fortune favourd, fayre did  
thrive

In bloody field: therefore of life him not  
deprive.'

## XXXVIII

Her piteous wordes might notabate his rage,  
But, rudely rending up his helmet, would  
Have slayne him streight: but when he sees  
his age,

And hoarie head of Archimago old,  
His hasty hand he doth amased hold,  
And, halfe ashamed, wondred at the sight:  
For that old man well knew he, though un-  
told,

In charmes and magick to have wondrous  
might;

Ne ever wont in field, ne in round lists, to  
fight.

## XXXIX

And said, 'Why, Archimago, lucklesse syre,  
What doe I see? what hard mishap is this,  
That hath thee hether brought to taste mine  
yre?

Or thine the fault, or mine the error is,

In stead of foe to wound my friend amis ?  
 He answered nought, but in a traunce still  
     lay,  
 And on those guilefull dazed eyes of his  
 The cloude of death did sit. Which doen  
     away,  
 He left him lying so, ne would no lenger  
     stay;

## XL

But to the virgin comes; who all this while  
 Amased stands, her selfe so mockt to see  
 By him, who has the guerdon of his guile,  
 For so misfeigning her true knight to bee:  
 Yet is she now in more perplexitie,  
 Left in the hand of that same Paynim bold,  
 From whom her booteth not at all to flie;  
 Who, by her cleanly garment catching hold,  
 Her from her palfrey pluckt, her visage to  
     behold.

## XLI

But her fiers servant, full of kingly aw  
 And high disdaine, whenas his souveraine  
     dame  
 So rudely handled by her foe he saw,  
 With gaping jawes full greedy at him came,  
 And, ramping on his shield, did weene the  
     same  
 Have reft away with his sharp rending  
     clawes:  
 But he was stout, and lust did now inflame  
 His corage more, that from his griping  
     pawes  
 He hath his shield redeemd, and forth his  
     swerd he drawes.

## XLII

O then too weake and feeble was the forse  
 Of salvage beast, his puissance to with-  
     stand:  
 For he was strong, and of so mightie corse,  
 As ever wielded speare in warlike hand,  
 And feates of armes did wisely understand.  
 Eftsoones he perced through his chaufed  
     chest  
 With thrilling point of deadly yron brand,  
 And launcht his lordly hart: with death  
     opprest  
 He ror'd aloud, whiles life forsooke his  
     stubborne brest.

## XLIII

Who now is left to keepe the forlorne maid  
 From raging spoile of lawlesse victors will ?

Her faithfull gard remov'd, her hope dis-  
     maid,  
 Her selfe a yielded pray to save or spill.  
 He now, lord of the field, his pride to fill,  
 With foule reproches and disdaineeful spight  
 Her vildly entertaines, and, will or nill,  
 Beares her away upon his courser light:  
 Her prayers nought prevaile; his rage is  
     more of might.

## XLIV

And all the way, with great lamenting paine,  
 And piteous plaintes, she filleth his dull  
     eares,  
 That stony hart could riven have in twaine,  
 And all the way she wetts with flowing  
     teares:  
 But he, enrag'd with rancor, nothing heares.  
 Her servile beast yet would not leave her  
     so,  
 But followes her far of, ne ought he feares,  
 To be partaker of her wandring woe.  
 More mild, in beastly kind, then that her  
     beastly foc.

## CANTO IV

To sinfull Hous of Pryde Duessa  
 Guydes the faithfull knight,  
 Where, brothers death to wreak, Sansjoy  
     Doth chaleng him to fight

## I

YOUNG knight what ever, that dost armes  
     professe,  
 And through long labours hunttest after  
     fame,  
 Beware of fraud, beware of ficklenesse,  
 In choice, and chaunge, of thy deare loved  
     dame,  
 Least thou of her believe too lightly blame,  
 And rash misweening doe thy hart remove:  
 For unto knight there is no greater shame,  
 Then lightnesse and inconstancie in love:  
 That doth this Rederosse Knights ensample  
     plainly prove.

## II

Who, after that he had faire Una lorne,  
 Through light misdeeming of her loialtie,  
 And false Duessa in her sted had borne,  
 Called Fidess', and so supposd to be,  
 Long with her traveild, till at last they see  
 A goodly building, bravely garnished;  
 The house of mightie prince it seemd to be;

And towards it a broad high way that led,  
All bare through peoples feet, which thether  
traveiled.

## III

Great troupes of people traveild thether-  
ward  
Both day and night, of each degree and  
place;  
But few returned, having scaped hard,  
With balefull beggery, or foule disgrace;  
Which ever after in most wretched case,  
Like loathsome lazars, by the hedges lay.  
Thether Duessa badd him bend his pace:  
For she is wearie of the toilsom way,  
And also nigh consumed is the lingring day.

## IV

A stately pallace built of squared bricke,  
Which cunningly was without morter laid,  
Whose wals were high, but nothing strong  
nor thick,  
And golden foile all over them displaid,  
That purest skye with brightnesse they dis-  
maid:  
High lifted up were many loftie towres,  
And goodly galleries far over laid,  
Full of faire windowes and delightful  
bowres;  
And on the top a diall told the timely  
howres.

## V

It was a goodly heape for to behold,  
And spake the praises of the workmans witt;  
But full great pittie, that so faire a mould  
Did on so weake foundation ever sitt:  
For on a sandie hill, that still did flitt  
And fall away, it mounted was full hie,  
That every breath of heaven shook itt;  
And all the hinder partes, that few could spie,  
Were ruinous and old, but painted cun-  
ningly.

## VI

Arrived there, they passed in forth right;  
For still to all the gates stood open wide:  
Yet charge of them was to a porter hight,  
Cald Malvenù, who entrance none denide:  
Thence to the hall, which was on every side  
With rich array and costly arras dight:  
Infinite sortes of people did abide  
There waiting long, to win the wished sight  
Of her, that was the lady of that pallace  
bright.

## VII

By them they passe, all gazing on them  
round,  
And to the presence mount; whose glorious  
vew  
Their frayle amazed senses did confound:  
In living princes court none ever knew  
Such endlesse riches, and so sumptuous  
shew;  
Ne Persia selfe, the nourse of pompous  
pride,  
Like ever saw. And there a noble crew  
Of lords and ladies stood on every side,  
Which, with their presence fayre the place  
much beautifide.

## VIII

High above all a cloth of state was spred,  
And a rich throne, as bright as sunny day,  
On which there sate, most brave embel-  
lished  
With royall robes and gorgeous array,  
A mayden queene, that shone as Titans ray,  
In glistriug gold and perelesse pretious  
stone;  
Yet her bright blazing beautie did assay  
To dim the brightnesse of her glorious  
throne,  
As envying her selfe, that too exceeding  
shone:

## IX

Exceeding shone, like Phœbus fayrest childe,  
That did presume his fathers fyrie wayne,  
And flaming mouthes of steedes unwonted  
wilde,  
Through highest heaven with weaker hand  
to rayne:  
Proud of such glory and advancement vayne,  
While flashing beames do daze his feeble  
eyen,  
He leaves the welkin way most beaten  
playne,  
And, rapt with whirling wheeles, inflames  
the skyen  
With fire not made to burne, but fayrely  
for to shyne.

## X

So proud she shynd in her princely state,  
Looking to heaven, for earth she did dis-  
dayne,  
And sitting high, for lowly she did hate:  
Lo! underneath her scornefull feete, was  
layne



A dreadfull dragon with an hideous trayne,  
 And in her hand she held a mirrhour  
 bright,  
 Wherein her face she often vewed fayne,  
 And in her selfe-lov'd semblance tooke de-  
 light;  
 For she was wondrous faire, as any living  
 wight.

## XI

Of griesly Pluto she the daughter was,  
 And sad Proserpina, the queene of hell;  
 Yet did she thinke her pearelesse worth to  
 pas  
 That parentage, with pride so did she swell,  
 And thundring Jove, that high in heaven  
 doth dwell,  
 And wield the world, she claymed for her  
 syre,  
 Or if that any else did Jove exeell:  
 For to the highest she did still aspyre,  
 Or, if ought higher were then that, did it  
 desyre.

## XII

And proud Lueifera men did her eall,  
 That made her selfe a queene, and crownd  
 to be;  
 Yet rightfull kingdome she had none at all,  
 Ne heritage of native soveraintie,  
 But did usurpe with wrong and tyrannie  
 Upon the scepter, which she now did hold:  
 Ne ruld her realme with lawes, but pol-  
 lieie,  
 And strong advizement of six wisards old,  
 That with their counsels bad her kingdome  
 did uphold.

## XIII

Soone as the Elfin knight in presencc came,  
 And false Duessa, seeming lady fayre,  
 A gentle husher, Vanitie by name,  
 Made rowme, and passage for them did pre-  
 paire:  
 So goodly brought them to the lowest stayre  
 Of her high throne, where they, on humble  
 knee  
 Making obeysaunee, did the cause declare,  
 Why they were come, her roiall state to see,  
 To prove the wide report of her great  
 majestee.

## XIV

With loftie eyes, halfe loth to looke so lowe,  
 She thaneked them in her disdaine full wise,

Ne other grace vouehsafed them to shewe  
 Of princeesse worthy; scarse them bad arise.  
 Her lordes and ladies all this while devise  
 Themselves to setten forth to straungers  
 sight:  
 Some frounce their curled heare in courtly  
 guise,  
 Some praneke their ruffles, and others trimly  
 dight  
 Their gay attyre: each others greater pride  
 does spight.

## XV

Goodly they all that knight doe entertayne,  
 Right glad with him to have increast their  
 crew;  
 But to Duess' each one himselfe did payne  
 All kindnesse and faire courtesie to shew;  
 For in that court whylome her well they  
 knew:  
 Yet the stout Faery mongst the middest  
 crowd  
 Thought all their glorie vaine in knightly  
 vew,  
 And that great princeesse too exceeding  
 prowd,  
 That to strange knight no better counte-  
 nance allowd.

## XVI

Suddein upriseth from her stately place  
 The roiall dame, and for her coeche doth call:  
 All hurtlen forth, and she, with princely  
 pace,  
 As faire Aurora, in her purple pall,  
 Out of the east the dawning day doth eall,  
 So forth she comes: her brightnes brode  
 doth blaze:  
 The heapes of people, thronging in the hall,  
 Doe ride each other, upon her to gaze:  
 Her glorious glitterand light doth all mens  
 eies amaze.

## XVII

So forth she comes, and to her coche does  
 elyme,  
 Adorned all with gold and girlonds gay,  
 That seemd as fresh as Flora in her prime,  
 And strove to match, in roiall rich array,  
 Great Junoes golden chayre, the which, they  
 say,  
 The gods stand gazing on, when she does  
 ride  
 To Joves high hous through heavens bras-  
 paved way,

Drawne of fayre pecocks, that excell in  
pride,  
And full of Argus eyes their tayles dis-  
predden wide.

## XXVIII

But this was drawne of six unequall beasts,  
On which her six sage counsellours did ryde,  
Taught to obay their bestiall behests,  
With like conditions to their kindes ap-  
plyde:  
Of which the first, that all the rest did  
guyde,  
Was sluggish Idlenesse, the nourse of sin;  
Upon a slouthfull asse he chose to ryde,  
Arayd in habit blacke, and amis thin,  
Like to an holy monck, the service to begin.

## XIX

And in his hand his portesse still he bare,  
That much was worne, but therein little  
redd;  
For of devotion he had little care,  
Still drownd in sleepe, and most of his  
daies dedd:  
Scarse could he once uphold his heaue hedd,  
To looken whether it were night or day:  
May seeme the wayne was very evill ledd,  
When such an one had gniding of the way,  
That knew not whether right he went, or  
else astray.

## XX

From worldly cares himselfe he did es-  
ioyne,  
And greatly shunned manly exercise;  
From everie worke he chalenged essayne,  
For contemplation sake: yet otherwise  
His life he led in lawlesse riotise;  
By which he grew to grievous malady;  
For in his lustlesse limbs, through evill  
guise,  
A shaking fever raignd continually.  
Such one was Idlenesse, first of this com-  
pany.

## XXI

And by his side rode loathsome Gluttony,  
Deformed creature, on a filthie swyne:  
His belly was upblowne with luxury,  
And eke with fatnesse swollen were his eyne;  
And like a crane his necke was long and  
fyne,  
With which he swallowd up excessive feast,  
For want whereof poore people oft did pyne:

And all the way, most like a brutish beast,  
He spned up his gorge, that all did kon  
deteast.

## XXII

In greene vine leaves he was *right* fitly  
clad;  
For other clothes he could *not* weare for  
heat;  
And on his head an yvie girland had,  
From under which fast trickled downe the  
sweat:  
Still as he rode, he somewhat still did  
eat,  
And in his hand did beare a bouzing can,  
Of which he supt so oft, that on his seat  
His dronken corse he scarce upholden can:  
In shape and life more like a monster then  
a man.

## XXIII

Unfit he was for any worldly thing,  
And eke unhabile once to stirre or go;  
Not meet to be of counsell to a king,  
Whose mind in meat and drinke was  
drowned so,  
That from his frend he seeldome knew his  
fo:  
Full of diseases was his carcas blew,  
And a dry dropsie through his flesh did  
flow,  
Which by misdiet daily greater grew.  
Such one was Gluttony, the second of that  
crew.

## XXIV

And next to him rode lustfull Lechery  
Upon a bearded gote, whose rugged heare,  
And whally eies (the signe of gelosity)  
Was like the person selfe, whom he did  
beare:  
Who rough, and blacke, and filthy, did ap-  
peare,  
Unseemely man to please faire ladies eye;  
Yet he of ladies oft was loved deare,  
When fairer faces were bid standen by:  
O who does know the bent of womens fan-  
tasy?

## XXV

In a greene gowne he clothed was full  
faire,  
Which underneath did hide his filthinesse;  
And in his hand a burning hart he bare,  
Full of vaine follies and new fanglenesse:

For he was false, and fraught with fickle-  
nesse,  
And learned had to love with secret lookes,  
And well could daunce, and sing with rue-  
fulness,  
And fortunes tell, and read in loving bookes,  
And thousand other waies, to bait his  
fleshy hookes.

## XXVI

Inconstant man, that loved all he saw,  
And lusted after all that he did love;  
Ne would his looser life be tide to law,  
But joyd weake wemens hearts to tempt,  
and prove  
If from their loyall loves he might them  
move;  
Which lewdnes fild him with reprochfull pain  
Of that foule evill, which all men reprove,  
That rots the marrow, and consumes the  
braine.  
Such one was Lechery, the third of all this  
traine.

## XXVII

And greedy Avarice by him did ride,  
Upon a camell loaden all with gold:  
Two iron coffers hong on either side,  
With precious metall full as they might hold,  
And in his lap an heap of coine he told;  
For of his wicked pelfe his god he made,  
And unto hell him selfe for money sold:  
Accursed usury was all his trade;  
And right and wrong ylike in equall bal-  
launce waide.

## XXVIII

His life was nigh unto deaths dore yplaste;  
And thred-bare cote, and cobled shoes, hee  
ware,  
Ne scarce good morsell all his life did taste,  
But both from backe and belly still did  
spare,  
To fill his bags, and richesse to compare;  
Yet childe ne kinsman living had he none  
To leave them to; but thorough daily care  
To get, and nightly feare to lose his owne,  
He led a wretched life, unto him selfe un-  
knowne.

## XXIX

Most wretched wight, whom nothing might  
suffise,  
Whose greedy lust did lacke in greatest  
store,

Whose need had end, but no end covetise,  
Whose welth was want, whose plenty made  
him pore,  
Who had enough, yett wished ever more,  
A vile disease; and eke in foote and hand  
A grievous gout tormented him full sore,  
That well he could not touch, nor goe, nor  
stand.

Such one was Avarice, the forth of this  
faire band.

## XXX

And next to him malicious Envy rode  
Upon a ravenous wolfe, and still did chaw  
Betweene his cankred teeth a venomous  
tode,  
That all the poison ran about his chaw;  
But inwardly he chawed his owne maw  
At neibors welth, that made him ever sad;  
For death it was, when any good he saw;  
And wept, that cause of weeping none he  
had;  
But when he heard of harme, he waxed  
wondrous glad.

## XXXI

All in a kirtle of discoloured say  
He clothed was, ypaynted full of eies;  
And in his bosome secretly there lay  
An hatefull snake, the which his taile uptyes  
In many folds, and mortall sting implyes.  
Still as he rode, he gnasht his teeth, to see  
Those heapes of gold with griple Covetyse;  
And grudged at the great felicitee  
Of proud Lucifera, and his owne companee.

## XXXII

He hated all good workes and vertuous  
deeds,  
And him no lesse, that any like did use;  
And who with gracious bread the hungry  
feeds,  
His almes for want of faith he doth accuse;  
So every good to bad he doth abuse:  
And eke the verse of famous poets witt  
He does backebite, and spightfull poison  
spues  
From leprous mouth on all that ever writt.  
Such one vile Envy was, that fift in row  
did sitt.

## XXXIII

And him beside rides fierce revenging  
Wrath,  
Upon a lion, loth for to be led;



And in his hand a burning brond he hath,  
The which he brandisheth about his hed:  
His eies did hurle forth spareles fiery red,  
And stared sterne on all that him beheld:  
As ashes pale of hew, and seeming ded;  
And on his dagger still his hand he held,  
Trembling through hasty rage, when choler  
in him sweld.

## XXXIV

His ruffin raiment all was stained with blood,  
Which he had spilt, and all to rags yrent,  
Through mnavized rashnes woxen wood;  
For of his hands he had no gouvernement,  
Ne car'd for blood in his avengement:  
But when the furious fitt was overpast,  
His cruell facts he often would repent;  
Yet, wilfull man, he never would forecast,  
How many mischieves should ensue his  
heedlesse hast.

## XXXV

Full many mischiefes follow cruell Wrath;  
Abhorred bloodshed, and tumultuous strife,  
Unmanly murder, and unthrifty seath,  
Bitter despight, with rancours rusty knife,  
And fretting grieve, the enemy of life:  
All these, and many evils moe haunt Ire;  
The swelling splene, and frenzy raging rife,  
The shaking palsey, and Saint Fraunces fire.  
Such one was Wrath, the last of this un-  
godly tire.

## XXXVI

And after all, upon the wagon beame,  
Rode Sathan, with a smarting whip in hand,  
With which he forward lasht the laesy  
teme,

So oft as Slowth still in the mire did stand.  
Hnge routs of people did about them band,  
Showting for joy; and still before their  
way

A foggy mist had covered all the land;  
And underneath their feet, all scattered lay  
Dead skulls and bones of men, whose life  
had gone astray.

## XXXVII

So forth they marchen in this goodly sort,  
To take the solace of the open aire,  
And in fresh flowring fields themselves to  
sport.

Emongst the rest rode that false lady faire,  
The foule Duessa, next unto the chaire  
Of proud Lucifer, as one of the traine.

But that good knight would not so nigh re-  
paire,  
Him selfe estraunging from their joyaunce  
vaine,  
Whose fellowship seemd far unfitt for war-  
like swaine.

## XXXVIII

So having solaced themselves a space,  
With pleasaunce of the breathing fields  
yfed,  
They backe retourned to the princely place;  
Whereas an errant knight, in armes yceled,  
And heathnish shield, wherein with letters  
red  
Was writt *Sans joy*, they new arrived find:  
Enflam'd with fury and fiers hardyhed,  
He secmd in hart to harbour thoughts un-  
kind,  
And nourish bloody vengeaunce in his bit-  
ter mind.

## XXXIX

Who, when the shamed shield of slaine  
Sansfoy  
He spide with that same Fary champions  
page,  
Bewraying him that did of late destroy  
His eldest brother, burning all with rage,  
He to him lept, and that same envions gage  
Of victors glory from him snacht away:  
But th' Elfin knight, which ought that war-  
like wage,  
Disdained to loose the meed he wonne in fray,  
And him rencountring fierce, reskewd the  
noble pray.

## XL

Therewith they gan to hurtlen greedily,  
Redoubted battaile ready to darrayne,  
And clash their shields, and shake their  
swords on hy,  
That with their sturre they troubled all the  
traine;  
Till that great queene, upon eternall paine  
Of high displeasure, that ensewen might,  
Commanded them their fury to refraine,  
And if that either to that shield had right,  
In equall lists they should the morrow next  
it fight.

## XLI

'Ah! dearest dame,' quoth then the Paynim  
bold,  
'Pardon the error of enraged wight,

Whome great gricfe made forgett the raines  
to hold  
Of reasons rule, to see this recreaunt knight,  
No knight, but treachour full of false de-  
spight  
And shameful treason, who through guile  
bath slayn  
The prowtest knight that ever field did fight,  
Even stout Sansfoy, (O who can then re-  
frayn ?)  
Whose shield he beares renverst, the more  
to heap disdayn.

## XLII

' And to augment the glorie of his guile,  
His dearest love, the faire Fidessa, loe !  
Is there possessed of the traytour vile,  
Who reapes the harvest sowed by his foe,  
Sowed in bloodie field, and bought with  
woe:  
That brothers hand shall dearely well re-  
quight,  
So be, O Queene, you equall favour showe.'  
Him litle answerd th' angry Elfin knight;  
He never meant with words, but swords, to  
plead his right:

## XLIII

But threw his gauntlet as a sacred pledg,  
His cause in combat the next day to try:  
So been they parted both, with harts on edg  
To be aveng'd each on his enemy.  
That night they pas in joy and jollity,  
Feasting and courting both in bowre and  
hall;  
For steward was excessive Gluttony,  
That of his plenty poured forth to all;  
Which doen, the chamberlain Slowth did to  
rest them call.

## XLIV

Now whenas darkesome Night had all dis-  
playd  
Her coleblacke curtein over brightest skye,  
The warlike youtnes, on dayntie couches  
layd,  
Did chace away sweet sleepe from slug-  
gish eye,  
To muse on meanes of hoped victory.  
But whenas Morpheus had with leaden  
mace  
Arrested all that courtly company,  
Uprose Duessa from her resting place,  
And to the Paynims lodging comes with  
silent pace.

## XLV

Whom broad awake she findes, in tron-  
blous fitt,  
Forecasting, how his foe he might annoy,  
And him amoves with speaches seeming fitt:  
' Ah deare Sansjoy, next dearest to Sansfoy,  
Cause of my new grieve, cause of my new  
joy,  
Joyous, to see his ymage in mine eye,  
And greev'd, to thinke how foe did him de-  
stroy,  
That was the flowre of grace and cheval-  
rye;  
Lo ! his Fidessa, to thy secret faith I flye.'

## XLVI

With gentle wordes he can her fayrely  
greet,  
And bad say on the secrete of her hart.  
Then, sighing soft, ' I learne that litle sweet  
Oft tempred is,' quoth she, ' with muchell  
smart:  
For since my brest was launcht with lovely  
dart  
Of deare Sansfoy, I never joyed howre,  
But in eternall woes my weaker hart  
Have wasted, loving him with all my powre,  
And for his sake have felt full many an  
heavie stowre.

## XLVII

' At last, when perils all I weened past,  
And hop'd to reape the crop of all my care,  
Into new woes unweeting I was cast  
By this false faytor, who unworthie ware  
His worthie shield, whom he with guilefull  
snare  
Entrapped slew, and brought to shamefull  
grave.  
Me, silly maid, away with him he bare,  
And ever since hath kept in darksom cave,  
For that I would not yeeld that to Sansfoy  
I gave.

## XLVIII

' But since faire sunne hath sperst that  
lowring clowd,  
And to my loathed life now shewes some  
light,  
Under your beames I will me safely shrowd  
From dreaded storme of his disdainfull  
spight:  
To you th' inheritance belongs by right  
Of brothers prayse, to you eke longes his  
love.

Let not his love, let not his restlesse spright,  
Be unreveng'd, that calles to you above  
From wandring Stygian shores, where it  
doth endlesse move.'

## XLIX

There to said he, 'Faire dame, be nought  
dismaid  
For sorrowes past; their grieve is with them  
gone:  
Ne yet of present perill be affraid:  
For needlesse feare did never vantage none,  
And helplesse hap it booteth not to mone.  
Dead is Sansfoy, his vitall paines are past,  
Though greeved ghost for vengeance deep  
do grone:  
He lives, that shall him pay his dewties  
last,  
And guiltie Elfin blood shall sacrifice in  
hast.'

## L

'O! but I feare the fickle freakes,' quoth  
shee,  
'Of Fortune false, and oddes of armes in  
field.'  
'Why, dame,' quoth he, 'what oddes can  
ever bee,  
Where both doe fight alike, to win or  
yield?'  
'Yea, but,' quoth she, 'he beares a charmed  
shield,  
And eke enchanted armes, that none can  
perce,  
Ne none can wound the man, that does  
them wield.'  
'Charmd or enchanted,' answerd he then  
ferce,  
'I no whitt reck, ne yon the like need to  
reherce.'

## LI

'But, faire Fidessa, sithens Fortunes guile,  
Or enimies powre, hath now captived yon,  
Returne from whence ye came, and rest a  
while,  
Till morrow next, that I the Elfe subdew,  
And with Sansfoyes dead dowry you en-  
dew.'  
'Ay me! that is a double death,' she said,  
'With prond foes sight my sorrow to re-  
new:  
Where ever yet I be, my secrete aide  
Shall follow you.' So, passing forth, she  
him obaid.

## CANTO V

The faithfull knight in equall field  
Subdewes his faithlesse foe,  
Whom false Duessa saves, and for  
His cure to hell does goe.

## I

THE noble hart, that harbours vertuous  
thought,  
And is with childe of glorious great intent  
Can never rest, untill it forth have brought  
Th' eternall brood of glorie excellent:  
Such restlesse passion did all night tor-  
ment  
The flaming corage of that Faery knight,  
Devizing how that doughtie turnament  
With greatest honour he atchieven might:  
Still did he wake, and still did watch for  
dawning light.

## II

At last, the golden orientall gate  
Of greatest heaven gan to open fayre,  
And Phoebus, fresh as brydegrome to his  
mate,  
Came danncing forth, shaking his deawie  
hayre,  
And hurld his glistring beams through  
gloomy ayre.  
Which when the wakeful Elfe perceivd,  
streight way  
He started up, and did him selfe prepayre  
In sunbright armes, and battailous array:  
For with that Pagan prond he combatt will  
that day.

## III

And forth he comes into the commune hall,  
Where carely waite him many a gazing eye;  
To weet what end to straunger knights ma;  
fall.  
There many minstrales maken melody,  
To drive away the dull melancholy,  
And many bards, that to the trembling  
chord  
Can tune their timely voices cunningly,  
And many chroniclers, that can record  
Old loves, and warres for ladies doen by  
many a lord.

## IV

Soone after comes the cruell Sarazin,  
In woven maile all armed warily,  
And sternly lookes at him, who not a pin  
Does care for looke of living creatures eye.



They bring them wines of Greece and Araby  
And daintie spices fetcht from furthest  
Ynd,

To kindle heat of corage privily:  
And in the wine a solemne oth they bynd  
T' observe the sacred lawes of armes, that  
are assynd.

## V

At last forth comes that far renowned  
queene,

With royall pomp and princely majestie:  
She is ybrought unto a paled greene,  
And placed under stately canapee,  
The warlike feates of both those knights  
to see.

On th' other side, in all mens open vew,  
Duessa placed is, and on a tree  
Sansfoy his shield is hangd with bloody  
hew:

Both those, the lawrell girlonds to the vic-  
tor dew.

## VI

A shrilling trompett sownded from on  
hye,

And unto battaill bad them selves addresse:  
Their shining shieldes about their wrestes  
they tye,

And burning blades about their heades doe  
blesse,

The instruments of wrath and heavinesse:  
With greedy force each other doth assayle,  
And strike so fiercely, that they doe im-  
presse

Deepe dinted furrowes in the battred mayle:  
The yron walles to ward their blowes are  
weak and fraile.

## VII

The Sarazin was stout, and wondrous strong,  
And heaped blowes like yron hammers  
great:

For after blood and vengeance he did long.  
The knight was fiers, and full of youthly  
heat,

And doubled strokes, like dreaded thun-  
ders threat:

For all for praise and honour he did fight.  
Both stricken stryke, and beaten both doe  
beat,

That from their shields forth flyeth fire  
light,

And helmets, hewen deepe, shew marks of  
eithers might.

## VIII

So th' one for wrong, the other strives for  
right:

As when a gryfon, seized of his pray,  
A dragon fiers encountreth in his flight,  
Through widest ayre making his ydle way,  
That would his rightfull ravine rend away:  
With hideous horror both together smight,  
And souce so sore, that they the heavens  
affray:

The wise southsayer, seeing so sad sight,  
Th' amazed vulgar telles of warres and  
mortall fight.

## IX

So th' one for wrong, the other strives for  
right,

And each to deadly shame would drive his  
foe:

The cruell steele so greedily doth bight  
In tender flesh, that streames of blood down  
flow,

With which the armes, that earst so bright  
did show,

Into a pure vermillion now are dyde.  
Great ruth in all the gazers harts did grow,  
Seeing the gored woundes to gape so wyde,  
That victory they dare not wish to either  
side.

## X

At last the Paynim chaunst to cast his eye,  
His suddein eye, flaming with wrathfull  
fyre,

Upon his brothers shield, which hong  
thereby:

Therewith redoubled was his raging yre,  
And said: 'Ah, wretched sonne of wofull  
syre!

Doest thou sit wayling by blacke Stygian  
lake,

Whylest here thy shield is hangd for vic-  
tors hyre?

And, sluggish german, doest thy forces slake  
To after-send his foe, that him may over-  
take?

## XI

'Goe, caytive Elfe, him quickly overtake,  
And soone redeeme from his long wandring  
woe:

Goe, guiltie ghost, to him my message make,  
That I his shield have quit from dying foe.'  
Therewith upon his crest he stroke him so,  
That wise he reeled, readie twice to fall:

End of the doubtfull battaile deemed tho  
The lookers on, and lowd to him gan call  
The false Duessa, 'Thine the shield, and I,  
and all!'

## XII

Soone as the Faerie heard his ladie speake,  
Out of his swowning dreame he gan awake,  
And quickning faith, that earst was woxen  
weake,

The creeping deadly cold away did shake:  
Tho, mov'd with wrath, and shame, and  
ladies sake,

Of all attonce he cast avengd to be,  
And with so' exceeding furie at him strake,  
That forced him to stoupe upon his knee:  
Had he not stonped so, he should have  
cloven bee.

## XIII

And to him said: 'Goe now, proud mis-  
creant,  
Thy selfe thy message do to german deare;  
Alone he, wandering, thee too long doth want:  
Goe say, his foe thy shield with his doth  
beare.'

Therewith his heavie hand he high gan  
reare,  
Him to have slaine; when lo! a darke-  
some clowd

Upon him fell: he no where doth appeare,  
But vanisht is. The Elfe him calls alowd,  
But answer none receives: the darknes him  
does shrowd.

## XIV

In haste Duessa from her place arose,  
And to him running sayd: 'O prowest  
knight,

That ever ladie to her love did chose,  
Let now abate the terrour of your might,  
And quench the flame of furious despight  
And bloodie vengeance; lo! th' infernall  
powres,

Covering your foe with cloud of deadly  
night,  
Have borne him hence to Plutoes balefull  
bowres.

The conquest yours, I yours, the shield and  
glory yours!'

## XV

Not all so satisfide, with greedy eye  
He sought all round about, his thristy blade  
To bathe in blood of faithlesse enemy;

Who all that while lay hid in secret shade:  
He standes amazed, how he thence should  
fade.

At last the trumpets triumph sound on hie,  
And running heralds humble homage made,  
Greeting him goodly with new victorie,  
And to him brought the shield, the cause  
of enmitie.

## XVI

Wherewith he goeth to that soveraine  
queene,

And falling her before on lowly knee,  
To her makes present of his service seene:  
Which she accepts, with thankes and goodly  
gree,

Greatly advauncing his gay chevalree:  
So marcheth home, and by her takes the  
knight,

Whom all the people followe with great  
glee,

Shouting, and clapping all their hands on  
hight,

That all the ayre it fills, and flyes to heaven  
bright.

## XVII

Home is he brought, and layd in sump-  
tuous bed:

Where many skilfull leaches him abide,  
To salve his hurts, that yet still freshly  
bled.

In wine and oyle they wash his woundes  
wide,

And softly can embalme on everie side.  
And all the while, most heavenly melody  
About the bed sweet musicke did divide,  
Him to beguile of grieve and agony:  
And all the while Duessa wept full bitterly.

## XVIII

As when a wearie traveler, that strays  
By muddy shore of broad seven-mouthed  
Nile,

Unweeting of the perillous wandring wayes,  
Doth meete a cruell craftie crocodile,  
Which, in false grieve hyding his harmefull  
guile,

Doth weepe full sore, and sheddeth tender  
teares:

The foolish man, that pitties all this while  
His mournefull plight, is swallowd up un-  
wares,

Forgetfull of his owne, that mindes an  
others cares.

## XIX

So wept Duessa untill eventyde,  
That shyning lampes in Joves high house  
were light:

Then forth she rose, ne lenger would abide,  
But comes unto the place, where th' he-  
then knight,

In slombring swownd, nigh voyd of vitall  
spright,

Lay cover'd with inchaunted cloud all day:  
Whom when she found, as she him left in  
plight,

To wayle his wofull case she would not stay,  
But to the easterne coast of heaven makes  
speedy way:

## XX

Where griesly Night, with visage deadly  
sad,

That Phœbus chearefull face durst never  
vew,

And in a foule blacke pitchy mantle clad,  
She findes forth conning from her dark-  
some mew,

Where she all day did hide her hated hew.  
Before the dore her yron charet stood,

Already harnessed for journey new;  
And coleblacke steedes yborne of hellish  
brood,

That on their rusty bits did champ, as they  
were wood.

## XXI

Who when she saw Duessa sunny bright,  
Adorn'd with gold and jewels shining cleare,  
She greatly grew amazed at the sight,  
And th' unacquainted light began to feare;  
For never did such brightnes there appeare;  
And would have backe retyred to her cave,  
Untill the witches speach she gan to heare,  
Saying: 'Yet, O thou dreaded dame, I  
crave

Abyde, till I have told the message which  
I have.'

## XXII

She stayd, and fourth Duessa gan proceede:  
'O thou most auncient grandmother of all,  
More old then Jove, whom thou at first  
didst breede,

Or that great house of gods cælestiall,  
Which wast begot in Dæmogorgons hall,  
And sawst the secrets of the world unmade,  
Why suffredst thou thy nephewes deare to  
fall

With Elfin sword, most shamefully betrade?  
Lo where the stout Sansjoy doth sleepe in  
deadly shade!

## XXIII

'And him before, I saw with bitter eyes  
The bold Sansfoy shrink underneath his  
speare;

And now the pray of fowles in field he lyes,  
Nor wayld of friends, nor layd on groning  
beare,

That whylome was to me too dearely deare.  
O what of gods then boots it to be borne,  
If old Aveugles sonnes so evill heare?

Or who shall not great Nightes children  
sorne,

When two of three her nephews are so  
fowle forlorne?

## XXIV

'Up, then! up, dreary dame, of darknes  
queene!

Go gather up the reliques of thy race,  
Or else goe them avenge, and let be seene  
That dreaded Night in brightest day hath  
place,

And can the children of fayre Light de-  
face.'

Her feeling speaches some compassion  
mov'd

In hart, and chaunge in that great mothers  
face:

Yet pitty in her hart was never prov'd  
Till then: for evermore she hated, never  
lov'd:

## XXV

And said, 'Deare daughter, rightly may I  
rew

The fall of famous children borne of mee,  
And good successes, which their foes en-  
sew:

But who can turne the streame of destinee,  
Or breake the chayne of strong necessitee,  
Which fast is tyde to Joves eternall seat?  
The sonnes of Day he favoureth, I see,  
And by my ruiues thinkes to make them  
great:

To make one great by others losse is bad  
excheat.

## XXVI

'Yet shall they not escape so freely all;  
For some shall pay the price of others guilt:  
And he, the man that made Sansfoy to fall,



Shall with his owne blood price that he  
hath spilt.  
But what art thou, that telst of nephews  
kilt?’

‘I, that do seeme not I, Duessa ane,’  
Quoth she, ‘how ever now, in garments  
gilt  
And gorgeous gold arayd, I to thee came;  
Duessa I, the daughter of Deceit and  
Shame.’

## XXVII

Then bowing downe her aged backe, she  
kist  
The wicked witch, saying: ‘In that fayre  
face  
The false resemblaunce of Deceit, I wist,  
Did closely lurke; yet so true-seeming grace  
It carried, that I scarce in darksome place  
Could it discerne, though I the mother bee  
Of Falshood, and roote of Duessaes race.  
O welcome, child, whom I have longd to  
see,  
And now have seene unwares! Lo, now I  
goe with thee.’

## XXVIII

Then to her yron wagon she betakes,  
And with her beares the fowle welfavourd  
witch:  
Through mirkesome aire her ready way  
she makes.  
Her twyfold teme, of which two blacke as  
pitch,  
And two were browne, yet each to each  
unlich,  
Did softly swim away, ne ever stamp,  
Unlesse she chaunst their stubborne mouths  
to twitch;  
Then foming tarre, their bridles they would  
champ,  
And trampling the fine element, would  
fiercely ramp.

## XXIX

So well they sped, that they be come at  
length  
Unto the place, whereas the Paynim lay,  
Devoid of outward sence and native strength,  
Coverd with charmed cloud from vew of day  
And sight of men, since his late luckelesse  
fray.  
His cruell wounds, with cruddy bloud con-  
geald,  
They binden up so wisely as they may,

And handle softly, till they can be heald:  
So lay him in her charett, close in night  
conceald.

## XXX

And all the while she stood upon the ground,  
The wakefull dogs did never cease to bay,  
As giving warning of th’ unwonted sound,  
With which her yron wheelles did them  
affray,  
And her darke griesly looke them much  
dismay:  
The messenger of death, the ghastly owle,  
With drery shriekes did also her bewray;  
And hungry wolves continually did howle  
At her abhorred face, so filthy and so fowle.

## XXXI

Thence turning backe in silence softely they  
stole,  
And brought the heavy corse with easy pace  
To yawning gulfe of deepe Avernus hole.  
By that same hole an entraunce, darke and  
base,  
With smoake and sulphur hiding all the  
place,  
Descends to hell: there creature never past,  
That backe retourned without heavenly  
grace;  
But dreadfull Furies, which their chaines  
have brast,  
And damned sprights sent forth to make  
ill men aghast.

## XXXII

By that same way the direfull dames doe  
drive  
Their mournfull charett, fild with rusty  
blood,  
And downe to Plutoes house are come  
bilive:  
Which passing through, on every side them  
stood  
The trembling ghosts with sad amazed  
mood,  
Chattring their iron teeth, and staring wide  
With stony eies; and all the hellish brood  
Of feends infernall flockt on every side,  
To gaze on earthly wight, that with the  
Night durst ride.

## XXXIII

They pas the bitter waves of Acheron,  
Where many soules sit wailing woefully,  
And come to fiery flood of Phlegeton,

Whereas the damned ghosts in torments  
fry,  
And with sharp shrilling shriekes doe boot-  
lesse cry,  
Cursing high Jove, the which them thither  
sent.  
The house of endlesse paine is built thereby,  
In which ten thousand sorts of punishment  
The cursed creatures doe eternally torment.

## XXXIV

Before the threshold dreadfull Cerberus  
His three deformed heads did lay along,  
Curled with thousand adders venomous,  
And killed forth his bloody flaming tong:  
At them he gan to reare his bristles strong,  
And felly gnarre, untill Dayes enemy  
Did him appease; then downe his taile he  
hong,  
And suffered them to passen quietly:  
For she in hell and heaven had power  
equally.

## XXXV

There was Ixion turned on a wheele,  
For daring tempt the queene of heaven to  
sin;  
And Sisypheus an huge round stone did reele  
Against an hill, ne might from labour lin;  
There thrifty Tantalus hong by the chin;  
And Tityus fed a vultur on his maw;  
Typhœus joynts were stretched on a gin;  
Theseus condemned to endlesse slouth by  
law;  
And fifty sisters water in leke vessels draw.

## XXXVI

They all, beholding worldly wights in place,  
Leave off their worke, unmindefull of their  
smart,  
To gaze on them; who forth by them doe  
pace,  
Till they be come unto the furthest part:  
Where was a cave ywrought by wondrous  
art,  
Deepe, darke, uneasy, dolefull, comfort-  
lesse,  
In which sad Aesculapius far apart  
Emprisond was in chaines remedillesse,  
For that Hippolytus rent corse he did re-  
dresse.

## XXXVII

Hippolytus a jolly huntsman was,  
That wont in charett chace the foming bore;

He all his peeres in beauty did surpas,  
But ladies love, as losse of time, forbore:  
His wanton stepdame loved him the more;  
But when she saw her offred sweets re-  
fusd,  
Her love she turnd to hate, and him before  
His father fierce of treason false accusd,  
And with her gealous termes his open eares  
abusd.

## XXXVIII

Who, all in rage, his sea-god syre besought,  
Some cursed vengeance on his sonne to  
cast:  
From surging gulf two monsters streight  
were brought,  
With dread whereof his chacing steedes  
aghost  
Both charett swifte and huntsman overcast.  
His goodly corps, on ragged cliffs yrent,  
Was quite dismembred, and his members  
chast  
Scattered on every mountaine as he went,  
That of Hippolytus was lefte no moniment.

## XXXIX

His cruell stepdame, seeing what was donne,  
Her wicked daies with wretched knife did  
end,  
In death avowing th' innocence of her sonne.  
Which hearing, his rash syre began to rend  
His heare, and hasty tong, that did offend:  
Tho, gathering up the relicks of his smart,  
By Diaues meanes, who was Hippolyts frend,  
Them brought to Aesculape, that by his art  
Did heale them all againe, and joynd every  
part.

## XL

Such wondrous science in mans witt to rain  
When Jove avizd, that could the dead re-  
vive,  
And fates expired could renew again,  
Of endlesse life he might him not deprive,  
But unto hell did thrust him downe alive,  
With flashing thunderbolt ywounded sore:  
Where long remaining, he did alwaies strive  
Him selfe with salves to health for to restore,  
And slake the heavenly fire, that raged  
evermore.

## XLI

There auncient Night arriving, did alight  
From her nigh weary wayne, and in her  
armes

To Æsculapius brought the wounded knight:  
 Whome having softly disaraid of armes,  
 Tho gan to him discover all his harmes,  
 Beseeching him with prayer, and with  
 praise,  
 If either salves, or oyles, or herbes, or  
 charmes  
 A fordonne wight from dore of death mote  
 raise,  
 He would at her request prolong her  
 nephews daies.

## XLII

‘Ah! dame,’ quoth he, ‘thou temptest me  
 in vaine  
 To dare the thing, which daily yet I rew,  
 And the old cause of my continued paine  
 With like attempt to like end to renew.  
 Is not enough, that, thrust from heaven  
 dew,  
 Here endlesse penaunce for one fault I pay,  
 But that redoubled crime with vengeance  
 new  
 Thou biddest me to eeke? Can Night de-  
 fray  
 The wrath of thundring Jove, that rules  
 both Night and Day?’

## XLIII

‘Not so,’ quoth she; ‘but sith that heavens  
 king  
 From hope of heaven hath thee excludet  
 quight,  
 Why fearest thou, that canst not hope for  
 thing,  
 And fearest not that more thee hurten  
 might,  
 Now in the powre of everlasting Night?  
 Goe to then, O thou far renowned sonne  
 Of great Apollo, shew thy famous might  
 In medicine, that els hath to thee wonne  
 Great pains, and greater praise, both never  
 to be donne.’

## XLIV

Her words prevaild: and then the learned  
 leach  
 His cunning hand gan to his wounds to lay,  
 And all things els, the which his art did  
 teach:  
 Which having seene, from thence arose  
 away  
 The mother of dredd darkenesse, and let  
 stay  
 Aveugles sonne there in the leaches cure,

And backe retourning, tooke her wonted  
 way  
 To romme her timely race, whilst Phoebus  
 pure  
 In westerne waves his weary wagon did  
 recure.

## XLV

The false Duessa, leaving noyous Night,  
 Returnd to stately pallace of Daine Pryde;  
 Where when she came, she found the Faery  
 knight  
 Departed thence, albee his woundes wyde,  
 Not throughly heald, unready were to ryde.  
 Good cause he had to hasten thence away;  
 For on a day his wary dwarfe had spyde  
 Where, in a dungeon deepe, huge numbers  
 lay  
 Of caytive wretched thralls, that wayled  
 night and day:

## XLVI

A ruefull sight as could be seene with eie:  
 Of whom he learned had in secret wise  
 The hidden cause of their captivitie;  
 How mortgaging their lives to Covetise,  
 Through wastfull pride and wanton riotise,  
 They were by law of that proud tyran-  
 nesse,  
 Provokt with Wrath, and Envyes false sur-  
 mise,  
 Condemned to that dongeon mercillesse,  
 Where they should live in wo, and dye in  
 wretchednesse.

## XLVII

There was that great proud king of Baby-  
 lon,  
 That would compell ail nations to adore,  
 And him as onely God to cali upon,  
 Till, through celestiall doome thrown ou-  
 of dore,  
 Into an oxe he was transformd of yore:  
 There also was King Cræsus, that enhaunst  
 His hart too high through his great richesse  
 store;  
 And proud Antiochus, the which advaunst  
 His cursed hand gainst God, and on his  
 altares daunst.

## XLVIII

And, them long time before, great Nimrod  
 was,  
 That first the world with sword and fire  
 warrayd;



And after him old Ninus far did pas  
In princely pomp, of all the world obayd;  
There also was that mightie monarch layd  
Low under all, yet above all in pride,  
That name of native syre did fowle up-  
brayd,  
And would as Ammous sonne be magnifide,  
Till, scornd of God and man, a shamefull  
death he dide.

## XLIX

All these together in one heape were  
throwne,  
Like carkases of beastes in butchers stall.  
And, in another corner, wide were strowne  
The antique ruins of the Romanes fall:  
Great Romulus, the grandsyre of them  
all,  
Proud Tarquin, and too lordly Lentulus,  
Stout Scipio, and stubborne Hanniball,  
Ambitious Sylla, and sterne Marius,  
High Caesar, great Pompey, and fiers An-  
tonius.

## L

Amongst these mightie men were wemen  
mixt,  
Proud wemen, vaine, forgetfull of their  
yoke:  
The bold Semiramis, whose sides, transfixt  
With sonnes own blade, her fowle reproches  
spoke;  
Fayre Sthenobœa, that her selfe did choke  
With wilfull chord, for wanting of her  
will;  
High minded Cleopatra, that with stroke  
Of aspes sting her selfe did stoutly kill:  
And thousands moe the like, that did that  
dongeon fill.

## LI

Besides the endlesse routes of wretched  
thralles,  
Which thether were assembled day by day,  
From all the world, after their wofull falles  
Through wicked pride and wasted welthes  
decay.  
But most, of all which in that dongeon lay,  
Fell from high princes courtes, or ladies  
bowres,  
Where they in ydle pomp, or wanton play,  
Consumed had their goods, and thriftlesse  
howres,  
And lastly thrown themselves into these  
heavv stowres.

## LII

Whose case whenas the carefull dwarfe had  
tould,  
And made ensample of their mournfull  
sight  
Unto his maister, he no lenger would  
There dwell in perill of like painefull plight,  
But earely rose, and ere that dawning light  
Discovered had the world to heaven wyde,  
He by a privy posterne tooke his flight,  
That of no envious eyes he mote be spyde:  
For doubtlesse death ensewed, if any him  
descryde.

## LIII

Scarse could he footing find in that fowle  
way,  
For many corses, like a great lay-stall,  
Of mured men, which therein stowed  
lay,  
Without remorse or decent funerall:  
Which al through that great princesse pride  
did fall  
And came to shamefull end. And thera  
besyde,  
Forth ryding underneath the castell wall,  
A donghill of dead carcasses he spyde,  
The dreadfull spectacle of that sad House  
of Pryde.

## CANTO VI

From lawlesse lust by wondrous grace  
Fayre Una is releast:  
Whom salvage nation does adore,  
And learnes her wise beheast.

## I

As when a ship, that flyes fayre under sayle,  
An hidden rocke escaped hath unwares,  
That lay in waite her wrack for to bewaile,  
The marriner, yet halfe amazed, stares  
At perill past, and yet in doubt ne dares  
To joy at his foolhappie oversight:  
So doubly is distrest twixt joy and cares  
The dreadlesse corage of this Elfin knight,  
Having escapt so sad ensamples in his sight.

## II

Yet sad he was, that his too hastie speed  
The fayre Duesse had forst him leave be-  
hind;  
And yet more sad, that Una, his deare dreded,  
Her truth had staynd with treason so un-  
kind:  
Yet cryme in her could never creature find.

But for his love, and for her own selfe sake,  
She wandred had from one to other Ynd,  
Him for to seeke, ne ever would forsake,  
Till her unwares the fiers Sansloy did over-  
take.

## III

Who, after Archimagoes fowle defeat,  
Led her away into a forest wilde,  
And turning wrathfull fyre to lustfull heat,  
With beastly sin thought her to have de-  
filde,

And made the vassall of his pleasures vilde.  
Yet first he east by treatie, and by traynes,  
Her to persuade that stubborne fort to yilde:  
For greater conquest of hard love he gaynes,  
That workes it to his will, then he that it  
constraines.

## IV

With fawning wordes he courted her a  
while,

And, looking lovely and oft sighing sore,  
Her constant hart did tempt with diverse  
guile:

But wordes, and lookes, and sighes she  
did abhorre,

As rock of diamond stedfast evermore.  
Yet for to feed his fyrie lustfull eye,  
He snateht the vele that hong her face be-  
fore:

Then gan her beautie shyne as brightest  
skye,

And burnt his beastly hart t' efforce her  
chastitye.

## V

So when he saw his flatt'ring artes to fayle,  
And subtile engines bett from batteree,  
With greedy force he gan the fort assayle,  
Whereof he weend possessed soone to bee,  
And win rich spoile of ransackt chastitee.

Ah! heavens, that doe this hideous act be-  
hold,

And heavenly virgin thus outraged see,  
How can ye vengeancee just so long with-  
hold,

And hurle not flashing flames upon that  
Paynim bold?

## VI

The pitteous mayden, carefull comfort-  
lesse,

Does throw out thrilling shriekes, and  
shrieking cryes,

The last vaine helpe of wemens great dis-  
tresse,

And with loud plaintes importuneth the  
skyes;

That molten starres doe drop like weeping  
eyes,

And Phœbus, flying so most shamefull sight,  
His blushing face in foggy cloud implyes,  
And hydes for shame. What witt of mortall  
wight

Can now devise to quitt a thrall from such  
a plight?

## VII

Eternall Providence, exceeding thought,  
Where none appeares can make her selfe a  
way:

A wondrous way it for this lady wrought,  
From lyons clawes to pluck the gyped  
pray.

Her shrill outeryes and shrieks so loud did  
bray,

That all the woodes and forestes did re-  
sownd;

A troupe of Faunes and Satyres far a way  
Within the wood were dauncing in a rownd,  
Whiles old Sylvanus slept in shady arber  
sownd.

## VIII

Who, when they heard that pitteous strained  
voice,

In haste forsooke their rurall meriment,  
And ran towards the far rebownded noyce  
To weet what wight so loudly did lament.

Unto the place they come incontinent:  
Whom when the raging Sarazin espyde,  
A rude, mishapen, monstrous rablement,  
Whose like he never saw, he durst not byde,  
But got his ready steed, and fast away gan  
ryde.

## IX

The wyld woodgods, arrived in the place,  
There find the virgin doolfull desolate,  
With ruffled rayments, and fayre blubbred  
face,

As her outrageous foe had left her late,  
And trembling yet through feare of former  
hate.

All stand amazed at so uneouth sight,  
And gin to pittie her unhappie state;  
All stand astonied at her beautie bright,  
In their rude eyes unworthy of so wofull  
plight.

## X

She, more amazd, in double dread doth dwell;

And every tender part for feare does shake:  
As when a greedy wolfe, through hunger fell,

A seely lamb far from the flock does take,  
Of whom he meanes his bloody feast to make,

A lyon spies fast running towards him,  
The innocent pray in hast he does forsake,  
Which, quitt from death, yet quakes in every lim

With chaunge of feare, to see the lyon looke so grim.

## XI

Such fearefull fitt assaid her trembling hart,  
Ne word to speake, ne joynt to move, she had:

The salvage nation feele her secret smart,  
And read her sorrow in her count'nance sad:  
Their frowning forheades, with rough hornes yelad,

And rustick horror, all a syde doe lay,  
And, gently grenning, shew a semblance glad

To comfort her, and, feare to put away,  
Their backward bent knees teach her humbly to obey.

## XII

The doubtfull damzell dare not yet comitt

Her single person to their barbarous truth,  
But still twixt feare and hope amazd does sitt,

Late learnd what harme to hasty trust en-su'th:

They, in compassion of her tender youth,  
And wonder of her beautie soverayne,  
Are womne with pittie and unwonted ruth,  
And all prostrate upon the lowly playne,  
Doe kisse her feete, and fawne on her with count'nance fayne.

## XIII

Their harts she ghesseeth by their humble guise,

And yieldees her to extremitie of time;  
So from the ground she fearelesse doth arise,  
And walketh forth without suspect of crime:  
They all as glad as birdes of joyous pryme,  
Thence lead her forth, about her damnceing round,

Shouting, and singing all a shepheards ryme;  
And, with greene braunches strowing all the ground,

Do worship her as queene with olive girlond croud.

## XIV

And all the way their merry pipes they sound,

That all the woods with doubled eccho ring,  
And with their horned feet doe weare the ground,

Leaping like wanton kids in pleasant spring.  
So towards old Sylvanus they her bring;  
Who with the noyse awaked, commeth out  
To weete the cause, his weake steps govern-  
ing

And aged limbs on cypresse stadle stout;  
And with an yvie twyne his waste is girt about.

## XV

Far off he wonders what them makes so glad,

Or Bacehus merry fruit they did invent,  
Or Cybeles frantiecke rites have made them mad.

They, drawing nigh, unto their god present  
That flowre of fayth and beautie excellent:  
The god himselfe, vewing that mirrhour rare,

Stood long amazd, and burnt in his intent:  
His owne fayre Dryope now he thinkes not faire,

And Pholoe fowle, when her to this he doth compaire.

## XVI

The woodborne people fall before her flat,  
And worship her as goddessse of the wood;  
And old Sylvanus selfe bethinkes not, what  
To thinke of wight so fayre, but gazing stood,

In doubt to deeme her borne of earthly brood:

Sometimes Dame Venus selfe he seemes to see,

But Venns never had so sober mood;  
Sometimes Diana he her takes to be,  
But misseth bow, and shaftes, and buskins to her knee.

## XVII

By vew of her he ginneth to revive  
His ancient love, and dearest Cyparisse;



And calles to mind his pourtraiture alive,  
How fayre he was, and yet not fayre to this;  
And how he slew with glanncing dart amisse  
A gentle hynd, the which the lovely boy  
Did love as life, above all worldly blisse;  
For griefe whereof the lad n'ould after joy,  
But pynd away in anguish and selfewild  
annoy.

## XVIII

The wooddy nymphes, faire Hamadryades,  
Her to behold do thether runne apace,  
And all the troupe of light-foot Naiades  
Flocke all about to see her lovely face:  
But when they vewed have her heavenly  
grace,  
They envy her in their malicious mind,  
And fly away for feare of fowle disgrace:  
But all the Satyres scorne their woody kind,  
And henceforth nothing faire, but her, on  
earth they find.

## XIX

Glad of such lucke, the luckelesse lucky  
mayd  
Did her content to please their feeble eyes,  
And long time with that salvage people  
stayd,  
To gather breath in many miseryes.  
During which tyme her gentle wit she plyes,  
To teach them truth, which worshipt her in  
vaine,  
And made her th' image of idolatryes;  
But when their bootlesse zeale she did re-  
strayne  
From her own worship, they her asse  
would worship fayn.

## XX

It fortun'd, a noble warlike knight  
By just occasion to that forrest came,  
To seeke his kindred, and the lignage right,  
From whence he tooke his weldeserved  
name:  
He had in armes abroad wonne muchell  
fame,  
And fild far landes with glorie of his might;  
Plaine, faithfull, true, and enemy of shame,  
And ever lov'd to fight for ladies right,  
But in vaine glorious frayes he litle did  
delight.

## XXI

A Satyres sonne yborne in forrest wyld,  
By straunge adventure as it did betyde,

And there begotten of a lady myld,  
Fayre Thyamis the daughter of Labryde,  
That was in sacred bandes of wedlocke  
tyde  
To Therion, a loose unruly swayne,  
Who had more joy to ranunge the forrest  
wyde,  
And chase the salvage beast with busie  
payne,  
Then serve his ladies love, and waste in  
pleasures vayne.

## XXII

The forlorne mayd did with loves longing  
burne,  
And could not lacke her lovers company,  
But to the wood she goes, to serve her  
turne,  
And seeke her sponse, that from her still  
does fly,  
And followes other game and venery.  
A Satyre chaunst her wandring for to finde.  
And kindling coles of lust in brutish eye,  
The loyall linkes of wedlocke did unbinde,  
And made her person thrall unto his  
bestly kind.

## XXIII

So long in secret eabin there he held  
Her captive to his sensuall desyre,  
Till that with timely fruit her belly sweld,  
And bore a boy unto that salvage syre:  
Then home he suffred her for to retyre,  
For ransome leaving him the late-borne  
childe;  
Whom, till to ryper yeares he gan aspyre,  
He nousled up in life and manners wilde,  
Emongst wild beastes and woods, from  
lawes of men exilde.

## XXIV

For all he taught the tender ymp was but  
To banish cowardize and bastard feare:  
His trembling hand he would him force to  
put  
Upon the lyon and the rugged beare,  
And from the she beares teats her whelps to  
teare;  
And eke wyld roring buls he would him  
make  
To tame, and ryde their backes not made  
to beare;  
And the robukes in flight to overtake:  
That everie beast for feare of him did fly  
and quake.

## XXV

Thereby so fearelesse and so fell he grew,  
That his owne syre and maister of his guise  
Did often tremble at his horrid vew,  
And oft, for dread of hurt, would him advise  
The angry beastes not rashly to despise,  
Nor too much to provoke: for he would  
learne

The lyon stoup to him in lowly wise,  
(A lesson hard) and make the libbard sterne  
Leave roaring, when in rage he for revenge  
did earne.

## XXVI

And for to make his powre approved more,  
Wyld beastes in yron yokes he would com-  
pell;

The spotted panther, and the tusked bore,  
The pardale swift, and the tigre cruell,  
The antelope, and wolfe both fiers and fell;  
And them constraine in equall teme to  
draw.

Such joy he had their stubborne harts to  
quell,

And sturdie courage tame with dreadfull aw,  
That his beheast they feared, as a tyrans  
law.

## XXVII

His loving mother came upon a day  
Unto the woodes, to see her little sonne;  
And chaunst unwares to meet him in the  
way,

After his sportes and cruell pastime donne,  
When after him a lyonesse did ronne,  
That roaring all with rage, did lowd requere  
Her children deare, whom he away had  
wonne:

The lyon whelpes she saw how he did beare,  
And lull in rugged armes, withonten child-  
ish feare.

## XXVIII

The fearefull dame all quaked at the sight,  
And turning backe gan fast to fly away,  
Untill, with love revokt from vaine affright,  
She hardly yet perswaded was to stay,  
And then to him these womanish words gan  
say:

'Ah! Satyrane, my dearling and my joy,  
For love of me leave off this dreadfull  
play;

To dally thus with death is no fit toy:  
Go find some other play-fellowes, mine owne  
sweet boy.'

## XXIX

In these and like delightes of bloody game  
He trayned was, till ryper yeares he raught;  
And there abode, whylst any beast of name  
Walkt in that Forrest, whom he had not taught  
To feare his force: and then his courage  
haught

Desyrd of forreine foemen to be knowne,  
And far abroad for straunge adventures  
sought:

In which his might was never overthrowne,  
But through al Faery Lond his famous  
worth was blown.

## XXX

Yet evermore it was his maner faire,  
After long labours and adventures speut,  
Unto those native woods for to repaire,  
To see his syre and ofspring auncient.  
And now he thether came for like intent;  
Where he unwares the fairest Una found,  
Straunge lady, in so straunge habiliment,  
Teaching the Satyres, which her sat around,  
Trew sacred lore, which from her sweet  
lips did redound.

## XXXI

He wondred at her wisdoms heavenly rare,  
Whose like in womens witt he never knew;  
And when her curteous deeds he did com-  
pare,

Gan her admire, and her sad sorrowes rew,  
Blaming of Fortune, which such troubles  
threw,

And joyd to make prooffe of her cruelty  
On gentle dame, so hurtlesse and so trew:  
Thenceforth he kept her goodly company,  
And leard her discipline of faith and verity.

## XXXII

But she, all vowd unto the Redcrosse Knight,  
His wandring perill closely did lament,  
Ne in this new acquaintaunce could delight,  
But her deare heart with angnish did tor-  
ment,

And all her witt in seeret counsels spent,  
How to escape. At last in privy wise  
To Satyrane she shewed her intent;  
Who, glad to gain such favour, gan devise,  
How with that pensive maid he best might  
thence arise.

## XXXIII

So on a day, when Satyres all were gone  
To doe their service to Sylvanus old,

The gentle virgin, left behinde alone,  
 He led away with corage stout and bold.  
 Too late it was to Satyres to be told,  
 Or ever hope recover her againe:  
 In vaine he seekes that, having, cannot hold.  
 So fast he carried her with carefull paine,  
 That they the wods are past, and come  
 now to the plaine

## XXXIV

The better part now of the lingring day  
 They traveld had, whenas they far espide  
 A weary wight forwardring by the way,  
 And towards him they gan in hast to ride,  
 To weete of newes that did abroad betide,  
 Or tidings of her Knight of the Redcrosse.  
 But he, them spying, gan to turne aside  
 For feare, as seemd, or for some feigned  
 losse:  
 More greedy they of newes fast towards  
 him do crosse.

## XXXV

A silly man, in simple weeds forworne,  
 And soild with dust of the long dried way;  
 His sandales were with toilsome travell  
 torne,  
 And face all tand with scorching sunny ray,  
 As he had traveld many a sommers day  
 Through boyling sands of Arabie and Ynde;  
 And in his hand a Jacobs staffe, to stay  
 His weary limbs upon; and eke behind  
 His scrip did hang, in which his needments  
 he did bind.

## XXXVI

The knight, approching nigh, of him inquerd  
 Tidings of warre, and of adventures new;  
 But warres, nor new adventures, none he  
 herd.  
 Then Una gan to aske, if ought he knew  
 Or heard abroad of that her champion trew,  
 That in his armour bare a croslet red.  
 'Ay me! deare dame,' quoth he, 'well may  
 I rew  
 To tell the sad sight which mine eies have  
 red:  
 These eies did see that knight both living  
 and eke ded.'

## XXXVII

That cruell word her tender hart so thirld,  
 That suddain did did ronne through every  
 vaine,  
 And stony horror all her sences fild

With dying fitt, that downe she fell for  
 paine.  
 The knight her lightly reared up againe,  
 And comforted with curteous kind reliefe:  
 Then, wonne from death, she bad him tellen  
 plaine  
 The further processe of her hidden grieve;  
 The lesser pangs can beare, who hath en-  
 dur'd the chief.

## XXXVIII

Then gan the pilgrim thus: 'I chaunst this  
 day,  
 This fatall day, that shall I ever rew,  
 To see two knights in travell on my way  
 (A sory sight) arraung'd in batteill new,  
 Both breathing vengeaunce, both of wrath-  
 full hew:  
 My feareful flesh did tremble at their strife,  
 To see their blades so greedily inbrew,  
 That, dronke with blood, yet thirsted after  
 life:  
 What more? the Redcrosse Knight was  
 slain with Paynim knife.'

## XXXIX

'Ah, dearest Lord!' quoth she, 'how might  
 that bee,  
 And he the stoutest knight, that ever  
 wonne?'  
 'Ah, dearest dame,' quoth hee, 'how might  
 I see  
 The thing, that might not be, and yet was  
 donne?'  
 'Where is,' said Satyrane, 'that Paynims  
 sonne,  
 That him of life, and us of joy, hath refte?'  
 'Not far away,' quoth he, 'he hence doth  
 wonne,  
 Foreby a fountaine, where I late him lefte  
 Washing his bloody wounds, that through  
 the steele were cleft.'

## XL

Therewith the knight thence marched forth  
 in hast,  
 Whiles Una, with huge heavinesse opprest,  
 Could not for sorrow follow him so fast;  
 And soone he came, as he the place had  
 ghest,  
 Whereas that Pagan proud him selfe did  
 rest  
 In secret shadow by a fountaine side:  
 Even he it was, that earst would have sup-  
 prest



Faire Una: whom when Satyrane espide,  
With foule reprochfull words he boldly him  
defide;

## XLI

And said: 'Arise, thou cursed miscreant,  
That hast with knightlesse guile and trech-  
erous train  
Faire knighthood fowly shamed, and doest  
vaunt  
That good Knight of the Redcrosse to have  
slain:

Arise, and with like treason now maintain  
Thy guilty wrong, or els thee guilty yield.'  
The Sarazin, this hearing, rose amain,  
And catching up in hast his three square  
shield  
And shining helmet, soone him buckled to  
the field;

## XLII

And, drawing nigh him, said: 'Ah, mis-  
born Elfe!

In evill houre thy foes thee hither sent,  
Anothers wrongs to wreak upon thy selfe:  
Yet ill thou blamest me, for having blent  
My name with guile and traiterous intent:  
That Redcrosse Knight, perdie, I never  
slew;

But had he beene where earst his armes  
were lent,

Th' enchaunter vaine his errour should not  
rew:

But thou his errour shalt, I hope, now  
proven trew.'

## XLIII

Therewith they gan, both furious and fell,  
To thunder blowes, and fiersly to assaile  
Each other, bent his enemy to quell;  
That with their force they perst both plate  
and maile,

And made wide furrowes in their fleshs  
fraile,

That it would pittie any living eie.

Large floods of blood adowne their sides did  
raile;

But floods of blood could not them satisfie:  
Both hongred after death: both chose to  
win, or die.

## XLIV

So long they fight, and fell revenge pursue,  
That, fainting each, them selves to breathe  
lett,

And, ofte refreshed, battell oft renue:  
As when two bores, with raneling malice  
mett,

Their gory sides fresh bleeding fiercely frett,  
Til breathlesse both them selves aside retire,  
Where, foming wrath, their cruell tuskes  
they whett,

And trample th' earth, the whiles they may  
respire;

Then backe to fight againe, new breathed  
and entire.

## XLV

So fiersly, when these knights had breathed  
once,

They gan to fight retourne, increasing more  
Their puissant force and cruell rage at-  
tonce,

With heaped strokes more hugely then be-  
fore,

That with their drery wounds and bloody  
gore

They both deformed, scarsely could bee  
known.

By this, sad Una fraught with anguish sore,  
Led with their noise, which through the  
aire was thrown,

Arriv'd, wher then in erth their fruitles  
blood had sown.

## XLVI

Whom all so soone as that proud Sarazin  
Espide, he gan revive the memory  
Of his leud lusts, and late attempted sin,  
And left the doubtfull battell hastily,  
To catch her, newly offred to his eie:  
But Satyrane, with strokes him turning,  
staid,

And sternely bad him other businesse  
plie

Then hunt the steps of pure unspotted  
maid:

Wherewith he al enrag'd, these bitter  
speeches said:

## XLVII

'O foolish Faeries sonne! what fury mad  
Hath thee incenst to hast thy dolefull  
fate?

Were it not better I that lady had  
Then that thou hadst repented it too late?  
Most sencelesse man he, that himselfe doth  
hate,

To love another. Lo then, for thine ayd,  
Here take thy lovers token on thy pate.'

So they two fight; the whiles the royall  
mayd  
Fledd farre away, of that proud Paynim  
sore afayd.

## XLVIII

But that false pilgrim, which that leasing  
told,  
Being in deed old Archimage, did stay  
In secret shadow, all this to behold,  
And much rejoyced in their bloody fray:  
But when he saw the damsell passe away,  
He left his stond, and her pursewd apace,  
In hope to bring her to her last decay.  
But for to tell her lamentable cace,  
And eke this battels end, will need another  
place.

## CANTO VII

The Redcrosse Knight is captive made,  
By gyaunt proud opprest:  
Prince Arthure meets with Una great-  
ly with those newes distrest.

## I

WHAT man so wise, what earthly witt so  
ware,  
As to discry the crafty cunning traine,  
By which Deceipt doth maske in visour  
faire,  
And cast her coulours died deepe in graine,  
To seeme like Truth, whose shape she well  
can faine,  
And fitting gestures to her purpose frame,  
The guiltlesse man with guile to entertaine?  
Great maistresse of her art was that false  
dame,  
The false Duessa, cloked with Fidessaes  
name.

## II

Who when, returning from the dreary Night,  
She fownd not in that perilous Hous of  
Pryde,  
Where she had left, the noble Redcross  
Knight,  
Her hoped pray, she would no lenger byde,  
But forth she went to seeke him far and  
wide.  
Ere long she fownd, whereas he wearie  
sate  
To rest him selfe, foreby a fountaine syde,  
Disarmed all of yron-coted plate,  
And by his side his steed the grassy forage  
ate.

## III

Hee feedes upon the cooling shade, and  
bayes  
His sweatie forehead in the breathing wynd,  
Which through the trembling leaves full  
gently playes,  
Wherein the chearefull birds of sundry  
kynd  
Doe chaunt sweet musick, to delight his  
mynd.  
The witch approching gan him fayrely  
greet,  
And with reproch of carelesnes unkynd  
Upbrayd, for leaving her in place unmeet,  
With fowle words tempring faire, soure  
gall with hony sweet.

## IV

Unkindnesse past, they gan of solace treat,  
And bathe in pleasaunce of the joyous  
shade,  
Which shielded them against the boyling  
heat,  
And, with greene boughes decking a  
gloomy glade,  
About the fountaine like a girlond made;  
Whose bubbling wave did ever freshly well,  
Ne ever would through fervent sommer  
fade:  
The sacred nymph, which therein wont to  
dwell,  
Was out of Dianas favor, as it then befell.

## V

The cause was this: one day when Phœbe  
fayre  
With all her band was following the chace.  
This nymph, quite tyr'd with heat of  
scorching ayre,  
Satt downe to rest in midst of the race:  
The goddesse wroth gan fowly her disgrace,  
And badd the waters, which from her did  
flow,  
Be such as she her selfe was then in place.  
Thenceforth her waters waxed dull and  
slow,  
And all that drunke thereof did faint and  
feeble grow.

## VI

Hereof this gentle knight unweeting was,  
And lying downe upon the sandie graile,  
Dronke of the streame, as cleare as christall  
glas:  
Eftsoones his manly forces gan to fayle,

And mightie strong was turnd to feeble  
 frayle:  
 His chaunged powres at first them selves  
 not felt,  
 Till crudled cold his corage gan assayle,  
 And chearefull blood in fayntnes chill did  
 melt,  
 Which, like a fever fit, through all his body  
 swelt.

## VII

Yet goodly court he made still to his dame,  
 Pourd out in loosnesse on the grassy  
 grownd,  
 Both carelesse of his health, and of his fame:  
 Till at the last he heard a dreadfull sownd,  
 Which through the wood loud bellowing  
 did rebownd,  
 That all the earth for terror seemd to  
 shake,  
 And trees did tremble. 'Th' Elfe, therewith  
 astownd,  
 Upstartd lightly from his looser make,  
 And his unready weapons gan in hand to  
 take.

## VIII

But ere he could his armour on him dight,  
 Or gett his shield, his monstrous enemy  
 With sturdie steps came stalking in his  
 sight,  
 An hideous geaunt, horrible and hye,  
 That with his tallnesse seemd to threat the  
 skeye;  
 The ground eke groned under him for dreed:  
 His living like saw never living eye,  
 Ne durst behold: his stature did exceed  
 The hight of three the tallest sonnes of  
 mortall seed.

## IX

The greatest Earth his uncouth mother  
 was,  
 And blustering Æolus his boasted syre;  
 Who with his breath, which through the  
 world doth pas,  
 Her hollow womb did secretly inspyre,  
 And fild her hidden caves with stormie yre,  
 That she conceiv'd; and trebling the dew  
 time,  
 In which the wombes of wemen doe expyre,  
 Brought forth this monstrous masse of  
 earthly slyme,  
 Puft up with emptie wynd, and fild with  
 sinfull cryme.

## X

So growen great, through arrogant delight  
 Of th' high descent whereof he was yborne,  
 And through presumption of his matchlesse  
 might,  
 All other powres and knighthood he did  
 scorne.  
 Such now he marcheth to this man forlorne,  
 And left to losse: his stalking steps are  
 stayde  
 Upon a snaggy oke, which he had torne  
 Out of his mothers bowelles, and it made  
 His mortall mace, wherewith his foemen  
 he dismayde.

## XI

That when the knight he spyde, he gan ad-  
 vauce  
 With huge force and insupportable mayne,  
 And towards him with dreadfull fury  
 prauce;  
 Who haplesse, and eke hopelesse, all in  
 vaine  
 Did to him pace, sad battaile to darrayne,  
 Disarmd, disgraste, and inwardly dismayde,  
 And eke so faint in every joynt and vayne,  
 Through that fraile fountain, which him  
 feeble made,  
 That scarcely could he weeld his bootlesse  
 single blade.

## XII

The geaunt strooke so maynly mercilesse,  
 That could have overthrowne a stony towre,  
 And were not heavenly grace, that him did  
 blesse,  
 He had beene pouldred all, as thin as flowre:  
 But he was wary of that deadly stowre,  
 And lightly lept from underneath the blow:  
 Yet so exceeding was the villeins powre  
 That with the winde it did him overthrow,  
 And all his sences stound, that still he lay  
 full low.

## XIII

As when that divelish yron engin, wrought  
 In deepest hell, and framd by furies skill,  
 With windy nitre and quick sulphur fraught,  
 And ramd with bollet rownd, ordaind to  
 kill,  
 Conceiveth fyre, the heavens it doth fill  
 With thundring noyse, and all the ayre doth  
 choke,  
 That none can breath, nor see, nor heare at  
 will,



Through smouldry cloud of duskish stinek-  
ing smok,  
That th' onely breath him daunts, who hath  
escapt the stroke.

## XIV

So daunted when the geant saw the knight,  
His heavie hand he heaved up on hye,  
And him to dust thought to have battred  
quight,  
Untill Duessa loud to him gan crye,  
'O great Orgoglio, greatest under skye,  
O hold thy mortall hand for ladies sake!  
Hold for my sake, and doe him not to dye,  
But vanquisht thine eternall bondslave  
make,  
And me, thy worthy meed, unto thy leman  
take.'

## XV

He hearkned, and did stay from further  
harmes,  
To gayne so goodly guerdon as she spake:  
So willingly she came into his armes,  
Who her as willingly to grace did take,  
And was possessed of his newfound make.  
Then up he tooke the slombred sencelesse  
corse,  
And ere he could out of his swowne awake,  
Him to his castle brought with hastie forse,  
And in a dongeon deep him threw without  
remorse.

## XVI

From that day forth Duessa was his deare,  
And highly honourd in his haughtie eye;  
He gave her gold and purple pall to weare,  
And triple crowne set on her head full hye,  
And her endowd with royall majesty:  
Then, for to make her dreaded more of  
men,  
And peoples hartes with awfull terror tye,  
A monstrous beast ybredd in filthy fen  
He chose, which he had kept long time in  
darksom den.

## XVII

Such one it was, as that renowned snake  
Which great Aleides in Stremona slew,  
Long fostred in the filth of Lerna lake,  
Whose many heades out budding ever new  
Did breed him endlesse labor to subdew:  
But this same monster much more ugly  
was;  
For seven great heads out of his body grew,

An yron brest, and back of sealy bras,  
And all embrewd in blood, his eyes did  
shine as glas.

## XVIII

His tayle was stretched out in wondrous  
length,  
That to the hous of heavenly gods it raught,  
And with extorted powre, and borrow'd  
strength,  
The everburning lamps from thence it  
braught,  
And proudly threw to ground, as things of  
naught;  
And underneath his filthy feet did tread  
The sacred thinges, and holy heastes fore-  
taught.  
Upon this dreadfull beast with sevenfold  
head  
He sett the false Duessa, for more aw and  
dread.

## XIX

The wofull dwarfe, which saw his maisters  
fall,  
Whiles he had keeping of his grasing steed,  
And valiant knight become a caytive thrall,  
When all was past, tooke up his forlorne  
weed;  
His mightie armour, missing most at need;  
His silver shield, now idle maisterlesse;  
His poynant speare, that many made to  
bleed;  
The ruefull monuments of heavinesse;  
And with them all departes, to tell his  
great distresse.

## XX

He had not travaill long, when on the way  
He wofull lady, wofull Una, met,  
Fast flying from the Paynims greedy pray,  
Whilest Satyrane him from pursuit did let:  
Who when her eyes she on the dwarf had  
set,  
And saw the signes, that deadly tydings  
spake,  
She fell to ground for sorrowfull regret,  
And lively breath her sad brest did forsake,  
Yet might her pitteous hart be seene to pant  
and quake.

## XXI

The messenger of so unhappie newes  
Would faine have dyde; dead was his hart  
within;

Yet outwardly some little comfort shewes:  
 At last recovering hart, he does begin  
 To rubb her temples, and to chaufe her  
 chin,  
 And everie tender part does tosse and  
 turne:  
 So hardly he the flitted life does win,  
 Unto her native prison to retourne:  
 Then gins her grieved ghost thus to lament  
 and mourne:

## XXII

‘Ye dreary instruments of dolefull sight,  
 That doe this deadly spectacle behold,  
 Why do ye lenger feed on loathed light,  
 Or liking find to gaze on earthly mould,  
 Sith cruell fates the carefull threds un-  
 fould,  
 The which my life and love together tyde?  
 Now let the stony dart of sencelesse cold  
 Perce to my hart, and pas through everie  
 side,  
 And let eternall night so sad sight fro me  
 hyde.

## XXIII

‘O lightsome day, the lampe of highest  
 Jove,  
 First made by him, mens wandring wayes  
 to gujde,  
 When darknesse he in deepest dongeon  
 drove,  
 Henceforth thy hated face for ever hyde,  
 And shut up heavens windowes shyning  
 wyde:  
 For earthly sight can nought but sorow  
 breed,  
 And late repentance, which shall long abyde.  
 Mine eyes no more on vanitie shall feed,  
 But, seeled up with death, shall have their  
 deadly meed.’

## XXIV

Then downe againe she fell unto the ground;  
 But he her quickly reared up againe:  
 Thrise did she sinke adowne in deadly  
 swownd,  
 And thrise he her reviv’d with busie paine:  
 At last, when life recover’d had the raine,  
 And over-wrestled his strong cnimy,  
 With foltring tong, and trembling everie  
 vaine,  
 ‘Tell on,’ quoth she, ‘the wofull tragedy,  
 The which these reliques sad present unto  
 mine eye.

## XXV

‘Tempestuous Fortune hath spent all her  
 spight,  
 And thrilling Sorrow throwne his utmost  
 dart;  
 Thy sad tong cannot tell more heavy plight  
 Then that I feele, and harbour in mine hart:  
 Who hath endur’d the whole, can beare ech  
 part.  
 If death it be, it is not the first wound,  
 That launched hath my brest with bleeding  
 smart.  
 Begin, and end the bitter balefull stound;  
 If lesse then that I feare, more favour I  
 have found.’

## XXVI

Then gan the dwarfe the whole discourse  
 declare:  
 The subtile traines of Archimago old;  
 The wanton loves of false Fidessa fayre,  
 Bought with the blood of vanquisht Paynim  
 bold;  
 The wretched payre transformd to treen  
 mould;  
 The House of Pryde, and perilles round  
 about;  
 The combat, which he with Sansjoy did  
 hould;  
 The lucklesse conflict with the gyaunt stout,  
 Wherein captiv’d, of life or death he stood  
 in doubt.

## XXVII

She heard with patience all unto the end,  
 And strove to maister sorrowfull assay,  
 Which greater grew, the more she did con-  
 tend,  
 And almost rent her tender hart in tway;  
 And love fresh coles unto her fire did lay:  
 For greater love, the greater is the losse.  
 Was never lady loved dearer day,  
 Then she did love the Knight of the Red-  
 crosse;  
 For whose deare sake so many troubles her  
 did tosse.

## XXVIII

At last, when fervent sorrow slaked was,  
 She up arose, resolving him to find,  
 Alive or dead; and forward forth doth pas,  
 All as the dwarfe the way to her assynd;  
 And ever more, in constant carefull mind,  
 She fedd her wound with fresh renewed  
 bale:

Long tost with stormes, and bet with bitter  
wind,  
High over hills, and lowe adowne the dale,  
She wandred many a wood, and measurd  
many a vale.

## XXIX

At last she chaunced by good hap to meet  
A goodly knight, faire marching by the  
way,

Together with his squyre, arayed meet:  
His glitterand armour shined far away,  
Like glauncing light of Phœbus brightest  
ray;

From top to toe no place appeared bare,  
That deadly dint of steele endanger may:  
Athwart his brest a bauldrick brave he  
ware,

That shind, like twinkling stars, with stones  
most pretious rare.

## XXX

And in the midst thereof, one pretious stone  
Of wondrous worth, and eke of wondrous  
nights,

Shapt like a ladies head, exceeding shone,  
Like Hesperus emongst the lesser lights,  
And strove for to amaze the weaker sights:  
Thereby his mortall blade full comely hong  
In yvory sheath, yearv'd with curious  
slights;

Whose hilts were burnisht gold, and handle  
strong  
Of mother perle, and buckled with a golden  
tong.

## XXXI

His haughtie helmet, horrid all with gold,  
Both glorious brightnesse and great terrour  
bredd;

For all the crest a dragon did enfold  
With greedie pawes, and over all did spredd  
His golden winges: his dreadfull hideous  
hedd,

Close couched on the bever, seemd to throw  
From flaming mouth bright sparekles fiery  
redd,

That suddaine horreur to faint hartes did  
show;

And sealy tayle was stretcht adowne his  
back full low.

## XXXII

Upon the top of all his loftie crest,  
A bouch of heares discolourd diversly,

With sprinced pearle and gold full richly  
drest,

Did shake, and seemd to daunce for jollity;  
Like to an almond tree ymounted hye  
On top of greene Selinis all alone,  
With blossoms brave bedecked daintily;  
Whose tender locks do tremble every one  
At everie little breath, that under heaven  
is blowne.

## XXXIII

His warlike shield all closely cover'd was,  
Ne might of mortall eye be ever seene;  
Not made of steele, nor of enduring bras;  
Such earthly mettals soone consumed beene;  
But all of diamond perfect pure and cleene  
It framed was, one massy entire mould,  
Hewen out of adamant rocke with engines  
keene,

That point of speare it never percen could,  
Ne dint of direfull sword divide the sub-  
stance would.

## XXXIV

The same to wight he never wont disclose,  
But when as monsters huge he would dis-  
may,

Or daunt unequall armies of his foes,  
Or when the flying heavens he would af-  
fray:

For so exceeding shone his glistring ray,  
That Phœbus golden face it did attaint,  
As when a cloud his beames doth over-lay;  
And silver Cynthia waxed pale and faynt,  
As when her face is staynd with magicke  
arts constraint.

## XXXV

No magicke arts hereof had any might,  
Nor bloody wordes of bold enchaunters  
call,

But all that was not such as seemd in  
sight

Before that shield did fade, and suddeine  
fall:

And when him list the raskall routes ap-  
pall,

Men into stones therewith he could trans-  
mew,

And stones to dust, and dust to nought at  
all;

And when him list the prouder lookes sub-  
dew,

He would them gazing blind, or turne to  
other hew.



## XXXVI

Ne let it seeme that credence this exceeds;  
 For he that made the same was knowne  
     right well  
 To have done much more admirable deedes.  
 It Merlin was, which whylome did excell  
 All living wightes in might of magicke  
     spell:  
 Both shield, and sword, and armour all he  
     wrought  
 For this young Prince, when first to armes  
     he fell;  
 But when he dyde, the Faery Queene it  
     brought  
 To Faerie Lond, where yet it may be seene,  
     if sought.

## XXXVII

A gentle youth, his dearely loved squire,  
 His speare of heben wood behind him bare,  
 Whose harmefull head, thrise heated in the  
     fire,  
 Had riven many a brest with pikehead  
     square;  
 A goodly person, and could menage faire  
 His stubborne steed with curbed canon bitt,  
 Who under him did trample as the aire,  
 And ehauft, that any on his backe should  
     sitt;  
 The yron rowels into frothy fome he bitt.

## XXXVIII

Whenas this knight nigh to the lady drew,  
 With lovely court he gan her entertaïne;  
 But when he heard her aunswers loth, he  
     knew  
 Some secret sorrow did her heart distraîne:  
 Which to allay, and calme her storming  
     paine,  
 Faire feeling words he wisely gan display,  
 And for her humor fitting purpose faine,  
 To tempt the cause it selfe for to bewray;  
 Wherewith enmovd, these bleeding words  
     she gan to say:

## XXXIX

‘What worlds delight, or joy of living  
     speech,  
 Can hart, so plungd in sea of sorrowes  
     deep,  
 And heaped with so huge misfortunes,  
     reach?  
 The carefull cold beginneth for to ereep,  
 And in my heart his yron arrow steep,  
 Soone as I thinke upon my bitter bale:

Such helplesse harmes yts better hidden  
     keep,  
 Then rip up gricfe, where it may not availle;  
 My last left comfort is, my woes to weepe  
     and waile.’

## XL

‘Ah! lady deare,’ quoth then the gentle  
     knight,  
 ‘Well may I ween your grief is wondrous  
     great;  
 For wondrous great grieve groneth in my  
     spright,  
 Whiles thus I heare you of your sorrowes  
     treat.  
 But, woefull lady, let me you intrete  
 For to unfold the anguish of your hart:  
 Mishaps are maistred by advice discrete,  
 And counsell mitigates the greatest smart;  
 Found never help, who never would his  
     hurts impart.’

## XLI

‘O but,’ quoth she, ‘great grieve will not be  
     tould,  
 And can more easily be thought then said.’  
 ‘Right so,’ quoth he; ‘but he, that never  
     would,  
 Could never: will to might gives greatest  
     aid.’  
 ‘But grieve,’ quoth she, ‘does greater grow  
     displaid,  
 If then it find not helpe, and breeds de-  
     spaire.’  
 ‘Despaire breeds not,’ quoth he, ‘where  
     faith is staid.’  
 ‘No faith so fast,’ quoth she, ‘but flesh  
     does paire.’  
 ‘Flesh may empaire,’ quoth he, ‘but reason  
     can repaire.’

## XLII

His goodly reason and well guided speach  
 So deepe did settle in her gracious thought,  
 That her perswaded to disclose the breach,  
 Which love and fortune in her heart had  
     wrought,  
 And said: ‘Faire sir, I hope good hap hath  
     brought  
 You to inquere the secrets of my grieve,  
 Or that your wisdom will direct my  
     thought,  
 Or that your prowesse can me yield reliefe:  
 Then heare the story sad, which I shall tell  
     you brieve.

## XLIII

'The forlorne maiden, whom your eies have  
seene  
The laughing stocke of Fortunes mockeries,  
Am th' onely daughter of a king and  
queene;  
Whose parents deare, whiles equal destinies  
Did romne about, and their felicities  
The favourable heavens did not envy,  
Did spred their rule through all the terri-  
tories,  
Which Phison and Euphrates floweth by,  
And Gehons golden waves doe wash con-  
tinually.

## XLIV

'Till that their cruell eursed enemy,  
An huge great dragon, horrible in sight,  
Bred in the loathly lakes of Tartary,  
With murdrous ravine, and devouring might,  
Their kingdome spoild, and countrey wasted  
quight:  
Themselves, for feare into his jawes to fall,  
He forst to castle strong to take their flight,  
Where, fast embard in mighty brasen wall,  
He has them now fowr years besiegd, to  
make them thrall.

## XLV

'Full many knights, adventurous and stout,  
Have enterprizd that monster to subdew;  
From every coast, that heaven walks about,  
Have thither come the noble martial crew,  
That famous harde atchievements still pur-  
sew;  
Yet never any could that girlond win,  
But all still shronke, and still he greater  
grew:  
All they for want of faith, or guilt of sin,  
The pitteous pray of his fiers cruelty have  
bin.

## XLVI

'At last, yled with far reported praise,  
Which flying fame throughout the world  
had spred,  
Of doughty knights, whom Fary Land did  
raise,  
That noble order hight of Maidenhed,  
Forthwith to court of Gloriane I sped,  
Of Gloriane, great queene of glory bright,  
Whose kingdomes scat Cleopolis is red,  
There to obtaine some such redoubted knight,  
That parents deare from tyrants powre de-  
liver might.

## XLVII

'Yt was my chaunce (my chaunce was faire  
and good)  
There for to find a fresh unproved knight,  
Whose manly hands imbrawd in guilty  
blood  
Had never beene, ne ever by his might  
Had throwne to ground the unregarded  
right:  
Yet of his prowesse prooffe he since hath  
made  
(I witnes am) in many a cruell fight;  
The groning ghosts of many one dismaide  
Have felt the bitter dint of his avenging  
blade.

## XLVIII

'And ye, the forlorne reliques of his powre,  
His biting sword, and his devouring speare,  
Which have endured many a dreadfull  
stowre,  
Can speake his prowesse, that did earst you  
beare,  
And well could rule: now he hath left you  
heare,  
To be the record of his ruefull losse,  
And of my dolefull disaventurous deare:  
O heavie record of the good Redcrosse,  
Where have yee left your lord, that could  
so well you tosse?

## XLIX

'Well hoped I, and faire beginnings had,  
That he my captive languor should re-  
deeme;  
Till, all unweeting, an enchaunter bad  
His sence abusd, and made him to mis-  
deeme  
My loyalty, not such as it did seeme,  
That rather death desire then such despight.  
Be judge, ye heavens, that all things right  
esteeme,  
How I him lov'd, and love with all my  
might!  
So thought I eke of him, and think I  
thought aright.

## L

'Theneeforth me desolate he quite for-  
sooke,  
To wander where wilde fortune would me  
lead,  
And other bywaies he himselfe betooke,  
Where never foote of living wight did  
tread,

That brought not backe the balefull body  
dead;  
In which him chaunced false Duessa meete,  
Mine onely foe, mine onely deadly dread,  
Who with her witchcraft, and misseeming  
sweete,  
Inveigled him to follow her desires un-  
meete.

## LI

'At last, by subtile sleights she him be-  
traid  
Unto his foe, a gyaunt huge and tall;  
Who him disarmed, dissolute, dismaid,  
Unwares surprised, and with mighty mall  
The monster mercilesse him made to fall,  
Whose fall did never foe before behold;  
And now in darkesome dungeon, wretched  
thrall,  
Remedillesse, for aie he doth him hold;  
This is my cause of griefe, more great then  
may be told.'

## LII

Ere she had ended all, she gan to faint;  
But he her comforted, and faire bespake:  
'Certes, madame, ye have great cause of  
plaint,  
That stoutest heart, I weene, could cause  
to quake.  
But be of cheare, and comfort to you take:  
For till I have acquitt your captive knight,  
Assure your selfe, I will you not forsake.'  
His chearefull words reviv'd her chearelesse  
spright:  
So forth they went, the dwarfe them guid-  
ing ever right.

## CANTO VIII

Faire virgin, to redeeme her deare,  
Brings Arthure to the fight:  
Who slayes the gyaunt, wounds the beast,  
And strips Duessa quight.

## I

AY me! how many perils doe enfold  
The righteous man, to make him daily  
fall,  
Were not that Heavenly Grace doth him  
uphold,  
And stedfast Truth acquite him out of all!  
Her love is firme, her care continuall,  
So oft as he, through his own foolish pride  
Or weaknes, is to sinfull bands made thrall:

Els should this Redcrosse Knight in bands  
have dyde,  
For whose deliverance she this Prince doth  
thether guyd.

## II

They sadly traveild thus, untill they came  
Nigh to a castle builded strong and hye:  
Then cryde the dwarfe, 'Lo! yonder is the  
same,  
In which my lord, my liege, doth lucklesse ly,  
Thrall to that gyaunts hatefull tyranny:  
Therefore, deare sir, your mightie powres  
assay.'  
The noble knight alighted by and by  
From loftie steed, and badd the ladie stay,  
To see what end of fight should him befall  
that day.

## III

So with the squire, th' admirer of his might,  
He marched forth towards that castle  
wall;  
Whose gates he fownd fast shutt, ne living  
wight  
To warde the same, nor answere commers  
call.  
Then tooke that squire an horne of bugle  
small,  
Which hong adowne his side in twisted gold  
And tasselles gay. Wyde wonders over all  
Of that same hornes great vertues weren  
told,  
Which had approved bene in uses manifold.

## IV

Was never wight that heard that shrilling  
sownd,  
But trembling feare did feel in every vaine:  
Three miles it might be easy heard arownd,  
And ecchoes three aunswerd it selfe againe:  
No false enchauntment, nor deceitfull  
traine  
Might once abide the terror of that blast,  
But presently was void and wholly vaine:  
No gate so strong, no locke so firme and  
fast,  
But with that percing noise flew open quite,  
or brast.

## V

The same before the geaunts gate he blew,  
That all the castle quaked from the grownd,  
And every dore of freewill open flew:  
The gyaunt selfe dismaied with that sownd,



Where he with his Duessa dalliaunce  
fownd,  
In hast came rushing forth from inner  
bowre,  
With staring countenance sterne, as one as-  
townd,  
And staggering steps, to weet what sudden  
stowre  
Had wrought that horror strange, and  
dar'd his dreaded powre.

## VI

And after him the proud Duessa came,  
High mounted on her many headed beast;  
And every head with fyrie tongue did flame,  
And every head was crowned on his creast,  
And bloody mouthed with late cruell feast.  
That when the knight beheld, his mightie  
shild  
Upon his manly arme he soone addressd,  
And at him fiersly flew, with corage fild,  
And eger greedinesse through every mem-  
ber thirld.

## VII

Therewith the gyant buckled him to fight,  
Inflamd with scornefull wrath and high dis-  
daime,  
And lifting up his dreadfull club on hight,  
All armd with ragged snubbes and knottie  
graine,  
Him thought at first encounter to have  
slaime.  
But wise and wary was that noble pere,  
And lightly leaping from so monstrous  
maine,  
Did fayre avoide the violence him nere;  
It booted nought to thinke such thunder-  
bolts to beare.

## VIII

Ne shame he thought to shonne so hideous  
might.  
The ydle stroke, enforcing furious way,  
Missing the marke of his misaymed sight,  
Did fall to ground, and with his heavy  
sway  
So deeply dinted in the driven clay,  
That three yardes deepe a furrow up did  
throw:  
The sad earth, wounded with so sore assay,  
Did grone full grievous underneath the  
blow,  
And trembling with strange feare, did like  
an erthquake show.

## IX

As when almightie Jove, in wrathfull mood,  
To wreake the guilt of mortall sins is bent,  
Hurles forth his thundring dart with deadly  
food,  
Enrold in flames, and smouldring dreri-  
ment,  
Through riven cloudes and molten firma-  
ment;  
The fiers threeforked engin, making way,  
Both loftie towres and highest trees hath  
rent,  
And all that might his angry passage stay,  
And shooting in the earth, castes up a  
mount of clay.

## X

His boystrous club, so buried in the grownd,  
He could not rearen up againe so light,  
But that the knight him at advantage fownd,  
And whiles he strove his combred clubbe to  
quight  
Out of the earth, with blade all burning  
bright  
He smott of his left arme, which like a  
block  
Did fall to ground, depriv'd of native  
might:  
Large streames of blood out of the truncked  
stock  
Forth gushed, like fresh water streame  
from riven rocke.

## XI

Dismayed with so desperate deadly wound,  
And eke impatient of unwonted payne,  
He lowdly brayd with beastly yelling  
sownd,  
That all the fieldes rebellowed againe:  
As great a noyse, as when in Cymbrian  
plaine  
An heard of bulles, whom kindly rage doth  
sting,  
Doe for the milky mothers want complaine,  
And fill the fieldes with troublous bellow-  
ing:  
The neighbor woods arownd with hollow  
murmur ring.

## XII

That when his deare Duessa heard, and saw  
The evill stownd that daungerd her estate,  
Unto his aide she hastily did draw  
Her dreadfull beast, who, swolne with  
blood of late.

Came ramping forth with proud presumptuous gate,  
 And threatned all his heades like flaming brandes.  
 But him the squire made quickly to retrate,  
 Encountring fiers with single sword in hand,  
 And twixt him and his lord did like a bulwarke stand.

## XIII

The proud Duessa, full of wrathfull spight  
 And fiers disdaine, to be affronted so,  
 Enforst her purple beast with all her might,  
 That stop out of the way to overthrow,  
 Scorning the let of so unequal foe:  
 But nathemore would that corageous swayne

To her yeeld passage, gainst his lord to goe,  
 But with outrageous strokes did him restraine,  
 And with his body bard the way atwixt them twaine.

## XIV

Then tooke the angrie witch her golden eup,  
 Which still she bore, replete with magick artes;

Death and despayre did many thereof sup,  
 And secret poyson through their inner partes,

Th' eternall bale of heaue wounded harts;  
 Which, after charmes and some enchauntments said,

She lightly sprinkled on his weaker partes;  
 Therewith his sturdie corage soone was quayd,

And all his sences were with suddein dread dismayd.

## XV

So downe he fell before the cruell beast,  
 Who on his neek his bloody clawes did seize,

That life nigh crusht out of his panting brest:

No powre he had to stirre, nor will to rize.  
 That when the carefull knight gan well avise,

He lightly left the foe with whom he fought,

And to the beast gan turne his enterprise;  
 For wondrous anguish in his hart it wrought,  
 To see his loved squire into such thraldom brought.

## XVI

And high advauneing his blood-thirstie blade,

Stroke one of those deformed heades so sore,

That of his puissaunce proud ensample made;

His monstrous scalpe downe to his teeth it tore,

And that misformed shape misshaped more:  
 A sea of blood gusht from the gaping wovnd,

That her gay garments staynd with filthy gore,

And overflowed all the field arownd;  
 That over shoes in blood he waded on the grownd.

## XVII

Thereat he rored for exceeding paine,  
 That, to have heard, great horror would have bred,

And scourging th' emptie ayre with his long trayne,

Through great impatience of his grieved hed,

His gorgeouse ryder from her loftie sted  
 Would have cast downe, and trodd in durty myre,

Had not the gyaunt soone her succoured;  
 Who, all enrag'd with smart and frantick yre,

Came hurtling in full fiers, and forst the knight retyre.

## XVIII

The foree, which wont in two to be disperst,

In one alone left hand he now unites,  
 Which is through rage more strong then both were erst;

With which his hideous club aloft he dites,  
 And at his foe with furious rigor smites,

That strongest oake might seeme to overthrow:

The stroke upon his shield so heaue lites,  
 That to the ground it doubleth him full low:

What mortall wight could ever beare so monstrous blow?

## XIX

And in his fall his shield, that covered was,  
 Did loose his vele by chaunce, and open flew:

The light whereof, that hevens light did  
 pas,  
 Such blazing brightnesse through the ayer  
 threw,  
 That eye mote not the same endure to vew.  
 Which when the gyaunt spyde with staring  
 eye,  
 He downe let fall his arme, and soft with-  
 drew  
 His weapon huge, that heaved was on hye,  
 For to have slain the man, that on the  
 ground did lye.

## XX

And eke the fruitfull-headed beast, amazd  
 At flashing beames of that sunshiny shield,  
 Became stark blind, and all his sences dazd,  
 That downe he tumbled on the durtic field,  
 And seemd himselfe as conquered to yield.  
 Whom when his maistresse proud perceiv'd  
 to fall,  
 Whiles yet his feeble feet for faintnesse  
 reeld,  
 Unto the gyaunt lowdly she gan call,  
 'O helpe, Orgoglio, helpe! or els we perish  
 all.'

## XXI

At her so pitteous cry was much amov'd  
 Her champion stout, and for to ayde his  
 frend,  
 Againe his wonted angry weapon prov'd:  
 But all in vaine: for he has redd his end  
 In that bright shield, and all his forces  
 spend  
 Them selves in vaine: for since that glaun-  
 cing sight,  
 He hath no poure to hurt, nor to defend;  
 As where th' Almightyes lightning brond  
 does light,  
 It dimmes the dazed eyen, and daunts the  
 sences quight.

## XXII

Whom when the Prince, to batteill new  
 adrest  
 And threatning high his dreadfull stroke,  
 did see,  
 His sparkling blade about his head he blest,  
 And smote off quite his right leg by the  
 knee,  
 That downe he tombled; as an aged tree,  
 High growing on the top of rocky clift,  
 Whose hartstrings with keene steele nigh  
 hewen be;

The mightie trunck halfe rent, with ragged  
 rift  
 Doth roll adowne the rocks, and fall with  
 fearefull drift.

## XXIII

Or as a castle, reared high and round,  
 By subtile engins and malicious slight  
 Is undermined from the lowest ground,  
 And her foundation forst, and feebled  
 quight,  
 At last downe falles, and with her heaped  
 hight  
 Her hastie ruine does more heaveie make,  
 And yields it selfe unto the victours might;  
 Such was this gyaunts fall, that seemd to  
 shake  
 The stedfast globe of earth, as it for feare  
 did quake.

## XXIV

The knight then, lightly leaping to the pray,  
 With mortall steele him smot againe so  
 sore,  
 That headlesse his unweldy bodie lay,  
 All wallowd in his owne fowle bloody gore,  
 Which flowed from his wounds in wondrous  
 store.  
 But soone as breath out of his brest did pas,  
 That huge great body, which the gyaunt  
 bore,  
 Was vanisht quite, and of that monstrous  
 mas  
 Was nothing left, but like an emptie blader  
 was.

## XXV

Whose grievous fall when false Duessa  
 spyde,  
 Her golden cup she cast unto the ground,  
 And crowned mitre rudely threw asyde;  
 Such percing grieffe her stubborne hart did  
 womd,  
 That she could not endure that dolefull  
 stound,  
 But leaving all behind her, fled away:  
 The light-foot squire her quickly turnd  
 around,  
 And by hard meanes enforcing her to stay,  
 So brought unto his lord, as his deserved  
 pray.

## XXVI

The roiall virgin, which beheld from farre,  
 In pensive plight and sad perplexitie,



The whole atchievement of this doubtfull  
warre,  
Came running fast to greet his victorie,  
With sober gladnesse and myld modestie,  
And with sweet joyous cheare him thus be-  
spake:

‘Fayre branch of noblesse, flowre of cheval-  
rie,  
That with your worth the world amazed  
make,  
How shall I quite the paynes, ye suffer for  
my sake ?

## XXVII

‘And you, fresh budd of vertue springing  
fast,  
Whom these sad eyes saw nigh unto deaths  
dore,

What hath poore virgin for such perill past  
Wherewith you to reward ? Accept there-  
fore

My simple selfe, and service evermore:  
And He that high does sit, and all things  
see

With equall eye, their merites to restore,  
Behold what ye this day have done for mee,  
And what I cannot quite, requite with  
usuree.

## XXVIII

‘But sith the heavens, and your faire  
handeling,  
Have made you master of the field this day,  
Your fortune maister eke with governing,  
And well begonne end all so well, I pray.  
Ne let that wicked woman scape away;  
For she it is, that did my lord bethrall,  
My dearest lord, and deepe in dongeon lay,  
Where he his better dayes hath wasted all.  
O heare, how piteous he to you for ayd  
does call.’

## XXIX

Forthwith he gave in charge unto his squire,  
That scarlot whore to keepeen carefully;  
Whyles he himselfe with greedie great  
desyre

Into the castle entred forcibly;  
Where living creature none he did espye.  
Then gan he lowdly through the house to  
call:

But no man car’d to answer to his crye.  
There raignd a solemne silence over all,  
Nor voice was heard, nor wight was seene  
in bowre or hall.

## XXX

At last, with creeping crooked pace forth  
came

An old old man, with beard as white as  
snow,

That on a staffe his feeble steps did frame,  
And guyde his wearie gate both too and  
fro;

For his eye sight him fayled long ygo:  
And on his arme a bounch of keyes he bore,  
The which unused rust did overgrow:  
Those were the keyes of every inner dore,  
But he could not them use, but kept them  
still in store.

## XXXI

But very uncouth sight was to behold,  
How he did fashion his untoward pace,  
For as he forward moovd his footing old,  
So backward still was turnd his wrinckled  
face,

Unlike to men, who ever as they trace,  
Both feet and face one way are wont to  
lead.

This was the auncient keeper of that place,  
And foster father of the gyaunt dead;  
His name Ignaro did his nature right  
aread.

## XXXII

His reverend heares and holy gravitee  
The knight much honord, as beseemed  
well,

And gently askt, where all the people bee,  
Which in that stately building wont to  
dwell:

Who answerd him full soft, *He could not  
tell.*

Againe he askt, where that same knight  
was layd,

Whom great Orgoglio with his puissance  
fell

Had made his caytive thrall: againe he  
sayde,

*He could not tell*: ne ever other answer  
made.

## XXXIII

Then asked he, which way he in might  
pas:

*He could not tell*, againe he answered.

Thereat the courteous knight displeased  
was,

And said: ‘Old syre, it seemes thou hast  
not red

How ill it fits with that same silver hed,  
In vaine to mocke, or mockt in vaine to bee:  
But if thou be, as thou art pourtrahed  
With natures pen, in ages grave degree,  
Aread in graver wise what I demaund of thee.'

## XXXIV

His answer likewise was, *He could not tell.*  
Whose sencelesse speach and doted ignorance

When as the noble Prince had marked well,  
He ghest his nature by his countenance,  
And calmd his wrath with goodly temperance.

Then to him stepping, from his arne did reach

Those keyes, and made himselfe free entrance.

Each dore he opened without any breach;  
There was no barre to stop, nor foe him to empeach.

## XXXV

There all within full rich arayd he found,  
With royall arras and resplendent gold,  
And did with store of every thing abound,  
That greatest princes presence might behold.  
But all the floore (too filthy to be told)  
With blood of guiltlesse babes, and innocents trew,

Which there were slaine, as sheepe out of the fold,

Defiled was, that dreadfull was to vew,  
And sacred ashes over it was strowed new.

## XXXVI

And there beside of marble stone was built  
An altare, carv'd with cunning ymagery,  
On which trew Christians blood was often spilt,

And holy martyres often doen to dye,  
With cruell malice and strong tyranny:  
Whose blessed sprites from underneath the stone

To God for vengeance cryde continually,  
And with great grieve were often heard to groine,

That hardest heart would bleede to heare their piteous mone.

## XXXVII

Through every rowme he sought, and everie bowr,

But no where could he find that wofull thrall:

At last he came unto an yron doore,  
That fast was lockt, but key found not at all

Emongst that bounch to open it withall;  
But in the same a little grate was pight,  
Through which he sent his voyce, and lowd did call

With all his powre, to weet if living wight  
Were housed therewithin, whom he enlargen might.

## XXXVIII

Therewith an hollow, dreary, murmuring voyce

These pitteous plaintes and dolours did resound:

'O who is that, which bringes me happy choyce

Of death, that here lye dying every stound,  
Yet live perforce in balefull darkenesse bound?

For now three moones have changed thrice their hew,

And have beene thrice hid underneath the ground,

Since I the heavens chearefull face did vew.

O welcome, thou, that doest of death bring tydings trew!'

## XXXIX

Which when that champion heard, with percing point

Of pitty deare his hart was thrilled sore,  
And trembling horror ran through every joynt,

For ruth of gentle knight so fowle forlore:  
Which shaking off, he rent that yron dore,

With furious force and indignation fell;  
Where entred in, his foot could find no flore,

But all a deepe descent, as darke as hell,  
That breathed ever forth a filthie banefull smell.

## XL

But nether darkenesse fowle, nor filthy bands,

Nor noyous smell his purpose could withhold,

(Entire affection hateth nicer hands)

But that with constant zeale, and corage bold,

After long paines and labors manifold,

He found the meanes that prisoner up to  
reare;  
Whose feeble thighes, unhable to uphold  
His pined corse, him scarse to light could  
beare,  
A ruefull speetaele of death and ghastly  
dreere.

## XLI

His sad dull eies, deepe sunck in hollow  
pits,  
Could not endure th' unwonted sunne to  
view;  
His bare thin cheekes for want of better  
bits,  
And empty sides deceived of their dew,  
Could make a stony hart his hap to rew;  
His rawbone armes, whose mighty brawned  
bowrs  
Were wont to rive steele plates, and hel-  
mets hew,  
Were elene consum'd, and all his vitall  
powres  
Decayd, and al his flesh shronk up like  
withered flowres.

## XLII

Whome when his lady saw, to him she ran  
With hasty joy: to see him made her glad,  
And sad to view his visage pale and wan,  
Who earst in flowres of freshest youth was  
elad.  
Tho, when her well of teares she wasted  
had,  
She said: 'Ah, dearest lord! what evill  
starre  
On you hath frownd, and pourd his influ-  
ence bad,  
That of your selfe ye thus berobbed arre,  
And this misseeming hew your manly looks  
doth marre?

## XLIII

'But welcome now, my lord, in wele or  
woe,  
Whose presenee I have laekt too long a  
day;  
And fye on Fortune, mine avowed foe,  
Whose wrathful wreakes them selves doe  
now alay,  
And for these wronges shall treble penaunce  
pay  
Of treble good: good growes of evils priefe.'  
The chearelesse man, whom sorow did  
dismay,

Had no delight to treaten of his grieve;  
His long endured famine needed more re-  
liefe.

## XLIV

'Faire lady,' then said that victorious  
knight,  
'The things, that grievous were to doe, or  
beare,  
Them to renew, I wote, breeds no delight;  
Best musicke breeds dislike in loathing  
eare:  
But th' only good, that growes of passed  
feare,  
Is to be wise, and ware of like agein.  
This daies ensample hath this lesson deare  
Deepe written in my heart with yrou  
pen,  
That blisse may not abide in state of mor-  
tall men.

## XLV

'Heneeforth, sir knight, take to you wonted  
strength,  
And maister these mishaps with patient  
might:  
Loe wher your foe lies streteht in monstrous  
length,  
And loe that wicked woman in your sight,  
The roote of all your eare and wretched  
plight,  
Now in your powre, to let her live, or die.'  
'To doe her die,' quoth Una, 'were de-  
spight,  
And shame t' avenge so weake an enemy;  
But spoile her of her searlot robe, and let  
her fly.'

## XLVI

So, as she bad, that witch they disaraid,  
And robd of roiall robes, and purple pall,  
And ornaments that richly were displaid;  
Ne spared they to strip her naked all.  
Then, when they had despoyle'd her tire and  
call,  
Such as she was, their eies might her be-  
hold,  
That her misshaped parts did them appall,  
A loathly, wrinkled hag, ill favoured, old,  
Whose seeret filth good manners biddeth  
not be told.

## XLVII

Her crafty head was altogether bald,  
And, as in hate of honorable eld,



Was overgrowne with scurfe and filthy scald;  
Her teeth out of her rotten gummies were  
feld,

And her sowre breath abhominably smeld;  
Her dried dug, lyke bladders lacking wind,  
Hong downe, and filthy matter from them  
weld;

Her wrizled skin, as rough as maple rind,  
So scabby was, that would have loathd all  
womankind.

## XLVIII

Her neather parts, the shame of all her  
kind,

My chaster Muse for shame doth blush to  
write:

But at her rompe she growing had behind  
A foxes taile, with dong all fowly dight;  
And eke her feete most monstrous were in  
sight;

For one of them was like an eagles claw,  
With griping talaunts armd to greedy fight,  
The other like a beares uneven paw:  
More ugly shape yet never living creature  
saw.

## XLIX

Which when the knights beheld, amazd  
they were,

And wondred at so fowle deformed wight.  
'Such then,' said Una, 'as she seemeth here,  
Such is the face of Falshood, such the sight  
Of fowle Duessa, when her borrowed light  
Is laid away, and counterfesaunce knowne.'  
Thus when they had the witch disrobed  
quight,

And all her filthy feature open showne,  
They let her goe at will, and wander waies  
unknowne.

## L

Shee, flying fast from heavens hated face,  
And from the world that her discovered  
wide,

Fled to the wastfull wildernesses apace,  
From living eies her open shame to hide,  
And lurkt in rocks and caves, long un-  
espide.

But that faire crew of knights, and Una  
faire,

Did in that castle afterwards abide,  
To rest them selves, and weary powres re-  
paire;

Where store they fownd of al that dainty  
was and rare.

## CANTO IX

His loves and lignage Arthure tella :  
The knights knitt friendly bands :  
Sir Trevisan flies from Despeyre,  
Whom Redcrosse Knight withstands.

## I

O GOODLY golden chayne ! wherewith yfere  
The vertues linked are in lovely wize,  
And noble mindes of yore allyed were,  
In brave poursuitt of chevalrous emprise,  
That none did others safety despize,  
Nor aid envy to him, in need that stands,  
But friendly each did others praise devise  
How to advaunce with favourable hands,  
As this good Prince redeemd the Red-  
crosse Knight from bands.

## II

Who when their powres, empayrd through  
labor long,  
With dew repast they had recured well,  
And that weake captive wight now waxed  
strong,  
Them list no lenger there at leasure dwell,  
But forward fare, as their adventures fell:  
But ere they parted, Una faire besought  
That straunger knight his name and nation  
tell;  
Least so great good, as he for her had  
wrought,  
Should die unknown, and buried be in  
thankles thought.

## III

'Faire virgin,' said the Prince, 'yee me  
require  
A thing without the compas of my witt:  
For both the liguage and the certein sire,  
From which I sprong, from mee are hidden  
yitt.

For all so soone as life did me admitt  
Into this world, and shewed heavens light,  
From mothers pap I taken was unfitt,  
And streight deliver'd to a Fary knight,  
To be upbrought in gentle thewes and mar-  
tiall might.

## IV

'Unto old Timon he me brought bylive,  
Old Timon, who in youthly yeares hath  
beene

In warlike feates th' expertest man alive,  
And is the wisest now on earth I weene:  
His dwelling is low in a valley greene,

Under the foot of Rauran mossy hore,  
From whence the river Dee, as silver cleene,  
His tomling billowes rolls with gentle rore:  
There all my daies he trained mee up in  
vertuous lore.

## V

'Thether the great magicien Merlin came,  
As was his use, oftentimes to visit me;  
For he had charge my discipline to frame,  
And tutors nouriture to oversee.  
Him oft and oft I askt in privy,  
Of what loines and what lignage I did  
spring.

Whose answer bad me still assured be,  
That I was sonne and heire unto a king,  
As time in her just term the truth to light  
should bring.'

## VI

'Well worthy impe,' said then the lady gent,  
'And pupill fitt for such a tutors hand!  
But what adventure, or what high intent,  
Hath brought you hether into Fary Land,  
Aread, Prince Arthure, crowne of martiall  
band?'

'Full hard it is,' quoth he, 'to read aright  
The course of heavenly cause, or under-  
stand

The secret meaning of th' Eternall Might,  
That rules mens waies, and rules the  
thoughts of living wight.

## VII

'For whether He through fatal deepe fore-  
sight

Me hither sent, for cause to me unghost,  
Or that fresh bleeding wound, which day  
and night

Whilome doth rangle in my riven brest,  
With forced fury following his behest,  
Me hether brought by wayes yet never  
found,

You to have helpt I hold my selfe yet  
blest.'

'Ah! courteous knight,' quoth she, 'what  
secret wound

Could ever find to grieve the gentlest hart  
on ground?'

## VIII

'Deare dame,' quoth he, 'you sleeping  
sparkes awake,

Which, troubled once, into huge flames will  
grow,

Ne ever will their fervent fury slake,  
Till living moysture into smoke do flow,  
And wasted life doe lye in ashes low.  
Yet sithens silence lesseneth not my fire,  
But, told, it flames, and, hidden, it does  
glow,

I will revele what ye so much desire:  
Ah Love! lay down thy bow, the whiles I  
may respire.

## IX

'It was in freshest flowre of youthly  
yeares,

When corage first does creepe in manly  
chest;

Then first the cole of kindly heat appeares,  
To kindle love in every living brest:

But me had warnd old Timons wise behest,  
Those creeping flames by reason to subdew,  
Before their rage grew to so great unrest,  
As miserable lovers use to rew,  
Which still wex old in woe, whiles wo sti'  
wexeth new.

## X

'That ydle name of love, and lovers life,  
As losse of time, and vertues enemy,  
I ever scornd, and joyd to stirre up strife  
In midst of their mournfull tragedy,  
Ay wont to laugh, when them I heard to cry,  
And blow the fire, which them to ashes  
brent:

Their god himselfe, grievd at my libertie,  
Shott many a dart at me with fiers intent,  
But I them warded all with wary govern-  
ment.

## XI

'But all in vaine: no fort can be so strong,  
Ne fleshly brest can armed be so sownd,  
But will at last be wonne with battrie long,  
Or unawares at disadvantage fownd:

Nothing is sure that growes on earthly  
grownd:

And who most trustes in arme of fleshly  
might,

And boasts, in beauties chaine not to be  
bownd,

Doth soonest fall in disaventrous fight,  
And yeeldes his caytive neck to victours  
most despight.

## XII

'Ensample make of him your haplesse joy,  
And of my selfe now mated, as ye see;

Whose prouder vaunt that proud avenging  
boy  
Did soone pluek downe, and curbd my lib-  
ertee.

For on a day, prickt forth with jollitee  
(Of looser life, and heat of hardiment,  
Raunging the forest wide on courser free,  
The fields, the floods, the heavens, with one  
eonsent,  
Did seeme to laugh on me, and favour  
mine intent.

## XIII

‘Forwearied with my sportes, I did alight  
From loftie steed, and downe to sleepe me  
layd;  
The verdant gras my couch did goodly  
dight,  
And pillow was my helmet fayre displayd:  
Whiles every sence the humour sweet en-  
bayd,  
And slombring soft my hart did steale  
away,  
Me seemed, by my side a royall mayd  
Her daintie limbes full softly down did  
lay:  
So fayre a creature yet saw never sunny  
day.

## XIV

‘Most goodly glee and lovely blandishment  
She to me made, and badd me love her  
deare;  
For dearely sure her love was to me bent,  
As, when just time expired, should appeare.  
But whether dreames delude, or true it  
were,  
Was never hart so ravisht with delight,  
Ne living man like wordes did ever heare,  
As she to me delivered all that night;  
And at her parting said, she Queene of  
Faries hight.

## XV

‘When I awoke, and found her place de-  
voyd,  
And nought but pressed gras where she had  
lyen,  
I sorrowed all so much as earst I joyd,  
And washed all her place with watry eyen.  
From that day forth I lov’d that faee di-  
vyne;  
From that day forth I cast in earefull  
mynd,  
To seeke her out with labor and long tyne,

And never vow to rest, till her I fynd:  
Nyne monethes I seek in vain, yet ni’ll  
that vow unbynd.’

## XVI

Thus as he spake, his visage waxed pale,  
And chaunge of hew great passion did be-  
wray;  
Yett still he strove to eloke his inward bale,  
And hide the smoke that did his fire display;  
Till gentle Una thus to him gan say:  
‘O happy Queene of Faries, that hast  
fownd,  
Mongst many, one that with his prowess  
may  
Defend thine honour, and thy foes con-  
fownd!  
True loves are often sown, but seldom  
grow on grownd.’

## XVII

‘Thine, O then,’ said the gentle Redcrosse  
Knight,  
‘Next to that ladies love, shalbe the place,  
O fayrest virgin, full of heavenly light,  
Whose wondrous faith, exceeding earthly  
raee,  
Was firmest fixt in myne extremest case.  
And you, my lord, the patrone of my life,  
Of that great Queene may well gaine  
worthie grace:  
For onely worthie yon through prowes  
priefe,  
Yf living man mote worthie be, to be her  
liefe.’

## XVIII

So diversly discoursing of their loves,  
The golden sunne his glistring head gan  
shew,  
And sad remembraunce now the Prince  
amoves  
With fresh desire his voyage to pursew:  
Als Una earnd her travaill to renew.  
Then those two knights, fast frendship for  
to bynd,  
And love establish each to other trew,  
Gave goodly gifts, the signes of gratefull  
mynd,  
And eke, as pledges firme, right hands to-  
gether joynd.

## XIX

Prince Arthur gave a boxe of diamond sure,  
Embowd with gold and gorgeous ornament,



Wherein were closd few drops of liquor  
pure,  
Of wondrous worth, and vertue excellent,  
That any wound could heale incontinent:  
Which to requite, the Redcrosse Knight  
him gave

A booke, wherein his Saviours Testament  
Was writt with golden letters rich and  
brave;

A worke of wondrous grace, and hable  
soules to save.

## XX

Thus beene they parted, Arthur on his way  
To seeke his love, and th' other for to fight  
With Unaes foe, that all her realme did  
pray.

But she, now weighing the decayed plight  
And shrunkn synewes of her chosen  
knight,

Would not a while her forward course pur-  
sew,

Ne bring him forth in face of dreadfull  
fight,

Till he recovered had his former hew:  
For him to be yet weake and wearie well  
she knew.

## XXI

So as they traveld, lo! they gan espy  
An armed knight towards them gallop  
fast,

That seemed from some feared foe to fly,  
Or other griesly thing, that him aghast.  
Still as he fledd, his eye was backward  
cast,

As if his feare still followed him behynd;  
Als flew his steed, as he his bandes had  
brast,

And with his winged heeles did tread the  
wynd,

As he had beene a fole of Pegasus his kynd.

## XXII

Nigh as he drew, they might perceive his  
head

To bee unarmd, and curld uncombed heares  
Upstaring stiffe, dismaid with uncouth  
dread;

Nor drop of blood in all his face appeares,  
Nor life in limbe: and to increase his  
feares,

In fowle reproch of knighthoodes fayre  
degree,

About his neck an hempen rope he weares,

That with his glistring armes does ill  
agree;

But he of rope, or armes, has now no  
memoree.

## XXIII

The Redcrosse Knight toward him crossed  
fast,

To weet what mister wight was so dis-  
mayd:

There him he findes all sencelesse and  
aghash,

That of him selfe he seemd to be afayd;  
Whom hardly he from flying forward  
stayd,

Till he these wordes to him deliver might:  
'Sir knight, aread who hath ye thus arayd,  
And eke from whom make ye this hasty  
flight?

For never knight I saw in such misseeming  
plight.'

## XXIV

He answerd nought at all, but adding new  
Feare to his first amazment, staring wyde  
With stony eyes and hartlesse hollow hew,  
Astonisht stood, as one that had aspyde  
Infernall furies, with their chaines untyde.  
Him yett againe, and yett againe bespake  
The gentle knight; who nought to him re-  
plyde,

But, trembling every joynt, did inly quake,  
And foltring tougue at last these words  
seemd forth to shake:

## XXV

'For Gods deare love, sir knight, doe me  
not stay;

For loe! he comes, he comes fast after mee!'  
Eft looking back, would faine have runne  
away;

But he him forst to stay, and tellen free  
The secrete cause of his perplexitie:  
Yett nathe more by his bold hartie speach  
Could his blood frozen hart emboldened  
bee,

But through his boldnes rather feare did  
reach;

Yett, forst, at last he made through silence  
sudden breach.

## XXVI

'And am I now in safetie sure,' quoth he,  
'From hym that would have forced me to  
dye?

And is the point of death now turnd fro mee,  
That I may tell this haplesse history ?  
'Feare nought,' quoth he, 'no daunger now  
is nye.'

'Then shall I you recount a ruefull caee,'  
Said he, 'the which with this unlucky eye  
I late beheld; and had not greater grace  
Me reft from it, had bene partaker of the  
place.'

## XXVII

'I lately chaunst (would I had never  
chaunst !)

With a fayre knight to keepen companee,  
Sir Terwin hight, that well himselfe ad-  
vaunst

In all affayres, and was both bold and free,  
But not so happy as mote happy bee:  
He lov'd, as was his lot, a lady gent,  
That him againe lov'd in the least degree:  
For she was proud, and of too high intent,  
And joyd to see her lover languish and  
lament.

## XXVIII

'From whom retourning sad and comfort-  
lesse,

As on the way together we did fare,  
We met that villen, (God from him me  
blesse !)

That cursed wight, from whom I seapt  
whyleare,

A man of hell, that calls himselfe Despayre:  
Who first us greets, and after fayre areedes  
Of tydinges straunge, and of adventures  
rare:

So ereeping close, as snake in hidden weedes,  
Inquireth of our states, and of our knightly  
deedes.

## XXIX

'Which when he knew, and felt our feeble  
harts

Emboist with bale, and bitter byting griefe,  
Which love had lannehed with his deadly  
darts,

With wounding words, and termes of foule  
reprieve,

He pluckt from us all hope of dew reliefe,  
That earst us held in love of lingring life:  
Then hopelesse hartlesse, gan the cunning  
thiefe

Perswade us dye, to stint all further strife:  
To me he lent this rope, to him a rusty  
knife.

## XXX

'With which sad instrument of hasty death,  
That wofull lover, loathing lenger light,  
A wyde way made to let forth living breath.  
But I, more fearefull or more lucky wight,  
Dismayd with that deformed dismall sight,  
Fledd fast away, halfe dead with dying  
feare;

Ne yet assur'd of life by you, sir knight,  
Whose like infirmity like chaunce may  
beare:

But God you never let his charmed speeches  
heare.'

## XXXI

'How may a man,' said he, 'with idle speach  
Be wonne to spoyle the castle of his health?'

'I wote,' quoth he, 'whom tryall late did  
teach,

That like would not for all this worlde's  
wealth:

His subtile tong, like dropping honny,  
mealt'h

Into the heart, and searcheth every vaine,  
That ere one be aware, by secret stealth

His powre is reft, and weaknes doth re-  
maine.

O never, sir, desire to try his guilefull  
traîne.'

## XXXII

'Certes,' sayd he, 'hence shall I never rest,  
Till I that treachours art have heard and  
tryde;

And you, sir knight, whose name mote I  
request,

Of grace do me unto his cabin guyde.'

'I that hight Trevisan,' quoth he, 'will  
ryde

Against my liking baeke, to doe you grace:  
But nor for gold nor glee will I abyde

By you, when ye arrive in that same place;  
For lever had I die, then see his deadly  
face.'

## XXXIII

Ere long they come, where that same wickied  
wight

His dwelling has, low in an hollow cave,  
Far underneath a eraggy clift ypight,

Darke, dolefull, dreary, like a greedy grave,  
That still for carrion carcases doth crave:

On top whereof ay dwelt the ghastly owle,  
Shrieking his balefull note, which ever  
drave

Far from that haunt all other chearefull  
fowle;  
And all about it wandring ghostes did wayle  
and howle.

## XXXIV

And all about old stockes and stubs of trees,  
Whereon nor fruite nor leafe was ever  
seene,

Did hang upon the ragged rocky knees;  
On which had many wretches hanged  
beene,

Whose carcases were scattred on the  
greene,

And throwne about the cliffs. Arrived there,  
That bare-head knight, for dread and  
dolefull teene,

Would faine have fled, ne durst approchen  
neare,

But th' other forst him staye, and com-  
forted in feare.

## XXXV

That darkesome cave they enter, where they  
find

That cursed man, low sitting on the ground,  
Musing full sadly in his sullein mind:

His griesie lockes, long growen and un-  
bound,

Disordred hong about his shoulders round,  
And hid his face; through which his hol-  
low eyne

Lookt deadly dull, and stared as astound;  
His raw-bone cheekes, through penurie and  
pine,

Were shronke into his jawes, as he did  
never dyne.

## XXXVI

His garment nought but many ragged  
clouts,

With thornes together pind and patched  
was,

The which his naked sides he wrapt abouts;  
And him beside there lay upon the gras  
A dreary corse, whose life away did pas,  
All wallowd in his own yet luke-warme blood,  
That from his wound yet welled fresh, alas!  
In which a rusty knife fast fixed stood,  
And made an open passage for the gushing  
flood.

## XXXVII

Which piteous spectacle, approving trew  
The wofull tale that Trevisan had told,

When as the gentle Rederosse Knight did  
vew,

With fire zeale he burnt in courage bold,  
Him to avenge, before his blood were cold;  
And to the villain sayd: 'Thou damned  
wight,

The authour of this fact we here behold,  
What justice can but judge against thee  
right,

With thine owne blood to price his blood,  
here shed in sight?'

## XXXVIII

'What franticke fit,' quoth he, 'hath thus  
distraught

Thee, foolish man, so rash a doome to give?  
What justice ever other judgement taught,  
But he should dye, who merites not to  
live?

None els to death this raan despayring  
drive,

But his owne guiltie mind deserving death.  
Is then unjust to each his dew to give?

Or let him dye, that loatheth living breath?  
Or let him die at ease, that liveth here un-  
eath?

## XXXIX

'Who travailes by the wearie wandring  
way,

To come unto his wished home in haste,  
And meetes a flood, that doth his passage  
stay,

Is not great grace to helpe him over past,  
Or free his feet, that in the myre sticke  
fast?

Most envious man, that grieves at neigh-  
bours good,

And fond, that joyest in the woe thou hast!  
Why wilt not let him passe, that long hath  
stood

Upon the bancke, yet wilt thy selfe not pas  
the flood?

## XL

'He there does now enjoy eternall rest  
And happy ease, which thou doest want and  
crave,

And further from it daily wanderest:  
What if some little payne the passage have,  
That makes frayle flesh to feare the bitter  
wave?

Is not short payne well borne, that bringes  
long ease,

And layes the soule to sleepe in quiet grave?



Sleepe after toyle, port after stormie seas,  
Ease after warre, death after life does  
greatly please.'

## XLI

The knight much wondred at his suddeine  
wit,

And sayd: 'The terme of life is limited,  
Ne may a man prolong, nor shorten it:  
The souldier may not move from watchfull  
sted,

Nor leave his stand, untill his eaptaine bed.  
'Who life did limit by almightie doome,'  
Quoth he, 'knowes best the termes estab-  
lished;

And he that points the centonell his roome,  
Doth license him depart at sound of morn-  
ing droome.

## XLII

'Is not His deed, what ever thing is donne  
In heaven and earth? Did not He all  
create,

To die againe? All ends, that was begonne.  
Their times in His eternall booke of fate  
Are written sure, and have their eertain date.  
Who then can strive with strong necessitie,  
That holds the world in his still chaunging  
state,

Or shunne the death ordaynd by destinie?  
When houre of death is come, let none aske  
whence, nor why.

## XLIII

'The lenger life, I wote, the greater sin,  
The greater sin, the greater punishment:  
All those great battels, which thou boasts  
to win,

Through strife, and blood-shed, and avenge-  
ment,

Now praysd, hereafter deare thou shalt re-  
pent:

For life must life, and blood must blood re-  
pay.

Is not enough thy evill life forespent?  
For he that once hath missed the right way,  
The further he doth goe, the further he  
doth stray.

## XLIV

'Then doe no further goe, no further stray,  
But here ly downe, and to thy rest betake,  
Th' ill to prevent, that life ensewen may.  
For what hath life, that may it loved make,  
And gives not rather cause it to forsake?

Feare, sicknesse, age, losse, labour, sorrow,  
strife,

Payne, hunger, cold, that makes the hart to  
quake;

And ever fickle Fortune rageth rife;

All which, and thousands mo, do make a  
loathsome life.

## XLV

'Thou, wretched man, of death hast great-  
est need,

If in true ballaunee thou wilt weigh thy state:  
For never knight, that dared warlike deed,  
More luckless dissaventures did amate:

Witnes the dungeon deepe, wherein of late  
Thy life shntt up for death so oft did call;  
And though good lucke prolonged bath thy  
date,

Yet death then would the like mishaps fore-  
stall,

Into the which heerafter thou maist happen  
fall.

## XLVI

'Why then doest thou, O man of sin, desire  
To draw thy dayes forth to their last de-  
gree?

Is not the measure of thy sinfull hire  
High heaped up with huge iniquitee,  
Against the day of wrath, to burden thee?  
Is not enough, that to this lady mild  
Thou falsed hast thy faith with perjuree,  
And sold thy selfe to serve Duessa vild,  
With whom in al abuse thou hast thy selfe  
defild?

## XLVII

'Is not He just, that all this doth behold  
From highest heven, and beares an equal  
eie?

Shall He thy sins up in His knowledge fold,  
And guilty be of thine impietie?

Is not His lawe, Let every sinner die:

Die shall all flesh? What then must  
needs be donne,

Is it not better to doe willinglie,

Then linger till the glas be all out rounne?  
Death is the end of woes: die soone, O  
Faries sonne.'

## XLVIII

The knight was much emmoved with his  
speech,

That as a sword poynt through his hart  
did perse,

And in his conscience made a secrete  
breach,  
Well knowing trew all that he did re-  
herse;

And to his fresh remembraunce did reverse  
The ugly vew of his deformed crimes,  
That all his manly powres it did disperse,  
As he were charmed with inchaunted rimes,  
That oftentimes he quakt, and fainted  
oftentimes.

## XLIX

In which amazement when the miscreaunt  
Perceived him to waver, weake and fraile,  
Whiles trembling horror did his conscience  
daunt,

And hellish anguish did his soule assaile,  
To drive him to despaire, and quite to  
quaile,

Hee shewed him, painted in a table plaine,  
The damned ghosts, that doe in torments  
waile,

And thousand feends, that doe them end-  
lesse paine

With fire and brimstone, which for ever  
shall remaine.

## L

The sight whereof so throughly him dis-  
maid,

That nought but death before his eies he  
saw,

And ever burning wrath before him laid,  
By righteous sentence of th' Almightyes  
law:

Then gan the villain him to overcraw,  
And brought unto him swords, ropes, poison,  
fire,

And all that might him to perdition draw;  
And bad him choose, what death he would  
desire:

For death was dew to him, that had pro-  
vokt Gods ire.

## LI

But whenas none of them he saw him take,  
He to him raught a dagger sharpe and  
keene,

And gave it him in hand: his hand did  
quake,

And tremble like a leafe of aspin greene,  
And troubled blood through his pale face  
was seene

To come and goe, with tidings from the  
heart,

As it a ronning messenger had beene.  
At last, resolv'd to worke his finall smart,  
He lifted up his hand, that backe againe  
did start.

## LII

Which whenas Una saw, through every  
vaine

The cruddled cold ran to her well of life,  
As in a swowne: but soone reliv'd againe,  
Out of his hand she snatcht the cursed  
knife,

And threw it to the ground, enraged rife,  
And to him said: 'Fie, fie, faint hearted  
knight!

What meanest thou by this reprochfull  
strife?

Is this the battaile, which thou vauntst to  
fight

With that fire-mouthed dragon, horrible  
and bright?

## LIII

'Come, come away, fraile, feeble, fleshly  
wight,

Ne let vaine words bewitch thy manly  
hart,

Ne delivish thoughts dismay thy constant  
spright.

In heavenly mercies hast thou not a part?  
Why shouldst thou then despeire, that  
chosen art?

Where justice growes, there grows eke  
greter grace,

The which doth quench the brond of hellish  
smart,

And that accurst hand-writing doth deface.  
Arise, sir knight, arise, and leave this  
cursed place.'

## LIV

So up he rose, and thence amounted streight.  
Which when the carle beheld, and saw his  
guest

Would safe depart, for all his subtile  
sleight,

He chose an halter from among the rest,  
And with it hong him selfe, unbid unblest.  
But death he could not worke himselfe  
thereby;

For thousand times he so him selfe had  
drest,

Yet nathelesse it could not doe him die,  
Till he should die his last, that is, eter-  
nally.

## CANTO X

Her faithfull knight faire Una brings  
To House of Holinesse,  
Where he is taught repentaunce, and  
The way to heavenly blesse.

## I

WHAT man is he, that boasts of fleshly  
might,  
And vaine assuraunce of mortality,  
Which, all so soone as it doth come to  
fight

Against spirituall foes, yields by and by,  
Or from the field most cowardly doth  
fly?

Ne let the man ascribe it to his skill,  
That thorough grace hath gained victory.  
If any strength we have, it is to ill,  
But all the good is Gods, both power and  
eke will.

## II

By that which lately hapned, Una saw  
That this her knight was feeble, and too  
faint;

And all his sinewes woxen weake and  
raw,

Through long enprisonment, and hard con-  
straint,

Which he endured in his late restraint,  
That yet he was unfitt for bloody fight:  
Therefore to cherish him with diets daint,  
She cast to bring him, where he chearen  
might,

Till he recovered had his late decayed  
pight.

## III

There was an auncient house not far away,  
Renownd throughout the world for sacred  
lore

And pure unspotted life: so well, they say,  
It governd was, and guided evermore,  
Through wisdom of a matrone grave and  
hore;

Whose onely joy was to relieve the needes  
Of wretched soules, and helpe the helpe-  
lesse pore:

All night she spent in bidding of her bedes,  
And all the day in doing good and godly  
deedes.

## IV

Dame Cælia men did her call, as thought  
From heaven to come, or thether to arise;

The mother of three daughters, well up-  
brought

In goodly thewes, and godly exercise:  
The eldest two, most sober, chaste, and wise,  
Fidelia and Speranza, virgins were,  
Though spousd, yet wanting wedlocks sol-  
emuize;

But faire Charissa to a lovely fere  
Was lincked, and by him had many pledges  
dere.

## V

Arrived there, the dore they find fast  
lockt;

For it was warely watched night and day,  
For feare of many foes: but when they  
knockt,

The porter opened unto them streight way.  
He was an aged syre, all hory gray,  
With lookes full lowly cast, and gate full  
slow,

Wont on a staffe his feeble steps to stay,  
Hight Humiltá. They passe in, stouping  
low;

For streight and narrow was the way which  
he did shew.

## VI

Each goodly thing is hardest to begin;  
But entred in, a spacious court they see,  
Both plaine and pleasaunt to be walked in,  
Where them does meete a francklin faire  
and free,

And entertaines with comely courteous  
glee:

His name was Zele, that him right well  
became;

For in his speaches and behaveour hee  
Did labour lively to expressé the same,  
And gladly did them guide, till to the hall  
they came.

## VII

There fayrely them receives a gentle squyre,  
Of myld demeanure and rare courtesee,  
Right cleanly clad in comely sad attyre;  
In word and deede that shewd great mod-  
estee,

And knew his good to all of each degree;  
Hight Reverence. He them with speaches  
meet

Does faire entreat; no courting nicetee,  
But simple trew, and eke unfained sweet,  
As might become a squyre so great persons  
to greet.



## VIII

And afterwarde them to his dame he  
leades,  
That aged dame, the lady of the place:  
Who all this while was busy at her beades:  
Which doen, she up arose with seemely  
grace,  
Aud toward them full matronely did pace.  
Where when that fairest Una she beheld,  
Whom well she knew to spring from  
hevenly race,  
Her heart with joy unwonted inly sweld,  
As feeling wondrous comfort in her weaker  
eld:

## IX

And her embracing, said: 'O happy earth,  
Whereon thy innocent feet doe ever tread,  
Most vertuous virgin, borne of hevenly  
berth,  
That to redeeme thy woefull parents head  
From tyrans rage, and ever-dying dread,  
Hast wandred through the world now long  
a day,  
Yett ceassest not thy weary soles to lead!  
What grace hath thee now hether brought  
this way?  
Or doen thy feeble feet unweeting hether  
stray?

## X

'Strange thing it is an errant knight to see  
Here in this place, or any other wight,  
That hether turnes his steps: so few there  
bee,  
That chose the narrow path, or seeke the  
right:  
All keepe the broad high way, and take de-  
light  
With many rather for to goe astray,  
And be partakers of their evill plight,  
Then with a few to walke the rightest way.  
O foolish men! why hast ye to your owne  
decay?'

## XI

'Thy selfe to see, and tyred limbes to rest,  
O matrone sage,' quoth she, 'I hether  
came,  
And this good knight his way with me ad-  
drest,  
Ledd with thy prayses and broad-blazed  
fame,  
'That up to heven is blowne.' The auncient  
dame

Him goodly greeted in her modest guyse,  
And enterteynd them both, as best became,  
With all the court'sies that she could de-  
vyse,  
Ne wanted ought, to shew her bounteous  
or wise.

## XII

Thus as they gan of sondrie thinges devise,  
Loe! two most goodly virgins came in place,  
Ylinked arme in arme in lovely wise;  
With countenance demure, and modest  
grace,  
They numbred even steps and equall pace:  
Of which the eldest, that Fidelia hight,  
Like sunny beames threw from her christall  
face,  
That could have dazd the rash beholders  
sight,  
And round about her head did shine like  
hevens light.

## XIII

She was araied all in lilly white,  
And in her right hand bore a cup of gold,  
With wine and water fild up to the hight,  
In which a serpent did himselfe enfold,  
That horroure made to all that did behold;  
But she no whitt did chaunge her eonstant  
mood:  
And in her other hand she fast did hold  
A booke that was both signd and seald with  
blood,  
Wherin darke things were writt, hard to  
be understood.

## XIV

Her younger sister, that Speranza hight,  
Was clad in blew, that her beseemed well:  
Not all so chearefull seemed she of sight,  
As was her sister; whether dread did dwell,  
Or anguish, in her hart, is hard to tell:  
Upon her arme a silver anchor lay,  
Whereon she leaned ever, as befell:  
And ever up to heven, as she did pray,  
Her stedfast eyes were bent, ne swarved  
other way.

## XV

They, seeing Una, towardes her gan wend,  
Who them encounters with like courtesee;  
Many kind speeches they betweene them  
spend,  
And greatly joy each other well to see:  
Then to the knight with shamefast modestie

They turne themselves, at Unaes meeke request,  
 And him salute with well beseeming glee;  
 Who faire them quites, as him beseemed best,  
 And goodly gan discourse of many a noble gest.

## XVI

Then Una thus: 'But she your sister deare,  
 The deare Charissa, where is she become?  
 Or wants she health, or busie is elsewhere?'  
 'Ah no,' said they, 'but forth she may not come:

For she of late is lightened of her wombe,  
 And hath encreast the world with one soune more,

That her to see should be but troublesome.'  
 'Indeed,' quoth she, 'that should her trouble sore;

But thank't be God, and her encrease so evermore.'

## XVII

Then saide the aged Cœlia: 'Deare dame,  
 And you, good sir, I wote that of youre toyle

And labors long, through which ye hether came,

Ye both forwearied be: therefore a while  
 I read you rest, and to your bowres re-coyle.'

Then called she a groome, that forth him ledd

Into a goodly lodge, and gan despoile  
 Of puissant armes, and laid in easie bedd:  
 His name was meeke Obedience rightfully aredd.

## XVIII

Now when their wearie limbes with kindly rest,

And bodies were refresht with dew repast,  
 Fayre Una gan Fidelia fayre request,  
 To have her knight into her schoolehous plaste,

That of her heavenly learning he might taste,

And heare the wisdom of her wordes divine.

She graunted, and that knight so much agraste,

That she him taught celestially discipline,  
 And opened his dull eyes, that light mote in them shine.

## XIX

And that her sacred Booke, with blood ywritt,

That none could reade, except she did them teach,

She unto him disclosed every whitt,  
 And heavenly documents thereout did preach,

That weaker witt of man could never reach,  
 Of God, of grace, of justice, of free will,  
 That wonder was to heare her goodly speach:

For she was hable with her wordes to kill,  
 And rayse againe to life the hart that she did thrill.

## XX

And when she list poure ont her larger spright,

She would commaund the hasty sunne to stay,

Or backward turne his course from hev'ns hight:

Sometimes great hostes of men she could dismay;

Dry-shod to passe, she parts the fouds in tway;

And eke huge mountaines from their native seat

She would commaund, themselves to beare away,

And throw in raging sea with roaring threat:  
 Almighty God her gave such powre and puisaunce great.

## XXI

The faithfull knight now grew in litle space,

By hearing her, and by her sisters lore,  
 To such perfection of all heavenly grace,

That wretched world he gan for to abhore,  
 And mortall life gan loath, as thing forelore,  
 Greevd with remembrance of his wicked wayes,

And prickt with anguish of his sinnes so sore,

That he desirde to end his wretched dayes:  
 So much the dart of sinfull guilt the soule dismayes.

## XXII

But wise Speranza gave him comfort sweet,  
 And taught him how to take assured hold  
 Upon her silver anchor, as was meet;  
 Els had his sinnes so great and manifold

Made him forget all that Fidelia told.  
In this distressed doubtfull agony,  
When him his dearest Una did behold,  
Disdeining life, desiring leave to dye,  
She found her selfe assayld with great perplexity:

## XXIII

And came to Cœlia to declare her smart;  
Who, well acquainted with that commune plight,  
Which sinfull horror workes in wounded hart,  
Her wisely comforted all that she might,  
With goodly counsell and advisement right;  
And straightway sent with carefull diligence,  
To fetch a leach, the which had great insight  
In that disease of grieved conscience,  
And well could cure the same: his name was Patience.

## XXIV

Who, comming to that sowle-diseased knight,  
Could hardly him intreat to tell his grief:  
Which knowne, and all that noyd his heaveie spright  
Well searcht, eftsoones he gan apply relief  
Of salves and med'cines, which had passing prief,  
And there to added wordes of wondrous might:  
By which to ease he him recured brief,  
And much aswag'd the passion of his plight,  
That he his paine endur'd, as seeming now more light.

## XXV

But yet the cause and root of all his ill,  
Inward corruption and infected sin,  
Not purg'd nor heald, behind remained still,  
And festring sore did ranckle yett within,  
Close creeping twixt the marow and the skin.  
Which to extirpe, he laid him privily  
Downe in a darksome lowly place far in,  
Whereas he meant his corrosives to apply,  
And with streight diet tame his stubborne malady.

## XXVI

In ashes and sackcloth he did array  
His daintie corse, proud humors to abate,

And dieted with fasting every day,  
The swelling of his woundes to mitigate,  
And made him pray both earely and eke late:

And ever as superfluous flesh did rott,  
Amendment readie still at hand did wayt,  
To pluck it out with pincers fyrie whott,  
That soone in him was lefte no one corrupted jott.

## XXVII

And bitter Penaunce, with an yron whip,  
Was wont him once to disple every day:  
And sharpe Remorse his hart did prick and nip,  
That drops of blood thence like a well did play:  
And sad Repentance used to embay  
His body in salt water smarting sore,  
The filthy blottes of sin to wash away.  
So in short space they did to health restore  
The man that would not live, but erst lay at deathes dore.

## XXVIII

In which his torment often was so great,  
That like a lyon he would cry and rore,  
And rend his flesh, and his owne synewes eat.  
His owne deare Una, hearing evermore  
His ruefull shriekes and gronings, often tore  
Her guiltlesse garments and her golden heare,  
For pittie of his payne and anguish sore;  
Yet all with patience wisely she did beare;  
For well she wist, his cryme could els be never cleare.

## XXIX

Whom, thus recover'd by wise Patience  
And trew Repentaunce, they to Una brought;  
Who, joyous of his cured conscience,  
Him dearely kist, and fayrely eke besought  
Himselfe to chearish, and consuming thought  
To put away out of his carefull brest.  
By this Charissa, late in child-bed brought,  
Was woxen strong, and left her fruitfull nest;  
To her fayre Una brought this unacquainted guest.



## XXX

She was a woman in her freshest age,  
Of wondrous beauty, and of bounty rare,  
With goodly grace and comely personage,  
That was on earth not easie to compare;  
Full of great love, but Cupids wanton snare  
As hell she hated, chaste in worke and will;  
Her necke and breasts were ever open bare,  
That ay thereof her babes might sucke their  
fill:

The rest was all in yellow robes arayed still.

## XXXI

A multitude of babes about her hong,  
Playing their sportes, that joyd her to be-  
hold;

Whom still she fed, whiles they were weak  
and young,

But thrust them forth still, as they waxed  
old:

And on her head she wore a tyre of gold,  
Adorn'd with gemmes and owches won-  
drous fayre,

Whose passing price uneath was to be told;  
And by her syde there sate a gentle payre  
Of turtle doves, she sitting in an yvory  
chayre.

## XXXII

The knight and Una, entring, fayre her  
greet,

And bid her joy of that her happy brood;  
Who them requites with court'sies seeming  
meet,

And entertaynes with friendly chearefull  
mood.

Then Una her besought, to be so good  
As in her vertuous rules to schoole her  
knight,

Now after all his torment well withstood,  
In that sad house of Penaunce, where his  
spright

Had past the paines of hell and long endur-  
ing night.

## XXXIII

She was right joyious of her just request,  
And taking by the hand that Faeries sonne,  
Gan him instruct in everie good behest,  
Of love, and righteousness, and well to  
dome,

And wrath and hatred warely to shonne,  
That drew on men Gods hatred and his  
wrath,

And many soules in dolours had fordonne:

In which when him she well instructed  
hath,  
From thence to heaven she teacheth him  
the ready path.

## XXXIV

Wherein his weaker wandring steps to  
guyde,

An auncient matrone she to her does call,  
Whose sober lookes her wisdom well  
descryde:

Her name was Mercy, well knowne over all  
To be both gratious and eke liberall:

To whom the carefull charge of him she  
gave,

To leade aright, that he should never fall  
In all his waies through this wide worldes  
wave,

That Mercy in the end his righteous soule  
might save.

## XXXV

The godly matrone by the hand him beares  
Forth from her presence, by a narrow way,  
Scattered with bushy thornes and ragged  
breares,

Which still before him she remov'd away,  
That nothing might his ready passage stay:  
And ever when his feet encombred were,

Or gan to shrink, or from the right to  
stray,

She held him fast, and firmly did upbeare,  
As carefull nurse her child from falling  
oft does reare.

## XXXVI

Eftsoones unto an holy hospitall,

That was foreby the way, she did him  
bring,

In which seven bead-men, that had vowed  
all

Their life to service of high heavens King,  
Did spend their daies in doing godly thing:

Their gates to all were open evermore,  
That by the wearie way were traveling,

And one sate wayting ever them before,  
To call in commers by, that needy were  
and pore.

## XXXVII

The first of them, that eldest was and best,  
Of all the house had charge and governe-  
ment,

As guardian and steward of the rest:

His office was to give entertainment

And lodging unto all that came and went:  
Not unto such, as could him feast againe,  
And double quite for that he on them spent,  
But such as want of harbour did constraîne:  
Those for Gods sake his dewty was to  
entertaine.

## XXXVIII

The second was as almner of the place:  
His office was, the hungry for to feed,  
And thristy give to drinke, a worke of grace:  
He feard not once him selfe to be in need,  
Ne car'd to hoord for those whom he did  
breede:

The grace of God he layd up still in store,  
Which as a stocke he left unto his seede;  
He had enough; what need him care for  
more?

And had he lesse, yet some he would give  
to the pore.

## XXXIX

The third had of their wardrobe custody,  
In which were not rich tyres, nor garments  
gay,

The plumes of pride, and winges of vanity,  
But clothes meet to keepe keene cold away,  
And naked nature seemely to aray;  
With which bare wretched wights he dayly  
clad,

The images of God in earthly clay;  
And if that no spare clothes to give he had,  
His owne cote he would cut, and it dis-  
tribute glad.

## XL

The fourth appointed by his office was,  
Poore prisoners to relieve with gracious ayd,  
And captives to redeeme with price of bras,  
From Turkes and Sarazins, which them had  
stayd;

And though they faulty were, yet well he  
wayd,

That God to us forgiveth every howre  
Much more then that, why they in bands  
were layd,

And He, that harrowd hell with heavie  
stowre,

The faulty soules from thence brought to  
his heavenly bowre.

## XLI

The fift had charge sick persons to attend,  
And comfort those. in point of death which  
lay;

For them most needeth comfort in the end,  
When sin, and hell, and death doe most  
dismay

The feeble soule departing hence away.

All is but lost, that living we bestow,

If not well ended at our dying day.

O man, have mind of that last bitter throw;

For as the tree does fall, so lyes it ever  
low.

## XLII

The sixt had charge of them now being  
dead,

In seemely sort their corsers to engrave,  
And deck with dainty flowres their brydall  
bed,

That to their heavenly spouse both sweet  
and brave

They might appeare, when he their soules  
shall save.

The wondrous workmanship of Gods owne  
mould,

Whose face He made, all beastes to feare,  
and gave

All in his hand, even dead we honour should.

Ah! dearest God me graunt, I dead be not  
defould.

## XLIII

The seventh, now after death and buriall  
done,

Had charge the tender orphans of the dead  
And wydowes ayd, least they should be un-  
done:

In face of judgement he their right would  
plead,

No ought the powre of mighty men did  
dread

In their defence, nor would for gold or fee  
Be wonne their rightfull causes downe to  
tread:

And when they stood in most necessitee,  
He did supply their want, and gave them  
ever free.

## XLIV

There when the Elfin knight arrived was,  
The first and chiefest of the seven, whose  
care

Was guests to welcome, towards him did  
pas:

Where seeing Mercie, that his steps upbare  
And alwaies led, to her with reverence rare  
He humbly louted in meeke lowlinesse,  
And seemely welcome for her did prepare:

For of their order she was patronesse,  
Albe Charissa were their chiefest founde-  
esse.

## XLV

There she awhile him stayes, him selfe to  
rest,  
That to the rest more hable he might bee:  
During which time, in every good behest  
And godly worke of almes and charitee  
Shee him instructed with great industree:  
Shortly therein so perfect he became,  
That, from the first unto the last degree,  
His mortall life he learned had to frame  
In holy righteousness, without rebuke or  
blame.

## XLVI

Thence forward by that painfull way they  
pas,  
Forth to an hill, that was both steepe and  
hy;  
On top whereof a sacred chappell was,  
And eke a litle hermitage thereby,  
Wherein an aged holy man did lie,  
That day and night said his devotion,  
Ne other worldly busines did apply:  
His name was Heavenly Contemplation;  
Of God and goodnes was his meditation.

## XLVII

Great grace that old man to him given had;  
For God he often saw from heavens hight,  
All were his earthly eien both blunt and  
bad,  
And through great age had lost their kindly  
sight,  
Yet wondrous quick and persaunt was his  
spright,  
As eagles eie, that can behold the sunne.  
That hill they scale with all their powre  
and might,  
That his fraile thighs, nigh weary and for-  
donne,  
Gan faile; but by her helpe the top at last  
he wonne.

## XLVIII

There they doe finde that godly aged sire,  
With snowy lockes adowne his shoulders  
shed,  
As hoary frost with spangles doth attire  
The mossy braunches of an oke halfe ded.  
Each bone might through his body well be  
red,

And every sinew seene, through his long  
fast:

For nought he car'd his carcas long unfed;  
His mind was full of spirituall repast,  
And pyn'd his flesh, to keepe his body low  
and chast.

## XLIX

Who, when these two approching he aspie,  
At their first presence grew agrieved sore,  
That forst him lay his heavenly thoughts  
aside;  
And had he not that dame respected more,  
Whom highly he did reverence and adore,  
He would not once have moved for the  
knight.  
They him saluted, standing far afore;  
Who, well them greeting, humbly did re-  
quight,  
And asked, to what end they clomb that  
tedious hight.

## L

'What end,' quoth she, 'should cause us  
take such paine,  
But that same end, which every living  
wight  
Should make his marke, high heaven to  
attaine?  
Is not from hence the way, that leadeth  
right  
To that most glorious house, that glistreth  
bright  
With burning starres and everliving fire,  
Whereof the keies are to thy hand beight  
By wise Fidelia? Shee doth thee require,  
To shew it to this knight, according his  
desire.'

## LI

'Thrise happy man,' said then the father  
grave,  
'Whose staggering steps thy steady hand  
doth lead,  
And shewes the way, his sinfull soule to  
save!  
Who better can the way to beaven aread  
Then thou thy selfe, that was both borne  
and bred  
In heavenly throne, where thousand angels  
shine?  
Thou dost the praiers of the righteous sead  
Present before the Majesty Divine,  
And His avenging wrath to clemeney in-  
eline.



## LII

'Yet, since thou bidst, thy pleasure shalbe  
donne.

Then come, thou man of earth, and see the  
way,

That never yet was seene of Faries sonne,  
That never leads the traveiler astray,  
But, after labors long and sad delay,  
Brings them to joyous rest and endlesse  
blis.

But first thou must a season fast and pray,  
Till from her bands the spright assoiled is,  
And have her strength recur'd from fraile  
infirmities.'

## LIII

That done, he leads him to the highest  
mount;

Such one, as that same mighty man of God,  
That blood-red billowes like a walled front  
On either side disparted with his rod,  
Till that his army dry-foot through them  
yod,

Dwelt forty daies upon; where writt in  
stone

With bloody letters by the hand of God,  
The bitter doome of death and balefull  
mone

He did receive, whiles flashing fire about  
him shone.

## LIV

Or like that sacred hill, whose head full  
hie,

Adorn'd with fruitfull olives all arownd,  
Is, as it were for endlesse memory  
Of that deare Lord, who oft thereon was  
fownd,

For ever with a flowring girlond crown'd:  
Or like that pleasaunt mount, that is for ay  
Through famous poets verse each where  
renownd,

On which the thrise three learned ladies  
play

Their hevenly notes, and make full many a  
lovely lay.

## LV

From thence, far off he unto him did shew  
A litle path, that was both steepe and long,  
Which to a goodly citty led his vew;

Whose wals and towres were builded high  
and strong

Of perle and precious stone, that earthly  
tong

Cannot describe, nor wit of man can tell;  
Too high a ditty for my simple song:  
The Citty of the Greate King hight it well,  
Wherein eternall peace and happinesse doth  
dwell.

## LVI

As he thereon stood gazing, he might see  
The blessed angels to and fro descend  
From highest heven, in gladsome companee,  
And with great joy into that citty wend,  
As commonly as frend does with his frend.  
Whereat he wondred much, and gan en-  
quere,

What stately building durst so high extend  
Her lofty towres unto the starry sphere,  
And what unknown nation there empeopled  
were.

## LVII

'Faire knight,' quoth he, 'Hierusalem that  
is,

The New Hierusalem, that God has built  
For those to dwell in, that are chosen his,  
His chosen people purg'd from sinful guilt,  
With pretious blood, which cruelly was  
spilt

On cursed tree, of that unspotted Lam,  
That for the sinnes of al the world was kilt:  
Now are they saints all in that citty sam,  
More dear unto their God, then younglings  
to their dam.'

## LVIII

'Till now,' said then the knight, 'I weened  
well,

That great Cleopolis, where I have beene,  
In which that fairest Fary Queene doth  
dwell,

The fairest citty was, that might be seene;  
And that bright towre all built of christall  
clene,

Panthea, seemd the brightest thing that  
was:

But now by prooffe all otherwise I weene;  
For this great citty that does far surpas,  
And this bright angels towre quite dims  
that towre of glas.'

## LIX

'Most trew,' then said the holy aged man;  
'Yet is Cleopolis, for earthly frame,  
The fairest peece that eie beholden can:  
And well besemes all knights of noble  
name,

That covett in th' immortall booke of fame  
To be eternized, that same to haunt,  
And doen their service to that soveraigne  
dame,  
That glory does to them for guerdon graunt:  
For she is heavenly borne, and heaven may  
justly vaunt.

## LX

'And thou, faire ymp, sprong out from  
English race,  
How ever now accompted Elfin sonne,  
Well worthy doest thy service for her grace,  
To aide a virgin desolate foredonne.  
But when thou famous victory hast wonne,  
And high emongst all knights hast hong thy  
shield,  
Thenceforth the suitt of earthly conquest  
shonne,  
And wash thy hands from guilt of bloody  
field:  
For blood can nought but sin, and wars but  
sorrows yield.

## LXI

'Then seek this path, that I to thee presage,  
Which after all to heaven shall thee send;  
Then peaceably thy painefull pilgrimage  
To yonder same Hierusalem doe bend,  
Where is for thee ordaind a blessed end:  
For thou, emongst those saints whom thou  
doest see,  
Shalt be a saint, and thine owne nations  
frend  
And patrone: thou *Saint George* shalt  
called bee,  
*Saint George* of mery *England*, the signe  
of victoree.'

## LXII

'Unworthy wretch,' quoth he, 'of so great  
grace,  
How dare I thinke such glory to attaine?'  
'These, that have it attaynd, were in like  
cace,'  
Quoth he, 'as wretched, and liv'd in like  
paine.'  
'But deeds of armes must I at last be faine  
And ladies love to leave, so dearely bought?'  
'What need of armes, where peace doth ay  
remaine,'  
Said he, 'and batailles none are to be  
fought?  
As for loose loves, they' are vaine, and  
vanish into nought.'

## LXIII

'O let me not,' quoth he, 'then turne againe  
Backe to the world, whose joyes so fruitlesse  
are,  
But let me heare for aie in peace remaine,  
Or streight way on that last long voiage  
fare,  
That nothing may my present hope empare.'  
'That may not be,' said he, 'ne maist thou  
yitt  
Forgoe that royal maides bequeathed care,  
Who did her cause into thy hand committ,  
Till from her cursed foe thou have her  
freely quitt.'

## LXIV

'Then shall I soone,' quoth he, 'so God me  
grace,  
Abett that virgins cause disconsolate,  
And shortly back returne unto this place,  
To walke this way in pilgrims poore estate.  
But now ahead, old father, why of late  
Didst thou behight me borne of English  
blood,  
Whom all a Faeries sonne doen nominate?'  
'That word shall I,' said he, 'avouchen  
good,  
Sith to thee is unknowne the cradle of thy  
brood.'

## LXV

'For well I wote, thou springst from ancient  
race  
Of Saxon kinges, that have with mightie  
hand  
And many bloody batailles fought in place  
High reard their royall throne in Britane  
land,  
And vanquisht them, unable to withstand:  
From thence a Faery thee unweeting reft,  
There as thou slepst in tender swadling  
band,  
And her base Elfin brood there for thee  
left:  
Such men do chaungelings call, so chaungd  
by Faeries theft.

## LXVI

'Thence she thee brought into this Faery  
lond,  
And in an heaped furrow did thee hyde;  
Where thee a ploughman all unweeting  
fond,  
As he his toylesome teme that way did  
guyde,

And brought thee up in ploughmans state  
to byde,  
Whereof Georgos he thee gave to name;  
Till prickt with courage, and thy forces  
pryde,  
To Fary court thou can'st to seeke for  
fame,  
And prove thy puissaunt armes, as seemes  
thee best became.'

## LXVII

'O holy sire,' quoth he, 'how shall I knight  
The many favours I with thee have fownd,  
That hast my name and nation redd aright,  
And taught the way that does to heaven  
bownd?'

This saide, adowne he looked to the grownd,  
To have returnd, but dazed were his eyne,  
Through passing brightnes, which did quite  
confound

His feeble sence, and too exceeding shyne:  
So darke are earthly thinges compar'd to  
things divine.

## LXVIII

At last, whenas himselfe he gan to fynd,  
To Una back he cast him to retyre;  
Who him awaited still with pensive mynd.  
Great thankes and goodly meed to that  
good syre  
He thens departing gave, for his paynes  
hyre.

So came to Una, who him joyd to see,  
And after litle rest, gan him desyre,  
Of her adventure myndfull for to bee.  
So leave they take of Cœlia and her daugh-  
ters three.

## CANTO XI

The knight with that old Dragon fights  
Two dayes incessantly:  
The third, him overthrowes, and gayns  
Most glorious victory.

## I

HIGH time now gan it wex for Una fayre  
To thinke of those her captive parents deare,  
And their forwasted kingdom to repayre:  
Whereto whenas they now approached neare,  
With hartie wordes her knight she gan to  
cheare,  
And in her modest maner thus bespake:  
'Deare knight, as deare as ever knight was  
deare,

That all these sorrowes suffer for my sake,  
High heven behold the tedious toyle, ye for  
me take.

## II

'Now are we come unto my native soyle,  
And to the place, where all our perilles  
dwell;  
Here hauntes that feend, and does his dayly  
spoyle;  
Therefore henceforth bee at your keeping  
well,

And ever ready for your foeman fell.  
The sparke of noble corage now awake,  
And strive your excellent selfe to excell;  
That shall ye evermore renowned make  
Above all knights on earth, that batteill  
undertake.'

## III

And pointing forth, 'Lo! yonder is,' said  
she,  
'The brasen towre, in which my parents  
deare

For dread of that huge feend emprisond be;  
Whom I from far see on the walles appeare,  
Whose sight my feeble soule doth greatly  
cheare:

And on the top of all I do espye  
The watchman wayting tydings glad to  
heare;

That, O my parents, might I happily  
Unto you bring, to ease you of your misery!'

## IV

With that they heard a roaring hideous  
sownd,  
That all the ayre with terror filled wyde,  
And seemd uneth to shake the stedfast  
ground.

Eftsoones that dreadfull dragon they espyde,  
Where stretcht he lay upon the sunny side  
Of a great hill, himselfe like a great hill.  
But all so soone as he from far descryde  
Those glistring armes, that heven with  
light did fill,

He rousd himselfe full blyth, and hastned  
them untill.

## V

Then badd the knight his lady yede aloof,  
And to an hill her selfe withdraw asyde,  
From whence she might behold that bat-  
tailles proof,  
And eke be safe from daunger far descryde:



She him obeyd, and turnd a litle wyde.  
 Now, O thou saered Muse, most learned  
 dame,  
 Fayre ympe of Phœbus, and his aged bryde,  
 The nourse of time and everlasting fame,  
 That warlike handes ennoblest with im-  
 mortall name;

## VI

O gently come into my feeble brest,  
 Come gently, but not with that mightie rage,  
 Wherewith the martiall troupes thou doest  
 infest,  
 And hartes of great heroës doest enrage,  
 That nought their kindled eorage may  
 aswage:  
 Soone as thy dreadfull trompe begins to  
 sownd,  
 The god of warre with his fiers equipage  
 Thou doest awake, sleepe never he so sownd,  
 And scared nations doest with horror sterne  
 astownd.

## VII

Fayre goddess, lay that furious fitt asyde,  
 Till I of warres and bloody Mars doe sing,  
 And Bryton fieldes with Sarazin blood be-  
 dyde,  
 Twixt that great Faery Queene and Paynim  
 King,  
 That with their horror heven and earth did  
 ring,  
 A worke of labour long, and endlesse  
 prayse:  
 But now a while lett downe that haughtie  
 string,  
 And to my tunes thy second tenor rayse,  
 That I this man of God his godly armes  
 may blaze.

## VIII

By this the dreadfull beast drew nigh to  
 hand,  
 Halfe flying and halfe footing in his haste,  
 That with his largenesse measured much  
 land,  
 And made wide shadow under his huge  
 waste;  
 As mountaine doth the valley overcaste.  
 Approching nigh, he reared high afore  
 His body monstrous, horrible, and vaste,  
 Which, to increase his wondrous greatnes  
 more,  
 Was swoln with wrath, and poyson, and with  
 bloody gore.

## IX

And over, all with brasen scales was armd,  
 Like plated cote of steele, so couched neare,  
 That nought mote percee, ne might his corse  
 bee harmd  
 With dint of swerd, nor push of pointed  
 speare:  
 Which as an eagle, seeing pray appeare,  
 His aery plumes doth rouze, full rudely  
 dight,  
 So shaked he, that horror was to heare:  
 For as the clashing of an armor bright,  
 Sneh noyse his rouzed scales did send unto  
 the knight.

## X

His flaggy winges, when forth he did dis-  
 play,  
 Were like two sayles, in which the hollow  
 wynd  
 Is gathered full, and worketh speedy way:  
 And eke the pennies, that did his pineons  
 bynd,  
 Were like mayne-yardes, with flying canvas  
 lynd,  
 With which whenas him list the ayre to  
 beat,  
 And there by force unwonted passage fynd,  
 The clowdes before him fledd for terror  
 great,  
 And all the hevens stood still, amazed with  
 his threat.

## XI

His huge long tayle, wownd up in hundred  
 foldes,  
 Does overspred his long bras-scaly back,  
 Whose wreathed boughtes when ever he  
 unfolds,  
 And thick entangled knots adown does  
 slack,  
 Bespotted as with shieldes of red and blacke,  
 It sweepeth all the land behind him farre,  
 And of three furlongs does but litle lacke;  
 And at the point two stinges in fixed arre,  
 Both deadly sharp, that sharpest steele ex-  
 ceeden farr.

## XII

Bnt stinges and sharpest steele did far ex-  
 ceed  
 The sharpnesse of his eruel rending clawes:  
 Dead was it sure, as sure as death in deed,  
 What ever thing does touch his ravenous  
 pawes.

Or what within his reach he ever drawes.  
 But his most hideous head my tongue to  
 tell  
 Does tremble; for his deepe devouring  
 jawes  
 Wyde gaped, like the griesly mouth of  
 hell,  
 Through which into his darke abysses all  
 ravin fell.

## XIII

And, that more wondrous was, in either  
 jaw  
 Three ranckes of yron teeth enraunged  
 were,  
 In which yett trickling blood and gobbets  
 raw  
 Of late devoured bodies did appeare,  
 That sight thereof bredd cold congealed  
 feare:  
 Which to increase, and all atonce to kill,  
 A cloud of smothering smoke and sulphure  
 seare  
 Out of his stinking gorge forth steemed  
 still,  
 That all the ayre about with smoke and  
 stench did fill.

## XIV

His blazing eyes, like two bright shining  
 shieldes,  
 Did burne with wrath, and sparkled living  
 fyre;  
 As two broad beacons, sett in open fieldes,  
 Send forth their flames far of to every  
 shyre,  
 And warning give, that enimes conspyre  
 With fire and sword the region to invade;  
 So flam'd his eyne with rage and rancorous  
 yre:  
 But far within, as in a hollow glade,  
 Those glaring lampes were sett, that made  
 a dreadfull shade.

## XV

So dreadfully he towards him did pas,  
 Forelifting up a loft his speckled brest,  
 And often bounding on the brused gras,  
 As for great joyaunce of his newcome  
 guest.  
 Eftsoones he gan advaunce his haughty  
 crest,  
 As chauffed bore his bristles doth upreare,  
 And shoke his scales to battaile ready  
 drest,

That made the Rederosse Knight nigh  
 quake for feare,  
 As bidding bold defyaunce to his foeman  
 neare.

## XVI

The knight gan fayrely couch his steady  
 speare,  
 And fiersely ran at him with rigorous  
 might:  
 The pointed steele, arriving rudely theare,  
 His harder hyde would nether percee nor  
 bight,  
 But, glauncing by, foorth passed forward  
 right:  
 Yet, sore amoved with so puissaunt push,  
 The wrathfull beast about him turned light,  
 And him so rudely, passing by, did brush  
 With his long tayle, that horse and man to  
 ground did rush.

## XVII

Both horse and man up lightly rose againe,  
 And fresh encounter towards him addrest:  
 But th' ydle stroke yett backe recoyld in  
 vaine,  
 And found no place his deadly point to rest.  
 Exceeding rage enflam'd the furious beast,  
 To be avenged of so great despight;  
 For never felt his imperceable brest  
 So wondrous force from hand of living  
 wight;  
 Yet had he prov'd the powre of many a  
 puissant knight.

## XVIII

Then, with his waving wings displayed  
 wyde,  
 Himselfe up high he lifted from the ground,  
 And with strong flight did forcibly divyde  
 The yielding ayre, which nigh too feeble  
 found  
 Her flitting parts, and element unsound,  
 To beare so great a weight: he, cutting  
 way  
 With his broad sayles, about him soared  
 roud;  
 At last, low stouping with unweldy sway,  
 Snatcht up both horse and man, to beare  
 them quite away.

## XIX

Long he them bore above the subject  
 plaine,  
 So far as ewghen bow a shaft may send,

Till struggling strong did him at last con-  
 straine  
 To let them downe before his flightes end:  
 As hagdard hauke, presuming to contend  
 With hardy fowle, above his hable might,  
 His wearie pounces all in vaine doth spend  
 To trusse the pray too heavy for his flight;  
 Which, comming down to ground, does free  
 it selfe by fight.

## XX

He so disseized of his gryping grosse,  
 The knight his thrillant speare againe  
 assayd  
 In his bras-plated body to embosse,  
 And three mens strength unto the stroake  
 he layd;  
 Wherewith the stiffe beame quaked, as  
 affrayd,  
 And glauncing from his scaly necke, did  
 glyde  
 Close under his left wing, then broad dis-  
 playd.  
 The percing steele there wrought a wound  
 full wyde,  
 That with the uncouth smart the monster  
 lowdly cryde.

## XXI

He cryde, as raging seas are wont to rore,  
 When wintry storme his wrathful wreck  
 does threat;  
 The rolling billowes beat the ragged shore,  
 As they the earth would shoulder from her  
 seat,  
 And greedy gulfe does gape, as he would  
 eat  
 His neighbour element in his revenge:  
 Then gin the blustering brethren boldly threat,  
 To move the world from off his stedfast  
 henge,  
 And boystrous battaile make, each other to  
 avenge.

## XXII

The steely head stuek fast still in his flesh,  
 Till with his cruell clawes he snatcht the  
 wood,  
 And quite a sunder broke. Forth flowed  
 fresh  
 A gushing river of blacke gory blood,  
 That drowned all the land, whereon he  
 stood:  
 The streame thereof would drive a water-  
 mill.

Treble augmented was his furious mood  
 With bitter sence of his deepe rooted ill,  
 That flames of fire he threw forth from  
 his large nosethril.

## XXIII

His hideous taylor then hurled he about,  
 And therewith all enwrapt the nimble  
 thyes  
 Of his froth-fomy steed, whose courage  
 stout  
 Striving to loose the knott, that fast him  
 tyes,  
 Himselfe in streighter bandes too rash im-  
 plyes,  
 That to the ground he is perforce con-  
 straynd  
 To throw his ryder: who can quickly ryse  
 From of the earth, with durty blood dis-  
 taynd,  
 For that reprochfull fall right fowly he  
 disdaynd.

## XXIV

And fercely tooke his trenchand blade in  
 hand,  
 With which he stroke so furious and so  
 fell,  
 That nothing seemd the puissaunce could  
 withstand:  
 Upon his crest the hardned yron fell;  
 But his more hardned crest was armd so  
 well,  
 That deeper dint therein it would not make;  
 Yet so extremely did the buffe him quell,  
 That from thenceforth he shund the like to  
 take,  
 But, when he saw them come, he did them  
 still forsake.

## XXV

The knight was wroth to see his stroke be-  
 guyld,  
 And smot againe with more outrageous  
 might;  
 But backe againe the sparcling steele re-  
 coyld,  
 And left not any marke where it did light,  
 As if in adanant rocke it had beene pight.  
 The beast, impatient of his smarting wound,  
 And of so fierce and forcible despight,  
 Thought with his winges to stye above the  
 ground;  
 But his late wounded wing unserviceable  
 found.



## XXVI

Then, full of griefe and anguish vehement,  
 He lowdly brayd, that like was never heard,  
 And from his wide devouring oven sent  
 A flake of fire, that, flashing in his beard,  
 Him all amazd, and almost made afeard:  
 The seorching flame sore swunged all his  
 face,  
 And through his armour all his body seard,  
 That he could not endure so ernell eace,  
 But thought his armes to leave, and helmet  
 to unlace.

## XXVII

Not that great champion of the antique  
 world,  
 Whom famous poetes verse so much doth  
 vaunt,  
 And hath for twelve huge labours high ex-  
 told,  
 So many furies and sharpe fits did haunt,  
 When him the poysoned garment did en-  
 chaunt,  
 With Centaures blood and bloody verses  
 charmd,  
 As did this knight twelve thousand dolours  
 daunt,  
 Whom fyrie steele now burnt, that erst him  
 armd,  
 That erst him goodly armd, now most of  
 all him harmd.

## XXVIII

Faynt, wearie, sore, emboyled, grieved,  
 brent  
 With heat, toyle, wounds, armes, smart,  
 and inward fire,  
 That never man such mischiefes did tor-  
 ment;  
 Death better were, death did he oft desire,  
 But death will never come, when needes  
 require.  
 Whom so dismayd when that his foe be-  
 held,  
 He cast to suffer him no more respire,  
 But gan his sturdy sterne about to weld,  
 And him so strongly stroke, that to the  
 ground him feld.

## XXIX

It fortun'd (as fayre it then befell,)  
 Behynd his backe, unweeting, where he  
 stood,  
 Of auncient time there was a springing well,  
 From which fast trickled forth a silver flood,

Full of great vertues, and for med'cine  
 good.

Whylome, before that cursed dragon got  
 That happy land, and all with innocent  
 blood

Defyld those sacred waves, it rightly hot  
 The Well of Life, ne yet his vertues had  
 forgot.

## XXX

For unto life the dead it could restore,  
 And guilt of sinfull erimes cleane wash  
 away;  
 Those that with sicknesse were infected  
 sore  
 It could recure, and aged long decay  
 Renew, as one were borne that very day.  
 Both Silo this, and Jordan, did excell,  
 And th' English Bath, and eke the German  
 Spau,  
 Ne can Cephise, nor Hebrus match this  
 well:  
 Into the same the knight back overthrown  
 fell.

## XXXI

Now gan the golden Phœbus for to steepe  
 His fierie face in billowes of the west,  
 And his faint steedes watred in ocean deepe,  
 Whiles from their journall labours they did  
 rest,  
 When that infernall monster, having kest  
 His wearie foe into that living well,  
 Can high advaunce his broad discoloured  
 brest  
 Above his wonted pitch, with countenance  
 fell,  
 And clapt his yron wings, as victor he did  
 dwell.

## XXXII

Which when his pensive lady saw from  
 farre,  
 Great woe and sorrow did her soule assay,  
 As weening that the sad end of the warre,  
 And gan to highest God entirely pray,  
 That feared chaunce from her to turne  
 away:  
 With folded hands, and knees full lowly  
 bent,  
 All night shee watcht, ne once adowne  
 would lay  
 Her daintv limbs in her sad dreriment,  
 But praying still did wake, and waking did  
 lament.

## XXXIII

The morrow next gan earely to appeare,  
That Titan rose to runne his daily race;  
But earely, ere the morrow next gan reare  
Out of the sea faire Titans deawy face,  
Up rose the gentle virgin from her place,  
And looked all about, if she might spy  
Her loved knight to move his manly pace:  
For she had great doubt of his safety,  
Since late she saw him fall before his enemy.

## XXXIV

At last she saw, where he upstarted brave  
Out of the well, wherein he drenched lay:  
As eagle fresh out of the ocean wave,  
Where he hath lefte his plumes all hory  
gray,  
And deekt himselfe with fethers youthly  
gay,  
Like eyas hauke up mounts unto the skies,  
His newly budded pineons to assay,  
And merveiles at him selfe, stil as he flies:  
So new this new-borne knight to battell new  
did rise.

## XXXV

Whom when the damned feend so fresh  
did spy,  
No wonder if he wondred at the sight,  
And doubted, whether his late enemy  
It were, or other new supplied knight.  
He, now to prove his late renewed might,  
High brandishing his bright deaw-burning  
blade,  
Upon his crested scalp so sore did smite,  
That to the scull a yawning wound it made:  
The deadly dint his dulled sences all dis-  
maid.

## XXXVI

I wote not whether the revenging steele  
Were hardned with that holy water dew,  
Wherein he fell, or sharper edge did feele,  
Or his baptized hands now greater grew,  
Or other secret vertue did ensew;  
Els never could the force of fleshly arme,  
Ne molten mettall, in his blood embrew:  
For till that stownd could never wight him  
harme,  
By subtilty, nor slight, nor might, nor  
mightly charme.

## XXXVII

The cruell wound enraged him so sore,  
That loud he yelled for exceeding paine;

As hundred ramping lions seemd to rore,  
Whom ravenous hunger did thereto con-  
straine:

Then gan he tosse aloft his stretched traine,  
And therewith scourge the buxome aire so  
sore,  
That to his force to yelden it was faine;  
Ne ought his sturdy strokes might stand  
afore,  
That high trees overthrew, and rocks in  
peesces tore.

## XXXVIII

The same advauncing high above his head,  
With sharpe intended sting so rude him  
smott,  
That to the earth him drove, as stricken  
dead,  
Ne living wight would have him life behott:  
The mortall sting his angry needle shott  
Quite through his shield, and in his shoulder  
seasd,  
Where fast it stucke, ne would thereout be  
gott:  
The grieve thereof him wondrous sore dis-  
easd,  
Ne might his raneling paine with patience  
be appeasd.

## XXXIX

But yet more mindfull of his honour deare  
Then of the grievous smart, which him did  
wring,  
From loathed soile he can him lightly reare,  
And strove to loose the far in fixed sting:  
Which when in vaine he tryde with strug-  
geling,  
Inflam'd with wrath, his raging blade he  
hefte,  
And strooke so strongly, that the knotty  
string  
Of his huge taile he quite a sonder clefte;  
Five joints thereof he hewd, and but the  
stump him lefte.

## XL

Hart cannot thinke, what outrage and what  
cries,  
With fowle enfouldred smoake and flashing  
fire,  
The hell-bred beast threw forth unto the  
skies,  
That all was covered with darknesse dire:  
Then fraught with rancour, and engorged  
yre,

He cast at once him to avenge for all,  
And gathering up himselfe out of the mire  
With his uneven wings, did fiercely fall  
Upon his sunne-bright shield, and grypt it  
fast withall.

## XLI

Much was the man eucombred with his  
hold,

In feare to lose his weapon in his paw,  
Ne wist yett how his talaunts to unfold;  
For harder was from Cerberus greedy jaw  
To plucke a bone, then from his cruell claw  
To reave by strength the griped gage away:  
Thrise he assayd it from his foote to draw,  
And thrise in vaine to draw it did assay;  
It booted nought to thinke to robbe him of  
his pray.

## XLII

Tho, when he saw no power might prevaile,  
His trusty sword he cald to his last aid,  
Wherewith he fiersly did his foe assaile,  
And double blowes about him stoutly laid,  
That glauncing fire out of the yron plaid,  
As sparckles from the andvile use to fly,  
When heavy hammers on the wedg are  
swaid;

Therewith at last he forst him to unty  
One of his grasping feete, him to defend  
thereby.

## XLIII

The other foote, fast fixed on his shield,  
Whenas no strength nor stroks mote him  
constraine

To loose, ne yet the warlike pledg to yield,  
He smott thereat with all his might and  
maine,

That nought so wondrous puissaunce might  
sustaine:

Upon the joint the lucky steele did light,  
And made such way, that hewd it quite in  
twaine:

The paw yett missed not his minisht might,  
But hong still on the shield, as it at first  
was pight.

## XLIV

For grieve thereof, and divelish despight,  
From his infernall founace forth he threw  
Huge flames, that dimmed all the heavens  
light,  
Enrold in duskish smoke and brimstone  
blew;

As burning Aetna from his boyling stew  
Doth belch out flames, and rockes in peeces  
broke,

And ragged ribs of mountaines molten new,  
Enwrapt in coleblacke cloudes and filthy  
smoke,

That al the land with stench, and heven  
with horror choke.

## XLV

The heate whereof, and harmefull pesti-  
lence,

So sore him noyd, that forst him to retire  
A litle backward for his best defence,  
To save his body from the scorching fire,  
Which he from hellish entrailes did ex-  
pire.

It chaunst (Eternall God that chaunce did  
guide)

As he recoiled backward, in the mire  
His nigh foreweried feeble feet did slide,  
And downe he fell, with dread of shame  
sore terrifide.

## XLVI

There grew a goodly tree him faire beside,  
Loaden with fruit and apples rosy redd,  
As they in pure vermilion had beene dide,  
Whereof great vertues over all were redd:  
For happy life to all which thereon fedd,  
And life eke everlasting did befall:  
Great God it plauted in that blessed stedd  
With his Almighty hand, and did it call  
The Tree of Life, the crime of our first  
fathers fall.

## XLVII

In all the world like was not to be fownd,  
Save in that soile, where all good things did  
grow,

And freely sprong out of the fruitfull  
grownd,

As incorrupted Nature did them sow,  
Till that dredd dragon all did overthrow.  
Another like faire tree eke grew thereby,  
Whereof who so did eat, eftsoones did know  
Both good and ill: O mournfull memory!  
That tree through one mans fault hath doen  
us all to dy.

## XLVIII

From that first tree forth flowd, as from a  
well,  
A trickling streame of balme, most sover-  
aine



And dainty deare, which on the ground still  
fell,  
And overflowed all the fertile plaine,  
As it had deawed bene with timely raine:  
Life and long health that gracious ointment  
gave,  
And deadly wounds could heale, and reare  
again  
The sencelesse corse appointed for the  
grave.  
Into that same he fell: which did from  
death him save.

## XLIX

For nigh thereto the ever damned beast  
Durst not approach, for he was deadly  
made,  
And al that life preserved did detest:  
Yet he it oft adventur'd to invade.  
By this the drouping day-light gan to fade,  
And yield his rowme to sad succeeding  
night,  
Who with her sable mantle gan to shade  
The face of earth, and wayes of living  
wight,  
And high her burning torch set up in  
heaven bright.

## L

When gentle Una saw the second fall  
Of her deare knight, who, weary of long  
fight,  
And faint through losse of blood, moov'd  
not at all,  
But lay as in a dreame of deepe delight,  
Besmeard with pretious balme, whose vertu-  
ous might  
Did heale his woundes, and scorching heat  
alay,  
Again she stricken was with sore affright,  
And for his safetie gan devoutly pray,  
And watch the noyous night, and wait for  
joyous day.

## LI

The joyous day gan early to appeare,  
And fayre Aurora from the deawy bed  
Of aged Tithone gan her selfe to reare,  
With rosy cheekes, for shame as blushing  
red;  
Her golden locks for hast were loosely  
shed  
About her eares, when Una her did marke  
Clymbe to her charet, all with flowers  
spred,

From heven high to chace the chearelesse  
darke;  
With mery note her lowd salutes the  
mounting larke.

## LII

Then freshly up arose the doughty knight,  
All healed of his hurts and woundes wide,  
And did himselfe to battaile ready dight;  
Whose early foe awaiting him beside  
To have devourd, so soone as day he spyde,  
When now he saw himselfe so freshly reare,  
As if late fight had nought him damnifyde,  
He woxe dismaid, and gan his fate to feare;  
Nathlesse with wonted rage he him ad-  
vaunced neare.

## LIII

And in his first encounter, gaping wyde,  
He thought attonce him to have swallowd  
quight,  
And rusht upon him with outrageous pryde;  
Who him rencountring fierce, as hauke in  
flight,  
Perforce rebutted backe. The weapon  
bright,  
Taking advantage of his open jaw,  
Ran through his mouth with so importune  
might,  
That deepe emperst his darksom hollow  
maw,  
And, back retyrd, his life blood forth with  
all did draw.

## LIV

So downe he fell, and forth his life did  
breath,  
That vanisht into smoke and cloudes swift;  
So downe he fell, that th' earth him under-  
neath  
Did grone, as feeble so great load to lift;  
So downe he fell, as an huge rocky clift,  
Whose false foundation waves have washt  
away,  
With dreadfull poyse is from the mayne-  
land rift,  
And, rolling downe, great Neptune doth  
dismay;  
So downe he fell, and like an heaped moun-  
taine lay.

## LV

The knight him selfe even trembled at his  
fall,  
So huge and horrible a masse it seemd;

And his deare lady, that beheld it all,  
 Durst not approch for dread which she  
 misdeemd;  
 But yet at last, whenas the direfull feend  
 She saw not stirre, of-shaking vaine affright,  
 She nigher drew, and saw that joyous end:  
 Then God she prayds, and thankt her faith-  
 full knight,  
 That had atchieved so great a conquest by  
 his might.

## CANTO XII

Fayre Una to the Redcrosse Knight  
 Betrouthed is with joy:  
 Though false Duessa, it to barre,  
 Her false sleightes doe imploy.

## I

BEHOLD! I see the haven nigh at hand,  
 To which I meane my wearie course to  
 bend;  
 Vere the maine shete, and beare up with the  
 land,  
 The which afore is fayrly to be kend,  
 And seemeth safe from storms that may  
 offend:  
 There this fayre virgin, wearie of her way,  
 Must landed bee, now at her journeyes end;  
 There eke my feeble barke a while may  
 stay,  
 Till mery wynd and weather call her thence  
 away.

## II

Searsely had Phœbus in the glooming east  
 Yett harnessed his fyrie-footed teeme,  
 Ne reard above the earth his flaming  
 creast,  
 When the last deadly smoke aloft did  
 steeme,  
 That signe of last outbreathed life did  
 seeme  
 Unto the watchman on the eastle wall;  
 Who thereby dead that balefull beast did  
 deeme,  
 And to his lord and lady lowd gan call,  
 To tell, how he had seene the dragons fatall  
 fall.

## III

Uprose with hasty joy, and feeble speed,  
 That aged syre, the lord of all that land,  
 And looked forth, to weet if trew indeed  
 Those tydinges were, as he did understand:

Which whenas trew by tryall he out fond,  
 He badd to open wyde his brasen gate,  
 Which long time had beene shut, and out  
 of hond  
 Proelaymed joy and peace through all his  
 state;  
 For dead now was their foe, which them  
 forrayed late.

## IV

Then gan triumphant trumpets sounnd on  
 hye,  
 That sent to heven the eechoed report  
 Of their new joy, and happie victory  
 Gainst him, that had them long opprest  
 with tort,  
 And fast imprisoned in sieged fort.  
 Then all the people, as in solemne feast,  
 To him assembled with one full consort,  
 Rejoyeing at the fall of that great beast,  
 From whose eternall bondage now they  
 were releast.

## V

Forth came that auneient lord and aged  
 queene,  
 Arayd in antique robes downe to the  
 grownd,  
 And sad habiliments right well beseene:  
 A noble crew about them waited rownd  
 Of sage and sober peres, all gravely gownd;  
 Whom far before did march a goodly band  
 Of tall young men, all hable armes to  
 sownd;  
 But now they laurell braunches bore in  
 hand,  
 Glad signe of victory and peace in all their  
 land.

## VI

Unto that doughtie conquerour they came,  
 And him before themselves prostrating low,  
 Their lord and patrone loud did him pro-  
 clame,  
 And at his feet their lawrell boughes did  
 throw.  
 Soone after them, all dauneing on a row,  
 The comely virgins came, with girlands  
 dight,  
 As fresh as flowres in medow greene doe  
 grow,  
 When morning dew upon their leaves  
 doth light:  
 And in their handes sweet timbrels all up-  
 held on hight.

## VII

And them before, the fry of children yong  
 Their wanton sportes and childish mirth  
 did play,  
 And to the maydens sownding tymbrels  
 song,  
 In well attuned notes, a joyous lay,  
 And made delightfull musick all the way,  
 Untill they came where that faire virgin  
 stood.  
 As fayre Diana, in fresh sommers day,  
 Beholdes her nymphes enraung'd in shady  
 wood,  
 Some wrestle, some do run, some bathe in  
 christall flood;

## VIII

So she beheld those maydens meriment  
 With chearefull vew; who, when to her  
 they came,  
 Themselves to ground with gracious hum-  
 blesse bent,  
 And her ador'd by honorable name,  
 Lifting to heven her everlasting fame:  
 Then on her head they sett a girlond  
 greene,  
 And crowned her twixt earnest and twixt  
 game;  
 Who, in her self-resemblance well beseene,  
 Did seeme, such as she was, a goodly  
 maiden queene.

## IX

And after all the raskall many ran,  
 Heaped together in rude rablement,  
 To see the face of that victorious man;  
 Whom all admired, as from heaven sent,  
 And gazd upon with gaping wonderment.  
 But when they came where that dead  
 dragon lay,  
 Streteht on the ground in monstrous large  
 extent,  
 The sight with ydle feare did them dis-  
 may,  
 Ne durst approch him nigh, to touch, or  
 once assay.

## X

Some feard and fledd; some feard, and  
 well it faynd;  
 One, that would wiser seeme then all the  
 rest,  
 Warnd him not touch, for yet perhaps re-  
 maynd  
 Some lingring life within his hollow brest,

Or in his wombe might lurke some hidden  
 nest  
 Of many dragonettes, his fruitfull seede;  
 Another saide, that in his eyes did rest  
 Yet sparekling fyre, and badd thereof take  
 heed;  
 Another said, he saw him move his eyes  
 indeed.

## XI

One mother, whenas her foolehardy chyld  
 Did come to neare, and with his talants  
 play,  
 Halfe dead through feare, her litle babe  
 revyld,  
 And to her gossibs gan in counsell say:  
 'How ean I tell, but that his talants may  
 Yet seratch my sonne, or rend his tender  
 hand?'  
 So diversly them selves in vaine they  
 fray;  
 Whiles some more bold, to measure him  
 nigh stand,  
 To prove how many acres he did spred of  
 land.

## XII

Thus flocked all the folke him rownd  
 about,  
 The whiles that hoarie king, with all his  
 traine,  
 Being arrived where that champion stout  
 After his foes defeasaunee did remaine,  
 Him goodly greetes, and fayre does enter-  
 tayne  
 With princely gifts of yvory and gold,  
 And thousand thankes him yeeldes for all  
 his paine:  
 Then when his daughter deare he does be-  
 hold,  
 Her dearely doth imbrace, and kisseth  
 manifold.

## XIII

And after to his pallae he them bringes,  
 With shaumes, and trompets, and with  
 elarions sweet;  
 And all the way the joyous people singes,  
 And with their garments strowes the paved  
 street;  
 Whene mounting up, they fynd purvey-  
 aunee meet  
 Of all that royall princes court became,  
 And all the floore was underneath their  
 feet



Bespredd with costly scarlott of great  
name,  
On which they lowly sitt, and fitting pur-  
pose frame.

## XIV

What needes me tell their feast and goodly  
guize,  
In which was nothing riotous nor vaine?  
What needes of dainty dishes to devise,  
Of comely services, or courtly trayne?  
My narrow leaves cannot in them contayne  
The large discourse of roiall princes state.  
Yet was their manner then but bare and  
playne:  
For th' antique world excesse and pryde  
did hate;  
Such proud luxurious pompe is swollen up  
but late.

## XV

Then, when with meates and drinckes of  
every kinde  
Their fervent appetites they quenched had,  
That aunient lord gan fit occasion finde,  
Of straunge adventures, and of perils sad,  
Which in his travell him befallen had,  
For to demaund of his renowned guest:  
Who then with utt'rance grave, and coun-  
t'nance sad,  
From poynt to poynt, as is before exprest,  
Discourst his voyage long, according his re-  
quest.

## XVI

Great pleasure, mixt with pittifull regard,  
That godly king and queene did passion-  
ate,  
Whyles they his pittifull adventures heard,  
That oft they did lament his lucklesse  
state,  
And often blame the too inportune fate,  
That heapt on him so many wrathfull  
wreakes;  
For never gentle knight, as he of late,  
So tossed was in Fortunes cruell freakes;  
And all the while salt teares bedewd the  
hearers cheeks.

## XVII

Then sayd the royall pere in sober wise:  
'Deare sonne, great beene the evils which  
ye bore  
From first to last in your late enterprise,  
That I note whether praise or pitty more:

For never living man, I weene, so sore  
In sea of deadly daungers was distrest;  
But since now safe ye seised have the shore,  
And well arrived are, (High God be blest!)  
Let us devize of ease and everlasting rest.'

## XVIII

'Ah! dearest lord,' said then that doughty  
knight,  
'Of ease or rest I may not yet devize;  
For by the faith which I to armes have  
plight,  
I bownden am straight after this emprise,  
As that your daughter can ye well advize,  
Backe to retourne to that great Faery  
Queene,  
And her to serve sixe yeares in warlike wize,  
Gainst that proud Paynim King that works  
her teene:  
Therefore I ought crave pardon, till I there  
have beene.'

## XIX

'Unhappy falls that hard necessity,'  
Quoth he, 'the troubler of my happy peace,  
And vowed foe of my felicity;  
Ne I against the same can justly preace:  
But since that band ye cannot now release,  
Nor doen undoe, (for vowes may not be  
vayne)  
Soone as the terme of those six yeares shall  
cease,  
Ye then shall hether backe retourne agayne,  
The marriage to accomplish vovd betwixt  
you twayn.

## XX

'Which, for my part, I covet to performe,  
In sort as through the world I did pro-  
clame,  
That who so kild that monster most de-  
forme,  
And him in hardy battayle overcame,  
Should have mine onely daughter to his  
dame,  
And of my kingdome heyre apparaunt bee:  
Therefore since now to thee perteynes the  
same,  
By dew desert of noble chevalree,  
Both daughter and eke kingdome, lo! I  
yield to thee.'

## XXI

Then forth he called that his daughter fayre,  
The fairest Un', his onely daughter deare,

His onely daughter and his only hayre;  
 Who forth proceeding with sad sober  
     cheare,  
 As bright as doth the morning starre ap-  
     peare  
 Out of the east, with flaming lockes be-  
     dight,  
 To tell that dawning day is drawing neare,  
 And to the world does bring long wished  
     light;  
 So faire and fresh that lady shewd her selfe  
     in sight:

## XXII

So faire and fresh, as freshest flowre in  
     May;  
 For she had layd her mournefull stole  
     aside,  
 And widow-like sad wimple throwne away,  
 Wherewith her heavenly beautie she did  
     hide,  
 Whiles on her wearie journey she did ride;  
 And on her now a garment she did weare  
 All lilly white, withoutten spot or pride,  
     neare,  
 But neither silke nor silver therein did  
     appeare.

## XXIII

The blazing brightnesse of her beauties  
     beame,  
 And glorious light of her sunshyny face,  
 To tell, were as to strive against the  
     streame:  
 My ragged rimes are all too rude and bace,  
 Her heavenly lineaments for to enchace.  
 Ne wonder; for her own deare loved knight,  
 All were she daily with himselfe in place,  
 Did wonder much at her celestiall sight:  
 Oft had he seene her faire, but never so  
     faire dight.

## XXIV

So fairely dight, when she in presence came,  
 She to her syre made humble reverence,  
 And bowed low, that her right well be-  
     came,  
 And added grace unto her excellence:  
 Who with great wisdom and grave elo-  
     quence  
 Thus gan to say — But eare he thus had  
     sayd,  
 With flying speede, and seeming great  
     pretence,

Came running in, much like a man dismayd,  
 A messenger with letters, which his message  
     sayd.

## XXV

All in the open hall amazed stood  
 At suddeinnesse of that unwary sight,  
 And wondred at his breathlesse hasty mood.  
 But he for nought would stay his passage  
     right,  
 Till fast before the king he did alight;  
 Where falling flat, great humblesse he did  
     make,  
 And kist the ground whereon his foot was  
     pight;  
 Then to his handes that writt he did betake,  
 Which he disclosing, read thus, as the paper  
     spake:

## XXVI

‘To thee, most mighty king of Eden fayre,  
 Her greeting sends in these sad lines ad-  
     drest  
 The wofull daughter and forsaken heyre  
 Of that great Emperour of all the West;  
 And bids thee be advized for the best,  
 Ere thou thy daughter linck in holy band  
 Of wedlocke to that new unknown guest:  
 For he already plighted his right hand  
 Unto another love, and to another land.

## XXVII

‘To me, sad mayd, or rather widow sad,  
 He was affyaunced long time before,  
 And sacred pledges he both gave, and had,  
 False erraunt knight, infamous, and for-  
     swore!  
 Witnesse the burning altars, which he swore,  
 And guilty heavens of his bold perjury,  
 Which though he hath polluted oft of yore,  
 Yet I to them for judgement just doe fly,  
 And them conjure t’avenge this shamefull  
     injury.

## XXVIII

‘Therefore since mine he is, or free or bond,  
 Or false or trew, or living or else dead,  
 Withhold, O soverayne prince, your hasty  
     hond  
 From knitting league with him, I you aread;  
 Ne weene my right with strength adowne  
     to tread,  
 Through weakenesse of my widowed or woe:  
 For Truth is strong, her rightfull cause to  
     plead,

And shall finde friends, if need requireth  
soe.  
So bids thee well to fare, thy neither friend  
nor foe, FIDESSA.'

## XXIX

When he these bitter byting wordes had  
red,  
The tydings straunge did him abashed  
make,  
That still he sate long time astonished,  
As in great muse, ne word to creature  
spake.  
At last his solemne silence thus he brake,  
With doubtfull eyes fast fixed on his  
guest:  
'Redoubted knight, that for myne only  
sake  
Thy life and honor late adventarest,  
Let nought be hid from me, that ought to  
be exprest.

## XXX

'What meane these bloody vowes and idle  
threats,  
Throwne out from womanish impatient  
mynd?  
What hevens? what altars? what enraged  
heates,  
Here heaped up with termes of love un-  
kynd,  
My conscience cleare with guilty bands  
would bynd?  
High God be witnesse, that I guiltlesse  
ane!  
But if your selfe, sir knight, ye faulty fynd,  
Or wrapped be in loves of former dame,  
With cryme doe not it cover, but disclose  
the same.'

## XXXI

To whom the Rederosse Knight this answere  
sent:  
'My lord, my king, be nought hereat dis-  
mayd,  
Till well ye wote by grave intendiment,  
What woman, and wherefore, doth me up-  
brayd  
With breach of love and loialty betrayd.  
It was in my mishaps, as hitherward  
I lately traveild, that unwares I strayd  
Out of my way, through perils straunge  
and hard;  
That day should faile me ere I had them  
all declard.

## XXXII

'There did I find, or rather I was fownd  
Of this false woman, that Fidessa hight;  
Fidessa hight the falsest dame on grownd,  
Most false Duesssa, royall richly dight,  
That easy was t' inveigle weaker sight:  
Who by her wicked arts and wiely skill,  
Too false and strong for earthly skill or  
might,  
Unwares me wrought unto her wicked will,  
And to my foe betrayd, when least I feared  
ill.'

## XXXIII

Then stepped forth the goodly royall mayd,  
And on the ground her selfe prostrating low,  
With sober countenance thus to him sayd:  
'O pardon me, my sovaine lord, to sheow  
The secret treasons, which of late I know  
To have bene wrought by that false sor-  
ceresse.  
Shee, onely she, it is, that earst did throw  
This gentle knight into so great distresse,  
That death him did awaite in daily wretch-  
ednesse.

## XXXIV

'And now it seemes, that she suborned hath  
This crafty messenger with letters vaine,  
To worke new woe and improvided seath,  
By breaking of the band betwixt us twaine;  
Wherein she used hath the practicke paine  
Of this false footman, clokt with simple-  
nesse,  
Whome if ye please for to discover plaine,  
Ye shall him Archimago find, I ghesse,  
The falsest man alive; who tries, shall  
find no lesse.'

## XXXV

The king was greatly moved at her speech,  
And, all with sudden indignation fraight,  
Bad on that messenger rude hands to  
reach.  
Eftsoones the gard, which on his state did  
wait,  
Attacht that faytor false, and bound him  
strait:  
Who, seeming sorely chauffed at his band,  
As chained beare, whom cruell dogs doe  
bait,  
With ydle force did faine them to with-  
stand,  
And often semblaunce made to scape out of  
their hand.



## XXXVI

But they him layd full low in dungeon  
 deepe,  
 And bound him hand and foote with yron  
 chains,  
 And with continual watch did warely keepe:  
 Who then would thinke, that by his subtile  
 trains  
 He could escape fowle death or deadly  
 pains?  
 Thus when that princes wrath was pacifide,  
 He gan renew the late forbidden baines,  
 And to the knight his daughter deare he  
 tyde,  
 With sacred rites and vowes for ever to  
 abyde.

## XXXVII

His owne two hands the holy knotts did  
 knitt,  
 That none but death for ever can divide;  
 His owne two hands, for such a turne most  
 fitt,  
 The housling fire did kindle and provide,  
 And holy water thereon sprinckled wide;  
 At which the bushy teade a groome did  
 light,  
 And sacred lamp in secret chamber hide,  
 Where it should not be quenched day nor  
 night,  
 For feare of evill fates, but burnen ever  
 bright.

## XXXVIII

Then gan they sprinckle all the posts with  
 wine,  
 And made great feast to solemnize that  
 day:  
 They all perfumde with frankincense divine,  
 And precious odours fetcht from far away,  
 That all the house did sweat with great  
 aray:  
 And all the while sweete musicke did  
 apply  
 Her curious skill, the warbling notes to  
 play,  
 To drive away the dull melancholy;  
 The whiles one sung a song of love and  
 jollity.

## XXXIX

During the which there was an heavenly  
 noise  
 Heard sownd through all the pallace plea-  
 santly,

Like as it had bene many an angels voice  
 Singing before th' Eternall Majesty,  
 In their trinall triplicities on hye;  
 Yett wist no creature, whence that heavenly  
 sweet  
 Proceeded, yet each one felt secretly,  
 Himselfe thereby refte of his sences  
 meet,  
 And ravished with rare impression in his  
 sprite.

## XL

Great joy was made that day of young and  
 old,  
 And solemne feast proclaymd throughout  
 the land,  
 That their exceeding merth may not be  
 told:  
 Suffice it heare by signes to understand  
 The usuall joyes at knitting of loves band.  
 Thrise happy man the knight himselfe did  
 hold,  
 Possessed of his ladies hart and hand,  
 And ever, when his eie did her behold,  
 His heart did seeme to melt in pleasures  
 manifold.

## XLI

Her joyous presence and sweet company  
 In full content he there did long enjoy,  
 Ne wicked envy, ne vile gealosy,  
 His deare delights were hable to annoy:  
 Yet, swimming in that sea of blisfull joy,  
 He nought forgott, how he whilome had  
 sworne,  
 In case he could that monstrous beast de-  
 stroy,  
 Unto his Faery Queene backe to retourne:  
 The which he shortly did, and Una left to  
 mourne.

## XLII

Now strike your sailes, yee jolly mari-  
 ners,  
 For we be come unto a quiet rode,  
 Where we must land some of our passen-  
 gers,  
 And light this weary vessell of her lode.  
 Here she a while may make her safe abode,  
 Till she repaired have her tackles spent,  
 And wants supplide; and then againe  
 abroad  
 On the long voiage whereto she is bent:  
 Well may she speede, and fairely finish her  
 intent.

THE SECOND BOOKE  
OF THE FAERIE QUEENE  
CONTAYNING  
THE LEGEND OF SIR GUYON  
OR  
OF TEMPERAUNCE

## I

RIGHT well I wote, most mighty Sovere-  
aine,  
That all this famous antique history  
Of some th' aboundance of an ydle braine  
Will judged be, and painted forgery,  
Rather then matter of just memory;  
Sith none that breatheth living aire does  
know,  
Where is that happy land of Faery,  
Which I so much doe vaunt, yet no where  
show,  
But vouch antiquities, which no body can  
know.

## II

But let that man with better sence advize,  
That of the world least part to us is red:  
And daily how through hardy enterprize  
Many great regions are discovered,  
Which to late age were never mentioned.  
Who ever heard of th' Indian Peru?  
Or who in venturous vessell measured  
The Amazons huge river, now found trew?  
Or fruitfulest Virginia who did ever vew?

## III

Yet all these were when no man did them  
know,  
Yet have from wisest ages hidden beene;  
And later times thinges more unknowne  
shall show.  
Why then should witlesse man so much  
misweene,  
That nothing is, but that which he hath  
seene?  
What if within the moones fayre shining  
spheare,  
What if in every other starre unseene,  
Of other wordes he happily should heare?  
He wonder would much more; yet such to  
some appeare.

## IV

Of Faery Lond yet if he more inquirye,  
By certain signes, here sett in sondrie place,

He may it fynd; ne let him then admyre,  
But yield his sence to bee too blunt and  
bace,  
That no'te without an hound fine footing  
trace.  
And thou, O fayrest Princesse under sky,  
In this fayre mirrhour maist behold thy  
face,  
And thine owne realmes in lound of Faery,  
And in this antique ymage thy great aun-  
cestry.

## V

The which O pardon me thus to enfold  
In covert vele, and wrap in shadowes light,  
That feeble eyes your glory may behold,  
Which ells could not endure those beames  
bright,  
But would bee dazed with exceeding light.  
O pardon! and vouchsafe with patient eare  
The brave adventures of this Faery knight,  
The good Sir Guyon, graciously to heare;  
In whom great rule of Temp'raunce goodly  
doth appeare.

## CANTO I

Guyon, by Archimage abusd,  
The Redcrosse Knight awaytes;  
Fyndes Mordant and Amavia slaine  
With Pleasures poisoned baytes.

## I

THAT conning architect of cancred guyle,  
Whom princes late displeasure left in bands,  
For falsed letters and suborned wyle,  
Soone as the Redcrosse Knight he under-  
stands  
To beene departed out of Eden landes,  
To serve againe his souveraine Elfin Queene,  
His artes he moves, and out of caytives  
handes  
Himselfe he frees by secret meanes un-  
seene;  
His shackles emptie left, him selfe escaped  
cleene.

## II

And forth he fares full of malicious mynd,  
To worken mischiefe and avenging woe,  
Where ever he that godly knight may fynd,  
His onely hart sore and his onely foe;  
Sith Una now he algates must forgoe,  
Whom his victorious handes did earst re-  
store

To native crowne and kingdom late ygoe:  
Where she enjoyes sure peace for ever-  
more,  
As wetherbeaten ship arryv'd on happie  
shore.

## III

Him therefore now the object of his spight  
And deadly food he makes: him to offend  
By forged treason, or by open fight,  
He seekes, of all his drifte the aymed end:  
Thereto his subtile engins he does bend,  
His practick witt, and his fayre fyled tongue,  
With thousand other sleighes: for well he  
kend

His credit now in doubtfull ballaunce hong;  
For hardly could bee hurt, who was already  
stong.

## IV

Still as he went, he craftie stales did lay,  
With cunning traynes him to entrap un-  
wares,

And privy spyals plast in all his way,  
To weete what course he takes, and how  
he fares;

To ketch him at a vauntage in his snares.  
But now so wise and wary was the knight  
By tryall of his former harmes and cares,  
That he deseryde, and shonned still his  
slight:

The fish that once was caught, new bait  
wil hardly byte.

## V

Nath'lesse th' enchaunter would not spare  
his payne,

In hope to win occasion to his will;  
Which when he long awaited had in vayne,  
He chaungd his mynd from one to other ill:  
For to all good he enemy was still.

Upon the way him fortun'd to meet,  
Fayre marching underneath a shady hill,  
A goodly knight, all arnd in harnesse  
meete,

That from his head no place appeared to his  
feete.

## VI

His carriage was full comely and upright,  
His countenance demure and temperate,  
But yett so sterne and terrible in sight,  
That cheard his friendes, and did his foes  
amate:

He was an Elfin borne, of noble state

And mickle worship in his native land;  
Well could he tourney and in lists debate,  
And knighthood tooke of good Sir Huons  
hand,  
When with King Oberon he came to Fary  
Land.

## VII

Him als accompanyd upon the way  
A comely palmer, clad in black attyre,  
Of rypest yeares, and heares all hoarie gray,  
That with a staffe his feeble steps did stire,  
Least his long way his aged limbes should  
tire:

And if by lookes one may the mind aread,  
He seemd to be a sage and sober syre,  
And ever with slow pace the knight did lead,  
Who taught his trampling steed with equall  
steps to tread.

## VIII

Such whenas Archimago them did view,  
He weened well to worke some uncouth wyle.  
Eftsoones, untwisting his deceitfull clew,  
He gan to weave a web of wicked guyle;  
And with faire countenance and flattering  
style

To them approching, thus the knight be-  
spake:

'Fayre sonne of Mars, that seeke with war-  
like spoyle,

And great atchiev'ments, great your selfe to  
make,

Vouchsafe to stay your steed for humble  
misers sake.'

## IX

He stayd his steed for humble misers sake,  
And badd tell on the tenor of his playnt;  
Who feigning then in every limb to quake,  
Through inward feare, and seeming pale  
and faynt,

With piteous mone his percing speach gan  
paynt:

'Deare lady, how shall I declare thy cace,  
Whom late I left in languorous constraynt?  
Would God, thy selfe now present were in  
place,

To tell this ruefull tale! Thy sight could  
win thee grace.

## X

'Or rather would, O! would it so had  
chaunst,

That you, most noble sir, had present beene



When that lewd rybault, with vyle lust ad-  
 vaunst,  
 Laid first his filthie hands on virgin cleene,  
 To spoyle her dainty corps, so faire and  
 sheene  
 As on the earth, great mother of us all,  
 With living eye more fayre was never seene,  
 Of chastity and honour virginall:  
 Witnes, ye heavens, whom she in vaine to  
 help did call.'

## XI

'How may it be,' sayd then the knight halfe  
 wroth,  
 'That knight should knighthood ever so  
 have shent?'  
 'None but that saw,' quoth he, 'would weene  
 for troth,  
 How shamefully that mayd he did tor-  
 ment.  
 Her looser golden lockes he rudely rent,  
 And drew her on the ground, and his sharpe  
 sword  
 Against her snowy brest he fiercely bent,  
 And threatned death with many a bloodie  
 word;  
 Tounge hates to tell the rest, that eye to  
 see abhord.'

## XII

Therewith amoved from his sober mood,  
 'And lives he yet,' said he, 'that wrought  
 this act,  
 And doen the heavens afford him vitall  
 food?'  
 'He lives,' quoth he, 'and boasteth of the  
 fact,  
 Ne yet hath any knight his courage crackt.'  
 'Where may that treachour then,' sayd he,  
 'be found,  
 Or by what meanes may I his footing  
 tract?'  
 'That shall I shew,' said he, 'as sure as  
 hound  
 The stricken deare doth chaleng by the  
 bleeding wound.'

## XIII

He stayd not lenger talke, but with fierce  
 yre  
 And zealous haste away is quickly gone,  
 To seeke that knight, where him that crafty  
 squyre  
 Supposd to be. They do arrive anone,  
 Where sate a gentle lady all alone,

With garments rent, and heare dischev-  
 eled,  
 Wringing her handes, and making piteous  
 mone:  
 Her swollen eyes were much disfigured,  
 And her faire face with teares was fowly  
 blubbered.

## XIV

The knight, approching nigh, thus to her  
 said:  
 'Fayre lady, through fowle sorrow ill be-  
 dight,  
 Great pity is to see you thus dismayd,  
 And marre the blossom of your beauty  
 blight:  
 Forthly appease your grieve and heavy  
 plight,  
 And tell the cause of your conceived payne:  
 For if he live that hath you doen despight,  
 He shall you doe dew recompence agayne,  
 Or els his wrong with greater puissance  
 maintaine.'

## XV

Which when she heard, as in despightfull  
 wise,  
 She wilfully her sorrow did augment,  
 And offred hope of comfort did despise:  
 Her golden lockes most cruelly she rent,  
 And scratcht her face with ghastly dreri-  
 ment;  
 Ne would she speake, ne see, ne yet be  
 seene,  
 But hid her visage, and her head downe  
 bent,  
 Either for grievous shame, or for great  
 teene,  
 As if her hart with sorow had transfixd  
 beene:

## XVI

Till her that squyre bespake: 'Madame,  
 my lief,  
 For Gods deare love be not so wilfull  
 bent,  
 But doe vouchsafe now to receive reliefe,  
 The which good fortune doth to you pre-  
 sent.  
 For what bootes it to weepe and to way-  
 ment,  
 When ill is chaunst, but doth the ill in-  
 crease,  
 And the weake minde with double woe tor-  
 ment?'

When she her squire heard speake, she gan  
appease  
Her voluntarie paine, and feele some seeret  
ease.

## XVII

Eftsoone she said: 'Ah! gentle trustie  
squire,  
What comfort can I, wofull wretch, con-  
eeave,  
Or why should ever I henceforth desyre  
To see faire heavens face, and life not  
leave,  
Sith that false traytour did my honour  
reave?'  
'False traytour certes,' saide the Facrie  
knight,  
'I read the man, that ever would deeeave  
A gentle lady, or her wrong through might:  
Death were too little paine for such a fowle  
despight.

## XVIII

'But now, fayre lady, comfort to you make,  
And read who hath ye wrought this sham-  
full plight,  
That short revenge the man may overtake,  
Where so he be, and soone upon him light.'  
'Certes,' saide she, 'I wote not how he  
hight,  
But under him a gray steede did he wield,  
Whose sides with dapled circles weren  
dight;  
Upright he rode, and in his silver shield  
He bore a bloodie crosse, that quartred all  
the field.'

## XIX

'Now by my head,' saide Guyon, 'much I  
muse,  
How that same knight should do so fowle  
amis,  
Or ever gentle damzell so abuse:  
For may I boldly say, he surely is  
A right good knight, and trew of word ywis:  
I present was, and can it witnesse well,  
When armes he swore, and streight did  
enterpris  
Th' adventure of the Errant Damozell;  
In which he hath great glory wonne, as I  
heare tell.

## XX

'Nathlesse he shortly shall againe be tryde,  
And fairely quit him of th' imputed blame,

Els be ye sure he dearely shall abyde,  
Or make you good amendment for the same:  
All wrongs have mendes, but no amendes of  
shaine.

Now therefore, lady, rise out of your paine,  
And see the salving of your blotted name.'  
Full loth she seemd thereto, but yet did  
faine;  
For she was inly glad her purpose so to  
gaine.

## XXI

Her purpose was not such as she did faine,  
Ne yet her person such as it was seene;  
But under simple shew and semblant plaine  
Lurkt false Duessa secretly unseene,  
As a chaste virgin, that had wronged beene:  
So had false Archimago her disguysd,  
To cloke her guile with sorrow and sad  
teene;  
And eke himselfe had craftily devisd  
To be her squire, and do her service well  
aguisd.

## XXII

Her late, forlorne and naked, he had found,  
Where she did wander in waste wilderness,  
Lurking in rockes and eaves far under  
ground,  
And with greene mosse cov'ring her naked-  
nesse,  
To hide her shaine and loathly filthinesse,  
Sith her Prince Arthur of proud ornaments  
And borrowd beauty spoyld. Her natheless  
Th' enchaunter finding fit for his intents  
Did thus revest, and deekt with dew habili-  
ments.

## XXIII

For all he did was to deceive good knights,  
And draw them from pursuit of praise and  
fame,  
To slug in slouth and sensuall delights,  
And end their daies with irrenowmed shame  
And now exceeding grieve him overcame,  
To see the Redcrosse thus advaunced hye;  
Therefore this craftie engine he did frame,  
Against his praise to stirre up enmitye  
Of such, as vertues like mote unto him  
allye.

## XXIV

So now he Guyon guydes an uneouth way  
Through woods and mountaines, till they  
came at last

Into a pleasant dale, that lowly lay  
Betwixt two hils, whose high heads, over-  
plast,  
The valley did with coole shade overcast:  
Through midst thereof a little river rold,  
By which there sate a knight with helme  
unlaste,  
Himselfe refreshing with the liquid cold,  
After his travell long, and labours manifold.

## XXV

'Lo! yonder he,' cryde Archinage alowd,  
'That wrought the shamefull fact, which I  
did shew,  
And now he doth himselfe in secret shrowd,  
To fly the vengeaunce for his outrage dew;  
But vaine: for ye shall dearely do him rew,  
So God ye speed and send you good suc-  
cesse;  
Which we far off will here abide to vew.'  
So they him left, inflam'd with wrathful-  
nesse,  
That streight against that knight his speare  
he did addresse.

## XXVI

Who, seeing him from far so fierce to  
pricke,  
His warlike armes about him gan embrace,  
And in the rest his ready speare did sticke;  
Tho, when as still he saw him towards pace,  
He gan rencounter him in equall race:  
They bene ymett, both ready to affrap,  
When suddenly that warriour gan abace  
His threatned speare, as if some new mis-  
hap  
Had him betide, or hidden danger did en-  
trap:

## XXVII

And cryde, 'Mercie, sir knight! and mercie,  
lord,  
For mine offence and heedelesse hardi-  
ment,  
That had almost committed crime abhord,  
And with reprochfull shame mine honour  
shent,  
Whiles cursed steele against that badge I  
bent,  
The sacred badge of my Redeemers death,  
Which on your shield is set for ornament.'  
But his fierce foe his steed could stay un-  
eath,  
Who, prickt with courage keue, did cruell  
battell breath.

## XXVIII

But when he heard him speake, streight  
way he knew  
His errour, and himselfe inclyning sayd:  
'Ah! deare Sir Guyon, well becommeth  
you,  
But me behoveth rather to upbrayd,  
Whose hastie hand so far from reason  
strayd,  
That almost it did haynous violence  
On that fayre ymage of that heavenly  
mayd,  
That decks and armes your shield with  
faire defence:  
Your court'sie takes on you anothers dew  
offence.'

## XXIX

So beene they both at one, and doen up-  
reare  
Their bevers bright, each other for to  
greet;  
Goodly comportsunce each to other beare,  
And entertaine themselves with court'sies  
meet.  
Then saide the Redcrosse Knight: 'Now  
mote I weet,  
Sir Guyon, why with so fierce saliaunce,  
And fell intent, ye did at earst me meet;  
For sith I know your goodly governaunce,  
Great cause, I weene, you guided, or some  
uncouth chaunce.'

## XXX

'Certes,' said he, 'well mote I shame to tell  
The fond encheason that me hether led.  
A false infamous faitour late befell  
Me for to meet, that seemed ill bested,  
And playnd of grievous outrage, which he  
red  
A knight had wrought against a ladie gent;  
Which to avenge, he to this place me led,  
Where you he made the marke of his in-  
tent,  
And now is fled: foule shame him follow,  
wher he went!'

## XXXI

So can he turne his earnest unto game,  
Through goodly handling and wise tem-  
peraunce.  
By this his aged guide in presence came,  
Who, soone as on that knight his eye dic-  
glaunce,  
Eftsoones of him had perfect cognizaunce,



Sith him in Faery court he late avizd;  
 And sayd: 'Fayre sonne, God give you  
 happy chaunce,  
 And that deare Crosse uppon your shield  
 devizd,  
 Wherewith above all knights ye goodly  
 seeine aguizd.

## XXXII

'Joy may you have, and everlasting fame,  
 Of late most hard atchiev'ment by you  
 domne,  
 For which enrolled is your glorious name  
 In heavenly regesters above the sunne,  
 Where you a saint with saints your seat  
 have wonne:  
 But wretched we, where ye have left your  
 marke,  
 Must now anew begin like race to ronne.  
 God guide thee, Guyon, well to end thy  
 warke,  
 And to the wished haven bring thy weary  
 barke.'

## XXXIII

'Palmer,' him answered the Redcrosse  
 Knight,  
 'His be the praise, that this atchiev'ment  
 wrought,  
 Who made my hand the organ of His  
 might:  
 More then good will to me attribute nought;  
 For all I did, I did but as I ought.  
 But you, faire sir, whose pageant next en-  
 sewes,  
 Well mote yee thee, as well can wish your  
 thought,  
 That home ye may report thrise happy  
 newes;  
 For well ye worthy bene for worth and  
 gentle thewes.'

## XXXIV

So courteous conge both did give and  
 take,  
 With right hands plighted, pledges of good  
 will.  
 Then Guyon forward gan his voyage make  
 With his blacke palmer, that him guided  
 still.  
 Still he him guided over dale and hill,  
 And with his steedy staffe did point his  
 way:  
 His race with reason, and with words his  
 will,

From fowle intemperaunce he ofte did stay,  
 And suffred not in wrath his hasty steps to  
 stray.

## XXXV

In this faire wize they traveild long yfere,  
 Through many hard assayes, which did be-  
 tide,  
 Of which he honour still away did beare,  
 And spred his glory through all cuntryes  
 wide.  
 At last, as chaunst them by a forest side  
 To passe, for succour from the scorching  
 ray,  
 They heard a ruefull voice, that dearnly  
 cride,  
 With percing shriekes, and many a dole-  
 full lay;  
 Which to attend, awhile their forward steps  
 they stay.

## XXXVI

'But if that carelesse heavens,' quoth she,  
 'despise  
 The doome of just revenge, and take de-  
 light  
 To see sad pageaunts of mens miseries,  
 As bownd by them to live in lives de-  
 spight,  
 Yet can they not warne Death from  
 wretched wight.  
 Come then, come soone, come, sweetest  
 Death, to me,  
 And take away this long lent loathed light:  
 Sharpe be thy wounds, but sweete the med-  
 icines be,  
 That long captived soules from weary  
 thraldome free.

## XXXVII

'But thou, sweete babe, whom frowning  
 froward fate  
 Hath made sad witnesse of thy fathers  
 fall,  
 Sith heaven thee deignes to hold in living  
 state,  
 Long maist thou live, and better thrive  
 withall,  
 Then to thy lucklesse parents did befall:  
 Live thou, and to thy mother dead attest,  
 That cleare she dide from blemish crimi-  
 nall:  
 Thy litle hands embrewd in bleeding brest,  
 Loe! I for pledges leave. So give me leave  
 to rest.'

## XXXVIII

With that a deadly shrieke she forth did  
throw,  
That through the wood reechoed againe,  
And after gave a grone so deepe and low,  
That seemd her tender heart was rent in  
twaine,  
Or thrild with point of thorough piercing  
paine:  
As gentle hynd, whose sides with cruell  
steale  
Through launched, forth her bleeding life  
docs raine,  
Whiles the sad pang approaching shee does  
feele,  
Braies out her latest breath, and up her  
eies doth seele.

## XXXIX

Which when that warriour heard, dismount-  
ing strait  
From his tall steed, he rusht into the thick,  
And soone arrived where that sad pour-  
traict  
Of death and dolour lay, halfe dead, halfe  
quick;  
In whose white alabaster brest did stiek  
A cruell knife, that made a griesly wovnd,  
From which forth gusht a stream of gore-  
blood thick,  
That all her goodly garments staine arownd,  
And into a deepe sanguine dide the grassy  
grownd.

## XL

Pitifull spectacle of deadly smart,  
Beside a bubling fountaine low she lay,  
Which shee increased with her bleeding  
hart,  
And the cleane waves with purple gore did  
ray;  
Als in her lap a lovely babe did play  
His cruell sport, in stead of sorrow dew;  
For in her streaming blood he did embay  
His litle hands, and tender joints embrew;  
Pitifull spectacle, as ever eie did vew.

## XLI

Besides them both, upon the soiled gras  
The dead corse of an armed knight was spred,  
Whose armour all with blood besprincl  
was;  
His ruddy lips did smyle, and rosy red  
Did paint his chearefull cheekes, yett being  
ded;

Seemd to have beene a goodly personage,  
Now in his freshest flowre of lustyhed,  
Fitt to inflame faire lady with loves rage,  
But that fiers fate did crop the blossome of  
his age.

## XLII

Whom when the good Sir Guyon did behold,  
His hart gan waxe as starke as marble stone,  
And his fresh blood did frieze with feare-  
full cold,  
That all his sences seemd berefte attone.  
At last his mighty ghost gan deepe to grone,  
As lion, grudging in his great disdaine,  
Mournes inwardly, and makes to him selfe  
mone,  
Til ruth and fraile affection did constraene  
His stout courage to stoupe, and shew his  
inward paine.

## XLIII

Out of her gored wound the cruell steel  
He lightly snatcht, and did the floodgate  
stop  
With his faire garment: then gan softly feel  
Her feeble pulse, to prove if any drop  
Of living blood yet in her veynes did hop;  
Which when he felt to move, he hoped faire  
To call backe life to her forsaken shop:  
So well he did her deadly wounds repaire,  
That at the last shee gan to breath out  
living aire.

## XLIV

Which he pereceiving, greatly gan rejoice,  
And goodly counsell, that for wounded hart  
Is meetest med'cine, tempred with sweete  
voice:  
'Ay me! deare lady, which the ymage art  
Of ruefull pittie, and impatient smart,  
What direfull chaunce, armed with avenging  
fate,  
Or enrsed hand, hath plaid this cruell part,  
Thus fowle to hasten your untimely date?  
Speake, O dear lady, speake: help never  
comes too late.'

## XLV

Therewith her dim eie-lids she up gan  
reare,  
On which the drery death did sitt, as sad  
As lump of lead, and made darke clouds  
appeare:  
But when as him, all in bright armour  
clad,

Before her standing she espied had,  
 As one out of a deadly dreame affright,  
 She weakly started, yet she nothing drad:  
 Streight downe againe her selfe in great  
 despight  
 She groveling threw to ground, as hating  
 life and light.

## XLVI

The gentle knight her soone with carefull  
 paine  
 Uplifted light, and softly did uphold:  
 Thrise he her reard, and thrise she sunek  
 againe,  
 Till he his armes about her sides gan fold,  
 And to her said: 'Yet if the stony cold  
 Have not all seized on your frozen hart,  
 Let one word fall that may your grieve un-  
 fold,  
 And tell the secrete of your mortall smart:  
 He oft finds present helpe, who does his  
 grieve impart.'

## XLVII

Then, casting up a deadly looke, full low  
 Shee sight from bottome of her wounded  
 brest,  
 And after, many bitter throbs did throw:  
 With lips full pale and foltring tong opprest,  
 These words she breathed forth from riven  
 chest:  
 'Leave, ah! leave of, what ever wight thou  
 bee,  
 To lett a weary wretch from her dew rest,  
 And trouble dying soules tranquillitee.  
 Take not away now got, which none would  
 give to me.'

## XLVIII

'Ah! far be it,' said he, 'deare dame, fro  
 mee,  
 To hinder soule from her desired rest,  
 Or hold sad life in long captivitee:  
 For all I seeke is but to have redrest  
 The bitter pangs that doth your heartifest.  
 Tell then, O lady, tell what fatall priefe  
 Hath with so huge misfortune you opprest:  
 That I may cast to compas your reliefe,  
 Or die with you in sorrow, and partake  
 your grieve.'

## XLIX

With feeble hands then stretched forth on  
 hye,  
 As heven accusing guilty of her death,

And with dry drops congealed in her eye,  
 In these sad wordes she spent her utmost  
 breath:

'Heare then, O man, the sorrowes that un-  
 cath

My tong can tell, so far all sence they pas:  
 Loe! this dead corpse, that lies here under-  
 neath,

The gentlest knight, that ever on greene  
 gras

Gay steed with spurs did pricke, the good  
 Sir Mortdant was.

## L

'Was (ay the while, that he is not so now!)  
 My lord, my love, my deare lord, my deare  
 love,

So long as heavens just with equall brow  
 Vouehsafed to behold us from above.

One day, when him high corage did em-  
 move,

As wont ye knightes to seeke adventures  
 wilde,

He pricked forth, his puissant force to  
 prove.

Me then he left enwombed of this childe,  
 This luckles childe, whom thus ye see with  
 blood defild.

## LI

'Him fortun'd (hard fortune ye may  
 ghesse)

To come where vile Aerasia does wonne,  
 Aerasia, a false enelaunteresse,  
 That many errant knightes hath fowle for-  
 donne:

Within a wandring island, that doth ronne  
 And stray in perilous gulfe, her dwelling  
 is:

Fayre sir, if ever there ye travell, shonne  
 The eursed land where many wend amis,  
 And know it by the name; it hight the  
 Bowre of Blis.

## LII

'Her blis is all in pleasure and delight,  
 Wherewith she makes her lovers dronken  
 mad,

And then with words and weedes of won-  
 drous might,

On them she workes her will to uses bad:  
 My liefest lord she thus beguiled had;  
 For he was flesh (all flesh doth frayltie  
 breed):

Whom when I heard to beene so ill bestad,



Weake wretch, I wrapt myselfe in palmers  
weed,  
And cast to seek him forth through danger  
and great dreed.

## LIII

‘Now had fayre Cynthia by even tournes  
Full measred three quarters of her yeare,  
And thrise three tymes had fild her crooked  
hornes,  
Whenas my wombe hei burdein would for-  
beare,  
And bad me call Lucina to me neare.  
Lucina came: a manchild forth I brought:  
The woods, the nymphes, my bowres, my  
midwives, weare:  
Hard helpe at need! So deare thee, babe, I  
bought;  
Yet nought to deare I deemd, while so my  
deare I sought.

## LIV

‘Him so I sought, and so at last I fownd,  
Where him that witch had thralld to her will,  
In chaines of lust and lewde desyres ybownd,  
And so transformed from his former skill,  
That me he knew not, nether his owne ill;  
Till through wise handling and faire gov-  
ernaunce,  
I him recured to a better will,  
Purged from drugs of fowle intemperaunce:  
Then meanes I can devise for his deliver-  
aunce.

## LV

‘Which when the vile enchaunteresse per-  
ceiv’d,  
How that my lord from her I would reprove,  
With cup thus charmd, him parting she  
deceivd:

*Sad verse, give death to him that death does  
give,*

*And losse of love to her that loves to live,  
So soone as Bacchus with the Nympe does  
lincke.*

So parted we, and on our journey drive,  
Till, comming to this well, he stoupt to  
drinke:

The charme fullfid, dead suddeinly he  
downe did sincke.

## LVI

‘Which when I, wretch’—Not one word  
more she sayd,  
But breaking of the end for want of breath,

And slyding soft, as downe to sleepe her  
layd,

And ended all her woe in quiet death.  
That seeing good Sir Guyon, could uneath  
From teares abstayne, for griefe his hart  
did grate,

And from so heavie sight his head did  
wreath,

Accusing fortune, and too cruell fate,  
Which plunged had faire lady in so wretched  
state.

## LVII

Then, turning to his palmer, said: ‘Old  
syre,

Behold the ymage of mortalitie,  
And feeble nature cloth’d with fleshly tyre.  
When raging passion with fierce tyranny  
Robs reason of her dew regalitie,  
And makes it servaunt to her basest part,  
The strong it weakens with infirmitie,  
And with bold furie armes the weakest  
hart:

The strong through pleasure soonest falles,  
the weake through smart.’

## LVIII

‘But Temperaunce,’ said he, ‘with golden  
squire

Betwixt them both can measure out a  
meane,

Nether to melt in pleasures whott desyre,  
Nor frye in hartlesse griefe and dolefull  
tene.

Thrise happy man, who fares them both  
atweene!

But sith this wretched woman overcome  
Of anguish, rather then of crime, hath  
bene,

Reserve her cause to her eternall doome,  
And, in the meane, vouchsafe her honorable  
toombe.’

## LIX

‘Palmer,’ quoth he, ‘death is an equall  
doome

To good and bad, the commen in of rest;  
But after death the tryall is to come,

When best shall bee to them that lived  
best:

But both alike, when death hath both sup-  
prest,

Religious reverence doth buriall teene,  
Which who so wants, wants so much of his  
rest:

For all so great shame after death I weene,  
As selfe to dyen bad, unburied bad to beene.'

## LX

So both agree their bodies to engrave:  
The great earthes wombe they open to the  
sky,

And with sad cypresse seemely it embrace;  
Then, covering with a clod their closed  
eye,

They lay therein those corses tenderly,  
And bid them sleepe in everlasting peace.  
But ere they did their utmost obsequy,  
Sir Guyon, more affection to increace,  
Bynempt a sacred vow, which none should  
ay releace.

## LXI

The dead knights sword out of his sheath  
he drew,

With which he cutt a lock of all their  
heare,

Which medling with their blood and earth,  
he threw

Into the grave, and gan devoutly sweare:  
'Such and such evil God on Guyon reare,  
And worse and worse, young orphan, be  
thy payne,

If I or thou dew vengeance doe forbeare,  
Till guiltie blood her guerdon doe obtayne.'  
So shedding many teares, they cload the  
earth agayne.

## CANTO 11

Babes bloody handes may not be clensd:  
The face of Golden Meane:  
Her sisters, two Extremities,  
Strive her to banish cleane.

## I

THUS when Sir Guyon, with his faithful  
guyde,

Had with dew rites and dolorous lament  
The end of their sad tragedie nptyde,  
The litle babe up in his armes he hent;  
Who, with sweet pleasaunce and bold bland-  
ishment,

Gan smyle on them, that rather ought to  
weepe,

As carelesse of his woe, or innocent  
Of that was doen; that ruth emperced  
deepe

In that knightes hart, and wordes with bit-  
ter teares did steepe:

## II

'Ah! lucklesse babe, borne under cruell  
starre,

And in dead parents balefull ashes bred,  
Full little weenest thou, what sorrowes are  
Left thee for porcion of thy livelyhed:

Poore orphan! in the wide world scat-  
tered,

As budding braunch rent from the native  
tree,

And throwen forth, till it be withered!  
Such is the state of men! Thus enter we  
Into this life with woe, and end with  
miseree!'

## III

Then soft him selfe inclyning on his knee  
Downe to that well, did in the water weene  
(So love does loath disdaine full nicitee)  
His guiltie handes from bloody gore to  
cleene.

He washt them oft and oft, yet nought they  
beene

For all his washing cleaner. Still he strove,  
Yet still the litle hands were bloody seene:  
The which him into great amaz'ment drove,  
And into diverse doubt his wavering wonder  
clove.

## IV

He wist not whether blott of fowle offence  
Might not be purgd with water nor with  
bath;

Or that High God, in lieu of innocence,  
Imprinted had that token of his wrath,  
To shew how sore bloodguiltinesse he  
hat'th;

Or that the charme and veneme, which they  
dronck,

Their blood with secret filth infected hath,  
Being diffused through the sencelesse \*ronck,  
That, through the great contagion, direful  
deadly stonck.

## V

Whom thus at gaze the palmer gan to bord  
With goodly reason, and thus fayre be-  
spake:

'Ye bene right hard amated, gracious lord,  
And of your ignorance great merveill  
make,

Whiles cause not well conceived ye mis-  
take.

But know, that secret vertues are infusd  
In every fountaine, and in everie lake,

Which who hath skill them rightly to have  
chusd  
To prooue of passing wonders hath full  
often usd.

## VI

'Of those some were so from their sourse  
indewd  
By great Dame Nature, from whose fruit-  
full pap  
Their welheads spring, and are with moist-  
ure deawd;  
Which feedes each living plant with liquid  
sap,  
And filles with flowres fayre Floraces painted  
lap:  
But other some by guifte of later grace,  
Or by good prayers, or by other hap,  
Had vertue poured into their waters bace,  
And thenceforth were renoumd, and sought  
from place to place.

## VII

Such is this well, wrought by occasion  
straunge,  
Which to her nymph befell. Upon a day,  
As she the woodes with bow and shaftes  
did raunge,  
The hartlesse hynd and robucke to dismay,  
Dan Faunus chaunst to meet her by the  
way,  
And kindling fire at her faire burning  
eye,  
Inflamed was to follow beauties pray,  
And chased her, that fast from him did  
fly;  
As hynd from her, so she fled from her  
enimy.

## VIII

'At last, when fayling breath began to  
faint,  
And saw no meanes to scape, of shame  
affrayd,  
She set her downe to weepe for sore con-  
straint,  
And to Diana calling lowd for ayde,  
Her deare besought, to let her die a mayd.  
The goddesse heard, and suddeine, where  
she sate,  
Welling out streames of teares, and quite  
dismayd  
With stony feare of that rude rustick mate,  
Transformd her to a stone from stedfast  
virgins state.

## IX

'Lo! now she is that stone, from whose two  
heads,  
As from two weeping eyes, fresh streames  
do flow,  
Yet colde through feare and old conceived  
dreads;  
And yet the stone her semblance seemes to  
show,  
Shapt like a maide, that such ye may her  
know;  
And yet her vertues in her water byde;  
For it is chaste and pure, as purest snow,  
Ne lets her waves with any filth be dyde,  
But ever like her selfe unstayned hath benee  
tryde.

## X

'From thence it comes, that this babes  
bloody hand  
May not be elensd with water of this  
well:  
Ne certes, sir, strive you it to withstand,  
But let them still be bloody, as befell,  
That they his mothers innocence may tell,  
As she bequeathd in her last testament;  
That as a sacred symbole it may dwell  
In her sonnes flesh, to mind revengement,  
And be for all chaste dames an endlesse  
moniment.'

## XI

He harkned to his reason, and the childe  
Uptaking, to the palmer gave to beare;  
But his sad fathers armes with blood de-  
filde,  
An heaue load, himselfe did lightly reare;  
And turning to that place, in which whyl-  
care  
He left his loftie steed with golden sell  
And goodly gorgeous barbes, him found not  
theare:  
By other accident, that earst befell,  
He is conuaide; but how or where, here fits  
not tell.

## XII

Which when Sir Guyon saw, all were he  
wroth,  
Yet algates mote he soft himselfe appease,  
And fairely fare on foot, how ever loth:  
His double burden did him sore disease.  
So long they traueiled with litle ease,  
Till that at last they to a castle came,  
Built on a rocke adjoining to the seas:



It was an auncient worke of antique fame,  
And wondrous strong by nature, and by  
skilfull frame.

## XIII

Therein three sisters dwelt of sundry sort,  
The children of one syre by mothers three;  
Who dying whylome did divide this fort  
To them by equall shares in equall fee:  
But stryfull mind and diverse qualitee  
Drew them in partes, and each made others  
foe:

Still did they strive, and daily disagree;  
The eldest did against the youngest goe,  
And both against the middest meant to  
worken woe.

## XIV

Where when the knight arriv'd, he was  
right well  
Receiv'd, as knight of so much worth be-  
came,

Of second sister, who did far excell  
The other two; Medina was her name,  
A sober sad, and comely courteous dame;  
Who, rich arrayd, and yet in modest guise,  
In goodly garments, that her well be-  
came,

Fayre marching forth in honorable wize,  
Him at the threshold mett, and well did  
enterprize.

## XV

She led him up into a goodly bowre,  
And comely courted with meet modestie,  
Ne in her speech, ne in her haviour,  
Was lightnesse seene, or looser vanitie,  
But gracious womanhood, and gravitie,  
Above the reason of her youthly yeares:  
Her golden lockes she roundly did uptye  
In breaded tramels, that no looser heares  
Did out of order stray about her daintie  
cares.

## XVI

Whilest she her selfe thus busily did frame,  
Seemely to entertaime her new-come guest,  
Newes hereof to her other sisters came,  
Who all this while were at their wanton  
rest,

Accourting each her frend with lavish  
fest:

They were two knights of perelesse puis-  
saunce,  
And famous far abroad for warlike gest,

Which to these ladies love did counte-  
naunce,  
And to his mistresse each himselfe strove  
to advaunce.

## XVII

He that made love unto the eldest dame  
Was hight Sir Huddibras, an hardy man;  
Yet not so good of deedes as great of  
name,

Which he by many rash adventures wan,  
Since errant armes to sew he first began:  
More huge in strength then wise in workes  
he was,

And reason with foole-hardize over ran;  
Sterne melancholy did his courage pas;  
And was, for terroure more, all armd in  
shyning bras.

## XVIII

But he that lov'd the youngest was Sans-  
loy,

He that faire Una late fowle outraged,  
The most unruly and the boldest boy,  
That ever warlike weapons menaged,  
And to all lawlesse lust encouraged  
Through strong opinion of his matchlesse  
might;

Ne ought he car'd, whom he endamaged  
By tortious wrong, or whom bereav'd of  
right.

He now this ladies champion chose for love  
to fight.

## XIX

These two gay knights, vowd to so diverse  
loves,

Each other does envy with deadly hate,  
And daily warre against his foeman moves,  
In hope to win more favour with his mate,  
And th' others pleasing service to abate,  
To magnifie his owne. But when they heard,  
How in that place strauge knight arrived  
late,

Both knights and ladies forth right angry  
far'd,

And fereely unto battell sterne themselves  
prepar'd.

## XX

But ere they could proceede unto the place  
Where he abode, themselves at discord  
fell,

And cruell combat joynd in middle space:  
With horrible assault, and fury fell,

They heapt huge strokes, the scorned life to  
quell,  
That all on uprore from her settled seat  
The house was raysd, and all that in did  
dwell;  
Seemd that lowde thunder with amazement  
great  
Did rend the ratling skyes with flames of  
fouldring heat.

## XXI

The noyse thereof cald forth that straunger  
knight,  
To weet what dreadfull thing was there in  
hand;  
Where when as two brave knightes in bloody  
fight  
With deadly rancour he enraunged fond,  
His sunbroad shield about his wrest he  
bond,  
And shyning blade unsheatht, with which  
he ran  
Unto that stead, their strife to understond;  
And at his first arrivall, them began  
With goodly meanes to pacifie, well as he  
can.

## XXII

But they him spying, both with greedy  
forse  
Attonce upon him ran, and him beset  
With strokes of mortall steele without re-  
morse,  
And on his shield like yron sledges bet:  
As when a beare and tygre, being met  
In cruell fight on Lybicke ocean wide,  
Espye a traueiler with feet surbet,  
Whom they in equall pray hope to diuide,  
They stint their strife, and him assayle on  
everie side.

## XXIII

But he, not like a weary traueilere,  
Their sharp assault right boldly did re-  
but,  
And suffred not their blowes to byte him  
nere,  
But with redoubled buffes them backe did  
put:  
Whose grieved mindes, which choler did  
englut,  
Against themselves turning their wrathfull  
spight,  
Gan with new rage their shieldes to hew and  
cut;

But still when Guyon came to part their  
fight,  
With heaue load on him they freshly gan  
to smight.

## XXIV

As a tall ship tossed in troublous seas,  
Whom raging windes, threatening to make  
the pray  
Of the rough rockes, doe diversly disease,  
Meetes two contrarie billowes by the way,  
That her on either side doe sore assay,  
And boast to swallow her in greedy grave;  
Shee, scorning both their spights, does make  
wide way,  
And with her brest breaking the fomy  
wave,  
Does ride on both their backs, and faire her  
self doth save:

## XXV

So boldly he him beares, and rusheth forth  
Betweene them both, by conduct of his  
blade.  
Wondrous great prowesse and heroick  
worth  
He shewd that day, and rare ensample  
made,  
When two so mighty warriours he dis-  
made:  
Attonce he wards and strikes, he takes and  
paies,  
Now forst to yield, now forcing to invade,  
Before, behind, and round about him laies:  
So double was his paines, so double be his  
praise.

## XXVI

Straunge sort of fight, three valiaunt  
knights to see  
Three combates joine in one, and to darraine  
A triple warre with triple enmittee,  
All for their ladies froward love to game,  
Which gotten was but hate. So Love does  
raine  
In stoutest minds, and maketh monstrous  
warre;  
He maketh warre, he maketh peace againe,  
And yett his peace is but continuall jarre:  
O miserable men, that to him subject arre!

## XXVII

Whilst thus they mingled were in furious  
armes,  
The faire Medina, with her tresses torne

And naked brest, in pittie of their harmes,  
 Emongst them ran, and, falling them be-  
 forne,  
 Besought them by the womb, which them  
 had born,  
 And by the loves, which were to them most  
 deare,  
 And by the knighthood, which they sure had  
 sworn,  
 Their deadly cruell discord to forbear,  
 And to her just conditions of faire peace to  
 heare.

## XXVIII

But her two other sisters, standing by,  
 Her lowd gainsaid, and both their cham-  
 pions bad  
 Pursue the end of their strong enmity,  
 As ever of their loves they would be glad.  
 Yet she with pittie words and counsell sad  
 Still strove their stubborne rages to revoke,  
 That, at the last, suppressing fury mad,  
 They gan abstaine from dint of direfull  
 stroke,  
 And hearken to the sober speaches which  
 she spoke.

## XXIX

'Ah! puissaunt lords, what cursed evill  
 spright,  
 Or fell Erinys, in your noble harts  
 Her hellish brood hath kindled with de-  
 spight,  
 And stird you up to worke your wilfull  
 smarts?  
 Is this the joy of armes? be these the parts  
 Of glorious knighthood, after blood to  
 thrust,  
 And not regard dew right and just desarts?  
 Vaine is the vaunt, and victory unjust,  
 That more to mighty hands then rightful  
 cause doth trust.

## XXX

'And were there rightfull cause of differ-  
 ence,  
 Yet were not better, fayre it to accord,  
 Then with bloodguiltinesse to heape offence,  
 And mortal vengeance joyne to crime ab-  
 hord?  
 O fly from wrath! fly, O my liefest lord!  
 Sad be the sights, and bitter fruites of  
 warre,  
 And thousand furies wait on wrathfull  
 sword;

Ne ought the praise of prowesse more doth  
 marre  
 Then fowle revenging rage, and base con-  
 tentious jarre.

## XXXI

'But lovely concord, and most sacred peace,  
 Doth nourish vertue, and fast friendship  
 breeds;  
 Weake she makes strong, and strong thing  
 does increace,  
 Till it the pitch of highest praise exceeds;  
 Brave be her warres, and honorable deeds,  
 By which she triumphes over yre and pride,  
 And winnes an olive girlond for her meeds:  
 Be therefore, O my deare lords, pacifide,  
 And this misseeming discord meekely lay  
 aside.'

## XXXII

Her gracious words their rancour did appall,  
 And suncke so deepe into their boyling  
 brests,  
 That downe they lett their cruell weapons  
 fall,  
 And lowly did abase their lofty crests  
 To her faire presence and discrete behests.  
 Then she began a treaty to procure,  
 And stablish termes betwixt both their re-  
 quests,  
 That as a law for ever should endure;  
 Which to observe, in word of knights they  
 did assure.

## XXXIII

Which to confirme, and fast to bind their  
 league,  
 After their weary sweat and bloody toile,  
 She them besought, during their quiet  
 treague,  
 Into her lodging to repaire a while,  
 To rest themselves, and grace to reconcile.  
 They soone consent: so forth with her they  
 fare,  
 Where they are well receivd, and made to  
 spoile  
 Themselves of soiled armes, and to prepare  
 Their minds to pleasure, and their mouths  
 to dainty fare.

## XXXIV

And those two froward sisters, their faire  
 loves,  
 Came with them eke, all were they won-  
 drous loth,



And fained cheare, as for the time behoves;  
But could not colour yet so well the troth,  
But that their natures bad appeard in both:  
For both did at their second sister grutch,  
And inly grieve, as doth an hidden moth  
The inner garment frett, not th' utter touch;  
One thought her cheare too litle, th' other  
thought too mutch.

## XXXV

Elissa (so the eldest hight) did deeme  
Such entertainment base, ne ought would  
eat,  
Ne ought would speake, but evermore did  
seeme  
As discontent for want of merth or meat;  
No solace could her paramour intreat  
Her once to show, ne court, nor dalliaunce;  
But with bent lowring browes, as she would  
threat,  
She scould, and frownd with froward  
countenance,  
Unworthy of faire ladies comely govern-  
aunce.

## XXXVI

But young Perissa was of other mynd,  
Full of disport, still laughing, loosely light,  
And quite contrary to her sisters kynd;  
No measure in her mood, no rule of right,  
But poured out in pleasure and delight;  
In wine and meats she flowd above the banck,  
And in excesse exceeded her owne might;  
In sumptuous tirc she joyd her selfe to  
pranck,  
But of her love too lavish (litle have she  
thanck.)

## XXXVII

Fast by her side did sitt the bold Sansloy,  
Fitt mate for such a mincing mineon,  
Who in her loosenesse tooke exceeding joy;  
Might not be found a francker franion,  
Of her leawd parts to make companion:  
But Huddibras, more like a malecontent,  
Did see and grieve at his bold fashion;  
Hardly could he endure his hardiment,  
Yett still he satt, and inly did him selfe  
torment.

## XXXVIII

Betwixt them both the faire Medina sate  
With sober grace and goodly carriage:  
With equall measure she did moderate  
The strong extremities of their outrage.

That forward paire she ever would as-  
swage,  
When they would strive dew reason to ex-  
ceed;  
But that same froward twaine would ac-  
corage,  
And of her plenty adde unto their need:  
So kept she them in order, and her selfe in  
heed.

## XXXIX

Thus fairely shec attempered her feast,  
And pleasd them all with meete satiety:  
At last, when lust of meat and drinke was  
ceast,  
She Guyon deare besought of curtesie,  
To tell from whence he came through  
jeopardy,  
And whether now on new adventure bownd:  
Who with bold grace, and comely gravity,  
Drawing to him the eies of all arownd,  
From lofty siege began these words aloud  
to sownd.

## XL

'This thy demaund, O lady, doth revive  
Fresh memory in me of that great Queene,  
Great and most glorious virgin Queene  
alive,  
That with her souveraine powre, and scepter  
shene,  
All Faery Lond does peaceably sustene.  
In widest ocean she her throne does reare,  
That over all the earth it may be seene;  
As morning sunne her beames dispredden  
cleare,  
And in her face faire peace and mercy doth  
appeare.

## XLI

'In her the richesse of all heavenly grace  
In chiefe degree are heaped up on hye:  
And all, that els this worlds enclosure bace  
Hath great or glorious in mortall eye,  
Adornes the person of her Majestye;  
That men beholding so great excellence,  
And rare perfection in mortalitye,  
Doe her adore with sacred reverence,  
As th' idole of her Makers great magnifi-  
cence.

## XLII

'To her I homnage and my service owe,  
In number of the noblest knightes on  
ground,

Mongst whom on me she deigned to bestowe  
Order of Maydenhead, the most renound,  
That may this day in all the world be  
found.

An yearely solemne feast she woutes to  
hold,

The day that first doth lead the yeare  
around;

To which all knights of worth and courage  
bold

Resort, to heare of straunge adventures to  
be told.

## XLIII

'There this old palmer shewd himselfe  
that day,

And to that mighty Princesse did complaine  
Of grievous mischiefes, which a wicked  
Fay

Had wrought, and many whelmd in deadly  
paine,

Whereof he crav'd redresse. My sove-  
raine,

Whose glory is in graecious deeds, and joyes  
Throughout the world her mercy to main-  
taine,

Eftsoones devisd redresse for such an-  
noyes:

Me, all unfitt for so great purpose, she em-  
ployes.

## XLIV

'Now hath faire Phebe with her silver  
fae

Thrise seene the shadowes of the neather  
world,

Sith last I left that honorable place,  
In which her roiall presence is enrolld;

Ne ever shall I rest in house nor hold,  
Till I that false Aerasia have wonne;

Of whose fowle deedes, too hideous to bee  
told,

I witnesse am, and this their wretched  
sonne,

Whose wofull parents she hath wickedly  
fordonne.'

## XLV

'Tell on, fayre sir,' said she, 'that dolefull  
tale,

From which sad ruth does seeme you to  
restraine,

That we may pittie such unhappie bale,  
And learne from Pleasures poyson to ab-  
staine:

Ill by ensample good doth often gayne.'  
Then forward he his purpose gan pursew,  
And told the story of the mortall payne,  
Which Mordant and Amavia did rew;  
As with lamenting eyes him selfe did lately  
vew.

## XLVI

Night was far spent, and now in ocean deep  
Orion, flying fast from hissing Snake,  
His flaming head did hasten for to steep,  
When of his pitteous tale he end did make;  
Whilst with delight of that he wisely spake  
Those guesstes beguyled did beguyle their  
eyes

Of kindly sleepe, that did them overtake.  
At last, when they had markt the chaunged  
skyes,

They wist their houre was spent; then each  
to rest him hyes.

## CANTO III

Vaine Braggadocchio, getting Guyons  
horse, is made the scorne  
Of knighthood trew, and is of fayre  
Belphebe fowle forlorne.

## I

SOONE as the morrow fayre with purple  
beames

Disperst the shadowes of the misty night,  
And Titan, playing on the eastern streames,  
Gan cleare the deawy ayre with springing  
light,

Sir Guyon, mindfull of his vow yplight,  
Uprose from drowsie couch, and him ad-  
drest

Unto the journey which he had behight:  
His puisaunt arnes about his noble brest,  
And many-folded shield he bound about his  
wrest.

## II

Then taking congè of that virgin pure,  
The bloody-handed babe unto her truth  
Did earnestly committ, and her conjure,  
In vertuous lore to traine his tender youth,  
And all that gentle noriture ensueth:

And that, so soone as ryper yeares he  
ranght,

He might, for memory of that dayes ruth,  
Be called Ruddymane, and thereby taught  
T' avenge his parents death on them that  
had it wrought.

## III

So forth he far'd, as now befell, on foot,  
Sith his good steed is lately from him  
gone;

Patience perforce: helplesse what may it  
boot

To fret for anger, or for griefe to mone?  
His palmer now shall foot no more alone.  
So fortune wrought, as under greene  
woodes syde

He lately hard that dying lady grone,  
He left his steed without, and speare besyde,  
And rushed in on foot to ayd her, ere she  
dyde.

## IV

The whyles a losell wandring by the way,  
One that to bountie never cast his mynd,  
Ne thought of honour ever did assay  
His baser brest, but in his kestrell kynd  
A pleasing vaine of glory he did fynd,  
To which his flowing tounge and troublous  
spright

Gave him great ayd, and made him more  
inclynd:

He, that brave steed there finding ready  
dight,

Purloynd both steed and speare, and ran  
away full light.

## V

Now gan his hart all swell in jollity,  
And of him selfe great hope and help conceiv'd,

That puffed up with smoke of vanity,  
And with selfe-loved personage deceiv'd,  
He gan to hope of men to be receiv'd  
For such as he him thought, or faine would  
bee:

But for in court gay portance he perceiv'd  
And gallant shew to be in greatest gree,  
Eftsoones to court he cast t' advaunce his  
first degree.

## VI

And by the way he chaunced to espy  
One sitting ydle on a sunny banck,  
To whom avaunting in great bravery,  
As peacocke, that his painted plumes doth  
pranck,

He smote his courser in the trembling  
flanck,

And to him threatned his hart-thrilling  
speare:

The seely man, seeing him ryde so ranck

And ayme at him, fell flatt to ground for  
feare,  
And crying 'Mercy!' loud, his pitious  
handes gan reare.

## VII

Thercat the scarcrow wexed wondrous  
prowd,

Through fortune of his first adventure  
fayre,

And with big thundring voice revyld him  
lowd:

'Vile caytive, vassall of dread and despayre,  
Unworthie of the commune breathed ayre,  
Why livest thou, dead dog, a lenger day,  
And doest not unto death thy selfe pre-  
payre?

Dy, or thy selfe my captive yield for ay;  
Great favour I thee graunt, for aunswere  
thus to stay.'

## VIII

'Hold, O deare lord, hold your dead-doing  
hand!'

Then loud he cryde, 'I am your humble  
thrall.'

'Ah, wretch!' quoth he, 'thy destinies with-  
stand

My wrathfull will, and doe for mercy  
call.

I give thee life: therefore prostrated fall,  
And kisse my stirrup; that thy homage  
bee.'

The miser threw him selfe, as an offall,  
Streight at his foot in base humilitee,  
And cleeped him his liege, to hold of him  
in fee.

## IX

So happy peace they made and faire ac-  
cord.

Eftsoones this liegeman gan to wexe more  
bold,

And when he felt the folly of his lord,  
In his owne kind he gan him selfe unfold:  
For he was wylie witted, and growne old  
In cunning sleights and practick knavery.  
From that day forth he cast for to uphold  
His ydle humour with fine flattery,  
And blow the bellows to his swelling  
vanity.

## X

Trompart, fitt man for Braggadochio,  
To serve at court in view of vaunting eye;



Vaineglorious man, when fluttring wind  
 does blow  
 In his light winges, is lifted up to skye;  
 The scorne of knighthood and trew cheval-  
 rye,  
 To thinke, without desert of gentle deed  
 And noble worth, to be advaunced hye:  
 Such prayse is shame; but honour, vertues  
 meed,  
 Doth beare the fayrest flowre in honourable  
 seed.

## XI

So forth they pas, a well consorted payre,  
 Till that at length with Archimage they  
 meet:  
 Who, seeing one that shone in armour fayre,  
 On goodly courser thondring with his feet,  
 Eftsoones supposed him a person meet  
 Of his revenge to make the instrument:  
 For since the Redcrosse Knight he erst did  
 weet,  
 To beene with Guyon knitt in one con-  
 sent,  
 The ill, which earst to him, he now to  
 Guyon ment.

## XII

And comming close to Trompart gan in-  
 quere  
 Of him, what mightie warriour that mote  
 bee,  
 That rode in golden sell with single spere,  
 But wanted sword to wreake his enmi-  
 tee.  
 'He is a great adventurer,' said he,  
 'That hath his sword through hard assay  
 forgone,  
 And now hath vowd, till he avenged bee  
 Of that despight, never to wearen none;  
 That speare is him enough to doen a thou-  
 sand grone.'

## XIII

Th' enchaunter greatly joyed in the vaunt,  
 And weened well ere long his will to win,  
 And both his foen with equall foyle to  
 daunt.  
 Tho to him louting lowly did begin  
 To plaine of wronges, which had committed  
 bin  
 By Guyon, and by that false Redcrosse  
 Knight,  
 Which two, through treason and deceitfull  
 gin,

Had slayne Sir Mordant and his lady bright:  
 That mote him honour win, to wreak so  
 foule despight.

## XIV

Therewith all suddainly he seemd enragd,  
 And threatned death with dreadfull coun-  
 tenaunce,  
 As if their lives had in his hand beene gagd;  
 And with stiffe force shaking his mortall  
 launce,  
 To let him weet his doughtie valiaunce,  
 Thus said: 'Old man, great sure shalbe thy  
 meed,  
 If, where those knights for feare of dew  
 vengeance  
 Doe lurke, thou certainly to mee areed,  
 That I may wreake on them their hainous  
 hateful deed.'

## XV

'Certes, my lord,' said he, 'that shall I  
 soone,  
 And give you eke good helpe to their decay.  
 But mote I wisely you advise to doon,  
 Give no ods to your foes, but doe purvay  
 Your selfe of sword before that bloody day:  
 For they be two the prowtest knights on  
 grownd,  
 And oft approv'd in many hard assay;  
 And eke of surest steele, that may be  
 fownd,  
 Doe arme your self against that day, them  
 to confownd.'

## XVI

'Dotard,' saide he, 'let be thy deepe ad-  
 vise;  
 Seemes that through many yeares thy wits  
 thee faile,  
 And that weake eld hath left thee nothing  
 wise,  
 Els never should thy judgement be so frayle,  
 To measure manhood by the sword or  
 mayle.  
 Is not enough fowre quarters of a man,  
 Withouten sword or shield, an hoste to  
 quayle?  
 Thou litle wotest what this right-hand can:  
 Speake they, which have beheld the bat-  
 tailes which it wan.'

## XVII

The man was much abashed at his boast;  
 Yet well he wist, that who so would contend

With either of those knightes on even  
coast,  
Should neede of all his armes, him to de-  
fend;  
Yet feared least his boldnesse should offend:  
When Braggadocchio saide: 'Once I did  
sweare,  
When with one sword seven knightes I  
brought to end,  
Thence forth in battaile never sword to  
beare,  
But it were that which noblest knight on  
earth doth weare.'

## XVIII

'Perdy, sir knight,' saide then th' enchaun-  
ter blive,  
'That shall I shortly purchase to your hond:  
For now the best and noblest knight alive  
Prince Arthur is, that womnes in Faerie  
Lond;  
He hath a sword, that flames like burning  
brond.  
The same, by my device, I undertake  
Shall by to morrow by thy side be fond.'  
At which bold word that boaster gan to  
quake,  
And wondred in his minde what mote that  
monster make.

## XIX

He stayd not for more bidding, but away  
Was suddein vanished out of his sight:  
The northerne winde his wings did broad  
display  
At his commaund, and reared him up light  
From of the earth to take his aerie flight.  
They lookt about, but no where could espye  
Tract of his foot: then dead through great  
affright  
They both nigh were, and each bad other  
flye:  
Both fled attonce, ne ever backe retourned  
eye:

## XX

Till that they come unto a forrest greene,  
In which they shrowd themselves from  
causeles feare;  
Yet feare them followes still, where so they  
beene.  
Each trembling leafe and whistling wind  
they heare,  
As ghastly bug, their haire on end does  
reare:

Yet both doe strive their fearefulnessse to  
faine.  
At last they heard a horne, that shrilled  
cleare  
Throughout the wood, that ecchoed againe,  
And made the forrest ring, as it would rive  
in twaine.

## XXI

Eft through the thicke they heard one  
rudely rush;  
With noyse whereof he from his loftie  
stead  
Downe fell to ground, and crept into a  
bush,  
To hide his coward head from dying dread.  
But Trompart stoutly stayd to taken heed  
Of what might hap. Eftsoone there stepped  
foorth  
A goodly ladie clad in hunters weed,  
That seemd to be a woman of great  
worth,  
And, by her stately portance, borne of  
heavenly birth.

## XXII

Her face so faire as flesh it seemed not,  
But heavenly pourtraict of bright angels  
hew,  
Cleare as the skye, withouten blame or  
blot,  
Through goodly mixture of complexions  
dew;  
And in her cheekes the vermeill red did  
shew  
Like roses in a bed of lillies shed,  
The which ambrosiall odours from them  
threw,  
And gazers sence with double pleasure fed,  
Hable to heale the sicke, and to revive the  
ded.

## XXIII

In her faire eyes two living lamps did  
flame,  
Kindled above at th' Heavenly Makers light,  
And darted fyrie beames out of the same,  
So passing persant, and so wondrous bright,  
That quite bereav'd the rash beholders  
sight:  
In them the blinded god his lustfull fyre  
To kindle oft assayd, but had no might;  
For with dredd majestie and awfull yre  
She broke his wanton darts, and quenched  
bace desyre.

## XXIV

Her yvorie forehead, full of bountie brave,  
Like a broad table did it selfe dispred,  
For Love his loftie triumphes to engrave,  
And write the battailes of his great god-  
hed:

All good and honour might therein be red:  
For there their dwelling was. And when  
she spake,  
Sweete wordes, like dropping honny, she  
did shed,  
And twixt the perles and rubins softly  
brake  
A silver sound, that heavenly musicke  
seemd to make.

## XXV

Upon her eyelids many Graces sate,  
Under the shadow of her even browes,  
Working belgardes and amorous retrate,  
And everie one her with a grace endowes,  
And everie one with meekenesse to her  
bowes.

So glorious mirrhour of celestially grace,  
And soveraine moniment of mortall vowes,  
How shall frayle pen describe her heavenly  
face,  
For feare, through want of skill, her beauty  
to disgrace?

## XXVI

So faire, and thousand thousand times more  
faire,  
She seemd, when she presented was to  
sight;  
And was yclad, for heat of scorching aire,  
All in a silken camus lylly whight,  
Purfled upon with many a folded plight,  
Which all above besprinkled was through-  
out

With golden aygulets, that glistred bright,  
Like twinckling starres, and all the skirt  
about  
Was hemd with golden fringe.

## XXVII

Below her ham her weed did somewhat  
trayne,  
And her streight legs most bravely were  
embayld  
In gilden buskins of costly cordwayne,  
All bard with golden bendes, which were  
entayld  
With curious antickes, and full fayre  
aumayld:

Before, they fastned were under her knce  
In a rich jewell, and therein entrayld  
The ends of all their knots, that none might  
see  
How they within their fouldings close en-  
wrapped bee.

## XXVIII

Like two faire marble pillours they were  
seene,  
Which doe the temple of the gods support,  
Whom all the people decke with girlands  
greene,  
And honour in their festivall resort;  
Those same with stately grace and princely  
port  
She taught to tread, when she her selfe  
would grace,  
But with the woody nymphes when she did  
sport,  
Or when the flying libbard she did chace,  
She could them nimbly move, and after fly  
apace.

## XXIX

And in her hand a sharpe bore-speare she  
held,  
And at her backe a bow and quiver gay,  
Stuft with steele-headed dartes, wherewith  
she queld  
The salvage beastes in her victorious play,  
Knit with a golden bauldricke, which fore-  
lay  
Athwart her snowy brest, and did divide  
Her daintie paps; which, like young fruit  
in May,  
Now little gan to swell, and being tide,  
Through her thin weed their places only  
signifide.

## XXX

Her yellow lockes, crisped like golden wyre,  
About her shoulders weren loosely shed,  
And when the winde emongst them did in-  
spyre,  
They waved like a penon wyde dispred,  
And low behinde her backe were scattered:  
And whether art it were, or heedelesse  
hap,  
As through the flouring forrest rash she  
fled,  
In her rude heares sweet flowres themselves  
did lap,  
And flourishing fresh leaves and blossomes  
did enwrap.



## XXXI

Such as Diana by the sandy shore  
 Of swift Eurotas, or on Cynthus greene,  
 Where all the nymphes have her unwares  
     forlore,  
 Wandreth alone with bow and arrowes  
     keene,  
 To seeke her game: or as that famous  
     queene  
 Of Amazons, whom Pyrrhus did destroy,  
 The day that first of Priame she was seene,  
 Did shew her selfe in great triumphant  
     joy,  
 To succour the weake state of sad afflicted  
     Troy.

## XXXII

Such when as hartlesse Trompart her did  
     vew,  
 He was dismayed in his coward minde,  
 And doubted, whether he himselfe should  
     shew,  
 Or fly away, or bide alone behinde:  
 Both feare and hope he in her face did  
     finde,  
 When she at last, him spying, thus bespake:  
 'Hayle, groome! didst not thou see a bleed-  
     ing hynde,  
 Whose right haunch earst my stedfast  
     arrow strake?  
 If thou didst, tell me, that I may her over-  
     take.'

## XXXIII

Wherewith reviv'd, this answere forth he  
     threw:  
 'O goddesse, (for such I thee take to bee;  
 For nether doth thy face terrestriall shew,  
 Nor voyce sound mortall) I avow to thee,  
 Such wounded beast as that I did not see,  
 Sith earst into this forrest wild I came.  
 But mote thy goodlyhed forgive it mee,  
 To weete which of the gods I shall thee  
     name,  
 That unto thee dew worship I may rightly  
     frame.'

## XXXIV

To whom she thus — But ere her words  
     ensewd,  
 Unto the bush her eye did suddein glaunce,  
 In which vaine Braggadocchio was mewd,  
 And saw it stirre: she lefte her percing  
     launce,  
 And towards gan a deadly shafte advaunce,

In mind to marke the beast. At which sad  
     stowre,  
 Trompart forth stept, to stay the mortall  
     chaunce,  
 Out crying: 'O, what ever heavenly powre,  
 Or earthly wight thou be, withhold this  
     deadly howre!

## XXXV

'O stay thy hand! for yonder is no game  
 For thy fiers arrowes, them to exercize,  
 But loe! my lord, my liege, whose warlike  
     name  
 Is far renownd through many bold em-  
     prize;  
 And now in shade he shrowded yonder  
     lies.'  
 She staid: with that he crauld out of his  
     nest,  
 Forth creeping on his caitive hands and  
     thies,  
 And standing stoutly up, his lofty crest  
 Did fiercely shake, and rowze, as comming  
     late from rest.

## XXXVI

As fearfull fowle, that long in secret cave  
 For dread of soring hauke her selfe hath  
     hid,  
 Not caring how, her silly life to save,  
 She her gay painted plumes disorderid,  
 Seeing at last her selfe from daunger rid,  
 Peepes forth, and soone renews her native  
     pride;  
 She gins her feathers fowle disfigured  
 Prowdly to prune, and sett on every side;  
 So shakes off shame, ne thinks how erst she  
     did her hide.

## XXXVII

So when her goodly visage he beheld,  
 He gan himselfe to vaunt; but when he  
     vewd  
 Those deadly tooles which in her hand she  
     held,  
 Soone into other fitts he was transmewd,  
 Till she to him her gracious speach renewd:  
 'All haile, sir knight, and well may thee  
     befall,  
 As all the like, which honor have pur-  
     sewd  
 Through deeds of armes and prowesse mar-  
     tiall!  
 All vertue merits praise, but such the most  
     of all.'

## XXXVIII

To whom he thus: 'O fairest under skie,  
Trew be thy words, and worthy of thy praise,  
That warlike feats doest highest glorifie.  
Therein have I spent all my youthly daies,  
And many battailes fought and many fraies  
Throughout the world, wher so they might  
be found,  
Endeavoring my dreaded name to raise  
Above the moone, that Fame may it resound  
In her eternall tromp, with laurell girlond  
cround.

## XXXIX

'But what art thou, O lady, which doest  
raunge  
In this wilde forest, where no pleasure is,  
And doest not it for joyous court exchaunge,  
Emongst thine equall peres, where happy  
blis  
And all delight does raigne, much more  
then this?  
There thou maist love, and dearly loved be,  
And swim in pleasure, which thou here  
doest mis;  
There maist thou best be seene, and best  
maist see:  
The wood is fit for beasts, the court is fitt  
for thee.'

## XL

'Who so in pompe of prowde estate,' quoth  
she,  
'Does swim, and bathes him selfe in courtly  
blis,  
Does waste his dayes in darke obscuritee,  
And in oblivion ever buried is:  
Where ease abownds, yt's eath to doe amis:  
But who his limbs with labours, and his  
mynd  
Behaves with cares, cannot so easy mis.  
Abroad in armes, at home in studious kynd,  
Who seekes with painfull toile, shal Honor  
soonest fynd.

## XLI

'In woods, in waves, in warres she wons to  
dwell,  
And wilbe found with perill and with paine;  
Ne can the man, that moulds in ydle cell,  
Unto her happy mansion attaine:  
Before her gate High God did sweate or-  
daine,  
And wakefull watches ever to abide:  
But easy is the way, and passage plaine

To Pleasures pallace; it may soone be spide,  
And day and night her dores to all stand  
open wide.

## XLII

'In princes court—' The rest she would  
have sayd,  
But that the foolish man, fild with delight  
Of her sweete words, that all his sence dis-  
mayd,  
And with her wondrous beauty ravisht  
quight,  
Gan burne in filthy lust, and, leaping light,  
Thought in his bastard armes her to em-  
brace.  
With that she, swarving backe, her javelin  
bright  
Against him bent, and fiercely did menace:  
So turned her about, and fled away apace.

## XLIII

Which when the pesaunt saw, amazd he  
stood,  
And grieved at her flight; yet durst he nott  
Pursew her steps through wild unknownen  
wood;  
Besides he feard her wrath, and threatned  
shott,  
Whiles in the bush he lay, not yet forgott:  
Ne car'd he greatly for her presence vayne,  
But turning said to Trompart: 'What  
fowle blott  
Is this to knight, that lady should agayne  
Depart to woods untoucht, and leave so  
proud disdayne!'

## XLIV

'Perdy,' said Trompart, 'lett her pas at  
will,  
Least by her presence daunger mote befall.  
For who can tell (and sure I feare it ill)  
But that shee is some powre celestiall?  
For whiles she spake, her great words did  
apall  
My feeble corage, and my heart oppresse,  
'That yet I quake and tremble over all.'  
'And I,' said Braggadocchio, 'thought no  
lesse,  
When first I heard her horn sound with such  
ghastlinesse.

## XLV

'For from my mothers wombe this grace I  
have  
Me given by eternall destiny,

That earthly thing may not my corage  
brave  
Dismay with feare, or cause on foote to  
flye,  
But either hellish feends, or powres on hye:  
Which was the cause, when earst that horne  
I heard,  
Weening it had beene thunder in the skye,  
I hid my selfe from it, as one affeard;  
But when I other knew, my selfe I boldly  
reard.

## XLVI

‘But now, for feare of worse that may be-  
tide,  
Let us soone hence depart.’ They soone  
agree;  
So to his steed he gott, and gan to ride,  
As one unfitt therefore, that all might see  
He had not trayned bene in chevalree.  
Which well that valiaunt courser did dis-  
cerne;  
For he despisd to tread in dew degree,  
But chaufd and fom’d, with corage fiers and  
sterne,  
And to be easd of that base burden still did  
erne.

## CANTO IV

Guyon does Furor bind in chaines,  
And stops Occasion:  
Delivers Phedon, and therefore  
By Strife is rayld uppon.

## I

IN brave poursuitt of honorable deed,  
There is I know not what great difference  
Betweene the vulgar and the noble seed,  
Which unto things of valorous pretence  
Seemes to be borne by native influence;  
As feates of armes, and love to entertaine;  
But chiefly skill to ride seemes a science  
Proper to gentle blood: some others faine  
To menage steeds, as did this vaunter; but  
in vaine.

## II

But he, the rightfull owner of that steede,  
Who well could menage and subdew his  
pride,  
The whiles on foot was forced for to yeed,  
With that blacke palmer, his most trusty  
guide,  
Who suffred not his wandring feete to slide;

But when strong passion, or weake fleshli-  
nesse,  
Would from the right way seeke to draw  
him wide,  
He would, through temperaunce and sted-  
fastnesse,  
Teach him the weak to strengthen, and the  
strong suppress.

## III

It fortun'd, forth faring on his way,  
He saw from far, or seemed for to see,  
Some troublous uprore or contentious fray,  
Whereto he drew in hast, it to agree.  
A mad man, or that feigned mad to bee,  
Drew by the heare along upon the grownd  
A handsom stripling with great crueltee,  
Whom sore he bett, and gor’d with many a  
wound,  
That cheekes with teares, and sydes with  
blood did all abownd.

## IV

And him behynd, a wicked hag did stalke,  
In ragged robes and filthy disaray:  
Her other leg was lame, that she no’t e  
walke,  
But on a staffe her feeble steps did stay:  
Her lockes, that loathly were and hoarie  
gray,  
Grew all afore, and loosly hong unrold,  
But all behinde was bald, and worne away,  
That none thereof could ever taken hold,  
And eke her face ill favourd, full of  
wrinkles old.

## V

And ever as she went, her tounge did walke  
In fowle reproch and termes of vile despight,  
Provoking him, by her outrageous talke,  
To heape more vengeance on that wretched  
wight;  
Sometimes she raught him stones, wherwith  
to smite,  
Sometimes her staffe, though it her one leg  
were,  
Withouten which she could not goe upright;  
Ne any evill meanes she did forbear,  
That might him move to wrath, and indig-  
nation reare.

## VI

The noble Guyon, mov’d with great re-  
morse,  
Approching, first the hag did thrust away,



And after, adding more impetuous forse,  
His mighty hands did on the madman lay,  
And pluckt him backe; who, all on fire  
    streight way,  
Against him turning all his fell intent,  
With beastly brutish rage gan him assay,  
And smott, and bitt, and kickt, and serateht,  
    and rent,  
And did he wist not what in his avengement.

## VII

And sure he was a man of mickle might,  
Had he had governaunce, it well to gnyde:  
But when the frantick fitt inflamd his  
    spright,  
His force was vaine, and strooke more often  
    wyde  
Then at the aymed marke which he had  
    eyde:  
And oft himselve he chaunst to hurt un-  
    wares,  
Whylest reason, blent through passion,  
    nought descryde,  
But as a blindfold bull at randon fares,  
And where he hits, nought knowes, and  
    whom he hurts, nought cares.

## VIII

His rude assault and rugged handeling  
Straunge seemed to the knight, that aye  
    with foe  
In fayre defence and goodly menaging  
Of armes was wont to fight; yet nathemoe  
Was he abashed now, not fighting so,  
But, more enfeeced through his currish  
    play,  
Him sternly grypt, and, hailing to and  
    fro,  
To overthrow him strongly did assay,  
But overthrew him selfe unwares, and lower  
    lay.

## IX

And being downe, the villain sore did beate  
And bruze with clownish fistes his manly  
    face;  
And eke the hag, with many a bitter threat,  
Still cald upon to kill him in the place.  
With whose reproch and odions menace  
The knight emboying in his haughtie hart,  
Knitt all his forces, and gan soone un-  
    brace  
His grasping hold: so lightly did upstart,  
And drew his deadly weapon, to maintaine  
    his part.

## X

Which when the palmer saw, he loudly  
    cryde,  
'Not so, O Guyon, never thinke that so  
That monster can be maistred or destroyd:  
He is not, ah! he is not such a foe,  
As steele can wound, or strength can over-  
    throoe.  
That same is Furor, cursed crnel wight,  
That unto knighthood workes much shame  
    and woe;  
And that same hag, his aged mother, hight  
Occasion, the roote of all wrath and de-  
    spight.

## XI

'With her, who so will raging Furor tame,  
Must first begin, and well her amenge:  
First her restraine from her reprochfull  
    blame  
And evill meanes, with which she doth en-  
    rage  
Her frantick sonne, and kindles his corage;  
Then, when she is withdrawne, or strong  
    withstood,  
It's eath his ydle fury to aswage,  
And calme the tempest of his passion wood:  
The bankes are overflowne, when stopped  
    is the flood.'

## XII

Therewith Sir Gnyon left his first emprise,  
And turning to that woman, fast her hent  
By the hoare lockes that hong before her  
    eyes,  
And to the ground her threw: yet n'ould  
    she stent  
Her bitter rayling and foule revilement,  
But still provokt her sonne to wreake her  
    wrong;  
But nathelesse he did her still torment,  
And catching hold of her ungratious touge,  
Thereon an yron lock did fasten firme and  
    strong.

## XIII

Then whenas use of speach was from her  
    reft,  
With her two crooked handes she signes  
    did make,  
And beckned him, the last help she had  
    left:  
But he that last left helpe away did take,  
And both her handes fast bound unto a  
    stake.

That she note stirre. Then gan her sonne  
to flye  
Full fast away, and did her quite forsake;  
But Guyon after him in hast did hye,  
And soone him overtooke in sad perplexitye.

## XIV

In his strong armes he stify him embraste,  
Who, him gainstriving, nought at all pre-  
vaild:

For all his power was utterly defaste,  
And furious fitts at earst quite weren  
quaild:

Oft he re'nforst, and oft his forces fayld,  
Yet yield he would not, nor his rancor  
slack.

Then him to ground he cast, and rudely  
hayld,  
And both his hands fast bound behind his  
backe,

And both his feet in fetters to an yron rack.

## XV

With hundred yron chaines he did him bind,  
And hundred knots, that did him sore con-  
straine:

Yet his great yron teeth he still did grind,  
And grimly gnash, threatning revenge in  
vaine:

His burning eyen, whom bloody strakes did  
staine,

Stared full wide, and threw forth sparkes  
of fyre,

And more for ranck despight then for great  
paine,

Shakt his long locks, colourd like copper-  
wyre,

And bitt his tawny beard to shew his raging  
yre.

## XVI

Thus whenas Guyon Furor had captivd,  
Turning about he saw that wretched squyre,  
Whom that mad man of life nigh late de-  
privd,

Lying on ground, all soild with blood and  
myre:

Whom whenas he perceived to respyre,  
He gan to comfort, and his woundes to  
dresse.

Being at last recured, he gan inquire,  
What hard mishap him brought to such dis-  
tresse,

And made that caytives thrall, the thrall of  
wretchednesse.

## XVII

With hart then throbbing, and with watry  
eyes,  
'Fayre sir,' quoth he, 'what man can shun  
the hap,

That hidden lyes unwares him to surpryse?  
Misfortune waites advantage to entrap  
The man most wary in her whelming lap.  
So me, weake wretch, of many weakest one,  
Unweeting, and unware of such mishap,  
She brought to mischief through occasion,  
Where this same wicked villain did me light  
upon.

## XVIII

'It was a faithlesse squire, that was the  
sourse

Of all my sorrow, and of these sad teares,  
With whom from tender dug of commune  
nourse

Attonce I was upbrought, and eft, when  
yeares

More rype us reason lent to chose our  
peares,

Our selves in league of vowed love wee  
knitt:

In which we long time, without gealous  
feares

Or faultie thoughts, contynewd, as was fitt;  
And, for my part I vow, dissembled not a  
whitt.

## XIX

'It was my fortune, commune to that age,  
To love a lady fayre of great degree,  
The which was borne of noble parentage,  
And set in highest seat of dignitee,  
Yet seemd no lesse to love then loved to  
bee:

Long I her serv'd, and found her faithfull  
still,

Ne ever thing could cause us disagree:  
Love, that two harts makes one, makes eke  
one will:

Each strove to please, and others pleasure  
to fulfill.

## XX

'My friend, hight Philemon, I did partake  
Of all my love and all my privitie;  
Who greatly joyous seemed for my sake,  
And gracious to that lady, as to mee;  
Ne ever wight, that mote so welcome bee  
As he to her, withouten blott or blame,  
Ne ever thing, that she could thinke or see,

But unto him she would impart the same:  
O wretched man, that would abuse so gentle  
dame!

## XXI

'At last such grace I found, and meanes I  
wrought,  
That I that lady to my spouse had wonne;  
Accord of friendes, consent of parents  
sought,  
Affyaunce made, my happinesse begonne,  
There wanted nought but few rites to be  
donne,  
Which marriage make: that day too farre  
did seeme:  
Most joyous man on whom the shining  
sunne  
Did shew his face, my selfe I did esteeme,  
And that my falsar friend did no lesse joy-  
ous deeme.

## XXII

'But ear that wished day his beame dis-  
closd,  
He, either envying my toward good,  
Or of himselfe to treason ill disposd,  
One day unto me came in friendly mood,  
And told for secret, how he understood,  
That lady, whom I had to me assynd,  
Had both distaind her honorable blood,  
And eke the faith which she to me did bynd;  
And therefore wisht me stay, till I more  
truth should fynd.

## XXIII

'The gnawing anguish and sharp gelosy,  
Which his sad speach infixed in my brest,  
Ranckled so sore, and festred inwardly,  
That my engreeved mind could find no rest,  
Till that the truth thereof I did out wrest;  
And him besought, by that same sacred  
band  
Betwixt us both, to counsell me the best.  
He then with solemne oath and plighted hand  
Assurd, ere long the truth to let me under-  
stand.

## XXIV

'Ere long with like againe he boorded mee,  
Saying, he now had boulded all the floure,  
And that it was a groome of base degree,  
Which of my love was partener paramoure:  
Who used in a darkesome inner bowre  
Her oft to meete: which better to approve,  
He promised to bring me at that howre,

When I should see that would me nearer  
move,  
And drive me to withdraw my blind abused  
love.

## XXV

'This gracelesse man, for furtherance of  
his guile,  
Did court the handmayd of my lady deare,  
Who, glad t' embosome his affection vile,  
Did all she might, more pleasing to appeare.  
One day, to worke her to his will more  
neare,  
He woo'd her thus: "Pryene," (so she  
hight)  
"What great despight doth Fortune to thee  
beare,  
Thus lowly to abase thy beautie bright,  
That it should not deface all others lesser  
light?"

## XXVI

"But if she had her least helpe to thee lent,  
T' adorne thy forme according thy desart,  
Their blazing pride thou wouldest soone  
have blent,  
And staynd their prayses with thy least  
good part;  
Ne should faire Claribell with all her art,  
Though she thy lady be, approach thee neare:  
For prooffe thereof, this evening, as thou art,  
Aray thy selfe in her most gorgeous geare,  
That I may more delight in thy embrace-  
ment deare."

## XXVII

'The mayden, proud through praise and  
mad through love,  
Him hearkned to, and soone her selfe  
arayd,  
The whiles to me the treachour did re-  
move  
His craftie engin, and, as he had sayd,  
Me leading, in a secret corner layd,  
The sad spectatour of my tragedie;  
Where left, he went, and his owne false part  
playd,  
Disguised like that groome of base degree,  
Whom he had feignd th' abuser of my love  
to bee.

## XXVIII

'Eftsoones he came unto th' appointed  
place,  
And with him brought Pryene, rich arayd,



In Clarihellaes clothes. Her proper face  
I not discerned in that darkesome shade,  
But weend it was my love with whom he  
playd.

Ah God! what horroure and tormenting  
griefe

My hart, my handes, mine eyes, and all  
assayd!

Me liefer were ten thousand deathes priefe,  
Then wounde of gealous worme, and shame  
of such repriefe.

## XXIX

I home retourning, fraught with fowle de-  
spight,

And chawing vengeaunce all the way I  
went,

Soone as my loathed love appeard in sight,  
With wrathfull hand I slew her innocent;  
That after soone I dearely did lament:  
For when the cause of that outrageous  
deede

Demaunded, I made plaine and evident,  
Her faultie handmayd, which that bale did  
breede,

Confest how Philemon her wrought to  
chaunge her weede.

## XXX

‘Which when I heard, with horrible affright  
And hellish fury all enragd, I sought  
Upon my selfe that vengeable despight  
To punish: yet it better first I thought,  
To wreake my wrath on him that first it  
wrought.

To Philemon, false faytour Philemon,  
I cast to pay that I so dearely hought:  
Of deadly drugs I gave him drinke anon,  
And washt away his guilt with guilty potion.

## XXXI

‘Thus heaping crime on crime, and griefe  
on griefe,

To losse of love adjoyning losse of frend,  
I meant to purge both with a third mis-  
chiefe,

And in my woes beginner it to end:  
That was Pryene; she aid first offend,  
She last should smart: with which cruell  
intent,

When I at her my murderous blade did  
hend,

She fled away with ghastly dreriment,  
And I, poursewing my fell purpose, after  
went.

## XXXII

‘Feare gave her winges, and rage enforst  
my flight:

Through woods and plaines so long I did  
her chace,

Till this mad man, whom your victorious  
might

Hath now fast bound, me met in middle  
space:

As I her, so he me poursewd apace,  
And shortly overtooke: I, breathing yre,  
Sore chauffed at my stay in such a cace,  
And with my heat kindled his cruell fyre;  
Which kindled once, his mother did more  
rage inspyre.

## XXXIII

‘Betwixt them both, they have me doen to  
dye,

Through wounds, and strokes, and stub-  
borne handling,

That death were better then such agony  
As griefe and fury unto me did bring;  
Of which in me yet stickes the mortal  
sting,

That during life will never he appeasd.’  
When he thus ended had his sorrowing,  
Said Guyon: ‘Squyre, sore have ye heene  
diseasd;

But all your hurts may soone through tem-  
perance be easd.’

## XXXIV

Then gan the palmer thus: ‘Most wretched  
man,

That to affections does the hridle lend!  
In their beginning they are weake and wan,  
But soone through suff’rance growe to  
fearefull end.

Whiles they are weake, betimes with them  
contend:

For when they once to perfect strength do  
grow,

Strong warres they make, and cruell battry  
hend

Gainst fort of reason, it to overthrow:  
Wrath, gelosy, griefe, love this squyre have  
laide thus low.

## XXXV

‘Wrath, gealosie, griefe, love do thus  
expell:

Wrath is a fire, and gealosie a weede,  
Griefe is a flood, and love a monster fell;  
The fire of sparkes, the weede of little seede,

The flood of drops, the monster filth did breede:  
 But sparks, seed, drops, and filth do thus delay;  
 The sparks soone quench, the springing seed outweed,  
 The drops dry up, and filth wipe cleane away:  
 So shall wrath, gealosy, grieve, love die and decay.'

## XXXVI

'Unlucky squire,' saide Guyon, 'sith thou hast  
 Falne into mischiefe through intemper-  
 aunce,  
 Henceforth take heede of that thou now  
 hast past,  
 And guyde thy waies with warie govern-  
 aunce,  
 Least worse betide thee by some later  
 chaunce.  
 But read how art thou nam'd, and of what  
 kin.'  
 'Phedon I hight,' quoth he, 'and do ad-  
 vance  
 Mine auncestry from famous Coradin,  
 Who first to rayse our house to honour did  
 begin.'

## XXXVII

'Thus as he spake, lo! far away they spyde  
 A varlet ranning towards hastily,  
 Whose flying feet so fast their way applyde,  
 That round about a cloud of dust did fly,  
 Which, mingled all with sweate, did dim  
 his eye.  
 He soone approached, panting, breathlesse,  
 whot,  
 And all so soyld, that none could him de-  
 sery.  
 His countenance was bold, and bashed  
 not  
 For Guyons lookes, but scornefull eyglaunce  
 at him shot.

## XXXVIII

Behind his backe he bore a brasen shield,  
 On which was drawn faire, in colours fit,  
 A flaming fire in midst of bloody field,  
 And round about the wreath this word was  
 writ,  
*Burnt I doe burne.* Right well beseeemed it  
 To be the shield of some redoubted knight:  
 And in his hand two dartes exceeding slit

And deadly sharp he held, whose heads  
 were dight  
 In pyoson and in blood of malice and de-  
 spight.

## XXXIX

When he in presence came, to Guyon first  
 He boldly spake: 'Sir knight, if knight  
 thou bee,  
 Abandon this forestalled place at erst,  
 For feare of further harme, I counsell thee;  
 Or bide the chaunce at thine owne jeopar-  
 dee.'  
 The knight at his great boldnesse wondered,  
 And though he scornd his ydle vanitee,  
 Yet mildly him to purpose answered;  
 For not to grow of nought he it conjectured.

## XL

'Varlet, this place most dew to me I  
 deeme,  
 Yielded by him that held it forcibly.  
 But whence shold come that harme, which  
 thou dost seeme  
 To threat to him that findes his chaunce  
 t' aby'e?'  
 'Perdy,' sayd he, 'here comes, and is hard  
 by,  
 A knight of wondrous powre and great  
 assay,  
 That never yet encountred enemy,  
 But did him deadly daunt, or fowle dismay;  
 Ne thou for better hope, if thou his pre-  
 sence stay.'

## XLI

'How hight he then,' sayd Guyon, 'and  
 from whence?'  
 'Pyrochles is his name, renowmed farre  
 For his bold feates and hardy confidence,  
 Full oft approvd in many a cruell warre;  
 The brother of Cymochles, both which arre  
 The sonnes of old Acrates and Despight,  
 Acrates, sonne of Phlegeton and Jarre;  
 But Phlegeton is sonne of Herebus and  
 Night:  
 But Herebus sonne of Aeternitie is hight.

## XLII

'So from immortall race he does proceede,  
 That mortall hands may not withstand his  
 might,  
 Drad for his derring doe and bloody deed:  
 For all in blood and spoile is his delight.  
 His am I Atin, his in wrong and right,

That matter make for him to worke upon,  
And stirre him up to strife and cruell fight.  
Fly therefore, fly this fearfull stead anon,  
Least thy foolhardize worke thy sad confu-  
sion.'

## XLIII

'His be that care, whom most it doth con-  
cerne,'  
Sayd he: 'but whether with such hasty  
flight  
Art thou now bound? for well mote I dis-  
cerne  
Great cause, that carries thee so swifte and  
light.'  
'My lord,' quoth he, 'me sent, and streight  
behight  
To seeke Occasion, where so she bee:  
For he is all disposd to bloody fight,  
And breathes out wrath and hainous cruel-  
tee:  
Hard is his hap, that first fals in his jeo-  
pardee.'

## XLIV

'Mad man,' said then the palmer, 'that  
does seeke  
Occasion to wrath, and cause of strife!  
Shee comes unsought, and shouned followes  
eke.  
Happy who can abstaine, when Rancor rife  
Kindles revenge, and threats his rusty  
knife:  
Woe never wants, where every cause is  
caught,  
And rash Occasion makes unquiet life.'  
'Then loe! wher bound she sits, whom thou  
hast sought,'  
Said Guyon: 'let that message to thy lord  
be brought.'

## XLV

That when the varlett heard and saw,  
streight way  
He waxed wondrous wroth, and said: 'Vile  
knight,  
That knights and knighthood doest with  
shame upbray,  
And shewst th' ensample of thy childishe  
might,  
With silly weake old woman thus to fight!  
Great glory and gay spoile sure hast thou  
gott,  
And stoutly prov'd thy puissaunce here in  
sight.

That shall Pyrochles well requite, I wott,  
And with thy blood abolish so reprochfull  
blott.'

## XLVI

With that, one of his thrillant darts he  
threw,  
Headed with yre and vengeable despight:  
The quivering steele his aymed end wel  
knew,  
And to his brest it selfe intended right.  
But he was wary, and, ere it empight  
In the meant marke, advaunst his shield  
atweene,  
On which it seizing, no way enter might,  
But backe rebownding left the forehead  
keene:  
Eftsoones he fled away, and might no where  
be seene.

## CANTO V

Pyrochles does with Guyon fight,  
And Furors chayne unbinds;  
Of whom sore hurt, for his revenge  
Attin Cymochles finds.

## I

WHO ever doth to temperaunce apply  
His stedfast life, and all his actions frame,  
Trust me, shal find no greater enemy,  
Then stubborne perturbation, to the same;  
To which right wel the wise doe give that  
name;  
For it the goodly peace of staid mindes  
Does overthrow, and troublous warre pro-  
clame:  
His owne woes author, who so bound it  
findes,  
As did Pyrochles, and it wilfully unbides.

## II

After that varlets flight, it was not long,  
Ere on the plaine fast pricking Guyon  
spide  
One in bright armes embatteiled full strong,  
That as the sunny beames doe glaunce and  
glide  
Upon the trembling wave, so shined bright,  
And round about him threw forth sparkling  
fire,  
That seemd him to enflame on every side:  
His steed was bloody red, and fomed yre,  
When with the maistring spur he did him  
roughly stire.



## III

Approching nigh, he never staid to greet,  
 Ne chaffar words, prowd corage to pro-  
     voke,  
 But prickt so fiers, that underneath his  
 feete  
 The smouldring dust did rownd about him  
 smoke,  
 Both horse and man nigh able for to choke;  
 And fayrly conching his steeleheaded speare,  
 Him first saluted with a sturdy stroke:  
 It booted nought Sir Guyon, comming  
 neare,  
 To thinke such hideous puissaunce on foot  
 to beare;

## IV

But lightly shunned it, and passing by,  
 With his bright blade did smite at him so  
 fell,  
 That the sharpe steele, arriving forcibly  
 On his broad shield, bitt not, but glauncing  
 fell  
 On his horse necke before the quilted sell,  
 And from the head the body sundred quight.  
 So him, dismounted low, he did compell  
 On foot with him to matchen equall fight;  
 The truncked beast, fast bleeding, did him  
 fowly dight.

## V

Sore bruized with the fall, he slow uprose,  
 And all enraged, thus him loudly shent:  
 'Disleall knight, whose coward corage chose  
 To wreake it selfe on beast all innocent,  
 And shund the marke at which it should be  
 ment!  
 Therby thine armes seem strong, but man-  
 hood frayl:  
 So hast thou oft with guile thine honor  
 blent;  
 But litle may such guile thee now avayl,  
 If wonted force and fortune doe not much  
 me fayl.'

## VI

With that he drew his flaming sword, and  
 strooke  
 At him so fiercely, that the upper marge  
 Of his sevenfolded shield away it tooke,  
 And glauncing on his helmet, made a large  
 And open gash therein: were not his targe,  
 That broke the violence of his intent,  
 The weary sowle from thence it would dis-  
 charge:

Nathelesse so sore a buff to him it lent,  
 That made him reele, and to his brest his  
 bever bent.

## VII

Exceeding wroth was Guyon at that blow,  
 And much ashamd that stroke of living  
 arme  
 Should him dismay, and make him stoup so  
 low,  
 Though otherwise it did him litle harne:  
 Tho, hurling high his yron braced arme,  
 He smote so manly on his shoulder plate,  
 That all his left side it did quite disarm;  
 Yet there the steele stayd not, but inly bate  
 Deepe in his flesh, and opened wide a red  
 floodgate.

## VIII

Deadly dismayd with horror of that dint  
 Pyrochles was, and grieved eke entyre;  
 Yet nathemore did it his fury stint,  
 But added flame unto his former fire,  
 That welnigh molt his hart in raging yre;  
 Ne thenceforth his approved skill, to ward,  
 Or strike, or hurtle rownd in warlike gyre,  
 Remembred he, ne ear'd for his saufgard,  
 But rudely rag'd, and like a cruel tygre  
 far'd.

## IX

He hewd, and lasht, and foyned, and thondred  
 blowes,  
 And every way did seeke into his life;  
 Ne plate, ne male could ward so mighty  
 throwes,  
 But yelded passage to his cruell knife.  
 But Guyon, in the heat of all his strife,  
 Was wary wise, and closely did awayt  
 Avauntage, whilest his foe did rage most  
 rife:  
 Sometimes a thwart, sometimes he strook  
 him strait,  
 And falsed oft his blowes, t' illude him  
 with such bayt.

## X

Like as a lyon, whose imperiall powre  
 A prowd rebellious unicorne defyes,  
 T' avoide the rash assault and wrathful  
 stowre  
 Of his fiers foe, him to a tree applies,  
 And when him rouning in full course he  
 spyes,  
 He slips aside; the whiles that furious beast

His precious horne, sought of his enemyes,  
Strikes in the stocke, ne thence can be re-  
least,  
But to the mighty victor yields a bounteous  
feast.

## XI

With such faire sleight him Guyon often  
fayld,  
Till at the last all breathlesse, weary, faint  
Him spying, with fresh onsett he assayld,  
And kindling new his corage seeming  
queint,  
Strooke him so hugely, that through great  
constraint  
He made him stoup perforce unto his knee,  
And doe unwilling worship to the saint,  
That on his shield depainted he did see:  
Such homage till that instant never learned  
hee.

## XII

Whom Guyon seeing stoup, poursewed fast  
The present offer of faire victory,  
And soone his dreadfull blade about he cast,  
Wherewith he smote his haughty crest so  
hye,  
That streight on grownd made him full  
low to lye;  
Then on his brest his victor foote he thrust:  
With that he cryde: 'Mercy! doe me not  
dye,  
Ne deeme thy force by Fortunes doome un-  
just,  
That hath (maugre her spight!) thus low  
me laid in dust.'

## XIII

Eftsoones his cruel hand Sir Guyon stayd,  
Tempring the passion with advizement  
slow,  
And maistring might on eniuy dismayd;  
For th'equall die of warre he well did know:  
Then to him said: 'Live, and alleagaunce  
owe  
To him that gives thee life and liberty,  
And henceforth by this daies ensample trow,  
That hasty wroth, and heedlesse hazardry,  
Doe breede repentaunce late, and lasting  
infamy.'

## XIV

So up he let him rise; who, with grim looke  
And count'naunce sterne upstanding, gan to  
grind

His grated teeth for great disdeigne, and  
shooke  
His sandy lockes, long hanging downe be-  
hind,  
Knotted in blood and dust, for grieve of  
mind,  
That he in ods of armes was conquered;  
Yet in himselfe some comfort he did find,  
That him so noble knight had maystered,  
Whose bounty more then might, yet both,  
he wondered.

## XV

Which Guyon marking said: 'Be nought  
agriev'd,  
Sir knight, that thus ye now subdued  
arre:  
Was never man, who most conquestes at-  
chiev'd,  
But sometimes had the worse, and lost by  
warre,  
Yet shortly gaynd that losse exceeded farre:  
Losse is no shame, nor to bee lesse then  
foe,  
But to bee lesser then himselfe doth marre  
Both losers lott, and victours prayse alsoe:  
Vaine others overthrowes who selfe doth  
overthrow.

## XVI

'Fly, O Pyrochles, fly the dreadfull warre,  
That in thy selfe thy lesser partes doe move,  
Outrageous anger, and woe working jarre,  
Direfull impatience, and hartmurdring love;  
Those, those thy foes, those warriours far  
remove,  
Which thee to endlesse bale captived lead.  
But sith in might thou didst my merey  
prove,  
Of courtesie to mee the cause aread,  
That thee against me drew with so impetu-  
ous dread.'

## XVII

'Dreadlesse,' said he, 'that shall I soone  
declare:  
It was complaind that thou hadst done great  
tort  
Unto an aged woman, poore and bare,  
And thralld her in chaines with strong  
effort,  
Voide of all succour and needfull comfort:  
That ill beseemes thee, such as I thee see,  
To worke such shame. Therefore I thee  
exhort

To chaunge thy will, and set Occasion free,  
And to her captive some yield his first  
libertee.'

## XVIII

Thereat Sir Guyon smylde: 'And is that  
all,'

Said he, 'that thee so sore displeased hath?  
Great mercy sure, for to enlarge a thrall,  
Whose freedom shall thee turne to greatest  
scath!

Nath'lesse now quench thy whott emboyl-  
ing wrath:

Loe! there they bee; to thee I yield them  
free.'

Thereat he wondrous glad, out of the  
path

Did lightly leape, where he them bound did  
see,

And gan to breake the bands of their cap-  
tivitee.

## XIX

Soone as Occasion felt her selfe untyde,  
Before her sonne could well assoyled bee,  
She to her use returnd, and streight defyde  
Both Guyon and Pyrochles: th' one (said  
shee)

Bycause her wonne; the other because hee  
Was wonne: so matter did she make of  
nought,

To stirre up strife, and do them disagree:  
But soone as Furor was enlargd, she sought  
To kindle his quencht fyre, and thousand  
causes wrought.

## XX

It was not long ere she inflam'd him so,  
That he would algates with Pyrochles fight,  
And his redeemer chalengd for his foe,  
Because he had not well mainteind his right,  
But yielded had to that same straunger  
knight:

Now gan Pyrochles wex as wood as hee,  
And him affronted with impatient might:  
So both together fiers engrasped bee,  
Whyles Guyon, standing by, their uncouth  
strife does see.

## XXI

Him all that while Occasion did provoke  
Against Pyrochles, and new matter fram'd  
Upon the old, him stirring to bee wroke  
Of his late wronges, in which she oft him  
blam'd

For suffering such abuse as knighthood  
sham'd,

And him dishabled quyte. But he was wise,  
Ne would with vaine occasions be inflam'd;  
Yet others she more urgent did devise;  
Yet nothing could him to impatience entise.

## XXII

Their fell contention still increased more,  
And more thereby increased Furors might,  
That he his foe has hurt, and wounded  
sore,

And him in blood and durt deformed  
quight.

His mother eke, more to augment his  
spight,

Now brought to him a flaming fyer brond,  
Which she in Stygian lake, ay burning  
bright,

Had kindled: that she gave into his hond,  
That, armd with fire, more hardly he mote  
him withstood.

## XXIII

Tho gan that villein wex so fiers and strong,  
That nothing might sustaine his furious  
forse:

He cast him downe to ground, and all along  
Drew him through durt and myre without  
remorse,

And fowly battered his comely corse,  
That Guyon much disdeign'd so loathly sight.

At last he was compeld to cry perforce,  
'Help, O Sir Guyon! helpe, most noble  
knight,

To ridd a wretched man from handes of hell-  
ish wight!'

## XXIV

The knight was greatly moved at his playnt,  
And gan him dight to succour his distresse,  
Till that the palmer, by his grave restraynt,  
Him stayd from yielding pitifull redresse,  
And said: 'Deare sonne, thy causelesse  
ruth represe,

Ne let thy stout hart melt in pitty vayue:  
He that his sorow sought through wilful-  
nesse,

And his foe fettred would release agayne,  
Deserves to taste his follies fruit, repented  
payne.'

## XXV

Guyon obeyd: so him away he drew  
From needlesse trouble of renewing fight



Already fought, his voyage to poursew.  
 But rash Pyrochles varlett, Atin hight,  
 When late he saw his lord in heauie plight,  
 Under Sir Guyons puissaunt stroke to  
 fall,  
 Him deeming dead, as then he seemd in  
 sight,  
 Fledd fast away, to tell his funerall  
 Unto his brother, whom Cynochles men did  
 call.

## XXVI

He was a man of rare redoubted might,  
 Famous throughout the world for warlike  
 prayse,  
 And glorious spoiles, purchast in perilous  
 fight:  
 Full many doughtie knightes he in his dayes  
 Had doen to death, subdewde in equall  
 frayes,  
 Whose carkases, for terrour of his name,  
 Of fowles and beastes he made the piteous  
 prayes,  
 And hong their conquerd armes for more  
 defame  
 On gallow trees, in honour of his dearest  
 dame.

## XXVII

His dearest dame is that enchaunteresse,  
 The vyle Acrasia, that with vaine delightes,  
 And ydle pleasures in her Bowre of Blisse,  
 Does charme her lovers, and the feeble  
 sprighthes  
 Can call out of the bodies of fraile wightes;  
 Whom then she does trasforme to monstrous  
 hewes,  
 And horribly misshapes with ugly sightes,  
 Captiv'd eternally in yron mewes,  
 And darksom dens, where Titan his face  
 never shewes.

## XXVIII

There Atin fownd Cynochles sojourning,  
 To serve his lemans love: for he by kynd  
 Was given all to lust and loose living,  
 When euer his fiers handes he free mote  
 fynd:  
 And now he has poud out his ydle mynd  
 In daintie delices and lavish joyes,  
 Having his warlike weapons cast behynd,  
 And flowes in pleasures and vaine pleasing  
 toyes,  
 Mingled amongst loose ladies and lascivious  
 boyes.

## XXIX

And over him, Art, stryving to compayre  
 With Nature, did an arber greene dispred,  
 Framed of wanton yvie, flouring fayre,  
 Through which the fragrant eglantine did  
 spred  
 His prickling armes, entrayld with roses  
 red,  
 Which daintie odours round about them  
 threw;  
 And all within with flowres was garnished,  
 That, when myld Zephyrus emongst them  
 blew,  
 Did breath out bounteous smels, and painted  
 colors shew.

## XXX

And fast beside, there trickled softly downe  
 A gentle streame, whose murmuring wave  
 did play  
 Emongst the puny stones, and made a  
 sowne,  
 To lull him soft a sleepe, that by it lay:  
 The wearie traveler, wandring that way,  
 Therein did often quench his thristy heat,  
 And then by it his wearie limbes display,  
 Whiles creeping slomber made him to for-  
 get  
 His former payne, and wypt away his toil-  
 som sweat.

## XXXI

And on the other syde a pleasaunt grove  
 Was shott up high, full of the stately tree  
 That dedicated is t' Olympick Jove,  
 And to his sonne Alcides, whenas hee  
 Gaynd in Nemea goodly victoree:  
 Therein the mery birdes of every sorte  
 Chaunted alowd their chearefull harmonie,  
 And made emongst them selves a sweete  
 consort,  
 That quickned the dull spright with music-  
 all comfort.

## XXXII

There he him found all carelesly displaid,  
 In secrete shadow from the sunny ray,  
 On a sweet bed of lillies softly laid,  
 Amidst a flock of damzelles fresh and gay,  
 That rownd about him dissolute did play  
 Their wanton follies and light meriment;  
 Every of which did loosely disaray  
 Her upper partes of meet habiliments,  
 And shewd them naked, deckt with many  
 ornaments.

## XXXIII

And every of them strove, with most delights  
 Him to aggrate, and greatest pleasures shew;  
 Some framd faire lookes, glancing like evening lights,  
 Others sweet wordes, dropping like houny dew;  
 Some bathed kisses, and did soft embrew  
 The sugred licour through his melting lips:  
 One boasts her beautie, and does yield to vew  
 Her dainty limbes above her tender hips;  
 Another her out boasts, and all for tryall strips.

## XXXIV

He, like an adder lurking in the weedes,  
 His wandring thought in deepe desire does steepe,  
 And his frayle eye with spoyle of beauty feedes:  
 Sometimes he falsely faines himselfe to sleepe,  
 Whiles through their lids his wanton eies do peepe,  
 To steale a snatch of amorous conceipt,  
 Whereby close fire into his heart does creepe:  
 So' he them deceives, deceivd in his deceipt,  
 Made dronke with drugs of deare voluptuous receipt.

## XXXV

Attin, arriving there, when him he spyde  
 Thus in still waves of deepe delight to wade,  
 Fiercely approching, to him lowdly cryde,  
 'Cymochles ! oh ! no, but Cymochles shade,  
 In which that manly person late did fade !  
 What is become of great Acrates sonne ?  
 Or where hath he hong up his mortall blade,  
 That hath so many haughty conquests wonne ?  
 Is all his force forlorne, and all his glory donne ?'

## XXXVI

Then pricking him with his sharp-pointed dart,  
 He saide: 'Up, up ! thou womanish weake knight,  
 That here in ladies lap entombed art,  
 Unmindfull of thy praise and prowest might,

And weetlesse eke of lately wrought despight,  
 Whiles sad Pyrochles lies on sencelesse ground,  
 And groneth out his utmost grudging spright,  
 Through many a stroke, and many a streaming wound,  
 Calling thy help in vaine, that here in joyes art dround.'

## XXXVII

Suddeinly out of his delightfull dreame  
 The man awoke, and would have questiond more;  
 But he would not endure that wofull theame  
 For to dilate at large, but urged sore,  
 With percing wordes and pittifull implore,  
 Him hasty to arise. As one affright  
 With hellish feends, or Furies mad uprore,  
 He then uprose, inflamd with fell despight,  
 And called for his armes; for he would al-gates fight.

## XXXVIII

They bene ybrought; he quickly does him dight,  
 And, lightly mounted, passeth on his way;  
 Ne ladies loves, ne sweete entreaties might  
 Appease his heat, or hastie passage stay;  
 For he has vowd to beene avengd that day  
 (That day it selfe him seemed all too long)  
 On him that did Pyrochles deare dismay:  
 So proudly pricketh on his courser strong,  
 And Attin ay him pricks with spurs of shame and wrong.

## CANTO VI

Guyon is of Immodest Merth  
 Led into loose desyre;  
 Fights with Cymochles, whiles his brother burnes in furious fyre.

## I

A HARDER lesson to learne continence  
 In joyous pleasure then in grievous paine:  
 For sweetnesse doth allure the weaker sence  
 So strongly, that uneathes it can refraine  
 From that which feeble nature covets faine;  
 But grieve and wrath, that be her enemies,  
 And foes of life, she better can restraine;

Yet Vertue vauntes in both her victories,  
And Guyon in them all shewes goodly maysteries.

## II

Whom bold Cymochles traveiling to finde,  
With cruell purpose bent to wreake on him  
The wrath which Atin kindled in his mind,  
Came to a river, by whose utmost brim  
Wayting to passe, he saw whereas did swim  
Along the shore, as swift as glaunce of eye,  
A litle gondelay, bedecked trim  
With boughes and arbours woven cunningly,  
That like a litle Forrest seemed outwardly.

## III

And therein sate a lady fresh and fayre,  
Making sweete solace to herselfe alone;  
Sometimes she song, as lowd as larke in ayre,  
Sometimes she laught, that nigh her breth was gone,  
Yet was there not with her else any one,  
That might to her move cause of meriment:  
Matter of merth enough, though there were none,  
She could devise, and thousand waies invent,  
To feede her foolish humour and vaine jolliment.

## IV

Which when far of Cymochles heard and saw,  
He lowdly cald to such as were aboard,  
The little barke unto the shore to draw,  
And him to ferry over that deepe ford.  
The merry mariner unto his word  
Soone hearkned, and her painted bote streightway  
Turnd to the shore, where that same warlike lord  
She in receiv'd; but Atin by no way  
She would admit, albe the knight her much did pray.

## V

Eftsoones her shallow ship away did slide,  
More swift then swallow sheres the liquid skye,  
Withouten oare or pilot it to guide,  
Or winged canvas with the wind to fly:  
Onely she turnd a pin, and by and by  
It cut away upon the yielding wave;

Ne cared she her course for to apply:  
For it was taught the way which she would have,  
And both from rocks and flats it selfe could wisely save.

## VI

And all the way, the wanton damsell found  
New merth, her passenger to entertaine:  
For she in pleasaunt purpose did abound,  
And greatly joyed merry tales to faine,  
Of which a store-house did with her remaine:  
Yet seemed, nothing well they her became;  
For all her wordes she drownd with laughter vaine,  
And wanted grace in utt'ring of the same,  
That turned all her pleasaunce to a scuffling game.

## VII

And other whiles vaine toyes she would devise,  
As her fantasticke wit did most delight:  
Sometimes her head she fondly would aguize  
With gaudy girlonds, or fresh flowrets dight  
About her necke, or rings of rushes plight;  
Sometimes, to do him laugh, she would assay  
To laugh at shaking of the leaves light,  
Or to behold the water worke and play  
About her little frigot, therein making way.

## VIII

Her light behaviour and loose dalliaunee  
Gave wondrous great contentment to the knight,  
That of his way he had no sovenaunce,  
Nor care of vow'd revenge and cruell fight,  
But to weake wench did yield his martiall might:  
So easie was, to quench his flamed minde  
With one sweete drop of sensuall delight;  
So easie is, t' appease the stormy winde  
Of malice in the calme of pleasaunt woman kind.

## IX

Diverse discourses in their way they spent,  
Mongst which Cymochles of her questioned,  
Both what she was, and what that usage ment,



Which in her cott she daily practized.  
 'Vaine man!' saide she, 'that wouldest be  
 reckoned  
 A strauuger in thy home, and ignoraunt  
 Of Phædria (for so my name is red)  
 Of Phædria, thine owne fellow servaunt;  
 For thou to serve Acrasia thy selfe doest  
 vaunt.

## X

'In this wide inland sea, that hight by  
 name  
 The Idle Lake, my wandring ship I row,  
 That knowes her port, and thether sayles  
 by ayme;  
 Ne care, ne feare I, how the wind do blow,  
 Or whether swift I wend, or whether slow:  
 Both slow and swift a like do serve my  
 tourne:  
 Ne swelling Neptune, ne lowd thundring  
 Jove  
 Cau chaunge my cheare, or make me ever  
 mourne:  
 My little boat can safely passe this perilous  
 bourne.'

## XI

Whiles thus she talked, and whiles thus  
 she toyd,  
 They were far past the passage which he  
 spake,  
 And come unto an island, waste and voyd,  
 That floted in the midst of that great lake.  
 There her small gondelay her port did  
 make,  
 And that gay payre issewing on the shore  
 Disburdned her. Their way they forward  
 take  
 Into the laud, that lay them faire before,  
 Whose pleasaunce she him shewd, and  
 plentifull great store.

## XII

It was a chosen plott of fertile land,  
 Emongst wide waves sett, like a litle nest,  
 As if it had by Natures cunning hand  
 Bene choycely picked out from all the rest,  
 And laid forth for ensauple of the best:  
 No dainty flowre or herbe, that growes on  
 grownd,  
 No arborett with painted blossomes drest,  
 And smelling sweete, but there it might be  
 fownd  
 To bud out faire, and her sweete smels  
 throwe al arownd.

## XIII

No tree, whose branches did not bravely  
 spring;  
 No braunch, whereon a fine bird did not  
 sitt;  
 No bird, but did her shrill notes sweetely  
 sing;  
 No song, but did containe a lovely ditt:  
 Trees, braunches, birds, and songs were  
 framed fitt  
 For to allure fraile mind to carelesse ease.  
 Carelesse the man soone woxe, and his weake  
 witt  
 Was overcome of thing that did him please;  
 So pleased, did his wrathfull purpose faire  
 appease.

## XIV

Thus when shee had his eyes and sences  
 fed  
 With false delights, and fild with pleasures  
 vayn,  
 Into a shady dale she soft him led,  
 And laid him downe upon a grassy playn;  
 And her sweete selfe without dread or dis-  
 dayn  
 She sett beside, laying his head disarmd  
 In her loose lap, it softly to sustayn,  
 Where soone he slumbred, fearing not be  
 harmd,  
 The whiles with a love lay she thus him  
 sweetly charmd:

## XV

'Behold, O man, that toilesome paines doest  
 take,  
 The flowrs, the fields, and all that pleasaunt  
 growes,  
 How they them selves doe thine ensauple  
 make,  
 Whiles nothing envious Nature them forth  
 throwes  
 Out of her fruitfull lap; how no man  
 knowes,  
 They spring, they bud, they blossome fresh  
 and faire,  
 And decke the world with their rich pounp-  
 ous showes;  
 Yet no man for them taketh paines or care,  
 Yet no man to them can his carefull paines  
 compare.

## XVI

'The lilly, lady of the flowering field,  
 The flowre deluce, her lovely paramoure,

Bid thee to them thy fruitlesse labors yield,  
And soone leave off this toylsome weary  
stoure:

Loe, loe, how brave she deeks her bounteous  
boure,

With silkin curtens and gold coverletts,  
Therein to shrowd her sumptuous belamoure!

Yet nether spinnes nor cards, ne cares nor  
fretts,

But to her mother Nature all her care she  
lettts.

## XVII

'Why then doest thou, O man, that of them  
all

Art lord, and eke of Nature soveraine,  
Wilfully make thy selfe a wretched thrall,  
And waste thy joyous howres in needelesse  
paine,

Seeking for daunger and adventures vaine?  
What bootes it al to have, and nothing use?  
Who shall him rew, that swimming in the  
maine

Will die for thirst, and water doth refuse?  
Refuse such fruitlesse toile, and present  
pleasures chuse.'

## XVIII

By this she had him lulled fast a sleepe,  
That of no worldly thing he care did take;  
Then she with liquors strong his eies did  
steepe,

That nothing should him hastily awake:  
So she him lefte, and did her selfe betake  
Unto her boat again, with which she cleft  
The slouthfull wave of that great griesy  
lake;

Soone shee that island far behind her lefte,  
And now is come to that same place, where  
first she wefte.

## XIX

By this time was the worthy Guyon brought  
Unto the other side of that wide strond,  
Where she was rowing, and for passage  
sought:

Him needed not long call; shee soone to  
hond

Her ferry brought, where him she byding  
fond

With his sad guide: him selfe she tooke  
a boord,

But the blacke palmer suffred still to stond,

Ne would for price or prayers once afford,  
To ferry that old man over the perlous  
foord.

## XX

Guyon was loath to leave his guide behind,  
Yet, being entred, might not backe retyre;  
For the flitt barke, obaying to her mind,  
Forth launched quickly, as she did desire,  
Ne gave him leave to bid that aged sire  
Adieu, but nimble ran her wonted course  
Through the dull billowes thicke as troubled  
mire,

Whom nether wind out of their seat could  
forse,  
Nor timely tides did drive out of their  
sluggish sourse.

## XXI

And by the way, as was her wonted guise,  
Her mery fitt shee freshly gan to reare,  
And did of joy and jollity devize,  
Her selfe to cherish, and her guest to cheare.  
The knight was courteous, and did not for-  
beare

Her honest merth and pleasaunce to partake;  
But when he saw her toy, and gibe, and  
geare,

And passe the bonds of modest merimake,  
Her dalliaunee he despid, and follies did  
forsake.

## XXII

Yet she still followed her former style,  
And said, and did, all that mote him delight,  
Till they arrived in that pleasaunt ile,  
Where sleeping late she lefte her other  
knight.

But whenas Guyon of that land had sight,  
He wist him selfe amisse, and angry said:  
'Ah! dame, perdy ye have not doen me  
right,

Thus to mislead mee, whiles I you obaid:  
Me litle needed from my right way to  
have straid.'

## XXIII

'Faire sir,' quoth she, 'be not displeasd at  
all:

Who fares on sea may not commaund his  
way,

Ne wind and weather at his pleasure call:  
The sea is wide, and easy for to stray;  
The wind unstable, and doth never stay.  
But here a while ye may in safety rest,

Till season serve new passage to assay:  
Better safe port, then be in seas distrest.  
Therewith she laught, and did her earnest  
end in jest.

## XXIV

But he, halfe discontent, mote nathelesse  
Himselfe appease, and issewd forth on  
shore:

The joyes whereof, and liappy fruitfulnessse,  
Such as he saw, she gan him lay before,  
And all, though pleasaunt, yet she made  
much more:

The fields did laugh, the flowres did freshly  
spring,

The trees did bud, and early blossomes hore,  
And all the quire of birds did sweetly sing,  
And told that gardins pleasures in their  
caroling.

## XXV

And she, more sweete then any bird on  
bough,

Would oftentimes emongst them beare a  
part,

And strive to passe (as she could well  
enough)

Their native musicke by her skilful art:  
So did she all, that might his constant  
hart

Withdraw from thought of warlike enter-  
prize,

And drowne in dissolute delights apart,  
Where noise of armes, or vew of martiall  
guize,

Might not revive desire of knightly exercise.

## XXVI

But he was wise, and wary of her will,  
And ever held his hand upon his hart:  
Yet would not seeme so rude, and thewed  
ill,

As to despise so curteous seeming part,  
That gentle lady did to him impart:

But fairly tempring fond desire subdewd,  
And ever her desired to depart.

She list not heare, but her disports pour-  
sewd,

And ever bad him stay, till time the tide  
renewd.

## XXVII

And now by this, Cymochles howre was  
spent,

That he awoke out of his ydle dreme,

And shaking off his drowsy dreriment,  
Gau him avize, howe ill did him beseme,  
In slouthfull sleepe his molten hart to  
steme,

And quench the brond of his conceived  
yre.

Tho up he started, stird with shame ex-  
treme,

Ne staid for his damsell to inquire,  
But marched to the strond, there passage  
to require.

## XXVIII

And in the way he with Sir Guyon mett,  
Accompanyde with Phædria the faire:

Eftsoones he gan to rage, and inly frett,  
Crying: 'Let be that lady debonaire,

Thou reereant knight, and soone thy selfe  
prepaire

To batteile, if thou meane her love to  
gayn:

Loe! loe already, how the fowles in aire  
Doe flocke, awaiting shortly to obtayn

Thy carcas for their pray, the guerdon of  
thy payn.'

## XXIX

And therewithall he fiersly at him flew,  
And with importune outrage him assayld;  
Who, soone preparad to field, his sword forth  
drew,

And him with equall valew countervayld:  
Their mightie strokes their haberjeons dis-  
mayld,

And naked made each others manly spalles;  
The mortall steele despiteously entayld  
Deepe in their flesh, quite through the yron  
walles,

That a large purple stream adown their  
giambeux falles.

## XXX

Cymocles, that had never mett before  
So puissant foe, with envious despight

His prowd presumed force increased more,  
Disdeigning to bee held so long in fight:

Sir Guyon, grndging not so much his  
might,

As those unknighly raylinges which he  
spoke,

With wrathfull fire his corage kindled  
bright,

Thereof devising shortly to be wroke,

And, doubling all his powres, redoubled  
every stroke.



## XXXI

Both of them high attonce their hands en-  
haunst,  
And both attonce their huge blowes down  
did sway:  
Cymochles sword on Guyons shield yglauunst,  
And thereof nigh one quarter sheard away;  
But Guyons angry blade so fiers did play  
On th' others helmet, which as Titan shone,  
That quite it clove his plumed crest in tway,  
And bared all his head unto the bone;  
Wherewith astonisht, still he stood, as sence-  
lesse stone.

## XXXII

Still as he stood, fayre Phædria, that be-  
held  
That deadly daunger, soone atweene them  
ran;  
And at their feet her selfe most humbly  
feld,  
Crying with pitteous voyce, and count'nance  
wail,  
'Ah, well away! most noble lords, how can  
Your cruell eyes endure so pitteous sight,  
To shed your lives on ground? Wo worth  
the man,  
That first did teach the cursed steele to  
bight  
In his owne flesh, and make way to the liv-  
ing spright!

## XXXIII

'If ever love of lady did empierce  
Your yron brestes, or pittie could find place,  
Withhold your bloody handes from battaill  
fierce,  
And sith for me ye fight, to me this grace  
Both yield, to stay your deadly stryfe a  
space.'  
They stayd a while; and forth she gan  
proceed:  
'Most wretched woman, and of wicked race,  
That am the authour of this hainous deed,  
And cause of death betweene two doughtie  
knights do breed!

## XXXIV

'But if for me ye fight, or me will serve,  
Not this rude kynd of battaill, nor these  
armes  
Are meet, the which doe men in bale to  
sterve,  
And doolefull sorrow heape with deadly  
harmes:

Such cruell game my scarmoges disarmes:  
Another warre, and other weapons, I  
Doe love, where Love does give his sweet  
alarmes,  
Without bloodshed, and where the enemy  
Does yield unto his foe a pleasaunt victory.

## XXXV

'Debatefull strife, and cruell enmity,  
The famous name of knighthood fowly  
shend;  
But lovely peace, and gentle amity,  
And in amours the passing howres to spend,  
The mightie martiall handes doe most  
commend;  
Of love they ever greater glory bore,  
Then of their armes: Mars is Cupidoes  
frend,  
And is for Venus loves renowned more,  
Then all his wars and spoiles, the which he  
did of yore.'

## XXXVI

Therewith she sweetly smyld. They  
though full bent  
To prove extremities of bloody fight,  
Yet at her speach their rages gan relent,  
And calmed the sea of their tempestuous  
spight:  
Such powre have pleasing wordes; such is  
the might  
Of courteous clemency in gentle hart.  
Now after all was ceast, the Faery knight  
Besought that damzell suffer him depart,  
And yield him ready passage to that other  
part.

## XXXVII

She no lesse glad, then he desirous, was  
Of his departure thence; for of her joy  
And vaine delight she saw he light did  
pas,  
A foe of folly and immodest toy,  
Still solenne sad, or still disdainfull coy,  
Delighting all in armes and cruell warre,  
That her sweet peace and pleasures did  
annoy,  
Troubled with terrour and unquiet jarre,  
That she well pleased was thence to amove  
him farre.

## XXXVIII

Tho him she brought aboard, and her swift  
bote  
Forthwith directed to that further strand;

The which on the dull waves did lightly  
 flote,  
 And soone arrived on the shallow sand,  
 Where gladsome Guyon salied forth to land,  
 And to that damsell thanks gave for re-  
 ward.  
 Upon that shore he spyed Atin stand,  
 There by his maister left when late he far'd  
 In Phædrias flitt barked over that perlous  
 shard.

## XXXIX

Well could he him remember, sith of late  
 He with Pyrochles sharp debatement made:  
 Streight gan he him revyle, and bitter  
 rate,  
 As shepherdes curre, that in darke even-  
 ings shade  
 Hath tracted forth some salvage beastes  
 trade:  
 'Vile miscreant!' said he, 'whether dost  
 thou flye  
 The shame and death, which will thee soone  
 invade?  
 What coward hand shall doe thee next to  
 dye,  
 That art thus fowly fledd from famous  
 enemy?'

## XL

With that he stifly shooke his steelhead  
 dart:  
 But sober Guyon hearing him so rayle,  
 Though somewhat moved in his mightie  
 hart,  
 Yet with strong reason maistred passion  
 fraile,  
 And passed fayrely forth. He, turning  
 taile,  
 Backe to the strond retyrd, and there still  
 stayd,  
 Awaiting passage, which him late did faile;  
 The whiles Cymochles with that wanton  
 mayd  
 The hasty heat of his avowd revenge de-  
 layd.

## XLI

Whylest there the varlet stood, he saw  
 from farre  
 An armed knight, that towardes him fast  
 ran;  
 He ran on foot, as if in lucklesse warre  
 His forlorne steed from him the victour  
 wan;

He seemed breathlesse, hartlesse, faint,  
 and wan,  
 And all his armour sprinckled was with  
 blood,  
 And soyld with durtie gore, that no man  
 can  
 Discerne the hew thereof. He never stood,  
 But bent his hastie course towardes the ydle  
 flood.

## XLII

The varlett saw, when to the flood he came,  
 How without stop or stay he fiersly lept,  
 And deepe him selfe beducked in the same,  
 That in the lake his loftie crest was stept,  
 Ne of his safetie seemed care he kept,  
 But with his raging armes he rudely flasht  
 The waves about, and all his armour swept,  
 That all the blood and filth away was washt,  
 Yet still he bet the water, and the billowes  
 dasht.

## XLIII

Atin drew nigh, to weet what it mote  
 bee;  
 For much he wondred at that uncouth  
 sight:  
 Whom should he, but his own deare lord,  
 there see,  
 His owne deare lord Pyrochles in sad  
 plight,  
 Ready to drowne him selfe for fell de-  
 spight.  
 'Harrow now out, and well away!' he  
 cryde,  
 'What dismall day hath lent this cursed  
 light,  
 To see my lord so deadly damnifyde?  
 Pyrochles, O Pyrochles, what is thee be-  
 tyde?'

## XLIV

'I burne, I burne, I burne!' then lowd he  
 cryde,  
 'O how I burne with implacable fyre!  
 Yet nought can quench mine inly flaming  
 syde,  
 Nor sea of licour cold, nor lake of myre,  
 Nothing but death can doe me to respyre.'  
 'Ah! be it,' said he, 'from Pyrochles farre,  
 After pursewing Death once to requyre,  
 Or think, that ought those puissant hands  
 may marre:  
 Death is for wretches borne under unhappy  
 starre.'

## XLV

‘Perdye, then is it fitt for me,’ said he,  
 ‘That am, I weene, most wretched man  
 alive,  
 Burning in flames, yet no flames can I see,  
 And dying dayly, dayly yet revive.  
 O Atin, helpe to me last death to give.’  
 The varlet at his plaint was grieved so  
 sore,  
 That his deepe wounded hart in two did  
 rive,  
 And his owne health remembring now no  
 more,  
 Did follow that ensample which he blam’d  
 afore.

## XLVI

Into the lake he lept, his lord to ayd,  
 (So love the dread of daunger doth despise)  
 And of him catching hold, him strongly  
 stayd  
 From drowning. But more happy he then  
 wise,  
 Of that seas nature did him not avise.  
 The waves thereof so slow and sluggish  
 were,  
 Engrost with mud, which did them fowle  
 agrise,  
 That every weighty thing they did upheare,  
 Ne ought mote ever sinck downe to the  
 bottom there.

## XLVII

Whiles thus they struggled in that ydle  
 wave,  
 And strove in vaine, the one him selfe to  
 drowne,  
 The other both from drowning for to save,  
 Lo ! to that shore one in an auncient gowne,  
 Whose hoary locks great gravitie did  
 crowne,  
 Holding in hand a goodly arming sword,  
 By fortune came, ledd with the troublous  
 sowne:  
 Where drenched deepe he fownd in that  
 dull ford  
 The carefull servaunt, stryving with his  
 raging lord.

## XLVIII

Him Atin spying, knew right well of yore,  
 And lowdly cald: ‘Help, helpe ! O Archi-  
 mage,  
 To save my lord, in wretched plight for-  
 lore;

Helpe with thy hand, or with thy counsell  
 sage:  
 Weake handes, but counsell is most strong  
 in age.’  
 Him when the old man saw, he woundred  
 sore,  
 To see Pyrochles there so rudely rage:  
 Yet sithens helpe, he saw, he needed more  
 Then pitty, he in hast approached to the  
 shore;

## XLIX

And cald, ‘Pyrochles ! what is this I see ?  
 What hellish fury hath at earst thee hent ?  
 Furious ever I thee knew to bee,  
 Yet never in this straunge astonishment.’  
 ‘These flames, these flames,’ he cryde, ‘do  
 me torment !’  
 ‘What flames,’ quoth he, ‘when I thee pre-  
 sent see  
 In daunger rather to be drent then brent ?’  
 ‘Harrow ! the flames which me consume,’  
 said hee,  
 ‘Ne can be quencht, within my secret  
 bowelles bee.

## L

‘That cursed man, that cruel feend of hell,  
 Furor, oh ! Furor hath me thus bedight:  
 His deadly woundes within my liver swell,  
 And his whott fyre burnes in mine entralles  
 bright,  
 Kindled through his infernall brond of  
 spight,  
 Sith late with him I batteill vaine would  
 boste;  
 That now I weene Joves dreaded thunder  
 light  
 Does scorch not halfe so sore, nor damned  
 ghoste  
 In flaming Phlegeton does not so felly roste.’

## LI

Which when as Archimago heard, his grieffe  
 He knew right well, and him attonce dis-  
 armd:  
 Then searcht his secret woundes, and made  
 a priefe  
 Of every place, that was with bruizing  
 harmd,  
 Or with the hidden fire too inly warmd.  
 Which doen, he balmes and herbes thereto  
 applyde,  
 And evermore with mightie spells them  
 charmd,



That in short space he has them qualifyde,  
And him restor'd to helth, that would have  
algates dyde.

## CANTO VII

Guyon findes Mamon in a delve,  
Sunning his treasure hore:  
Is by him tempted, and led downe,  
To see his secrefe store.

## I

As pilot well expert in perilous wave,  
That to a stedfast starre his course hath  
bent,  
When foggy mistes or clondy tempests have  
The faithfull light of that faire lampe  
yblent,  
And cover'd heaven with hideous dreriment,  
Upon his card and compas firmes his eye,  
The maysters of his long experiment,  
And to them does the steddy helme apply,  
Bidding his winged vessell fairely forward  
fly:

## II

So Guyon, having lost his trustie guyde,  
Late left beyond that Ydle Lake, proceedes  
Yet on his way, of none accompanyde;  
And evermore himselfe with comfort feedes  
Of his owne vertues and praise-worthie  
deedes.  
So long he yode, yet no adventure found,  
Which Fame of her shr'll trompet worthy  
reedes:  
For still he traveld through wide wastfull  
ground,  
That nought but desert wilderness shewed  
all around.

## III

At last he came unto a gloomy glade,  
Cover'd with boughes and shrubs from  
heavens light,  
Whereas he sitting found in secret shade  
An uncouth, salvage, and uncivile wight,  
Of griesly hew and fowle ill favour'd sight;  
His face with smoke was tand, and eies were  
bleard,  
His head and beard with sout were ill be-  
dight,  
His cole-blacke hands did seeme to have  
ben seard  
In smythes fire-spitting forge, and nayles  
like clawes appeard.

## IV

His yron cote, all overgrowne with rust,  
Was underneath enveloped with gold,  
Whose glistring glosse, darkned with filthy  
dust,  
Well yet appeared to have beene of old  
A worke of rich entayle and curious mould,  
Woven with antickes and wyld ymagery:  
And in his lap a masse of coyne he told,  
And turned upside downe, to feede his  
eye  
And covetous desire with his huge treasury.

## V

And round about him lay on every side  
Great heapes of gold, that never could be  
spent:  
Of which some were rude owre, not puri-  
fide  
Of Mulcibers devouring element;  
Some others were new driven, and distent  
Into great ingowes, and to wedges square;  
Some in round plates withouten moniment:  
But most were stampd, and in their metal  
bare  
The antique shapes of kings and kesars  
straung and rare.

## VI

Soone as he Guyon saw, in great affright  
And haste he rose, for to remove aside  
Those pretious hils from straungers envious  
sight,  
And downe them poured through an hole  
full wide  
Into the hollow earth, them there to hide.  
But Guyon, lightly to him leaping, stayd  
His hand, that trembled as one terrifyde;  
And though him selfe were at the sight dis-  
mayd,  
Yet him perforce restraynd, and to him  
doubtfull sayd:

## VII

'What art thou, man, (if man at all thou  
art)  
That here in desert hast thine habitaunce,  
And these rich heapes of welth doest hide  
apart  
From the worldes eye, and from her right  
usaunce?'  
Thereat, with staring eyes fixed askaunce,  
In great disdaine, he answerd: 'Hardy  
Elfe,  
That darest vew my direfull countenance,

I read thee rash and heedlesse of thy selfe,  
To trouble my still seate, and heapes of  
pretious pelfe.

## VIII

‘God of the world and worldlings I me call,  
Great Mammon, greatest god below the  
skye,

That of my plenty poure out unto all,  
And unto none my graces do envye:  
Riches, renowne, and principality,  
Honour, estate, and all this worldes good,  
For which men swinke and sweat incessantly,

Fro me do flow into an ample flood,  
And in the hollow earth have their eternall  
brood.

## IX

‘Wherefore, if me thou deigne to serve and  
sew,  
At thy commaund, lo ! all these mountaines  
bee;

Or if to thy great mind, or greedy vew,  
All these may not suffice, there shall to  
thee

Ten times so much be nombred francke and  
free.’

‘Mammon,’ said he, ‘thy godheads vaunt  
is vaine,

And idle offers of thy golden fee;  
To them that covet such eye-glutting gaine  
Proffer thy giftes, and fitter servaunts  
entertaine.

## X

‘Me ill besits, that in derdoing armes  
And honours suit my vowed daies do spend,  
Unto thy bounteous baytes and pleasing  
charmes,

With which weake men thou witchest, to  
attend:

Regard of worldly mucke doth fowly blend  
And low abase the high heroicke spright,  
That joyes for crownes and kingdomes to  
contend;

Faire shields, gay steedes, bright armes be  
my delight:

Those be the riches fit for an advent’rous  
knight.’

## XI

‘Vaine glorious Elfe,’ saide he, ‘doest not  
thou weete,

That money can thy wantes at will supply ?

Sheilds, steeds, and armes, and all things  
for thee meet

It can purvay in twineckling of an eye;  
And crownes and kingdomes to thee multiply.

Doe not I kings create, and throw the  
crowne

Sometimes to him that low in dust doth  
ly ?

And him that raignd into his rowme thrust  
downe,

And whom I lust do heape with glory and  
renowne ?’

## XII

‘All otherwise, saide he, ‘I riches read,  
And deeme them roote of all disquiet-  
nesse;

First got with guile, and then preserv’d  
with dread,

And after spent with pride and lavishnesse,  
Leaving behind them griefe and heavinesse.  
Infinite mischiefes of them doe arise,  
Strife and debate, bloodshed and bitter-  
nesse,

Outrageous wrong and hellish covetize,  
That noble heart, as great dishonour, doth  
despize.

## XIII

‘Ne thine be kingdomes, ne the scepters  
thine;

But realmes and rulers thou doest both con-  
found,

And loyall truth to treason doest incline:  
Witness the guiltlesse blood pourd oft on  
ground,

The crowned often slaine, the slayer croud,  
The sacred diademe in peeces reut,  
And purple robe gored with many a wound;  
Castles surprizd, great citties sackt and  
brent:

So mak’st thou kings, and gaynest wrong-  
full government.

## XIV

‘Long were to tell the troublous stormes,  
that tosse

The private state, and make the life un-  
sweet:

Who swelling sayles in Caspian sea doth  
crosse,

And in frayle wood on Adrian gulf doth  
fleet,

Doth not, I weene, so many evils meet.’

Then Mammon, wexing wroth, 'And why  
then,' sayd,  
'Are mortall men so fond and indiscreet,  
So evill thing to seeke unto their ayd,  
And having not, complaine, and having it,  
upbrayd?'

## XV

'Indeede,' quoth he, 'through fowle intem-  
peraunce,  
Frayle men are oft captiv'd to covetise:  
But would they thinke, with how small  
allowaunce

Untroubled nature doth her selfe suffice,  
Such superfluities they would despise,  
Which with sad cares empeach our native  
joyes:

At the well head the purest streames arise:  
But mucky filth his braunching armes an-  
noyes,

And with uncomely weedes the gentle wave  
accloyes.

## XVI

'The antique world, in his first flowring  
youth,

Fownd no defect in his Creators grace,  
But with glad thanks, and unproved  
truth,

The guifts of soveraine bounty did embrace:  
Like angels life was then mens happy cace:  
But later ages pride, like corn-fed steed,  
Abusd her plenty and fat swolne encrease  
To all licentious lust, and gan exceed  
The measure of her meane, and naturall  
first need.

## XVII

'Then gan a cursed hand the quiet wombe  
Of his great grandmother with steele to  
wound,

And the hid treasures in her sacred tombe  
With sacriledge to dig. Therein he fownd  
Fountaines of gold and silver to abownd,  
Of which the matter of his huge desire  
And pompous pride eftsoones he did com-  
pound;

Then avarice gan through his veines inspire  
His greedy flames, and kindled life-devour-  
ing fire.'

## XVIII

'Sonne,' said he then, 'lett be thy bitter  
scorene,  
And leave the rudenesse of that antique age

To them that liv'd therin in state forlorne.  
Thou, that doest live in later times, must  
wage

Thy workes for wealth, and life for gold  
engage.

If then thee list my offred grace to use,  
Take what thou please of all this surplus-  
age;

If thee list not, leave have thou to refuse:  
But thing refused doe not afterward accuse.'

## XIX

'Me list not,' said the Elfin knight, 're-  
ceave

Thing offred, till I know it well be gott;  
Ne wote I, but thou didst these goods  
bereave

From rightfull owner by unrighteous lott,  
Or that blood guiltinesse or guile them  
blott.'

'Perdy,' quoth he, 'yet never eie did vew,  
Ne tong did tell, ne hand these handled  
not;

But safe I have them kept in secret mew  
From hevens sight, and powre of al which  
them poursew.'

## XX

'What secret place,' quoth he, 'can safely  
hold

So huge a masse, and hide from heavens eie?  
Or where hast thou thy wonne, that so  
much gold

Thou canst preserve from wrong and  
robbery?'

'Come thou,' quoth he, 'and see.' So by  
and by,

Through that thick covert he him led,  
and fownd

A darkesome way, which no man could  
descry,

That deep descended through the hollow  
growud,

And was with dread and horror compassed  
arownd.

## XXI

At length they came into a larger space,  
That stretcht it selfe into an ample playne,  
Through which a beateu broad high way  
did 'race,

That streight did lead to Plutoes griesly  
rayne:

By that wayes side there sate infernall  
Payne,



And fast beside him sat tumultuous Strife:  
The one in hand an yron whip did strayne,  
The other brandished a bloody knife,  
And both did gnash their teeth, and both  
did threten life.

## XXII

On thother side, in one consort, there sate  
Crnell Revenge, and rancorous Despight,  
Disloyall Treason, and hart-burning Hate;  
But gnawing Gealosity, out of their sight  
Sitting alone, his bitter lips did bight;  
And trembling Feare still to and fro did fly,  
And found no place, wher safe he shroud  
him might;  
Lamenting Sorrow did in darknes lye;  
And Shame his ngly face did hide from  
living eye.

## XXIII

And over them sad Horror with grim hew  
Did alwaies sore, beating his yron wings;  
And after him owles and night-ravens flew,  
The hatefull messengers of heavy things,  
Of death and dolor telling sad tidings;  
Whiles sad Celeno, sitting on a clifte,  
A song of bale and bitter sorrow sings,  
That hart of flint a sonder could have rifte:  
Which having ended, after him she flyeth  
wifte.

## XXIV

All these before the gates of Pluto lay;  
By whom they passing, spake unto them  
nought.  
But th' Elfin knight with wonder all the  
way  
Did feed his eyes, and fild his inner thought.  
At last him to a litle dore he brought,  
That to the gate of hell, which gaped wide,  
Was next adjoyning, ne them parted ought:  
Betwixt them both was but a litle stride,  
That did the house of Richesse from hell-  
mouth divide.

## XXV

Before the dore sat selfe-consuming Care,  
Day and night keeping wary watch and  
ward,  
For feare least Force or Fraud should ma-  
ware  
Breake in, and spoile the treasure there in  
gard:  
Ne would he suffer Sleepe once thether-  
ward

Approch, albe his drowsy den were next;  
For next to Death is Sleepe to be compard:  
Therefore his house is unto his annex;  
Here Sleep, ther Richesse, and helgate them  
both betwext.

## XXVI

So soone as Mammon there arrivd, the dore  
To him did open and affoorded way;  
Him followed eke Sir Guyon evermore,  
Ne darknesse him, ne daunger might dis-  
may.  
Soone as he entred was, the dore streight  
way  
Did shntt, and from behind it forth there  
left  
An ugly feend, more fowle then dismall day,  
The which with monstrous stalke behind  
him stept,  
And ever as he went, dew watch upon him  
kept.

## XXVII

Well hoped hee, ere long that hardy guest,  
If ever covetous hand, or lustfull eye,  
Or lips he layd on thing that likte him best,  
Or ever sleepe his eiestrings did untie,  
Should be his pray. And therefore still on  
hye  
He over him did hold his cruell clawes,  
Threatning with greedy gripe to doe him  
dye,  
And rend in peeces with his ravenons pawes,  
If ever he transgrest the fatall Stygian  
lawes.

## XXVIII

That houses forme within was rude and  
strong,  
Lyke an huge cave, hewne out of rocky  
clifte,  
From whose rough vout the ragged breaches  
hong,  
Emboist with massy gold of glorions guifte,  
And with rich metall loaded every rifte,  
That heavy ruine they did seeme to threat;  
And over them Arachne high did lifte  
Her cunning web, and spred her subtile nett,  
Enwrapped in fowle smoke and clouds more  
black then jet.

## XXIX

Both rooffe, and floore, and walls were all  
of gold,  
But overgrowne with dust and old decay,

And hid in darkenes, that none could behold

The hew thereof: for vew of cherefull day

Did never in that house it selfe display,  
But a faint shadow of uncertein light;  
Such as a lamp, whose life does fade away;  
Or as the moone, cloathed with clowdy night,

Does shew to him that walkes in feare and sad affright.

## XXX

In all that rowme was nothing to be seene,  
But huge great yron chests and coffers strong,

All bard with double bends, that none could weene

Them to efforce by violence or wrong:  
On every side they placed were along.  
But all the grownd with seuls was scattered,  
And dead mens bones, which round about were flong;

Whose lives, it seemed, whilome there were shed,

And their vile carcases now left unburied.

## XXXI

They forward passe, ne Guyon yet spoke word,

Till that they came unto an yron dore,  
Which to them opened of his owne accord,  
And shewd of riches such exceeding store,  
As eie of man did never see before,  
Ne ever could within one place be fownd,  
Though all the wealth, which is, or was of yore,

Could gathered be through all the world arownd,

And that above were added to that under grownd.

## XXXII

The charge thereof unto a covetous spright  
Commaunded was, who thereby did attend,  
And warily awaited day and night,  
From other covetous feends it to defend,  
Who it to rob and ransacke did intend.  
Then Mammon, turning to that warriour, said:

‘Loe here the worldes blis! loe here the end,

To which al men doe ayme, rich to be made!  
Such grace now to be happy is before thee laid.’

## XXXIII

‘Certes,’ sayd he, ‘I n’ill thine offred grace,  
Ne to be made so happy doe intend:

Another blis before mine eyes I place,  
Another happines, another end.

To them that list, these base regards I lend:

But I in armes, and in atchievements brave,  
Do rather choose my fitting houres to spend,

And to be lord of those that riches have,  
Then them to have my selfe, and be their servile slave.’

## XXXIV

Thereat the feend his gnashing teeth did grate,

And griev’d, so long to lacke his greedie pray;

For well he weened that so glorious bayte  
Would tempt his guest to take thereof assay:

Had he so doen, he had him snatcht away,  
More light then culver in the faulcons fist.  
Eternall God thee save from such decay!  
But whenas Mammon saw his purpose mist,  
Him to entrap unwares another way he wist.

## XXXV

Thence forward he him ledd, and shortly brought

Unto another rowme, whose dore forthright  
To him did open, as it had beene taught:  
Therein an hundred raunges weren pight,  
And hundred founaces all burning bright:  
By every founace many feendes did byde,  
Deformed creatures, horrible in sight;  
And every feend his busie paines applyde.  
To melt the golden metall, ready to be tryde.

## XXXVI

One with great bellowes gathered filling ayre,

And with forst wind the fewell did inflame;  
Another did the dying bronds repayre

With yron tongs, and sprinckled ofte the same

With liquid waves, fiers Vulcans rage to tame,

Who, maystring them, renewd his former heat;

Some scumd the drosse, that from the metall came,

Some stird the molten owre with ladles great;  
And every one did swinke, and every one  
did sweat.

## XXXVII

But when an earthly wight they present saw,  
Glistring in armes and battailous aray,  
From their whot work they did themselves  
withdraw

To wonder at the sight: for, till that day,  
They never creature saw, that cam that way.  
Their staring eyes, sparckling with fervent  
fyre,

And ugly shapes did nigh the man dismay,  
That, were it not for shame, he would re-  
tyre;

Till that him thus bespake their souveraine  
lord and syre:

## XXXVIII

'Behold, thou Faeries sonne, with mortall  
eye,

That living eye before did never see:  
The thing that thou didst crave so earnestly  
To weet, whence all the wealth late shewd  
by mee

Proceeded, lo! now is reveald to thee.

Here is the fountaine of the worldes good:  
Now therefore, if thou wilt enriched bee,  
Avise thee well, and chaunge thy wilfull  
mood;

Least thou perhaps hereafter wish, and be  
withstood.'

## XXXIX

'Suffise it then, thou Money God,' quoth  
hee,

'That all thine ydle offers I refuse.

All that I need I have; what needeth mee  
To covet more then I have cause to use?  
With such vaine shewes thy worldlinges  
vyle abuse:

But give me leave to follow mine emprise.'  
Mammon was much displeasd, yet no'te he  
chuse

But beare the rigour of his bold mesprise,  
And thence him forward ledd, him further  
to entise.

## XL

He brought him through a darksom narrow  
strayt,

To a broad gate, all built of beaten gold:  
The gate was open, but therein did wayt  
A sturdie villein, stryding stiffe and bold,

As if that Highest God defy he would:  
In his right hand an yron club he held,  
But he himselfe was all of golden mould,  
Yet had both life and sence, and well could  
weld

That cursed weapon, when his cruell foes  
he queld.

## XLI

Disdayne he called was, and did disdayne  
To be so cald, and who so did him call:  
Sterne was his looke, and full of stomacke  
vayne,

His portance terrible, and stature tall,  
Far passing th' hight of men terrestriall,  
Like an huge gyant of the Titans race;  
That made him scorne all creatures great  
and small,

And with his pride all others powre deface:  
More fitt amongst black fiendes then men  
to have his place.

## XLII

Soone as those glitterand armes he did  
espye,

That with their brightnesse made that dark-  
nes light,

His harmefull club he gan to hurtle hye,  
And threaten batteill to the Faery knight;  
Who likewise gan himselfe to batteill dight,  
Till Mammon did his hasty hand withhold,  
And counseld him abstaine from perilous  
fight:

For nothing might abash the villein bold,  
Ne mortall steele emperce his miscreated  
mould.

## XLIII

So having him with reason pacifyde,  
And the fiers carle commaunding to for-  
beare,

He brought him in. The rowme was large  
and wyde,

As it some gyld or solemne temple weare:  
Many great golden pillours did upbeare  
The massy roofe, and riches huge sustayne,  
And every pillour decked was full deare  
With crownes, and diademes, and titles  
vaine,

Which mortall princes wore, whiles they on  
earth did rayne.

## XLIV

A route of people there assembled were,  
Of every sort and nation under skye,



Which with great uprore preaced to draw  
 nere  
 To th' upper part, where was advaunced  
 hye  
 A stately siege of souveraine majesty;  
 And thereon satt a woman gorgeous gay,  
 And richly cladd in robes of royaltie,  
 That never earthly prince in such aray  
 His glory did enhance and pompous pryde  
 display.

## XLV

Her face right wondrous faire did seeme to  
 bee,  
 That her broad beauties beam great bright-  
 nes threw  
 Through the dim shade, that all men might  
 it see:  
 Yet was not that same her owne native  
 hew,  
 But wrought by art and counterfetted shew,  
 Thereby more lovers unto her to call;  
 Nath'lesse most heavenly faire in deed and  
 vew  
 She by creation was, till she did fall;  
 Thenceforth she sought for helps to cloke  
 her crime withall.

## XLVI

There as in glistring glory she did sitt,  
 She held a great gold chaine ylincked  
 well,  
 Whose upper end to highest heaven was  
 knitt,  
 And lower part did reach to lowest hell;  
 And all that preace did rownd about her  
 swell,  
 To catchen hold of that long chaine, thereby  
 To climbe aloft, and others to excell:  
 That was Ambition, rash desire to sty,  
 And every linck thereof a step of dignity.

## XLVII

Some thought to raise themselves to high  
 degree  
 By riches and unrighteous reward;  
 Some by close shouldring, some by flatteree;  
 Others through friendes, others for base  
 regard;  
 And all by wrong waies for themselves pre-  
 pard.  
 Those that were up themselves, kept  
 others low,  
 Those that were low themselves, held  
 others hard,

Ne suffred them to ryse or greater grow,  
 But every one did strive his fellow downe to  
 throw.

## XLVIII

Which whenas Guyon saw, he gan inquire,  
 What meant that preace about that ladies  
 throne,  
 And what she was that did so high aspyre.  
 Him Mammon answered: 'That goodly one,  
 Whom all that folke with such contention  
 Doe flock about, my deare, my daughter is:  
 Honour and dignitie from her alone  
 Derived are, and all this worldes blis,  
 For which ye men doe strive: few gett, but  
 many mis.

## XLIX

'And fayre Philotime she rightly hight,  
 The fairest wight that wonneth under skye,  
 But that this darksom neather world her  
 light  
 Doth dim with horror and deformity,  
 Worthie of heven and hye felicitie,  
 From whence the gods have her for envy  
 thrust:  
 But sith thou hast found favour in mine eye,  
 Thy spouse I will her make, if that thou  
 lust,  
 That she may thee advance for works and  
 merits just.'

## L

'Gramerey, Mammon,' said the gentle  
 knight,  
 'For so great grace and offred high estate,  
 But I, that am fraile flesh and earthly wight,  
 Unworthy match for such immortall mate  
 My selfe well wote, and mine unequall fate:  
 And were I not, yet is my trouth yplight,  
 And love avowd to other lady late,  
 That to remove the same I have no might:  
 To chaunge love causelesse is reproch to  
 warlike knight.'

## LI

Mammon emmoved was with inward wrath;  
 Yet, forcing it to fayne, him forth thence  
 ledd,  
 Through griesly shadowes by a beaten path,  
 Into a gardin goodly garnished  
 With hearbs and fruits, whose kinds mote  
 not be redd:  
 Not such as earth out of her fruitfull  
 wombo

Throwes forth to men, sweet and well  
savored,  
But direfull deadly black, both leafe and  
bloom,  
Fitt to adorne the dead and deck the drery  
toombe.

## LII

There mournfull cypresse grew in greatest  
store,  
And trees of bitter gall, and heben sad,  
Dead sleeping poppy, and black hellebore,  
Cold coliquintida, and tetra mad,  
Mortall samnitis, and cicuta bad,  
With which th' unjust Atheniens made to dy  
Wise Socrates, who thereof quaffing glad,  
Poured out his life and last philosophy  
To the fayre Critias, his dearest belamy.

## LIII

The Gardin of Proserpina this hight;  
And in the midst thereof a silver seat,  
With a thick arber goodly overdight,  
In which she often usd from open heat  
Her selfe to shroud, and pleasures to en-  
treat.

Next thereunto did grow a goodly tree,  
With braunches broad dispredd and body  
great,  
Clothed with leaves, that none the wood  
mote see,  
And loaden all with fruit as thick as it  
might bee.

## LIV

Their fruit were golden apples glistring  
bright,  
That goodly was their glory to behold;  
On earth like never grew, ne living wight  
Like ever saw, but they from hence were  
sold;  
For those, which Hercules with conquest  
bold  
Got from great Atlas daughters, hence  
began,  
And, planted there, did bring forth fruit of  
gold;  
And those with which th' Eubæan young  
man wan  
Swift Atalanta, when through craft he her  
out ran.

## LV

Here also sprong that goodly golden fruit,  
With which Acontius got his lover trew,

Whom he had long time sought with fruit-  
lesse suit:

Here cke that famous golden apple grew,  
The which emongst the gods false Ate  
threw;

For which th' Idæan ladies disagreed,  
Till partiall Paris dempt it Venus dew,  
And had of her fayre Helen for his meed,  
That many noble Greekes and Trojans  
made to bleed.

## LVI

The warlike Elfe much wondred at this  
tree,  
So fayre and great, that shadowed all the  
ground,  
And his broad braunches, laden with rich  
fee,  
Did stretch themselves without the utmost  
bound  
Of this great gardin, compast with a mound:  
Which over-hanging, they themselves did  
steepe  
In a blacke flood, which flow'd about it  
round;  
That is the river of Cocytus deepe,  
In which full many soules do endlesse wayle  
and weepe.

## LVII

Which to behold, he clomb up to the  
bancke,  
And, looking downe, saw many damned  
wightes,  
In those sad waves, which direfull deadly  
stancke,  
Plonged continually of cruell sprightes,  
That with their piteous cryes, and yelling  
shrighes,  
They made the further shore resounden  
wide.  
Emongst the rest of those same ruefull  
sightes,  
One cursed creature he by chaunce espide,  
That drenched lay full deepe, under the  
garden side.

## LVIII

Deepe was he drenched to the upmost chin,  
Yet gaped still, as coveting to drinke  
Of the cold liquour which he waded in,  
And stretching forth his hand, did often  
thinke  
To reach the fruit which grew upon the  
brincke:

But both the fruit from hand, and flood  
 from month,  
 Did fly abacke, and made him vainely  
 swincke:  
 The whiles he sterv'd with hunger and  
 with drouth,  
 He daily dyde, yet never throughly dyen  
 couth.

## LIX

The knight, him seeing labour so in vaine,  
 Askt who he was, and what he ment there-  
 by:  
 Who, groning deepe, thus answerd him  
 againe:  
 'Most cursed of all creatures under skye,  
 Lo ! Tantalus, I here tormented lye:  
 Of whom high Jove wont whylome feasted  
 bee,  
 Lo ! here I now for want of food doe dye:  
 But if that thou be such as I thee see,  
 Of grace I pray thee, give to eat and drinke  
 to mee.'

## LX

'Nay, nay, thou greedy Tantalus,' quoth  
 he,  
 'Abide the fortune of thy present fate,  
 And unto all that live in high degree  
 Ensample be of mind intemperate,  
 To teach them how to use their present  
 state.'  
 Then gan the cursed wretch alowd to cry,  
 Accusing highest Jove and gods ingrate,  
 And eke blaspheming heaven bitterly,  
 As authour of unjustice, there to let him  
 dye.

## LXI

He lookt a litle further, and espyde  
 Another wretch, whose carcas deepe was  
 dreant  
 Within the river, which the same did hyde:  
 But both his handes, most filthy feculent,  
 Above the water were on high extent,  
 And faynd to wash themselves incessantly;  
 Yet nothing cleaner were for such intent,  
 But rather fowler seemed to the eye;  
 So lost his labour vaine and ydle industry.

## LXII

The knight, him calling, asked who he was;  
 Who, lifting up his head, him answerd thus:  
 'I Pilate am, the falsest judge, alas !  
 And most unjust; that, by unrighteous

And wicked doome, to Jewes despitous  
 Delivered up the Lord of Life to dye,  
 And did acquite a murdrer felonous:  
 The whiles my handes I washt in purity,  
 The whiles my soule was soyld with fowle  
 iniquity.'

## LXIII

Infinite moe, tormented in like paine,  
 He there beheld, too long here to be told:  
 Ne Mammon would there let him long re-  
 mayne,  
 For terrour of the tortures manifold,  
 In which the damned soules he did behoid,  
 But roughly him bespake: 'Thou fearefull  
 foole,  
 Why takest not of that same fruite of gold,  
 Ne sittest downe on that same silver stooke,  
 To rest thy weary person in the shadow  
 coole?'

## LXIV

All which he did, to do him deadly fall  
 In frayle intemperaunce through sinfull  
 bayt;  
 To which if he inclyned had at all,  
 That dreadful feend, which did behinde him  
 wayt,  
 Would him have rent in thousand peeces  
 strayt:  
 But he was wary wise in all his way,  
 And well perceived his deceitfull sleight,  
 Ne suffred lust his safety to betray;  
 So goodly did beguile the guyler of his pray.

## LXV

And now he has so long remained theare,  
 That vitall powres gan wexe both weake  
 and wan,  
 For want of food and sleepe, which two up-  
 beare,  
 Like mightie pillours, this frayle life of  
 man,  
 That none without the same enduren can.  
 For now three dayes of men were full out-  
 wrought,  
 Since he this hardy enterprize began:  
 Forthy great Mammon fayrely he besought,  
 Into the world to guyde him backe, as he  
 him brought.

## LXVI

The god, though loth, yet was constraynd  
 t' obay,  
 For, lenger time then that, no living wight



Below the earth might suffred be to stay:  
 So backe againe him brought to living light.  
 But all so soone as his enfeebled spright  
 Gan sucke this vitall ayre into his brest,  
 As overcome with too exceeding might,  
 The life did flit away out of her nest,  
 And all his sences were with deadly fit op-  
 prest.

## CANTO VIII

Sir Guyon, layd in swowne, is by  
 Acrates sonnes despoild;  
 Whom Arthure soone hath reskewed  
 And Paynim brethren foyld.

## I

AND is there care in heaven? And is there  
 love

In heavenly spirits to these creatures bace,  
 That may compassion of their evilles move?  
 There is: else much more wretched were  
 the cace

Of men then beasts. But O th' exceeding  
 grace

Of Highest God, that loves his creatures so,  
 And all his workes with mercy doth em-  
 brace,

That blessed angels he sends to and fro,  
 To serve to wicked man, to serve his wicked  
 foe!

## II

How oft do they their silver bowers leave  
 To come to succour us, that succour want!  
 How oft do they with golden pineons cleave  
 The flitting skyes, like flying pursuivant,  
 Against fowle feendes to ayd us militant!  
 They for us fight, they watch and dewly  
 ward,

And their bright squadrons round about us  
 plant;

And all for love, and nothing for reward:  
 O why should hevenly God to men have  
 such regard?

## III

During the while that Guyon did abide  
 In Mamons house, the palmer, whom whyl-  
 eare

That wanton mayd of passage had denide,  
 By further search had passage found else-  
 where,

And, being on his way, approached neare  
 Where Guyon lay in traunce, when sud-  
 deinly

He heard a voyce, that called lowd and  
 cleare,

'Come hether! come hether! O come  
 hastily!'

That all the fields resounded with the rue-  
 full cry.

## IV

The palmer lent his eare unto the noyce,  
 To weet who called so importunely:  
 Again he heard a more efforced voyce,  
 That bad him come in haste. He by and  
 by

His feeble feet directed to the cry;  
 Which to that shady delve him brought at  
 last,

Where Mammon earst did sunne his threa-  
 sury:

There the good Guyon he found slumbring  
 fast

In senceles dreame; which sight at first him  
 sore aghast.

## V

Beside his head there satt a faire young  
 man,

Of wondrous beauty and of freshest yeares,  
 Whose tender bud to blossome new be-  
 gan,

And florish faire above his equall peares:  
 His snowy front, curled with golden heares,  
 Like Phoebus face adorn'd with sunny rayes,  
 Divinely shone, and two sharpe winged  
 sheares,

Decked with diverse plumes, like painted  
 jayes,

Were fixed at his backe, to cut his ayery  
 wayes.

## VI

Like as Cupido on Idæan hill,  
 When having laid his cruell bow away,  
 And mortall arrowes, wherewith he doth  
 fill

The world with murderous spoiles and bloody  
 pray,

With his faire mother he him dights to  
 play,

And with his goodly sisters, Graces three;  
 The goddesse, pleased with his wanton  
 play,

Suffers her selfe through sleepe beguild to  
 bee,

The whiles the other ladies mind theyr  
 mery glee.

## VII

Whom when the palmer saw, abasht he  
 was  
 Through fear and wonder, that he nought  
 could say,  
 Till him the childe bespoke: 'Long lackt,  
 alas!  
 Hath bene thy faithfull aide in hard as-  
 say,  
 Whiles deadly fitt thy pupill doth dismay.  
 Behold this heavy sight, thou reverend  
 sire:  
 But dread of death and dolor doe away;  
 For life ere long shall to her home retire,  
 And he, that breathlesse seems, shal corage  
 bold respire.

## VIII

'The charge, which God doth unto me  
 arrett,  
 Of his deare safety, I to thee commend;  
 Yet will I not forgoe, ne yet forgett,  
 The care thereof my selfe unto the end,  
 But evermore him succour, and defend  
 Against his foe and mine: watch thon, I  
 pray;  
 For evill is at hand him to offend.'  
 So having said, eftsoones he gan display  
 His painted nimble wings, and vanisht quite  
 away.

## IX

The palmer seeing his lefte empty place,  
 And his slow eies beguiled of their sight,  
 Woxe sore affraid, and standing still a  
 space,  
 Gaz'd after him, as fowle escapt by flight:  
 At last him turning to his charge behight,  
 With trembling hand his troubled pulse  
 gan try,  
 Where finding life not yet dislodged quight,  
 He much rejoyst, and courd it tenderly,  
 As chicken newly hatcht, from dreaded  
 destiny.

## X

At last he spide where towards him did  
 pace  
 Two Paynim knights, al armd as bright as  
 skie,  
 And then beside an aged sire did trace,  
 And far before a light-foote page did flie,  
 That breathed strife and troublous enmitie.  
 Those were the two sonnes of Acrates old,  
 Who, meeting earst with Archimago slie,

Foreby that idle strond, of him were told,  
 That he which earst them combatted was  
 Guyon bold.

## XI

Which to avenge on him they dearly vovd,  
 Where ever that on ground they mote him  
 find:  
 False Archimago provokte their corage  
 prowld,  
 And stryful Atin in their stubborne mind  
 Coles of contention and whot vengeance  
 tind.  
 Now bene they come whereas the Palmer  
 sate,  
 Keeping that slombred corse to him assind:  
 Well knew they both his person, sith of late  
 With him in bloody armes they rashly did  
 debate.

## XII

Whom when Pyrochles saw, inflam'd with  
 rage  
 That sire he fowl bespake: 'Thou dotard  
 vile,  
 That with thy brutenesse shendst thy  
 comely age,  
 Abandon soone, I read, the caytive spoile  
 Of that same outcast carcas, that ere while  
 Made it selfe famous through false trechery,  
 And crownd his coward crest with knightly  
 stile:  
 Loe where he now inglorious doth lye,  
 To proove he lived il, that did thus fowly  
 dye.'

## XIII

To whom the palmer fearlesse answered:  
 'Certes, sir knight, ye bene too much to  
 blame,  
 Thus for to blott the honor of the dead,  
 And with fowle cowardize his carcas shame,  
 Whose living handes immortalizd his  
 name.  
 Vile is the vengeance on the ashes cold,  
 And envy base, to barke at sleeping fame:  
 Was never wight that treason of him told:  
 Your self his prowess prov'd, and found  
 him fiers and bold.'

## XIV

Then sayd Cymochles: 'Palmer, thon doest  
 dote,  
 Ne canst of prowess ne of knighthood  
 deeme,

Save as thou seest or hearst: but well I  
 wote,  
 That of his puissance tryall made ex-  
 treeme:  
 Yet gold al is not, that doth golden seeme,  
 Ne all good knights, that shake well speare  
 and shield:  
 The worth of all men by their end es-  
 teeme,  
 And then dew praise or dew reproch them  
 yield:  
 Bad therefore I him deeme that thus lies  
 dead on field.'

## XV

'Good or bad,' gan his brother fiers reply,  
 'What doe I recke, sith that he dide en-  
 tire?  
 Or what doth his bad death now satisfy  
 The greedy hunger of revenging yre,  
 Sith wrathfull hand wrought not her owne  
 desire?  
 Yet since no way is left to wreake my  
 spight,  
 I will him reave of armes, the victors hire,  
 And of that shield, more worthy of good  
 knight;  
 For why should a dead dog be deckt in  
 armour bright?'

## XVI

'Fayr sir,' said then the palmer suppliant,  
 'For knighthoods love, doe not so fowle a  
 deed,  
 Ne blame your honor with so shamefull  
 vannt  
 Of vile revenge. To spoile the dead of  
 weed  
 Is sacrilege, and doth all sinnes exceed;  
 But leave these relicks of his living might  
 To decke his herce, and trap his tomb-blacke  
 steed.'  
 'What herce or steed,' said he, 'should he  
 have dight,  
 But be entombed in the raven or the  
 kight?'

## XVII

With that, rude hand upon his shield he  
 laid,  
 And th' other brother gan his helme un-  
 lace,  
 Both fiercely bent to have him disaraid;  
 Till that they spyde where towards them  
 did pace

An armed knight, of bold and bounteous  
 grace,  
 Whose squire bore after him an heben  
 lance  
 And covered shield. Well kend him so far  
 space  
 Th' enchaunter by his armes and amen-  
 aunce,  
 When under him he saw his Lybian steed  
 to prounce;

## XVIII

And to those brethren sayd: 'Rise, rise  
 bylive,  
 And unto batteil doe your selves addresse;  
 For yonder comes the prowrest knight alive,  
 Prince Arthur, flowre of grace and nobil-  
 esse,  
 That hath to Paynim knights wrought gret  
 distresse,  
 And thousand Sar'zins fowly donne to  
 dye.'  
 That word so deepe did in their harts im-  
 presse,  
 That both eftsoones upstartd furiously,  
 And gan themselves prepare to batteill  
 greedily.

## XIX

But fiers Pyrochles, lacking his owne sword,  
 The want thereof now greatly gan to  
 plaine,  
 And Archimage besought, him that afford,  
 Which he had brought for Braggadochio  
 vaine.  
 'So would I,' said th' enchaunter, 'glad  
 and faine  
 Beteeme to you this sword, you to defend,  
 Or onght that els your honor might main-  
 taine,  
 But that this weapons powre I well have  
 kend  
 To be contrary to the worke which ye in-  
 tend.

## XX

'For that same knights owne sword this is,  
 of yore  
 Which Merlin made by his almightie art  
 For that his noursling, when he knighthood  
 swore,  
 Therewith to doen his foes eternall smart.  
 The metall first he mixt with medawart,  
 That no enchauntment from his dint might  
 save;



Then it in flames of Aetna wrought apart,  
And seven times dipped in the bitter wave  
Of hellish Styx, which hidden vertue to it  
gave.

## XXI

'The vertue is, that nether steele nor stone  
The stroke thereof from entraunce may  
defend;  
Ne ever may be used by his fone,  
Ne forst his rightful owner to offend;  
Ne ever will it breake, ne ever bend:  
Wherefore Morddure it rightfully is hight.  
In vaine therefore, Pyrochles, should I lend  
The same to thee, against his lord to fight,  
For sure yt would deceive thy labor and  
thy might.'

## XXII

'Foolish old man,' said then the Pagan  
wroth,  
'That weenest words or charms may force  
withstond:  
Soone shalt thou see, and then beleeve for  
troth,  
That I can carve with this inchaunted brond  
His lords owne flesh.' Therewith out of  
his hond  
That vertuous steele he rudely snatcht  
away,  
And Guyons shield about his wrest he bond;  
So ready dight, fierce battaile to assay,  
And match his brother proud in battailous  
aray.

## XXIII

By this, that straunger knight in presence  
came,  
And goodly salued them; who nought  
again  
Him answered, as courtesie became,  
But with sterne lookes, and stomachous  
disdaine,  
Gave signes of grudge and discontentment  
vaine:  
Then, turning to the palmer, he gan spy  
Where at his feet, with sorrowfull demayne  
And deadly hew, an armed corse did lye,  
In whose dead face he redd great magna-  
nimity.

## XXIV

Sayd he then to the palmer: 'Reverend syre,  
What great misfortune hath betidd this  
knight?

Or did his life her fatall date expyre,  
Or did he fall by treason, or by fight?  
How ever, sure I rew his pitteous plight.'  
'Not one, nor other,' sayd the palmer grave,  
'Hath him befallne; but cloudes of deadly  
night  
A while his heavy eylids cover'd have,  
And all his sences drowned in deep sence-  
lesse wave.

## XXV

'Which those his cruell foes, that stand  
hereby,  
Making advauntage, to revenge their spight,  
Would him disarm and treaten shame-  
fully;  
Unworthie usage of redoubted knight.  
But you, faire sir, whose honourable sight  
Doth promise hope of helpe and timely  
grace,  
Mote I beseech to succour his sad plight,  
And by your powre protect his feeble cace.  
First prayse of knighthood is, fowle outrage  
to deface.'

## XXVI

'Palmer,' said he, 'no knight so rude, I  
weene,  
As to doen outrage to a sleeping ghost:  
Ne was there ever noble corage seene,  
That in advauntage would his puissance  
bost:  
Honour is least, where oddes appeareth  
most.  
May bee, that better reason will aswage  
The rash revengers heat. Words well dis-  
post  
Have secrete powre t' appease inflamed  
rage:  
If not, leave unto me thy knights last pa-  
tronage.'

## XXVII

Tho, turning to those brethren, thus be-  
spoke:  
'Ye warlike payre, whose valorous great  
might,  
It seemes, just wronges to vengeance doe  
provoke,  
To wreake your wrath on this dead seeming  
knight,  
Mote ought allay the storme of your de-  
spight,  
And settle patience in so furious heat?  
Not to debate the chalenge of your right,

But for this carkas pardon I entreat,  
Whom fortune hath already laid in lowest  
seat.'

## XXVIII

To whom Cymochles said: 'For what art  
thou,  
That mak'st thy selfe his dayes-man, to  
prolong  
The vengeance prest? Or who shall let  
me now,  
On this vile body from to wreak my wrong,  
And make his carkas as the outcast dong?  
Why should not that dead carrion satis-  
fy  
The guilt which, if he lived had thus long,  
His life for dew revenge should deare  
abye?  
The trespass still doth live, albee the person  
dye.'

## XXIX

'Indeed,' then said the Prince, 'the evill  
donne  
Dyes not, when breath the body first doth  
leave,  
But from the grandsyre to the nephewes  
sonne,  
And all his seede, the curse doth often  
cleave,  
Till vengeance utterly the guilt bereave:  
So streightly God doth judge. But gentle  
knight,  
That doth against the dead his hand up-  
heave,  
His honour staines with rancour and de-  
spight,  
And great disparagment makes to his for-  
mer might.'

## XXX

Pyrochles gan reply the second tyme,  
And to him said: 'Now, felon, sure I read,  
How that thou art partaker of his cryme:  
Therefore by Termagaunt thou shalt be  
dead.'  
With that, his hand, more sad then lomp of  
lead,  
Uplifting high, he weened with Morddure,  
His owne good sword Morddure, to cleave  
his head.  
The faithfull steele such treason no'uld en-  
dure,  
But swarving from the marke, his lordes  
life did assure.

## XXXI

Yet was the force so furious and so fell,  
That horse and man it made to reele  
asyde:  
Nath'lesse the Prince would not forsake  
his sell,  
For well of yore he learned had to ryde,  
But full of anger fiersly to him cryde:  
'False traitour miscreaunt! thou broken  
hast  
The law of armes, to strike foe undefide.  
But thou thy treasons fruit, I hope, shalt  
taste  
Right sowre, and feele the law, the which  
thou hast defast.'

## XXXII

With that, his balefull speare he fiercely  
bent  
Against the Pagans brest, and therewith  
thought  
His cursed life out of her lodg have rent:  
But ere the point arrived where it ought,  
That seven fold shield, which he from  
Guyon brought,  
He cast between to ward the bitter stownd:  
Through all those foldes the steelehead  
passage wrought,  
And through his shoulder perst; wherwith  
to ground  
He groveling fell, all gored in his gushing  
wound.

## XXXIII

Which when his brother saw, fraught with  
great griefe  
And wrath, he to him leaped furiously,  
And fowly saide. 'By Mahoune, cursed  
thiefe,  
That direfull stroke thou dearely shalt  
aby.'  
Then, hurling up his harmefull blade on  
hy,  
Smote him so hugely on his haughtie crest,  
That from his saddle forced him to fly:  
Els mote it needes downe to his manly  
brest  
Have cleft his head in twaine, and life  
thence dispossess.

## XXXIV

Now was the Prince in daungerous dis-  
tresse,  
Wanting his sword, when he on foot should  
fight:

His single speare could doe him small redresse

Against two foes of so exceeding might,  
The least of which was match for any knight.

And now the other, whom he earst did daunt,

Had reard him selfe againe to cruel fight,  
Three times more furious and more puis-  
saunt,

Unmindfull of his wound, of his fate ignor-  
aunt.

## XXXV

So both attonce him charge on either syde,  
With hideous strokes and importable powre,  
That forced him his ground to traverse  
wyde,

And wisely watch to ward that deadly  
stowre:

For in his shield, as thicke as stormie  
showre,

Their strokes did raine; yet did he never  
quaile,

Ne backward shrinke, but as a stedfast  
towre,

Whom foe with double battry doth assaile,  
Them on her bulwarke beares, and bids  
them nought availle, —

## XXXVI

So stoutly he withstood their strong assay;  
Till that at last, when he advantage spyde,  
His poynant speare he thrust with puissant  
sway

At proud Cymochles, whiles his shield was  
wyde,

That through his thigh the mortall steele  
did gryde:

He, swarving with the force, within his flesh  
Did breake the launce, and let the head  
ahyde:

Out of the wound the red blood flowed  
fresh,

That underneath his feet soone made a  
purple plesh.

## XXXVII

Horribly then he gan to rage and rayle,  
Cursing his gods, and him selfe damning  
deepe:

Als when his brother saw the red blood  
rayle

Adowne so fast, and all his armour steepe,  
For very felnesse lowd he gan to weepe,

And said: 'Caytive, curse on thy cruell hond,  
That twise hath spedd ! yet shall it not thee  
keepe

From the third brunt of this my fatall  
brond:

Lo where the dreadfull Death behynd thy  
backe doth stond !'

## XXXVIII

With that he strooke, and thother strooke  
withall,

That nothing seemd mote beare so mon-  
strous might:

The one upon his covered shield did fall,  
And glauncing downe would not his owner  
byte:

But th' other did upon his troncheon smyte,  
Which hewing quite a sunder, further way  
It made, and on his hacqueton did lyte,  
The which dividing with importune sway,  
It seizd in his right side, and there the dint  
did stay.

## XXXIX

Wyde was the wound, and a large luke-  
warne flood,

Red as the rose, thence gushed grievously,  
That when the Paynym spyde the stream-  
ing blood,

Gave him great hart, and hope of victory.

On thother side, in huge perplexity

The Prince now stood, having his weapon  
broke;

Nought could he hurt, but still at warde  
did ly:

Yet with his troncheon he so rudely stroke  
Cymochles twise, that twise him forst his  
foot revoke.

## XL

Whom when the palmer saw in such dis-  
tresse,

Sir Guyons sword he lightly to him raught,  
And said: 'Fayre sonne, great God thy  
right hand blesse,

To use that sword so well as he it ought.'

Glad was the knight, and with fresh courage  
fraught,

When as againe he armed felt his hond:

Then like a lyon, which hath long time  
saught

His robbed whelpes, and at the last them  
fond

Emongst the shepheard swaynes, then  
wexeth wood and yond;



## XLI

So fierce he laid about him, and dealt blowes  
 On either side, that neither maye could  
 hold,  
 Ne shield defend the thunder of his throwes:  
 Now to Pyrochles many strokes he told;  
 Eft to Cymochles twice so many fold:  
 Then backe againe turning his busie hond,  
 Them both atonce compeld with courage  
 bold,  
 To yield wide way to his hart-thrilling  
 brond;  
 And though they both stood stiffe, yet  
 could not both withstond.

## XLII

As salvage bull, whom two fierce mastives  
 bayt,  
 When rancour doth with rage him once  
 engore,  
 Forgets with wary warde them to awayt,  
 But with his dreadfull hornes them drives  
 afore,  
 Or flings aloft, or treads downe in the  
 flore,  
 Breathing out wrath, and bellowing dis-  
 daine,  
 That all the forest quakes to heare him rore:  
 So rag'd Prince Arthur twixt his foemen  
 twaine,  
 That neither could his mightie puissance  
 sustaine.

## XLIII

But ever at Pyrochles when he smitt,  
 Who Guyons shield cast ever him before,  
 Whereon the Faery Queenes pourtract was  
 writt,  
 His hand relented, and the stroke forbore,  
 And his deare hart the picture gan adore;  
 Which oft the Paynim sav'd from deadly  
 stowre.  
 But him henceforth the same can save no  
 more;  
 For now arrived is his fatall howre,  
 That no'te avoyded be by earthly skill or  
 powre.

## XLIV

For when Cymochles saw the fowle re-  
 proch,  
 Which them appeached, prickt with guiltie  
 shaine  
 And inward griefe, he fiercely gan approach,  
 Resolv'd to put away that loathly blame,

Or dye with honour and desert of fame;  
 And on the haubergh stroke the Prince so  
 sore,  
 That quite disparted all the linked frame,  
 And pierced to the skin, but bit no more,  
 Yet made him twice to reele, that never  
 moov'd afore.

## XLV

Wherewith renfierst with wrath and sharp  
 regret,  
 He stroke so hugely with his borrowd blade,  
 That it empierst the Pagans burganet,  
 And cleaving the hard steele, did deepe in-  
 vade  
 Into his head, and cruell passage made  
 Quite through his brayne. He, tumbling  
 downe on ground,  
 Breathd out his ghost, which, to th' infer-  
 nall shade  
 Fast flying, there eternall torment found  
 For all the sinnes wherewith his lewd life  
 did abound.

## XLVI

Which when his german saw, the stony  
 feare  
 Ran to his hart, and all his sence dismayd,  
 Ne thenceforth life ne corage did appeare;  
 But as a man, whom hellish feendes have  
 frayd,  
 Long trembling still he stoode: at last thus  
 sayd:  
 'Traytour, what hast thou doen? How  
 ever may  
 Thy cursed hand so cruelly have swayd  
 Against that knight? Harrow and well  
 away!  
 After so wicked deede why liv'st thou  
 lenger day?'

## XLVII

With that all desperate, as loathing light,  
 And with revenge desyring soone to dye,  
 Assembling all his force and utmost might,  
 With his owne swerd he fierce at him did  
 flye,  
 And strooke, and foynd, and lasht out-  
 rageously,  
 Withouten reason or regard. Well knew  
 The Prince, with pacience and sufferance  
 sly  
 So hasty heat soone cooled to sublew:  
 Tho, when this breathlesse woxe, that bat-  
 tel gan renew.

## XLVIII

As when a windy tempest bloweth hye,  
That nothing may withstand his stormy  
stowre,  
The clowdes, as thinges affrayd, before him  
flye;  
But all so soone as his outrageous powre  
Is layd, they fiercely then begin to showre,  
And, as in scorne of his spent stormy spight,  
Now all attonce their malice forth do poure:  
So did Prince Arthur beare himselfe in  
fight,  
And suffred rash Pyrochles waste his ydle  
might.

## XLIX

At last when as the Sarazin perceiv'd,  
How that straunge sword refusd to serve  
his neede,  
But, when he stroke most strong, the dint  
deceiv'd,  
He flong it from him, and, devoyd of dreed,  
Upon him lightly leaping without heed,  
Twixt his two mighty armes engrasped fast,  
Thinking to overthrowe and downe him tred:  
But him in strength and skill the Prince  
surpast,  
And through his nimble sleight did under  
him down cast.

## L

Nought booted it the Paynim then to strive;  
For as a bittur in the eagles clawe,  
That may not hope by flight to scape alive,  
Still waytes for death with dread and trem-  
bling aw,  
So he, now subject to the victours law,  
Did not once move, nor upward cast his eye,  
For vile disdaine and rancour, which did  
gnaw  
His hart in twaine with sad melancholy,  
As one that loathed life, and yet despyd to  
dye.

## LI

But full of princely bounty and great mind,  
The conquerour nought cared him to slay,  
But casting wronges and all revenge behind,  
More glory thought to give life then decay,  
And sayd: 'Paynim, this is thy dismall day;  
Yet if thou wilt renounce thy misereauunce,  
And my trew liegeman yield thy selfe for ay,  
Life will I graunt thee for thy valiaunce,  
And all thy wronges will wipe out of my  
sovenaunce.'

## LII

'Foole!' sayd the Pagan, 'I thy gift defye;  
But use thy fortune, as it doth befall,  
And say, that I not overcome doe dye,  
But in despight of life for death doe call.'  
Wroth was the Prince, and sory yet withall,  
That he so wilfully refused grace;  
Yet, sith his fate so cruelly did fall,  
His shining helmet he gan soone unlace,  
And left his headlesse body bleeding all the  
place.

## LIII

By this, Sir Guyon from his traunce awakt,  
Life having maystered her sencelesse foe;  
And looking up, when as his shield he lakt,  
And saw not, he wexed wondrous  
woe:  
But when the palmer, whom he long ygoe  
Had lost, he by him spyde, right glad he  
grew,  
And saide: 'Deare sir, whom wandring to  
and fro  
I long have lackt, I joy thy face to vew:  
Firme is thy faith, whom daunger never  
fro me drew.

## LIV

'But read, what wicked hand hath robbed  
mee  
Of my good sword and shield?' The palmer,  
glad  
With so fresh hew uprysing him to see,  
Him answered: 'Fayre some, be no whit  
sad  
For want of weapons; they shall soone be  
had.'  
So gan he to discourse the whole debate,  
Which that straunge knight for him sus-  
tained had,  
And those two Sarazins confounded late,  
Whose carcases on ground were horribly  
prostrate.

## LV

Which when he heard, and saw the tokens  
trew,  
His hart with great affection was embayd,  
And to the Prince bowing with reverence  
dew,  
As to the patrone of his life, thus sayd:  
'My lord, my liege, by whose most gracious  
ayd  
I live this day, and see my foes subdewd,  
What may suffice to be for meede repayd

Of so great graces as ye have me shewd,  
But to be ever bound —'

## LVI

To whom the infant thus: 'Fayre sir,  
what need

Good turnes be counted, as a servile bond,  
To bind their dooers to receive their meed?  
Are not all knightes by oath bound to  
withstond

Oppressours powre by armes and puissant  
hond?

Suffise, that I have done my dew in place.'  
So goodly purpose they together fond  
Of kindnesse and of courteous aggrace;  
The whiles false Archimage and Atin fled  
apace.

## CANTO IX

The House of Temperance, in which  
Doth sober Alma dwell,  
Besiegd of many foes, whom straunger  
knightes to flight compell.

## I

Of all Gods workes, which doe this world  
adorne,

There is no one more faire and excellent,  
Then is mans body both for powre and  
forme,

Whiles it is kept in sober government;  
But none then it more fowle and indecent,  
Distempred through misrule and passions  
bace:

It growes a monster, and incontinent  
Doth loose his dignity and native grace.  
Behold, who list, both one and other in this  
place.

## II

After the Paynim brethren conquer'd were,  
The Briton Prince recov'ring his stolne  
sword,

And Guyon his lost shield, they both yfere  
Forth passed on their way in fayre accord,  
Till him the Prince with gentle court did  
bord:

'Sir knight, mote I of you this court'sy  
read,

To weet why on your shield, so goodly  
scord,

Beare ye the picture of that ladies head?  
Full lively is the semblaunt, though the  
substance dead.'

## III

'Fayre sir,' sayd he, 'if in that picture  
dead

Such life ye read, and vertue in vaine shew,  
What mote ye weene, if the trew lively-  
head

Of that most glorious visage ye did vew?  
But yf the beauty of her mind ye knew,  
That is, her bounty and imperiall powre,  
Thousand times fairer then her mortal hew,  
O how great wonder would your thoughts  
devoure,

And infinite desire into your spirite poure!

## IV

'Shee is the mighty Queene of Faery,  
Whose faire retraits I in my shield doe  
beare;

Shee is the flowre of grace and chastity,  
Throughout the world renowned far and  
neare,

My liefe, my liege, my souveraine, my deare,  
Whose glory shineth as the morning starre,  
And with her light the earth enlumines  
cleare:

Far reach her mercies, and her praises  
farre,

As well in state of peace, as puissaunce in  
warre.'

## V

'Thrise happy man,' said then the Briton  
knight,

'Whom gracious lott and thy great val-  
iaunce

Have made thee soldier of that princesse  
bright,

Which with her bounty and glad counten-  
aunce

Doth blesse her servaunts, and them high  
advauce.

How may straunge knight hope ever to  
aspire,

By faithfull service and meete amenaunce,  
Unto such blisse? Sufficient were that hire  
For losse of thousand lives, to die at her  
desire.'

## VI

Said Guyon, 'Noble lord, what meed so  
great,

Or grace of earthly prince so souveraine,  
But by your wondrous worth and warlike  
feat

Ye well may hope, and easely attaine?



But were your will, her sold to entertaine,  
 And numbred be mongst Knights of May-  
 denhed,  
 Great guerdon, well I vowe, should you re-  
 maine,  
 And in her favor high bee reckoned,  
 As Arthegall and Sophy now beene honored.'

## VII

'Certes,' then said the Prince, 'I God avow,  
 That sith I armes and knighthood first did  
 plight,  
 My whole desire hath beene, and yet is now,  
 To serve that Queene with al my powre and  
 might.  
 Now hath the sunne with his lamp-burning  
 light  
 Walkt round about the world, and I no  
 lesse,  
 Sith of that goddesse I have sought the  
 sight,  
 Yet no where can her find: such happinesse  
 Heven doth to me envy, and Fortune fa-  
 vourlesse.'

## VIII

'Fortune, the foe of famous chevisaunce,  
 Seldome,' said Guyon, 'yields to vertue aide,  
 But in her way throwes mischiefe and mis-  
 chaunce,  
 Whereby her course is stopt and passage  
 staid.  
 But you, faire sir, be not herewith dismaid,  
 But constant keepe the way in which ye  
 stand;  
 Which were it not that I am els delaid  
 With hard adventure, which I have in hand,  
 I labour would to guide you through al Fary  
 Land.'

## IX

'Gramercy, sir,' said he; 'but mote I weete  
 What straunge adventure doe ye now pur-  
 sew?  
 Perhaps my succour or advizement meete  
 Mote stead you much your purpose to sub-  
 dew.'  
 Then gan Sir Guyon all the story shew  
 Of false Acrasia, and her wicked wiles,  
 Which to avenge, the palmer him forth  
 drew  
 From Faery court. So talked they, the  
 whiles  
 They wasted had much way, and measurd  
 many miles.

## X

And now faire Phoebus gan decline in haste  
 His weary wagon to the western vae,  
 Whenas they spide a goodly castle, plaste  
 Foreby a river in a pleasaunt dale;  
 Which choosing for that evenings hospitale,  
 They thether marcht: but when they came  
 in sight,  
 And from their sweaty coursers did avale,  
 They found the gates fast barred long ere  
 night,  
 And every loup fast lockt, as fearing foes  
 despight.

## XI

Which when they saw, they weened fowle  
 reproch  
 Was to them doen, their entraunce to for-  
 stall,  
 Till that the squire gan nigher to approch,  
 And wind his horne under the castle wall,  
 That with the noise it shooke, as it would  
 fall.  
 Eftsoones forth looked from the highest  
 spire  
 The watch, and lowd unto the knights did  
 call,  
 To weete what they so rudely did require:  
 Who gently answered, they entraunce did  
 desire.

## XII

'Fly, fly, good knights,' said he, 'fly fast  
 away,  
 If that your lives ye love, as meete ye  
 should;  
 Fly fast, and save your selves from neare  
 decay;  
 Here may ye not have entraunce, though we  
 would:  
 We would and would againe, if that we  
 could;  
 But thousand enemies about us rave,  
 And with long siege us in this castle hould:  
 Seven yeares this wize they us besieged have,  
 And many good knights slaine, that have us  
 sought to save.'

## XIII

Thus as he spoke, loe! with outrageous cry  
 A thousand villeins rownd about them  
 swarmd  
 Out of the rockes and caves adjoyning nye:  
 Vile caitive wretches, ragged, rude, de-  
 formd,

All threatning death, all in straunge manner  
armd;  
Some with unweldy clubs, some with long  
speares,  
Some rusty knives, some staves in fier  
warind.  
Sterne was their looke, like wild amazed  
steares,  
Staring with hollow eies, and stiffe upstand-  
ing heares.

## XIV

Fiersly at first those knights they did as-  
sayle,  
And drove them to reeoile: but, when  
again  
They gave fresh charge, their forces gan to  
fayle,  
Unhable their encounter to sustaine;  
For with such puissaunce and impetuous  
maine  
Those champions broke on them, that forst  
them fly,  
Like scattered sheepe, whenas the shepherds  
swaine  
A lyon and a tigre doth espye,  
With greedy pace forth rushing from the  
forest nye.

## XV

A while they fled, but soone retourned  
again  
With greater fury then before was fownd;  
And evermore their ernell capitaine  
Sought with his raskall routs t' enclose  
them rownd,  
And overronne to tread them to the grownd.  
But soone the knights with their bright-  
burning blades  
Broke their rude troupes, and orders did  
confownd,  
Hewing and slashing at their idle shades;  
For though they bodies seem, yet substaunce  
from them fades.

## XVI

As when a swarme of gnats at eventide  
Out of the fennes of Allan doe arise,  
Their murmuring small trompetts sownden  
wide,  
Whiles in the aire their clustring army  
flies,  
That as a cloud doth seeme to dim the  
skies;  
Ne man nor beast may rest, or take repast,

For their sharpe wounds and noyous in-  
juries,  
Till the fierce northerne wind with blus-  
tring blast  
Doth blow them quite away, and in the  
ocean cast.

## XVII

Thus when they had that troublous rout  
disperst,  
Unto the eastle gate they come againe,  
And entraunce crav'd, which was denied  
erst.  
Now when report of that their perlous  
paine,  
And combrous confliet which they did sus-  
taine,  
Came to the ladies eare, which there did  
dwell,  
Shee forth issewed with a goodly traine  
Of squires and ladies equipaged well,  
And entertained them right fairely, as befell.

## XVIII

Alma she ealled was, a virgin bright,  
That had not yet felt Cupides wanton rage;  
Yet was shee wooded of many a gentle  
knight,  
And many a lord of noble parentage,  
That sought with her to lincke in marriage,  
For shee was faire, as faire mote ever bee,  
And in the flowre now of her freshest age;  
Yet full of grace and goodly modestee,  
That even heaven rejoiced her sweete face  
to see.

## XIX

In robe of lilly white she was arayd,  
That from her shoulder to her heele downe  
raught;  
The traine whereof loose far behind her  
strayd,  
Braunched with gold and perle, most richly  
wrought,  
And borne of two faire damsels, which were  
taught  
That service well. Her yellow golden heare  
Was trimly woven, and in tresses wrought,  
Ne other tire she on her head did weare,  
But crowned with a garland of sweete ro-  
siere.

## XX

Goodly shee entertaind those noble knights,  
And brought them up into her castle hall;

Where gentle court and gracious delight  
Shee to them made, with mildnesse virgin-  
all,

Shewing her selfe both wise and liberall.  
There when they rested had a season dew,  
They her besought, of favour speciall,  
Of that faire castle to afford them vew:  
Shee graunted, and them leading forth, the  
same did shew.

## XXI

First she them led up to the castle wall,  
That was so high as foe might not it clime,  
And all so faire and fensible withall;  
Not built of bricke, ne yet of stone and lime,  
But of thing like to that Ægyptian slime,  
Whereof King Nine whilome built Babell  
towre:

But O great pittie that no lenger time  
So goodly workemauship should not endure !  
Soone it must turne to earth: no earthly  
thing is sure.

## XXII

The frame thereof seemd partly circular, e,  
And part triangulare: O worke divine !  
Those two the first and last proportions are;  
The one imperfect, mortall, fœminine,  
Th' other immortall, perfect, masculine:  
And twixt them both a quadrate was the  
base,

Proportioned equally by seven and nine;  
Nine was the circle sett in heavens place:  
All which compacted made a goodly dia-  
pase.

## XXIII

Therein two gates were placed seemly well:  
The one before, by which all in did pas,  
Did th' other far in workmanship excell;  
For not of wood, nor of enduring bras,  
But of more worthy substance fram'd it  
was:

Doubly disparted, it did locke and close,  
That, when it locked, none might thorough  
pas,  
And when it opened, no man might it close;  
Still open to their friendes, and closed to  
their foes.

## XXIV

Of hewen stone the porch was fayrely  
wrought,  
Stone more of valew, and more smooth  
and fine,

Then jett or marble far from Ireland  
brought;

Over the which was cast a wandring vine,  
Enchaced with a wanton yvie twine.  
And over it a fayre portecullis hong,  
Which to the gate directly did incline,  
With comely compasse and compacture  
strong,

Nether unseemly short, nor yet exceeding  
long.

## XXV

Within the barbican a porter sate,  
Day and night duely keeping watch and  
ward;

Nor wight nor word mote passe out of the  
gate,

But in good order, and with dew regard:  
Utterers of secrets he from thence debard,  
Bablers of folly, and blazers of cryme:  
His larumbell might lowd and wyde be hard,  
When cause requyrd, but never out of time;  
Early and late it rong, at evening and at  
prinie.

## XXVI

And rownd about the porch on every syde  
Twise sixteene warders satt, all armed bright  
In glistring steele, and strongly fortifyde:  
Tall yeomen seemed they, and of great  
might,

And were enraunged ready still for fight.  
By them as Alma passed with her guesstes,  
They did obeysaunce, as beseemed right,  
And then againe retourned to their restes:  
The porter eke to her did lout with humble  
gestes.

## XXVII

Thence she them brought into a stately  
hall,

Wherein were many tables fayre dispred,  
And ready light with drapets festivall,  
Against the viaundes should be ministred  
At th' upper end there sate, yelad in red  
Downe to the ground, a comely personage,  
That in his hand a white rod menaged:  
He steward was, hight Diet; rype of age,  
And in demcanure sober, and in counsell  
sage.

## XXVIII

And through the hall there walked to and  
fro

A jolly yeoman, marshall of the same,



Whose name was Appetite: he did bestow  
 Both guestes and meate, when ever in they came,  
 And knew them how to order without blame,  
 As him the steward badd. They both atone  
 Did dewty to their lady, as became;  
 Who, passing by, forth ledd her guestes anone  
 Into the kitchin rowme, ne spard for nice-  
 nesse none.

## XXIX

It was a vault ybuilt for great dispenche,  
 With many raunges reard along the wall,  
 And one great chimney, whose long tonnell  
 thence  
 The smoke forth threw: and in the midst  
 of all  
 There placed was a caudron wide and tall,  
 Upon a mightie fornace, burning whott,  
 More whott then Aetn', or flaming Mongi-  
 ball:  
 For day and night it brent, ne ceased not,  
 So long as any thing it in the caudron gott.

## XXX

But to delay the heat, least by mischaunce  
 It might breake out, and set the whole on  
 fyre,  
 There added was by goodly ordinaunce  
 An huge great payre of bellowes, which did  
 styre  
 Continually, and cooling breath inspyre.  
 About the caudron many cookes accoyld,  
 With hookes and ladles, as need did re-  
 quyre:  
 The whyles the viaundes in the vessell  
 boyld,  
 They did about their businesse sweat, and  
 sorely toyld.

## XXXI

The maister cooke was cald Concoction,  
 A carefull man, and full of comely guyse.  
 The kitchin clerke, that hight Digestion,  
 Did order all th' achates in seemely wise,  
 And set them forth, as well he could de-  
 vise.  
 The rest had severall offices assynd:  
 Some to remove the scum, as it did rise;  
 Others to beare the same away did mynd;  
 And others it to use according to his kynd.

## XXXII

But all the liquour, which was fowle and  
 waste,  
 Not good nor serviceable elles for ought,  
 They in another great rownd vessel plaste,  
 Till by a conduit pipe it thence were  
 brought:  
 And all the rest, that noyous was and  
 nought,  
 By secret wayes, that none might it espy,  
 Was close convoid, and to the backgate  
 brought,  
 That cleped was Port Esquiline, whereby  
 It was avoided quite, and throwne out  
 privily.

## XXXIII

Which goodly order and great workmans  
 skill  
 Whenas those knightes beheld, with rare  
 delight  
 And gazing wonder they their mindes did  
 fill;  
 For never had they seene so straunge a  
 sight.  
 Thence backe againe faire Alma led them  
 right,  
 And soone into a goodly parlour brought,  
 That was with royall arras richly dight,  
 In which was nothing pourtrahed nor  
 wrought,  
 Not wrought nor pourtrahed, but easie to  
 be thought.

## XXXIV

And in the midst thereof upon the floure,  
 A lovely bevy of faire ladies sate,  
 Courted of many a jolly paramoure,  
 The which them did in modest wise amate,  
 And eachone sought his lady to aggrate:  
 And eke emongst them litle Cupid playd  
 His wanton sportes, being retourned late  
 From his fierce warres, and having from  
 him layd  
 His cruel bow, wherewith he thousands  
 hath dismayd.

## XXXV

Diverse delights they fownd them selves to  
 please;  
 Some song in sweet consort, some laught for  
 joy,  
 Some plaid with strawes, some ydly satt at  
 ease;  
 But other some could not abide to toy,

All pleasaunce was to them grieve and  
 annoy:  
 This frownd, that fauld, the third for  
 shame did blush,  
 Another seemed envious, or coy,  
 Another in her teeth did gnaw a rush:  
 But at these strangers presence every one  
 did hush.

## XXXVI

Soone as the gracious Alma came in place,  
 They all attonce out of their seates arose,  
 And to her homage made, with humble  
 grace:  
 Whom when the knights beheld, they gan  
 dispose  
 Themselves to court, and each a damzell  
 chose.  
 The Prince by chaunce did on a lady light,  
 That was right faire and fresh as morning  
 rose,  
 But somewhat sad and solenne eke in sight,  
 As if some pensive thought constrained her  
 gentle spright.

## XXXVII

In a long purple pall, whose skirt with gold  
 Was fretted all about, she was arayd;  
 And in her hand a poplar braunch did hold:  
 To whom the Prince in courteous maner  
 sayd:  
 'Gentle madame, why beene ye thus dis-  
 mayd,  
 And your faire beautie doe with sadnes  
 spill?  
 Lives any, that you hath thus ill apayd?  
 Or doen you love, or doen you lack your  
 will?  
 What ever bee the cause, it sure beseemes  
 you ill.'

## XXXVIII

'Fayre sir,' said she, halfe in disdaine full  
 wise,  
 'How is it, that this word in me ye blame,  
 And in your selfe doe not the same ad-  
 vise?  
 Him ill beseemes, anothers fault to name,  
 That may unwares bee blotted with the  
 same:  
 Pensive I yeeld I am, and sad in mind,  
 Through great desire of glory and of fame;  
 Ne ought I weene are ye therein behynd,  
 That have twelve moneths sought one, yet  
 no where can her find.'

## XXXIX

The Prince was inly moved at her speach,  
 Well weeting trew what she had rashly  
 told,  
 Yet with faire semblaunt sought to hyde  
 the breach,  
 Which chaunge of colour did perforce un-  
 fold,  
 Now seeming flaming whott, now stony  
 cold.  
 Tho, turning soft aside, he did inqyre  
 What wight she was, that poplar braunch  
 did hold:  
 It answered was, her name was Prays-  
 desire,  
 That by well doing sought to honour to  
 aspyre.

## XL

The whyles, the Faery knight did enter-  
 tayne  
 Another damsell of that gentle crew,  
 That was right fayre, and modest of de-  
 mayne,  
 But that too oft she chaung'd her native  
 hew:  
 Straunge was her tyre, and all her garment  
 blew,  
 Close rownd about her tuckt with many a  
 plight:  
 Upon her fist the bird, which shoneth vew  
 And keepes in covert close from living  
 wight,  
 Did sitt, as yet ashamd, how rude Pan did  
 her dight.

## XLI

So long as Guyon with her commoned,  
 Unto the grownd she cast her modest eye,  
 And ever and anon with rosy red  
 The bashfull blood her snowy cheekes did  
 dye,  
 That her became, as polisht yvory  
 Which cunning craftesman hand hath over-  
 layd  
 With fayre vermilion or pure castory.  
 Great wonder had the knight, to see the  
 mayd  
 So straungely passioned, and to her gently  
 said:

## XLII

'Fayre damzell, seemeth by your troubled  
 cheare,  
 That either me too bold ye weene, this wise

You to molest, or other ill to feare  
That in the secret of your hart close lyes,  
From whence it doth, as cloud from sea,  
aryse.

If it be I, of pardon I you pray;  
But if ought else that I mote not devyse,  
I will, if please you it discure, assay  
To ease you of that ill, so wisely as I may.'

## XLIII

She answerd nought, but more abasht for  
shame,  
Held downe her head, the whiles her lovely  
face

The flashing blood with blushing did inflame,  
And the strong passion mard her modest  
grace,

That Guyon mervayld at her uncouth cace;  
Till Alma him bespake: 'Why wonder yee,  
Faire sir, at that which ye so much em-  
braee?

She is the fountaine of your modestee;  
You shamefast are, but Shamefastnes it  
selfe is shee.'

## XLIV

Thereat the Elfe did blush in privitee,  
And turnd his face away; but she the  
same

Dissembled faire, and faynd to oversee.  
Thus they awhile with court and goodly game  
Themselves did solace each one with his  
dame,

Till that great lady thenee away them  
sought,

To vew her castles other wondrous frame.  
Up to a stately turret she them brought,  
Ascending by ten steps of alabaster  
wrought.

## XLV

That turrets frame most admirable was,  
Like highest heaven compassed around,  
And lifted high above this earthly masse,  
Which it survewd, as hils doen lower  
ground:

But not on ground mote like to this be  
found;

Not that, which antique Cadmus whylome  
built

In Thebes, which Alexander did confound;  
Nor that proud towre of Troy, though  
riehly guilt,

From which young Hectors blood by eruell  
Greekes was spilt.

## XLVI

The roofe hereof was arched over head,  
And deckt with flowers and herbars daint-  
ily:

Two goodly beacons, set in watches stead,  
Therein gave light, and flamd continually;  
For they of living fire most subtilly  
Were made, and set in silver sockets bright,  
Cover'd with lids deviz'd of substance sly,  
That readily they shut and open might.  
O who can tell the prayses of that makers  
might?

## XLVII

Ne can I tell, ne ean I stay to tell  
This parts great workemanship and won-  
drous powre,

That all this other worldes worke doth ex-  
cell,

And likewise unto that heavenly towre,  
That God hath built for his owne blessed  
bowre.

Therein were divers rowmes, and divers  
stages,

But three the chiefest, and of greatest  
powre,

In which there dwelt three honorable sages,  
The wisest men, I weene, that lived in  
their ages.

## XLVIII

Not he, whom Greece, the nourse of all  
good arts,

By Phæbus doome, the wisest thought alive,  
Might be compar'd to these by many parts:  
Nor that sage Pylian syre, which did sur-  
vive

Three ages, such as mortall men contrive,  
By whose advise old Priams cittie fell,  
With these in praise of pollicies mote strive.  
These three in these three rowmes did son-  
dry dwell,

And counselled faire Alma, how to governe  
well.

## XLIX

The first of them could things to come fore-  
see;

The next could of thinges present best ad-  
vize;

The third things past could keepe in mem-  
oree:

So that no time nor reason could arize,  
But that the same could one of these com-  
prize.



Forthy the first did in the forepart sit,  
That nought mote hinder his quicke preju-  
dize:

He had a sharpe foresight, and working wit,  
That never idle was, ne once would rest a  
whit.

## L

His chamber was dispaigned all with in  
With sondry colours, in the which were writ  
Infinite shapes of thinges dispersed thin;  
Some such as in the world were never yit,  
Ne can devized be of mortall wit;  
Some daily seene, and knowen by their  
names,

Such as in idle fantasies doe flit:  
Infernall hags, centaurs, feendes, hippo-  
dames,

Apes, lions, aegles, owles, fooles, lovers,  
children, dames.

## LI

And all the chamber filled was with flyes,  
Which buzzed all about, and made such  
sound,

That they encombred all mens eares and  
eyes,  
Like many swarmes of bees assembled  
round,

After their hives with honny do abound:  
All those were idle thoughtes and fantasies,  
Devices, dreames, opinions unsound,  
Shewes, visions, sooth-sayes, and prophesies;  
And all that fained is, as leasings, tales,  
and lies.

## LII

Emongst them all sate he which wonned  
there,

That hight Phantastes by his nature trew,  
A man of yeaeres yet fresh, as mote appere,  
Of swarth complexion, and of crabbed hew,  
That him full of melaneholie did shew;  
Bent hollow beetle browes, sharpe staring  
eyes,

That mad or foolish seemd: one by his vew  
Mote deeme him borne with ill-disposed  
skyes,

When oblique Saturne sate in the house of  
agonyes.

## LIII

Whom Alma having shewed to her gwestes,  
Thence brought them to the second rowme,  
whose wals

Were painted faire with memorable gestic  
Of famous wisards, and with picturals  
Of magistrates, of courts, of tribunals,  
Of commen wealthes, of states, of pollicy,  
Of lawes, of judgements, and of deeretals;  
All artes, all science, all philosophy,  
And all that in the world was ay thought  
wittily.

## LIV

Of those that rowme was full, and them  
among

There sate a man of ripe and perfect age,  
Who did them meditate all his life long,  
That through continuall praetise and usage,  
He now was growne right wise and won-  
drous sage.

Great plesure had those straunger knightes,  
to see

His goodly reason and grave personage,  
That his diseiples both desyrd to bee;  
But Alma thencee them led to th' hindmost  
rowme of three.

## LV

That chamber seemed ruinous and old,  
And therefore was removed far behind,  
Yet were the wals, that did the same up-  
hold,

Right firme and strong, though somewhat  
they declind;

And therein sat an old old man, halfe blind,  
And all decrepit in his feeble corse,  
Yet lively vigour rested in his mind,  
And recompenst him with a better scorse:  
Weake body well is chang'd for minds re-  
doubled forse.

## LVI

This man of infinite remembraunce was,  
And things foregone through many ages  
held,

Which he recorded still, as they did pas,  
Ne suffred them to perish through long eld,  
As all things els, the which this world doth  
weld,

But laid them up in his innmortall serine,  
Where they for ever incorrupted dweld:  
The warres he well remembred of King  
Nine,  
Of old Assaraeus, and Inachus divine.

## LVII

The yeaeres of Nestor nothing were to his,  
Ne yet Mathusalem, though longest liv'd;

For he remembred both their fancie:  
Ne wonder then, if that he were depriv'd  
Of native strength now that he them surviv'd.

His chamber all was hangd about with  
rolls,  
And old records from auncient times derivd,  
Some made in books, some in long parchment scrolls,  
That were all worm-eaten and full of canker holes.

## LVIII

Amidst them all he in a chaire was sett,  
Tossing and turning them withouten end;  
But for he was unhabile them to fett,  
A litle boy did on him still attend,  
To reach, when ever he for ought did send;  
And oft when thinges were lost, or laid amis,  
That boy them sought and unto him did lend:  
Therefore he Anamnestes cleped is,  
And that old man Eumnestes, by their propriety.

## LIX

The knightes, there entring, did him reverence dew,  
And wondred at his endlesse exercise.  
Then as they gan his library to vew,  
And antique regesters for to avise,  
There chaunced to the Princes hand to rize  
An auncient booke, hight *Briton Moniments*,  
That of this lands first conquest did devize,  
And old division into regiments,  
Till it reduced was to one mans governments.

## LX

Sir Guyon chaunst eke on another booke,  
That hight *Antiquitee of Faery Lond*:  
In which whenas he greedily did looke,  
Th' ofspring of Elves and Faries there he fond,  
As it delivered was from hond to hond.  
Whereat they, burning both with fervent fire  
Their countreys auncestry to understond,  
Crav'd leave of Alma and that aged sire,  
To read those bookes; who gladly graunted their desire.

## CANTO X

A chronicle of Briton kings,  
From Brute to Uthers rayne;  
And rolls of Elfin emperours,  
Till time of Gloriane.

## I

Who now shall give unto me words and  
sound,  
Equall unto this haughty enterprise?  
Or who shall lend me wings, with which  
from ground  
My lowly verse may loftily arise,  
And lift it selfe unto the highest skyes?  
More ample spirit, then hetherto was wount,  
Here needes me, whiles the famous auncestries  
Of my most dreaded Sovereigne I recount,  
By which all earthly princes she doth far surmount.

## II

Ne under sunne, that shines so wide and  
faire,  
Whence all that lives does borrow life and  
light,  
Lives ought that to her linage may compare,  
Which, though from earth it be derived  
right,  
Yet doth it selfe stretch forth to heavens  
height,  
And all the world with wonder overspred;  
A labor huge, exceeding far my might:  
How shall fraile pen, with feare disparaged,  
Conceive such souveraine glory, and great  
bountyhed?

## III

Argument worthy of Mæonian quill,  
Or rather worthy of great Phoebus rote,  
Whereon the ruines of great Ossa hill,  
And triumphes of Phlegrean Jove, he  
wrote,  
That all the gods admird his lofty note.  
But, if some relish of that heavenly lay  
His learned daughters would to me report,  
To decke my song withall, I would assay  
Thy name, O souveraine Queene, to blazon  
far away.

## IV

Thy name, O souveraine Queene, thy realme,  
and race,  
From this renowned Prince derived arre,

Who mightily upheld that royall mace,  
Which now thou bear'st, to thee descended  
farre  
From mighty kings and couquerours in  
warre,  
Thy fathers and great grandfathers of old,  
Whose noble deeds above the northern  
starre  
Immortall Fame for ever hath enrold;  
As in that old mans booke they were in  
order told.

## V

The land, which warlike Britons now pos-  
sesse,  
And therein have their mighty empire raysd,  
In antique times was salvage wilderness,  
Unpeopled, unmannurd, unprovd, unpraysd;  
Ne was it island then, ne was it paysd  
Amid the ocean waves, ne was it sought  
Of merchaunts farre, for profits therein  
praysd;  
But was all desolate, and of some thought  
By sea to have bene from the Celticke  
mayn-land brought.

## VI

Ne did it then deserve a name to have,  
Till that the venturous mariner that way,  
Learning his ship from those white rocks  
to save,  
Which all along the southerne sea-coast  
lay,  
Threatning unheedy wrecke and rash de-  
cay,  
For safeties sake that same his sea-marke  
made,  
And namd it ALBION. But later day,  
Finding in it fit ports for fishers trade,  
Gan more the same frequent, and further  
to invade.

## VII

But far in land a salvage nation dwelt  
Of hideous giaunts, and halfe beastly men,  
That never tasted grace, nor goodnes felt,  
But like wild beastes lurking in loathsome  
den,  
And flying fast as roebucke through the  
fen,  
All naked without shame or care of cold,  
By hunting and by spoiling liveden;  
Of stature huge, and eke of corage bold,  
That sonnes of men amazd their sternesse  
to behold.

## VIII

But whence they sprong, or how they were  
begott,  
Uneath is to assure; uneath to wene  
That monstrous error, which doth some as-  
sott,  
That Diocesians fifty daughters shene  
Into this land by channce have driven bene,  
Where companing with feends and filthy  
sprights  
Through vaine illusion of their lust unclene,  
They brought forth geaunts, and such  
dreadful wights  
As far exceeded men in their immeasur'd  
mights.

## IX

They held this land, and with their filthi-  
nesse  
Polluted this same gentle soyle long time:  
That their owne mother loathd their  
beastlinesse,  
And gan abhorre her broods unkindly crime,  
All were they borne of her owne native  
slime:  
Until that Brutus, anciently deriv'd  
From roiall stocke of old Assaracs line,  
Driven by fatall error, here arriv'd,  
And them of their unjust possession de-  
priv'd.

## X

But ere he had established his throne,  
And spred his empire to the utmost shore,  
He fought great batteils with his salvage  
fone;  
In which he them defeated evermore,  
And many giaunts left on groning flore,  
That well can witnes yet unto this day  
The westerne Hogh, besprineled with the  
gore  
Of mighty Goëmot, whome in stout fray  
Corineus conquered, and cruelly did slay.

## XI

And eke that ample pitt, yet far renownd  
For the large leape which Debon did com-  
pell  
Coulin to make, being eight lugs of grownd,  
Into the which retourning backe he fell:  
But those three monstrous stones doe most  
excell  
Which that huge sonne of hideous Albion,  
Whose father Hercules in Fraunce did  
quell,



Great Godmer, threw, in fierce contention,  
At bold Canutus; but of him was slaine  
anon.

## XII

In meed of these great conquests by them  
gott,

Corineus had that province utmost west  
To him assigned for his worthy lott,  
Which of his name and memorable gest  
He called Cornwaile, yet so called best:  
And Debons shayre was that is Devonshyre:  
But Canute had his portion from the rest,  
The which he cald Canutium, for his hyre;  
Now Cantium, which Kent we comenly in-  
quyre.

## XIII

Thus Brute this realme unto his rule sub-  
dewd,

And raigned long in great felicity,  
Lov'd of his freends, and of his foes es-  
chewd.

He left three sonnes, his famous progeny,  
Borne of fayre Inogene of Italy;  
Mongst whom he parted his imperiall state,  
And Locrine left chiefe lord of Britany.  
At last ripe age bad him surrender late  
His life, and long good fortune, unto finall  
fate.

## XIV

Loerine was left the soveraine lord of all;  
But Albanaet had all the northerne part,  
Which of him selfe Albania he did call;  
And Camber did possesse the westernne  
quart,

Which Severne now from Logris doth de-  
part:

And each his portion peaceably enjoyd,  
Ne was there outward breach, nor grudge  
in hart,

That once their quiet government annoyd,  
But each his paynes to others profit still  
employd.

## XV

Untill a nation straung, with visage swart  
And corage fierce, that all men did affray,  
Which through the world then swarmd in  
every part,

And overflow'd all countries far away,  
Like Noyes great flood, with their impor-  
tune sway,  
This land invaded with like violence,

And did themselves through all the north  
display:

Untill that Loerine, for his realmes de-  
fence,

Did head against them make, and strong  
munificence.

## XVI

He them encountred, a confused rout,  
Foreby the river, that whylome was hight  
The ancient Abus, where with courage stout  
He them defeated in victorious fight,  
And ehaste so fiercely after fearefull flight,  
That forst their chiefetain, for his safeties  
sake,

(Their chiefetain Humber named was aright,)  
Unto the mighty streame him to betake,  
Where he an end of batteill, and of life did  
make.

## XVII

The king retourned proud of victory,  
And insolent vox through unwonted ease,  
That shortly he forgot the jeopardy,  
Which in his land he lately did appease,  
And fell to vaine voluptuous disease:  
He lov'd faire Ladie Estrild, leudly lov'd,  
Whose wanton pleasures him too much did  
please,

That quite his hart from Guendolene re-  
mov'd,

From Guendolene his wife, though alwaies  
faithful prov'd.

## XVIII

The noble daughter of Corineus  
Would not endure to bee so vile disdaind,  
But, gathering force and corage valorous,  
Encountred him in batteill well ordaind,  
In which him vanquisht she to fly con-  
straind:

But she so fast pursewd, that him she  
tooke,

And threw in bands, where he till death  
remaind:

Als his faire leman, flying through a brooke,  
She overhent, nought moved with her pite-  
ous looke.

## XIX

But both her selfe, and eke her daughter  
deare,

Begotten by her kingly paramoure,  
The faire Sabrina, almost dead with feare,  
She there attached, far from all succoure;

The one she slew in that impatient stoure,  
But the sad virgin, innocent of all,  
Adowne the rolling river she did poure,  
Which of her name now Severne men do  
call:

Such was the end that to disloyall love did  
fall.

## XX

Then, for her sonne, which she to Locrin  
bore,  
Madan, was young, unmeet the rule to  
sway,  
In her owne hand the crowne she kept in  
store,  
Till ryper yeares he raught, and stronger  
stay:  
During which time her powre she did dis-  
play  
Through all this realme, the glory of her  
sex,  
And first taught men a woman to obey:  
But when her sonne to mans estate did  
wex,  
She it surrendred, ne her selfe would lenger  
vex.

## XXI

Tho Madan raignd, unworthie of his race:  
For with all shame that sacred throne he  
fild:  
Next Memprise, as unworthy of that place,  
In which being consorted with Manild,  
For thirst of single kingdom him he kild.  
But Ebranck salved both their infamies  
With noble deedes, and warreyd on Brun-  
child  
In Henault, where yet of his victories  
Brave moniments remaine, which yet that  
land envies.

## XXII

An happy man in his first dayes he was,  
And happy father of faire progeny:  
For all so many weekes as the yeare has,  
So many children he did multiply;  
Of which were twentie sonnes, which did  
apply  
Their mindes to prayse and chevalrous  
desyre:  
Those germans did subdew all Germany,  
Of whom it hight; but in the end their  
syre  
With foule repulse from Fraunce was forced  
to retyre.

## XXIII

Which blott his sonne succeeding in his seat,  
The second Brute, the second both in name  
And eke in semblaunce of his puissance  
great,  
Right well recur'd, and did away that blame  
With recompence of everlasting fame.  
He with his victour sword first opened  
The bowels of wide Fraunce, a forlorne  
dame,  
And taught her first how to be conquered;  
Since which, with sondrie spoiles she hath  
bene ransacked.

## XXIV

Let Scaldis tell, and let tell Hania,  
And let the marsh of Esthambruges tell,  
What colour were their waters that same  
day,  
And all the moore twixt Elversham and  
Dell,  
With blood of Henalois, which therein fell.  
How oft that day did sad Brunchildis see  
The greene shield dyde in dolorous vermell!  
That not *scuith guiridh* it mote seeme to bee,  
But rather *y scuith gogh*, signe of sad  
cruelte.

## XXV

His sonne, King Leill, by fathers labour  
long,  
Enjoyd an heritage of lasting peace,  
And built Cairleill, and built Cairleon strong.  
Next Huddibras his realme did not en-  
crease,  
But taught the land from wearie wars to  
cease.  
Whose footsteps Bladud following, in artes  
Exceld at Athens all the learned preace,  
From whence he brought them to these  
salvage parts,  
And with sweet science mollifide their  
stubborne harts.

## XXVI

Ensampl of his wondrous faculty,  
Behold the boyling bathes at Cairbadon,  
Which seeth with secret fire eternally,  
And in their entrailles, full of quick  
brinston,  
Nourish the flames which they are warmd  
upon,  
That to their people wealth they forth do  
well,  
And health to every forreyne nation:

Yet he at last, contending to excell  
The reach of men, through flight into fond  
mischiefe fell.

## XXVII

Next him King Leyr in happie peace long  
raynd,  
But had no issue male him to succeed,  
But three faire daughters, which were well  
uptraind  
In all that seemed fitt for kingly seed:  
Mongst whom his realme he equally decreed  
To have divided. Tho, when feeble age  
Nigh to his utmost date he saw proceed,  
He cald his daughters, and with speeches  
sage  
Inquyrd, which of them most did love her  
parentage.

## XXVIII

The eldest Gonorill gan to protest,  
That she much more then her owne life him  
lov'd;  
And Regan greater love to him profest  
Then all the world, when ever it were  
proov'd;  
But Cordeill said she lov'd him as behoov'd:  
Whose simple answere, wanting colours  
fayre  
To paint it forth, him to displeasaunce  
moov'd,  
That in his crown he counted her no hayre,  
But twixt the other twain his kingdom whole  
did shayre.

## XXIX

So wedded th' one to Maglan, king of  
Scottes,  
And thother to the king of Cambria,  
And twixt them shayrd his realme by equall  
lottes:  
But without dowre the wise Cordelia  
Was sent to Aggannip of Celtica.  
Their aged syre, thus eased of his crowne,  
A private life ledd in Albania,  
With Gonorill, long had in great renowne,  
That nought him griev'd to beene from rule  
deposed downe.

## XXX

But true it is that, when the oyle is spent,  
The light goes out, and weeke is throwne  
away;  
So when he had resign'd his regiment,  
His daughter gan despise his drouping day,

And wearie wax of his continuall stay.  
Tho to his daughter Regan he repayrd,  
Who him at first well used every way;  
But when of his departure she despayrd,  
Her bountie she abated, and his cheare  
empayrd.

## XXXI

The wretched man gan then avise to late,  
That love is not, where most it is profest;  
Too truely tryde in his extremest state.  
At last, resolv'd likewise to prove the rest,  
He to Cordelia him selfe addrest,  
Who with entyre affection him receav'd,  
As for her syre and king her seemed best;  
And after all an army strong she leav'd,  
To war on those which him had of his realme  
bereav'd.

## XXXII

So to his crowne she him restord againe,  
In which he dyde, made ripe for death by  
eld,  
And after wild, it should to her remaine:  
Who peaceably the same long time did weld,  
And all mens harts in dew obedience held:  
Till that her sisters children, woxen strong,  
Through proud ambition against her rebeld,  
And overcommen kept in prison long,  
Till, weary of that wretched life, her selfe  
she hong.

## XXXIII

Then gan the bloody brethren both to raine:  
But fierce Cundah gan shortly to envy  
His brother Morgan, prickt with proud  
disdaine,  
To have a pere in part of soverainty;  
And kindling coles of cruell enmity,  
Raisd warre, and him in batteill overthrew:  
Whence as he to those woody hilles did  
fly,  
Which hight of him Glamorgan, there him  
slew:  
Then did he raigne alone, when he none  
equall knew.

## XXXIV

His some Rivall' his dead rowme did supply,  
In whose sad time blood did from heaven  
rayne:  
Next great Gurgustus, then faire Cæily,  
In constant peace their kingdomes did  
contayne:  
After whom Lago and Kinmarke did rayne,



And Gorbogud, till far in yeares he grew:  
Then his ambitious sonnes unto them  
twayne  
Arraught the rule, and from their father  
drew:  
Stout Ferrex and sterne Porrex him in prison  
threw.

## XXXV

But O! the greedy thirst of royall crowne,  
That knowes no kinred, nor regards no  
right,  
Stird Porrex up to put his brother downe;  
Who, unto him assembling forreigne might,  
Made warre on him, and fell him selfe in  
fight:  
Whose death t' avenge, his mother  
mercilesse,  
Most mercilesse of women, Wyden hight,  
Her other sonne fast sleeping did oppresse,  
And with most cruell hand him murdered  
pittlesse.

## XXXVI

Here ended Brutus sacred progeny,  
Which had seven hundred yeares this scepter  
borne,  
With high renowme and great felicity:  
The noble braunch from th' antique stocke  
was torne  
Through discord, and the roiall throne  
forlorne:  
Thenceforth this realme was into factions  
rent,  
Whilst each of Brutus boasted to be borne,  
That in the end was left no monument  
Of Brutus, nor of Britons glorie auncient.

## XXXVII

Then up arose a man of matchlesse might,  
And wondrous wit to menage high affayres,  
Who, stird with pittie of the stressed plight  
Of this sad realme, cut into sondry shayres  
By such as claymd themselves Brutes right-  
full hayres,  
Gathered the princes of the people loose,  
To taken counsell of their common cares;  
Who, with his wisdom won, him streight  
did choose  
Their king, and swore him fealty, to win or  
loose.

## XXXVIII

Then made he head against his enimies,  
And Ymner slew, of Logris miscreate;

Then Ruddoc and proud Stater, both allies,  
This of Albany newly nominate,  
And that of Cambry king confirmed late,  
He overthrew through his owne valiaunce;  
Whose countries he redus'd to quiet state,  
And shortly brought to civile governaunce,  
Now one, which earst were many made  
through variaunce.

## XXXIX

Then made he sacred lawes, which some  
men say  
Were unto him reveald in vision,  
By which he freed the travelers high way,  
The churches part, and ploughmans portion,  
Restraining stealth and strong extortion;  
The gratus Numa of Great Britany:  
For, till his dayes, the chiefe dominion  
By strength was wielded without pollicy;  
Therefore he first wore crowne of gold for  
dignity.

## XL

Donwallo dyde (for what may live for ay?)  
And left two sonnes, of pearelesse prowesse  
both,  
That sacked Rome too dearely did assay,  
The recompence of their perjured oth,  
And ransackt Greece wel tryde, when they  
were wroth;  
Besides subjected France and Germany,  
Which yet their praises speake, all be they  
loth,  
And inly tremble at the memory  
Of Brennus and Belinus, kinges of Britany.

## XLI

Next them did Gurgunt, great Belinus sonne,  
In rule succede, and eke in fathers praise:  
He Easterland subdewd, and Denmarke  
wonne,  
And of them both did foy and tribute raise.  
The which was dew in his dead fathers daies.  
He also gave to fugitives of Spayne,  
Whom he at sea found wandring from their  
waies,  
A seate in Ireland safely to remayne,  
Which they should hold of him, as subject  
to Britayne.

## XLII

After him raigned Guitheline his hayre,  
The justest man and trewest in his daies.  
Who had to wife Dame Mertia the fayre,  
A woman worthy of immortall praise,

Which for this realme found many goodly  
layes,  
And wholesome statutes to her husband  
brought:  
Her many deemd to have beene of the  
Fayes,  
As was Aegerie, that Numa tought:  
Those yet of her be Mertian lawes both  
nam'd and thought.

## XLIII

Her sonne Sisillus after her did rayne,  
And then Kimarus, and then Danius;  
Next whom Morindus did the crowne sus-  
tayne,  
Who, had he not with wrath outrageous  
And cruell rancour dim'd his valorous  
And mightie deedes, should matched have  
the best:  
As well in that same field victorious  
Against the forreine Morands he exprest:  
Yet lives his memorie, though carcass  
sleepe in rest.

## XLIV

Five sonnes he left begotten of one wife,  
All which successively by turnes did rayne;  
First Gorboman, a man of vertuous life;  
Next Archigald, who, for his proud dis-  
dayne,  
Deposed was from pryncedome soverayne,  
And pitteous Elidure put in his sted;  
Who shortly it to him restord agayne,  
Till by his death he it recovered;  
But Peridure and Vigent him dithronized.

## XLV

In wretched prison long he did remaine,  
Till they outraigned had their utmost date,  
And then therein reseized was againe,  
And ruled long with honorable state,  
Till he surrendred realme and life to fate.  
Then all the sonnes of these five brethren  
raynd  
By dew successe, and all their nephewes  
late;  
Even thrise eleven descents the crowne re-  
taynd,  
Till aged Hely by dew heritage it gaynd.

## XLVI

He had two sonnes, whose eldest, called Lud,  
Left of his life most famous memory,  
And endlesse monuments of his great good:  
The ruin'd wals he did reædifye

Of Troynovant, gainst force of enemy,  
And built that gate which of his name is  
light,  
By which he lyes entombed solemnly.  
He left two sonnes, too young to rule aright,  
Androgeus and Tenantius, pictures of his  
might.

## XLVII

Whilst they were young, Cassibalane their  
eme  
Was by the people chosen in their sted,  
Who on him tooke the roiall diademe,  
And goodly well long time it governed;  
Till the prowde Romanes him disquieted,  
And warlike Cæsar, tempted with the name  
Of this sweet island, never conquered,  
And envying the Britons blazed fame,  
(O hideous hunger of dominion!) hether  
came.

## XLVIII

Yet twice they were repulsed backe againe,  
And twice renforst backe to their ships to  
fly,  
The whiles with blood they all the shore did  
staine,  
And the gray ocean into purple dy:  
Ne had they footing found at last perdie,  
Had not Androgeus, false to native soyle,  
And envions of uncles soveraintie,  
Betrayd his countrey unto forreine spoyle:  
Nought els but treason from the first this  
land did foyle.

## XLIX

So by him Cæsar got the victory,  
Through great bloodshed and many a sad  
assay,  
In which himselfe was charged heavily  
Of hardy Nennius, whom he yet did slay,  
But lost his sword, yet to be seene this  
day.  
Thenceforth this land was tributarie made  
T' ambitious Rome, and did their rule obay,  
Till Arthur all that reckoning defrayd;  
Yet oft the Briton kings against them  
strongly swayd.

## L

Next him Tenantius raignd; then Kimbe-  
line,  
What time th' Eternall Lord in fleshly slime  
Enwombed was, from wretched Adams line  
To purge away the guilt of sinfull crime:

O joyous memorie of happy time,  
That heavenly grace so plenteously displayd!  
O too high ditty for my simple rime!  
Soone after this the Romanes him warrayd,  
For that their tribute he refusd to let be  
payd.

## LI

Good Claudius, that next was emperour,  
An army brought, and with him batteille  
fought,  
In which the king was by a treachetour  
Disguised slaine, ere any thereof thought:  
Yet ceased not the bloody fight for ought;  
For Arvirage his brothers place supplyde,  
Both in his armes and crowne, and by that  
draught  
Did drive the Romanes to the weaker syde,  
That they to peace agreed. So all was paci-  
fyde.

## LII

Was never king more highly magnifide,  
Nor dredd of Romanes, then was Arvirage;  
For which the emperour to him allide  
His daughter Genuiss' in marriage:  
Yet shortly he renounst the vassallage  
Of Rome againe, who hether hastily sent  
Vespasian, that with great spoile and rage  
Forwasted all, till Genuissa gent  
Persuaded him to cease, and her lord to  
relent.

## LIII

He dide; and him succeeded Marius,  
Who joyd his dayes in great tranquillity:  
Then Coyll, and after him good Lucius,  
That first received Christianity,  
The sacred pledge of Christes Evangely:  
Yet true it is, that long before that day  
Hither came Joseph of Arimathy,  
Who brought with him the Holy Grayle,  
(they say)  
And preacht the truth; but since it greatly  
did decay.

## LIV

This good king shortly without issew dide,  
Whereof great trouble in the kingdome  
grew,  
That did her selfe in sondry parts divide,  
And with her powre her owne selfe over-  
threw,  
Whilest Romanes daily did the weake  
subdew:

Which seeing stout Bundeua, up arose,  
And taking armes, the Britons to her drew;  
With whom she marched streight against  
her foes,  
And them unwares besides the Severne did  
enclose.

## LV

There she with them a cruell batteill tryde,  
Not with so good successe as shee deserv'd,  
By reason that the captaines on her syde,  
Corrupted by Paulinus, from her swerv'd:  
Yet such as were through former flight  
preserv'd  
Gathering againe, her host she did renew,  
And with fresh corage on the victor serv'd:  
But being all defeated, save a few,  
Rather then fly, or be captiv'd, her selfe  
she slew.

## LVI

O famous moniment of womens prayse,  
Matchable either to Semiramis,  
Whom antique history so high doth rayse,  
Or to Hypsiphil', or to Thomiris!  
Her host two hundred thonsaud numbred  
is;  
Who, whiles good fortune favoured her  
might,  
Triumphed oft against her enemies;  
And yet, though overcome in haplesse fight,  
Shee triumphed on death, in enemies de-  
spight.

## LVII

Her reliques Fulgent having gathered,  
Fought with Severus, and him overthrew;  
Yet in the chace was slaine of them that fled:  
So made them victors whome he did subdew.  
Then gan Carausius tyrannize anew,  
And against the Romanes bent their proper  
powre;  
But him Allectus treacherously slew,  
And tooke on him the robe of emperoure:  
Nath'lesse the same enjoyed but short  
happy howre.

## LVIII

For Asclepiodate him overcame,  
And left inglorious on the vanquisht playne,  
Without or robe or rag to hide his shame.  
Then afterwards he in his stead did raigne;  
But shortly was by Coyll in batteill slaine:  
Who after long debate, since Lucies tyme,  
Was of the Britons first crownd soveraine.



Then gan this realme renew her passed  
prime:  
He of his name Coylechester built of stone  
and lime.

## LIX

Which when the Romanes heard, they  
hether sent  
Constantius, a man of mickle might,  
With whome King Coyll made an agree-  
ment,  
And to him gave for wife his daughter  
bright,  
Fayre Helena, the fairest living wight;  
Who in all godly thewes, and goodly praise,  
Did far excell, but was most famous hight  
For skil in musicke of all in her daies,  
Aswell in curious instruments as cunning  
laies.

## LX

Of whom he did great Constantine begett,  
Who afterward was emperour of Rome;  
To which whiles absent he his mind did  
sett,  
Octavius here lept into his roome,  
And it usurped by unrighteous doome:  
But he his title justifie by might,  
Slaying Traherne, and having overcome  
The Romane legion in dreadfull fight:  
So settled he his kingdome, and confirmd  
his right.

## LXI

But wanting yssew male, his daughter deare  
He gave in wedlocke to Maximian,  
And him with her made of his kingdome  
heyre,  
Who soone by meanes thereof the empire  
wan,  
Till murdred by the freends of Gratian.  
Then gan the Hunnes and Picts invade  
this land,  
During the raigne of Maximinian;  
Who dying left none heire them to with-  
stand,  
But that they overran all parts with easy  
hand.

## LXII

The weary Britons, whose war-hable youth  
Was by Maximian lately ledd away,  
With wretched miseries and woefull ruth  
Were to those pagans made an open pray,  
And daily spectacle of sad decay:

Whome Romane warres, which now fowr  
hundred yeares  
And more had wasted, could no whit dis-  
may;  
Til by consent of Commons and of Peares,  
They crownd the second Constantine with  
joyous teares.

## LXIII

Who having oft in batteill vanquished  
Those spoylefull Picts, and swarming East-  
erlings,  
Long time in peace his realme established,  
Yet oft annoyd with sondry bordragings  
Of neighbour Scots, and forrein scatter-  
lings,  
With which the world did in those dayes  
abound:  
Which to outbarre, with painefull pyonings  
From sea to sea he heapt a mighty mound,  
Which from Alcluid to Panwelt did that  
border bownd.

## LXIV

Three sonnes he dying left, all under age;  
By meanes whereof, their uncle Vortigere  
Usurpt the crowne during their pupillage;  
Which th' infants tutors gathering to feare,  
Them closely into Armorick did beare:  
For dread of whom, and for those Picts an-  
noyes,  
He sent to Germany, straunge aid to reare;  
From whence eftsoones arrived here three  
hoyes  
Of Saxons, whom he for his safety imployes.

## LXV

Two brethren were their capitayns, which  
hight  
Hengist and Horsus, well approv'd in warre,  
And both of them men of renownmed might;  
Who, making vantage of their civile jarre,  
And of those forreyners which came from  
farre,  
Grew great, and got large portions of land,  
That in the realme ere long they stronger  
arre  
Then they which sought at first their help-  
ing hand,  
And Vortiger have forst the kingdome to  
aband.

## LXVI

But by the helpe of Vortimere his sonne,  
He is againe unto his rule restord;

And Hengist, seeming sad for that was  
 donne,  
 Received is to grace and new accord,  
 Through his faire daughters face and flat-  
 tring word.  
 Soone after which, three hundred lords he  
 slew  
 Of British blood, all sitting at his bord;  
 Whose dolefull moniments who list to rew,  
 Th' eternall marks of treason may at Ston-  
 heng vew.

## LXVII

By this the sonnes of Constantine, which  
 fled,  
 Ambrose and Uther, did ripe yeares at-  
 tayne,  
 And here arriving, strongly challenged  
 The crowne, which Vortiger did long de-  
 tayne;  
 Who, flying from his guilt, by them was  
 slayne,  
 And Hengist eke soone brought to shame-  
 full death.  
 Thenceforth Aurelius peaceably did rayne,  
 Till that through poyson stopped was his  
 breath;  
 So now entombed lies at Stoneheng by the  
 heath.

## LXVIII

After him Uther, which Pendragon hight,  
 Succeeding — There abruptly it did  
 end,  
 Without full point, or other cesure right,  
 As if the rest some wicked hand did rend,  
 Or th' author selfe could not at least at-  
 tend  
 To finish it: that so untimely breach  
 The Prince him selfe halfe seemed to of-  
 fend;  
 Yet secret pleasure did offence empeach,  
 And wonder of antiquity long stopt his  
 speach.

## LXIX

At last, quite ravisht with delight, to heare  
 The royall offspring of his native land,  
 Cryde out: 'Deare countrey! O how dearely  
 deare  
 Ought thy remembraunce and perpetual  
 band  
 Be to thy foster childe, that from thy hand  
 Did commun breath and nouriture receave!  
 How brutish is it not to understand

How much to her we owe, that all us  
 gave,  
 That gave unto us all, what ever good we  
 have!'

## LXX

But Guyon all this while his booke did read,  
 Ne yet has ended: for it was a great  
 And ample volume, that doth far exceed  
 My leasure, so long leaves here to repeat:  
 It told, how first Prometheus did create  
 A man, of many parts from beasts deryv'd,  
 And then stole fire from heven, to animate  
 His worke, for which he was by Jove de-  
 pryv'd  
 Of life him self, and hart-strings of an  
 aegle ryv'd.

## LXXI

That man so made he called Elfe, to weet  
 Quick, the first author of all Elfin kynd:  
 Who, wandring through the world with  
 wearie feet,  
 Did in the gardius of Adonis fynd  
 A goodly creature, whom he deemd in  
 mynd  
 To be no earthly wight, but either spright  
 Or angell, th' authour of all woman kynd;  
 Therefore a Fay he her according hight,  
 Of whom all Faryes spring, and fetch their  
 lignage right.

## LXXII

Of these a mighty people shortly grew,  
 And puissant kinges, which all the world  
 warrayd,  
 And to them selves all nations did subdew.  
 The first and eldest, which that scepter  
 swayd,  
 Was Elfin; him all India obeyd,  
 And all that now America men call:  
 Next him was noble Elfinan, who laid  
 Cleopolis foundation first of all:  
 But Elfiline enclosd it with a golden wall

## LXXIII

His sonne was Elfinell, who overcame  
 The wicked Gobbelines in bloody field:  
 But Elfant was of most renowned fame,  
 Who all of christall did Panthea build:  
 Then Elfar, who two brethren gyaunte  
 kild,  
 The one of which had two heades, th' othe  
 three:  
 Then Elfinor. who was in magick skild;

He built by art upon the glassy see  
A bridge of bras, whose sound hevens  
thunder seem'd to bee.

## LXXIV

He left three sonnes, the which in order  
raynd,  
And all their ofspring, in their dew de-  
scents,  
Even seven hundred princes, which main-  
taynd  
With mightie deedes their sondry govern-  
ments;  
That were too long their infinite contents  
Here to record, ne much materiall;  
Yet should they be most famous moni-  
ments,  
And brave ensample, both of martiall  
And civil rule, to kinges and states imperiall.

## LXXV

After all these Elficieos did rayne,  
The wise Elficieos in great majestie,  
Who mightily that scepter did sustayne,  
And with rich spoyles and famous victorie  
Did high advaunce the crowne of Faery:  
He left two sonnes, of which faire Elferon,  
The eldest brother, did untimely dy;  
Whose emptie place the mightie Oberon  
Doubly supplide, in spousall and dominion.

## LXXVI

Great was his power and glorie over all  
Which, him before, that sacred seate did  
fill,  
That yet remains his wide memoriall:  
He dying left the fairest Tanaquill,  
Him to succeede therein, by his last will:  
Fairer and nobler liveth none this howre,  
Ne like in grace, ne like in learned skill;  
Therefore they Glorian call that glorious  
flowre:  
Long mayst thou, Glorian, live, in glory and  
great powre!

## LXXVII

Begnyld thus with delight of novelties,  
And naturall desire of countryes state,  
So long they redd in those antiquities,  
That how the time was fled they quite for-  
gate;  
Till gentle Alma, seeing it so late,  
Perforce their studies broke, and them be-  
sought  
To thinke how supper did them long awaite:

So halfe unwilling from their bookes them  
brought,  
And fayrely feasted, as so noble knightes  
she ought.

## CANTO XI

The enimies of Temperaunce  
Besiege her dwelling place:  
Prince Arthure them repelles, and fowle  
Maleger doth deface.

## I

WHAT warre so cruel, or what siege so  
sore,  
As that which strong affections doe apply  
Against the forte of reason evermore,  
To bring the sowle into captivity?  
Their force is fiercer through infirmitie  
Of the fraile flesh, relenting to their rage,  
And exercise most bitter tyranny  
Upon the partes, brought into their bond-  
age:  
No wretchednesse is like to sinfull vellen-  
age.

## II

But in a body which doth freely yeeld  
His partes to reasons rule obedient,  
And letteth her, that ought, the scepter  
weeld,  
All happy peace and goodly government  
Is settled there insure establishment.  
There Alma, like a virgin queene most  
bright,  
Doth florish in all beautie excellent,  
And to her guesstes doth bounteous banquet  
dight,  
Attempted goodly well for health and for  
delight.

## III

Early, before the morne with cremosin ray  
The windowes of bright heaven opened  
had,  
Through which into the world the dawning  
day  
Might looke, that maketh every creature  
glad,  
Uprose Sir Guyon, in bright armour clad,  
And to his purposd journey him prepar'd:  
With him the palmer eke in habit sad  
Him selfe address to that adventure hard:  
So to the rivers syde they both together  
far'd.



## IV

Where them awaited ready at the ford  
 The ferriman, as Alma had behight,  
 With his well rigged bote. They goe aboard,  
 And he eftsoones gan launch his barke forth-  
 right.  
 Ere long they rowed were quite out of sight,  
 And fast the land behynd them fled away.  
 But let them pas, whiles winde and wether  
 right  
 Doe serve their turnes: here I a while must  
 stay,  
 To see a cruell fight doen by the Prince this  
 day.

## V

For all so soone as Guyon thence was gon  
 Upon his voyage with his trustie guyde,  
 That wicked band of villeins fresh begon  
 That castle to assaile on every side,  
 And lay strong siege about it far and wyde.  
 So huge and infinite their numbers were,  
 That all the land they under them did hyde;  
 So fowle and ugly, that exceeding feare  
 Their visages imprest, when they approched  
 neare.

## VI

Them in twelve troupes their captein did  
 dispart,  
 And round about in fittest steades did place,  
 Where each might best offend his proper  
 part,  
 And his contrary object most deface,  
 As every one seem'd meetest in that cace.  
 Seven of the same against the castle gate  
 In strong entrenchments he did closely  
 place,  
 Which with incessaunt force and endlesse  
 hate  
 They battred day and night, and entraunce  
 did awate.

## VII

The other five, five sondry wayes he sett,  
 Against the five great bulwarkes of that  
 pyle,  
 And unto each a bulwarke did arrett,  
 T' assayle with open force or hidden guyle,  
 In hope thereof to win victorious spoile.  
 They all that charge did fervently apply  
 With greedie malice and importune toyle,  
 And planted there their huge artillery,  
 With which they dayly made most dread-  
 full battery.

## VIII

The first troupe was a monstrous rabblement  
 Of fowle misshapen wightes, of which some  
 were  
 Headed like owles, with beekes uncomely  
 bent,  
 Others like dogs, others like gryphous  
 dreare,  
 And some had wings, and some had clawes  
 to teare,  
 And every one of them had lynces eyes,  
 And every one did bow and arrowes beare;  
 All those were lawlesse lustes, corrupt  
 envyes,  
 And covetous aspects, all cruel enimyes.

## IX

Those same against the bulwarke of the  
 Sight  
 Did lay strong siege and battailous assault,  
 Ne once did yield it respitt day nor night,  
 But soone as Titan gan his head exault,  
 And soone againe as he his light withhault,  
 Their wicked engins they against it bent:  
 That is, each thing by which the eyes may  
 fault:  
 But two, then all more huge and violent,  
 Beautie and money, they that bulwarke  
 sorely rent.

## X

The second bulwarke was the Hearing  
 Sence,  
 Gainst which the second troupe dessignment  
 makes,  
 Deformed creatures, in straunge difference,  
 Some having heads like harts, some like to  
 snakes,  
 Some like wilde bores late roud out of the  
 brakes;  
 Slaunderous reproches, and fowle infamies,  
 Leasinges, backbytinges, and vaine glorious  
 crakes,  
 Bad counsels, prayses, and false flatteries;  
 All those against that fort did bend their  
 batteries.

## XI

Likewise that same third fort, that is the  
 Smell,  
 Of that third troupe was cruelly assayd;  
 Whose hideous shapes were like to feendes  
 of hell,  
 Some like to houndes, some like to apes,  
 dismayd,

Some like to puttockes, all in plumes  
arrayd;  
All shap't according their conditions:  
For by those ugly formes weren pourtrayd  
Foolish delights and fond abusions,  
Which doe that sence besiege with light  
illusions.

## XII

And that fourth band, which cruell battry  
bent  
Against the fourth bulwarke, that is the  
Taste,  
Was, as the rest, a grysie rablement,  
Some mouth'd like greedy oystres, some  
faste  
Like loathly toades, some fashioned in the  
waste  
Like swine; for so deformd is luxury,  
Surfeat, misdiet, and unthriftie waste,  
Vaine feastes, and ydle superfluity:  
All those this sences fort assaile incessantly.

## XIII

But the fift troupe, most horrible of hew  
And ferce of force, is dreadfull to report:  
For some like snails, some did like spyd-  
ers shew,  
And some like ugly urchins thick and short:  
Cruelly they assayled that fift fort,  
Armed with dartes of sensuall delight,  
With stinges of carnall lust, and strong  
effort  
Of feeling pleasures, with which day and  
night  
Against that same fift bulwarke they con-  
tinued fight.

## XIV

Thus these twelve troupes with dreadfull  
puissaunce  
Against that castle restlesse siege did lay,  
And evermore their hideous ordinaunce  
Upon the bulwarkes cruelly did play,  
That now it gan to threaten neare decay;  
And evermore their wicked capitayn  
Provoked them the breaches to assay,  
Sometimes with threats, sometimes with hope  
of gayn,  
Which by the ransack of that peece they  
should attayn.

## XV

On th' other syde, th' assieged castles ward  
Their stedfast stonds did mightily maintaine,

And many bold repulse and many hard  
Atchievement wrought, with perill and with  
payne,  
That goodly frame from ruine to sustaine:  
And those two brethren gyauntes did de-  
fend  
The walles so stoutly with their sturdie  
mayne,  
That never entraunce any durst pretend,  
But they to direfull death their growning  
ghosts did send.

## XVI

The noble virgin, ladie of the place,  
Was much dismayed with that dreadful  
sight;  
For never was she in so evill cace:  
Till that the Prince, seeing her wofull plight,  
Gan her recomfort from so sad affright,  
Offering his service and his dearest life  
For her defence, against that earle to fight,  
Which was their chiefe and th' authour of  
that strife:  
She him remerci'd as the patronne of her  
life.

## XVII

Eftsoones himselfe in glitterand armes he  
dight,  
And his well proved weapons to him hent:  
So taking courteous conge, he behight  
Those gates to be unbar'd, and forth he went.  
Fayre mote he thee, the prowtest and most  
gent  
That ever brandished bright steele on hye:  
Whom soone as that unruly rablement  
With his gay squyre issewing did espye,  
They reard a most outrageous dreadfull  
yelling cry;

## XVIII

And therewithall attonce at him let fly  
Their fluttring arrowes, thicke as flakes of  
snow,  
And round about him flocke impetuously,  
Like a great water flood, that, tumbling low  
From the high mountaines, threatens to over-  
flow  
With suddein fury all the fertile playne,  
And the sad husbandmans long hope doth  
throw  
A downe the streame, and all his vowes  
make vayne,  
Nor bounds nor banks his headlong ruine  
may sustayne.

## XIX

Upon his shield their heaped hayle he bore,  
 And with his sword disperst the raskall  
   flockes,  
 Which fled a sonder, and him fell before,  
 As withered leaves drop from their dried  
   stockes,  
 When the wroth western wind does reave  
   their lockes;  
 And under neath him his conrageous steed,  
 The fierce Spumador, trode them downe like  
   doeks;  
 The fierce Spumador borne of heavenly seed,  
 Such as Laomedon of Phæbus race did breed.

## XX

Which suddeine horreur and confused cry  
 When as their capteine heard, in haste he  
   yode,  
 The cause to weet, and fault to remedy:  
 Upon a tygre swift and fierce he rode,  
 That as the winde ran underneath his lode,  
 Whiles his long legs nigh raught unto the  
   ground:  
 Full large he was of limbe, and shoulders  
   brode,  
 But of such subtile substance and unsound,  
 That like a ghost he seem'd, whose grave-  
   clothes were unbound.

## XXI

And in his hand a bended bow was seene,  
 And many arrowes under his right side,  
 All deadly daungerous, all cruell keene,  
 Headed with flint, and fethers bloody dide,  
 Such as the Indians in their quivers hide:  
 Those could he well direct and streight as  
   line,  
 And bid them strike the marke which he  
   had eyde;  
 Ne was there salve, ne was there medicine,  
 That mote recure their wounds, so inly they  
   did tine.

## XXII

As pale and wan as ashes was his looke,  
 His body leane and meagre as a rake,  
 And skin all withered like a dried rooke,  
 Thereto as cold and drery as a snake,  
 That seemd to tremble evermore, and quake:  
 All in a canvas thin he was bedight,  
 And girded with a belt of twisted brake:  
 Upon his head he wore an helmet light,  
 Made of a dead mans skull, that seemd a  
   ghastly sight.

## XXIII

Maleger was his name; and after him  
 There follow'd fast at hand two wicked  
   hags,  
 With hoary lockes all loose and visage grim;  
 Their feet unshod, their bodies wrapt in  
   rags,  
 And both as swift on foot as chased stags;  
 And yet the one her other legge had lame,  
 Which with a staffe, all full of litle snags,  
 She did support, and Impotence her name:  
 But th' other was Impatience, arm'd with  
   raging flame.

## XXIV

Soone as the earle from far the Prince  
   espyde  
 Glistring in armes and warlike ornament,  
 His beast he felly prickt on either syde,  
 And his mischievous bow full readie bent,  
 With which at him a cruell shaft he sent:  
 But he was warie, and it warded well  
 Upon his shield, that it no further went,  
 But to the ground the idle quarrell fell:  
 Then he another and another did expell.

## XXV

Which to prevent, the Priuce his mortall  
   speare  
 Soone to him raught, and fierce at him did  
   ride,  
 To be avenged of that shot whyleare:  
 But he was not so hardy to abide  
 That bitter stownd, but turning quicke aside  
 His light-foot beast, fled fast away for feare:  
 Whom to poursue, the infant after hide,  
 So fast as his good courser could him beare;  
 But labour lost it was to weene approach  
   him neare.

## XXVI

For as the winged wind his tigre fled,  
 That vew of eye could scarce him over-  
   take,  
 Ne searse his feet on ground were seene to  
   tred:  
 Through hils and dales he speedy way did  
   make,  
 Ne hedge ne ditch his readie passage brake,  
 And in his flight the villein turn'd his face,  
 (As wons the Tartar by the Caspian lake,  
 When as the Russian him in fight does  
   chace)  
 Unto his tygres taile, and shot at him  
   apace.



## XXVII

Apace he shot, and yet he fled apace,  
Still as the greedy knight nigh to him drew,  
And oftentimes he would relent his pace,  
That him his foe more fiercely should  
poursew:

Who wheu his uncouth manner he did vew,  
He gan avize to follow him no more,  
But keepe his standing, and his shaftes  
eschew,

Untill he quite had spent his perlous store,  
And then assayle him fresh, ere he could  
shift for more.

## XXVIII

But that lame hag, still as abroad he strew  
His wicked arrowes, gathered them againe,  
And to him brought, fresh batteill to re-  
new:

Which he espying, cast her to restraine  
From yielding succour to that cursed swaine,  
And her attaching, thought her hands to  
tye;

But soone as him dismounted on the plaine  
That other hag did far away espye  
Binding her sister, she to him ran hastily;

## XXIX

And catching hold of him, as downe he lent,  
Him backward overthrew, and downe him  
stayd

With their rude handes and gryesly graple-  
ment,

Till that the villein, comming to their ayd,  
Upon him fell, and lode upon him layd:  
Full litle wanted, but he had him slaine,  
And of the battell balefull end had made,  
Had not his gentle squire beheld his paine,  
And commen to his reskew, ere his bitter  
bane.

## XXX

So greatest and most glorious thing on  
ground

May often need the helpe of weaker hand;  
So feeble is mans state, and life unsound,  
That in assuraunce it may never stand,  
Till it dissolved be from earthly band.

Proofe be thou, Prince, the prowtest man  
alyve,

And noblest borne of all in Britayne land;  
Yet thee fierce Fortune did so nearely  
drive,

That had not Grace thee blest, thou should-  
est not survive.

## XXXI

The squyre arriving, fiercely in his armes  
Snatcht first the one, and then the other  
jade,

His chiefest letts and authors of his harmes,  
And them perforce withheld with threatned  
blade,

Least that his lord they should behinde in-  
vade;

The whiles the Prince, prickt with reproch-  
ful shame,

As one awakte out of long slombring shade,  
Revivying thought of glory and of fame,  
United all his powres to purge him selfe  
from blame.

## XXXII

Like as a fire, the which in hollow cave  
Hath long beue underkept and down sup-  
prest,

With murmurous disdayne doth inly rave,  
And grudge, in so streight prison to be  
prest,

At last breakes forth with furious unrest,  
And strives to mount unto his native seat;  
All that did earst it hinder and molest,  
Yt now devoures with flames and scorching  
heat,

And carries into smoake with rage and  
horror great.

## XXXIII

So mightely the Briton Prince him rouzd  
Out of his holde, and broke his caytive  
bands;

And as a beare, whom angry cures have  
tounzd,

Having off-shakt them, and escapt their  
hands,

Becomes more fell, and all that him with-  
stands

Treads down and overthrowes. Now had  
the carle

Alighted from his tigre, and his hands  
Discharged of his bow and deadly quar'le.  
To seize upon his foe flatt lying on the  
marle.

## XXXIV

Which now him turnd to disadvantage deare,  
For neither can he fly, nor other harme,  
But trust unto his strength and manhood  
meare,

Sith now he is far from his monstrous  
swarme,

And of his weapons did him selfe disarmē.  
The knight, yet wrothfull for his late disgrace,  
Fiercely advaunst his valorous right arme,  
And him so sore smott with his yron mace,  
That groveling to the ground he fell, and  
fild his place.

## XXXV

Wel weened hee that field was then his  
owne,  
And all his labor brought to happy end,  
When suddain up the villeine overthrowne  
Out of his swowne arose, fresh to contend,  
And gan him selfe to second battaill bend,  
As hurt he had not beene. Thereby there  
lay  
An huge great stone, which stood upon one  
end,  
And had not bene removed many a day;  
Some land-marke seemd to bee, or signe of  
sundry way.

## XXXVI

The same he snatcht, and with exceeding  
sway  
Threw at his foe, who was right well aware  
To shonne the engin of his meant decay;  
It booted not to thinke that throw to  
beare,  
But grownd he gave, and lightly lept  
areare:  
Efte fiercc retourning, as a faulcon fayre,  
That once hath failed of her souse full  
ueare,  
Remounts againe into the open ayre,  
And unto better fortune doth her selfe pre-  
payre.

## XXXVII

So brave retourning, with his brandisht  
blade,  
He to the carle him selfe agayn addrest,  
And strooke at him so sternely, that he  
made  
An open passage through his riven brest,  
That halfe the steele behind his backe did  
rest;  
Which drawing backe, he looked ever more  
When the hart blood should gush out of his  
chest,  
Or his dead corse should fall upon the  
flore;  
But his dead corse upon the flore fell nathe-  
more.

## XXXVIII

Ne drop of blood appeared shed to bee,  
All were the wovnd so wide and wonderous,  
That through his carcas one might playnly  
see.  
Halfe in amaze with horror hideous,  
And halfe in rage to be deluded thus,  
Again through both the sides he strooke  
him quight,  
That made his spright to grone full piteous:  
Yet nathemore forth fled his groning spright,  
But freshly as at first, prepard himselfe to  
fight.

## XXXIX

Thereat he smitten was with great affright,  
And trembling terror did his hart apall,  
Ne wist he what to thinke of that same  
sight,  
Ne what to say, ne what to doe at all;  
He doubted least it were some magicall  
Illusion, that did beguile his sense,  
Or wandring ghost, that wanted funerall,  
Or aery spirite under false pretence,  
Or hellish feend raysd up through divelish  
science.

## XL

His wonder far exceeded reasons reach,  
That he began to doubt his dazeled sight,  
And oft of error did him selfe appeach:  
Flesh without blood, a person without  
spright,  
Wounds without hurt, a body without might,  
That could doe harme, yet could not harmed  
bee,  
That could not die, yet seemd a mortall  
wight,  
That was most strong in most infirmitee;  
Like did he never heare, like did he never  
see.

## XLI

A while he stood in this astonishment,  
Yet would he not for all his great dismay  
Give over to effect his first intent,  
And th' utmost meanes of victory assay,  
Or th' utmost yssew of his owne decay.  
His owne good sword Mordure, that never  
fayld  
At need till now, he lightly threw away,  
And his bright shield, that nought him  
now avayld,  
And with his naked hands him forcibly as-  
sayld.

## XLII

Twixt his two mighty armes him up he  
 snatcht,  
 And crusht his carcas so against his brest,  
 That the disdainfull sowle he thence dis-  
 patcht,  
 And th' ydle breath all utterly exprest:  
 Tho, when he felt him dead, adowne he  
 kest  
 The lumpish corse unto the sencelesse  
 grownd;  
 Adowne he kest it with so puissant wrest,  
 That backe againe it did alofte rebownd,  
 And gave against his mother Earth a grone-  
 full sownd.

## XLIII

As when Joves harness-bearing bird from  
 hye  
 Stoupes at a flying heron with proud dis-  
 dayne,  
 The stone-dead quarrey falls so forciblye,  
 That yt rebownds against the lowly playne,  
 A second fall redoubling backe agayne.  
 Then thought the Prince all peril sure was  
 past,  
 And that he victor onely did remayne;  
 No sooner thought, then that the carle as  
 fast  
 Gan heap huge strokes on him, as ere he  
 down was cast.

## XLIV

Nigh his wits end then woxe th' amazed  
 knight,  
 And thought his labor lost and travell  
 vayne,  
 Against this lifelesse shadow so to fight:  
 Yet life he saw, and felt his mighty mayne,  
 That, whiles he marveild still, did still him  
 payne:  
 Forthy he gan some other wayes advize,  
 How to take life from that dead-living  
 swayne,  
 Whom still he marked freshly to arize  
 From th' earth, and from her womb new  
 spirits to reprice.

## XLV

He then remembred well, that had bene  
 sayd,  
 How th' Earth his mother was, and first  
 him bore;  
 Shee eke, so often as his life decayd,  
 Did life with usury to him restore,

And reysd him up much stronger then be-  
 fore,  
 So soone as he unto her wombe did fall;  
 Therefore to grownd he would him cast no  
 more,  
 Ne him committ to grave terrestriall,  
 But beare him farre from hope of succour  
 usuall.

## XLVI

Tho up he caught him twixt his puissant  
 hands,  
 And having scruzd out of his carrion corse  
 The lothfull life, now loosd from sinfull  
 hands,  
 Upon his shoulders carried him perforce  
 Above three furlongs, taking his full course,  
 Untill he came unto a standing lake:  
 Him thereinto he threw without remorse,  
 Ne stird, till hope of life did him forsake:  
 So end of that carles dayes, and his owne  
 paynes did make.

## XLVII

Which when those wicked hags from far  
 did spye,  
 Like two mad dogs they ran about the  
 lands;  
 And th' one of them with dreadfull yelling  
 crye,  
 Throwing away her broken chaines and  
 bands,  
 And having quencht her burning fier brands,  
 Hedlong her selfe did cast into that lake;  
 But Impotence with her owne wilfull hands  
 One of Malegers cursed darts did take,  
 So ryv'd her trembling hart, and wicked  
 end did make.

## XLVIII

Thus now alone he conquerour remaines:  
 Tho, cumming to his squyre, that kept his  
 steed,  
 Thought to have mounted, but his feeble  
 vaines  
 Him faild thereto, and served not his need,  
 Through losse of blood, which from his  
 wounds did bleed,  
 That he began to faint, and life decay.  
 But his good squyre, him helping up with  
 speed,  
 With stedfast hand upon his horse did  
 stay,  
 And led him to the castle by the beaten  
 way.



## XLIX

Where many groomes and squyres ready  
were  
To take him from his steed full tenderly,  
And eke the fayrest Alma mett him there  
With balme and wine and costly spicery,  
To comfort him in his infirmity:  
Eftesoones shee causd him up to be conveyd,  
And of his armes despoyled easily,  
In sumptuous bed shee made him to be layd,  
And al the while his wounds were dressing,  
by him stayd.

## CANTO XII

Guyon by palmers governaunce  
Passing through perilles great,  
Doth overthrow the Bowre of Bliss,  
And Acrasy defeat.

## I

Now ginnes this goodly frame of Temper-  
aunce  
Fayrely to rise, and her adorned hed  
To pricke of highest prayse forth to ad-  
vaunce,  
Formerly grounded and fast setteled  
On firme foundation of true bountyhed:  
And that brave knight, that for this vertue  
fights,  
Now comes to point of that same perilous  
sted,  
Where Pleasure dwelles in sensuall de-  
lights,  
Mongst thousand dangers, and ten thousand  
magick mightes.

## II

Two dayes now in that sea he sayled has,  
Ne ever land beheld, ne living wight,  
Ne ought save perill, still as he did pas:  
Tho, when appeared the third morrow  
bright,  
Upon the waves to spred her trembling light,  
An hideous roing far away they heard,  
That all their senses filled with affright,  
And streight they saw the raging surges  
reard  
Up to the skyes, that them of drowning  
made affeard.

## III

Said then the boteman, 'Palmer, stere  
aright,  
And keepe an even course; for yonder way

We needes must pas (God doe us well  
acquight!)  
That is the Gulfe of Greedinesse, they say,  
That deepe engorgeth all this worldes pray;  
Which having swallowd up excessively,  
He soone in vomit up againe doth lay,  
And belcheth forth his superfluity,  
That all the seas for feare doe seeme away  
to fly.

## IV

'On thother syde an hideous rock is pight  
Of mightie magnes stone, whose craggie  
clift  
Depending from on high, dreadfull to sight,  
Over the waves his rugged armes doth lift,  
And threatneth downe to throw his ragged  
rift  
On whoso cometh nigh; yet nigh it drawes  
All passengers, that none from it can shift:  
For whiles they fly that gulfes devouring  
jawes,  
They on this rock are rent, and sunck in  
helples wawes.'

## V

Forward they passe, and strongly he them  
rowes,  
Untill they nigh unto that gulfe arryve,  
Where streame more violent and greedy  
growes:  
Then he with all his puisaunce doth stryve  
To strike his oares, and mightily doth dryve  
The hollow vessell through the threatfull  
wave,  
Which, gaping wide, to swallow them alyve  
In th' huge abyse of his engulfing grave,  
Doth rore at them in vaine, and with great  
terrorr rave.

## VI

They, passing by, that grisely mouth did  
see,  
Sucking the seas into his entralles deepe,  
That seemd more horrible then hell to bee,  
Or that darke dreadfull hole of Tartare  
steepe,  
Through which the damned ghosts doen  
often creep  
Backe to the world, bad livers to torment:  
But nought that falles into this direfull  
deepe,  
Ne that approacheth nigh the wyde descent,  
May backe retourne, but is condemned to  
be drent.

## VII

On thother side they saw that perilous  
 rocke,  
 Threatning it selfe on them to ruinate,  
 On whose sharp cliftes the ribs of vessels  
 broke,  
 And shivered ships, which had beene  
 wrecked late,  
 Yet stuck, with carcases exanimate  
 Of such, as having all their substance spent  
 In wanton joyes and lustes intemperate,  
 Did afterwarde make shipwrack violent,  
 Both of their life, and fame for ever fowly  
 blent.

## VIII

Forthy this hight the Rock of vile Reproch,  
 A dangerous and detestable place,  
 To which nor fish nor fowle did once ap-  
 proch,  
 But yelling meawes, with seagulles hoars  
 and bace,  
 And cormoyraunts, with birds of ravenous  
 race,  
 Which still sat wayting on that wastfull  
 clift  
 For spoile of wretches, whose unhappy cace,  
 After lost credit and consumed thrift,  
 At last them driven hath to this despaire-  
 full drift.

## IX

The palmer, seeing them in safetie past,  
 Thus saide: 'Behold th' ensamples in our  
 sightes  
 Of lustfull luxurie and thriftlesse wast:  
 What now is left of miserable wightes,  
 Which spent their looser daies in leud de-  
 lightes,  
 But shame and sad reproch, here to be  
 red  
 By these rent reliques, speaking their ill  
 plights?  
 Let all that live, hereby be counselled  
 To shunne Rock of Reproch, and it as death  
 to dread.'

## X

So forth they rowed, and that ferryman  
 With his stiffe oares did brush the sea so  
 strong,  
 That the hoare waters from his frigot ran,  
 And the light bubbles daunced all along,  
 Whiles the salt brine out of the billowes  
 sprong.

At last far off they many islandes spy,  
 On every side foting the floodes emong:  
 Then said the knight: 'Lo! I the land  
 descry;  
 Therefore, old syre, thy course doe there-  
 unto apply.'

## XI

'That may not bee,' said then the ferry-  
 man,  
 'Least wee unweeting hap to be fordonne:  
 For those same islands, seeming now and  
 than,  
 Are not firme land, nor any certein wonne,  
 But stragling plots, which to and fro doe  
 ronne  
 In the wide waters: therefore are they  
 hight  
 The Wandring Islands. Therefore doe them  
 shonne;  
 For they have ofte drawne many a wand-  
 ring wight  
 Into most deadly daunger and distressed  
 plight.

## XII

'Yet well they seeme to him, that farre  
 doth vew,  
 Both faire and fruitfull, and the grownd  
 disprede  
 With grassy greene of delectable hew,  
 And the tall trees with leaves appareled,  
 Are deckt with blossoms dyde in white and  
 red,  
 That mote the passengers thereto allure;  
 But whosoever once hath fastened  
 His foot thereon, may never it recure,  
 But wandreth ever more uncertein and un-  
 sure.

## XIII

'As th' isle of Delos whylome, men report,  
 Amid th' Aegæan sea long time did stray,  
 Ne made for shipping any certein port,  
 Till that Latona travailing that way,  
 Flying from Junoes wrath and hard assay,  
 Of her fayre twins was there delivered,  
 Which afterwards did rule the night and  
 day;  
 Thenceforth it firmly was established,  
 And for Apolloes honor highly herried.'

## XIV

They to him hearken, as beseemeth meete,  
 And passe on forward: so their way does ly,

That one of those same islands, which doe  
fleet  
In the wide sea, they needes must passen  
by,  
Which seemd so sweet and pleasaunt to the  
eye,  
That it would tempt a man to touchen there:  
Upon the banek they sitting did espy  
A daintie damsell, dressing of her heare,  
By whom a little skippet floting did appeare.

## XV

She, them espying, loud to them ean call,  
Bidding them nigher draw unto the shore;  
For she had cause to busie them withall;  
And therewith lowdly laught: but nathe-  
more  
Would they once turne, but kept on as afore:  
Which when she saw, she left her loekes  
undight,  
And running to her boat withouten ore,  
From the departing land it launehed light,  
And after them did drive with all her power  
and might.

## XVI

Whom overtaking, she in merry sort  
Them gan to bord, and purpose diversly,  
Now faining dalliaunce and wanton sport,  
Now throwing forth lewd wordes inmod-  
estly;  
Till that the palmer gan full bitterly  
Her to rebuke, for being loose and light:  
Which not abiding, but more seornfully  
Seoffing at him that did her justly wite,  
She turnd her bote about, and from them  
rowed quite.

## XVII

That was the wanton Phœdria, which late  
Did ferry him over the Idle Lake:  
Whom nought regarding, they kept on their  
gate,  
And all her vaine allurements did forsake;  
When then the wary boteman thus bespake:  
'Here now behoveth us well to avyse,  
And of our safety good heede to take;  
For here before a perlous passage lyes,  
Where many mermayds haunt, making false  
melodies.

## XVIII

'But by the way there is a great quick-  
saud,  
And a whirlepoole of hidden jeopardy:

Therefore, sir palmer, keepe an even hand;  
For twixt them both the narrow way doth  
ly.'  
Searse had he saide, when hard at hand they  
spy  
That quicksaud nigh with water covered;  
But by the checked wave they did desery  
It plaine, and by the sea diseoloured:  
It ealled was the Quicksaud of Unthrifty-  
hed.

## XIX

They, passing by, a goodly ship did see,  
Laden from far with precious merchandize,  
And bravely furnished as ship might bee,  
Which through great disaventure, or mes-  
prise,  
Her selfe had roune into that hazardize;  
Whose mariners and merchants, with much  
toyle,  
Labour'd in vaine to have recur'd their prize,  
And the rich wares to save from pitteous  
spoyle;  
But neither toyle nor traveill might her  
baeke reeoyle.

## XX

On th' other side they see that perilous  
poole,  
That ealled was the Whirlepoole of Deeay,  
In which full many had with haplesse doole  
Beene suneke, of whom no memorie did  
stay:  
Whose eireled waters rapt with whirling  
sway,  
Like to a restlesse wheele, still ronning  
round,  
Did covet, as they passed by that way,  
'To draw their bote within the utmost bound  
Of his wide labyrinth, and then to have  
them dround.

## XXI

But th' heedfull boteman strongly fo. h did  
stretch  
His brawnie armes, and all his bodie straiue,  
That th' utmost sandy breach they shortly  
fetch,  
Whiles the dredd daunger does behind re-  
maine.  
Suddeine they see from midst of all the  
maine  
The surging waters like a mountaine rise,  
And the great sea, puft up with proud dis-  
daime,



To swell above the measure of his guise,  
As threatning to deuoure all that his powre  
despise.

## XXII

The waves come rolling, and the billowes  
rore  
Outragiously, as they enraged were,  
Or wrathfull Neptune did them drive be-  
fore  
His whirling charet, for exceeding feare;  
For not one puffe of winde there did ap-  
peare;  
That all the three thereat woxe much  
afraid,  
Unweeting what such horroure straunge did  
reare.  
Eftsoones they saw an hideous hoast arrayd  
Of huge sea monsters, such as living sence  
dismayd.

## XXIII

Most ugly shapes and horrible aspects,  
Such as Dame Nature selfe mote feare to  
see,  
Or shame that ever should so fowle defects  
From her most cunning hand escaped bee;  
All dreadfull pourtraicts of deformitee:  
Spring-headed hydres, and sea-shouldring  
whales,  
Great whirlpooles, which all fishes make to  
flee,  
Bright scolopendraes, arm'd with silver  
scales,  
Mighty monoceros with immeasured tayles,

## XXIV

The dreadfull fish, that hath deserv'd the  
name  
Of Death, and like him lookes in dreadfull  
hew,  
The gricely wasserman, that makes his game  
The flying ships with swiftnes to pursew,  
The horrible sea-satyre, that doth shew  
His fearefull face in time of greatest storme,  
Huge ziffius, whom mariners eschew  
No lesse then rockes, (as travellers in-  
forme,)  
And greedy rosmarines with visages de-  
forme.

## XXV

All these, and thousand thousands many  
more,  
And more deformed monsters thousand fold,

With dreadfull noise and hollow rombling  
rore,  
Came rushing, in the fomy waves enrold,  
Which seem'd to fly for feare them to be-  
hold:  
Ne wonder, if these did the knight appall;  
For all, that here on earth we dreadfull  
hold,  
Be but as bugs to fearen babes withall,  
Compared to the creatures in the seas en-  
trall.

## XXVI

'Feare nought,' then saide the palmer well  
aviz'd;  
'For these same monsters are not these in  
deed,  
But are into these fearefull shapes dis-  
guiz'd  
By that same wicked witch, to worke us  
dreed,  
And draw from on this journey to pro-  
ceed.'  
Tho, lifting up his vertuous staffe on hye,  
He smote the sea, which calmed was with  
speed,  
And all that dreadfull armie fast gan flye  
Into great Tethys bosome, where they  
hidden lye.

## XXVII

Quit from that danger, forth their course  
they kept,  
And as they went they heard a ruefull cry  
Of one that wayld and pittifully wept,  
That through the sea the resounding plaints  
did fly:  
At last they in an island did espy  
A seemely maiden, sitting by the shore,  
That with great sorrow and sad agony  
Seemed some great misfortune to deplore,  
And lowd to them for succour called ever-  
more.

## XXVIII

Which Guyon hearing, streight his palmer  
bad  
To stere the bote towards that dolefull  
mayd,  
That he might know and ease her sorrow  
sad:  
Who, him avizing better, to him sayd:  
'Faire sir, be not displeasd if disobayd:  
For ill it were to hearken to her cry;  
For she is inly nothing ill apayd,

But onely womanish fine forgery,  
Your stubborne hart t' affect with fraile  
infirmity.

## XXIX

'To which when she your courage hath in-  
clind  
Through foolish pittie, then her guilefull  
bayt  
She will embosome deeper in your mind,  
And for your ruine at the last awayt.'  
The knight was ruled, and the boteman  
strayt  
Held on his course with stayed stedfast-  
nesse,  
Ne ever shroncke, ne ever sought to bayt  
His tyred armes for toylesome wearinesse,  
But with his oares did sweepe the watry  
wildernesse.

## XXX

And now they nigh approched to the sted,  
Where as those mermayds dwelt: it was a  
still  
And calmy bay, on th' one side sheltered  
With the brode shadow of an hoarie hill,  
On th' other side an high rocke toured still,  
That twixt them both a pleasaunt port they  
made,  
And did like an halfe theatre fulfill:  
There those five sisters had continuall  
trade,  
And usd to bath themselves in that deceipt-  
full shade.

## XXXI

They were faire ladies, till they fondly  
striv'd  
With th' Heliconian maides for maystery;  
Of whom they over-comen, were depriv'd  
Of their proud beautie, and th' one moyity  
Transformd to fish, for their bold surquedry;  
But th' upper halfe their hew retayned still,  
And their sweet skill in wonted melody;  
Which ever after they abusd to ill,  
T' allure weake travellers, whom gotten  
they did kill.

## XXXII

So now to Guyon, as he passed by,  
Their pleasaunt tunes they sweetly thus ap-  
plyde:  
'O thou fayre sonne of gentle Faery,  
That art in mightie armes most magnifyde  
Above all knights that ever batteill tryde,

O turne thy rudder hetherward a while:  
Here may thy storme-bett vessell safely  
ryde;

This is the port of rest from troublous toyle,  
The worldes sweet in from paine and wea-  
risome turmoyle.'

## XXXIII

With that the rolling sea, resounding soft,  
In his big base them fitly answered,  
And on the rocke the waves breaking aloft,  
A solemne meane unto them measured,  
The whiles sweet Zephyrus lowd whisteled  
His treble, a straunge kinde of harmony;  
Which Guyons senses softly tickeled,  
That he the boteman bad row easily,  
And let him heare some part of their rare  
melody.

## XXXIV

But him the palmer from that vanity  
With temperate advice discourseled,  
That they it past, and shortly gan descry  
The land, to which their course they leveled;  
When suddenly a grosse fog over spred  
With his dull vapour all that desert has,  
And heavens chearefull face enveloped,  
That all things one, and one as nothing was,  
And this great universe seemd one confused  
mas.

## XXXV

Thereat they greatly were dismayd, ne wist  
How to direct theyr way in darkenes wide,  
But feard to wander in that wastefull mist,  
For tomling into mischiefe unespide:  
Worse is the daunger hidden then descride.  
Suddeinly an innumerable flight  
Of harmefull fowles, about them fluttering,  
cride,  
And with their wicked wings them ofte did  
smight,  
And sore annoyed, groping in that griesly  
night.

## XXXVI

Even all the nation of unfortunate  
And fatall birds about them flocked were,  
Such as by nature men abhorre and hate;  
The ill-faste owle, deaths dreadfull mes-  
sengere,  
The hoars night-raven, trump of dolefull  
drere,  
The lether-winged batt, dayes enemy,  
The ruefull strich, still waiting on the bere,

The whistler shrill, that who so heares doth  
dy,  
The hellish harpyes, prophets of sad destiny.

## XXXVII

All those, and all that els does horror breed,  
About them flew, and fild their sayles with  
feare:

Yet stayd they not, but forward did pro-  
ceed,

Whiles th' one did row, and th' other stifly  
steare;

Till that at last the weather gan to eleare,  
And the faire land it selfe did playnly sheow.  
Said then the palmer: 'Lo where does ap-  
peare

The saered soile where all our perills grow;  
Therefore, sir knight, your ready arms  
about you throw.'

## XXXVIII

He hearkned, and his armes about him  
tooke,

The whiles the nimble bote so well her sped,  
That with her crooked keele the land she  
strooke.

Then forth the noble Guyon sallied,  
And his sage palmer, that him governed;  
But th' other by his bote behind did stay.  
They marched fayrly forth, of nought ydred,  
Both firmly arind for every hard assay,  
With constancy and care, gainst danger  
and dismay.

## XXXIX

Ere long they heard an hideous bellowing  
Of many beasts, that roard outrageously,  
As if that hungers poynt or Venus sting  
Had them enraged with fell surquedry;  
Yet nought they feard, but past on hardily,  
Untill they came in vew of those wilde  
beasts:

Who all attonee, gaping full greedily,  
And rearing fereely their upstarting crests,  
Ran towards, to deuoure those unexpected  
guests.

## XL

But soone as they approcht with deadly  
threat,

The palmer over them his staffe upheld,  
His mighty staffe, that could all charmes  
defeat:

Eftesoones their stubborne corages were  
queld,

And high aduanced crests downe meekely  
feld;

Instead of fraying, they them selves did  
feare,

And trembled, as them passing they be-  
held:

Such wondrous powre did in that staffe ap-  
peare,

All monsters to subdew to him that did it  
beare.

## XLI

Of that same wood it fram'd was cunningly,  
Of which Cadueus whilome was made,  
Cadueus, the rod of Merenry,  
With which he wonts the Stygian realmes  
invade,

Through ghastly horror and eternall shade;  
Th' infernall feends with it he can asswage,  
And Orcus tame, whome nothing can per-  
suade,

And rule the Furies, when they most doe  
rage:

Such vertue in his staffe had eke this palmer  
sage.

## XLII

Thence passing forth, they shortly doe ar-  
ryue

Whereas the Bowre of Blisse was situate;  
A place pickt out by choyce of best alyve,  
That Natures worke by art can imitate:  
In which what ever in this worldly state  
Is sweete, and pleasing unto living sense,  
Or that may dayntest fantasy aggrate,  
Was poured forth with plentifull dispen-  
ce,  
And made there to abound with lavish  
affluence.

## XLIII

Goodly it was enelosed rownd about,  
As well their entred gues-tes to keep within,  
As those unruly beasts to hold without;  
Yet was the fence thereof but weake and  
thin;

Nought feard theyr force, that fortilage to  
win,

But wisdomes powre, and temperaunces  
might,

By which the mightiest things effored  
bin:

And eke the gate was wrought of sub-  
stance light,

Rather for pleasure then for battery or  
fight.



## XLIV

Yt framed was of precious yvory,  
 That seemd a worke of admirable witt;  
 And therein all the famous history  
 Of Jason and Medæa was ywritt;  
 Her mighty charmes, her furious loving fitt,  
 His goodly conquest of the golden fleece,  
 His falsed fayth, and love too lightly flitt,  
 The wondred Argo, which in venturons  
 peece  
 First through the Euxine seas bore all the  
 flour of Greece.

## XLV

Ye might have seene the frothy billowes  
 fry  
 Under the ship, as thorough them she went,  
 That seemd the waves were into yvory,  
 Or yvory into the waves were sent;  
 And otherwhere the snowy substaunce  
 sprent  
 With vermell, like the boyes blood therein  
 shed,  
 A piteous spectacle did represent;  
 And otherwhiles with gold besprinkeled,  
 Yt seemd thenchaunted flame, which did  
 Crensa wed.

## XLVI

All this and more might in that goodly gate  
 Be red; that ever open stood to all  
 Which thether came: but in the porch there  
 sate  
 A comely personage of stature tall,  
 And semblaunce pleasing, more then natur-  
 all,  
 That travellers to him seemd to entize;  
 His looser garment to the ground did fall,  
 And flew about his heeles in wanton wize,  
 Not fitt for speedy pace or manly exercise.

## XLVII

They in that place him Genius did call:  
 Not that celestiall powre, to whom the care  
 Of life, and generation of all  
 That lives, pertaines in charge particulare,  
 Who wondrous things concerning our wel-  
 fare,  
 And straunge phantomes, doth lett us ofte  
 forsee,  
 And ofte of secret ill bids us beware:  
 That is our selfe, whom though we doe  
 not see,  
 Yet each doth in him selfe it well perceive  
 to bee.

## XLVIII

Therefore a god him sage antiquity  
 Did wisely make, and good Agdistes call.  
 But this same was to that quite contrary,  
 The foe of life, that good envyes to all,  
 That secretly doth us procure to fall,  
 Through guilefull semblants, which he  
 makes us see.  
 He of this gardin had the governall,  
 And Pleasures porter was devizd to bee,  
 Holding a staffe in hand for more formali-  
 tee.

## XLIX

With diverse flowres he daintily was deekt,  
 And strowed rownd about, and by his side  
 A mighty mazer bowle of wine was sett,  
 As if it had to him bene sacrificide;  
 Wherewith all new-come guests he graty-  
 fide:  
 So did he eke Sir Guyon passing by:  
 But he his ydle curtesie defide,  
 And overthrew his bowle disdainfully,  
 And broke his staffe, with which he charmed  
 semblants sly.

## L

Thus being entred, they behold arownd  
 A large and spacious plaine, on every  
 side  
 Strowed with pleasauns, whose fayre grassy  
 grownd  
 Mantled with greene, and goodly beautifide  
 With all the ornaments of Floraes pride,  
 Wherewith her mother Art, as halfe in  
 scorne  
 Of uiggard Nature, like a pompons bride  
 Did decke her, and too lavishly adorne,  
 When forth from virgin bowre she comes  
 in th' early morne.

## LI

Thereto the heavens alwayes joviall,  
 Lookte on them lovely, still in stedfast  
 state,  
 Ne suffred storme nor frost on them to  
 fall,  
 Their tender buds or leaves to violate,  
 Nor scorching heat, nor cold intemperate,  
 T' afflict the creatures which therein did  
 dwell,  
 But the milde ayre with season moderate  
 Gently attemptred, and disposd so well,  
 That still it breathed forth sweet spirit and  
 holesom smell.

## LII

More sweet and holesome then the pleasaunt hill

Of Rhodope, on which the nimphe that bore  
A gyaunt babe her selfe for grieve did kill;  
Or the Thessalian Tempe, where of yore  
Fayre Daphne Phæbus hart with love did gore;

Or Ida, where the gods lov'd to repayre,  
When ever they their heavenly bowres fore-  
lore;

Or sweet Parnasse, the haunt of Muses  
fayre;

Or Eden selfe, if ought with Eden mote  
compayre.

## LIII

Much wondred Guyon at the fayre aspect  
Of that sweet place, yet suffred no delight  
To sincke into his sence, nor mind affect,  
But passed forth, and lookt still forward  
right,

Brydling his will, and maystering his might:  
Till that he came unto another gate,  
No gate, but like one, being goodly dight  
With bowes and braunches, which did broad  
dilate

Their clasping armes, in wanton wreathings  
intricate:

## LIV

So fashioned a porch with rare device,  
Archd over head with an embracing vine,  
Whose bounches, hanging downe, seemd to  
entice

All passers by to taste their lushious wine,  
And did them selves into their hands in-  
cline,

As freely offering to be gathered:

Some deepe empurpled as the hyacine,  
Some as the rubine laughing sweetely red,  
Some like faire emeraudes, not yet well  
ripened.

## LV

And them amongst, some were of burnisht  
gold,

So made by art, to beautify the rest,  
Which did themselves emongst the leaves  
enfold,

As lurking from the vew of covetous guest,  
That the weake bowghes, with so rich load  
opprest,

Did bow adowne, as overburdened.  
Under that porch a comely dame did rest,

Clad in fayre weedes, but fowle disordered,  
And garments loose, that seemd unmeet  
for womanhed.

## LVI

In her left hand a cup of gold she held,  
And with her right the riper fruit did reach,  
Whose sappy liquor, that with fulnesse  
sweld,

Into her cup she seruzd, with daintie breach  
Of her fine fingers, without fowle empeach,  
That so faire winepresse made the wine  
more sweet:

Thereof she usd to give to drinke to each,  
Whom passing by she happened to meet:  
It was her guise, all straungers goodly so  
to greet.

## LVII

So she to Guyon offred it to tast,  
Who, taking it out of her tender bond,  
The cup to ground did violently cast,  
That all in peeces it was broken fond,  
And with the liquor stained all the lond:  
Whereat Excesse exceedingly was wroth,  
Yet no'te the same amend, ne yet with-  
stond,

But suffered him to passe, all were she loth;  
Who, nought regarding her displeasure, for-  
ward goth.

## LVIII

There the most daintie paradise on ground  
It selfe doth offer to his sober eye,  
In which all pleasures plenteously abownd,  
And none does others happinesse envye:  
The painted flowres, the trees upshooting  
hye,

The dales for shade, the hilles for breath-  
ing space,

The trembling groves, the christall running  
by;

And that which all faire workes doth most  
aggrace,

The art, which all that wrought, appeared  
in no place.

## LIX

One would have thought, (so cunningly the  
rude

And scorned partes were mingled with the  
fine,)

That Nature had for wantonnesse ensude  
Art, and that Art at Nature did repine;  
So striving each th' other to undermine,

Each did the others worke more beautify;  
 So diff'ring both in willes agreed in fine:  
 So all agreed through sweete diversity,  
 This gardin to adorne with all variety.

## LX

And in the midst of all a fountaine stood,  
 Of richest substance that on earth might  
 bee,  
 So pure and shiny that the silver flood  
 Through every channell running one might  
 see:  
 Most goodly it with curious ymageree  
 Was overwrought, and shapes of naked  
 boyes,  
 Of which some seemd with lively jollitee  
 To fly about playing their wanton toyes,  
 Whylest others did them selves embay in  
 liquid joyes.

## LXI

And over all, of purest gold was spread  
 A trayle of yvie in his native hew:  
 For the rich metall was so coloured,  
 That wight, who did not well avis'd it vew,  
 Would surely deeme it to bee yvie trew:  
 Low his lascivious armes adown did creepe,  
 That themselves dipping in the silver dew,  
 Their fleecy flowres they tenderly did steepe,  
 Which drops of christall seemd for wantones  
 to weep.

## LXII

Infinitt streames continually did well  
 Out of this fountaine, sweet and faire to see,  
 The which into an ample laver fell,  
 And shortly grew to so great quantitie,  
 That like a litle lake it seemd to bee;  
 Whose depth exceeded not three cubits  
 hight,  
 That through the waves one might the  
 bottom see,  
 All pav'd beneath with jasper shining bright,  
 That seemd the fountaine in that sea did  
 sayle upright.

## LXIII

And all the margent round about was sett  
 With shady laurell trees, thence to defend  
 The sunny beames, which on the billowes  
 bett,  
 And those which therein bathed mote offend.  
 As Guyon hapned by the same to wend,  
 Two naked damzelles he therein espyde,  
 Which, therein bathing, seemed to contend

And wrestle wantonly, ne car'd to hyde  
 Their dainty partes from vew of any which  
 them eyd.

## LXIV

Sometimes the one would lift the other  
 quight  
 Above the waters, and then downe againe  
 Her plong, as over maystered by night,  
 Where both awhile would covered remaine,  
 And each the other from to rise restraine;  
 The whiles their snowy limbes, as through  
 a vele,  
 So through the christall waves appeared  
 plaine:  
 Then suddainly both would themselves un-  
 hele,  
 And th' amarous sweet spoiles to greedy  
 eyes revele.

## LXV

As that faire starre, the messenger of  
 morne,  
 His dewy face out of the sea doth reare,  
 Or as the Cyprian goddess, newly borne  
 Of th' oceans fruitfull froth, did first ap-  
 pear,  
 Such seemed they, and so their yellow heare  
 Christalline humor dropped downe apace.  
 Whom such when Guyon saw, he drew him  
 neare,  
 And somewhat gan relent his earnest pace;  
 His stubborne brest gan secret pleasaunce  
 to embrace.

## LXVI

The wanton maidens, him espying, stood  
 Gazing a while at his unwonted guise;  
 Then th' one her selfe low ducked in the  
 flood,  
 Abasht that her a straunger did advise:  
 But thother rather higher did arise,  
 And her two lilly paps aloft displayd,  
 And all, that might his melting hart eutyse  
 To her delights, she unto him bewrayd:  
 The rest, hidd underneath, him more de-  
 sirous made.

## LXVII

With that the other likewise up arose,  
 And her faire lockes, which formerly were  
 bownd  
 Up in one knott, she low adowne did lose:  
 Which, flowing long and thick, her cloth'd  
 arownd,



And th' yvorie in golden mantle gownd:  
So that faire spectacle from him was reft,  
Yet that which reft it no lesse faire was  
fownd:

So hidd in lockes and waves from lookers  
theft,

Nought but her lovely face she for his look-  
ing left.

## LXVIII

Withall she laughed, and she blusht with-  
all,

That blushing to her laughter gave more  
grace,

And laughter to her blushing, as did fall.  
Now when they spyde the knight to slacke  
his pace,

Them to behold, and in his sparkling face  
The secrete signes of kindled lust appeare,  
Their wanton meriments they did encrease,  
And to him beckned to approach more neare,  
And shewd him many sights, that corage  
cold could reare.

## LXIX

On which when gazing him the palmer saw,  
He much rebukt those wandring eyes of  
his,

And, counseld well, him forward thence did  
draw.

Now are they come nigh to the Bowre of  
Blis,

Of her fond favorites so nam'd amis:  
When thus the palmer: 'Now, sir, well  
advise;

For here the end of all our travaill is:  
Here wonnes Acrasia, whom we must sur-  
prise,

Els she will slip away, and all our drift de-  
spise.'

## LXX

Eftsoones they heard a most melodious  
sound,

Of all that mote delight a daintie eare,  
Such as attonce might not on living ground,  
Save in this paradise, be heard elsewhere:

Right hard it was for wight which did it  
heare,

To read what manner musicke that mote  
bee:

For all that pleasing is to living care  
Was there consorted in one harmonie;  
Birdes, voices, instruments, windes, waters,  
all agree.

## LXXI

The joyous birdes, shroned in chearefull  
shade,

Their notes unto the voice attemptred sweet:  
Th' angelicall soft trembling voyces made

To th' instruments divine respondence meet:  
The silver sounding instruments did meet

With the base murmure of the waters fall:  
The waters fall with difference discreet,

Now soft, now loud, unto the wind did call:  
The gentle warbling wind low answered to

all.

## LXXII

There, whence that musick seemed heard  
to bee,

Was the faire witch, her selfe now solacing  
With a new lover, whom, through sorceree

And witchcraft, she from faire did thether  
bring:

There she had him now laid a slombering,  
In secret shade after long wanton joyes:

Whilst round about them pleasauntly did  
sing

Many faire ladies and lascivious boyes,  
That ever mixt their song with light licen-  
tious toyes.

## LXXIII

And all that while, right over him she  
hong,

With her false eyes fast fixed in his sight,  
As seeking medicine whence she was stong,  
Or greedily depasturing delight:

And oft inclining downe, with kisses light,  
For feare of waking him, his lips bedewd,

And through his humid eyes did sucke his  
spright,

Quite molten into lust and pleasure lewd;  
Wherewith she sighed soft, as if his case she

rewd.

## LXXIV

The whiles some one did chaunt this lovely  
lay:—

Ah! see, who so fayre thing doest faine to  
see,

In springing flowre the image of thy day;  
Ah! see the virgin rose, how sweetly shee

Doth first peepe forth with bashfull mo-  
destee,

That fairer seemes, the lesse ye see her  
may;

Lo! see soone after, how more bold and  
free

Her bared bosome she doth broad display;

Lo ! see soone after, how she fades and falls away.

## LXXV

So passeth, in the passing of a day,  
Of mortall life the leafe, the bud, the flowre,  
Ne more doth florish after first decay,  
That earst was sought to deck both bed  
and bowre

Of many a lady, and many a paramowre:  
Gather therefore the rose, whilst yet is  
prime,

For soone comes age, that will her pride  
deflowre:

Gather the rose of love, whilst yet is time,  
Whilst loving thou mayst loved be with  
equall crime.

## LXXVI

He ceast, and then gan all the quire of  
birdes

Their diverse notes t' attune unto his lay,  
As in approvaunce of his pleasing wordes.  
The constant payre heard all that he did  
say,

Yet swarved not, but kept their forward  
way,

Through many covert groves and thickets  
close,

In which they creeping did at last display  
That wanton lady, with her lover lose,  
Whose sleepe head she in her lap did soft  
dispose.

## LXXVII

Upon a bed of roses she was layd,  
As faint through heat, or dight to pleasant  
sin,

And was arayd, or rather disarayd,  
All in a vele of silke and silver thin,  
That hid no whit her alabaster skin,  
But rather shewd more white, if more  
might bee:

More subtile web Arachne cannot spin,  
Nor the fine nets, which oft we woven  
see

Of scorched deaw, do not in th' ayre more  
lightly flee.

## LXXVIII

Her snowy brest was bare to ready spoyle  
Of hungry eies, which n'ote therewith be  
fild;

And yet through languour of her late sweet  
toyle,

Few drops, more cleare then nectar, forth  
distild,

That like pure orient perles adowne it  
trild;

And her faire eyes, sweet smyling in de-  
light,

Moystened their fierie beames, with which  
she thrild

Fraile harts, yet quenched not, like starry  
light,

Which, sparckling on the silent waves, does  
seeme more bright.

## LXXIX

The young man, sleeping by her, seemd to  
be

Some goodly swayne of honorable place,  
That certes it great pittie was to see  
Him his nobility so fowle deface:

A sweet regard and amiable grace,  
Mixed with manly sternesse, did appeare,  
Yet sleeping, in his well proportiond face,  
And on his tender lips the downy heare  
Did now but freshly spring, and silken  
blossoms beare.

## LXXX

His warlike armes, the ydle instruments  
Of sleeping praise, were hong upon a tree,  
And his brave shield, full of old moni-  
ments,

Was fowly ra'st, that none the signes might  
see;

Ne for them, ne for honour, cared hee,  
Ne ought that did to his advauncement  
tend,

But in lewd loves, and wastfull luxuree,  
His dayes, his goods, his bodie he did  
spend:

O horrible enchantment, that him so did  
blend !

## LXXXI

The noble Elfe and carefull palmer drew  
So nigh them, minding nought but lustfull  
game,

That suddain forth they on them rusht, and  
threw

A subtile net, which only for that same  
The skilfull palmer formally did frame:  
So held them under fast, the whiles the  
rest

Fled all away for feare of fowler shame.

The faire enchauntresse, so unwares oppressed,  
Tryde all her arts and all her sleights,  
thence out to wrest.

## LXXXII

And eke her lover strove: but all in vaine;  
For that same net so cunningly was wound,  
That neither guile nor force might it distraigne.  
They tooke them both, and both them strongly bound  
In captive bandes, which there they readie found:  
But her in chaines of adamant he tyde;  
For nothing else might keepe her safe and sound;  
But Verdant (so he hight) he soone untide,  
And counsell sage in steed thereof to him applyde.

## LXXXIII

But all those pleasaunt bowres and pallace brave  
Guyon broke downe, with rigour pittillesse;  
Ne ought their goodly workmanship might save  
Them from the tempest of his wrathfulnesse,  
But that their blisse he turn'd to balefulnesse:  
Their groves he feld, their gardins did deface,  
Their arbers spoyle, their cabinets suppresse,  
Their banket houses burne, their buildings race,  
And, of the fayrest late, now made the fowlest place.

## LXXXIV

Then led they her away, and eke that knight  
They with them led, both sorrowfull and sad:  
The way they came, the same retourn'd they right,  
Till they arrived where they lately had Charm'd those wild-beasts, that rag'd with furie mad:  
Which, now awaking, fierce at them gan fly,

As in their mistresse reskew, whom they lad;  
But them the palmer soone did pacify.  
Then Guyon askt, what meant those beastes which there did ly.

## LXXXV

Sayd he: 'These seeming beasts are men indeed,  
Whom this enchauntresse hath transformed thus,  
Whylome her lovers, which her lustes did feed,  
Now turned into figures hideous,  
According to their mindes like monstrous.'  
'Sad end,' quoth he, 'of life intemperate,  
And mournfull meed of joyes delicious!  
But, palmer, if it mote thee so aggrate,  
Let them returned be unto their former state.'

## LXXXVI

Streight way he with his vertuous staffe them strooke,  
And streight of beastes they comely men became;  
Yet being men they did unmanly looke,  
And stared ghastly, some for inward shame,  
And some for wrath, to see their captive dame:  
But one above the rest in speciall,  
That had an hog beene late, hight Grylle by name,  
Repynd greatly, and did him miscall,  
That had from hoggish forme him brought to naturall.

## LXXXVII

Saide Guyon: 'See the mind of beastly man,  
That hath so soone forgot the excellence  
Of his creation, when he life began,  
That now he chooseth, with vile difference,  
To be a beast, and lacke intelligence.'  
To whom the palmer thus: 'The donghill kinde  
Delightes in filth and fowle incontinence:  
Let Gryll be Gryll, and have his hoggish minde;  
But let us hence depart, whilst wether serves and winde.'



THE THIRDE BOOKE  
OF THE FAERIE QUEENE  
CONTAYNING  
THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS  
OR  
OF CHASTITY

## I

It falls me here to write of Chastity,  
That fayrest vertue, far above the rest;  
For which what needes me fetch from Faery  
Forreine ensamples, it to have exprest?  
Sith it is shrined in my Soveraines brest,  
And formd so lively in each perfect part,  
That to all ladies, which have it profest,  
Neede but behold the pourtraict of her hart,  
If pourtrayd it might bee by any living art.

## II

But living art may not least part expresse,  
Nor life-resembling pencill it can paynt,  
All were it Zeuxis or Praxiteles:  
His dædale hand would faile, and greatly  
faynt,  
And her perfections with his error taynt:  
Ne poets witt, that passeth painter farre  
In picturing the parts of beauty daynt,  
So hard a workemanship adventure darre,  
For fear through want of words her excel-  
lence to marre.

## III

How then shall I, apprentice of the skill  
That whilome in divinest wits did rayne,  
Presume so high to stretch mine humble  
quill?  
Yet now my luckelesse lott doth me con-  
strayne  
Hereto perforce. But, O dredd Soverayne,  
Thus far forth pardon, sith that choicest  
witt  
Cannot your glorious pourtraict figure  
playne,  
That I in colour shoves may shadow itt,  
And antique praises unto present persons  
fitt.

## IV

But if in living colours, and right hew,  
Your selfe you covet to see pictured,  
Who can it doe more lively, or more  
trew,

Then that sweete verse, with nectar sprinck-  
eled,

In which a gracious servaunt pictured  
His Cynthia, his heavens fayrest light?  
That with his melting sweetnes ravished,  
And with the wonder of her beames bright,  
My sences lulled are in slomber of delight.

## V

But let that same delicious poet lend  
A little leave unto a rusticke Muse  
To sing his mistresse prayse, and let him  
mend,  
If ought amis her liking may abuse:  
Ne let his fayrest Cynthia refuse,  
In mirrours more then one her selfe to  
see,  
But either Gloriana let her chuse,  
Or in Belphebe fashioned to bee:  
In th' one her rule, in th' other her rare  
chastitee.

## CANTO I

Guyon encountreth Britomart:  
Fayre Florimell is chaced:  
Duessaes traines and Malecastaes  
champions are defaced.

## I

THE famous Briton Prince and Faery  
knight,  
After long wayes and perilous paines en-  
dur'd,  
Having their weary limbes to perfect plight  
Restord, and sory wounds right well recur'd,  
Of the faire Alma greatly were procur'd  
To make there lenger sojourne and abode;  
But when thereto they might not be allur'd  
From seeking praise and deeds of armes  
abrode,  
They courteous conge tooke, and forth to-  
gether yode.

## II

But the captiv'd Acrasia he sent,  
Because of travaill long, a nigher way,  
With a strong gard, all reskew to prevent,  
And her to Faery court safe to convay,  
That her for witnes of his hard assay  
Unto his Faery Queene he might present:  
But he him selfe betooke another way,  
To make more triall of his hardiment,  
And seeke adventures, as he with Prince  
Arthure went.

## III

Long so they traueiled through wastefull  
wayes,  
Where daungers dwelt, and perils most did  
wonne,  
To hunt for glory and renowned prayse:  
Full many countreyes they did ouerronne,  
From the uprising to the setting sunne,  
And many hard adventures did atehieve;  
Of all the which they honour ever wonne,  
Seeking the weake oppressed to relieve,  
And to recover right for such as wrong did  
grieve.

## IV

At last, as through an open plaine they  
yode,  
They spide a knight, that towards prieked  
fayre;  
And him beside an aged squire there rode,  
That seemd to couch under his shield three-  
square,  
As if that age badd him that burden spare,  
And yield it those that stouter could it  
wield:  
He them espying, gan him selfe prepare,  
And on his arme addresse his goodly shield,  
That bore a lion passant in a golden field.

## V

Which seeing good Sir Guyon, deare be-  
sought  
The Princee, of graee, to let him ronne that  
turne.  
He graunted: then the Faery quickly raught  
His poynant speare, and sharply gan to  
spurne  
His fomy steed, whose fiery feete did burne  
The verdant gras, as he thereon did tread;  
Ne did the other backe his foote returne,  
But fiercely forward came withouten dread,  
And bent his dreadful speare against the  
others head.

## VI

They beene ymett, and both theyr points  
arriv'd;  
But Guyon drove so furious and fell,  
That seemd both shield and plate it would  
have riv'd:  
Nathelesse it bore his foe not from his  
sell,  
But made him stagger, as he were not  
well:  
But Guyon selfe, ere well he was aware,

Nigh a speares length behind his crouper  
fell;  
Yet in his fall so well him selfe he bare,  
That mischievous mischaunce his life and  
limbs did spare.

## VII

Great shame and sorrow of that fall he  
tooke;  
For never yet, sith warlike armes he bore,  
And shivering speare in bloody field first  
shooke,  
He fownd him selfe dishonored so sore.  
Ah! gentlest knight that ever armor bore,  
Let not thee grieve dismounted to have  
beene,  
And brought to grownd, that never wast  
before;  
For not thy fault, but secret powre unseene:  
That speare enchaunted was, which layd thee  
on the greene.

## VIII

But weenedst thou what wight thee over-  
threw,  
Much greater grieve and shamefuller re-  
grett  
For thy hard fortune then thou wouldst  
renew,  
That of a single damzell thou wert mett  
On equall plaine, and there so hard be-  
sett:  
Even the famous Britomart it was,  
Whom straunge adventure did from Bri-  
tayne fett,  
To seeke her lover, (love far sought, alas!)  
Whose image shee had scene in Venus look-  
ing glas.

## IX

Full of disdainefull wrath, he fieree up-  
rose,  
For to revenge that fowle reprochefull  
shame,  
And snatching his bright sword, began to  
close  
With her on foot, and stoutly forward eame;  
Dye rather would he then endure that same.  
Which when his palmer saw, he gan to  
feare  
His toward perill and untoward blame,  
Which by that new rencounter he should  
reare:  
For death sate on the point of that en-  
chaunted speare.

## X

And hasting towards him gan fayre perswade,  
 Not to provoke misfortune, nor to weene  
 His speares default to mend with cruell blade:  
 For by his mightie science he had seene  
 The secrete vertue of that weapon keene,  
 That mortall puissaunce mote not with-  
 stond:  
 Nothing on earth mote alwaies happy beene.  
 Great hazard were it, and adventure fond,  
 To loose long gotten honour with one evill  
 hond.

## XI

By such good meanes he him discourselled  
 From prosecuting his revenging rage;  
 And eke the Prince like treaty handeled,  
 His wrathfull will with reason to aswage,  
 And laid the blame, not to his carriage,  
 But to his starting steed, that swarv'd asyde,  
 And to the ill purveyaunce of his page,  
 That had his furnitures not firmly tyde:  
 So is his angry corage fayrly pacifyde.

## XII

Thus reconeilement was betweene them  
 knitt,  
 Through goodly temperaunce and affection  
 chaste;  
 And either vowd with all their power and  
 witt,  
 To let not others honour be defaste  
 Of friend or foe, who ever it embaste,  
 Ne armes to beare against the others syde:  
 In which accord the Prince was also plaste,  
 And with that golden chaine of concord  
 tyde.  
 So goodly all agreed, they forth yfere did  
 ryde.

## XIII

O goodly usage of those antique tymes,  
 In which the sword was servaunt unto right!  
 When not for malice and contentious  
 crymes,  
 But all for prayse, and prooffe of manly  
 might,  
 The martiall brood accustomed to fight:  
 Then honour was the meed of victory,  
 And yet the vanquished had no despight:  
 Let later age that noble use envy,  
 Vyle rancor to avoid, and cruel sur-  
 quedry.

## XIV

Long they thus travailed in friendly wise,  
 Through countreyes waste and eke well  
 edifyde,  
 Seeking adventures hard, to exercise  
 Their puissaunce, whylome full deruly  
 tryde:  
 At length they came into a forest wyde,  
 Whose hideous horror and sad trembling  
 sownd  
 Full griesly seeind: therein they long did  
 ryde,  
 Yet traet of living creature none they  
 fownd,  
 Save beares, lyons, and buls, which romed  
 them arownd.

## XV

All suddenly out of the thickest brush,  
 Upon a milkwhite palfrey all alone,  
 A goodly lady did foreby them rush,  
 Whose face did seeme as cleare as christall  
 stone,  
 And eke through feare as white as whales  
 bone:  
 Her garments all were wrought of beaten  
 gold,  
 And all her steed with tinsell trappings  
 shone,  
 Which fledd so fast that nothing mote him  
 hold,  
 And scarce them leasure gave, her passing  
 to behold.

## XVI

Still as she fledd her eye she backward  
 threw,  
 As fearing evill that poursewd her fast;  
 And her faire yellow locks behind her flew,  
 Loosely disperst with puff of every blast:  
 All as a blazing starre doth farre outeast  
 His hearie beames, and flaming lockes di-  
 spredd,  
 At sight whereof the people stand aghast:  
 But the sage wisard telles, as he has redd,  
 That it importunes death and dolefull dre-  
 ryhedd.

## XVII

So as they gazed after her a while,  
 Lo! where a griesly foster forth did rush,  
 Breathing out beastly lust her to defyle:  
 His tyreling jade he fiersly forth did push,  
 Through thicke and thin, both over banck  
 and bush.



In hope her to attaine by hooke or crooke,  
That from his gory sydes the blood did  
gush:  
Large were his limbes, and terrible his  
looke,  
And in his clownish hand a sharp bore  
speare he shooke.

## XVIII

Which outrage when those gentle knights  
did see,  
Full of great envy and fell gealosity,  
They stayd not to avise who first should  
bee,  
But all spurd after fast as they mote fly,  
To reskew her from shamefull villany.  
The Prince and Guyon equally bylive  
Her selfe pursewd, in hope to win thereby  
Most goodly meede, the fairest dame alive:  
But after the foule foster Timias did strive.

## XIX

The whiles faire Britomart, whose constant  
mind  
Would not so lightly follow beauties chace,  
Ne reekt of ladies love, did stay behynd,  
And them awayted there a certaine space,  
To weet if they would turne backe to that  
place:  
But when she saw them gone, she forward  
went,  
As lay her journey, through that perlous  
pace,  
With stedfast corage and stout hardiment;  
Ne evil thing she feard, ne evill thing she  
ment.

## XX

At last, as nigh out of the wood she came,  
A stately castle far away she spyde,  
To which her steps directly she did frame.  
That castle was most goodly edifyde,  
And plaste for pleasure nigh that forrest  
syde:  
But faire before the gate a spatious playne,  
Mantled with greene, it selfe did spredden  
wyde,  
On which she saw six knights, that did  
darrayne  
Fiers battaill against one, with cruel might  
and mayne.

## XXI

Mainely they all attonce upon him laid,  
And sore beset on every side arownd,

That nigh he breathlesse grew, yet nought  
dismaid,  
Ne ever to them yielded foot of grownd,  
All had he lost much blood through many  
a wownd,  
But stoutly dealt his blowes, and every way,  
To which he turned in his wrathfull stownd,  
Made them recoile, and fly from dredd decay,  
That none of all the six before him durst  
assay.

## XXII

Like dastard curres, that, having at a bay  
The salvage beast embost in wearie chace,  
Dare not adventure on the stubborne pray,  
Ne byte before, but rome from place to  
place,  
To get a snatch, when turned is his face.  
In such distresse and doubtfull jeopardy  
When Britomart him saw, she ran apace  
Unto his reskew, and with earnest cry  
Badd those same sixe forbear that single  
enimy.

## XXIII

But to her cry they list not lenden eare,  
Ne ought the more their mightie strokes  
surceasse,  
But gathering him rownd about more neare,  
Their direfull rancour rather did encrease;  
Till that she, rushing through the thickest  
preasse,  
Perforce disparted their compacted gyre,  
And soone compeld to hearken unto peace:  
Tho gan she myldly of them to inquire  
The cause of their dissention and outrageous  
yre.

## XXIV

Whereto that single knight did answere  
frame:  
'These six would me enforce by oddes of  
might,  
To chaunge my lief, and love another  
dame,  
That death me liefer were then such de-  
spight,  
So unto wrong to yield my wrested right:  
For I love one, the truest one on grownd,  
Ne list me chaunge; she th' Errant Dam-  
zell hight;  
For whose deare sake full many a bitter  
stownd  
I have endurd, and tasted many a bloody  
wownd.'

## XXV

‘ Certes,’ said she, ‘ then beene ye sixe to blame,  
 To weene your wrong by force to justify:  
 For knight to leave his lady were great shame,  
 That faithfull is, and better were to dy.  
 All losse is lesse, and lesse the infamy,  
 Then losse of love to him that loves but one:  
 Ne may love be compeld by maistry;  
 For soone as maistry comes, sweet Love anone  
 Taketh his nimble winges, and soone away is gone.’

## XXVI

Then spake one of those six: ‘ There dwell-eth here,  
 Within this castle wall, a lady fayre,  
 Whose souveraine beautie hath no living pere;  
 Thereto so bounteous and so debonayre,  
 That never any mote with her compayre.  
 She hath ordaind this law, which we approve,  
 That every knight, which doth this way repayre,  
 In case he have no lady nor no love,  
 Shall doe unto her service, never to remove.

## XXVII

‘ But if he have a lady or a love,  
 Then must he her forgoe with fowle defame,  
 Or els with us by dint of sword approve,  
 That she is fairer then our fairest dame;  
 As did this knight, before ye hether came.’  
 ‘ Perdy,’ said Britomart, ‘ the choise is hard:  
 But what reward had he that overcame?’  
 ‘ He should advaunced bee to high regard,’  
 Said they, ‘ and have our ladies love for his reward.

## XXVIII

‘ Therefore aread, sir, if thou have a love.’  
 ‘ Love have I sure,’ quoth she, ‘ but lady none;  
 Yet will I not fro mine owne love remove,  
 Ne to your lady will I service done,  
 But wreake your wronges wrought to this knight alone,  
 And prove his cause.’ With that, her mortall speare  
 She mightily aventred towards one,

And downe him smot ere well aware he weare;  
 Then to the next she rode, and downe the next did beare.

## XXIX

Ne did she stay, till three on ground she layd,  
 That none of them himselfe could reare againe;  
 The fourth was by that other knight dismayd,  
 All were he wearie of his former paine,  
 That now there do but two of six remaine;  
 Which two did yield before she did them snight.  
 ‘ Ah!’ sayd she then, ‘ now may ye all see plaine,  
 That truth is strong, and trew love most of might,  
 That for his trusty servannts doth so strongly fight.’

## XXX

‘ Too well we see,’ saide they, ‘ and prove too well  
 Our faulty weakenes, and your matchlesse might:  
 Forthy, faire sir, yours be the damozell,  
 Which by her owne law to your lot doth light,  
 And we your liege men faith unto you plight.’  
 So underneath her feet their swords they mard,  
 And after, her besought, well as they might,  
 To enter in and reape the dew reward:  
 She graunted, and then in they all together far’d.

## XXXI

Long were it to describe the goodly frame  
 And stately port of Castle Joyeous,  
 (For so that castle hight by commun name)  
 Where they were entertaynd with courteous  
 And comely glee of many gracious  
 Faire ladies, and of many a gentle knight,  
 Who through a chamber long and spacious,  
 Eftsoones them brought unto their ladies sight,  
 That of them cleeped was the Lady of Delight.

## XXXII

But for to tell the sumptuous aray  
Of that great chamber should be labour  
lost:

For living wit, I weene, cannot display  
The roiall riches and exceeding cost  
Of every pillour and of every post;  
Which all of purest bullion framed were,  
And with great perles and pretious stones  
embost,  
That the bright glister of their beames  
cleare  
Did sparckle forth great light, and glorious  
did appeare.

## XXXIII

These stranger knights, through passing,  
forth were led

Into an inner rowme, whose royaltee  
And rich purveyance might uneath be red;  
Mote princes place beseeme so deckt to  
bee.

Which stately manner when as they did see,  
The image of superfluous riotize,  
Exceeding much the state of meane degree,  
They greatly wondred whence so sump-  
teous guize

Might be maintaynd, and each gan diversely  
devize.

## XXXIV

The wals were round about appareiled  
With costly clothes of Arras and of Toure,  
In which with cunning hand was pourtraied  
The love of Venus and her paramoure,  
The fayre Adonis, turned to a flowre,  
A worke of rare device and wondrous wit.  
First did it shew the bitter balefull stowre,  
Which her assayd with many a fervent  
fit,

When first her tender hart was with his  
beautie smit:

## XXXV

Then with what sleights and sweet allure-  
ments she

Entyst the boy, as well that art she knew,  
And wooed him her paramoure to bee;  
Now making girlonds of each flowre that  
grew,

To crowne his golden lockes with honour  
dew;

Now leading him into a secret shade  
From his beauperes, and from bright hea-  
vens vew,

Where him to sleepe she gently would per-  
swade,  
Or bathe him in a fountaine by some covert  
glade.

## XXXVI

And whilst he slept, she over him would  
spred

Her mantle, colour'd like the starry skyes,  
And her soft arme lay underneath his hed,  
And with ambrosiall kisses bathe his eyes;  
And whilst he bath'd, with her two crafty  
spyes

She secretly would search each daintie lim,  
And throw into the well sweet rosemaryes,  
And fragrant violets, and paunces trim,  
And ever with sweet nectar she did sprinkle  
him.

## XXXVII

So did she steale his heedelesse hart away,  
And joyd his love in secret unespyde.

But for she saw him bent to cruell play,  
To hunt the salvage beast in forrest wyde,  
Dreadfull of daunger, that mote him betyde,  
She oft and oft adviz'd him to refraine  
From chase of greater beastes, whose brut-  
ish pryde

Mote breede him scath unwares: but all in  
vaine;

For who can shun the chance that dest'ny  
doth ordaine?

## XXXVIII

Lo! where beyond he lyeth languishing,  
Deadly engored of a great wilde bore,  
And by his side the goddesse groveling  
Makes for him endlesse mone, and ever-  
more

With her soft garment wipes away the gore,  
Which staynes his snowy skin with hatefull  
hew:

But when she saw no helpe might him  
restore,

Him to a dainty flowre she did transmew,  
Which in that cloth was wrought, as if it  
lively grew.

## XXXIX

So was that chamber clad in goodly wize:  
And rownd about it many beds were dight,  
As whylome was the antique worldes guize,  
Some for untimely ease, some for delight,  
As pleased them to use, that use it might:  
And all was full of damzels and of squyres,



Dauncing and reveling both day and night,  
And swimming deepe in sensuall desyres;  
And Cupid still emongest them kindled lust-  
full fyres.

## XL

And all the while sweet musicke did divide  
Her looser notes with Lydian harmony;  
And all the while sweet birdes thereto  
applide

Their daintie layes and dulcet melody,  
Ay caroling of love and jollity,  
That wonder was to heare their trim con-  
sort.

Which when those knights beheld, with  
scornefull eye,  
They sdeigned such lascivious disport,  
And loath'd the loose demeanure of that  
wanton sort.

## XLI

Thence they were brought to that great  
ladies vew,  
Whom they found sitting on a sumptuous  
bed,

That glistred all with gold and glorious  
shew,

As the proud Persian queenes accustomed:  
She seemd a woman of great bountihed  
And of rare beautie, saving that askaunce  
Her wanton eyes, ill signes of womanhed,  
Did roll too lightly, and too often glaunce,  
Without regard of grace or comely amen-  
aunce.

## XLII

Long worke it were, and needlesse, to devise  
Their goodly entertainment and great glee:  
She caused them be led in courteous wize  
Into a bowre, disarmed for to be,  
And cheared well with wine and spiceree:  
The Redcrosse Knight was soone disarmed  
there,

But the brave mayd would not disarmed  
bee,

But onely vented up her umbriere.  
And so did let her goodly visage to appere.

## XLIII

As when fayre Cynthia, in darkesome night,  
Is in a noyous cloud enveloped,  
Where she may finde the substance thin  
and light

Breakes forth her silver beames, and her  
bright hed

Discovers to the world discomfited;  
Of the poore traileer, that went astray,  
With thousand blessings she is heried;  
Such was the beantie and the shining ray,  
With which fayre Britomart gave light  
unto the day.

## XLIV

And eke those six, which lately with her  
fought,

Now were disarind, and did them selves  
present

Unto her vew, and company unsought;  
For they all seemed courteous and gent,  
And all sixe brethren, borne of one pa-  
rent,

Which had them traynd in all civillitee,  
And goodly taught to tilt and tournament;  
Now were they liegmen to this ladie free,  
And her knights service ought, to hold of  
her in fee.

## XLV

The first of them by name Gardante hight,  
A jolly person, and of comely vew;

The second was Parlante, a bold knight,  
And next to him Jocante did ensue;  
Baseiante did him selfe most courteous  
shew;

But fierce Bacchante seemd too fell and  
keene;

And yett in armes Noctante greater grew:  
All were faire knights, and goodly well be-  
seene,

But to faire Britomart they all but shad-  
owes beene.

## XLVI

For shee was full of amiable grace,  
And manly terror mixed therewithall,  
That as the one stird up affections bace,  
So th' other did mens rash desires apall,  
And hold them backe, that would in error  
fall;

As hee that hath espide a vermeill rose,  
To which sharpe thornes and breres the  
way forstall,

Dare not for dread his hardy hand ex-  
pose,

But wishing it far off, his ydle wish doth  
lose.

## XLVII

Whom when the lady saw so faire a wight,  
All ignorant of her contrary sex,

(For shee her weend a fresh and lusty knight)

Shee greatly gan enamoured to wex,  
And with vaine thoughts her falsed fancy vex:

Her fickle hart conceived hasty fyre,  
Like sparkes of fire which fall in sclender flex,

That shortly brent into extreme desyre,  
And ransackt all her veins with passion entyre.

## XLVIII

Eftsoones shee grew to great impatience,  
And into termes of open outrage brust,  
That plaine discovered her incontinence,  
Ne reckt shee who her meaning did mistrust;

For she was given all to fleshly lust,  
And poured forth in sensuall delight,  
That all regard of shame she had discust,  
And meet respect of honor putt to flight:  
So shamelesse beauty soone becomes a loathly sight.

## XLIX

Faire ladies, that to love captived arre,  
And chaste desires doe nourish in your mind,

Lct not her fault your sweete affections marre,

Ne blott the bounty of all womankind,  
'Mongst thousands good one wanton dame to find:

Emongst the roses grow some wicked weeds:

For this was not to love, but lust, inclind;  
For love does alwaies bring forth bounteous deeds,

And in each gentle hart desire of honor breeds.

## L

Nought so of love this looser dame did skill,

But as a cole to kindle fleshly flame,  
Giving the bridle to her wanton will,  
And treading under foote her honest name:  
Such love is hate, and such desire is shame.  
Still did she rove at her with crafty glaunce  
Of her false eies, that at her hart did ayme,

And told her meaning in her countenance;  
But Britomart dissembled it with ignorance.

## LI

Supper was shortly dight, and downe they satt;

Where they were served with all sumptuous fare,

Whiles fruitfull Ceres and Lyæus fatt  
Pourd out their plenty, without spight or spare:

Nought wanted there that dainty was and rare;

And aye the cups their bancks did overflow,  
And aye, betweene the cups, she did prepare  
Way to her love, and secret darts did throw;  
But Britomart would not such guilfull mes-  
sage know.

## LII

So when they slaked had the fervent heat  
Of appetite with meates of every sort,  
The lady did faire Britomart entreat,  
Her to disarm, and with delightfull sport  
To loose her warlike limbs and strong effort:

But when shee mote not thereunto be wonne,  
(For shee her sexe under that straunge pur-  
port

Did use to hide, and plaine apparaunce shonne,)

In playner wise to tell her grievance she begonnc.

## LIII

And all attonce discovered her desire  
With sighes, and sobs, and plaints, and piteous grieve,

The outward sparkes of her inburning fire;  
Which spent in vaine, at last she told her brieve,

That, but if she did lend her short reliefe,  
And doe her comfort, she mote algates dye.  
But the chaste damzell, that had never priefe  
Of such malengine and fine forgerye,  
Did easly beleve her strong extremitye.

## LIV

Full easy was for her to have beliefe,  
Who by self-feeling of her feeble sexe,  
And by long triall of the inward grieve,  
Wherewith imperious love her hart did vexe,  
Could judge what paines doe loving harts perplexe.

Who meanes no guile, be guiled soonest shall,

And to faire semblaunce doth light faith annexe:

The bird, that knowes not the false fowlers  
call,  
Into his hidden nett full easely doth fall.

## LV

Forthy she would not in discourteise wise  
Seorne the faire offer of good will profest;  
For great rebuke it is, love to despise,  
Or rudely sdeigne a gentle harts request;  
But with faire countenaunce, as beseemed  
best,

Her entertaynd; nath'lesse shee inly deemd  
Her love too light, to wooe a wandring  
guest:

Which she misconstruing, thereby esteemd  
That from like inward fire that outward  
smoke had steemd.

## LVI

Therewith a while she her flit fancy fedd,  
Till she mote wiune fit time for her desire,  
But yet her wound still inward freshly  
bledd,

And through her bones the false instilled fire  
Did spred it selfe, and venime close inspire.  
Tho were the tables taken all away,  
And every knight, and every gentle squire  
Gan choose his dame with *bascomani* gay,  
With whom he ment to make his sport and  
courtly play.

## LVII

Some fell to daunee, some fel to hazardry,  
Some to make love, some to make mery-  
ment,

As diverse witts to diverse things apply;  
And all the while faire Malecasta bent  
Her crafty engins to her close intent.  
By this th' eternall lampes, wherewith high  
Jove

Doth light the lower world, were halfe  
yspent,

And the moist daughters of huge Atlas  
strove

Into the ocean deepe to drive their weary  
drove.

## LVIII

High time it seemed then for everie wight  
Them to betake unto their kindly rest:  
Efte-soones long waxen torches weren light,  
Unto their bowres to guyden every guest:  
Tho, when the Britonesse saw all the rest  
Avoided quite, she gan her selfe despoile,  
And safe committ to her soft fethered nest,

Wher through long watch, and late daies  
weary toile,  
She soundly slept, and carefull thoughts did  
quite assoile.

## LIX

Now whenas all the world in silence deepe  
Yshrowded was, and every mortall wight  
Was drowned in the depth of deadlysleepe,  
Faire Malecasta, whose engrieved spright  
Could find no rest in such perplexed plight,  
Lightly arose out of her wearie bed,  
And, under the blacke vele of guilty night,  
Her with a scarlott mantle covered,  
That was with gold and ermines faire en-  
veloped.

## LX

Then panting softe, and trembling every  
joynt,

Her fearfull feete towards the bowre she  
mov'd,

Where she for seeret purpose did appoynt  
To lodge the warlike maide, unwisely loov'd;  
And to her bed approching, first she prov'd  
Whether she slept or wakte; with her softe  
hand

She softly felt if any member moov'd,  
And lent her wary eare to understand  
If any puffe of breath or signe of sence shee  
fond.

## LXI

Which whenas none she fond, with easy  
shifte,

For feare least her unwares she should  
abrayd,

Th'embroderd quilt she lightly up did lifte,  
And by her side her selfe she softly layd,  
Of every finest fingers touch affrayd;  
Ne any noise she made, ne word she spake,  
But inly sigh'd. At last the royall mayd  
Out of her quiet slomber did awake,  
And chaungd her weary side, the better ease  
to take.

## LXII

Where feeling one close couched by her  
side,

She lightly lept out of her filed bedd,  
And to her weapon ran, in minde to gride  
The loathed leachour. But the dame, halfe  
dedd

Through suddein feare and ghastly dreri-  
hedd,



Did shriek alowd, that through the hous it  
 rong,  
 And the whole family, therewith adredd,  
 Rashly out of their rouzed couches sprong,  
 And to the troubled chamber all in armes  
 did throng.

## LXIII

And those sixe knights, that ladies cham-  
 pions,  
 And eke the Redcrosse Knight ran to the  
 stownd,  
 Halfe armd and halfe unarmd, with them  
 attons:  
 Where when confusedly they came, they  
 fownd  
 Their lady lying on the sencelesse grownd;  
 On thother side, they saw the warlike  
 mayd  
 Al in her snow-white smocke, with locks  
 unbownd,  
 Threatning the point of her avenging blaed;  
 That with so troublous terror they were all  
 dismayd.

## LXIV

About their ladye first they flockt arownd;  
 Whom having laid in comfortable couch,  
 Shortly they reard out of her frozen  
 swownd;  
 And afterwarde they gan with fowle re-  
 proch  
 To stirre up strife, and troublous contecke  
 broch:  
 But, by ensample of the last dayes losse,  
 None of them rashly durst to her approach,  
 Ne in so glorious spoile themselves einbosse:  
 Her succourd eke the champion of the bloody  
 crosse.

## LXV

But one of those sixe knights, Gardante  
 hight,  
 Drew out a deadly bow and arrow keene,  
 Which forth he sent with felonous despight,  
 And fell intent, against the virgin sheene:  
 The mortall steele stayd not till it was  
 seene  
 To gore her side; yet was the wound not  
 deepe,  
 But lightly rased her soft silken skin,  
 That drops of purple blood thereout did  
 weepe,  
 Which did her lilly smock with staines of  
 vermeil steep.

## LXVI

Wherewith enrag'd, she fiercely at them  
 flew,  
 And with her flaming sword about her layd,  
 That none of them foule mischief could  
 eschew,  
 But with her dreadfull strokes were all dis-  
 mayd:  
 Here, there, and every where about her  
 swayd  
 Her wrathfull steele, that none mote it  
 abyde;  
 And eke the Redcrosse Knight gave her good  
 ayd,  
 Ay joyning foot to foot, and syde to syde,  
 That in short space their foes they have  
 quite terrifyde.

## LXVII

Tho whenas all were put to shamefull flight,  
 The noble Britomartis her arayd,  
 And her bright armes about her body dight:  
 For nothing would she lenger there be  
 stayd,  
 Where so loose life, and so ungentle trade,  
 Was usd of knights and ladies seeming  
 gent:  
 So, earely, ere the grosse earthes gryesy  
 shade  
 Was all disperst out of the firmament,  
 They tooke their steeds, and forth upon  
 their journey went.

## CANTO II

The Redcrosse Knight to Britomart  
 Describeth Artegall:  
 The wondrous myrrhour, by which she  
 In love with him did fall.

## I

HERE have I cause in men just blame to  
 find,  
 That in their proper praise too partiall bee,  
 And not indifferent to woman kind,  
 To whom no share in armes and chevalree  
 They doe impart, ne maken memoree  
 Of their brave gestes and prowesse mar-  
 tiall:  
 Scarse doe they spare to one, or two, or  
 three,  
 Rowme in their writtes; yet the same writ-  
 ing small  
 Does all their deedes deface, and dims their  
 glories all.

## II

But by record of antique times I finde,  
That wemen wont in warres to beare most  
    sway,  
And to all great exploites them selves in-  
    clind:

Of which they still the girlond bore away,  
Till envious men, fearing their rules decay,  
Gan coyne streight lawes to curb their lib-  
    erty:

Yet sith they warlike armes have laide  
    away,  
They have exceld in artes and pollicy,  
That now we foolish men that prayse gin  
    eke t' envy.

## III

Of warlike puissaunce in ages spent,  
Be thou, faire Britomart, whose prayse I  
    wryte;

But of all wisdom bee thou precedent,  
O sovaine Queene, whose prayse I would  
    endyte,

Endite I would as dewtie doth excyte;  
But ah! my rymes to rude and rugged arre,  
When in so high an object they doe lyte,  
And, striving fit to make, I feare doe  
    marre:

Thy selfe thy prayses tell, and make them  
    knownen farre.

## IV

She, traveling with Guyon, by the way  
Of sondry thinges faire purpose gan to find,  
T' abridg their journey long and lingring  
    day:

Mongst which it fell into that Fairies mind  
To aske this Briton maid, what uncouth  
    wind

Brought her into those partes, and what  
    inquest

Made her dissemble her disguised kind:  
Faire lady she him seemd, like lady drest,  
But fairest knight alive, when armed was  
    her brest.

## V

Thereat she sighing softly, had no powre  
To speake a while, ne ready answer make,  
But with hart-thrilling throbs and bitter  
    stowre,

As if she had a fever fitt, did quake,  
And every daintie limbe with horroure  
    shake,

And ever and anone the rosy red

Flasht through her face, as it had beene a  
    flake  
Of lightning through bright heven ful-  
    mined:

At last, the passion past, she thus him an-  
    swered:

## VI

'Faire sir, I let you weete, that from the  
    howre

I taken was from nourses tender pap,  
I have beene trained up in warlike stowre,  
To tossen speare and shield, and to affrap  
The warlike ryder to his most mishap:  
Sithence I loathed have my life to lead,  
As ladies wont, in pleasures wanton lap,  
To finger the fine needle and nyce thread;  
Me lever were with point of foemans speare  
    be dead.

## VII

'All my delight on deedes of armes is sett,  
To hunt out perilles and adventures hard,  
By sea, by land, where so they may be mett,  
Onely for honour and for high regard,  
Without respect of richesse or reward.  
For such intent into these partes I came,  
Withouten compasse or withouten card,  
Far fro my native soyle, that is by name  
The Greater Brytaine, here to seeke for  
    praise and fame.

## VIII

'Fame blazed hath, that here in Faery Lond  
Doe many famous knightes and ladies  
    wonne,

And many straunge adventures to bee fond,  
Of which great worth and worship may be  
    wonne;

Which I to prove, this voyage have be-  
    gonne.

But mote I weot of you, right courteous  
    knight,

Tydings of one, that hath unto me donne  
Late foule dishonour and reprochfull spight,  
The which I seeke to wreake, and Arthegall  
    he hight.'

## IX

The word gone out she backe againe would  
    call,

As her repenting so to have missayd,  
But that he it uptaking ere the fall,  
Her shortly answered: 'Faire martiall  
    mayd,

Certes ye misavised beene, t' nprayd  
A gentle knight with so unknighly blame:  
For weete ye well, of all that ever playd  
At tilt or tourney, or like warlike game,  
The noble Arthegall hath ever borne the  
name.

## X

'Forthy great wonder were it, if such  
shame

Should ever enter in his bounteous thought,  
Or ever doe that mote deserven blame:  
The noble corage never weeneth onght,  
That may unworthy of it selfe be thought.  
Therefore, faire damzell, be ye well aware,  
Least that too farre ye have your sorrow  
sought:

Yon and your countrey both I wish welfare,  
And honour both; for each of other worthy  
are.'

## XI

The royall maid woxe inly wondrous glad,  
To heare her love so highly magnifyde,  
And joyd that ever she affixed had  
Her hart on knight so goodly glorifyde,  
How ever finely she it faind to hyde:  
The loving mother, that nine monethes did  
beare,

In the deare closett of her painefull syde,  
Her tender babe, it seeing safe appeare,  
Doth not so much rejoyce as she rejoyced  
theare.

## XII

But to occasion him to further talke,  
To feed her humor with his pleasing style,  
Her list in stryfull termes with him to  
balke,

And thus replyde: 'How ever, sir, ye fyle  
Your courteous tongue, his prayses to com-  
pile,

It ill beseemes a knight of gentle sort,  
Such as ye have him boasted, to begnyle  
A simple maide, and worke so hainous tort,  
In shame of knighthood, as I largely can  
report.

## XIII

'Let bee therefore my vengeaunce to dis-  
swade,  
And read, where I that faytour false may  
find.'

'Ah! but if reason faire might you per-  
swade

To slake your wrath, and mollify your  
mind,'

Said he, 'perhaps ye should it better find:  
For hardie thing it is, to weene by might  
That man to hard conditions to bind,  
Or ever hope to match in equall fight,  
Whose prowesse paragone saw never living  
wight.

## XIV

'Ne soothlich is it easie for to read  
Where now on earth, or how, he may be  
fownd;

For he ne wonneth in one certeine stead,  
But restlesse walketh all the world around,  
Ay doing thinges that to his fame redownd,  
Defending ladies cause and orphans right,  
Where so he heares that any doth confownd  
Them comfortlesse, through tyranny or  
might:

So is his soveraine honour raisde to hevens  
hight.'

## XV

His feeling wordes her feeble sence much  
pleased,

And softly sunck into her molten hart:  
Hart that is inly hurt is greatly eased  
With hope of thing that may allegge his  
smart;

For pleasing wordes are like to magick  
art,

That doth the charmed snake in slomber  
lay:

Such secrete ease felt gentle Britomart,  
Yet list the same efforce with faind gaine-  
say:

So dischord ofte in musick makes the  
sweeter lay:

## XVI

And sayd: 'Sir knight, these ydle termes  
forbeare,

And sith it is uneath to finde his haunt,  
Tell me some markes by which he may ap-  
peare,

If chaunce I him encounter paravaunt;  
For perdy one shall other slay, or daunt:  
What shape, what shield, what armes, what  
steed, what stedd,

And what so else his person most may  
vaunt.'

All which the Redecrosse Knight to point  
aredd,

And him in everie part before her fashioned



## XVII

Yet him in everie part before she knew,  
How ever list her now her knowledge  
fayne,  
Sith him whylome in Brytayne she did vew,  
To her revealed in a mirrhour playne,  
Whereof did grow her first engrafted payne,  
Whose root and stalke so bitter yet did  
taste,  
That, but the fruit more sweetnes did con-  
tayne,  
Her wretched dayes in dolour she mote  
waste,  
And yield the pray of love to lothsome  
death at last.

## XVIII

By straunge occasion she did him behold,  
And much more straungely gan to love his  
sight,  
As it in bookes hath written beene of old.  
In Deheubarth, that now South-Wales is  
hight,  
What time King Ryence raign'd and dealed  
right,  
The great magitien Merlin had deviz'd,  
By his deepe science and hell-dreaded  
might,  
A looking glasse, right wondrously aguiz'd,  
Whose vertues through the wyde worlde  
soone were solenniz'd.

## XIX

It vertue had to shew in perfect sight  
What ever thing was in the world contaynd,  
Betwixt the lowest earth and hevens hight,  
So that it to the looker appertaynd;  
What ever foe had wrought, or frend had  
faynd,  
Therein discovered was, ne ought mote pas,  
Ne ought in secret from the same remaynd;  
Forthy it round and hollow shaped was,  
Like to the world it selfe, and seemd a  
world of glas.

## XX

Who wonders not, that reades so wonder-  
ous worke?  
But who does wonder, that has red the  
towre,  
Wherein th' Aegyptian Phao long did lurke  
From all mens vew, that none might her  
discoure,  
Yet she might all men vew out of her  
bowre?

Great Ptolomæe it for his lemans sake  
Ybuidled all of glasse, by magicke powre,  
And also it impregnable did make;  
Yet when his love was false, he with a  
peaze it brake.

## XXI

Such was the glassy globe, that Merlin  
made,  
And gave unto King Ryence for his gard,  
That never foes his kingdome might in-  
vade,  
But he it knew at home before he hard  
Tydings thereof, and so them still debar'd.  
It was a famous present for a prince,  
And worthy worke of infinite reward,  
That treasons could bewray, and foes con-  
vince:  
Happy this realme, had it remayned ever  
since!

## XXII

One day it fortun'd fayre Britomart  
Into her fathers closet to repayre;  
For nothing he from her reserv'd apart,  
Being his onely daughter and his hayre:  
Where when she had espyde that mirrhour  
fayre,  
Her selfe awhile therein she vewd in vaine;  
Tho her avizing of the vertues rare  
Which thereof spoken were, she gan againe  
Her to bethinke of that mote to her selfe  
pertaine.

## XXIII

But as it falleth, in the gentlest harts  
Imperious Love hath highest set his throne,  
And tyrannizeth in the bitter smarts  
Of them that to him buxome are and prone:  
So thought this mayd (as maydens use to  
done)  
Whom fortune for her husband would allot;  
Not that she lusted after any one,  
For she was pure from blame of sinfull blot,  
Yet wist her life at last must lincke in that  
same knot.

## XXIV

Eftsoones there was presented to her eye  
A comely knight, all arm'd in complete wize,  
Through whose bright ventayle, lifted up  
on hye,  
His manly face, that did his foes agrize,  
And frends to termes of gentle truce en-  
tize.

Lookt foorth, as Phœbus face out of the east  
Betwixt two shady mountaynes doth arise:  
Portly his person was, and much increast  
Through his heroicke grace and honorable  
gest.

## XXV

His crest was covered with a couchant  
hounnd,  
And all his armour seemd of antique mould,  
But wondrous massy and assured sounnd,  
And round about yfretted all with gold,  
In which there written was, with cyphres  
old,  
*Achilles armes, which Arthegall did win.*  
And on his shield enveloped sevenfold  
He bore a crowned litle ermilin,  
That deckt the azure field with her fayre  
pouldred skin.

## XXVI

The damzell well did vew his personage,  
And liked well, ne further fastned not,  
But went her way; ne her unguilty age  
Did weene, unwares, that her unlucky lot  
Lay hidden in the bottome of the pot:  
Of hurt unwist most daunger doth redound:  
But the false archer, which that arrowshot  
So slyly that she did not feele the wound,  
Did smyle full smoothly at her weettlesse  
wofull stound.

## XXVII

Thenceforth the fether in her lofty crest,  
Ruffed of love, gan lowly to availe,  
And her prowd portauance and her princely  
gest,  
With which she earst triumphed, now did  
quaile:  
Sad, solemne, sowre, and full of fancies  
fraile  
She woxe; yet wist she nether how, nor  
why;  
She wist not, silly mayd, what she did aile,  
Yet wist she was not well at ease perdy,  
Yet thought it was not love, but some mel-  
ancholy.

## XXVIII

So soone as Night had with her pallid hew  
Defaste the beautie of the shyning skye,  
And reft from men the worldes desired vew,  
She with her nourse adowne to sleepe did  
lye;  
But sleepe full far away from her did fly:

In stead thereof sad sighes and sorrowes  
deepe  
Kept watch and ward about her warily,  
That nought she did but wayle, and often  
steepe  
Her dainty couch with teares, which closely  
she did weepe.

## XXIX

And if that any drop of slombring rest  
Did chaunce to still into her weary spright,  
When feeble nature felt her selfe opprest,  
Streight way with dreames, and with fantas-  
tick sight  
Of dreadfull things, the same was put to  
flight,  
That oft out of her bed she did astart,  
As one with vew of ghastly feends affright:  
Tho gan she to renew her former smart,  
And thinke of that fayre visage, written in  
her hart.

## XXX

One night, when she was tost with such un-  
rest,  
Her aged nourse, whose name was Glauce  
hight,  
Feeling her leape out of her loathed nest,  
Betwixt her feeble armes her quickly keight,  
And downe againe in her warme bed her  
dight:  
' Ah ! my deare daughter, ah ! my dearest  
dread,  
What uncouth fit,' sayd she, ' what evill  
plight,  
Hath thee opprest, and with sad dreary-  
head  
Chaunged thy lively cheare, and living made  
thee dead ?

## XXXI

' For not of nought these suddein ghastly  
feares  
All night afflict thy naturall repose;  
And all the day, when as thine equall peares  
Their fit disports with faire delight doe  
chose,  
Thou in dull corners doest thy selfe inclose,  
Ne tastest princes pleasures, ne doest  
spred  
Abroad thy fresh youths fayrest flowre, but  
lose  
Both leafe and fruite, both too untimely  
shed,  
As one in wilfull bale for ever buried.

## XXXII

'The time that mortall men their weary  
cares

Do lay away, and all wilde beastes do rest,  
And every river eke his course forbear,es,  
Then doth this wicked evill thee infest,  
And rive with thousand throbs thy thrilled  
brest;

Like an huge Aetn' of deepe engulfed  
gryefe,  
Sorrow is heaped in thy hollow chest,  
Whence foorth it breakes in sighes and an-  
guish ryfe,  
As smoke and sulphure mingled with con-  
fused stryfe.

## XXXIII

'Ay me! how much I feare least love it  
bee!

But if that love it be, as sure I read  
By known signes and passions which I  
see,

Be it worthy of thy race and royall sead,  
Then I avow by this most sacred head  
Of my deare foster childe, to ease thy  
griefe,

And win thy will: therefore away doe  
dread;

For death nor daunger from thy dew re-  
liefe

Shall me debarre: tell me, therefore, my  
liefest liefe.'

## XXXIV

So having sayd, her twixt her armes twaine  
Shee streightly straynd, and colled tenderly,  
And every trenbling joynt and every vaine  
Shee softly felt, and rubbed busily,  
To doe the frozen cold away to fly;  
And her faire deawy eies with kisses deare  
Shee ofte did bathe, and ofte againe did  
dry;

And ever her importund, not to feare  
To let the secret of her hart to her appeare.

## XXXV

The damzell pauzd, and then thus fear-  
fully:

'Ah! nurse, what needeth thee to eke my  
paine?

Is not enough that I alone doe dye,  
But it must doubled bee with death of  
twaine?

For nought for me but death there doth  
remaine.'

'O daughter deare,' said she, 'despeire no  
whit;

For never sore, but might a salve obtaine:  
That blinded god, which hath ye blindly  
smit,

Another arrow hath your lovers hart to hit.'

## XXXVI

'But mine is not,' quoth she, 'like other  
wound;

For which no reason can finde remedy.'

'Was never such, but mote the like be  
fownd,'

Said she, 'and though no reason may apply  
Salve to your sore, yet love can higher  
stye

Then reasons reach, and oft hath wonders  
donue.'

'But neither god of love nor god of skye  
Can doe,' said she, 'that which cannot be  
donne.'

'Things ofte impossible,' quoth she, 'seeme  
ere begonne.'

## XXXVII

'These idle wordes,' said she, 'doe nought  
aswage

My stubborne smart, but more annoiaunce  
breed:

For no no usuall fire, no usuall rage  
Yt is, O nourse, which on my life doth feed,  
And sucks the blood which from my hart  
doth bleed.

But since thy faithfull zeale lets me not hyde  
My crime, (if crime it be) I will it reed.  
Nor prince, nor pere it is, whose love hath  
gryde

My feeble brest of late, and launched this  
wound wyde.

## XXXVIII

'Nor man it is, nor other living wight;  
For then some hope I might unto me draw;  
But th' only shade and semblant of a knight,  
Whose shape or person yet I never saw,  
Hath me subjected to Loves cruell law:  
The same one day, as me misfortune led,  
I in my fathers wondrous mirrhour saw,  
And, pleased with that seeming goodly-hed,  
Unwares the hidden hooke with baite I swal-  
lowed.

## XXXIX

'Sithens it hath infixed faster hold  
Within my bleeding bowells, and so sore



Now ranckleth in this same fraile fleshly  
mould,  
That all mine entrailes flow with poisonous  
gore,  
And th' ulcer groweth daily more and more;  
Ne can my ronning sore finde remedee,  
Other then my hard fortune to deplore,  
And languish as the leafe falm from the  
tree,  
Till death make one end of my daies and  
miseree.'

## XL

'Daughter,' said she, 'what need ye be dis-  
mayd,  
Or why make ye such monster of your  
minde?  
Of much more uncouth thing I was affrayd;  
Of filthy lust, contrary unto kinde:  
But this affection nothing straunge I finde;  
For who with reason can you aye reprove,  
To love the semblaunt pleasing most your  
minde,  
And yield your heart whence ye cannot re-  
move?  
No guilt in you, but in the tyranny of Love.'

## XLI

'Not so th' Arabian Myrrhe did sett her  
mynd,  
Nor so did Biblis spend her pining hart,  
But lov'd their native flesh against al kynd,  
And to their purpose used wicked art:  
Yet playd Pasiphaë a more monstrous part,  
That lov'd a bul, and learnd a beast to  
bee:  
Such shamefull lusts who loaths not, which  
depart  
From course of nature and of modestee?  
Swete Love such lewdnes bands from his  
faire companee.'

## XLII

'But thine, my deare, (welfare thy heart,  
my deare)  
Though straunge beginning had, yet fixed is  
On one that worthy may perhaps appeare;  
And certes seemes bestowed not amis:  
Joy thereof have thou and eternall blis.'  
With that upleaning on her elbow weake,  
Her alabaster brest she soft did kis,  
Which all that while shee felt to pant and  
quake,  
As it an earth-quake were: at last she thus  
bespake:

## XLIII

'Beldaine, your words doe worke me litle  
ease;  
For though my love be not so lewdly bent  
As those ye blame, yet may it nought ap-  
pease  
My raging smart, ne ought my flame relent,  
But rather doth my helpelesse grieve aug-  
ment.  
For they, how ever shamefull and unkinde,  
Yet did possesse their horrible intent:  
Short end of sorowes they therby did finde;  
So was their fortune good, though wicked  
were their minde.'

## XLIV

'But wicked fortune mine, though minde be  
good,  
Can have no end, nor hope of my desire,  
But feed on shadowes, whiles I die for  
food,  
And like a shadow wexe, whiles with entire  
Affection I doe languish and expire.  
I, fonder then Cephisus foolish chyld,  
Who, having vewed in a fountaine shere  
His face, was with the love thereof be-  
guyld;  
I, fonder, love a shade, the body far exyld.'

## XLV

'Nought like,' quoth shee, 'for that same  
wretched boy  
Was of him selfe the ydle paramoure,  
Both love and lover, without hope of  
joy;  
For which he faded to a watry flowre.  
But better fortune thine, and better howre,  
Which lov'st the shadow of a warlike  
knight;  
No shadow, but a body hath in powre:  
That body, wheresoever that it light,  
May learned be by cyphers, or by magicke  
might.'

## XLVI

'But if thou may with reason yet repress  
The growing evill, ere it strength have  
gott,  
And thee abandond wholly doe possesse,  
Against it strongly strive, and yield thee  
nott,  
Til thou in open fielde adowne be smott.  
But if the passion mayster thy fraile might,  
So that needs love or death must bee thy  
lott,

Then I avow to thee, by wrong or right  
To compas thy desire, and find that loved  
knight.'

## XLVII

Her chearefull words much cheard the  
feeble spright  
Of the sicke virgin, that her downe she  
layd  
In her warme bed to sleepe, if that she  
might;  
And the old-woman carefully displayd  
The clothes about her round with busy ayd,  
So that at last a litle creeping sleepe  
Surprisd her sence. Shee, therewith well  
apayd,  
The dronken lamp down in the oyl did  
steepe,  
And sett her by to watch, and sett her by  
to weepe.

## XLVIII

Earely the morrow next, before that day  
His joyous face did to the world revele,  
They both uprose and tooke their ready way  
Unto the church, their praiers to appele,  
With great devotion, and with litle zeale:  
For the faire damzell from the holy herse  
Her love-sicke hart to other thoughts did  
steale;  
And that old dame said many an idle verse,  
Out of her daughters hart fond fancies to  
reverse.

## XLIX

Retourned home, the royall infant fell  
Into her former fitt; forwhy no powre  
Nor guidaunce of her selfe in her did dwell.  
But th' aged nourse, her calling to her  
bowre,  
Had gathered rew, and savine, and the  
flowre  
Of camphora, and calamint, and dill,  
All which she in a earthen pot did poure,  
And to the brim with colt wood did it fill,  
And many drops of milk and blood through  
it did spill.

## L

Then, taking thrise three heares from of her  
head,  
Them trebly breaded in a threefold lace,  
And round about the pots mouth bound the  
thread,  
And after having whispered a space

Certein sad words, with hollow voice and  
bace,  
Shee to the virgin sayd, thrise sayd she itt:  
'Come, daughter, come, come; spit upon my  
face,  
Spitt thrise upon me, thrise upon me spitt;  
Th' uneven number for this busines is most  
fitt.'

## LI

That sayd, her rownd about she from her  
turnd,  
She turned her contrary to the sunne,  
Thrise she her turnd contrary, and returnd  
All contrary, for she the right did shunne,  
And ever what she did was streight un-  
donne.  
So thought she to undoe her daughters love:  
But love, that is in gentle brest begonne,  
No ydle charmes so lightly may remove;  
That well can witnesse, who by tryall it  
does prove.

## LII

Ne ought it mote the noble mayd avayle,  
Ne slake the fury of her cruell flame,  
But that shee still did waste, and still did  
wayle,  
That through long languour and hart-burn-  
ing brame  
She shortly like a pyned ghost became,  
Which long hath waited by the Stygian  
strond.  
That when old Glauce saw, for feare least  
blame  
Of her miscarriage should in her be fond,  
She wist not how t' amend, nor how it to  
withstond.

## CANTO III

Merlin bewrayes to Britomart  
The state of Arthegall:  
And shews the famous progeny,  
Which from them springen shall.

## I

Most sacred fyre, that burnest mightily  
In living brests, ykindled first above,  
Emongst th' eternall spheres and lamping  
sky,  
And thence pourd into men, which mer  
call Love;  
Not that same which doth base affection  
move

In brutish mindes, and filthy lust inflame,  
But that sweete fit that doth true beautie  
love,  
And choseth Vertue for his dearest dame,  
Whence spring all noble deedes and never  
dying fame:

## II

Well did antiquity a god thee deeme,  
That over mortall mindes hast so great  
might,  
To order them as best to thee doth seeme,  
And all their actions to direct aright:  
The fatall purpose of divine foresight  
Thou doest effect in destined descents,  
Through deepe impression of thy secret  
might,  
And stirrest up th' heroes high intents,  
Which the late world admyres for wondrous  
moniments.

## III

But thy dredd dartes in none doe triumph  
more,  
Ne braver prooffe, in any, of thy powre  
Shew'dst thou, then in this royall maid of  
yore,  
Making her seeke an unknowne paramoure,  
From the worlds end, through many a bit-  
ter stowre:  
From whose two loynes thou afterwarde  
did rayse  
Most famous fruites of matrimoniall bowre,  
Which through the earth have spreadd their  
living prayse,  
That Fame in tromp of gold eternally dis-  
playes.

## IV

Begin then, O my dearest sacred dame,  
Daughter of Phæbus and of Memorye,  
That doest ennoble with immortall name  
The warlike worthies, from antiquitye,  
In thy great volume of eternitie:  
Begin, O Clio, and recount from hence  
My glorious Soveraines goodly auncestrye,  
Till that by dew degrees and long protense,  
Thou have it lastly brought unto her Ex-  
cellence.

## V

Full many wayes within her troubled mind  
Old Glauce cast, to cure this ladies grieve:  
Full many waies she sought, but none could  
find,

Nor herbes, nor charmes, nor counsel, that  
is chiefe  
And choisest med'cine for sick harts reliefe:  
Forthy great care she tooke, and greater  
feare,  
Least that it should her turne to fowle re-  
prie  
And sore reproch, when so her father deare  
Should of his dearest daughters hard mis-  
fortune heare.

## VI

At last she her avisde, that he which made  
That mirrhour, wherein the sicke damosell  
So straungely vewed her straunge lovers  
shade,  
To weete, the learned Merlin, well could tell,  
Under what coast of heaven the man did  
dwell,  
And by what means his love might best be  
wrought:  
For though beyond the Africk Ismael  
Or th' Indian Peru he were, she thought  
Him forth through infinite endeavour to have  
sought.

## VII

Forthwith them selves disguising both in  
straunge  
And base atyre, that none might them be-  
wray,  
To Maridunum, that is now by chaunge  
Of name Cayr-Merdin cald, they tooke their  
way:  
There the wise Merlin whylome wont (they  
say)  
To make his wonne, low underneath the  
ground,  
In a deepe delve, farre from the vew of  
day,  
That of no living wight he mote be found,  
When so he counseld with his sprights en-  
compast round.

## VIII

And if thou ever happen that same way  
To travell, go to see that dreadfull place:  
It is an hideous hollow cave (they say)  
Under a rock, that lyes a litle space  
From the swift Barry, tomling downe apace  
Emongst the woody hilles of Dynevowre:  
But dare thou not, I charge, in any cace,  
To enter into that same balefull bowre,  
For feare the cruell feendes should thee  
unwares devowre.



## IX

But standing high aloft, low lay thine eare,  
 And there such ghastly noyse of yron  
 chaines  
 And brasen caudrons thou shalt rombling  
 heare,  
 Which thousand sprights with long enduring  
 paines  
 Doe tosse, that it will stonn thy feeble  
 braines;  
 And oftentimes great grones, and grievous  
 stownds,  
 When too huge toyle and labour them con-  
 straines,  
 And oftentimes loud strokes, and ringing  
 sowndes,  
 From under that deepe rock most horribly  
 rebowndes.

## X

The cause, some say, is this: A litle whyle  
 Before that Merlin dyde, he did intend  
 A brasen wall in compas to compyle  
 About Cairmardin, and did it commend  
 Unto these sprights, to bring to perfect end.  
 During which worke the Lady of the Lake,  
 Whom long he lov'd, for him in hast did  
 send;  
 Who, thereby forst his workemen to for-  
 sake,  
 Them bownd, till his retourne, their labour  
 not to slake.

## XI

In the meane time, through that false ladies  
 traine,  
 He was surprisd, and buried under beare,  
 Ne ever to his worke returnd againe:  
 Nath'lesse those feends may not their work  
 forbear,  
 So greatly his commandement they feare,  
 But there doe toyle and traveile day and  
 night,  
 Untill that brasen wall they up doe reare:  
 For Merlin had in magick more insight  
 Then ever him before or after living wight.

## XII

For he by wordes could call out of the sky  
 Both sunne and moone, and make them  
 him obay:  
 The land to sea, and sea to maineland dry,  
 And darksom night he eke could turne to  
 day:  
 Huge hostes of men he could alone dismay,

And hostes of men of meanest thinges could  
 frame,  
 When so him list his enimies to fray:  
 That to this day, for terror of his fame,  
 The feends do quake, when any him to  
 them does name.

## XIII

And sooth, men say that he was not the  
 sonne  
 Of mortall syre or other living wight,  
 But wondrously begotten, and begonne  
 By false illusion of a guilefull spright  
 On a faire lady nonne, that whilome hight  
 Matilda, daughter to Pubidius,  
 Who was the lord of Mathraval by right,  
 And coosen unto King Ambrosius:  
 Whence he indued was with skill so mer-  
 veilous.

## XIV

They, here ariving, staid a while without,  
 Ne durst adventure rashly in to wend,  
 But of their first intent gan make new dout,  
 For dread of daunger, which it might por-  
 tend:  
 Untill the hardy mayd (with love to frend)  
 First entering, the dreadfull mage there  
 fownd  
 Deepe busied bout worke of wondrous end,  
 And writing straunge characters in the  
 grownd,  
 With which the stubborne feendes he to his  
 service bownd.

## XV

He nought was moved at their entraunce  
 bold,  
 For of their comming well he wist afore;  
 Yet list them bid their businesse to un-  
 fold,  
 As if ought in this world in secrete store  
 Were from him hidden, or unknowne of  
 yore.  
 Then Glauce thus: 'Let not it thee offend,  
 That we thus rashly through thy darksom  
 dore  
 Unwares have prest: for either fatall end,  
 Or other mightie cause, us two did hether  
 send.'

## XVI

He bad tell on; and then she thus began:  
 'Now have three moones with borrowd  
 brothers light

Thrise shined faire, and thrise seemd dim  
 and wan,  
 Sith a sore evill, which this virgin bright  
 Tormenteth, and doth plunge in dolefull  
 plight,  
 First rooting tooke; but what thing it mote  
 bee,  
 Or whence it sprong, I can not read aright:  
 But this I read, that, but if remedee  
 Thou her afford, full shortly I her dead  
 shall see.'

## XVII

Therewith th'enchaunter softly gan to smyle  
 At her smooth speeches, weeting inly well  
 That she to him dissembled womanish  
 guyle,  
 And to her said: 'Beldame, by that ye tell,  
 More neede of leach-crafte hath your damo-  
 zell,  
 Then of my skill: who helpe may have els-  
 where,  
 In vaine seekes wonders out of magick  
 spell.'  
 Th' old woman vox half blanck those  
 wordes to heare;  
 And yet was loth to let her purpose plaine  
 appeare;

## XVIII

And to him said: 'Yf any leaches skill,  
 Or other learned meanes, could have redrest  
 This my deare daughters deepe engrafted  
 ill,  
 Certes I should be loth thee to molest:  
 But this sad evill, which doth her infest,  
 Doth course of naturall cause farre exceed,  
 And housed is within her hollow brest,  
 That either seemes some cursed witches  
 deed,  
 Or evill spright, that in her doth such tor-  
 ment breed.'

## XIX

The wisard could no lenger beare her bord,  
 But brusting forth in laughter, to her sayd:  
 'Glauce, what needes this colourable word,  
 To cloke the cause that hath it selfe be-  
 wrayd?  
 Ne ye, fayre Britomartis, thus arayd,  
 More hidden are then sunne in cloudy vele;  
 Whom thy good fortune, having fate obayd,  
 Hath hether brought, for succour to appele:  
 The which the Powres to thee are pleased  
 to revele.'

## XX

The doubtfull mayd, seeing her selfe de-  
 seryde,  
 Was all abasht, and her pure yvory  
 Into a cleare carnation suddeine dyde;  
 As fayre Aurora, rysing hastily,  
 Doth by her blushing tell that she did lye  
 All night in old Tithonus frosen bed,  
 Whereof she seemes ashamed inwardly.  
 But her olde nurse was nought dishartened,  
 But vauntage made of that which Merlin  
 had'ared;

## XXI

And sayd: 'Sith then thou knowest all our  
 grieve,  
 (For what doest not thou knowe?) of grace,  
 I pray,  
 Pitty our playnt, and yield us meet reliefe.'  
 With that the prophet still awhile did stay,  
 And then his spirite thus gan foorth dis-  
 play:  
 'Most noble virgin, that by fatall lore  
 Hast learn'd to love, let no whit thee dis-  
 may  
 The hard beginne that meetes thee in the  
 dore,  
 And with sharpe fits thy tender hart op-  
 presseth sore.

## XXII

'For so must all things excellent begin,  
 And eke enrooted deepe must be that tree,  
 Whose big embodied braunches shall not  
 lin,  
 Till they to heavens hight forth stretched bee.  
 For from thy wombe a famous progenee  
 Shall spring, out of the auncient Trojan  
 blood,  
 Which shall revive the sleeping memoree  
 Of those same antique peres, the heavens  
 brood,  
 Which Greeke and Asian rivers stayned with  
 their blood.

## XXIII

'Renowmed kings and sacred emperours,  
 Thy fruitfull offspring, shall from thee de-  
 scend;  
 Brave captaines and most mighty warriours,  
 That shall their conquests through all lands  
 extend,  
 And their decayed kingdomes shall amend:  
 The feeble Britons, broken with long warre,  
 They shall upreare, and mightily defend

Against their forren foe, that conunes from  
farre,  
Till universall peace compound all civill  
jarre.

## XXIV

‘It was not, Britomart, thy wandring eye,  
Glauncing unwares in charmed looking glas,  
But the streight course of heavenly destiny,  
Led with Eternall Providence, that has  
Guyded thy glaunce, to bring His will to  
pas:

Ne is thy fate, ne is thy fortune ill,  
To love the prowtest knight that ever was:  
Therefore submit thy wayes unto His will,  
And doe, by all dew meanes, thy destiny  
fulfill.’

## XXV

‘But read,’ saide Glaunce, ‘thou magitian,  
What meanes shall she out seeke, or what  
waies take?

How shall she know, how shall she finde  
the man?

Or what needes her to toyle, sith Fates can  
make

Way for themselves, their purpose to per-  
take?’

Then Merlin thus: ‘Indeede the Fates are  
firme,

And may not shrink, though all the world  
do shake:

Yet ought mens good endeavours them con-  
firme,

And guyde the heavenly causes to their con-  
stant terme.

## XXVI

‘The man, whom heavens have ordaynd to  
bee

The spouse of Britomart, is Arthegall:  
He wonneth in the land of Fayeree,  
Yet is no Fary borne, ne sib at all  
To Elfes, but sprong of seed terrestriall,  
And whylome by false Faries stolne away,  
Whyles yet in infant cradle he did crall;  
Ne other to himselfe is knowne this day,  
But that he by an Elfe was gotten of a Fay.

## XXVII

‘But sooth he is the sonne of Gorlois,  
And brother unto Cador, Cornish king,  
And for his warlike feates renowned is,  
From where the day out of the sea doth  
spring

Untill the closure of the evening.  
From thence him, firmly bound with faith-  
full band,  
To this his native soyle thou baeke shalt  
bring,  
Strongly to ayde his countrey to withstand  
The powre of forreine Paynims, which in-  
vade thy land.

## XXVIII

‘Great ayd thereto his mighty puissaunce  
And dreaded name shall give in that sad  
day:

Where also prooffe of thy prow valiaunce  
Thon then shalt make, t’increase thy lovers  
pray.

Long time ye both in armes shall beare  
great sway,

Till thy wombes burden thee from them do  
call,

And his last fate him from thee take away,  
Too rathe cut off by practise criminall

Of secrete foes, that him shall make in mis-  
chiefe fall.

## XXIX

‘With thee yet shall he leave, for memory  
Of his late puissaunce, his ymage dead,  
That living him in all activity  
To thee shall represent. He from the head  
Of his coosen Constantius, without dread,  
Shall take the crowne, that was his fathers  
right,

And therewith crowne himselfe in th’ others  
stead:

Then shall he issew forth with dreadfull  
might,

Against his Saxon foes in bloody field to  
fight.

## XXX

‘Like as a lyon, that in drowsie cave  
Hath long time slept, himselfe so shall he  
shake,

And comming forth, shall spread his banner  
brave

Over the troubled South, that it shall make  
The warlike Mertians for feare to quake:

Thrise shall he fight with them, and twise  
shall win,

But the third time shall fayre accordaunce  
make:

And if he then with victorie can lin,  
He shall his dayes with peace bring to his  
earthly in.



## XXXI

‘His sonne, hight Vortipore, shall him suc-  
ceede  
In kingdome, but not in felicity;  
Yet shall he long time warre with happy  
speed,  
And with great honour many batteills try:  
But at the last to th’ importunity  
Of froward fortune shall be forst to yield.  
But his sonne Malgo shall full mightily  
Avenge his fathers losse, with speare and  
shield,  
And his proud foes discomfit in victorious  
field.

## XXXII

‘Behold the man! and tell me, Britomart,  
If ay more goodly creature thou didst see:  
How like a gyaunt in each manly part  
Beares he himselfe with portly majestee,  
That one of th’ old heroes seemes to bee!  
He the six islands, comprovinciall  
In auncient times unto Great Britaine,  
Shall to the same reduce, and to him call  
Their sondry kings to doe their homage  
severall.

## XXXIII

‘All which his sonne Careticus awhile  
Shall well defend, and Saxons powre sup-  
presse,  
Untill a straunger king, from unknowne  
soyle  
Arriving, him with multitude oppresse;  
Great Gormond, having with huge mighti-  
nesse  
Ireland subdewd, and therein fixt his throne,  
Like a swift otter, fell through empti-  
nesse,  
Shall overswim the sea with many one  
Of his Norveyses, to assist the Britons fone.

## XXXIV

‘He in his furie all shall overronne,  
And holy church with faithlesse handes de-  
face,  
That thy sad people, utterly fordonne,  
Shall to the utmost mountaines fly apace:  
Was never so great waste in any place,  
Nor so fowle outrage doen by living men:  
For all thy citties they shall sacke and race,  
And the greene grasse that groweth they  
shall bren,  
That even the wilde beast shall dy in starved  
den.

## XXXV

‘Whiles thus thy Britons doe in languour  
pine,  
Proud Etheldred shall from the North arise,  
Serving th’ ambitious will of Angustine,  
And passing Dee with hardy enterprise,  
Shall backe repulse the valiaunt Brockwell  
twise,  
And Bangor with massacred martyrs fill;  
But the third time shall rewe his foolhardise:  
For Cadwan, pitying his peoples ill,  
Shall stoutly him defeat, and thousand  
Saxons kill.

## XXXVI

‘But after him, Cadwallin mightily  
On his sonne Edwin all those wrongs shall  
wreake;  
Ne shall avails the wicked sorcery  
Of false Pellite, his purposes to breake,  
But him shall slay, and on a gallows bleak  
Shall give th’ enchaunter his unhappy hire:  
Then shall the Britons, late dismayd and  
weake,  
From their long vassallage gin to respire,  
And on their Paynim foes avenge their  
ranckled ire.

## XXXVII

‘Ne shall he yet his wrath so mitigate,  
Till both the sonnes of Edwin he have  
slayne,  
Offricke and Osricke, twinnes unfortunate,  
Both slaine in battaile upon Layburne  
playne,  
Together with the king of Louthiane,  
Hight Adin, and the king of Orkeny,  
Both joynt partakers of their fatall payne:  
But Penda, fearefull of like desteny,  
Shall yield him selfe his liegeman, and  
sweare fealty.

## XXXVIII

‘Him shall he make his fatall instrument,  
T’ afflict the other Saxons unsubdewd;  
He marching forth with fury insolent  
Against the good King Oswald, who, in-  
dewd  
With heavenly powre, and by angels res-  
kewd,  
Al holding crosses in their hands on hye,  
Shall him defeate withouten blood im-  
brewd:  
Of which that field for endlesse memory  
Shall Hevenfield be cald to all posterity.

## XXXIX

Whereat Cadwallin wroth, shall forth  
 issew,  
 And an huge hoste into Northumber lead,  
 With which he godly Oswald shall subdew,  
 And crowne with martiredome his sacred  
 head.  
 Whose brother Oswin, daunted with like  
 dread,  
 With price of silver shall his kingdome buy,  
 And Penda, seeking him adowne to tread,  
 Shall tread adowne, and doe him fowly dye,  
 But shall with guifts his lord Cadwallin  
 pacify.

## XL

Then shall Cadwallin die, and then the  
 raine  
 Of Britons eke with him attonce shall dye;  
 Ne shall the good Cadwallader, with paine  
 Or powre, be hable it to remedy,  
 When the full time, prefixt by destiny,  
 Shall be expird of Britons regiment:  
 For Heven it selfe shall their sucresse envy,  
 And them with plagues and murrins  
 pestilent  
 Consume, till all their warlike puissaunce  
 be spent.

## XLI

Yet after all these sorrowes, and huge  
 hills  
 Of dying people, during eight yeares space,  
 Cadwallader, not yielding to his ills,  
 From Armoricke, where long in wretched  
 cace  
 He liv'd, retourning to his native place,  
 Shall be by vision staide from his intent:  
 For th' Heavens have decreed to displace  
 The Britons for their sinnes dew punish-  
 ment,  
 And to the Saxons over-give their govern-  
 ment.

## XLII

Then woe, and woe, and everlasting woe,  
 Be to the Briton babe, that shalbe borne  
 To live in thraldome of his fathers foe!  
 Late king, now captive, late lord, now for-  
 lorne,  
 The worlds reproch, the cruell victors  
 scorne,  
 Banisht from princely bowre to wasteful  
 wood!  
 O! who shal helpe me to lament and mourne

The royall seed, the antique Trojan blood,  
 Whose empire lenger here then ever any  
 stood?'

## XLIII

The damzell was full deepe empassioned,  
 Both for his grieve, and for her peoples sake,  
 Whose future woes so plaine he fashioned,  
 And sighing sore, at length him thus be-  
 spake:  
 'Ah! but will Hevens fury never slake,  
 Nor vengeaunce huge relent it selfe at last?  
 Will not long misery late mercy make,  
 But shall their name for ever be defaste,  
 And quite from of the earth their memory  
 be raste?'

## XLIV

'Nay, but the terme,' sayd he, 'is limited,  
 That in this thraldome Britons shall abide,  
 And the just revolution measured,  
 That they as straungers shalbe notifide:  
 For twise fowre hundreth yeares shalbe  
 supplide,  
 Ere they to former rule restor'd shalbee,  
 And their importune fates all satisfide:  
 Yet during this their most obscuritee,  
 Their beames shall ofte breake forth, that  
 men them faire may see.

## XLV

For Rhodoricke, whose surname shalbe  
 Great,  
 Shall of him selfe a brave ensample shew,  
 That Saxon kings his frendship shall in-  
 treat;  
 And Howell Dha shall goodly well indew  
 The salvage minds with skill of just and  
 trew;  
 Then Griffyth Conan also shall up reare  
 His dreaded head, and the old sparkes re-  
 new  
 Of native corage, that his foes shall feare  
 Least back againe the kingdom he from  
 them should beare.

## XLVI

Ne shall the Saxons selves all peaceably  
 Enjoy the crowne, which they from Britons  
 wonne  
 First ill, and after ruled wickedly:  
 For ere two hundred yeares be full out-  
 ronne,  
 There shall a Raven, far from rising sunne,  
 With his wide wings upon them fiercely fly,

And bid his faithlesse chickens overonne  
The fruitfull plaines, and with fell cruelty,  
In their avenge, tread downe the victors  
surquedry.

## XLVII

‘Yet shall a third both these and thine sub-  
dew:  
There shall a Lion from the sea-bord wood  
Of Neustria come roring, with a crew  
Of hungry whelpes, his battailous bold  
brood,  
Whose clawes were newly dipt in cruddy  
blood,  
That from the Daniske tyrants head shall  
rend  
Th’ usurped crowne, as if that he were  
wood,  
And the spoile of the countrey conquered  
Emongst his young ones shall divide with  
bountyhed.

## XLVIII

‘Tho, when the terme is full accomplishid,  
There shall a sparke of fire, which hath  
long-while  
Bene in his ashes raked up and hid,  
Bee freshly kindled in the fruitfull ile  
Of Mona, where it lurked in exile;  
Which shall breake forth into bright burning  
flame,  
And reach into the house that beares the  
stile  
Of roiall majesty and soveraine name:  
So shall the Briton blood their crowne  
agayn reclame.

## XLIX

‘Thenceforth eternall union shall be made  
Betweene the nations different afore,  
And sacred Peace shall lovingly persuade  
The warlike minds to learne her goodly  
lore,  
And civile armes to exercise no more:  
Then shall a royall Virgin raine, which shall  
Stretch her white rod over the Belgicke  
shore,  
And the great Castle smite so sore with all,  
That it shall make him shake, and shortly  
learn to fall.

## L

‘But yet the end is not.—’ There Merlin  
stayd,  
As overcomen of the spirites powre,

Or other ghastly spectacle dismayd,  
That secretly he saw, yet note discoure:  
Which sudden fitt and halfe extaticke stoure  
When the two fearefull women saw, they  
grew  
Greatly confused in behaveoure:  
At last the fury past, to former hew  
Hee turnd againe, and chearfull looks as  
earst did shew.

## LI

Then, when them selves they well in-  
structed had  
Of all that needed them to be inquired,  
They both, conceiving hope of comfort glad,  
With lighter hearts unto their home re-  
tird;  
Where they in secret counsell close con-  
spird,  
How to effect so hard an enterprize,  
And to possesse the purpose they desird:  
Now this, now that twixt them they did  
devize,  
And diverse plots did frame, to maske in  
strange disguise.

## LII

At last the nurse in her foolhardy wit  
Conceivd a bold devise, and thus bespake:  
‘Daughter, I deeme that counsel aye most  
fit,  
That of the time doth dew advantage  
take:  
Ye see that good King Uther now doth  
make  
Strong warre upon the Paynim brethren,  
hight  
Octa and Oza, whome hee lately brake  
Beside Cayr Verolame in victorious fight,  
That now all Britany doth burne in armes  
bright.

## LIII

‘That therefore nought our passage may  
empeach,  
Let us in feigned armes our selves disguise,  
And our weake hands (whom need new  
strength shall teach)  
The dreadful speare and shield to exercize:  
Ne certes, daughter, that same warlike  
wize,  
I weene, would you misseeme; for ye beene  
tall  
And large of limbe t’ atchieve an hard em-  
prize,



Ne ought ye want, but skil, which practize  
small  
Wil bring, and shortly make you a mayd  
martiall.

## LIV

‘And sooth, it ought your corage much in-  
flame,  
To heare so often, in that royall hous,  
From whence to none inferior ye came,  
Bards tell of many women valorous,  
Which have full many feats adventurous  
Performd, in paragone of proudest men:  
The bold Bunduca, whose victorious  
Exploits made Rome to quake, stout  
Guendolen,  
Renowned Martia, and redoubted Emmi-  
len;

## LV

‘And that which more then all the rest  
may sway,  
Late dayes ensample, which these eyes be-  
held:  
In the last field before Menevia,  
Which Uther with those forrein pagans  
held,  
I saw a Saxon virgin, the which feld  
Great Ulfen thrise upon the bloody playne,  
And had not Carados her hand withheld  
From rash revenge, she had him surely  
slayne,  
Yet Carados himselve from her escapt with  
payne.’

## LVI

‘Ah! read,’ quoth Britomart, ‘how is she  
hight?’  
‘Fayre Angela,’ quoth she, ‘men do her call,  
No whit lesse fayre then terrible in fight:  
She bath the leading of a martiall  
And mightie people, dreaded more then all  
The other Saxons, which doe, for her sake  
And love, themselves of her name Angles  
call.  
Therefore, faire infant, her ensample make  
Unto thy selfe, and equall corage to thee  
take.’

## LVII

Her harty wordes so deepe into the mynd  
Of the yong damzell sunke, that great de-  
sire  
Of warlike armes in her forthwith they  
tynd,

And generous stout courage did inspyre,  
That she resolv’d, unweeting to her syre,  
Advent’rous knighthood on her selfe to  
don,

And counseld with her nourse, her maides  
attyre

To turne into a massy habergeon,  
And bad her all things put in readinesse  
anon.

## LVIII

Th’ old woman nought that needed did  
omit;

But all thinges did conveniently purway.  
It fortun’d (so time their turne did fitt)  
A band of Britons, ryding on forray  
Few dayes before, had gotten a great pray  
Of Saxon goods, emongst the which was  
seene

A goodly armour, and full rich aray,  
Which long’d to Angela, the Saxon queene,  
All fretted round with gold, and goodly  
wel beseene.

## LIX

The same, with all the other ornaments,  
King Ryence caus’d to be hanged by  
In his chiefe church, for endlesse moni-  
ments

Of his successe and gladfull victory:  
Of which her selfe avising readily,  
In th’ evening late old Glauce thether led  
Faire Britomart, and that same armory  
Downe taking, her therein appareled,  
Well as she might, and with brave bauld-  
rick garnished.

## LX

Beside those armes there stood a mightie  
speare,

Which Bladud made by magick art of yore,  
And usd the same in batteill aye to beare:  
Sith which it had beene here preserv’d in  
store,

For his great vertues proved long afore:  
For never wight so fast in sell could sit,  
But him perforce unto the ground it bore:  
Both speare she tooke and shield, which  
hong by it:

Both speare and shield of great powre, for  
her purpose fit.

## LXI

Thus when she had the virgin all arayd,  
Another harnesse, which did hang thereby.

About her selfe she dight, that the yong  
 mayd  
 She might in equall armes accompany,  
 And as her squire attend her carefully:  
 Tho to their ready steedes they clombe full  
 light,  
 And through back waies, that none might  
 them espy,  
 Covered with secret cloud of silent night,  
 Themselves they forth convoid, and passed  
 forward right.

## LXII

Ne rested they, till that to Faery Lond  
 They came, as Merlin them directed late:  
 Where meeting with this Redcrosse Knight,  
 she fond  
 Of diverse thinges discourses to dilate,  
 But most of Arthegall and his estate.  
 At last their wayes so fell, that they mote  
 part:  
 Then each to other well affectionate,  
 Friendship professed with unfained hart:  
 The Redcrosse Knight diverst, but forth  
 rode Britomart.

## CANTO IV

Bold Marinell of Britomart  
 Is throwne on the Rich Strond:  
 Faire Florimell of Arthure is  
 Long followed, but not fond.

## I

WHERE is the antique glory now become,  
 That whylome wont in wemen to appeare ?  
 Where be the brave atchievements doen by  
 some ?  
 Where be the batteilles, where the shield  
 and speare,  
 And all the conquests which them high did  
 reare,  
 That matter made for famous poets verse,  
 And boastfull men so oft abasht to heare ?  
 Beene they all dead, and laide in dolefull  
 herse ?  
 Or doen they onely sleepe, and shall againe  
 reverse ?

## II

If they be dead, then woe is me therefore :  
 But if they sleepe, O let them soone awake !  
 For all too long I burne with envy sore,  
 To heare the warlike feates which Homere  
 spake

Of bold Penthesilee, which made a lake  
 Of Greekish blood so ofte in Trojan plaine ;  
 But when I reade, how stout Debora strake  
 Proud Sisera, and how Camill' hath slaine  
 The huge Orsilochus, I swell with great  
 disdaine.

## III

Yet these, and all that els had puissaunce,  
 Cannot with noble Britomart compare,  
 Aswell for glorie of great valiaunce,  
 As for pure chastitie and vertue rare,  
 That all her goodly deedes do well declare.  
 Well worthe stock, from which the  
 branches sprong  
 That in late yeares so faire a blossome bare  
 As thee, O Queene, the matter of my song,  
 Whose lignage from this lady I derive along.

## IV

Who when, through speaches with the  
 Redcrosse Knight,  
 She learned had th' estate of Arthegall,  
 And in each point her selfe informd aright,  
 A frendly league of love perpetuall  
 She with him bound, and congé tooke withall.  
 Then he forth on his journey did proceede,  
 To seeke adventures which mote him befall,  
 And win him worship through his warlike  
 deed,  
 Which alwaies of his paines he made the  
 chiefest meed.

## V

But Britomart kept on her former course,  
 Ne ever dofte her armes, but all the way  
 Grew pensive through that amarous dis-  
 course,  
 By which the Redcrosse Knight did earst  
 display  
 Her lovers shape and chevalrous aray:  
 A thousand thoughts she fashiond in her  
 mind,  
 And in her feigning fancie did pourtray  
 Him such as fittest she for love could find,  
 Wise, warlike, personable, courteous, and  
 kind.

## VI

With such selfe-pleasing thoughts her  
 wound she fedd,  
 And thought so to beguile her grievous  
 smart;  
 But so her smart was much more grievous  
 bredd.

And the deepe wound more deep engord  
her hart,  
That nought but death her dolour mote  
depart.

So forth she rode without repose or rest,  
Searching all lands and each remotest part,  
Following the guydaunce of her blinded  
guest,  
Till that to the seacoast at length she her  
address.

## VII

There she alighted from her light-foot  
beast,  
And sitting downe upon the rocky shore,  
Badd her old squyre unlace her lofty creast:  
Tho, having vewd a while the surges hore,  
That gainst the craggy cliffs did loudly  
rore,  
And in their raging surquedry disdaynd  
That the fast earth affronted them so sore,  
And their devouring covetize restraynd,  
Thereat she sighed deepe, and after thus  
complaynd.

## VIII

‘Huge sea of sorrow and tempestuous griefe,  
Wherein my feeble barke is tossed long,  
Far from the hoped haven of reliefe,  
Why doe thy cruel billowes beat so strong,  
And thy moyst mountaynes each on others  
throng,  
Threatning to swallow up my fearefull lyfe?  
O! doe thy cruell wrath and sightfull  
wrong  
At length allay, and stint thy stormy stryfe,  
Which in these troubled bowels raignes  
and rageth ryfe.

## IX

‘For els my feeble vessell, crazd and crackt  
Through thy strong buffets and outrageous  
blowes,  
Cannot endure, but needes it must be wrackt  
On the rough rocks, or on the sandy shal-  
lowes,  
The whiles that Love it steres, and Fortune  
rowes:  
Love, my lewd pilott, hath a restlesse minde,  
And Fortune, boteswaine, no assurance  
knowes,  
But saile withouten starres gainst tyde and  
winde:  
How can they other doe, sith both are  
bold and blinde?

## X

‘Thou god of windes, that raignest in the  
seas,  
That raignest also in the continent,  
At last blow up some gentle gale of ease,  
The which may bring my ship, ere it be rent,  
Unto the gladsome port of her intent:  
Then, when I shall my selfe in safety see,  
A table, for eternall moniment  
Of thy great grace, and my great jeoparddee,  
Great Neptune, I avow to hallow unto thee.’

## XI

Then sighing softly sore, and inly deepe,  
She shut up all her plaint in privy griefe;  
For her great courage would not let her  
weepe;  
Till that old Glauce gan with sharpe re-  
prie  
Her to restraine, and give her good reliefe,  
Through hope of those which Merlin had  
her told  
Should of her name and nation be chiefe,  
And fetch their being from the sacred  
mould  
Of her immortall womb, to be in heaven  
enrold.

## XII

Thus as she her recomforted, she spyde  
Where far away one, all in armour bright,  
With hasty gallop towards her did ryde:  
Her dolour soone she ceast, and on her  
dight  
Her helmet, to her courser mounting light:  
Her former sorrow into sudden wrath,  
Both coosen passions of distroubled spright,  
Converting, forth she beates the dusty path:  
Love and despight attonce her courage kin-  
dled hath.

## XIII

As when a foggy mist hath overcast  
The face of heven, and the cleare ayre en-  
groste,  
The world in darkenes dwels, till that at  
last  
The watry southwinde, from the seabord  
coste  
Ublowing, doth disperse the vapour lo'ste,  
And poures it selfe forth in a stormy showre;  
So the fayre Britomart, having diselo'ste  
Her cloudy care into a wrathfull stowre,  
The mist of griefe dissolv'd did into ven-  
geance powre.



## XIV

Eftsoones her goodly shield addressing  
 fayre,  
 That mortall speare she in her hand did  
 take,  
 And unto battaill did her selfe prepayre.  
 The knight, approching, sternely her be-  
 spake:  
 ‘Sir knight, that doest thy voyage rashly  
 make  
 By this forbidden way in my despight,  
 Ne doest by others death ensample take,  
 I read thee soone retyre, whiles thou hast  
 might,  
 Least afterwards it be too late to take thy  
 flight.’

## XV

Ythrild with deepe disdaine of his proud  
 threat,  
 She shortly thus: ‘Fly they, that need to fly;  
 Wordes fearen babes: I meane not thee  
 entreat  
 To passe; but maugre thee will passe or  
 dy:’  
 Ne lenger stayd for th’ other to reply,  
 But with sharpe speare the rest made dearly  
 knowne.  
 Strongly the straunge knight ran, and stur-  
 dily  
 Strooke her full on the brest, that made  
 her downe  
 Decline her head, and touch her crouper  
 with her crown.

## XVI

But she againe him in the shield did smite  
 With so fierce furie and great puisaunce,  
 That through his threesquare seuchin per-  
 cing quite,  
 And through his mayled hauberque, by mis-  
 chance  
 The wicked steele through his left side did  
 glaunce:  
 Him so transfixed she before her bore  
 Beyond his croupe, the length of all her  
 launce,  
 Till, sadly soncing on the sandy shore,  
 He tumbled on an heape, and wallowd in  
 his gore.

## XVII

Like as the sacred oxe, that carelesse stands  
 With gilden hornes and flowry girlonds  
 crownd,

Proud of his dying honor and deare bandes,  
 Whiles th’ altars fume with frankincense  
 arownd,  
 All suddenly with mortall stroke astownd,  
 Doth groveling fall, and with his streaming  
 gore  
 Distaines the pillours and the holy grownd,  
 And the faire flowres that decked him  
 afore:  
 So fell proud Marinell upon the pretious  
 shore.

## XVIII

The martiall mayd stayd not him to la-  
 ment,  
 But forward rode, and kept her ready  
 way  
 Along the strond; which as she over-went,  
 She saw bestowed all with rich aray  
 Of pearles and pretious stones of great as-  
 say,  
 And all the gravell mixt with golden owre;  
 Whereat she wondred much, but would  
 not stay  
 For gold, or perles, or pretious stones an  
 howre,  
 But them despised all, for all was in her  
 powre.

## XIX

Whiles thus he lay in deadly stonishment,  
 Tydings hereof came to his mothers eare:  
 His mother was the blacke-browd Cymo-  
 ent,  
 The daughter of great Nereus, which did  
 beare  
 This warlike sonne unto an earthly peare,  
 The famous Dumarin; who on a day  
 Finding the nymph a sleepe in secret  
 wheare,  
 As he by chaunce did wander that same  
 way,  
 Was taken with her love, and by her closely  
 lay.

## XX

There he this knight of her begot, whom  
 borne  
 She, of his father, Marimell did name,  
 And in a rocky cave, as wight forlorne,  
 Long time she fostred up, till he became  
 A mighty man at armes, and mickle fame  
 Did get through great adventures by him  
 donne:  
 For never man he suffred by that same

Rich Strond to travell, whereas he did  
wonne,  
But that he must do battail with the sea-  
nymphes sonne.

## XXI

An hundred knights of honorable name  
He had subdew'd, and them his vassals  
made,  
That through all Farie Lond his noble fame  
Now blazed was, and feare did all invade,  
That none durst passen through that peril-  
ous glade.  
And to advancee his name and giory more,  
Her sea-god syre she dearely did perswade,  
T' endow her sonne with threasure and rich  
store,  
Bove all the somes that were of earthly  
wombes ybore.

## XXII

The god did graunt his daughters deare  
demaund,  
To doen his nephew in all riches flow:  
Eftsoones his heaped waves he did com-  
maund  
Out of their hollow bosome forth to throw  
All the huge threasure, which the sea below  
Had in his greedy gulfe devoured deepe,  
And him enriched through the overthrow  
And wrecks of many wretches, which did  
weepe  
And often wayle their wealth, which he  
from them did keepe.

## XXIII

Shortly upon that shore there heaped was  
Exceeding riches and all pretious things,  
The spoyle of all the world, that it did pas  
The wealth of th' East, and pompe of Per-  
sian kings:  
Gold, amber, yvorie, perles, owehes, rings,  
And all that els was pretious and deare,  
The sea unto him voluntary brings,  
That shortly he a great lord did appeare,  
As was in all the lond of Faery, or else  
where.

## XXIV

Thereto he was a doughty dreaded knight,  
Tryde often to the seath of many deare,  
That none in equall armes him matchen  
might:  
The which his mother seeing, gan to feare  
Least his too haughtie hardines might reare

Some hard mishap, in hazard of his life:  
Forthy she oft him counseld to forbear  
The bloody batteill, and to stirre up strife,  
But after all his warre to rest his wearie  
knife.

## XXV

And, for his more assuraunce, she inquir'd  
One day of Proteus by his mighty spell  
(For Proteus was with prophecy inspir'd)  
Her deare somes destiny to her to tell,  
And the sad end of her sweet Marinell.  
Who, through foresight of his eternall skill,  
Bad her from womankind to keepe him well:  
For of a woman he should have much ill;  
A virgin straunge and stout him should dis-  
may or kill.

## XXVI

Forthy she gave him warning every day,  
The love of women not to entertaine;  
A lesson too too hard for living clay,  
From love in course of nature to refraine:  
Yet he his mothers lore did well retaine,  
And ever from fayre ladies love did fly;  
Yet many ladies fayre did oft complaine,  
That they for love of him would algates dy:  
Dy who so list for him, he was loves enemy.

## XXVII

But ah! who can deceive his destiny,  
Or weene by warning to avoyd his fate?  
That, when he sleepes in most security  
And safest seemes, him soonest doth amate,  
And findeth dew effect or soone or late.  
So feeble is the powre of fleshly arme!  
His mother bad him womens love to hate,  
For she of womans force did feare no harme;  
So weening to have arm'd him, she did quite  
disarme.

## XXVIII

This was that woman, this that deadly  
wound,  
That Proteus prophecide should him dismay,  
The which his mother vainely did expound,  
To be hart-wounding love, which should  
assay  
To bring her sonne unto his last decay.  
So tiele be the termes of mortall state  
And full of subtile sophismes, which doe  
play  
With double sences, and with false debate,  
T' approve the unknownen purpose of eter-  
nall fate.

## XXIX

Too trew the famous Marinell it fownd,  
Who, through late triall, on that wealthy  
strand

Inglorious now lies in sencelesse swownd,  
Through heavy stroke of Britomartis hond.  
Which when his mother deare did under-  
stand,

And heavy tidings heard, whereas she playd  
Amongst her watry sisters by a pond,  
Gathering sweete daffadillyes, to have made  
Gay girlonds, from the sun their forheads  
fayr to shade,

## XXX

Eftesoones both flowres and girlonds far  
away

Shee flong, and her faire deawy locks yrent;  
To sorrow huge she turnd her former play,  
And gamesome merth to grievous drerim-  
ment:

Shee threw her selfe downe on the contin-  
ent,

Ne word did speake, but lay as in a swowne,  
Whiles al her sisters did for her lament,  
With yelling outcries, and with shrieking  
sowne;

And every one did teare her girlond from  
her crowne.

## XXXI

Soone as shee up out of her deadly fitt  
Arose, shee bad her charett to be brought,  
And all her sisters, that with her did sitt,  
Bad eke attonce their charettis to be sought:  
Tho, full of bitter grieve and pensife  
thought,

She to her wagon clombe; clombe all the  
rest,

And forth together went, with sorow  
fraught.

The waves, obedient to theyr beheast,  
Them yielded ready passage, and their rage  
surceast.

## XXXII

Great Neptnue stoode amazed at their  
sight,

Whiles on his broad rownd backe they softly  
slid,

And eke him selfe mournd at their mourn-  
full plight,

Yet wist not what their wailing ment, yet  
did,

For great compassion of their sorow, bid

His mighty waters to them buxome bee:  
Eftesoones the roaring billowes still abid,  
And all the griesly monsters of the see  
Stood gaping at their gate, and wondred  
them to see.

## XXXIII

A teme of dolphins, ramged in aray,  
Drew the smooth charett of sad Cymoent;  
They were all taught by Triton to obay  
To the long raynes at her commaunde-  
ment:

As swifte as swallowes on the waves they  
went,

That their brode flaggy finnes no fome did  
reare,

Ne bubling rowndell they behinde them  
sent;

The rest of other fishes drawen weare,  
Which with their finny oars the swelling  
sea did sheare.

## XXXIV

Soone as they bene arriv'd upon the brim  
Of the Rich Strand, their charets they  
forlore,

And let their temed fishes softly swim  
Along the margent of the fomy shore,  
Least they their finnes should bruze, and  
surbate sore

Their tender feete upon the stony grownd:  
And comming to the place, where all in  
gore

And cruddy blood enwallowed they fownd  
The lucklesse Marinell, lying in deadly  
swownd;

## XXXV

His mother swowned thrise, and the third  
time

Could scarce recovered bee out of her  
paine;

Had she not beene devoide of mortall  
slime,

Shee should not then have bene relyv'd  
again;

But soone as life recovered had the raine,  
Shee made so piteous mone and deare way-  
ment,

That the hard rocks could scarce from tears  
refraigne,

And all her sister nymphes with one con-  
sent

Supplide her sobbing breaches with sad  
complement.



## XXXVI

'Deare image of my selfe,' she said, 'that  
is,  
The wretched sonne of wretched mother  
borne,  
Is this thine high advauncement? O! is  
this  
Th' immortall name, with which thee yet  
unborne  
Thy gransire Nereus promist to adorne?  
Now lyst thou of life and honor refte,  
Now lyst thou a lumpe of earth forlorne,  
Ne of thy late life memory is lefte,  
Ne can thy irrevocable desteny bee wefte?

## XXXVII

'Fond Proteus, father of false prophecis!  
And they more fond, that credit to thee  
give!  
Not this the worke of womans hand ywis,  
That so deepe wound through these deare  
members drive.  
I feared love: but they that love doe live,  
But they that dye doe nether love nor hate.  
Nath'lesse to thee thy folly I forgive,  
And to my selfe and to accursed fate  
The guilt I doe ascribe: deare wisdom  
bought too late.

## XXXVIII

'O what availles it of immortall seed  
To beene ybredd and never borne to dye?  
Farre better I it deeme to die with speed,  
Then waste in woe and wayfull miserye.  
Who dyes the utmost dolor doth aby, e,  
But who that lives is lefte to waile his losse:  
So life is losse, and death felicity:  
Sad life worse then glad death: and greater  
crosse  
To see frends grave, then dead the grave  
self to engrosse.

## XXXIX

'But if the heavens did his dayes envie,  
And my short blis maligne, yet mote they  
well  
Thus much afford me, ere that he did die,  
That the dim eies of my deare Marinell  
I mote have closed, and him bed farewell,  
Sith other offices for mother meet  
They would not graunt ———  
Yett, maulgre them, farewell, my sweetest  
sweet!  
Farewell, my sweetest sonne, sith we no  
more shall meet!'

## XL

Thus when they all had sorowed their fill,  
They softly gan to search his griesly  
wound:  
And that they might him handle more at  
will,  
They him disarmd, and spredding on the  
grownd  
Their watchet mantles frindgd with silver  
rownd,  
They softly wipt away the gelly blood  
From th' orifice; which having well up-  
bownd,  
They poured in soveraine balme and nectar  
good,  
Good both for erthly med'cine and for  
hevenly food.

## XLI

Tho, when the lilly handed Liagore  
(This Liagore whilome had learned skill  
In leaches craft, hy great Appolloes lore,  
Sith her whilome upon high Pindus hill  
He loved, and at last her wombe did fill  
With heavenly seed, whereof wise Pæon  
sprong)  
Did feele his pulse, shee knew there staid  
still  
Some litle life his feeble sprites emong;  
Which to his mother told, despayre shee from  
her flong.

## XLII

Tho up him taking in their tender hands,  
They easely unto her charett beare;  
Her teme at her commaundement quiet  
stands,  
Whiles they the corse into her wagon  
reare,  
And stowe with flowres the lamentable  
beare:  
Then all the rest into their coches clim,  
And through the brackish waves their pas-  
sage shear;  
Upon great Neptunes necke they softly  
swim,  
And to her watry chamber swiftly carry  
him.

## XLIII

Deepe in the bottome of the sea, her bowre  
Is built of hollow billowes heaped hye,  
Like to thicke clouds that threat a stormy  
showre,  
And vaulted all within, like to the skye,

In which the gods doe dwell eternally:  
 There they him laide in easy couch well  
 light,  
 And sent in haste for Tryphon, to apply  
 Salves to his woundes, and medicines of  
 might:  
 For Tryphon of sea gods the soveraine  
 leach is hight.

## XLIV

The whiles the nymphes sitt all about him  
 rownd,  
 Lamenting his mishap and heavy plight;  
 And ofte his mother, vewing his wide  
 wownd,  
 Cursed the hand that did so deadly snight  
 Her dearest some, her dearest harts de-  
 light.  
 But none of all those curses overtooke  
 The warlike maide, th' ensample of that  
 might;  
 But fairely well shee thryvd, and well did  
 brooke  
 Her noble deeds, ne her right course for  
 ought forsooke.

## XLV

Yet did false Archimage her still pursew,  
 To bring to passe his mischievous intent,  
 Now that he had her singled from the crew  
 Of courteous knights, the Princee and Fary  
 gent,  
 Whom late in chace of beauty excellent  
 Shee left, pursewing that same foster  
 strong;  
 Of whose fowle outrage they impatient,  
 And full of firy zeale, him followed long,  
 To reskew her from shame, and to revenge  
 her wrong.

## XLVI

Through thick and thin, through mountains  
 and through playns,  
 Those two gret champions did attonce pur-  
 sew  
 The fearefull damzell, with inessant payns:  
 Who from them fled, as light-foot hare from  
 vew  
 Of hunter swifte and sent of howndes trew.  
 At last they came unto a double way,  
 Where, doubtfull which to take, her to res-  
 kew,  
 Themselves they did dispart, each to assay  
 Whether more happy were to win so goodly  
 pray.

## XLVII

But Timias, the Princes gentle squire,  
 That ladies love unto his lord forlent,  
 And with proud envy and indignant yre  
 After that wicked foster fiercely went.  
 So beene they three three sondry wayes  
 ybent:  
 But fayrest fortune to the Prince befell;  
 Whose chaunce it was, that soone he did  
 repent,  
 To take that way in which that damozell  
 Was fledd afore, affraid of him as feend  
 of hell.

## XLVIII

At last of her far of he gained vew:  
 Then gan he freshly pricke his fomy steed,  
 And ever as he nigher to her drew,  
 So evermore he did increase his speed,  
 And of each turning still kept wary heed:  
 Alowd to her he oftentimes did call,  
 To doe away vaine doubt and needlesse  
 dreed:  
 Full myld to her he spake, and oft let  
 fall  
 Many meeke wordes, to stay and comfort  
 her withall.

## XLIX

But nothing might relent her hasty flight;  
 So deepe the deadly feare of that foule  
 swaine  
 Was earst impressed in her gentle spright:  
 Like as a fearefull dove, which through the  
 raine  
 Of the wide ayre her way does cut amaine,  
 Having farre off espyde a tassell gent,  
 Which after her his nimble winges doth  
 straine,  
 Doubleth her hast for feare to bee for-  
 hent,  
 And with her pineons cleaves the liquid  
 firmament.

## L

With no lesse hast, and eke with no lesse  
 dreed,  
 That fearefull ladie fledd from him that  
 ment  
 To her no evill thought nor evill deed;  
 Yet former feare of being fowly shent  
 Carried her forward with her first intent:  
 And though, oft looking backward, well  
 she vewde  
 Her selfe freed from that foster insolent,

And that it was a knight which now her  
sewde,  
Yet she no lesse the knight feard then that  
villain rude.

## LI

His uncouth shield and strange armes her  
dismayd,  
Whose like in Faery Lond were seldom  
seene,  
That fast she from him fledd, no lesse afraid  
Then of wilde beastes if she had chased  
beene:  
Yet he her followd still with corage keene,  
So long that now the golden Hesperus  
Was mounted high in top of heaven sheene,  
And warnd his other brethren joyeous  
To light their blessed lamps in Joves eter-  
nall hous.

## LII

All suddainly dim wox the dampish ayre,  
And griesly shadowes covered heaven bright,  
That now with thousand starres was decked  
fayre;  
Which when the Prince beheld, a lothfull  
sight,  
And that perforce, for want of lenger light,  
He mote surceasse his suit, and lose the  
hope  
Of his long labour, he gan fowly wyte  
His wicked fortune, that had turnd aslope,  
And cursed Night, that reft from him so  
goodly scope.

## LIII

Tho, when her wayes he could no more de-  
sery,  
But to and fro at disaventure strayd,  
Like as a ship, whose lodestar suddainly  
Covered with cloudes her pilott hath dis-  
mayd,  
His wearisome pursuit perforce he stayd,  
And from his loftie steed dismounting low,  
Did let him forage. Downe himselfe he  
layd  
Upon the grassy ground, to sleepe a throw;  
The cold earth was his couch, the hard  
steele his pillow.

## LIV

But gentle Sleepe envyde him any rest;  
In stead thereof sad sorow and disdaine  
Of his hard hap did vexe his noble brest,  
And thousand fancies bett his ydle brayne

With their light wings, the sights of sem-  
blants vaine;  
Oft did he wish that lady faire mote bee  
His Faery Queene, for whom he did com-  
plaine;  
Or that his Faery Queene were such as  
shee;  
And ever hasty Night he blamed bitterlie.

## LV

'Night, thou foule mother of annoyaunce  
sad,  
Sister of heavie Death, and nourse of Woe,  
Which wast begot in heaven, but for thy  
bad  
And brutish shape thrust downe to hell be-  
low,  
Where by the grim fload of Coeytus slow  
Thy dwelling is, in Herebus black hous,  
(Black Herebus, thy husband, is the foe  
Of all the gods) where thou ungratious  
Halfe of thy dayes doest lead in horreur  
hideous:

## LVI

'What had th' Eternall Maker need of thee,  
The world in his continuall course to keepe,  
That doest all thinges deface, ne lettest see  
The beautie of his worke? Indeed, in  
sleepe  
The slouthfull body that doth love to steep  
His lustlesse limbes, and drowne his baser  
mind,  
Doth praise thee oft, and oft from Stygian  
deepe  
Calles thee, his goddesse in his errour blind,  
And great Dame Natures handmaide chear-  
ing every kind.

## LVII

'But well I wote, that to an heavy hart  
Thou art the roote and nourse of bitter  
cares,  
Breeder of new, renewer of old smarts:  
In stead of rest thou lendest rayling teares,  
In stead of sleepe thou sendest troublous  
feares  
And dreadfull visions, in the which alive  
The dreary image of sad death appears:  
So from the wearie spirit thou doest drive  
Desired rest, and men of happinesse deprive.

## LVIII

'Under thy mantle black there hidden lye  
Light-shonning thefte, and traiterous intent,



Abhorred bloodshed, and vile felony,  
 Shamefull deceipt, and daunger imminent,  
 Fowle horror, and eke hellish dreriment:  
 All these, I wote, in thy protection bee,  
 And light doe shonne, for feare of being  
 shent:

For light ylike is loth'd of them and thee,  
 And all that lewdnesse love doe hate the  
 light to see.

## LIX

'For Day discovers all dishonest wayes,  
 And sheweth each thing as it is in deed:  
 The prayes of High God he faire displays,  
 And His large bountie rightly doth areed.  
 Dayes dearest children be the blessed seed  
 Which Darknesse shall subdue and heaven  
 win:

Truth is his daughter; he her first did  
 breed,  
 Most sacred virgin, without spot of sinne.  
 Our life is day, but death with darknesse  
 doth begin.

## LX

'O when will Day then turne to me againe,  
 And bring with him his long expected light?  
 O Titan, hast to reare thy joyous waine:  
 Speed thee to spred abroad thy beames  
 bright,  
 And chace away this too long lingring  
 Night;

Chace her away, from whence she came, to  
 hell:  
 She, she it is, that hath me done despight:  
 There let her with the damned spirits dwell,  
 And yield her rowne to Day, that can it  
 governe well.'

## LXI

Thus did the Prince that wearie night out-  
 weare  
 In restlesse anguish and unquiet paine;  
 And earely, ere the Morrow did upreare  
 His deawy head out of the ocean maine,  
 He up arose, as halfe in great disdaine,  
 And clombe unto his steed. So forth he  
 went,  
 With heavy looke and lumpish pace, that  
 plaine  
 In him bewraid great grudge and mal-  
 talent:  
 His steed eke seemd t' apply his steps to  
 his intent.

## CANTO V

Prince Arthur heares of Florimell:  
 Three fosters Timias wound;  
 Belphebe findes him almost dead,  
 And reareth out of sownd.

## I

WONDER it is to see in diverse mindes  
 How diversly Love doth his pageamnts play,  
 And shewes his powre in variable kindes:  
 The baser wit, whose ydle thoughts alway  
 Are wont to cleave unto the lowly clay,  
 It stirreth up to sensuall desire,  
 And in lewd slouth to wast his carelesse  
 day:  
 But in brave sprite it kindles goodly fire,  
 That to all high desert and honour doth  
 aspire.

## II

Ne suffereth it uncomely idlenesse  
 In his free thought to build her sluggish  
 nest;  
 Ne suffereth it thought of ungentlenesse  
 Ever to creepe into his noble brest;  
 But to the highest and the worthiest  
 Lifteth it up, that els would lowly fall:  
 It lettes not fall, it lettes it not to rest:  
 It lettes not scarce this Prince to breath at  
 all,  
 But to his first poursuit him forward still  
 doth call.

## III

Who long time wandred through the forest  
 wyde,  
 To finde some issue thence, till that at last  
 He met a dwarfe, that seemed terrifyde  
 With some late perill, which he hardly past,  
 Or other accident which him aghast;  
 Of whom he asked, whence he lately came,  
 And whether now he traueiled so fast:  
 For sore he swat, and ronning through that  
 same  
 Thicke forest, was bescracht, and both his  
 feet high lame.

## IV

Panting for breath, and almost out of hart,  
 The dwarfe him answerd: 'Sir, ill mote I  
 stay  
 To tell the same. I lately did depart  
 From Faery court, where I have many a  
 day  
 Served a gentle lady of great sway

And high accompt through out all Elfin  
Land,  
Who lately left the same, and tooke this  
way:  
Her now I seeke, and if ye understand  
Which way she fared hath, good sir, tell  
out of hand.'

## V

'What mister wight,' saide he, 'and how  
arayd?'  
'Royally clad,' quoth he, 'in cloth of gold,  
As meetest may beseeine a noble mayd;  
Her faire lockes in rich circlet be enrold,  
A fayrer wight did never sunne behold;  
And on a palfrey rydes more white then  
snow,  
Yet she her selfe is whiter manifold:  
'The surest signe, whereby ye may her  
know,  
Is, that she is the fairest wight alive, I trow.'

## VI

'Now certes, swaine,' saide he, 'such one,  
I weene,  
Fast flying through this forest from her fo,  
A foule ill favoured foster, I have seene;  
Her selfe, well as I might, I reskewd tho,  
But could not stay, so fast she did foregoe,  
Carried away with wings of speedy feare.'  
'Ah, dearest God!' quoth he, 'that is great  
woe,  
And wondrous ruth to all that shall it  
heare.  
But can ye read, sir, how I may her finde,  
or where?'

## VII

'Perdy, me lever were to weeten that,'  
Saide he, 'then ransome of the richest  
knight,  
Or all the good that ever yet I gat:  
But froward Fortune, and too forward  
Night,  
Such happinesse did, maulgre, to me spight,  
And fro me reft both life and light attone.  
But, dwarfe, aread what is that lady bright,  
That through this forrest wandreth thus  
alone;  
For of her errour straunge I have great  
ruth and mone.'

## VIII

'That ladie is,' quoth he, 'where so she bee,  
The bcuntiest virgin and most debonaire

That ever living eye, I weene, did see;  
Lives none this day that may with her com-  
pare  
In stedfast chastitie and vertue rare,  
The goodly ornaments of beantie bright;  
And is yeled Florimell the Fayre,  
Faire Florimell, belov'd of many a knight,  
Yet she loves none but one, that Marinell is  
hight.

## IX

'A sea-nymphes sonne, that Marinell is  
hight,  
Of my deare damc is loved dearely well;  
In other none, but him, she sets delight,  
All her delight is set on Marinell;  
But he sets nought at all by Florimell:  
For ladies love his mother long ygoe  
Did him, they say, forwarne through sacred  
spell.  
But fame now flies, that of a forreine foe  
He is yslaine, which is the ground of all  
our woe.

## X

'Five daies there be since he (they say)  
was slaine,  
And fowre, since Florimell the court for-  
went,  
And vowed never to returne againe,  
Till him alive or dead she did invent.  
Therefore, faire sir, for love of knighthood  
gent  
And honour of trew ladies, if ye may  
By your good counsell, or bold hardi-  
ment,  
Or succour her, or me direct the way,  
Do one or other good, I you most humbly  
pray.

## XI

'So may ye gaine to you full great re-  
nowme  
Of all good ladies through the world so  
wide,  
And haply in her hart finde highest rowme,  
Of whom ye seeke to be most magnifide:  
At least eternall meede shall you abide.'  
To whom the Prince: 'Dwarfe, comfort to  
thee take;  
For till thou tidings learne, what her be-  
tide,  
I here avow thee never to forsake.  
Ill weares he armes, that nill them use for  
ladies sake.'

## XII

So with the dwarfe he backe retourn'd  
 againe,  
 To seeke his lady, where he mote her  
 finde;  
 But by the way he greatly gan complaine  
 The want of his good squire, late left be-  
 hinde,  
 For whom he wondrous pensive grew in  
 minde,  
 For doubt of daunger, which mote him be-  
 tide;  
 For him he loved above all mankinde,  
 Having him trew and faithfull ever tride,  
 And bold, as ever squire that waited by  
 knights side.

## XIII

Who all this while full hardly was assayd  
 Of deadly daunger, which to him betidd;  
 For whiles his lord purswd that noble  
 mayd,  
 After that foster fowle he fiercely ridd,  
 To bene avenged of the shame he did  
 To that faire damzell. Him he chaced  
 long  
 Through the thicke woods, wherein he would  
 have hid  
 His shamefull head from his avengement  
 strong,  
 And oft him threatned death for his outra-  
 geous wrong.

## XIV

Nathlesse the villein sped himselfe so well,  
 Whether through swiftnesse of his speedie  
 beast,  
 Or knowledge of those woods, where he did  
 dwell,  
 That shortly he from daunger was releast,  
 And out of sight escaped at the least;  
 Yet not escaped from the dew reward  
 Of his bad deedes, which daily he increast,  
 Ne ceased not, till him oppressed hard  
 The heavie plague that for such leachours  
 is prepar'd.

## XV

For soone as he was vanisht out of sight,  
 His coward courage gan emboldned bee,  
 And east t' avenge him of that fowle de-  
 spight,  
 Which he had borne of his bold enimee.  
 Tho to his brethren came; for they were  
 three

Ungracious children of one gracelesse syre;  
 And unto them complayned how that he  
 Had used beene of that foolehardie squire:  
 So them with bitter words he stird to  
 bloodie yre.

## XVI

Forthwith themselves with their sad instru-  
 ments  
 Of spoyle and murder they gan arme by-  
 live,  
 And with him foorth into the forrest went,  
 To wreake the wrath, which he did earst  
 revive  
 In their sterne breasts, on him which late  
 did drive  
 Their brother to reproch and shamefull  
 flight:  
 For they had vow'd, that never he alive  
 Out of that forest should escape their  
 might;  
 Vile raneour their rude harts had filld with  
 such despight.

## XVII

Within that wood there was a covert glade,  
 Foreby a narrow foord, to them well knowne,  
 Through which it was meath for wight to  
 wade,  
 And now by fortune it was overflowne:  
 By that same way they knew that squire  
 unknowne  
 Mote algaes passe; forthy themselves they  
 set  
 There in await, with thicke woods over  
 growne,  
 And all the while their malice they did  
 whet  
 With cruell threats, his passage through  
 the ford to let.

## XVIII

It fortun'd, as they devised had,  
 The gentle squire came ryding that same  
 way,  
 Unweeting of their wile and treason bad,  
 And through the ford to passen did as-  
 say;  
 But that fierce foster, which late fled away,  
 Stontly foorth stepping on the further  
 shore,  
 Him boldly bad his passage there to stay,  
 Till he had made amends, and full restore  
 For all the damage which he had him doen  
 afore.



## XIX

With that, at him a quiv'ring dart he threw,  
 With so fell force and villainous despite,  
 That through his haberjeon the forkehead  
 flew,  
 And through the linked mayles empierced  
 quite,  
 But had no powre in his soft flesh to bite:  
 That stroke the hardy squire did sore dis-  
 please,  
 But more that him he could not come to  
 smite;  
 For by no meanes the high banke he could  
 sease,  
 But labour'd long in that deepe ford with  
 vaine disease.

## XX

And still the foster with his long bore-  
 speare  
 Him kept from landing at his wished will.  
 Anone one sent out of the thicket neare  
 A cruell shaft, headed with deadly ill,  
 And fethered with an unlucky quill:  
 The wicked steele stayd not, till it did light  
 In his left thigh, and deeply did it thrill:  
 Exceeding griefe that wound in him em-  
 pight,  
 But more that with his foes he could not  
 come to fight.

## XXI

At last, through wrath and vengeance  
 making way,  
 He on the bancke arryvd with mickle payne,  
 Where the third brother him did sore as-  
 say,  
 And drove at him with all his might and  
 mayne  
 A forest bill, which both his hands did  
 strayne;  
 But warily he did avoide the blow,  
 And with his speare requited him agayne,  
 That both his sides were thrilled with the  
 throw,  
 And a large streame of blood out of the  
 wound did flow.

## XXII

He, tombling downe, with gnashing teeth  
 did bite  
 The bitter earth, and bad to lett him in  
 Into the balefull house of endlesse night,  
 Where wicked ghosts doe waile their for-  
 mer sin.

Tho gan the battaile freshly to begin;  
 For nathemore for that spectacle bad  
 Did th' other two their cruell vengeance  
 blin,  
 But both attonce on both sides him bestad,  
 And load upon him layd, his life for to  
 have had.

## XXIII

Tho when that villayn he aviz'd, which late  
 Affrighted had the fairest Florimell,  
 Full of fiers fury and indignant hate,  
 To him he turned, and with rigor fell  
 Smote him so rudely on the pannikell,  
 That to the chin he clefted his head in  
 twaine:

Downe on the ground his carkas groveling  
 fell;

His sinfull sowle, with desperate disdaine,  
 Out of her fleshly ferme fled to the place  
 of paine.

## XXIV

That seeing now the only last of three,  
 Who with that wicked shafte him wounded  
 had,  
 Trembling with horror, as that did foresee  
 The fearefull end of his avengement sad,  
 Through which he follow should his breth-  
 ren bad,  
 His bootelesse bow in feeble hand upcaught,  
 And therewith shott an arrow at the lad;  
 Which, fayntly fluttring, scarce his helmet  
 raught,  
 And glauncing fel to ground, but him an-  
 noyed naught.

## XXV

With that he would have fled into the wood;  
 But Timias him lightly overhent,  
 Right as he entring was into the flood,  
 And strooke at him with force so violent,  
 That headlesse him into the foord he sent;  
 The carcas with the streame was carried  
 downe,  
 But th' head fell backward on the contin-  
 ent.  
 So mischief fel upon the meaners crowne;  
 They three be dead with shame, the squire  
 lives with renowne.

## XXVI

He lives, but takes small joy of his re-  
 nowne;  
 For of that cruell wound he bled so sore,

That from his steed he fell in deadly  
 swowne;  
 Yet still the blood forth gusht in so great  
 store,  
 That he lay wallowd all in his owne gore.  
 Now God thee keepe, thou gentlest squire  
 alive,  
 Els shall thy loving lord thee see no more,  
 But both of comfort him thou shalt de-  
 prive,  
 And eke thy selfe of honor, which thou  
 didst atchive.

## XXVII

Providence heavenly passeth living thought,  
 And doth for wretched mens reliefe make  
 way;  
 For loe! great grace or fortune thether  
 brought  
 Comfort to him that comfortlesse now  
 lay.  
 In those same woods, ye well remember  
 may  
 How that a noble huntresse did wonne,  
 Shee that base Braggadochio did affray,  
 And made him fast out of the forest rounne;  
 Belphebe was her name, as faire as Phæ-  
 bus sunne.

## XXVIII

She on a day, as shee pursewd the chace  
 Of some wilde beast, which with her arrowes  
 keene  
 She wounded had, the same along did  
 trace  
 By tract of blood, which she had freshly  
 seene  
 To have besprinkled all the grassy greene;  
 By the great persue, which she there per-  
 ceav'd,  
 Well hoped shee the beast engor'd had  
 beene,  
 And made more haste, the life to have be-  
 reav'd:  
 But ah! her expectation greatly was de-  
 ceav'd.

## XXIX

Shortly she came whereas that woefull  
 squire,  
 With blood deformed, lay in deadly  
 swownd:  
 In whose faire eyes, like lamps of quenched  
 fire,  
 The christall humor stood congealed rownd;

His locks, like faded leaves fallen to  
 grownd,  
 Knotted with blood in bounches rudely ran;  
 And his sweete lips, on which before that  
 stownd  
 The bud of youth to blossome faire began,  
 Spoild of their rosy red, were woxen pale  
 and wan.

## XXX

Saw never living eie more heavy sight,  
 That could have made a rocke of stone to  
 rew,  
 Or rive in twaine: which when that lady  
 bright,  
 Besides all hope, with melting eies did  
 vew,  
 All suddenly abasht shee chaunged hew,  
 And with sterne horror backward gan to  
 start:  
 But when shce better him beheld, shee grew  
 Full of soft passion and unwonted smart:  
 The point of pittie perced through her ten-  
 der hart.

## XXXI

Meekely shee bowed downe, to weete if  
 life  
 Yett in his frosen members did remaine;  
 And feeling by his pulses beating rife  
 That the weake sowle her seat did yett re-  
 taine,  
 She cast to comfort him with busy paine:  
 His double folded necke she reard upright,  
 And rubd his temples and each trenbling  
 vaine;  
 His mayled haberjeon shee did undight,  
 And from his head his heavy burganet did  
 light.

## XXXII

Into the woods thenceforth in haste shee  
 went,  
 To seeke for hearbes that mote him rem-  
 edy;  
 For shee of herbes had great intendiment,  
 Taught of the nymphe, which from her in-  
 fancey  
 Her nourced had in trew nobility:  
 There, whether yt divine tobacco were,  
 Or panachæa, or polygony,  
 Shee fownd, and brought it to her patient  
 deare,  
 Who al this while lay bleding out his hart-  
 blood neare.

## XXXIII

The soveraine weede betwixt two marbles  
plaine  
Shee pownded small, and did in peeces  
bruze,

And then atweene her lilly handes twaine  
Into his wound the juice thereof did scruze,  
And round about, as she could well it uze,  
The flesh therewith shee suppld and did  
steepe,

T' abate all spasme and soke the swelling  
bruze,

And after having searcht the intuse deepe,  
She with her scarf did bind the wound from  
cold to keepe.

## XXXIV

By this he had sweet life recur'd agayne,  
And, groning inly deepe, at last his eies,  
His watry eies, drizzling like deawy rayne,  
He up gan lifte toward the azure skies,  
From whence descend all hopelesse reme-  
dies :

Therewith he sigh'd, and turning him aside,  
The goodly maide ful of divinities  
And gifts of heavenly grace he by him spide,  
Her bow and gilden quiver lying him be-  
side.

## XXXV

' Mercy ! deare Lord,' said he, ' what grace  
is this,

That thou hast shewed to me, sinfull wight,  
To send thine angell from her bowre of  
blis,

To comfort me in my distressed plight ?  
Angell, or goddesse doe I call thee right ?  
What service may I doe unto thee meete,  
That hast from darkenes me returnd to  
light,

And with thy hevenly salves and med'cines  
sweete

Hast drest my sinfull wounds ? I kisse thy  
blessed feete.

## XXXVI

Thereat she blushing said: ' Ah ! gentle  
squtre,

Nor goddesse I, nor angell, but the mayd  
And daughter of a woody nymphe, desire  
No service but thy safety and ayd;  
Which if thou gaine, I shalbe well apayd.

Wee mortall wights, whose lives and for-  
tunes bee

To commun accidents stil open layd,

Are bownd with commun bond of frailtee,  
To succor wretched wights, whom we cap-  
tived see.'

## XXXVII

By this her damzells, which the forme  
chace

Had undertaken after her, arryv'd,  
As did Belphebe, in the bloody place,  
And thereby deemd the beast had bene de-  
priv'd

Of life, whom late their ladies arrow ryv'd:  
Forthy the bloody tract they followd fast,  
And every one to ronne the swiftest stryv'd;  
But two of them the rest far overpast,  
And where their lady was arrived at the  
last.

## XXXVIII

Where when they saw that goodly boy, with  
blood

Defowled, and their lady dresse his wovnd,  
They wondred much, and shortly under-  
stood

How him in deadly case theyr lady fownd,  
And reskewed out of the heavy stownd.  
Eftsoones his warlike courser, which was  
strayd

Farre in the woodes, whiles that he lay in  
swownd,

She made those damzels search, which be-  
ing stayd,

They did him set theron, and forth with  
them convayd.

## XXXIX

Into that forest farre they thence him  
led,

Where was their dwelling, in a pleasant  
glade

With mountaines rownd about environed,  
And mightie woodes, which did the valley  
shade,

And like a stately theatre it made,  
Spreading it selfe into a spatious plaine;  
And in the midst a little river plaide

Emongst the puny stones, which seemd to  
plaine

With gentle murmure that his cours they  
did restraine.

## XL

Beside the same a dainty place there lay,  
Planted with mirtle trees and laurells  
greene,



In which the birds song many a lovely lay  
Of Gods high praise, and of their loves  
sweet teene,

As it an earthly paradize had beene:  
In whose enclosed shadow there was pight  
A faire pavilion, scarcely to be seene,  
The which was al within most richly dight,  
That greatest princes living it mote well  
delight.

## XLI

Thether they brought that wounded squyre,  
and layd

In easie couch his feeble limbes to rest.  
He rested him a while, and then the mayd  
His readie wound with better salves new  
drest:

Daily she dressed him, and did the best,  
His grievous hurt to guarish, that she might,  
That shortly she his dolour hath redrest,  
And his foule sore reduced to faire plight:  
It she reduced, but himselfe destroyed  
quight.

## XLII

O foolish physick, and unfruitfull paine,  
That heales up one and makes another  
wound!

She his hurt thigh to him recurd againe,  
But hurt his hart, the which before was  
sound,

Through an unwary dart, which did rebownd  
From her faire eyes and gracious counten-  
aunce.

What bootes it him from death to be un-  
bownd,  
To be captived in endlesse durance  
Of sorrow and despayre without alegge-  
aunce?

## XLIII

Still as his wound did gather, and grow  
hole,

So still his hart woxe sore, and health de-  
cayd:

Madnesse to save a part, and lose the whole!  
Still whenas he beheld the heavenly mayd,  
Whiles dayly playsters to his wovnd she  
layd,

So still his malady the more increast,  
The whiles her matchlesse beautie him dis-  
mayd.

Ah God! what other could he doe at least,  
But love so fayre a iady, that his life re-  
least?

## XLIV

Long while he strove in his corageous brest,  
With reason dew the passion to subdew,  
And love for to dislodge out of his nest:  
Still when her excellencies he did vew,  
Her souveraine bountie and celestiall hew,  
The same to love he strongly was con-  
straynd:

But when his meane estate he did revew,  
He from such hardy boldnesse was re-  
straynd,  
And of his lucklesse lott and cruell love  
thus playnd.

## XLV

‘Unthankfull wretch,’ said he, ‘is this the  
meed,

With which her souverain mercy thou doest  
quight?

Thy life she saved by her gracious deed,  
But thou doest weene with villemous de-  
spight

To blott her honour and her heavenly light.  
Dye rather, dye, then so disloyally  
Deeme of her high desert, or seeme so  
light:

Fayre death it is, to shonne more shame,  
to dy:

Dye rather, dy, then ever love disloyally.

## XLVI

‘But if to love disloyalty it bee,  
Shall I then hate her, that from deathes  
dore

Me brought? ah! farre be such reproch fro  
mee!

What can I lesse doe, then her love there-  
fore,

Sith I her dew reward cannot restore?  
Dye rather, dye, and dying doe her serve,  
Dying her serve, and living her adore;  
Thy life she gave, thy life she doth de-  
serve:

Dye rather, dye, then ever from her service  
swerve.

## XLVII

‘But, foolish boy, what bootes thy service  
bace

To her, to whom the heavens doe serve and  
sew?

Thou a meane squyre, of meeke and lowly  
place,

She heavenly borne, and of celestiall hew.  
How then? of all Love taketh equall vew:

And doth not Highest God vouchsafe to  
take  
The love and service of the basest crew?  
If she will not, dye meekly for her sake:  
Dye rather, dye, then ever so faire love  
forsake.

## XLVIII

Thus warreid he long time against his will,  
Till that through weaknesse he was forst  
at last  
To yield himselfe unto the mightie ill:  
Which, as a vietour proud, gan ransack fast  
His inward partes, and all his entayles  
wast,  
That neither blood in face nor life in hart  
It left, but both did quite drye up and  
blast;  
As percing levin, which the inner part  
Of every thing consumes and caleineth by  
art.

## XLIX

Which seeing fayre Belpheobe, gan to feare  
Least that his wound were iuly well not  
heald,  
Or that the wicked steele empoysned were:  
Litle shee weend that love he close con-  
ceald:  
Yet still he wasted, as the snow congeald,  
When the bright sunne his beams theron  
doth beat;  
Yet never he his hart to her reveald,  
But rather chose to dye for sorow great,  
Then with dishonorable termes her to en-  
treat.

## L

She, gracious lady, yet no paines did spare,  
To doe him ease, or doe him remedy:  
Many restoratives of vertnes rare  
And costly cordialles she did apply,  
To mitigate his stubborne malady:  
But that sweet cordiall, which can restore  
A love-sick hart, she did to him envy;  
To him, and to all th' unworthy world for-  
lore,  
She did envy that souveraine salve, in seeret  
store.

## LI

That daintie rose, the daughter of her  
morne,  
More deare then life she tendered, whose  
flowre

The girlond of her honour did adorne:  
Ne suffred she the middayes scorching  
powre,  
Ne the sharp northerne wind thereon to  
showre,  
But lapped up her silken leaves most clayre,  
When so the froward skye began to lowre:  
But soone as calmed was the christall ayre,  
She did it fayre dispred, and let to flourish  
fayre.

## LII

Eternall God, in his almightie powre,  
To make ensample of his heavenly grace,  
In paradize whylome did plant this flowre;  
Whence he it fetcht out of her native place,  
And did in stocke of earthly flesh enraee,  
That mortall men her glory should admyre.  
In gentle ladies breste and bounteous race  
Of woman kind it fayrest flowre doth spyre,  
And beareth fruit of honour and all chaste  
desyre.

## LIII

Fayre ympes of beautie, whose bright  
shining beames  
Adorne the world with like to heavenly  
light,  
And to your willes both royalties and  
reames  
Subdew, through conquest of your won-  
drous might,  
With this fayre flowre your goodly girlonds  
dight  
Of chastity and vertue virginall,  
That shall embellish more your beutie  
bright,  
And crowne your heades with heavenly  
coronall,  
Such as the angels weare before Gods tri-  
bunall.

## LIV

To youre faire selves a faire ensample  
frame  
Of this faire virgin, this Belphebe fayre,  
To whom, in perfect love and spotlesse fame  
Of chastitie, none living may compayre:  
Ne poysonous envy justly can empayre  
The prayse of her fresh flowring mayden-  
head;  
Forthy she standeth on the highest stayre  
Of th' honorable stage of womanhead,  
That ladies all may follow her ensample  
dead.

## LV

In so great prayse of stedfast chastity  
Nathlesse she was so courteous and kynde,  
Tempred with grace and goodly modesty,  
That seemed those two vertues strove to  
fynd

The higher place in her heroick mynd:  
So striving each did other more augment,  
And both encrease the prayse of woman  
kynde,  
And both ecrease her beautie excellent;  
So all did make in her a perfect comple-  
ment.

## CANTO VI

The birth of fayre Belphoebe and  
Of Amorett is told:  
The Gardins of Adonis fraught  
With pleasures manifold.

## I

WELL may I weene, faire ladies, all this  
while

Ye wonder how this noble damozell  
So great perfections did in her compile,  
Sith that in salvage forests she did dwell,  
So farre from court and royall citadell,  
The great schoolmaistresse of all courtesy:  
Seemeth that such wilde woodes should far  
expell

All civile usage and gentility,  
And gentle sprite deforme with rude rus-  
ticity.

## II

But to this faire Belphæbe in her berth  
The hevens so favorable were and free,  
Looking with myld aspect upon the earth  
In th' horoscope of her nativitee,  
That all the gifts of grace and chastitee  
On her they poured forth of plenteous horne;  
Jove laught on Venus from his soverayne  
see,  
And Phœbus with faire beames did her  
adorue,  
And all the Graces rockt her cradle being  
borne.

## III

Her berth was of the wombe of morning  
dew,  
And her conception of the joyous prime,  
And all her whole creation did her shew  
Pure and unspotted from all loathly crime,

That is ingenerate in fleshly slime.  
So was this virgin borne, so was she bred,  
So was she trayned up from time to time  
In all chaste vertue and true bounti-hed,  
Till to her dew perfection she was ripened

## IV

Her mother was the faire Chrysogonee,  
The daughter of Amphisa, who by race  
A Faerie was, yborne of high degree:  
She bore Belphæbe, she bore in like cace  
Fayre Amoretta in the second place:  
These two were twinnes, and twixt them  
two did share

The heritage of all celestiaall grace;  
That all the rest it seemd they robbed bare  
Of bountie, and of beautie, and all vertues  
rare.

## V

It were a goodly storie to declare  
By what straunge accident faire Chrysogone  
Conceiv'd these infants, and how them she  
bare,

In this wilde forrest wandring all alone,  
After she had nine moneths fulfilled and  
gone:

For not as other wemens commune brood  
They were enwombed in the sacred throne  
Of her chaste bodie, nor with commune  
food,  
As other wemens babes, they sucked vitall  
blood.

## VI

But wondrously they were begot and bred,  
Through influence of th' hevens fruitfull  
ray,

As it in antique bookes is mentioned.  
It was upon a sommers shinie day,  
When Titan faire his beames did display,  
In a fresh fountaine, far from all mens vew,  
She bath'd her brest, the boyling heat t'  
allay;

She bath'd with roses red and violets blew,  
And all the sweetest flowres that in the  
forrest grew:

## VII

Till, faint through yrkesome wearines,  
adowne

Upon the grassy ground her selfe she layd  
To sleepe, the whiles a gentle slombring  
swowne

Upon her fell all naked bare displayd:



The sunbeames bright upon her body  
 playd,  
 Being through former bathing mollified,  
 And pierst into her wombe, where they  
 embayd  
 With so sweet sence and secret power un-  
 spide,  
 That in her pregnant flesh they shortly  
 fructifide.

## VIII

Miraculous may seeme to him that reades  
 So straunge ensample of conception;  
 But reason teacheth that the fruitfull  
 seades  
 Of all things living, through impression  
 Of the sunbeames in moyst complexion,  
 Doe life conceive and quickned are by  
 kynd:  
 So, after Nilus inundation,  
 Infinite shapes of creatures men doe fynd,  
 Informed in the mud, on which the sunne  
 hath shynd.

## IX

Great father he of generation  
 Is rightly cald, th' authour of life and  
 light;  
 And his faire sister for creation  
 Ministreth matter fit, which, tempred right  
 With heate and humour, breedes the living  
 wight.  
 So sprong these twinnes in womb of Chryso-  
 gone;  
 Yet wist she nought thereof, but, sore af-  
 fright,  
 Wondred to see her belly so upblone,  
 Which still increast, till she her terme had  
 full outgone.

## X

Whereof conceiving shame and foule dis-  
 grace,  
 Albe her guiltlesse conscience her cleard,  
 She fled into the wilderness a space,  
 Till that unweeldy burden she had reard,  
 And shuud dishonor, which as death she  
 feard:  
 Where, wearie of long traveill, downe to  
 rest  
 Her selfe she set, and comfortably cheard;  
 There a sad cloud of sleepe her over-  
 kest,  
 And seized every sence with sorrow sore  
 opprest.

## XI

It fortun'd, faire Venus having lost  
 Her little sonne, the winged God of Love,  
 Who for some light displeasure, which him  
 crost,  
 Was from her fled, as flit as ayery dove,  
 And left her blisfull bowre of joy above;  
 (So from her often he had fled away,  
 When she for ought him sharply did re-  
 prove,  
 And wandred in the world in straunge aray,  
 Disguiz'd in thousand shapes, that none  
 might him bewray;)

## XII

Him for to seeke, she left her heavenly  
 hons,  
 The house of goodly formes and faire  
 aspects,  
 Whence all the world derives the glorious  
 Features of beautie, and all shapes select,  
 With which High God his workmanship  
 hath deekt;  
 And searched everie way through which his  
 wings  
 Had borne him, or his tract she mote de-  
 tect:  
 She promist kisses sweet, and sweeter  
 things,  
 Unto the man that of him tydings to her  
 brings.

## XIII

First she him sought in court, where most  
 he us'd  
 Whylome to haunt, but there she found him  
 not;  
 But many there she found, which sore ac-  
 cus'd  
 His falshood, and with fowle infamous blot  
 His cruell deedes and wicked wyles did  
 spot:  
 Ladies and lordes she every where mote  
 heare  
 Complaining, how with his empoysned  
 shot  
 Their wofull harts he wounded had whyl-  
 eare,  
 And so had left them languishing twixt  
 hope and feare.

## XIV

She then the cities sought from gate to  
 gate,  
 And everie one did aske, did he him see?

And everie one her answerd, that too late  
 He had him seene, and felt the crueltee  
 Of his sharpe dartes and whot artilleree;  
 And every one threw forth reproches rife  
 Of his mischievous deedes, and sayd that  
 hee

Was the disturber of all civill life,  
 The enimy of peace, and authour of all  
 strife.

## XV

Then in the countrey she abroad him  
 sought,

And in the rurall cottages inquir'd,  
 Where also many plaintes to her were  
 brought,

How he their heedelesse harts with love  
 had fir'd,

And his false venom through their veines  
 inspir'd;

And eke the gentle shepheard swaynes,  
 which sat

Keeping their fleecy flockes, as they were  
 hyr'd,

She sweetly heard complaine both how and  
 what

Her sonne had to them doen; yet she did  
 smile thereat.

## XVI

But when in none of all these she him got,  
 She gan avize where els he mote him hyde:  
 At last she her bethought, that she had  
 not

Yet sought the salvage woods and forests  
 wyde,

In which full many lovely nymphes abyde,  
 Mongst whom might be that he did closely  
 lye,

Or that the love of some of them him  
 tyde:

Forthy she thether cast her course t' apply,  
 To search the secret haunts of Diances com-  
 pany.

## XVII

Shortly unto the wastefull woods she came,  
 Whereas she found the goddessse with her  
 crew,

After late chace of their embrewed game,  
 Sitting beside a fountaine in a rew;

Some of them washing with the liquid dew  
 From of their dainty limbs the dusty sweat  
 And soyle, which did deforme their lively  
 hew;

Others lay shaded from the scorching heat;  
 The rest upon her person gave attendance  
 great.

## XVIII

She, having hong upon a bough on high  
 Her bow and painted quiver, had unlaste  
 Her silver buskins from her nimble thigh,  
 And her lanek loynes ungirt, and brests un-  
 braste,

After her heat the breatching cold to taste;  
 Her golden lockes, that late in tresses  
 bright

Embreaded were for hindring of her haste,  
 Now loose about her shoulders hong un-  
 dight,

And were with sweet ambrosia all be-  
 sprinckled light.

## XIX

Soone as she Venus saw behinde her backe,  
 She was asham'd to be so loose surpriz'd,  
 And woxe halfe wroth against her damzels  
 slacke,

That had not her thereof before aviz'd,  
 But suffred her so carelesly disguiz'd

Be overtaken. Soone her garments loose  
 Upgath'ring, in her bosome she compriz'd,  
 Well as she might, and to the goddessse  
 rose,

Whiles all her nymphes did like a girlond  
 her enclose.

## XX

Goodly she gan faire Cytherea greet,  
 And shortly asked her, what cause her  
 brought

Into that wilderness for her unmeet,  
 From her sweete bowres, and beds with  
 pleasures fraught:

That suddain chaung she straung adven-  
 ture thought.

To whom halfe weeping she thus answered:  
 That she her dearest sonne Cupido sought,  
 Who in his frowardnes from her was fled;  
 That she repented sore to have him angered.

## XXI

Thereat Diana gan to smile, in scorne  
 Of her vaine playnt, and to her scoffing  
 sayd:

'Great pittie sure that ye be so forlorne  
 Of your gay sonne, that gives ye so good  
 ayd

To your disports: ill mote ye bene apayd!'

But she was more engrieved, and replide:  
 ' Faire sister, ill beseemes it to upbrayd  
 A dolefull heart with so disdainfull pride;  
 The like that mine, may be your paine another tide.

## XXII

' As you in woods and wanton wilderness  
 Your glory sett, to chace the salvage beasts,  
 So my delight is all in joyfulness,  
 In beds, in bowres, in banckets, and in feasts:  
 And ill becomes you, with your lofty creasts,  
 To scorne the joy that Jove is glad to seeke;  
 We both are bownd to follow heavens be-  
 heasts,  
 And tend our charges with obeisaunce meeke:  
 Spare, gentle sister, with reproch my paine  
 to eeke.

## XXIII

' And tell me if that ye my sonne have heard  
 To lurke emongst your nimphes in secret  
 wize,  
 Or keepe their cabins: much I am affeard,  
 Least he like one of them him selfe disguise,  
 And turne his arrowes to their exercize:  
 So may he long him selfe full easie hide:  
 For he is faire, and fresh in face and guise,  
 As any nimphe (let not it be envide.)  
 So saying, every nimph full narrowly shee  
 eide.

## XXIV

But Phœbe therewith sore was angered,  
 And sharply saide: ' Goe, dame; goe, seeke  
 your boy,  
 Where you him lately left, in Mars his bed:  
 He comes not here; we scorne his foolish  
 joy,  
 Ne lend we leisure to his idle toy:  
 But if I catch him in this company,  
 By Stygian lake I vow, whose sad annoy  
 The gods doe dread, he dearly shall aby: e  
 Ile clip his wanton wings, that he no more  
 shall flye.'

## XXV

Whom whenas Venus saw so sore displeasd,  
 Shee inly sory was, and gan relent  
 What shee had said: so her she soone ap-  
 peasd  
 With sugred words and gentle blandish-  
 ment,

Which as a fountaine from her sweete lips  
 went,  
 And welled goodly forth, that in short space  
 She was well pleasd, and forth her damzells  
 sent  
 Through all the woods, to search from place  
 to place,  
 If any tract of him or tidings they mote  
 trace.

## XXVI

To search the God of Love her nimphes she  
 sent,  
 Throughout the wandring forest every  
 where:  
 And after them her selfe eke with her went  
 To seeke the fugitive both farre and nere.  
 So long they sought, till they arrived were  
 In that same shady covert whereas lay  
 Faire Crysgone in slombry traunce whilere:  
 Who in her sleepe (a wondrous thing to  
 say)  
 Unwares had borne two babes, as faire as  
 springing day.

## XXVII

Unwares she them conceivd, unwares she  
 bore:  
 She bore withouten paine that she conceiv'd  
 Withouten pleasure: ne her need implore  
 Lucinaes aide: which when they both per-  
 ceiv'd,  
 They were through wonder nigh of sence  
 berev'd,  
 And gazing each on other, nought bespake:  
 At last they both agreed, her seeming griev'd  
 Out of her heavie swowne not to awake,  
 But from her loving side the tender babes  
 to take.

## XXVIII

Up they them tooke, eachone a babe up-  
 tooke,  
 And with them carried, to be fostered:  
 Dame Phæbe to a nympe her babe be-  
 tooke,  
 To be upbrought in perfect maydenhed,  
 And, of her selfe, her name Belphebe  
 red:  
 But Venus hers thence far away conveyd,  
 To be upbrought in goodly womanhed,  
 And in her litle Loves stead, which was  
 strayd,  
 Her Amoretta cald, to comfort her dis-  
 mayd.



## XXIX

Shee brought her to her joyous paradize,  
Wher most she wones, when she on earth  
does dwell:

So faire a place as Nature can devise:  
Whether in Paphos, or Cytheron hill,  
Or it in Gnidus bee, I wote not well;  
But well I wote by triall, that this same  
All other pleasaunt places doth excell,  
And called is by her lost lovers name,  
The Gardin of Adonis, far renownd by  
fame.

## XXX

In that same gardin all the goodly flowres,  
Wherewith Dame Nature doth her beautify,  
And decks the girlonds of her paramours,  
Are fetcht: there is the first seminary  
Of all things that are borne to live and  
dye,

Aceording to their kynds. Long worke it  
were,

Here to account the endlesse progeny  
Of all the weeds that bud and blossome  
there;

But so much as doth need must needs be  
counted here.

## XXXI

It sited was in fruitfull soyle of old,  
And girt in with two walls on either side,  
The one of yron, the other of bright gold,  
That none might thorough breake, nor over-  
stride:

And double gates it had, which opened  
wide,

By which both in and out men moten pas;  
Th' one faire and fresh, the other old and  
drid:

Old Genius the porter of them was,  
Old Genius, the which a double nature has.

## XXXII

He letteth in, he letteth out to wend,  
All that to come into the world desire:  
A thousand thousand naked babes attend  
About him day and night, which doe re-  
quire

That he with fleshly weeds would them  
attire:

Such as him list, such as eternall Fate  
Ordained hath, he clothes with sinfull mire,  
And sendeth forth to live in mortall state,  
Till they agayn returne backe by the hinder  
gate.

## XXXIII

After that they againe retourned beene,  
They in that gardin planted bee agayne,  
And grow afresh, as they had never seene  
Fleshly corruption nor mortall payne.

Some thousand yeares so doen they there  
remayne,

And then of him are clad with other hew,  
Or sent into the chaungefull world agayne,  
Till thether they retourne, where first they  
grew:

So like a wheele arownd they runne from  
old to new.

## XXXIV

Ne needs there gardiner to sett or sow,  
To plant or prune: for of their owne ac-  
cord

All things, as they created were, doe grow,  
And yet remember well the mighty word,  
Which first was spoken by th' Almighty  
Lord,

That bad them to increase and multiply:  
Ne doe they need with water of the ford  
Or of the clouds to moysten their roots  
dry;

For in themselves eternall moisture they  
imply.

## XXXV

Infinite shapes of creatures there are bred,  
And uncouth formes, which none yet ever  
knew;

And every sort is in a sondry bed  
Sett by it selfe, and ranckt in comely rew:  
Some fitt for reasonable sowles t' indew,  
Some made for beasts, some made for birds  
to weare,

And all the fruitfull spawne of fishes hew  
In endlesse raneks along enraunged were,  
That seemd the ocean could not containe  
them there.

## XXXVI

Daily they grow, and daily forth are sent  
Into the world, it to replenish more;  
Yet is the stocke not lessened nor spent,  
But still remains in everlasting store,  
As it at first created was of yore:  
For in the wide wombe of the world there  
lyes,

In hatefull darknes and in deepe horrore,  
A huge eternal chaos, which supplyes  
The substaunces of Natures fruitfull pro-  
genyes.

## XXXVII

All things from thence doe their first being  
fetch,  
And borrow matter whereof they are made,  
Which, whenas forme and feature it does  
ketch,  
Becomes a body, and doth then invade  
The state of life out of the griesly shade.  
That substaunce is eterne, and bideth so,  
Ne when the life decays, and forme does  
fade,  
Doth it consume and into nothing goe,  
But chaunged is, and often altred to and  
fro.

## XXXVIII

The substaunce is not chaungd nor altered,  
But th' only forme and outward fashion;  
For every substaunce is conditioned  
To chaunge her hew, and sondry formes to  
don,  
Meet for her temper and complexion:  
For formes are variable, and decay  
By course of kinde and by occasion;  
And that faire flowre of beautie fades  
away,  
As doth the lilly fresh before the sunny  
ray.

## XXXIX

Great eniny to it, and to all the rest,  
That in the Gardin of Adonis springs,  
Is wicked Tyme, who, with his scyth ad-  
drest,  
Does mow the flowring herbes and goodly  
things,  
And all their glory to the ground downe  
flings,  
Where they do wither and are fowly mard:  
He flies about, and with his flaggy winges  
Beates downe both leaves and buds without  
regard,  
Ne ever pittty may relent his malice hard.

## XL

Yet pittty often did the gods relent,  
To see so faire thinges mard and spoiled  
quight:  
And their great mother Venus did lament  
The losse of her deare brood, her deare de-  
light:  
Her hart was pierst with pittty at the sight,  
When walking through the gardin them she  
saw,  
Yet no'te she find redresse for such despight:

For all that lives is subject to that law:  
All things decay in time, and to their end  
doe draw.

## XLI

But were it not, that Time their troubler is,  
All that in this delightfull gardin growes  
Should happy bee, and have immortall blis:  
For here all plenty and all pleasure flowes,  
And sweete Love gentle fitts emongst them  
throwes,  
Without fell rancor or fond gealosity:  
Franckly each paramor his leman knowes,  
Each bird his mate, ne any does envy  
Their goodly meriment and gay felicity.

## XLII

There is continuall spring, and harvest  
there  
Continuall, both meeting at one tyme:  
For both the boughes doe laughing blossoms  
beare,  
And with fresh colourns decke the wanton  
pryme,  
And eke attonce the heavy trees they  
clyme,  
Which seeme to labour under their fruites  
lode:  
The whiles the joyous birdes make their  
pastyme  
Emongst the shady leaves, their sweet  
abode,  
And their trew loves without suspicion tell  
abrode.

## XLIII

Right in the midst of that paradise  
There stood a stately mount, on whose  
round top  
A gloomy grove of mirtle trees did rise,  
Whose shady boughes sharp steele did  
never lop,  
Nor wicked beastes their tender buds did  
crop,  
But like a girlond compassed the hight,  
And from their fruitfull sydes sweet gum  
did drop,  
That all the ground, with pretious deaw  
bedight,  
Threw forth most dainty odours, and most  
sweet delight.

## XLIV

And in the thickest covert of that shade  
There was a pleasaunt arber, not by art,

But of the trees owne inclination made,  
Which knitting their rancke braunches part  
to part,  
With wanton yvie twyne entrayld athwart,  
And eglantine and caprifole emong,  
Fashiond above within their inmost part,  
That nether Phoebus beams could through  
them throng,  
Nor Aeolus sharp blast could worke them  
any wrong.

## XLV

And all about grew every sort of flowre,  
To which sad lovers were transformde of  
yore;  
Fresh Hyacinthus, Phœbus paramoure  
And dearest love,  
Foolish Narcisse, that likes the watry shore,  
Sad Amaranthus, made a flowre but late,  
Sad Amaranthus, in whose purple gore  
Me seemes I see Amintas wretched fate,  
To whom sweet poets verse hath given end-  
lesse date.

## XLVI

There wont fayre Venus often to enjoy  
Her deare Adonis joyous company,  
And reape sweet pleasure of the wanton  
boy:  
There yet, some say, in secret he does ly,  
Lapped in flowres and pretious spycery,  
By her hid from the world, and from the  
skill  
Of Stygian gods, which doe her love envy;  
But she her selfe, when ever that she will,  
Possesseth him, and of his sweetnesse takes  
her fill.

## XLVII

And sooth, it seemes, they say: for he may  
not  
For ever dye, and ever buried bee  
In balefull night, where all thinges are for-  
got;  
All be he subject to mortalitie,  
Yet is eterne in mutabilitie,  
And by succession made perpetuall,  
Transformed oft, and chaunged diverslie:  
For him the father of all formes they call;  
Therefore needs mote he live, that living  
gives to all.

## XLVIII

There now he liveth in eternall blis,  
Joying his goddesse, and of her enjoyd:

Ne feareth he henceforth that foe of his,  
Which with his cruell tuske him deadly  
cloyd:  
For that wilde bore, the which him once  
annoyd,  
She firmly hath emprisoned for ay,  
That her sweet love his malice mote avoyd,  
In a strong rocky cave, which is, they  
say,  
Hewen underneath that mount, that none  
him losen may.

## XLIX

There now he lives in everlasting joy,  
With many of the gods in company,  
Which thether haunt, and with the winged  
boy  
Sporting him selfe in safe felicity:  
Who, when he hath with spoiles and cru-  
elty  
Ransackt the world, and in the wofull  
harts  
Of many wretches set his triumphes hye,  
Thether resortes, and laying his sad darts  
Asyde, with faire Adonis playes his wanton  
partes.

## L

And his trew love, faire Psyche, with him  
playes,  
Fayre Psyche to him lately reconeyld,  
After long troubles and unmeet upbrayes,  
With which his mother Venus her revyld,  
And eke himselfe her cruelly exyld:  
But now in stedfast love and happy state  
She with him lives, and hath him borne a  
chylde,  
Pleasure, that doth both gods and men  
aggrate,  
Pleasure, the daughter of Cupid and Psyche  
late.

## LI

Hether great Venus brought this infant  
fayre,  
The yonger daughter of Chrysogonee,  
And unto Psyche with great trust and care  
Committed her, yfostered to bee,  
And trained up in trew feminitee:  
Who no lesse carefully her tendered  
Then her owne daughter Pleasure, to whom  
shee  
Made her companion, and her lessoned  
In all the lore of love and goodly woman-  
head.



## LII

In which when she to perfect ripenes grew,  
Of grace and beauteie noble paragone,  
She brought her forth into the worldes vew,  
To be th' ensample of true love alone,  
And lodestarre of all chaste affection  
To all fayre ladies, that doe live on grownd.  
To Faery court she came, where many one  
Admyrd her goodly haveour, and fownd  
His feeble hart wide launCHED with loves  
cruel wownd.

## LIII

But she to none of them her love did cast,  
Save to the noble knight, Sir Scudamore,  
To whom her loving hart she linked fast  
In faithfull love, t' abide for evermore,  
And for his dearest sake endured sore,  
Sore trouble of an hainous enemy,  
Who her would forced have to have forlore  
Her former love and stedfast loialty,  
As ye may elsewhere reade that ruefull his-  
tory.

## LIV

But well I weene ye first desire to learne  
What end unto that fearefull damozell,  
Which fledd so fast from that same foster  
stearne,  
Whom with his brethren Timias slew, be-  
fell:  
That was, to weet, the goodly Florimell,  
Who, wandring for to seeke her lover deare,  
Her lover deare, her dearest Marinell,  
Into misfortune fell, as ye did heare,  
And from Prince Arthure fled with wings  
of idle feare.

## CANTO VII

The witches sonne loves Florimell:  
She flies, he faines to dy.  
Satyrane saves the Squire of Dames  
From gyaunts tyranny.

## I

LIKE as an hynd forth singled from the  
heard,  
That hath escaped from a ravenous beast,  
Yet flies away of her owne feete afeard,  
And every leafe, that shaketh with the  
least  
Murmure of winde, her terror hath encreast;  
So fledd fayre Florimell from her vaine  
feare,

Long after she from perill was releast:  
Each shade she saw, and each noyse she did  
heare,  
Did seeme to be the same which she escapt  
whileare.

## II

All that same evening she in flying spent,  
And all that night her course continewed:  
Ne did she let dull sleepe once to relent,  
Nor wearinesse to slack her hast, but fled  
Ever alike, as if her former dred  
Were hard behind, her ready to arrest:  
And her white palfrey, having conquered  
The maistring raines out of her weary  
wrest,  
Perforce her carried where ever he thought  
best.

## III

So long as breath and hable puissance  
Did native corage unto him supply,  
His pace he freshly forward did advaunce,  
And carried her beyond all jeopardy;  
But nought that wanteth rest can long  
aby:  
He, having through incessant travaill spent  
His force, at last perforce adowne did ly,  
Ne foot could further move. The lady gent  
Thereat was suddein strook with great  
astonishment;

## IV

And forst t' alight, on foot mote algates  
fare,  
A traveiler unwonted to such way:  
Need teacheth her this lesson hard and  
rare,  
That Fortune all in equall launce doth  
sway,  
And mortall miseries doth make her play.  
So long she traveild, till at length she  
came  
To an hilles side, which did to her bewray  
A litle valley, subject to the same,  
All coverd with thick woodes, that quite it  
overcame.

## V

Through the tops of the high trees she did  
desery  
A litle smoke, whose vapour thin and light,  
Reeking aloft, uprolled to the sky:  
Which chearefull signe did send unto her  
sight

That in the same did wonne some living  
wight.  
Eftsoones her steps she thereunto applyd,  
And came at last, in weary wretched plight,  
Unto the place, to which her hope did  
guyde,  
To finde some refuge there, and rest her  
wearie syde.

## VI

There in a gloomy hollow glen she found  
A little cottage, built of stickes and reedes  
In homely wize, and wald with sods around,  
In which a witch did dwell, in loathly  
weedes,  
And wilfull want, all carelesse of her  
needes;  
So choosing solitarie to abide,  
Far from all neighbours, that her diuinish  
deedes  
And hellish arts from people she might  
hide,  
And hurt far off unknowne whom ever she  
envide.

## VII

The damzell there arriving entred in;  
Where sitting on the flore the hag she  
found,  
Busie (as seem'd) about some wicked gin:  
Who, soone as she beheld that suddein  
stound,  
Lightly upstartd from the dustie ground,  
And with fell looke and hollow deadly  
gaze  
Stared on her awhile, as one astound,  
Ne had one word to speake, for great  
amaze,  
But shewd by outward signes that dread  
her sence did daze.

## VIII

At last, turning her feare to foolish wrath,  
She askt, what devill had her thether  
brought,  
And who she was, and what unwonted path  
Had guided her, unwelcomed, unsought.  
To which the damzell, full of doubtfull  
thought,  
Her mildly answer'd: 'Beldame, be not  
wroth  
With silly virgin, by adventure brought  
Unto your dwelling, ignorant and loth,  
That crave but rowme to rest, while tem-  
pest overblo'th.'

## IX

With that, adowne out of her christall  
eyne  
Few trickling teares she softly forth let  
fall,  
That like to orient perles did purely shyne  
Upon her snowy cheeke; and therewithall  
She sighed soft, that none so bestiall  
Nor salvage hart, but ruth of her sad  
plight  
Would make to melt, or pitteously appall;  
And that vile hag, all were her whole de-  
light  
In mischiefe, was much moved at so pit-  
teous sight;

## X

And gan recomfort her in her rude wyse,  
With womanish compassion of her plaint,  
Wiping the teares from her suffused eyes,  
And bidding her sit downe, to rest her  
faint  
And wearie limbs awhile. She nothing  
quaint  
Nor s'deignfull of so homely fashion,  
Sith brought she was now to so hard con-  
straint,  
Sate downe upon the dusty ground anon,  
As glad of that small rest, as bird of tem-  
pest gon.

## XI

Tho gan she gather up her garments rent,  
And her loose lockes to dight in order dew,  
With golden wreath and gorgeous orna-  
ment;  
Whom such whenas the wicked hag did  
vew,  
She was astonisht at her heavenly hew,  
And doubted her to deeme an earthly  
wight,  
But or some goddesses, or of Dianas crew,  
And thought her to adore with humble  
spright:  
T'adore thing so divine as beauty were but  
right.

## XII

This wicked woman had a wicked sonne,  
The comfort of her age and weary dayes,  
A laesy loord, for nothing good to donne,  
But stretched forth in ydlenesse alwayes;  
Ne ever cast his mind to covet prayse,  
Or ply him selfe to any honest trade,  
But all the day before the sunny rayes

He us'd to slug, or sleepe in slothfull shade:  
Such laesinesse both lewd and poore at-  
tonce him made.

## XIII

He, comming home at undertime, there  
found

The fayrest creature that he ever saw  
Sitting beside his mother on the ground;  
The sight whereof did greatly him adaw,  
And his base thought with terrour and with  
aw

So inly smot, that, as one which hath gaz'd  
On the bright sunne unwares, doth soone  
withdraw

His feeble eyne, with too much brightnes  
daz'd,

So stared he on her, and stood long while  
amaz'd.

## XIV

Softly at last he gan his mother aske,  
What mister wight that was, and whence  
deriv'd,

That in so straunge disguizement there did  
maske,

And by what accident she there arriv'd:  
But she, as one nigh of her wits depriv'd,  
With nought but ghastly lookes him an-  
swered,

Like to a ghost, that lately is reviv'd  
From Stygian shores, where late it wan-  
dered;

So both at her, and each at other wondered.

## XV

But the fayre virgin was so meeke and  
myld,

That she to them vouchsafed to embrace  
Her goodly port, and to their senses vyld  
Her gentle speach applyde, that in short  
space

She grew familiare in that desert place.  
During which time the chorle, through her  
so kind

And courtese use, conceiv'd affection bace,  
And cast to love her in his brutish mind;  
No love, but brutish lust, that was so beastly  
tind.

## XVI

Closely the wicked flame his bowels brent,  
And shortly grew into outrageous fire;  
Yet had he not the hart, nor hardiment,  
As unto her to utter his desire;

His caytive thought durst not so high  
aspire:

But with soft sighes and lovely semblaunces  
He ween'd that his affection entire  
She should aread; many resembaunces  
To her he made, and many kinde remem-  
braunces.

## XVII

Oft from the forrest wildings he did bring,  
Whose sides empurpled were with smyling  
red,

And oft young birds, which he had taught  
to sing

His maistresse praises sweetly caroled;  
Girlands of flowres sometimes for her faire  
hed

He fine would dight; sometimes the squirrell  
wild

He brought to her in bands, as conquered  
To be her thrall, his fellow servant vild;  
All which she of him tooke with counten-  
ance meeke and mild.

## XVIII

But, past awhile, when she fit season saw  
To leave that desert mansion, she cast  
In secret wize her selfe thence to withdraw,  
For feare of mischiefe, which she did fore-  
cast

Might be by the witch or that her sonne  
compast:

Her wearie palfrey closely, as she might,  
Now well recovered after long repast,  
In his proud furnitures she freshly dight,  
His late miswandred wayes now to remea-  
sure right.

## XIX

And earely, ere the dawning day appeard,  
She forth issewed, and on her journey went;  
She went in perill, of each noyse affeard,  
And of each shade that did it selfe present;

For still she feared to be overhent  
Of that vile hag, or her uncivile sonne:  
Who when, too late awaking, well they  
kent

That their fayre guest was gone, they both  
begonne

To make exceeding mone, as they had  
beene undonne.

## XX

But that lewd lover did the most lament  
For her depart, that ever man did heare;



He knockt his brest with desperate intent,  
And scratcht his face, and with his teeth  
did teare

His rugged flesh, and rent his ragged heare:  
That his sad mother, seeing his sore plight,  
Was greatly woe begon, and gan to feare  
Least his fraile senses were emperisht  
quight,

And love to frenzy turnd, sith love is fran-  
ticke hight.

## XXI

All wayes shee sought, him to restore to  
plight,

With herbs, with charms, with counsel, and  
with teares,

But tears, nor charms, nor herbs, nor coun-  
sell might

Asswage the fury which his entrails teares:  
So strong is passion that no reason heares.

Tho, when all other helps she saw to faile,  
She turnd her selfe backe to her wicked  
teares,

And by her divelish arts thought to pre-  
vaile,

To bring her backe againe, or worke her finall  
bale.

## XXII

Eftesoones out of her hidden cave she cald  
An hideous beast, of horrible aspect,  
That could the stoutest corage have appald;  
Monstrous, mishapt, and all his backe was  
spect

With thousand spots of colours queint elect;  
Thereto so swifte that it all beasts did pas:  
Like never yet did living cie detect;  
But likest it to an hyena was,  
That feeds on wemens flesh, as others feede  
on gras.

## XXIII

It forth she cald, and gave it streight in  
charge,

Through thicke and thin her to poursew  
apace,

Ne once to stay to rest, or breath at large,  
Till her he had attaind, and brought in  
place,

Or quite devourd her beauties scornefull  
grace.

The monster, swifte as word that from her  
went,

Went forth in haste, and did her footing  
trace

So sure and swiftly, through his perfect  
sent

And passing speede, that shortly he her  
overhent.

## XXIV

Whom when the fearefull damzell nigh  
espide,

No need to bid her fast away to flie;  
That ugly shape so sore her terrifide,  
That it she shund no lesse then dread to  
die;

And her flitt palfrey did so well apply  
His nimble feet to her conceived feare,  
That whilest his breath did strength to him  
supply,

From perill free he her away did beare:  
But when his force gan faile, his pace gan  
wex areare.

## XXV

Which whenas she perceiv'd, she was dis-  
mayd

At that same last extremity ful sore,  
And of her safety greatly grew afraid:  
And now she gan approach to the sea shore,  
As it befell, that she could flie no more,  
But yield her selfe to spoile of greedie-  
nesse:

Lightly she leaped, as a wight forlore,  
From her dull horse, in desperate distresse,  
And to her feet betooke her doubtfull sick-  
ennesse.

## XXVI

Not halfe so fast the wicked Myrrha fled  
From dread of her revenging fathers hond,  
Nor halfe so fast, to save her maydenhed,  
Fled fearfull Daphne on th' Ægean strond,  
As Florimell fled from that monster yond,  
To reach the sea ere she of him were  
raught:

For in the sea to drowne her selfe she fond,  
Rather then of the tyrant to be caught:  
Thereto fear gave her wings, and need her  
corage taught.

## XXVII

It fortun'd (High God did so ordaine)  
As shee arrived on the roring shore,  
In minde to leape into the mighty maine,  
A little bote lay hoving her before,  
In which there slept a fisher old and pore,  
The whiles his nets were drying on the sand:  
Into the same shee lept, and with the ore

Did thrust the shallop from the floting  
strand:  
So safety fownd at sea, which she fownd  
not at land.

## XXVIII

The monster, ready on the pray to sease,  
Was of his forward hope deceived quight,  
Ne durst assay to wade the perlous seas,  
But, greedily long gaping at the sight,  
At last in vaine was forst to turne his flight,  
And tell the idle tidings to his dame:  
Yet, to avenge his divelish despight,  
He sett upon her palfrey tired lame,  
And slew him cruelly, ere any reskew came.

## XXIX

And after having him embowelled,  
To fill his hellish gorge, it chaunst a knight  
To passe that way, as forth he travelled:  
Yt was a goodly swaine, and of great might,  
As ever man that bloody field did fight;  
But in vain sheows, that wont yong knights  
bewitch,  
And courtly services tooke no delight,  
But rather joyd to bee then seemen sich:  
For both to be and seeme to him was labor  
lich.

## XXX

It was to weete the good Sir Satyrane,  
That raungd abroad to seeke adventures  
wilde,  
As was his wont, in forest and in plaine:  
He was all arind in rugged steele unfiled,  
As in the smoky forge it was compilde,  
And in his scutchin bore a satyres hedd:  
He comming present, where the monster  
vilde  
Upon that milke-white palfreyes carcas  
fedd,  
Unto his reskew ran, and greedily him  
spedd.

## XXXI

There well perceivd he, that it was the  
horse  
Whereon faire Florimell was wont to ride,  
That of that feend was rent without re-  
morse:  
Much feared he, least ought did ill betide  
To that faire maide, the flowre of wemens  
pride;  
For her he dearely loved, and in all  
His famous conquests highly magnifide:

Besides, her golden girdle, which did fall  
From her in flight, he fownd, that did him  
sore apall.

## XXXII

Full of sad feare and doubtfull agony,  
Fiercely he flew upon that wicked feend;  
And with huge strokes and cruell battery  
Him forst to leave his pray, for to attend  
Him selfe from deadly daunger to defend:  
Full many wounds in his corrupted flesh  
He did engrave, and muchell blood did spend,  
Yet might not doe him die, but aie more fresh  
And fierce he still appeard, the more he did  
him thresh.

## XXXIII

He wist not how him to despoile of life,  
Ne how to win the wished victory,  
Sith him he saw still stronger grow through  
strife,  
And him selfe weaker through infirmity:  
Greatly he grew enrag'd, and furiously  
Hurling his sword away, he lightly leapt  
Upon the beast, that with great cruelty  
Rored and raged to be underkept;  
Yet he perforce him held, and strokes upon  
him hept.

## XXXIV

As he that strives to stop a suddein flood,  
And in strong bancks his violence containe,  
Forceth it swell above his wonted mood,  
And largely overflow the fruitfull plaine,  
That all the countrey seemes to be a maine,  
And the rich furrowes flote, all quite for-  
donne:  
The wofull husbandman doth lowd com-  
plaine,  
To see his whole yeares labor lost so soone,  
For which to God he made so many an idle  
boone:

## XXXV

So him he held, and did through might  
amate:  
So long he held him, and him bett so long,  
That at the last his fiercenes gan abate,  
And meekely stoup unto the victor strong:  
Who, to avenge the implacable wrong,  
Which he supposed donne to Florimell,  
Sought by all meanes his dolor to prolong,  
Sith dint of steele his carcas could not quell,  
His maker with her charmes had framed him  
so well.

## XXXVI

The golden ribband, which that virgin wore  
About her sc slender waste, he tooke in hand,  
And with it bownd the beast, that lowd did  
rore

For great despight of that unwonted band,  
Yet dared not his victor to withstand,  
But trembled like a lambe fled from the  
pray,  
And all the way him followd on the strand,  
As he had long bene learned to obay;  
Yet never learned he such service till that  
day.

## XXXVII

Thus as he led the beast along the way,  
He spide far of a mighty giauntesse,  
Fast flying on a courser dapled gray  
From a bold knight, that with great hardi-  
nesse

Her hard pursewd, and sought for to sup-  
presse:

She bore before her lap a dolefull squire,  
Lying athwart her horse in great distresse,  
Fast bounden hand and foote with cords of  
wire,

Whom she did meane to make the thrall of  
her desire.

## XXXVIII

Which whenas Satyrane beheld, in haste  
He lefte his captive beast at liberty,  
And crost the nearest way, by which he  
east

Her to encounter ere she passed by:  
But she the way shund nathemore forthy,  
But forward gallopt fast; which when he  
spyde,

His mighty speare he couched warily,  
And at her ran: she having him descryde,  
Her selfe to fight addrest, and threw her  
lode aside.

## XXXIX

Like as a goshauke, that in foote doth  
beare

A trembling culver, having spide on hight  
An eagle, that with plumy wings doth  
sheare

The subtil ayre, stouping with all his  
might,

The quarry throwes to ground with fell  
despight,

And to the batteill doth her selfe prepare:  
So ran the geauntesse unto the fight;

Her fyrie eyes with furious sparkes did  
stare,  
And with blasphemous bannes High God in  
peeeces tare.

## XL

She caught in hand an huge great yron  
mace,

Wherewith she many had of life depriv'd;  
But ere the stroke could seize his aymed  
place,

His speare amidst her sun-brode shield ar-  
riv'd;

Yet nathemore the steele a sonder riv'd,  
All were the beame in bignes like a mast,  
Ne her out of the stedfast sadle driv'd,  
But glauncing on the tempred metall, brast  
In thousand shivers, and so forth beside her  
past.

## XLI

Her steed did stagger with that puissaunt  
strooke,

But she no more was moved with that  
might,

Then it had lighted on an aged oke;  
Or on the marble pillour, that is pight  
Upon the top of Mount Olympus hight,  
For the brave youthly champions to assay,  
With burning charet wheelles it nigh to  
smite:

But who that smites it mars his joyous  
play,

And is the spectacle of ruinous decay.

## XLII

Yet therewith sore enrag'd, with sterne re-  
gard

Her dreadfull weapon she to him addrest,  
Which on his helmet martelled so hard,  
That made him low incline his lofty crest,  
And bowd his battred visour to his brest:  
Wherewith he was so stund that he n'ote  
ryde,

But reeled to and fro from east to west:  
Which when his cruell enemy espyde,  
She lightly unto him adjoynd syde to syde;

## XLIII

And on his collar laying puissaunt hand,  
Out of his wavering seat him pluckt per-  
forse,

Perforse him pluckt, unable to withstand,  
Or helpe himselfe, and laying thwart her  
horse,



In loathly wise like to a carrion corse,  
She bore him fast away. Which when the  
knight

That her pursewd saw, with great remorse  
He nere was touched in his noble spright,  
And gan encrease his speed, as she encreast  
her flight.

## XLIV

Whom when as nigh approaching she espyde,  
She threw away her burden angrily;  
For she list not the batteill to abide,  
But made her selfe more light, away to  
fly:

Yet her the hardy knight pursewd so nye  
That almost in the backe he oft her strake:  
But still, when him at hand she did espy,  
She turnd, and semblaunce of faire fight  
did make;  
But when he stayd, to flight againe she did  
her take.

## XLV

By this the good Sir Satyrane gan wake  
Out of his dreame, that did him long en-  
traunce,

And seeing none in place, he gan to make  
Exceeding mone, and curst that cruell  
chaunce,

Which reft from him so faire a chevisaunce:  
At length he spyde whereas that wofull  
squire,

Whom he had reskewed from captivaunce  
Of his strong foe, lay tumbled in the myre,  
Unable to arise, or foot or hand to styre.

## XLVI

To whom approaching, well he mote per-  
ceive

In that fowle plight a comely personage,  
And lovely face, made fit for to deceive  
Fraile ladies hart with loves consuming  
rage,

Now in the blossome of his freshest age:  
He reard him up, and loosd his yron bands,  
And after gan inquire his parentage,  
And how he fell into that gyaunts hands,  
And who that was, which chaced her along  
the lands.

## XLVII

Then trembling yet through feare, the  
squire bespake:

‘That geauntesse Argante is bchight,  
A daughter of the Titans which did make

Warre against heven, and heaped hils on  
hight,  
To scale the skyes, and put Jove from his  
right:

Her syre Typhoeus was, who, mad through  
merth,

And dronke with blood of men, slaine by his  
might,

Through incest her of his owne mother  
Earth

Whylome begot, being but halfe twin of  
that berth.

## XLVIII

‘For at that berth another babe she bore,  
To weet, the mightie Ollyphant, that  
wrought

Great wreake to many errant knights of  
yore,

And many hath to foule confusion brought.  
These twinnes, men say, (a thing far pass-  
ing thought)

Whiles in their mothers wombe enclod  
they were,

Ere they into the lightsom world were  
brought,

In fleshly lust were mingled both yfere,  
And in that monstrous wise did to the  
world appere.

## XLIX

‘So liv’d they ever after in like sin,  
Gainst natures law and good behaveoure:  
But greatest shame was to that maiden  
twin,

Who, not content so fowly to devour  
Her native flesh, and staine her brothers  
bowre,

Did wallow in all other fleshly myre,  
And suffred beastes her body to deflowre,  
So whot she burned in that lustfull fyre:

Yet all that might not slake her sensuall  
desyre.

## L

‘But over all the countrie she did raunge,  
To seeke young men, to quench her flaming  
thrust,

And feed her fancy with delightfull  
channge:

Whom so she fittest findes to serve her lust,  
Through her maine strength, in which she  
most doth trust,

She with her brings into a secret ile,  
Where in eternall bondage dye he must.

Or be the vassall of her pleasures vile,  
And in all shamefull sort him selfe with  
her denle.

## LI

'Me, seely wretch, she so at vauntage  
caught,  
After she long in waite for me did lye,  
And meant unto her prison to have brought,  
Her lothsom pleasure there to satisfye;  
That thousand deathes me lever were to  
dye,  
Then breake the vow, that to faire Colum-  
bell  
I plighted have, and yet keepe stedfastly.  
As for my name, it mistrcth not to tell;  
Call me the Squire of Dames; that me  
beseemeth well.

## LII

'But that bold knight, whom ye pursuing  
saw  
That geauntesse, is not such as she seemd,  
But a faire virgin, that in martiall law  
And deedes of armes above all dames is  
deemd,  
And above many knightes is eke esteemd,  
For her great worth; she Palladine is hight:  
She you from death, you me from dread,  
redeemd.  
Ne any may that monster match in fight,  
But she, or such as she, that is so chaste a  
wight.'

## LIII

'Her well beseemes that quest,' quoth Sa-  
tyrane:  
'But read, thou Squire of Dames, what  
vow is this,  
Which thou upon thy selfe hast lately ta'ne?'  
'That shall I you recount,' quoth he, 'ywis,  
So be ye pleasd to pardon all amis.  
That gentle lady whom I love and serve,  
After long suit and wearie servicis,  
Did aske me how I could her love deserve,  
And how she might be sure that I would  
never swerve.

## LIV

'I, glad by any meanes her grace to gaine,  
Badd her commaund my life to save or spill.  
Eftsoones she badd me, with inecessaunt  
paine  
To wander through the world abroad at  
will,

And every where, where with my power or  
skill

I might doe service unto gentle dames,  
That I the same should faithfully fulfill,  
And at the twelve monethes end should  
bring their names  
And pledges, as the spoiles of my victorious  
games.

## LV

'So well I to faire ladies service did,  
And found such favour in their loving  
hartes,  
That, ere the yeare his course had com-  
passid,  
Thre hundred pledges for my good desartes,  
And thrise three hundred thanks for my  
good partes,  
I with me brought, and did to her present:  
Which when she saw, more bent to eke my  
smartes  
Then to reward my trusty true intent,  
She gan for me devise a grievous punish-  
ment:

## LVI

'To weet, that I my travell should resume,  
And with like labour walke the world  
arownd,  
Ne ever to her presenee should presume,  
Till I so many other dames had fownd,  
The which, for all the suit I could pro-  
pownd,  
Would me refuse their pledges to afford,  
But did abide for ever chaste and sownd.'  
'Ah! gentle squire,' quoth he, 'tell at one  
word,  
How many fowndst thou such to put in thy  
record?'

## LVII

'In deed, sir knight,' said he, 'one word  
may tell  
All that I ever fownd so wisely stayd;  
For onely three they were disposd so well,  
And yet three yeares I now abroad have  
strayd,  
To fynd them out.' 'Mote I,' then laughing  
sayd  
The knight, 'inquire of thee, what were  
those three,  
The which thy proffred curtesie denayd?  
Or ill they seemed sure avizd to bee,  
Or brutishly brought up, that nev'r did  
fashions sec.'

## LVIII

'The first which then refused me,' said hee,  
 'Certes was but a common courtesane,  
 Yet flat refusd to have adoe with mee,  
 Because I could not give her many a jane.'  
 (Thereat full hartely laughed Satyrane.)  
 'The second was an holy nunne to chose,  
 Which would not let me be her chappel-  
 lane,  
 Because she knew, she sayd, I would dis-  
 close  
 Her counsell, if she should her trust in me  
 repose.

## LIX

'The third a damzell was of low degree,  
 Whom I in countrey cottage fownd by  
 chaunce:  
 Full litle weened I, that chastitee  
 Had lodging in so meane a maintenaunce;  
 Yet was she fayre, and in her countenaunce  
 Dwelt simple truth in seemely fashion.  
 Long thus I woo'd her with dew observ-  
 aunce,  
 In hope unto my pleasure to have won,  
 But was as far at last, as when I first begon.

## LX

'Safe her, I never any woman found,  
 That chastity did for it selfe embrace,  
 But were for other causes firme and sound,  
 Either for want of handsome time and  
 place,  
 Or else for feare of shame and fowle dis-  
 grace.  
 Thus am I hopelesse ever to attaine  
 My ladies love, in such a desperate case,  
 But all my dayes am like to waste in vaine,  
 Seeking to match the chaste with th' un-  
 chaste ladies traine.'

## LXI

'Perdy,' sayd Satyrane, 'thou Squire of  
 Dames,  
 Great labour fondly hast thou hent in hand,  
 To get small thankes, and therewith many  
 blames,  
 That may amongst Alcides labours stand.'  
 Thence backe returning to the former land,  
 Where late he left the beast he overcame,  
 He found him not; for he had broke his  
 band,  
 And was returnd againe unto his dame,  
 To tell what tydings of fayre Florimell be-  
 came.

## CANTO VIII

The witch creates a snowy lady,  
 like to Florimell:  
 Who, wronged by carle, by Proteus sav'd.  
 Is sought by Paridell.

## I

So oft as I this history record,  
 My hart doth melt with meere compassion,  
 To thinke how causelesse of her owne accord  
 This gentle damzell, whom I write upon,  
 Should plonged be in such affliction,  
 Without all hope of comfort or reliefe,  
 That sure I weene, the hardest hart of stone  
 Would hardly finde to aggravate her grieve;  
 For misery craves rather mercy then re-  
 prieve.

## II

But that accursed hag, her hostesse late,  
 Had so enranckled her malicious hart,  
 That she desyrd th' abridgement of her fate,  
 Or long enlargement of her painefull smart.  
 Now when the beast, which by her wicked  
 art  
 Late forth she sent, she backe retourning  
 spyde,  
 Tyde with her broken girdle, it a part  
 Of her rich spoyle, whom he had earst de-  
 stroyd,  
 She weend, and wondrous gladnes to her  
 hart applyde.

## III

And with it romning hast'ly to her sonne,  
 Thought with that sight him much to have  
 reliv'd;  
 Who thereby deeming sure the thing as  
 donne,  
 His former grieve with furie fresh reviv'd,  
 Much more then earst, and would have al-  
 gates riv'd  
 The hart out of his brest: for sith her dedd  
 He surely dempt, himselfe he thought de-  
 priv'd  
 Quite of all hope, wherewith he long had  
 fedd  
 His foolish malady, and long time had mis-  
 ledd.

## IV

With thought whereof, exceeding mad he  
 grew,  
 And in his rage his mother would have  
 slaine,



Had she not fled into a secret mew,  
Where she was wont her sprights to enter-  
taine,  
The maisters of her art: there was she faine  
To call them all in order to her ayde,  
And them conjure, upon eternall paine,  
To counsell her so carefully dismayd,  
How she might heale her sonne, whose  
senses were decayd.

## V

By their advise, and her owne wicked wit,  
She there deviz'd a wondrous worke to  
frame,  
Whose like on earth was never framed  
yit,  
That even Nature selfe envide the same,  
And grudg'd to see the counterfet should  
shame  
The thing it selfe. In hand she boldly  
tooke  
To make another like the former dame,  
Another Florimell, in shape and looke  
So lively and so like that many it mistooke.

## VI

The substance, whercof she the body made,  
Was purest snow in massy mould congeald,  
Which she had gathered in a shady glade  
Of the Riphæan hils, to her reveald  
By errant sprights, but from all men con-  
ceald:  
The same she tempred with fine mercury,  
And virgin wax, that never yet was seald,  
And mingled them with perfect vermily,  
That like a lively sanguine it seemd to the  
eye.

## VII

In stead of eyes, two burning lampes she  
set  
In silver sockets, shynning like the skyes,  
And a quicke moving spirit did arret  
To stirre and roll them, like a womans eyes:  
In stead of yellow lockes, she did devyse,  
With golden wyre to weave her curled head;  
Yet golden wyre was not so yellow thryse  
As Florimells fayre heare: and in the stead  
Of life, she put a spright to rule the carcas  
dead:

## VIII

A wicked spright, yfraught with fawning  
guyle  
And fayre resemblance. above all the rest

Which with the Prince of Darkenes fell  
somewhyle  
From heavens blis and everlasting rest:  
Him needed not instruct, which way were  
best  
Him selfe to fashion likest Florimell,  
Ne how to speake, ne how to use his gest;  
For he in counterfesaunce did excell,  
And all the wyles of wemens wits knew  
passing well.

## IX

Him shaped thus she deckt in garments  
gay,  
Which Florimell had left behind her late,  
That who so then her saw would surely say,  
It was her selfe whom it did imitate,  
Or fayrer then her selfe, if ought algate  
Might fayrer be. And then she forth her  
brought  
Unto her some, that lay in feeble state;  
Who seeing her gan streight upstart, and  
thought  
She was the lady selfe, whom he so long had  
sought.

## X

Tho, fast her clipping twixt his armes  
twayne,  
Extremely joyed in so happy sight,  
And soone forgot his former sickely payne;  
But she, the more to seeme such as she  
hight,  
Coyly rebutted his embracement light;  
Yet still with gentle countenance retain'd  
Enough to hold a foole in vaine delight:  
Him long she so with shadowes entertain'd,  
As her creatresse had in charge to her or-  
dain'd.

## XI

Till on a day, as he disposed was  
To walke the woodes with that his idole  
faire,  
Her to disport, and idle time to pas  
In th' open freshnes of the gentle aire,  
A knight that way there chaunced to re-  
paire;  
Yet knight he was not, but a boastfull  
swaine,  
That deedes of armes had ever in despaire,  
Proud Braggadocchio, that in vaunting  
vaine  
His glory did repose, and credit did main-  
taine.

## XII

He, seeing with that chorle so faire a wight,  
Decked with many a costly ornament,  
Much mervelled thereat, as well he might,  
And thought that match a fowle disparagement:

His bloody speare eftesoones he boldly bent  
Against the silly clowne, who, dead through  
feare,

Fell streight to ground in great astonishment:

'Villein,' sayd he, 'this lady is my deare;  
Dy, if thou it gainesay: I will away her  
beare.'

## XIII

The fearefull chorle durst not gainesay, nor  
dooe,

But trembling stood, and yielded him the  
pray;

Who, finding litle leasure her to woove,  
On Tromparts steed her mounted without  
stay,

And without reskew led her quite away.  
Proud man himselfe then Braggadochio  
deem'd,

And next to none, after that happy day,  
Being possessed of that spoyle, which seem'd  
The fairest wight on ground, and most of  
men esteem'd.

## XIV

But when hee saw him selfe free from pour-  
sute,

He gan make gentle purpose to his dame,  
With termes of love and lewdnesse disso-  
lute;

For he could well his glozing speaches  
frame

To such vaine uses, that him best became:  
But she thereto would lend but light regard,  
As seeming sory that she ever came  
Into his powre, that used her so hard,  
To reave her honor, which she more then  
life prefard.

## XV

Thus as they two of kindnes treated long,  
There them by chaunce encountred on the  
way

An armed knight, upon a courser strong,  
Whose trampling feete upon the hollow lay  
Seemed to thunder, and did nigh affray  
That capons corage: yet he looked grim,  
And faynd to cheare his lady in dismay,

Who seemd for feare to quake in every  
lim,  
And her to save from outrage meekely  
prayed him.

## XVI

Fiercely that straunger forward came, and  
nigh

Approching, with bold words and bitter  
threat,

Bad that same boaster, as he mote on high,  
To leave to him that lady for excheat,  
Or bide him batteill without further treat.  
That challenge did too peremptory seeme,  
And fild his senses with abashment great;  
Yet, seeing nigh him jeopardy extreme,  
He it dissembled well, and light seemd to  
esteeme;

## XVII

Saying, 'Thou foolish knight! that weenst  
with words

To steale away that I with blowes have  
wonne,

And broght through points of many perilous  
swords:

But if thee list to see thy courser ronne,  
Or prove thy selfe, this sad encounter  
shonne,

And seeke els without hazard of thy hedd.'  
At those prowd words that other knight be-  
gonne

To wex exceeding wroth, and him aredd  
To turne his steede about, or sure he should  
be dedd.

## XVIII

'Sith then,' said Braggadochio, 'needes thou  
wilt

Thy daies abridge, through prooffe of puis-  
saunce,

Turne we our steeds, that both in equall tilt  
May meete againe, and each take happy  
chaunce.'

This said, they both a furlongs mountenaunce  
Retird their steeds, to ronne in even race:  
But Braggadochio with his bloody launce  
Once having turnd, no more returnd his  
face,

But lefte his love to losse, and fled him selfe  
apace.

## XIX

The knight, him seeing flie, had no regard  
Him to poursew, but to the lady rode,

And having her from Trompart lightly reard,  
 Upon his courser sett the lovely lode,  
 And with her fled away without abode.  
 Well weened he, that fairest Florimell  
 It was, with whom in company he yode,  
 And so her selfe did alwaies to him tell;  
 So made him thinke him selfe in heven, that  
 was in hell.

## XX

But Florimell her selfe was far away,  
 Driven to great distresse by fortune  
 straunge,  
 And taught the carefull mariner to play,  
 Sith late mischaunce had her compelled to  
 chaunge  
 The land for sea, at randon there to raunge:  
 Yett there that cruell queene avengeresse,  
 Not satisfyde so far her to estraunge  
 From courtly blis and wonted happinesse,  
 Did heape on her new waves of weary  
 wretchednesse.

## XXI

For being fled into the fishers bote,  
 For refuge from the monsters cruelty,  
 Long so she on the mighty maine did fote,  
 And with the tide drove forward carelesly;  
 For th' ayre was milde, and cleared was  
 the skie,  
 And all his windes Dan Aeolus did keepe  
 From stirring up their stormy enmity,  
 As pitying to see her waile and weepe;  
 But all the while the fisher did securely  
 sleepe.

## XXII

At last when droneke with drowsinesse he  
 woke,  
 And saw his drover drive along the streame,  
 He was dismayd, and thrise his brest he  
 stroke,  
 For marveill of that accident extreame;  
 But when he saw that blazing beauties  
 beame,  
 Which with rare light his bote did beauti-  
 fy,  
 He marveild more, and thought he yet did  
 dreame  
 Not well awakte, or that some extasye  
 Assotted had his sence, or dazed was his eye.

## XXIII

But when her well avizing, hee perceiv'd  
 To be no vision nor fantasticke sight,

Great comfort of her presence he conceiv'd,  
 And felt in his old corage new delight  
 To gin awake, and stir his frosen spright:  
 Tho rudely askte her, how she thether came.  
 'Ah!' sayd she, 'father, I note read aright  
 What hard misfortune brought me to this  
 same;

Yet am I glad that here I now in safety  
 ame.

## XXIV

'But thou good man, sith far in sea we bee,  
 And the great waters gin apace to swell,  
 That now no more we can the mayn-land  
 see,  
 Have care, I pray, to guide the cock-bote  
 well,  
 Least worse on sea then us on land befell.'  
 Thereat th' old man did nought but fondly  
 grin,  
 And saide, his boat the way could wisely  
 tell:

But his deceiptfull eyes did never lin  
 To looke on her faire face, and marke her  
 snowy skin.

## XXV

The sight whereof in his congealed flesh  
 Infixt such secrete sting of greedy lust,  
 That the dric withered stocke it gan refresh,  
 And kindled heat, that soone in flame forth  
 brust:

The driest wood is soonest burnt to dust.  
 Rudely to her he lept, and his rough hand,  
 Where ill became him, rashly would have  
 thrust;

But she with angry scorne him did with-  
 stond,  
 And shamefully reproved for his rudenes  
 fond.

## XXVI

But he, that never good nor maners knew,  
 Her sharpe rebuke full litle did esteeme;  
 Hard is to teach an old horse amble trew.  
 The inward smoke, that did before but  
 steepe,

Broke into open fire and rage extreme;  
 And now he strength gan adde unto his will.  
 Foreyng to doe that did him fowle mis-  
 seeme:

Beastly he threwe her downe, ne car'd to  
 spill

Her garments gay with scales of fish, that  
 all did fill.



## XXVII

The silly virgin strove him to withstand,  
All that she might, and him in vaine revild:  
Shee struggled strongly both with foote and  
hand,

To save her honor from that villaine vilde,  
And eride to heven, from humane helpe  
exild.

O ye brave knights, that boast this ladies  
love,

Where be ye now, when she is nigh defild  
Of filthy wretch? Well may she you re-  
prove

Of falsehood or of slouth, when most it may  
behave.

## XXVIII

But if that thou, Sir Satyran, didst weete,  
Or thou, Sir Peridure, her sory state,  
How soone would yee assemble many a  
fleete,

To fetch from sea that ye at land lost late!  
Towres, citties, kingdomes ye would ruin-  
ate,

In your avengement and dispiteous rage,  
Ne ought your burning fury mote abate;  
But if Sir Calidore could it presage,  
No living creature could his cruelty as-  
swage.

## XXIX

But sith that none of all her knights is nye,  
See how the heavens, of voluntary grace  
And soveraine favor towards ehasity,  
Doe succor send to her distressed cace:  
So much High God doth innocence embrace.  
It fortun'd, whilst thus she stifly strove,  
And the wide sea importuned long space  
With shrilling shriekes, Proteus abrode did  
rove,

Along the fomy waves driving his finny  
drove.

## XXX

Proteus is shepheard of the seas of yore,  
And hath the charge of Neptunes mighty  
heard,

An aged sire with head all frowy hore,  
And sprinkled frost upon his deawy beard:  
Who when those pittifull outcries he heard  
Through all the seas so ruefully resound,  
His charett swifte in hast he thether steard,  
Which, with a teeme of scaly phocas bownd,  
Was drawne upon the waves, that fomed  
him around

## XXXI

And comning to that fishers wandring bote,  
That went at will, withouten card or sayle,  
He therein saw that yrkesome sight, which  
smote

Deepe indignation and compassion frayle  
Into his hart attonce: streight did he hayle  
The greedy villein from his hoped pray,  
Of which he now did very litle fayle,  
And with his staffe, that drives his heard  
astray,

Him bett so sore, that life and sence did  
much dismay.

## XXXII

The whiles the pitteous lady up did ryse,  
Ruffled and fowly raid with filthy soyle,  
And blubbred face with teares of her faire  
eyes:

Her heart nigh broken was with weary  
toyle,

To save her selfe from that outrageous  
spoyle:

But when she looked up, to weet what  
wight

Had her from so infamous faet assoyld,  
For shame, but more for feare of his grim  
sight,

Downe in her lap she hid her face, and  
lowdly shrighit.

## XXXIII

Her selfe not saved yet from daunger  
dredd

She thought, but chaung'd from one to  
other feare:

Like as a fearefull partridge, that is fledd  
From the sharpe hauke, which her attached  
neare,

And fals to ground, to seeke for succor  
theare,

Whereas the hungry spaniells she does  
spye,

With greedy jawes her ready for to teare;  
In such distresse and sad perplexity  
Was Florimell, when Proteus she did see  
thereby.

## XXXIV

But he endeavored with speaches milde  
Her to recomfort, and accourage bold,  
Bidding her feare no more her foeman  
vilde,

Nor doubt himselfe; and who he was her  
told.

Yet all that could not from affright her hold,  
 Ne to recomfort her at all prevayld;  
 For her faint hart was with the frosen cold  
 Benumbd so nly, that her wits nigh fayld,  
 And all her sences with abashment quite  
 were quayld.

## XXXV

Her up betwixt his rugged hands he reard,  
 And with his frory lips full softly kist,  
 Whiles the cold ysickles from his rough  
 beard

Dropped adowne upon her yvory brest:  
 Yet he him selfe so busily addrest,  
 That her out of astonishment he wrought,  
 And out of that same fishers filthy nest  
 Removing her, into his charet brought,  
 And there with many gentle termes her  
 faire besought.

## XXXVI

But that old leachour, which with bold as-  
 sault

That beautie durst presume to violate,  
 He cast to punish for his hainous fault:  
 Then tooke he him, yet trembling sith of  
 late,

And tyde behind his charet, to aggrate  
 The virgin, whom he had abusde so sore:  
 So drag'd him through the waves in scorn-  
 full state,

And after cast him up upon the shore;  
 But Florimell with him unto his bowre he  
 bore.

## XXXVII

His bowre is in the bottom of the maine,  
 Under a mightie rocke, gainst which doe  
 rave

The roring billowes in their proud disdaine,  
 That with the angry working of the wave  
 Therein is eaten out an hollow cave,  
 That seemes rough masons hand with en-  
 gines keene

Had long while laboured it to engrave:  
 There was his wonne, ne living wight was  
 seene,

Save one old nymph, hight Panope, to  
 keepe it cleane.

## XXXVIII

Thether he brought the sory Florimell,  
 And entertained her the best he might,  
 And Panope her entertaind eke well,  
 As an immortall mote a mortall wight,

To winne her liking unto his delight:  
 With flattering wordes he sweetly wooed  
 her,  
 And offered faire guiftes, t'allure her sight;  
 But she both offers and the offerer  
 Despyde, and all the fawning of the flat-  
 terer.

## XXXIX

Dayly he tempted her with this or that,  
 And never suffred her to be at rest:  
 But evermore she him refused flat,  
 And all his fained kindnes did detest;  
 So firmly she had sealed up her brest.  
 Sometimes he boasted that a god he hight;  
 But she a mortall creature loved best:  
 Then he would make him selfe a mortall  
 wight;  
 But then she said she lov'd none but a  
 Faery knight.

## XL

Then like a Faerie knight him selfe he  
 drest;

For every shape on him he could endew:  
 Then like a king he was to her exprest,  
 And offred kingdoms unto her in vew,  
 To be his leman and his lady trew:  
 But when all this he nothing saw prevaile,  
 With harder meanes he cast her to subdew,  
 And with sharpe threatens her often did as-  
 sayle,

So thinking for to make her stubborne  
 corage quayle.

## XLI

To dreadfull shapes he did him selfe trans-  
 forme,

Now like a gyaunt, now like to a feend,  
 Then like a centaure, then like to a storme,  
 Raging within the waves: thereby he weend  
 Her will to win unto his wished eend.  
 But when with feare, nor favour, nor with  
 all

He els could doe, he saw him selfe es-  
 teemd,

Downe in a dongeon deepe he let her fall,  
 And threatend there to make her his eter-  
 nall thrall.

## XLII

Eternall thraldome was to her more liefie,  
 Then losse of chastitie, or chaunge of love:  
 Dye had she rather in tormenting grieffe,  
 Then any should of falsenesse her reprove,

Or loosenes, that she lightly did remove.  
 Most vertuous virgin! glory be thy meed,  
 And crowne of heavenly prayse with saintes  
     above,  
 Where most sweet hymmes of this thy fa-  
     mous deed  
 Are still emongst them song, that far my  
     rymes exceed.

## XLIII

Fit song of angels caroled to bee!  
 But yet what so my feeble Muse can frame,  
 Shalbe t' advance thy goodly chastitee,  
 And to enroll thy memorable name  
 In th' heart of every honourable dame,  
 That they thy vertuous deedes may imitate,  
 And be partakers of thy endlesse fame.  
 Yt yrkes me leave thee in this wofull state,  
 To tell of Satyrane, where I him left of  
     late.

## XLIV

Who having ended with that Squire of  
     Dames  
 A long discourse of his adventures vayne,  
 The which himselfe, then ladies, more de-  
     fames,  
 And finding not th' hyena to be slayne,  
 With that same squire retourned back  
     agayne  
 To his first way. And as they forward went,  
 They spyde a knight fayre pricking on the  
     playne,  
 As if he were on some adventure bent,  
 And in his port appeared manly hardiment.

## XLV

Sir Satyrane him towards did addresse,  
 To weet what wight he was, and what his  
     quest:  
 And comming nigh, eftsoones he gan to  
     gesse  
 Both by the burning hart which on his  
     brest  
 He bare, and by the colours in his crest,  
 That Paridell it was: tho to him yode,  
 And him saluting as beseemed best,  
 Gan first inquire of tydings farre abroad;  
 And afterwarde, on what adventure now  
     he rode.

## XLVI

Who thereto answering said: 'The tyd-  
     inges bad,  
 Which now in Faery court all men doe tell,

Which turned hath great mirth to mourning  
     sad,  
 Is the late ruine of proud Marinell,  
 And suddein parture of faire Florimell,  
 To find him forth: and after her are gone  
 All the brave knightes, that doen in armes  
     excell,  
 To savegard her, ywandred all alone;  
 Emongst the rest my lott (unworthy') is to  
     be one.'

## XLVII

'Ah! gentle knight,' said then Sir Satyrane,  
 'Thy labour all is lost, I greatly dread,  
 That hast a thanklesse service on thee  
     ta'ne,  
 And offrest sacrifice unto the dead.  
 For dead, I surely doubt, thou maist aread  
 Henceforth for ever Florimell to bee,  
 That all the noble knightes of Mayden-  
     head,  
 Which her ador'd, may sore repent with  
     mee,  
 And all faire ladies may for ever sory  
     bee.'

## XLVIII

Which wordes when Paridell had heard, his  
     hew  
 Gan greatly chaung, and seemd dismaid to  
     bee;  
 Then said: 'Fayre sir, how may I weene it  
     trew,  
 That ye doe tell in such uncerteintee?  
 Or speake ye of report, or did ye see  
 Just cause of dread, that makes ye doubt  
     so sore?  
 For, perdie, elles how mote it ever bee,  
 That ever hand should dare for to engore  
 Her noble blood? The hevens such cruel-  
     tie abhore.'

## XLIX

'These eyes did see, that they will ever  
     rew  
 To have seene,' quoth he, 'when as a mon-  
     strous beast  
 The palfrey whereon she did travell slew,  
 And of his bowels made his bloody feast:  
 Which speaking token sheweth at the least  
 Her certeine losse, if not her sure decay:  
 Besides, that more suspicion encreast,  
 I found her golden girdle cast astray,  
 Distaynd with durt and blood, as relique of  
     the pray.'



## L

'Ay me!' said Paridell, 'the signes be sadd,  
And but God turne the same to good sooth  
say,  
That ladies safetie is sore to be dradd:  
Yet will I not forsake my forward way,  
Till triall doe more certeine truth bewray.'  
'Faire sir,' quoth he, 'well may it you suc-  
ceed:  
Ne long shall Satyrane behind you stay,  
But to the rest, which in this quest proceed,  
My labour adde, and be partaker of their  
speed.'

## LI

'Ye noble knights,' said then the Squire of  
Dames,  
'Well may yee speede in so praiseworthy  
payne:  
But sith the sunne now ginnes to slake his  
beames  
In dewy vapours of the westerne mayne,  
And lose the teme out of his weary wayne,  
Mote not mislike you also to abate  
Your zealous hast, till morrow next againe  
Both light of heven and strength of men  
relate:  
Which if ye please, to yonder castle turne  
your gate.'

## LII

That counsell pleased well; so all yfere  
Forth marched to a castle them before;  
Where soone arrayving, they restrained were  
Of ready entraunce, which ought evermore  
To errant knights be commune: wondrous  
sore  
Thereat displeasd they were, till that young  
squire  
Gan them informe the cause why that same  
dore  
Was shut to all which lodging did desyre:  
The which to let you weet will further time  
requyre.

## CANTO IX

Malbecco will no straunge knights host,  
For peevish gealosity:  
Paridell giusts with Britomart:  
Both shew their auncestry.

## I

REDOUBTED knights, and honorable dames,  
To whom I leuell all my labours end,

Right sore I feare, least with unworthie  
blames  
This odious argument my rymes should  
shend,  
Or ought your goodly patience offend,  
Whiles of a wanton lady I doe write,  
Which with her loose incontinence doth  
blend  
The shyning glory of your souveraine light;  
And knighthood fowle defaced by a faith-  
lesse knight.

## II

But never let th' ensample of the bad  
Offend the good: for good, by paragone  
Of evill, may more notably be rad,  
As white seemes fayrer, macht with blacke  
attone;  
Ne all are shamed by the fault of one:  
For lo! in heven, whereas all goodnes is,  
Emongst the angels, a whole legione  
Of wicked sprites did fall from happy  
blis;  
What wonder then, if one of women all did  
mis?

## III

Then listen, lordings, if ye list to weet  
The cause why Satyrane and Paridell  
Mote not be entertaynd, as seemed meet,  
Into that castle (as that squire does tell.)  
'Therein a cancred crabbed carle does  
dwell,  
That has no skill of court nor courtesie,  
Ne eares what men say of him ill or well;  
For all his dayes he drownes in privitie,  
Yet has full large to live, and spend at  
libertie.

## IV

'But all his mind is set on mucky pelfe,  
To hoord up heapes of evill gotten masse,  
For which he others wrongs and wreckes  
himselfe;  
Yet is he lincked to a lovely lasse,  
Whose beauty doth her bounty far surpasse,  
The which to him both far unequalle yeares  
And also far unlike conditions has;  
For she does joy to play emongst her peares,  
And to be free from hard restraynt and  
gealous feares.

## V

'But he is old, and withered like hay,  
Unfit faire ladies service to supply,

The privie guilt whereof makes him alway  
 Suspect her truth, and keepe continuall spy  
 Upon her with his other blinked eye;  
 Ne suffreth he resort of living wight  
 Approch to her, ne keepe her company,  
 But in close bowre her mewes from all mens  
 sight,  
 Depriv'd of kindly joy and naturall delight.

## VI

'Malbeeco he, and Hellenore she hight,  
 Unfitly yokt together in one teeme:  
 That is the cause why never any knight  
 Is suffred here to enter, but he seeme  
 Such as no doubt of him he neede mis-  
 deeme.'  
 Thereat Sir Satyrane gan smyle, and say:  
 'Extremely mad the man I surely deeme,  
 That weenes with watch and hard restraynt  
 to stay  
 A womans will, which is disposd to go astray.

## VII

'In vaine he feares that which he cannot  
 shonne:  
 For who wotes not, that womans subtiltyes  
 Can guylen Argus, when she list misdonne?  
 It is not yron bandes, nor hundred eyes,  
 Nor brasen walls, nor many wakefull spies,  
 That can withhold her wilfull wandring  
 feet;  
 But fast goodwill with gentle courtesyes,  
 And timely service to her pleasures meet,  
 May her perhaps containe, that else would  
 algates fleet.'

## VIII

'Then is he not more mad,' sayd Paridell,  
 'That hath himselfe unto such service sold,  
 In dolefull thrakdome all his dayes to  
 dwell?  
 For sure a foole I doe him firmly hold,  
 That loves his fetters, though they were of  
 gold.  
 But why doe wee devise of others ill,  
 Whyles thus we suffer this same dotard old  
 To keepe us out, in seorne, of his owne will,  
 And rather do not ransack all, and him selfe  
 kill?'

## IX

'Nay, let us first,' sayd Satyrane, 'entreat  
 The man by gentle meanes, to let us in;  
 And afterwards affray with cruell threat,  
 Ere that we to efforce it doe begin:

Then if all fayle, we will by force it win,  
 And eke reward the wretch for his mes-  
 prise,  
 As may be worthy of his haynous sin.'  
 That counsell pleasd: then Paridell did rise,  
 And to the castle gate approch in quiet  
 wise.

## X

Whereat soft knocking, entrance he de-  
 syrd.  
 The good man selfe, which then the porter  
 playd,  
 Him answered, that all were now retyrd  
 Unto their rest, and all the keyes conveyd  
 Unto their maister, who in bed was layd,  
 That none him durst awake out of his  
 dreame;  
 And therefore them of patience gently  
 prayd.  
 Then Paridell began to chaunge his theme,  
 And threatned him with force and punish-  
 ment extreme.

## XI

But all in vaine; for nought mote him re-  
 lent:  
 And now so long before the wicket fast  
 They wayted, that the night was forward  
 spent,  
 And the faire welkin, fowly overcast,  
 Gan blowne up a bitter stormy blast,  
 With showre and hayle so horrible and  
 dred,  
 That this faire many were compeld at last  
 To fly for succour to a little shed,  
 The which beside the gate for swyne was  
 ordered.

## XII

It fortuned, soone after they were gone,  
 Another knight, whom tempest thether  
 brought,  
 Came to that castle, and with earnest  
 mone,  
 Like as the rest, late entrance deare be-  
 sought;  
 But like so as the rest, he prayd for  
 nought,  
 For flatly he of entrance was refusd.  
 Sorely thereat he was displeasd, and  
 thought  
 How to avenge himselfe so sore abusd,  
 And evermore the carle of courtesie ac-  
 cused.

## XIII

But to avoyde th' intollerable stowre,  
 He was compeld to seeke some refuge  
 neare,  
 And to that shed, to shrowd him from the  
 showre,  
 He came, which full of guests he found  
 whyleare,  
 So as he was not let to enter there:  
 Whereat he gan to wex exceeding wroth,  
 And swore that he would lodge with them  
 yfere,  
 Or them dislodg, all were they lief or  
 loth;  
 And so defyde them each, and so defyde  
 them both.

## XIV

Both were full loth to leave that needfull  
 tent,  
 And both full loth in darkenesse to debate;  
 Yet both full lief him lodging to have lent,  
 And both full lief his boasting to abate;  
 But chiefly Paridell his hart did grate,  
 To heare him threaten so despihtfully,  
 As if he did a dogge in kenell rate,  
 That durst not bakke; and rather had he dy  
 Then, when he was defyde, in coward cor-  
 ner ly.

## XV

Tho, hastily remounting to his steed,  
 He forth issew'd; like as a boystrous winde,  
 Which in th' earthes hollow caves hath long  
 ben hid,  
 And shut up fast within her prisons blind,  
 Makes the huge element, against her kinde,  
 To move and tremble as it were aghast,  
 Untill that it an issew forth may finde;  
 Then forth it breakes, and with his furious  
 blast  
 Confounds both land and seas, and skyes  
 doth overcast.

## XVI

Their steel-hed speares they strongly coucht,  
 and met  
 Together with impetuons rage and forse,  
 That with the terrour of their fierce affret,  
 They rudely drove to ground both man and  
 horse,  
 That each awhile lay like a sencelesse corse.  
 But Paridell, sore brused with the blow,  
 Could not arise, the counterchaunge to  
 scorse,

Till that young squyre him reared from  
 below;  
 Then drew he his bright sword, and gan  
 about him throw.

## XVII

But Satyrane, forth stepping, did them  
 stay,  
 And with faire treaty pacifide their yre:  
 Then, when they were accorded from the  
 fray,  
 Against that castles lord they gan conspire,  
 To heape on him dew vengeance for his  
 hire.  
 They beene agreed, and to the gates they  
 goe,  
 To burne the same with unquenchable  
 fire,  
 And that uncurteous carle, their commune  
 foe,  
 To doe fowle death to die, or wrap in  
 grievous woe.

## XVIII

Malbecco seeing them resolv'd in deed  
 To flame the gates, and hearing them to  
 call  
 For fire in earnest, ran with fearfull speed,  
 And to them calling from the castle wall,  
 Besought them humbly him to beare with  
 all,  
 As ignorant of servants bad abuse,  
 And slacke attendaunce unto straungers  
 call.  
 The knights were willing all things to ex-  
 cuse,  
 Though nought belev'd, and entraunce late  
 did not refuse.

## XIX

They beene ybrought into a comely bowre,  
 And servd of all things that mote needfull  
 bee;  
 Yet secretly their hoste did on them lowre,  
 And welcomde more for feare then chari-  
 tee;  
 But they dissembled what they did not see,  
 And welcomed themselves. Each gan un-  
 dight  
 Their garments wett, and weary armour  
 free,  
 To dry them selves by Vulcanes flaming  
 light,  
 And eke their lately bruized parts to bring  
 in plight.



## XX

And eke that straunger knight emongst  
the rest  
Was for like need enforst to disaray:  
Tho, whenas vailed was her lofty crest,  
Her golden locks, that were in tramells  
gay  
Upbouden, did them selves adowne dis-  
play,  
And raught unto her heeles; like sunny  
beames,  
That in a cloud their light did long time  
stay,  
Their vapour vaded, shewe their golden  
gleames,  
And through the persant aire shoote forth  
their azure streames.

## XXI

Shee also dofte her heavy haberjeon,  
Which the faire feature of her limbs did  
hyde,  
And her well plighted frock, which she did  
won  
To tucke about her short, when she did  
ryde,  
Shee low let fall, that flowd from her  
lanck syde  
Downe to her foot with carelesse modes-  
tee.  
Then of them all she plainly was espyde  
To be a woman wight, unwist to bee,  
The fairest woman wight that ever eie did  
see.

## XXII

Like as Minerva, being late returnd  
From slaughter of the giaunts conquered;  
Where prond Encelade, whose wide nose-  
thrills burnd  
With breathed flames, like to a furnace  
redd,  
Transfixd with her speare, downe tombled  
dedd  
From top of Hemus, by him heaped hye;  
Hath loosd her helmet from her lofty hedd,  
And her Gorgonian shield gins to untye  
From her lefte arme, to rest in glorious  
victorye.

## XXIII

Which whenas they beheld, they smitten  
were  
With great amazement of so wondrous  
sight,

And each on other, and they all on her,  
Stood gazing, as if suddein great affright  
Had them surprizd. At last avizing right  
Her goodly personage and glorious hew,  
Which they so much mistooke, they tooke  
delight  
In their first error, and yett still anew  
With wonder of her beauty fed their hongry  
vew.

## XXIV

Yet note their hongry vew be satisfide,  
But seeing, still the more desir'd to see,  
And ever firmly fixed did abide  
In contemplation of divinitee:  
But most they mervaild at her chevalree  
And noble prowesse, which they had ap-  
prov'd,  
That much they faynd to know who she  
mote bee;  
Yet none of all them her thereof amov'd,  
Yet every one her likte, and every one her  
lov'd.

## XXV

And Paridell, though partly discontent  
With his late fall and fowle indignity,  
Yet was soone wonne his malice to relent,  
Through gracious regard of her faire eye,  
And knightly worth, which he too late did  
try,  
Yet tried did adore. Supper was dight;  
Then they Malbecco prayd of courtesy,  
That of his lady they might have the sight,  
And company at meat, to doe them more  
delight.

## XXVI

But he, to shifte their curious request,  
Gan causen why she could not come in  
place;  
Her crased helth, her late recourse to rest,  
And humid evening, ill for sicke folkes cace;  
But none of those excuses could take place,  
Ne would they eate, till she in presence  
came.  
Shee came in presence with right comely  
grace,  
And fairely them saluted, as became,  
And shewd her selfe in all a gentle cour-  
teous dame.

## XXVII

They sate to meat, and Satyrane his chaunce  
Was her before, and Paridell beside;

But he him selfe sate looking still askaunce  
Gainst Britomart, and ever closely eide  
Sir Satyrane, that glaunces might not glide:  
But his blinde eie, that sided Paridell,  
All his demeanure from his sight did hide:  
On her faire face so did he feede his fill,  
And sent close messages of love to her at  
will.

## XXVIII

And ever and anone, when none was ware,  
With speaking lookes, that close embassage  
bore,

He rov'd at her, and told his secret care:  
For all that art he learned had of yore.  
Ne was she ignoraunt of that leud lore,  
But in his eye his meaning wisely redd,  
And with the like him aunswerd evermore:  
Shee sent at him one fyrie dart, whose hedd  
Empoisoned was with privy lust and gealous  
dredd.

## XXIX

He from that deadly throw made no de-  
fence,

But to the wound his weake heart opened  
wyde:

The wicked engine through false influence  
Past through his eies, and secretly did  
glyde

Into his heart, which it did sorely gryde.  
But nothing new to him was that same  
paine,

Ne paine at all; for he so ofte had tryde  
The powre thereof, and lov'd so oft in  
vaine,

That thing of course he counted, love to en-  
tertaine.

## XXX

Thenceforth to her he sought to intimate  
His inward griefe, by meanes to him well  
knowne:

Now Bacchus fruit out of the silver plate  
He on the table dasht, as overthrowne,  
Or of the fruitfull liquor overflowne,  
And by the dauncing bubbles did divine,  
Or therein write to lett his love be showne;  
Which well she redd out of the learned line:  
A sacrament prophane in mistery of wine.

## XXXI

And when so of his hand the pledge she  
raught,  
The guilty cup she fained to mistake,

And in her lap did shed her idle draught,  
Shewing desire her inward flame to slake.  
By such close signes they secret way did  
make

Unto their wils, and one eies watch escape:  
Two eies him needeth, for to watch and  
wake,

Who lovers will deceive. Thus was the ape,  
By their faire handling, put into Malbeccoes  
cape.

## XXXII

Now when of meats and drinks they had  
their fill,

Purpose was moved by that gentle dame  
Unto those knights adventurous, to tell  
Of deeds of armes which unto them be-  
came,

And every one his kindred and his name.  
Then Paridell, in whom a kindly pride  
Of gratus speach and skill his words to  
frame

Abounded, being glad of so fitte tide  
Him to commend to her, thus spake, of al  
well eide:

## XXXIII

'Troy, that art now nought but an idle  
name,

And in thine ashes buried low dost lie,  
Though whilome far much greater then  
thy fame,

Before that angry gods and cruell skie  
Upon thee heapt a direfull destinie,  
What boots it boast thy glorious descent,  
And fetch from heaven thy great genealogie,  
Sith all thy worthie prayses being blent,  
Their offspring hath embaste, and later glory  
shent?

## XXXIV

'Most famous worthy of the world, by  
whome

That warre was kindled which did Troy in-  
flame,

And stately towres of Ilion whilome  
Brought unto balefull ruine, was by name  
Sir Paris, far renownd through noble fame:  
Who, through great prowessse and bold  
hardinesse,

From Lacedæmon fetcht the fayrest dame,  
That ever Greece did boast, or knight pos-  
sesse,

Whom Venus to him gave for meed of wor-  
thinnesse:

## XXXV

'Fayre Helene, flowre of beantie excellent,  
 And girdlond of the mighty conquerours,  
 That madest many ladies deare lament  
 The heave losse of their brave paramours,  
 Which they far off beheld from Trojan  
     toures,  
 And saw the fieldes of faire Scamander  
     strowne  
 With carcases of noble warrioures,  
 Whose fruitlesse lives were under furrow  
     sowne,  
 And Xanthus sandy bankes with blood all  
     overflowne.

## XXXVI

'From him my linage I derive aright,  
 Who long before the ten yeares siege of  
     Troy,  
 Whiles yet on Ida he a shepeheard hight,  
 On faire Oenone got a lovely boy,  
 Whom, for remembrance of her passed joy,  
 She of his father Parius did name;  
 Who, after Greekes did Priams realme de-  
     stroy,  
 Gathred the Trojan reliques sav'd from  
     flame,  
 And with them saying thence, to th' isle of  
     Paros came.

## XXXVII

'That was by him cald Paros, which before  
 Hight Nausa; there he many yeares did  
     raine,  
 And built Nausicle by the Pontick shore,  
 The which he dying left next in remaine  
 To Paridas his sonne,  
 From whom I, Paridell, by kin descend;  
 But, for faire ladies love and glories gaine,  
 My native soile have left, my dayes to  
     spend  
 In seeing deeds of armes, my lives and  
     labors end.'

## XXXVIII

Whenas the noble Britomart heard tell  
 Of Trojan warres and Priams citie sackt,  
 The ruefull story of Sir Paridell,  
 She was empassiond at that piteous act,  
 With zelous envy of Greekes cruell fact  
 Against that nation, from whose race of old  
 She heard that she was lineally extract:  
 For noble Britons sprong from Trojans bold,  
 And Troynovant was built of old Troyes  
     ashes cold.

## XXXIX

Then sighing soft awhile, at last she thus:  
 'O lamentable fall of famous towne,  
 Which raignd so many yeares victorious,  
 And of all Asie bore the souveraine crowne,  
 In one sad night consumd and throwen  
     downe!  
 What stony hart, that heares thy haplesse  
     fate,  
 Is not empierst with deepe compassiowne,  
 And makes ensample of mans wretched  
     state,  
 That floures so fresh at morne, and fades  
     at evening late?

## XL

'Behold, sir, how your pitifull complaint  
 Hath fownd another partner of your payne:  
 For nothing may impresse so deare con-  
     straint,  
 As countries cause and communc foes dis-  
     dayne.  
 But if it should not grieve you, backe  
     agayne  
 To turne your course, I would to heare de-  
     syre  
 What to Aeneas fell; sith that men sayne  
 He was not in the cities wofull fyre  
 Consum'd, but did him selfe to safety re-  
     tyre.'

## XLI

'Anchyses sonne, begott of Venus fayre,'  
 Said he, 'out of the flames for safegard fled,  
 And with a remnant did to sea repayre,  
 Where he through fatall errour long was  
     led  
 Full many yeares, and weetlesse wandered  
 From shore to shore, emongst the Lybick  
     sandes,  
 Ere rest he fownd. Much there he suf-  
     fered,  
 And many perilles past in forreine landes,  
 To save his people sad from victours venge-  
     full handes.

## XLII

'At last in Latium he did arryve,  
 Where he with cruell warre was entertaind  
 Of th' inland folke, which sought him backe  
     to drive,  
 Till he with old Latinus was constraind  
 To contract wedlock; (so the Fates ordaind;)  
 Wedlocke contract in blood, and eke in  
     blood



Accomplished, that many deare complained:  
The rivall slaine, the victour, through the  
flood  
Escaped hardly, hardly praised his wedlock  
good.

## XLIII

‘Yet after all, he victour did survive,  
And with Latinus did the kingdom part.  
But after, when both nations gan to strive,  
Into their names the title to convart,  
His some Iulus did from thence depart  
With all the warlike youth of Trojans  
blood,  
And in Long Alba plast his throne apart,  
Where faire it florished, and long time  
stoud,  
Iill Romulus, renewing it, to Rome re-  
moud.’

## XLIV

‘There, there,’ said Britomart, ‘a fresh ap-  
pear  
The glory of the later world to spring,  
And Troy againe out of her dust was reard,  
To sitt in second seat of soveraine king  
Of all the world under her governing.  
But a third kingdom yet is to arise  
Out of the Trojans scattered ofspring,  
That, in all glory and great enterprise,  
Both first and second Troy shall dare to  
equalise.

## XLV

‘It Troynovant is hight, that with the  
waves  
Of wealthy Thamys washed is along,  
Upon whose stubborne neck, whereat he  
raves  
With roring rage, and sore him selfe does  
throng,  
That all men feare to tempt his billowes  
strong,  
She fastned hath her foot, which staudes so  
hy,  
That it a wonder of the world is song  
In forreine landes, and all which passen by,  
Beholding it from farre, doe thinke it  
threates the skye.

## XLVI

‘The Trojan Brute did first that citie  
fownd,  
And Hygate made the meare thereof by  
west,

And Overt gate by north: that is the  
bownd  
Toward the land; two rivers bownd the  
rest.

So huge a scope at first him seemed best,  
To be the conipasse of his kingdomes seat:  
So huge a mind could not in lesser rest,  
Ne in small meares containe his glory great,  
That Albion had conquered first by warlike  
feat.’

## XLVII

‘Ah! fairest lady knight,’ said Paridell,  
‘Pardon, I pray, my heedlesse oversight,  
Who had forgot that whylome I hard tell  
From aged Mnemon; for my wits beene  
light.

Indeed he said (if I remember right)  
That of the antique Trojan stocke there  
grew  
Another plant, that raught to wondrous  
hight,  
And far abroad his mightie braunches threw  
Into the utmost angle of the world he  
knew.

## XLVIII

‘For that same Brute, whom much he did  
advauce  
In all his speach, was Sylvius his sonne,  
Whom having slain through luckles ar-  
rowes glaunce,  
He fled for feare of that he had misdonne,  
Or els for shame, so fowle reproch to  
shonne,  
And with him ledd to sea an youthly trayne,  
Where wearie wandring they long time did  
wonne,  
And many fortunes prov’d in th’ ocean  
mayne,  
And great adventures found, that now were  
long to sayne.

## XLIX

‘At last by fatall course they driven were  
Into an island spatious and brode,  
The furthest north that did to them ap-  
peare:

Which, after rest, they seeking farre abode,  
Found it the fittest soyle for their abode,  
Fruitfull of all thinges fitt for living foode,  
But wholly waste and void of peoples trode,  
Save an huge nation of the geaunts broode,  
That fed on living flesh, and dronck mens  
vitall blood.

## L

'Whom he, through wearie wars and labours long,  
 Subdewd with losse of many Britons bold:  
 In which the great Goemagot of strong  
 Corineus, and Coulin of Debon old,  
 Werc overthrowne and laide on th' earth  
 full cold,  
 Which quaked under their so hideous masse:  
 A famous history to bee enrold  
 In everlasting moniments of brasse,  
 That all the antique worthies merits far did  
 passe.

## LI

'His worke great Troynovant, his worke is  
 eke  
 Faire Lincolne, both renowned far away,  
 That who from east to west will endlong  
 seeke,  
 Cannot two fairer cities find this day,  
 Except Cleopolis: so heard I say  
 Old Mnemon. Therefore, sir, I greet you  
 well,  
 Your countrey kin, and you entyrelly pray  
 Of pardon for the strife which late befell  
 Betwixt us both unknowne.' So ended  
 Paridell.

## LII

But all the while that he these speeches  
 spent,  
 Upon his lips hong faire Dame Hellenore,  
 With vigilant regard and dew attent,  
 Fashioning worldes of fancies evermore  
 In her fraile witt, that now her quite for-  
 lore:  
 The whiles unwares away her wondring eye  
 And greedy eares her weake hart from her  
 bore:  
 Which he perceiving, ever privily,  
 In speaking, many false belgardes at her  
 let fly.

## LIII

So long these knightes discoursed diversly  
 Of straunge affaires, and noble hardiment,  
 Which they had past with mickle jeopardy,  
 That now the humid night was farforth  
 spent,  
 And heavenly lampes were halfendeale  
 ybrent:  
 Which th' old man seeing wel, who too long  
 thought  
 Every discourse and every argument,

Which by the houres he measured, be-  
 sought  
 Them go to rest. So all unto their bowres  
 were brought.

## CANTO X

Paridell rapeth Hellenore:  
 Malbecco her poursewes:  
 Fyndes amongst Satyres, whence with him  
 To turne she doth refuse.

## I

THE morow next, so soone as Phœbus lamp  
 Bewrayed had the world with early light,  
 And fresh Aurora had the shady damp  
 Out of the goodly heven amoved quight,  
 Faire Britomart and that same Faery  
 knight  
 Uprose, forth on their journey for to wend:  
 But Paridell complaynd, that his late fight  
 With Britomart so sore did him offend,  
 That ryde he could not, till his hurts he did  
 amend.

## II

So foorth they far'd, but he behind them  
 stayd,  
 Maulgre his host, who grudged grivously  
 To house a guest that would be needes  
 obayd,  
 And of his owne him left not liberty:  
 Might wanting measure moveth surquedry.  
 Two things he feared, but the third was  
 death:  
 That fiers youngmans unruly maystery;  
 His money, which he lov'd as living breath;  
 And his faire wife, whom honest long he  
 kept uneath.

## III

But patience perforce, he must abie  
 What fortune and his fate on him will lay;  
 Fond is the feare that findes no remedie;  
 Yet warily he watcheth every way,  
 By which he feareth evill happen may:  
 So th' evill thinkes by watching to prevent;  
 Ne doth he suffer her, nor night nor day,  
 Out of his sight her selfe once to absent.  
 So doth he punish her and eke himselfe  
 torment.

## IV

But Paridell kept better watch then hee,  
 A fit occasion for his turne to finde.

False Love, why do men say thou canst not see,

And in their foolish fancy feigne thee blinde,  
That with thy charmes the sharpest sight  
doest binde,

And to thy will abuse? Thou walkest free,  
And seest every secret of the minde;  
Thou seest all, yet none at all sees thee;  
All that is by the working of thy deitee.

## V

So perfect in that art was Paridell,  
That he Malbeccoës halfen eye did wyle;  
His halfen eye he wiled wondrous well,  
And Hellenors both eyes did eke beguyle,  
Both eyes and hart attonce, during the  
whyle  
That he there sojourned his woundes to  
heale;  
That Cupid selfe, it seeing, close did smyle,  
To weet how he her love away did steale,  
And bad that none their joyous treason  
should reveale.

## VI

The learned lover lost no time nor tyde,  
That least advantage mote to him afford,  
Yet bore so faire a sayle, that none espyde  
His secret drift, till he her layd abord.  
When so in open place and commune bord  
He fortun'd her to meet, with commune  
speach  
He courted her, yet bayted every word,  
That his ungentle hoste n'ote him appeach  
Of vile ungentlenesse, or hospitaiges breach.

## VII

But when apart (if ever her apart)  
He found, then his false engins fast he  
plyde,  
And all the sleights unbosomd in his hart;  
He sigh'd, he sobd, he swownd, he perdy  
dyde,  
And cast himselfe on ground her fast be-  
syde:  
Tho, when againe he him bethought to live,  
He wept, and wayld, and false laments be-  
lyde,  
Saying, but if she mercie would him give,  
That he mote algates dye, yet did his death  
forgive.

## VIII

And otherwhyles with amorous delights  
And pleasing toyes he would her entertaine,

Now singing sweetly, to surprize her  
sprights,

Now making layes of love and lovers paine,  
Bransles, ballads, virelayes, and verses  
vaine;

Oft purposes, oft riddles he devysd,  
And thousands like, which flowed in his  
braine,

With which he fed her fancy, and entysd  
To take to his new love, and leave her old  
despyd.

## IX

And every where he might, and everie  
while,

He did her service dewtifull, and sewd  
At hand with humble pride and pleasing  
guile,

So closely yet, that none but she it vewd,  
Who well perceived all, and all indewd.  
Thus finely did he his false nets dispred,  
With which he many weake harts had sub-  
dewd

Of yore, and many had ylike misled:  
What wonder then, if she were likewise  
carried?

## X

No fort so fensible, no wals so strong,  
But that continuall battery will rive,  
Or daily siege, through dispurvaynauce  
long

And lacke of reskewes, will to parley drive;  
And peece, that unto parley eare will give,  
Will shortly yield it selfe, and will be made  
The vassall of the victors will bylive:  
That stratageme had oftentimes assayd  
This crafty paramoure, and now it plaine  
displayd.

## XI

For through his traines he her intrapped  
hath,

That she her love and hart hath wholly  
sold

To him, without regard of gaine or scath,  
Or care of credite, or of husband old,  
Whom she hath vow'd to dub a fayre cuc-  
quold.

Nought wants but time and place, which  
shortly shee

Devized hath, and to her lover told.

It pleased well: so well they both agree;  
So readie rype to ill, ill wemens counsels  
bee.



## XII

Darke was the evening, fit for lovers stealth,  
 When chaunst Malbecco busie be elsewhere,  
 She to his closet went, where all his wealth  
 Lay hid: thereof she countlesse summes did  
     reare,  
 The which she meant away with her to  
     beare;  
 The rest she fyr'd for sport, or for despight;  
 As Hellene, when she saw aloft appeare  
 The Trojane flames, and reach to hevens  
     hight,  
 Did clap her hands, and joyed at that dole-  
     full sight.

## XIII

This second Helene, fayre Dame Hellenore,  
 The whiles her husband ran with sory haste,  
 Tc quench the flames which she had tyn'd  
     before,  
 Laught at his foolish labour spent in waste,  
 And ran into her lovers armes right fast;  
 Where streight embraced, she to him did cry  
 And call aloud for helpe, ere helpe were  
     past,  
 For lo! that guest did beare her forcibly,  
 And meant to ravish her, that rather had to  
     dy.

## XIV

The wretched man, hearing her call for ayd,  
 And ready seeing him with her to fly,  
 In his disquiet mind was much dismayd:  
 But when againe he backward cast his eye,  
 And saw the wicked fire so furiously  
 Consume his hart, and scorch his idoles  
     face,  
 He was therewith distressed diversely,  
 Ne wist he how to turne, nor to what place:  
 Was never wretched man in such a wofull  
     cace.

## XV

Ay when to him she cryde, to her he turnd,  
 And left the fire; love money overcame:  
 But when he marked how his money burnd,  
 He left his wife; money did love disclame:  
 Both was he loth to loose his loved dame,  
 And loth to leave his liefest pelfe behinde,  
 Yet sith he n'ote save both, he sav'd that  
     same  
 Which was the dearest to his dounghill  
     minde,  
 The god of his desire, the joy of misers  
     blinde.

## XVI

Thus whilest all things in troublous uprore  
     were,  
 And all men busie to suppress the flame,  
 The loving couple neede no reskew feare,  
 But leasure had and liberty to frame  
 Their purpost flight, free from all mens re-  
     claime;  
 And Night, the patronesse of love-stealth  
     fayre,  
 Gave them safeconduct, till to end they  
     came:  
 So beene they gone yfere, a wanton payre  
 Of lovers loosely knit, where list them to  
     repayre.

## XVII

Soone as the cruell flames yslaked were,  
 Malbecco, seeing how his losse did lye,  
 Out of the flames, which he had quencht  
     whylerc,  
 Into huge waves of grieve and gealosye  
 Full deepe emplonged was, and drowned  
     nye  
 Twixt inward doole and felonous despight:  
 He rav'd, he wept, he stampt, he lowd did  
     cry,  
 And all the passions that in man may light  
 Did him attonce oppresse, and vex his cay-  
     tive spright.

## XVIII

Long thus he chawd the cud of inward  
     griefe,  
 And did consume his gall with anguish sore:  
 Still when he mused on his late mischiefe,  
 Then still the smart thereof increased more,  
 And seemd more grievous then it was be-  
     fore:  
 At last, when sorrow he saw booted nought,  
 Ne grieve might not his love to him re-  
     store,  
 He gan devise how her he reskew mought;  
 Ten thonsand wayes he cast in his confused  
     thought.

## XIX

At last resolving, like a pilgrim pore,  
 To search her forth, where so she might be  
     fond,  
 And bearing with him treasure in close  
     store,  
 The rest he leaves in ground: so takes in  
     hond  
 To seeke her endlong both by sea and lond

Long he her sought, he sought her far and  
nere,  
And every where that he mote understand  
Of knights and ladies any meetings were,  
And of eachone he mett he tidings did in-  
quere.

## XX

But all in vaine; his woman was too wise,  
Ever to come into his clouch againe,  
And hee too simple ever to surprise  
The jolly Paridell, for all his paine.  
One day, as hee forpassed by the plaine  
With weary pace, he far away espide  
A couple, seeming well to be his twaine,  
Which hoved close under a forest side,  
As if they lay in wait, or els them selves  
did hide.

## XXI

Well weened hee that those the same mote  
bee,  
And as he better did their shape avize,  
Him seemed more their maner did agree;  
For th' one was armed all in warlike wize,  
Whom to be Paridell he did devize;  
And th' other, al yclad in garments light,  
Discoloured like to womanish disguise,  
He did resemble to his lady bright,  
And ever his faint hart much earned at the  
sight.

## XXII

And ever faine he towards them would goe,  
But yet durst not for dread approchen nie,  
But stood aloofe, unweeting what to doe,  
Till that prickt forth with loves extremity,  
That is the father of fowle gealosy,  
He closely nearer crept, the truth to weet:  
But, as he nigher drew, he easily  
Might scerne that it was not his sweetest  
sweet,  
Ne yet her belamour, the partner of his  
sheet.

## XXIII

But it was scornfull Braggadochio,  
That with his servant Trompart hoverd  
there,  
Sith late he fled from his too earnest foe:  
Whom such whenas Malbecco spyed clere,  
He turned backe, and would have fled  
arere;  
Till Trompart ronning hastely, him did stay,  
And bad before his souveraine lord appeare:

That was him loth, yet durst he not gaine-  
say,  
And comming him before, low louted on  
the lay.

## XXIV

The boaster at him sternely bent his browe,  
As if he could have kild him with his looke,  
That to the ground him meekely made to  
bowe,  
And awfull terror deepe into him strooke,  
That every member of his body quooke.  
Said he, 'Thou man of nought, what doest  
thou here,  
Unfitly furnisht with thy bag and booke,  
Where I expected one with shield and  
sperc,  
To prove some deeds of armes upon an  
equall pere?'

## XXV

The wretched man at his imperious speach  
Was all abasht, and low prostrating, said:  
'Good sir, let not my rudenes be no breach  
Unto your patience, ne be ill ypaid;  
For I unwares this way by fortune straid,  
A silly pilgrim driven to distresse,  
That seeke a lady—' There he suddein  
staid,  
And did the rest with grievous sighes sup-  
presse,  
While teares stood in his eies, few drops of  
bitternesse.

## XXVI

'What lady, man?' said Trompart. 'Take  
good hart,  
And tell thy griefe, if any hidden lye:  
Was never better time to shew thy smart  
Then now that noble succor is thee by,  
That is the whole worlds commune remedy.'  
That chearful word his weak heart much  
did cheare,  
And with vaine hope his spirits faint sup-  
ply,  
That bold he said: 'O most redoubted pere,  
Vouchsafe with mild regard a wretches cace  
to heare.'

## XXVII

Then sighing sore, 'It is not long,' saide  
hee,  
'Sith I enjoyd the gentlest dame alive;  
Of whom a knight, no knight at all perdee,  
But shame of all that doe for honor strive,

By treacherous deceit did me deprive;  
Through open outrage he her bore away,  
And with fowle force unto his will did  
drive,  
Which al good knights, that armes do bear  
this day,  
Are bound for to revenge and punish if  
they may.

## XXVIII

‘And you, most noble lord, that can and  
dare

Redresse the wrong of miserable wight,  
Cannot employ your most victorious speare  
In better quarell then defence of right,  
And for a lady gainst a faithlesse knight:  
So shall your glory bee advaunced much,  
And all faire ladies magnify your might,  
And eke my selfe, albee I simple such,  
Your worthy paine shall wel reward with  
guerdon rich.’

## XXIX

With that out of his bouget forth he drew  
Great store of treasure, therewith him to  
tempt;

But he on it lookt scornefully askew,  
As much disdainning to be so misdeempt,  
Or a war-monger to be basely nempt;  
And sayd: ‘Thy offers base I greatly loth,  
And eke thy words uncourteous and un-  
kempt:

I tread in dust thee and thy money both,  
That, were it not for shame —’ So turned  
from him wroth.

## XXX

But Trompart, that his maistres humor  
knew,

In lofty looks to hide an humble minde,  
Was inly tickled with that golden vew,  
And in his eare him rownded close be-  
hinde:

Yet stoupt he not, but lay still in the  
winde,

Waiting advauntage on the pray to sease;  
Till Trompart, lowly to the grownd in-  
clinde,

Besought him his great corage to appease,  
And pardon simple man, that rash did him  
displease.

## XXXI

Big looking like a doughty doucepere,  
At last he thus: ‘Thou clod of vilest clay,

I pardon yield, and with thy rudenes beare;  
But weete henceforth, that all that golden  
pray,

And all that els the vaine world vaunten  
may,

I loath as dounge, ne deeme my dew re-  
ward:

Fame is my meed, and glory vertues pay:  
But minds of mortal men are muchell mard  
And mov’d amisse with massy mucks un-  
meet regard.

## XXXII

‘And more, I graunt to thy great misery  
Gratious respect; thy wife shall backe be  
sent,

And that vile knight, who ever that he bee,  
Which hath thy lady reft, and knighthood  
shent,

By Sanglamort my sword, whose deadly  
dent

The blood hath of so many thousands shedd,  
I sweare, ere long shall dearly it repent;  
Ne he twixt heven and earth shall hide his  
hedd,

But soone he shalbe fownd, and shortly  
doen be dedd.’

## XXXIII

The foolish man thereat woxe wondrous  
blith,

As if the word so spoken were halfe donne,  
And humbly thanked him a thousand sith,  
That had from death to life him newly  
wonne.

Tho forth the boaster marching, brave be-  
gonne

His stolen steed to thunder furiously,  
As if he heaven and hell would overonne,  
And all the world confound with cruelty,  
That much Malbecco joyed in his jollity.

## XXXIV

Thus long they three together traveiled,  
Through many a wood and many an un-  
couth way,

To seeke his wife, that was far wandered:  
But those two sought nought but the pre-  
sent pray,

To weete, the treasure which he did be-  
wray,

On which their eies and harts were wholly  
sett,

With purpose how they might it best be-  
tray;



For sith the howre that first he did them  
lett  
The same behold, therewith their keene de-  
sires were whett.

## XXXV

It fortun'd, as they together far'd,  
They spide, where Paridell came pricking  
fast  
Upon the plaine, the which him selfe pre-  
par'd  
To giust with that brave straunger knight  
a cast,  
As on adventure by the way he past:  
Alone he rode without his paragone;  
For having filcht her bells, her up he cast  
To the wide world, and let her fly alone;  
He nould be clogd. So had he served many  
one.

## XXXVI

The gentle lady, loose at randon lefted,  
The greene-wood long did walke, and wan-  
der wide  
At wilde adventure, like a forlorne wefte,  
Till on a day the Satyres her espide  
Straying alone withouten groome or guide:  
Her up they tooke, and with them home her  
ledd,  
With them as housewife ever to abide,  
To milk their gotes, and make them cheese  
and bredd,  
And every one as commune good her hand-  
eled:

## XXXVII

Thax shortly she Malbecco has forgott,  
And eke Sir Paridell, all were he deare;  
Who from her went to seeke another lott,  
And now by fortune was arrived here,  
Where those two guilers with Malbecco  
were.  
Soone as the oldman saw Sir Paridell,  
He fainted, and was almost dead with  
feare,  
Ne word he had to speake, his grieve to  
tell,  
But to him louted low, and greeted goodly  
well;

## XXXVIII

And after asked him for Hellenore.  
'I take no keepe of her,' sayd Paridell,  
'She wonneth in the forrest there before.'  
So forth he rode, as his adventure fell;

The whiles the boaster from his loftie sell  
Faynd to alight, something amisse to mend;  
But the fresh swayne would not his leasure  
dwell,  
But went his way; whom when he passed  
kend,  
He up remounted light, and after faind to  
wend.

## XXXIX

'Perdy nay,' said Malbecco, 'shall ye not:  
But let him passe as lightly as he came:  
For litle good of him is to be got,  
And mickle perill to bee put to shame.  
But let us goe to seeke my dearest dame,  
Whom he hath left in yonder forest wyld:  
For of her safety in great doubt I ame,  
Least salvage beastes her person have de-  
spoyld:  
Then all the world is lost, and we in vaine  
have toyl'd.'

## XL

They all agree, and forward them address:  
'Ah! but,' said crafty Trompart, 'weete ye  
well,  
That yonder in that wastefull wilderness  
Huge monsters haunt, and many dangers  
dwell;  
Dragons, and minotaures, and feendes of  
hell,  
And many wilde woodmen, which robbe and  
rend  
All travellers; therefore advise ye well,  
Before ye enterprise that way to wend:  
One may his journey bring too soone to  
evill end.'

## XLI

Malbecco stopt in great astonishment,  
And with pale eyes fast fixed on the rest,  
Their counsell crav'd, in daunger imminent.  
Said Trompart: 'You, that are the most  
opprest  
With burdein of great treasure, I thinke  
best  
Here for to stay in safetie behynd;  
My lord and I will search the wide forest.'  
That counsell pleased not Malbecco's mynd;  
For he was much afraid, him selfe alone to  
fynd.

## XLII

'Then is it best,' said he, 'that ye doe leave  
Your treasure here in some security,

Either fast closed in some hollow greave,  
Or buried in the ground from jeopardy,  
Till we returne againe in safety:  
As for us two, least doubt of us ye have,  
Hence farre away we will blyndfolded ly,  
Ne privy bee unto your treasures grave.  
It pleased: so he did. Then they march  
forward brave.

## XLIH

Now when amid the thickest woodes they  
were,  
They heard a noyse of many bagpipes  
shrill,  
And shrieking hububs them approaching  
nere,  
Which all the forest did with horreur fill:  
That dreadfull sound the bosters hart did  
thrill  
With such amazment, that in hast he fledd,  
Ne ever looked back for good or ill,  
And after him eke fearefull Trompart  
spedd;  
The old man could not fly, but fell to  
ground half dedd.

## XLIV

Yet afterwarde close creeping as he might,  
He in a bush did hyde his fearefull hedd.  
The jolly Satyres, full of fresh delight,  
Came dauncing forth, and with them nim-  
bly ledd  
Faire Helenore, with girlonds all bespredd,  
Whom their May-lady they had newly  
made:  
She, proude of that new honour which they  
redd,  
And of their lovely fellowship full glade,  
Daunst lively, and her face did with a law-  
rell shade.

## XLV

The silly man that in the thickett lay  
Saw all this goodly sport, and grieved sore,  
Yet durst he not against it doe or say,  
But did his hart with bitter thoughtis en-  
gore,  
To see th' unkindnes of his Hellenore.  
All day they daunced with great lustyhedd,  
And with their horned feet the greene gras  
wore,  
The whiles their gotes upon the brouzes  
fedd,  
Till drouping Phæbus gan to hyde his  
golden hedd.

## XLVI

Tho up they gan their mery pypes to trusse,  
And all their goodly heardees did gather  
rownd,  
But every Satyre first did give a busse  
To Hellenore: so busses did abound.  
Now gan the humid vapour shed the grownd  
With perly deaw, and th' earthes gloomy  
shade  
Did dim the brightnesse of the welkin  
rownd,  
That every bird and beast awarned made  
To shrowd themselves, whiles sleepe their  
sences did invade.

## XLVII

Which when Malbecco saw, out of his bush  
Upon his hands and feete he crept full  
light,  
And like a gote emongst the gotes did rush,  
That through the helpe of his faire hornes  
on hight,  
And misty dampe of misconceyving night,  
And eke through likenesse of his gotish  
beard,  
He did the better counterfeite aright:  
So home he marcht emongst the horned  
heard,  
That none of all the Satyres him espyde or  
heard.

## XLVIII

At night, when all they went to sleepe, he  
vewd  
Whereas his lovely wife emongst them lay,  
Embraced of a Satyre rough and rude,  
Who all the night did minde his joyous  
play:  
Nine times he heard him come aloft ere  
day,  
That all his hart with gealosy did swell;  
But yet that nights ensample did bewray,  
That not for nought his wife them loved so  
well,  
When one so oft a night did ring his matins  
bell.

## XLIX

So closely as he could, he to them crept,  
When wearie of their sport to sleepe they  
fell,  
And to his wife, that now full soundly slept,  
He whispered in her eare, and did her tell,  
That it was he, which by her side did  
dwell,

And therefore prayd her wake, to heare  
him plaine.  
As one out of a dreame not waked well,  
She turnd her, and returned backe againe:  
Yet her for to awake he did the more con-  
straine

## L

At last with irkesom trouble she abrayd;  
And then perceiving, that it was indeed  
Her old Malbecco, which did her upbrayd  
With loosenesse of her love and loathly  
deed,  
She was astonisht with exceeding dread,  
And would have wakt the Satyre by her  
syde;  
But he her prayd, for mercy or for meed,  
To save his life, ne let him be descryde,  
But hearken to his lore, and all his counsell  
hyde.

## LI

Tho gan he her perswade to leave that lewd  
And loathsom life, of God and man ab-  
hord,  
And home returne, where all should be re-  
newd  
With perfect peace and bandes of fresh ac-  
cord,  
And she receivd againe to bed and bord,  
As if no trespass ever had beene donne:  
But she it all refused at one word,  
And by no meanes would to his will be  
wonne,  
But chose amongst the jolly Satyres still to  
wonne.

## LII

He wooed her till day spring he espyde;  
But all in vaine: and then turnd to the  
heard,  
Who butted him with hornes on every syde,  
And trode downe in the durt, where his  
hore beard  
Was fowly dight, and he of death afeard.  
Early, before the heavens fairest light  
Out of the ruddy east was fully reard,  
The heardees out of their foldes were loosed  
quight,  
And he emongst the rest crept forth in sory  
plight.

## LIII

So soone as he the prison dore did pas,  
He ran as fast as both his feet could beare,

And never looked who behind him was,  
Ne scarcely who before: like as a beare,  
That creeping close, amongst the hives to  
reare  
An hony combe, the wakefull dogs espy,  
And him assaying, sore his carkas teare,  
That hardly he with life away does fly,  
Ne staves, till safe him selfe he see from  
jeopardy.

## LIV

Ne stayd he, till he came unto the place,  
Where late his treasure he entombed  
had;  
Where when he found it not (for Trom-  
part bace  
Had it purloyned for his maister bad)  
With extreme fury he became quite mad,  
And ran away, ran with him selfe away:  
That who so straungely had him seene be-  
stadd,  
With upstart haire and staring eyes dis-  
may,  
From Limbo lake him late escaped sure  
would say.

## LV

High over hilles and over dales he fledd,  
As if the wind him on his winges had  
borne,  
Ne banck nor bush could stay him, when he  
spedd  
His nimble feet, as treading still on thorne:  
Griefe, and despight, and gealosy, and  
scorne  
Did all the way him follow hard behynd,  
And he himselfe himselfe loath'd so for-  
lorne,  
So shamefully forlorne of womankynd;  
That, as a snake, still lurked in his wounded  
mynd.

## LVI

Still fled he forward, looking backward  
still,  
Ne stayd his flight, nor fearefull agony,  
Till that he came unto a rocky hill,  
Over the sea suspended dreadfully,  
That living creature it would terrify  
To looke adowne, or upward to the hight:  
From thence he threw him selfe dispite-  
ously,  
All desperate of his fore-damned spright,  
That seemd no help for him was left in liv-  
ing sight.



## LVII

But through long anguish and selfe-murdering thought,  
 He was so wasted and forpined quight,  
 That all his substance was consum'd to nought,  
 And nothing left, but like an aery spright,  
 That on the rookes he fell so flit and light,  
 That he thereby receiv'd no hurt at all;  
 But chaunced on a craggy cliff to light;  
 Whence he with crooked clawes so long did erall,  
 That at the last he found a cave with entrance small.

## LVIII

Into the same he creeps, and thenceforth there  
 Resolv'd to build his balefull mansion,  
 In dreary darkenes, and continuall feare  
 Of that rocks fall, which ever and anon  
 Threates with huge ruine him to fall upon,  
 That he dare never sleepe, but that one eye  
 Still open he keepes for that occasion;  
 Ne ever rests he in tranquillity,  
 The roring billowes beat his bowre so boysterously.

## LIX

Ne ever is he wont on ought to feed  
 But todes and frogs, his pasture poysonous,  
 Which in his cold complexion doe breed  
 A filthy blood, or humour rancorous,  
 Matter of doubt and dread suspicious,  
 That doth with enrelesse care consume the hart,  
 Corrupts the stomaeke with gall vitious,  
 Croscuts the liver with internall smart,  
 And doth transfixe the soule with deathes eternall dart.

## LX

Yet can he never dye, but dying lives,  
 And doth himselfe with sorrow new sustaine,  
 That death and life attonce unto him gives,  
 And painefull pleasure turnes to pleasing paine.  
 There dwels he ever, miserable swaine,  
 Hatefull both to him selfe and every wight;  
 Where he, through privy grieve and horror vaine,  
 Is woxen so deform'd, that he has quight  
 Forgot he was a man, and Gelosy is hight.

## CANTO XI

Britomart chaceth Ollyphant;  
 Finde Scudamour distrest:  
 Assayes the house of Busyrane,  
 Where Loves spoyle are exprest.

## I

O HATEFULL hellish snake! what Furie  
 furst  
 Brought thee from balefull house of Proserpine,  
 Where in her bosome she thee long had nurst,  
 And fostred up with bitter milke of time,  
 Fowle Gealosy! that turnest love divine  
 To joylesse dread, and mak'st the loving hart  
 With hatefull thoughts to languish and to pine,  
 And feed it selfe with selfe-consuming smart?  
 Of all the passions in the mind thou vilest art.

## II

O let him far be banished away,  
 And in his stead let Love for ever dwell,  
 Sweete Love, that doth his golden wings embay  
 In blessed nectar, and pure pleasures well,  
 Untroubled of vile feare or bitter fell.  
 And ye, faire ladies, that your kingdomes make  
 In th' harts of men, them governe wisely well,  
 And of faire Britomart ensample take,  
 That was as trew in love as turtle to her make.

## III

Who with Sir Satyrane, as earst ye red,  
 Forth ryding from Malbeeco's hostlesse hous,  
 Far off aspyde a young man, the which fled  
 From an huge geaunt, that with hideous  
 And hatefull outrage long him chaced thus;  
 It was that Ollyphant, the brother deare  
 Of that Argante vile and vitious,  
 From whom the Squire of Dames was reft whylere;  
 This all as bad as she, and worse, if worse  
 ought were.

## IV

For as the sister did in feminine  
 And filthy lust exceede all woman kinde,  
 So he surpassed his sex masculine,  
 In beastly use, all that I ever finde:  
 Whom when as Britomart beheld behinde  
 The fearefull boy so greedily poursew,  
 She was emmoued in her noble minde  
 T'employ her puissaunce to his reskew,  
 And pricked fiercely forward, where she  
 did him vew.

## V

Ne was Sir Satyrane her far behinde,  
 But with like fiercenesse did ensew the  
 chace:  
 Whom when the gyaunt saw, he soone re-  
 sinde  
 His former suit, and from them fled apace:  
 They after both, and boldly bad him bace,  
 And each did strive the other to outgoe;  
 But he them both outran a wondrous space,  
 For he was long, and swift as any roe,  
 And now made better speed, t'escape his  
 feared foe.

## VI

It was not Satyrane, whom he did feare,  
 But Britomart the flowre of chastity;  
 For he the powre of chaste hands might not  
 beare,  
 But alwayes did their dread encounter fly:  
 And now so fast his feet he did apply,  
 That he has gotten to a forrest neare,  
 Where he is shrowded in security.  
 The wood they enter, and search everie  
 where;  
 They searched diversely, so both divided  
 were.

## VII

Fayre Britomart so long him followed,  
 That she at last came to a fountaine sheare,  
 By which there lay a knight all wallowed  
 Upon the grassy ground, and by him neare  
 His habergeon, his helmet, and his speare:  
 A little of, his shield was rudely throwne,  
 On which the Winged Boy in colours cleare  
 Depeincted was, full easie to be knowne,  
 And he thereby, where ever it in field was  
 showne.

## VIII

His face upon the grownd did groveling ly,  
 As if he had beene slombring in the shade,

That the brave mayd would not for courtesy  
 Out of his quiet slomber him abrade,  
 Nor seeme too suddainly him to invade:  
 Still as she stood, she heard with grievous  
 throb  
 Him grone, as if his hart were peeces made,  
 And with most painefull pangs to sigh and  
 sob,  
 That pittie did the virgins hart of patience  
 rob.

## IX

At last forth breaking into bitter plaintes  
 He said: 'O soverayne Lord, that sit'st on  
 hye,  
 And raignt in blis emongst thy blessed  
 saintes,  
 How suffrest thou such shamefull cruelty,  
 So long unwreaked of thine enemy?  
 Or hast thou, Lord, of good mens cause no  
 heed?  
 Or doth thy justice sleepe, and silently?  
 What booteth then the good and righteous  
 deed,  
 If goodnesse find no grace, nor righteousness  
 no need?

## X

'If good find grace, and righteousness re-  
 ward,  
 Why then is Amoret in caytive band,  
 Sith that more bounteous creature never  
 far'd  
 On foot upon the face of living land?  
 Or if that hevenly justice may withstand  
 The wrongfull outrage of unrighteous men,  
 Why then is Busirane with wicked hand  
 Suffred, these seven monethes day in secret  
 den  
 My lady and my love so cruelly to pen?

## XI

'My lady and my love is cruelly pend  
 In dolefull darkenes from the vew of day,  
 Whilest deadly torments doe her chaste  
 brest rend,  
 And the sharpe steele doth rive her hart in  
 tway,  
 All for she Scudamore will not deny.  
 Yet thou, vile man, vile Scudamore, art  
 sound,  
 Ne canst her ayde, ne canst her foe dismay;  
 Unworthy wretch to tread upon the ground,  
 For whom so faire a lady feelles so sore a  
 wound.'

## XII

There an huge heape of singulfes did op-  
presse

His struggling soule, and swelling throbs  
empeach

His foltring tounge with pangs of drerinesse,  
Choking the remnant of his plaintife speach,  
As if his dayes were come to their last  
reach.

Which when she heard, and saw the ghastly  
fit,

Threatning into his life to make a breach,  
Both with great ruth and terrour she was  
smit,

Fearing least from her cage the wearie  
soule would flit.

## XIII

Tho stouping downe, she him amoved light;  
Who, therewith somewhat starting, up gan  
looke,

And seeing him behind a stranger knight,  
Whereas no living creature he mistooke,  
With great indignaunce he that sight for-  
sooke,

And downe againe himsele disdainefully  
Abjecting, th' earth with his faire forehead  
strooke:

Which the bold virgin seeing, gan apply  
Fit medicine to his griefe, and spake thus  
courtesly:

## XIV

'Ah! gentle knight, whose deepe conceivd griefe

Well seemes t' excede the powre of pa-  
tience,

Yet if that heavenly grace some good re-  
liefe

You send, submit you to High Providence,  
And ever in your noble hart prepen-  
se,  
That all the sorrow in the world is lesse  
Then vertues might and values confidence.  
For who nill bide the burden of distresse  
Must not here thinke to live: for life is  
wretchednesse.

## XV

'Therefore, faire sir, doe comfort to you  
take,

And freely read what wicked felon so  
Hath outrag'd you, and thrald your gentle  
make.

Perhaps this hand may helpe to ease your  
woe,

And wreake your sorrow on your cruell  
foe;

At least it faire endeavour will apply.'

Those feeling words so neare the quicke  
did goe,

That up his head he reared easily,

And leaning on his elbowe, these few words  
lett fly:

## XVI

'What boots it plaine that cannot be re-  
drest,

And sow vaine sorrow in a fruitlesse eare,  
Sith powre of hand, nor skill of learned  
brest,

Ne worldly price cannot redeeme my deare  
Out of her thraldome and continuall feare?  
For he, the tyrant, which her hath in ward  
By strong enchauntments and blacke mag-  
icke leare,

Hath in a dungeon deepe her close embard,  
And many dreadfull feends hath pointed to  
her gard.

## XVII

'There he tormenteth her most terribly,  
And day and night afflicts with mortall  
paine,

Because to yield him love she doth deny,  
Once to me yold, not to be yolde againe:  
But yet by torture he would her con-  
straine

Love to conceive in her disdainfull brest;  
Till so she doe, she must in doole remaine,  
Ne may by living meanes be thence relest:  
What boots it then to plaine that cannot be  
redrest?'

## XVIII

With this sad hersall of his heavy stresse  
The warlike damzell was empassiond sore,  
And sayd: 'Sir knight, your cause is no-  
thing lesse

Then is your sorrow, certes, if not more;  
For nothing so much pittty doth implore,  
As gentle ladies helplesse misery.

But yet, if please ye listen to my lore,  
I will, with prooffe of last extremity,  
Deliver her fro thence, or with her for you  
dy.'

## XIX

'Ah! gentlest knight alive,' sayd Scuda-  
more,

'What huge heroicke magnanimity



Dwells in thy bounteous brest? what  
 couldst thou more,  
 If shee were thine, and thou as now am I?  
 O spare thy happy daies, and them apply  
 To better boot, but let me die, that ought;  
 More is more losse: one is enough to dy.'  
 'Life is not lost,' said she, 'for which is  
 bought  
 Endlesse renown, that more then death is  
 to be sought.'

## XX

Thus shee at length persuaded him to rise,  
 And with her wend, to see what new suc-  
 cesse  
 Mote him befall upon new enterprise:  
 His armes, which he had vowed to dispro-  
 fesse,  
 She gathered up and did about him dresse,  
 And his forwardred steed unto him gott:  
 So forth they both yfere make their pro-  
 gresse,  
 And march not past the mountenaunce of a  
 shott,  
 Till they arriv'd whereas their purpose they  
 did plott.

## XXI

There they dismounting, drew their weap-  
 ons bold,  
 And stoutly came unto the castle gate,  
 Whereas no gate they found, them to with-  
 hold,  
 Nor ward to wait at morne and evening  
 late;  
 But in the porch, that did them sore amate,  
 A flaming fire, ymixt with smouldry smoke  
 And stinking sulphure, that with griesly  
 hate  
 And dreadfull horror did all entraunce  
 choke,  
 Enforced them their forward footing to  
 revoke.

## XXII

Greatly thereat was Britomart dismayd,  
 Ne in that stownd wist how her selfe to  
 beare;  
 For daunger vaine it were to have assayd  
 That cruell element, which all things feare,  
 Ne none can suffer to approchen neare:  
 And turning backe to Seudamour, thus  
 sayd:  
 'What monstrous enmity provoke we  
 heare,

Foolhardy as th' Earthes children, the which  
 made  
 Batteill against the gods? so we a god in-  
 vade.

## XXIII

'Daunger without discretion to attempt  
 Inglorious and beastlike is: therefore, sir  
 knight,  
 Aread what course of you is safest dempt,  
 And how we with our foe may come to  
 fight.'  
 'This is,' quoth he, 'the dolorous despight,  
 Which earst to you I playnd: for neither  
 may  
 This fire be quencht by any witt or might,  
 Ne yet by any meanes remov'd away;  
 So mighty be th' enchauntments which the  
 same do stay.

## XXIV

'What is there ells, but cease these fruit-  
 lesse paines,  
 And leave me to my former languishing?  
 Faire Amorett must dwell in wicked chaines,  
 And Seudamore here die with sorrowing.'  
 'Perdy, not so,' saide shee; 'for shameful  
 thing  
 Yt were t' abandon noble chevisaunce,  
 For shewe of perill, without venturing:  
 Rather let try extremities of chaunce,  
 Then enterprised praise for dread to dis-  
 avaunce.'

## XXV

Therewith, resolv'd to prove her utmost  
 might,  
 Her ample shield she threw before her  
 face,  
 And her swords point directing forward  
 right,  
 Assayld the flame, the which eftesoones  
 gave place,  
 And did it selfe divide with equall space,  
 That through she passed, as a thounder bolt  
 Perceth the yielding ayre, and doth dis-  
 place  
 The soring clouds into sad showres ymolt;  
 So to her yold the flames, and did their  
 force revolt.

## XXVI

Whome whenas Seudamour saw past the  
 fire,  
 Safe and untoucht, he likewise gan assay,

With greedy will and envious desire,  
And bad the stubborne flames to yield him  
way:

But cruell Muleiber would not obay  
His threatfull pride, but did the more aug-  
ment

His mighty rage, and with imperious sway  
Him forst (maulgre) his fercenes to relent,  
And backe retire, all scoreht and pitifully  
brent.

## XXVII

With huge impatience he inly swelt,  
More for great sorrow that he could not pas  
Then for the burning torment which he felt;  
That with fell woodnes he effierced was,  
And wilfully him throwing on the gras,  
Did beat and bounse his head and brest ful  
sore;

The whiles the championesse now entred  
has

The utmost rowme, and past the formost  
dore,

The utmost rowme, abounding with all pre-  
cious store.

## XXVIII

For round about, the walls yelothed were  
With goodly arras of great majesty,  
Woven with gold and silke so close and  
nere,

That the rich metall lurked privily,  
As faining to be hidd from envious eye;  
Yet here, and there, and every where un-  
wares

It shewd it selfe, and shone unwillingly;  
Like a discolourd snake, whose hidden snares  
Through the greene gras his long bright  
burnisht back declares.

## XXIX

And in those tapets weren fashioned  
Many faire pourtraicts, and many a faire  
feate;

And all of love, and al of lusty-hed,  
As seemed by their semblaunt, did entreat;  
And eke all Cupids warres they did repeate,  
And cruell batailles, which he whilome  
fought

Gainst all the gods, to make his empire  
great;

Besides the huge massacres, which he  
wrought

On mighty kings and kesars, into thraldome  
brought.

## XXX

Therein was writt, how often thondring  
Jove

Had felt the point of his hart percing dart,  
And leaving heavens kingdome, here did  
rove

In straunge disguise, to slake his scalding  
smart;

Now like a ram, faire Helle to pervart,  
Now like a bull, Europa to withdraw:

Ah! how the fearefull ladies tender hart  
Did lively seeme to tremble, when she saw  
The huge seas under her t' obay her ser-  
vaunts law!

## XXXI

Soone after that, into a golden showre  
Him selfe he chaung'd, faire Danaë to vew,  
And through the roofe of her strong brasen  
towre

Did raine into her lap an hony dew,  
The whiles her foolish garde, that litle knew  
Of such deceit, kept th' yron dore fast  
bard,

And watcht, that none should enter nor is-  
sew;

Vaine was the watch, and bootlesse all the  
ward,

Whenas the god to golden hew him selfe  
transfard.

## XXXII

Then was he turnd into a snowy swan,  
To win faire Leda to his lovely trade:  
O wondrous skill and sweet wit of the man,  
That her in daffadillies sleeping made,  
From scorching heat her daintie limbes to  
shade:

Whiles the proud bird, ruffing his fethers  
wyde

And brushing his faire brest, did her in-  
vade!

Shce slept, yet twixt her eielids closely  
spyde

How towards her he rusht, and sniled at  
his pryde.

## XXXIII

Then shewd it how the Thebane Scmelce,  
Deceivd of gealous Juno, did require  
To see him in his soverayne majestee,  
Arind with his thunderbolts and lightning  
fire,

Whens dearely she with death bought her  
desire.

But faire Alcmena better match did make,  
 Joying his love in likenes more entire:  
 Three nights in one they say that for her  
 sake  
 He then did put, her pleasures lenger to  
 partake.

## XXXIV

Twise was he seene in soaring eagles shape,  
 And with wide winges to beat the buxome  
 ayre:

Once, when he with Asterie did scape,  
 Againe, when as the Trojane boy so fayre  
 He snatcht from Ida hill, and with him bare:  
 Wondrous delight it was, there to behould  
 How the rude shepheards after him did stare,  
 Trembling through feare least down he  
 fallen should,  
 And often to him calling to take surer  
 hould.

## XXXV

In Satyres shape Antiopa he snatcht:  
 And like a fire, when he Aegin' assayd:  
 A shepheard, when Mnemosyne he catcht:  
 And like a serpent to the Thracian mayd.  
 Whyles thus on earth great Jove these pa-  
 geaunts playd,  
 The Winged Boy did thrust into his throne,  
 And scoffing, thus unto his mother sayd:  
 'Lo! now the heavens obey to me alone,  
 And take me for their Jove, whiles Jove to  
 earth is gone.'

## XXXVI

And thou, faire Phœbus, in thy colours  
 bright  
 Wast there enwoven, and the sad distresse  
 In which that boy thee plunged, for de-  
 spight  
 That thou bewray'dst his mothers wanton-  
 nesse,  
 When she with Mars was meynt in joyful-  
 nesse:  
 Forthy he thrild thee with a leaden dart,  
 To love faire Daphne, which thee loved  
 lesse:  
 Lesse she thee lov'd then was thy just de-  
 sart,  
 Yet was thy love her death, and her death  
 was thy smart.

## XXXVII

So lovedst thou the lusty Hyacinet,  
 So lovedst thou the faire Coronis deare:

Yet both are of thy haplesse hand ex-  
 tinct,  
 Yet both in flowres doe live, and love thee  
 beare,  
 The one a paunce, the other a sweet breare:  
 For grieve whereof, ye mote have lively  
 seene  
 The god himselfe rending his golden heare,  
 And breaking quite his garlond ever greene,  
 With other signes of sorrow and impatient  
 teene.

## XXXVIII

Both for those two, and for his owne deare  
 sonne,  
 The sonne of Climene, he did repent,  
 Who, bold to guide the charet of the  
 sunne,  
 Himselfe in thousand peeces fondly rent,  
 And all the world with flashing fire brent:  
 So like, that all the walles did seeme to  
 flame.  
 Yet cruell Cupid, not herewith content,  
 Forst him eftsoones to follow other game,  
 And love a shephards daughter for his  
 dearest dame.

## XXXIX

He loved Isse for his dearest dame,  
 And for her sake her cattell fedd a while,  
 And for her sake a cowheard vile became,  
 The servant of Admetus, cowheard vile,  
 Whiles that from heaven he suffered ex-  
 ile.  
 Long were to tell each other lovely fitt,  
 Now like a lyon, hunting after spoile,  
 Now like a stag, now like a faulcon flit:  
 All which in that faire arras was most lively  
 writ.

## XL

Next unto him was Neptune pictured,  
 In his divine resemblance wondrous lyke:  
 His face was rugged, and his hoarie hed  
 Dropped with brackish deaw; his threeforkt  
 pyke  
 He stearnly shooke, and therewith fierce  
 did stryke  
 The raging billowes, that on every syde  
 They trembling stood, and made a long  
 broad dyke,  
 That his swift charet might have passage  
 wyde,  
 Which foure great hippodames did draw in  
 temewise tyde.



## XLI

His seahorses did seeme to snort amayne,  
 And from their nosethrilles blow the brynie  
 streame,  
 That made the sparckling waves to smoke  
 agayne,  
 And flame with gold, but the white fomy  
 creame  
 Did shine with silver, and shoot forth his  
 beame.  
 The god himselfe did pensive seeme and  
 sad,  
 And hong adowne his head, as he did  
 dreame:  
 For privy love his brest empierced had,  
 Ne ought but deare Bisaltis ay could make  
 him glad.

## XLII

He loved eke Iphimedia deare,  
 And Aeolus faire daughter, Arne hight,  
 For whom he turnd him selfe into a steare,  
 And fedd on fodder, to beguile her sight.  
 Also to win Deucalions daughter bright,  
 He turnd him selfe into a dolphin fayre;  
 And like a winged horse he tooke his flight,  
 To snaky-locke Medusa to repayre,  
 On whom he got faire Pegasus, that fitteth  
 in the ayre.

## XLIII

Next Saturne was, (but who would ever  
 weene  
 That sullein Saturne ever weend to love?  
 Yet love is sullein, and Saturnlike seene,  
 As he did for Erigone it prove,)
 That to a centaure did him selfe transmove.  
 So proov'd it eke that gracious god of wine,  
 When, for to compasse Philliras hard love,  
 He turnd himselfe into a fruitfull vine,  
 And into her faire bosome made his grapes  
 decline.

## XLIV

Long were to tell the amorous assayes,  
 And gentle pangues, with which he maked  
 meeke  
 The mightie Mars, to learne his wanton  
 playes:  
 How oft for Venus, and how often eek  
 For many other nymphes he sore did  
 shreek,  
 With womanish teares, and with unwarlike  
 smarts,  
 Privily moystening his horrid cheeke.

There was he painted full of burning  
 dartes,  
 And many wide woundes launched through  
 his inner partes.

## XLV

Ne did he spare (so cruell was the elfe)  
 His owne deare mother, (ah! why should  
 he so?)  
 Ne did he spare sometime to pricke him-  
 selfe,  
 That he might taste the sweet consuming  
 woe,  
 Which he had wrought to many others moe.  
 But to declare the mournfull tragedyes,  
 And spoiles, wherewith he all the ground  
 did strow,  
 More eath to number with how many eyes  
 High heaven beheldes sad lovers nightly  
 theeveryes.

## XLVI

Kings, queenes, lords, ladies, knights, and  
 damsels gent  
 Were heap'd together with the vulgar sort,  
 And mingled with the raskall rabblement,  
 Without respect of person or of port,  
 To shew Dan Cupids powre and great  
 effort:  
 And round about, a border was entrayld  
 Of broken bowes and arrowes shivered  
 short,  
 And a long bloody river through them rayld,  
 So lively and so like that living sence it  
 fayld.

## XLVII

And at the upper end of that faire rowme,  
 There was an altar built of pretious stone,  
 Of passing valew and of great renowme,  
 On which there stood an image all alone  
 Of massy gold, which with his owne light  
 shone;  
 And winges it had with sondry colours  
 dight,  
 More sondry colours then the proud pavone  
 Beares in his boasted fan, or Iris bright,  
 When her discoloured bow she spreds  
 through hevens hight.

## XLVIII

Blyndfold he was, and in his cruell fist  
 A mortall bow and arrowes keene did hold,  
 With which he shot at randon, when him  
 list,

Some headed with sad lead, some with pure  
gold;  
(Ah! man, beware how thou those dartes  
behold.)  
A wounded dragon under him did ly,  
Whose hideous tayle his lefte foot did en-  
fold,  
And with a shaft was shot through either  
eye,  
That no man forth might draw, ne no man  
remedye.

## XLIX

And underneath his feet was written thus,  
*Unto the victor of the gods this bee:*  
And all the people in that ample hous  
Did to that image bowe their humble  
knee,  
And oft committed fowle idolatree.  
That wondrous sight faire Britomart  
amazd,  
Ne seeing could her wonder satisfie,  
But ever more and more upon it gazd,  
The whiles the passing brightnes her fraile  
sences dazd.

## L

Tho as she backward cast her busie eye,  
To search each secrete of that goodly  
sted,  
Over the dore thus written she did spye,  
*Bee bold:* she oft and oft it over-red,  
Yet could not find what sence it figured:  
But what so were therein or writ or  
ment,  
She was no whit thereby discouraged  
From prosecuting of her first intent,  
But forward with bold steps into the next  
roome went.

## LI

Much fayrer then the former was that  
roome,  
And richlier by many partes arayd;  
For not with arras made in painefull loome,  
But with pure gold, it all was overlayd,  
Wrought with wilde antickes, which their  
follies playd  
In the rich metall, as they living were:  
A thousand monstrous formes therein were  
made,  
Such as false Love doth oft upon him  
weare,  
For Love in thousand monstrous formes  
doth oft appeare.

## LII

And all about, the glistring walles were  
hong  
With warlike spoiles and with victorious  
prayes  
Of mightie conquerours and captaines  
strong,  
Which were whilome captived in their  
dayes  
To cruell Love, and wrought their owne  
decayes:  
Their swerds and speres were broke, and  
hauberques rent,  
And their proud girlonds of tryumphant  
bayes  
Troden in dust with fury insolent,  
To shew the victors might and mercilesse  
intent.

## LIII

The warlike mayd, beholding earnestly  
The goodly ordinaunce of this rich place,  
Did greatly wonder, ne could satisfy  
Her greedy eyes with gazing a long space;  
But more she mervaild that no footings  
trace  
Nor wight appear'd, but wastefull empti-  
nesse  
And solemne silence over all that place:  
Straunge thing it seem'd, that none was to  
possesse  
So rich purveyaunce, ne them keepe with  
carefulnesse.

## LIV

And as she lookt about, she did behold  
How over that same dore was likewise  
writ,  
*Be bolde, be bolde,* and every where *Be bold,*  
That much she muz'd, yet could not con-  
strue it  
By any ridling skill or commune wit.  
At last she spyde at that rowmes upper end  
Another yron dore, on which was writ,  
*Be not too bold;* whereto though she did bend  
Her earnest minde, yet wist not what it  
might intend.

## LV

Thus she there wayted untill eventyde,  
Yet living creature none she saw appeare:  
And now sad shadowes gan the world to  
hyde  
From mortall vew, and wrap in darkenes  
dreare:

Yet nould she d'off her weary armes, for  
 feare  
 Of secreet daunger, ne let sleepe oppresse  
 Her heavy eyes with natures burdein deare,  
 But drew her selfe aside in sickernesse,  
 And her welpointed wepons did about her  
 dresse.

## CANTO XII

The maske of Cupid, and th' enchanted  
 chamber are displayd,  
 Whence Britomart redeemes faire  
 Amoret through charmes decayd.

## I

THO, when as chearelesse night ycovered  
 had  
 Fayre heaven with an universall clowd,  
 That every wight, dismayd with darkenes  
 sad,  
 In silence and in sleepe themselves did  
 shrowd,  
 She heard a shrilling trompet sound alowd,  
 Signe of nigh battaill, or got victory:  
 Nought therewith daunted was her conrage  
 prowde,  
 But rather stird to cruell enmity,  
 Expecting ever when some foe she might  
 descry.

## II

With that, an hideous storme of winde  
 arose,  
 With dreadfull thunder and lightning  
 atwixt,  
 And an earthquake, as if it streight would  
 lose  
 The worlds foundations from his centre fixt:  
 A direfull stench of smoke and sulphure  
 mixt  
 Ensewd, whose noyaunce fild the fearefull  
 sted,  
 From the fourth howre of night untill the  
 sixt;  
 Yet the bold Britonesse was nought ydred,  
 Though much emmov'd, but stedfast still  
 persevered.

## III

All suddainly a stormy whirlwind blew  
 Throughout the honse, that clapped every  
 dore,  
 With which that yron wicket open flew,  
 As it with mighty levers had bene tore;

And forth yssewd, as on the readie flore  
 Of some theatre, a grave personage,  
 That in his hand a braunch of laurell bore,  
 With comely haveour and count'nance sage,  
 Yclad in costly garments, fit for tragicke  
 stage.

## IV

Proceeding to the midst, he stil did stand,  
 As if in minde he somewhat had to say,  
 And to the vulgare beckning with his hand,  
 In signe of silence, as to heare a play,  
 By lively actions he gan bewray  
 Some argument of matter passioned;  
 Which doon, he backe rettyred soft away,  
 And passing by, his name discovered,  
 Ease, on his robe in golden letters cyphered.

## V

The noble mayd, still standing, all this  
 vewd,  
 And merveild at his straunge intendment:  
 With that a joyous fellowship issewd  
 Of minstrales, making goodly meriment,  
 With wanton bardes, and rymers impu-  
 dent,  
 All which together song full chearefully  
 A lay of loves delight, with sweet concent:  
 After whom marcht a jolly company,  
 In manner of a maske, enranged orderly.

## VI

The whiles a most delitious harmony  
 In full straunge notes was sweetly heard to  
 sound,  
 That the rare sweetnesse of the melody  
 The feeble sences wholly did confound,  
 And the frayle soule in deepe delight nigh  
 drownd:  
 And when it ceast, shrill trompets lowd did  
 bray,  
 That their report did far away rebound,  
 And when they ceast, it gan againe to play,  
 The whiles the maskers marched forth in  
 trim aray.

## VII

The first was Fansy, like a lovely boy,  
 Of rare aspect and beautie without peare,  
 Matchable ether to that ympe of Troy,  
 Whom Jove did love and chose his cup to  
 beare,  
 Or that same daintie lad, which was so  
 deare  
 To great Alcides, that, when as he dyde,



He wailed womanlike with many a teare,  
And every wood and every valley wyde  
He fild with Hylas name; the nymphes eke  
Hylas cryde.

## VIII

His garment nether was of silke nor say,  
But paynted plumes, in goodly order dight,  
Like as the sunburnt Indians do aray  
Their tawney bodies, in their proudest  
plight:

As those same plumes, so seemd he vaine  
and light,

That by his gate might easily appeare;  
For still he far'd as dauncing in delight,  
And in his hand a windy fan did beare,  
That in the ydle ayre he mov'd still here  
and theare.

## IX

And him beside marcht amorous Desyre,  
Who seemd of ryper yeares then th' other  
swayne,

Yet was that other swayne this elders syre,  
And gave him being, commune to them  
twayne:

His garment was disguysed very vayne,  
And his embrodered bonet sat awry;  
Twixt both his hands few sparks he close  
did strayne,

Which still he blew, and kindled busily,  
That soone they life conceiv'd, and forth in  
flames did fly.

## X

Next after him went Doubt, who was yclad  
In a discolour'd cote of straunge disguyse,  
That at his backe a brode capuccio had,  
And sleeves dependaunt Albanese-wyse:  
He lookt askew with his mistrustfull eyes,  
And nycely trode, as thornes lay in his way,  
Or that the flore to shrinke he did avyse,  
And on a broken reed he still did stay  
His feeble steps, which shrunk when hard  
thereon he lay.

## XI

With him went Daunger, cloth'd in ragged  
weed,

Made of beares skin, that him more dread-  
full made,

Yet his owne face was dreadfull, ne did  
need

Straunge horror to deforme his griesly  
shade:

A net in th' one hand, and a rusty blade  
In th' other was, this Mischiefe, that Mis-  
hap;

With th' one his foes he threatned to in-  
vade,

With th' other he his friends ment to en-  
wrap:

For whom he could not kill he practizd to  
entrap.

## XII

Next him was Feare, all arm'd from top to  
toe,

Yet thought himselfe not safe enough  
thereby,

But feard each shadow moving too or  
froe,

And his owne armes when glittering he did  
spy,

Or clashing heard, he fast away did fly,  
As ashes pale of hew, and wingyheeld;  
And evermore on Daunger fixt his eye,  
Gainst whom he alwayes bent a brasen  
shield,

Which his right hand unarmed fearefully  
did wield.

## XIII

With him went Hope in rancke, a hand-  
some mayd,

Of chearefull looke and lovely to behold;  
In silken samite she was light arayd,

And her fayre lockes were woven up in  
gold;

She alway smyld, and in her hand did hold  
An holy water sprinckle, dipt in deowe,  
With which she sprinckled favours mani-  
fold

On whom she list, and did great liking  
sheowe,

Great liking unto many, but true love to  
fewe.

## XIV

And after them Dissemblaunce and Sus-  
pect

Marcht in one rancke, yet an unequall  
paire:

For she was gentle and of milde aspect,  
Courteous to all and seeming debonaire,

Goodly adorned and exceeding faire:

Yet was that all but paynted and pour-  
loyned,

And her bright browes were deckt with  
borrowed haire:

Her deeds were forged, and her words false  
 coynd,  
 And alwaies in her hand two clewes of  
 silke she twynd.

## XV

But he was fowle, ill favoured, and grim,  
 Under his eiebrowes looking still askaunce;  
 And ever as Dissemblauunce laught on him,  
 He lowrd on her with daungerous eye-  
 glaunce,  
 Shewing his nature in his countenance;  
 His rolling eies did never rest in place,  
 But walkte each where, for feare of hid  
 mischaunce;  
 Holding a lattis still before his face,  
 Through which he stil did peep, as forward  
 he did pace.

## XVI

Next him went Griefe and Fury matcht  
 yfere;  
 Griefe all in sable sorrowfully clad,  
 Downe hanging his dull head, with heavy  
 chere,  
 Yet inly being more then seeming sad:  
 A paire of pincers in his hand he had,  
 With which he pinched people to the hart,  
 That from thenceforth a wretched life they  
 ladd,  
 In wilfull languor and consuming smart,  
 Dying each day with inward wounds of  
 dolours dart.

## XVII

But Fury was full ill appareiled  
 In rags, that naked nigh she did appeare,  
 With ghastly looks and dreadfull drerihed;  
 For from her backe her garments she did  
 teare,  
 And from her head ofte rent her snarled  
 heare:  
 In her right hand a firebrand shee did tosse  
 About her head, still roming here and there;  
 As a dismayed deare in chace embost,  
 Forgetfull of his safety, hath his right  
 way lost.

## XVIII

After them went Displeasure and Pleas-  
 aunce,  
 He looking lompish and full sullein sad,  
 And hanging downe his heavy countenance;  
 She chearfull fresh and full of joyaunce  
 glad,

As if no sorrow she ne felt ne drad;  
 That evill matched paire they seemd to  
 bee:

An angry waspe th' one in a viall had,  
 Th' other in hers an hony-laden bee.  
 Thus marched these six couples forth in  
 faire degree.

## XIX

After all these there marcht a most faire  
 dame,  
 Led of two grysie villeins, th' one De-  
 spight,  
 The other cleped Cruelty by name:  
 She, dolefull lady, like a dreary spright  
 Cald by strong charmes out of eternall  
 night,  
 Had deathes owne ymage figurd in her face,  
 Full of sad signes, fearfull to living sight,  
 Yet in that horror shewd a seemely grace,  
 And with her feeble feete did move a  
 comely pace.

## XX

Her brest all naked, as nett yvory,  
 Without adorne of gold or silver bright,  
 Wherewith the craftesman wonts it beaut-  
 ify,  
 Of her dew honour was despoyled quight,  
 And a wide wound therein (O ruefull  
 sight!)  
 Entrenched deep with knyfe accursed  
 keene,  
 Yet freshly bleeding forth her fainting  
 spright,  
 (The worke of cruell hand) was to be  
 seene,  
 That dyde in sanguine red her skin all  
 snowy cleene.

## XXI

At that wide orifice her trembling hart  
 Was drawne forth, and in silver basin layd,  
 Quite through transfixed with a deadly dart,  
 And in her blood yet steeming fresh em-  
 bayd:  
 And those two villeins, which her steps up-  
 stayd,  
 When her weake feete could scarcely her  
 sustaine,  
 And fading vitall powers gan to fade,  
 Her forward still with torture did con-  
 straine,  
 And evermore encreased her consuming  
 paine.

## XXII

Next after her, the Winged God him selfe  
 Came riding on a lion ravenous,  
 Taught to obey the menage of that elfe,  
 That man and beast with powre imperious  
 Subdeweth to his kingdome tyrannous:  
 His blindfold eies he had a while unbinde,  
 That his proud spoile of that same dolorous  
 Faire dame he might behold in perfect  
 kinde,  
 Which seene, he much rejoyced in his  
 cruell minde.

## XXIII

Of which ful prowd, him selfe up rearing  
 hye,  
 He looked round about with sterne dis-  
 dayne,  
 And did surway his goodly company:  
 And marshalling the evill ordered trayne,  
 With that the darts which his right hand  
 did straine  
 Full dreadfully he shooke, that all did  
 quake,  
 And clapt on hye his coulourd winges  
 twaine,  
 That all his many it affraide did make:  
 Tho, blinding him againe, his way he forth  
 did take.

## XXIV

Behinde him was Reproch, Repentaunce,  
 Shame;  
 Reproch the first, Shame next, Repent be-  
 hinde:  
 Repentaunce feeble, sorowfull, and lame;  
 Reproch desightful, carelesse, and un-  
 kinde;  
 Shame most ill favourd, bestiall, and blinde:  
 Shame lowrd, Repentaunce sigh'd, Reproch  
 did scould;  
 Reproch sharpe stings, Repentaunce whips  
 entwinde,  
 Shame burning brond-yrons in her hand did  
 hold:  
 All three to each unlike, yet all made in  
 one mould.

## XXV

And after them a rude confused rout  
 Of persons floekt, whose names is hard to  
 read:  
 Emongst them was sterne Strife, and An-  
 ger stout,  
 Unquiet Care, and fond Unthriftyhead,

Lewd Losse of Time, and Sorrow seeming  
 dead,  
 Inconstant Chaunge, and false Disloyalty,  
 Consuming Riotise, and guilty Dread  
 Of Heavenly Vengeaunce, faint Infirmitie,  
 Vile Poverty, and lastly Death with Infamy.

## XXVI

There were full many moe like maladies,  
 Whose names and natures I note readen  
 well;  
 So many moe, as there be phantasies  
 In wavering wemens witt, that none can  
 tell,  
 Or paines in love, or punishments in hell;  
 All which disguised marcht in masking  
 wise  
 About the chamber with that damozell,  
 And then returned, having marched thrise,  
 Into the inner rowme, from whence they  
 first did rise.

## XXVII

So soone as they were in, the dore streight  
 way  
 Fast locked, driven with that stormy blast  
 Which first it opened; and bore all away.  
 Then the brave maid, which al this while  
 was plast  
 In secret shade, and saw both first and last,  
 Issewed forth, and went unto the dore,  
 To enter in, but fownd it locked fast:  
 It vaine she thought with rigorous uprore  
 For to efforce, when charmes had closed it  
 afore.

## XXVIII

Where force might not avails, there sleights  
 and art  
 She cast to use, both fitt for hard emprise:  
 Forthly from that same rowme not to depart  
 Till morrow next shee did her selfe avize,  
 When that same maske againe should forth  
 arise.  
 The morrowe next appeared with joyous  
 cheare,  
 Calling men to their daily exercise:  
 Then she, as morrow fresh, her selfe did  
 reare  
 Out of her secret stand, that day for to out-  
 weare.

## XXIX

All that day she outwore in wandering,  
 And gazing on that chambers ornament,



Till that againe the second evening  
Her covered with her sable vestiment,  
Wherewith the worlds faire beautie she hath  
blent:

Then, when the second watch was almost  
past,

That brasen dore flew open, and in went  
Bold Britomart, as she had late forecast,  
Nether of ydle showes nor of false charmes  
aghast.

## XXX

So soone as she was entred, rownd about  
Shee cast her eies, to see what was be-  
come

Of all those persons which she saw without:  
But lo! they streight were vanisht all and  
some,

Ne living wight she saw in all that roome,  
Save that same woefull lady, both whose  
hands

Were bounden fast, that did her ill become,  
And her small waste girt rownd with yron  
bands,

Unto a brasen pillour, by the which she  
stands.

## XXXI

And her before, the vile enchaunter sate,  
Figuring straunge characters of his art:  
With living blood he those characters wrate,  
Dreadfully dropping from her dying hart,  
Seeming transfixed with a cruell dart;  
And all perforce to make her him to love.  
Ah! who can love the worker of her smart?  
A thousand charmes he formerly did prove;  
Yet thousand charmes could not her stedfast  
hart remove.

## XXXII

Soone as that virgin knight he saw in place,  
His wicked bookes in hast he overthrew,  
Not caring his long labours to deface;  
And fiercely running to that lady trew,  
A murderous knife out of his pocket drew,  
The which he thought, for villainous de-  
spight,

In her tormented bodie to embrew:  
But the stout damzell to him leaping light,  
His cursed hand withheld, and maistered his  
might.

## XXXIII

From her, to whom his fury first he ment,  
The wicked weapon rashly he did wrest,

And turning to herselfe his fell intent,  
Unwares it strooke into her snowie chest,  
That litle drops empurpled her faire brest.  
Exceeding wroth therewith the virgin grew,  
Albe the wound were nothing deepe im-  
prest,

And fiercely forth her mortall blade she  
drew,

To give him the reward for such vile outrage  
dew.

## XXXIV

So mightily she smote him, that to ground  
He fell halfe dead; next stroke him should  
have slaine,

Had not the lady, which by him stood bound,  
Dernly unto her called to abstaine

From doing him to dy; for else her paine  
Should be remediesse, sith none but hee,  
Which wrought it, could the same recure  
againe.

Therewith she stayd her hand, loth stayd to  
bee;

For life she him envyde, and long'd revenge  
to see:

## XXXV

And to him said: 'Thou wicked man! whose  
meed

For so huge mischiefe and vile villany  
Is death, or if that ought doe death exceed,  
Be sure that nought may save thee from to  
dy,

But if that thou this dame doe presently  
Restore unto her health and former state;  
This doe and live, els dye undoubtedly.'  
He, glad of life, that lookt for death but  
late,

Did yield him selfe right willing to prolong  
his date:

## XXXVI

And rising up, gan streight to overlooke  
Those cursed leaves, his charmes back to  
reverse;

Full dreadfull thinges out of that balefull  
booke

He red, and measur'd many a sad verse,  
That horreur gan the virgins hart to perse,  
And her faire locks up stared stiffe on end,  
Hearing him those same bloody lynes re-  
herse;

And all the while he red, she did extend  
Her sword high over him, if ought he did  
offend.

## XXXVII

Anon she gan perceive the house to quake,  
And all the dores to rattle round about;  
Yet all that did not her dismaied make,  
Nor slack her threatfull hand for daungers

dout,  
But still with stedfast eye and courage stout  
Abode, to weet what end would come of all.  
At last that mightie chaine, which round

about  
Her tender waste was wound, adowne gan  
fall,

And that great brasen pillour broke in  
peecees small.

## XXXVIII

The cruell steele, which thirld her dying  
hart,

Fell softly forth, as of his owne accord,  
And the wyde wound, which lately did dis-  
part

Her bleeding brest, and riven bowels gor'd,  
Was closed up, as it had not beene bor'd,  
And every part to safety full sownd,  
As she were never hurt, was soone restor'd:  
Tho, when she felt her selfe to be unbownd,  
And perfect hole, prostrate she fell unto  
the grownd.

## XXXIX

Before faire Britomart she fell prostrate,  
Saying: 'Ah, noble knight! what worthy  
meede

Can wretched lady, quitt from wofull state,  
Yield you in lieu of this your gracious  
deed?

Your vertue selfe her owne reward shall  
breed,

Even immortall prayse and glory wyde,  
Which I, your vassall, by your prowesse  
freed,

Shall through the world make to be noti-  
fyde,

And goodly well advaunce, that goodly well  
was tryde.'

## XL

But Britomart, uprearing her from grownd,  
Said: 'Gentle dame, reward enough I  
weene,

For many labours more then I have found,  
This, that in safetie now I have you seene,  
And meane of your deliverance have beene:  
Henceforth, faire lady, comfort to you  
take,

And put away remembraunce of late teene;  
In sted thereof, know that your loving  
make  
Hath no lesse grieve endured for your gen-  
tle sake.'

## XLI

She much was cheard to heare him men-  
tiond,

Whom of all living wightes she loved best.  
Then laid the noble championesse strong  
hond

Upon th' enchaunter, which had her dis-  
trest

So sore, and with foule outrages opprest:  
With that great chaine, wherewith not long  
ygoe

He bound that pitteous lady prisoner, now  
siest,

Himselfe she bound, more worthy to be so,  
And captive with her led to wretchednesse  
and wo.

## XLII

Returning back, those goodly rowmes,  
which erst

She saw so rich and royally arayd,  
Now vanisht utterly and cleane subverst  
She found, and all their glory quite de-  
cayd,

That sight of such a chaunge her much  
dismayd.

Thence forth descending to that perlous  
porch,

Those dreadfull flames she also found de-  
layd,

And quenched quite, like a consumed torch,  
That erst all entrers wont so ernelly to  
scorch.

## XLIII

More easie issew now then entrance late  
She found: for now that fained dreadfull  
flame,

Which chokt the porch of that enchaunted  
gate,

And passage bard to all that thither came,  
Was vanisht quite, as it were not the same,  
And gave her leave at pleasure forth to  
passe.

Th' enchaunter selfe, which all that fraud  
did frame,

To have efforst the love of that faire lasse,  
Seeing his worke now wasted, deepe en-  
grieved was.

## XLIV

But when the victoresse arrived there  
 Where late she left the pensife Scudamore  
 With her own trusty squire, both full of  
 feare,  
 Neither of them she found where she them  
 lore:  
 Thereat her noble hart was stonisht sore;  
 But most faire Amoret, whose gentle spright  
 Now gan to feede on hope, which she be-  
 fore  
 Conceived had, to see her own deare knight,  
 Being thereof beguyl'd, was fild with new  
 affright.

## XLV

But he, sad man, when he had long in drede  
 Awayted there for Britomarts returne,  
 Yet saw her not, nor signe of her good speed,  
 His expectation to despaire did turne,  
 Misdeeming sure that her those flames did  
 burne;  
 And therefore gan advize with her old  
 squire,  
 Who her deare nourslings losse no lesse did  
 mourne,  
 Thence to depart for further aide t' en-  
 quire:  
 Where let them wend at will, whilst here  
 I doe respire.

## THE SECOND PART OF THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAINING

THE FOURTH, FIFTH, AND SIXTH BOOKES

BY ED. SPENSER

IMPRINTED AT LONDON FOR WILLIAM  
 PONSONBY. 1596

### THE FOURTH BOOKE OF THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAINING

THE LEGEND OF CAMBEL AND  
 TRIAMOND

OR

OF FRIENDSHIP

I

THE rugged forehead that with grave fore-  
 sight  
 Welds kingdomes causes and affaires of state,  
 My looser rimes (I wote) doth sharply wite,  
 For praising love, as I have done of late,  
 And magnifying lovers deare debate;  
 By which fraile youth is oft to follie led,  
 Through false allurements of that pleasing  
 baite,  
 That better were in vertues disciplined,  
 Then with vaine poemes weeds to have  
 their fancies fed.

II

Such ones ill judge of love, that cannot  
 love,  
 Ne in their frozen hearts feelee kindly  
 flame:  
 Forthy they ought not thing unknowne re-  
 prove,  
 Ne naturall affection faultlesse blame,  
 For fault of few that have abusd the  
 same.  
 For it of honor and all vertue is  
 The roote, and brings forth glorious flowres  
 of fame,  
 That crowne true lovers with immortall  
 blis,  
 The meed of them that love, and do not  
 live amisse.

III

Which who so list looke backe to former  
 ages,  
 And call to count the things that then were  
 donne,



Shall find, that all the workes of those wise  
sages,  
And brave exploits which great heroes  
wonne,  
In love were either ended or begunne:  
Witness the father of philosophie.  
Which to his Critias, shaded oft from sunne,  
Of love full manie lessons did apply,  
The which these Stoicke censours cannot  
well deny.

## IV

To such therefore I do not sing at all,  
But to that saered saint my soveraigne  
Queene,  
In whose chaste breast all bountie naturall  
And treasures of true love enlocked beene,  
Bove all her sexe that ever yet was seene:  
To her I sing of love, that loveth best  
And best is lov'd of all alive, I weene;  
To her this song most fitly is address,  
The queene of love, and prince of peace  
from heaven blest.

## V

Which that she may the better deigne to  
heare,  
Do thou, dred infant, Venus dearling  
dove,  
From her high spirit chase imperious feare,  
And use of awfull majestie remove:  
In sted thereof with drops of melting love,  
Deawd with ambrosiall kisses, by thee  
gotten  
From thy sweete smyling mother from  
above,  
Sprinkle her heart, and haughtie courage  
soften,  
That she may hearke to love, and reade  
this lesson often.

## CANTO 1

Fayre Britomart saves Amoret:  
Duessa discord breeds  
Twixt Scudamour and Blandamour:  
Their fight and warlike deedes.

## I

OF lovers sad calamities of old  
Full many piteous stories doe remaine,  
But none more piteous ever was ytold,  
Then that of Amorets hart-binding chaine,  
And this of Florimels unworthie paine:  
The deare compassion of whose bitter fit

My softened heart so sorely doth constraine,  
That I with teares full oft doe pittie it,  
And oftentimes doe wish it never had bene  
writ.

## II

For from the time that Seudamour her  
bought  
In perilous fight, she never joyed day;  
A perilous fight when he with force her  
brought  
From twentie knights, that did him all as-  
say:  
Yet fairely well he did them all dismay,  
And with great glorie both the Shield of  
Love  
And eke the ladie selfe he brought away;  
Whom having wedded, as did him behove,  
A new unknown mischiefe did from him  
remove.

## III

For that same vile enchauntour Busyran,  
The very selfe same day that she was  
wedded,  
Amidst the bridale feast, whilest every  
man,  
Surcharg'd with wine, were heedlesse and  
ill hedded,  
All bent to mirth before the bride was  
bedded,  
Brought in that Mask of Love which late  
was shoven:  
And there the ladie ill of friends bestedded,  
By way of sport, as oft in maskes is knowen,  
Conveyed quite away to living wight un-  
known.

## IV

Seven moneths he so her kept in bitter  
smart,  
Because his sinfull lust she would not serve,  
Untill such time as noble Britomart  
Released her, that else was like to sterve,  
Through cruell knife that her deare heart  
did kerve.  
And now she is with her upon the way,  
Marching in lovely wise, that could deserve  
No spot of blame, though spite did oft as-  
say

To blot her with dishonor of so faire a pray.

## V

Yet should it be a pleasant tale, to tell  
The diverse usage, and demeanure daint,

That each to other made, as oft befell.  
 For Amoret right fearefull was and faint,  
 Lest she with blame her honor should at-  
   taint,  
 That everie word did tremble as she  
   spake,  
 And everie looke was coy and wondrous  
   quaint,  
 And everie limbe that touched her did  
   quake:  
 Yet could she not but curteous countenance  
   to her make.

## VI

For well she wist, as true it was indeed,  
 That her lives lord and patrone of her  
   health  
 Right well deserved, as his duefull meed,  
 Her love, her service, and her utmost  
   wealth:  
 All is his justly, that all freely dealth.  
 Nathlesse her honor, dearer then her life,  
 She sought to save, as thing reserv'd from  
   stealth;  
 Die had she lever with enchanter's knife,  
 Then to be false in love, profest a virgine  
   wife.

## VII

Thereto her feare was made so much the  
   greater  
 Through fine abuson of that Briton mayd:  
 Who, for to hide her fained sex the better  
 And maske her wounded mind, both did  
   and sayd  
 Full many things so doubtfull to be wayd,  
 That well she wist not what by them to  
   gesse;  
 For other whiles to her she purpos made  
 Of love, and otherwhiles of lustfulnesse,  
 That much she feard his mind would grow  
   to some exeesse.

## VIII

His will she feard; for him she surely  
   thought  
 To be a man, such as indeed he seemed,  
 And much the more, by that he lately  
   wrought,  
 When her from deadly thraldome he re-  
   deemed,  
 For which no serviee she too much es-  
   teemed:  
 Yet dread of sham: and doubt of fowle  
   dishonor

Made her not yeeld so much as due she  
   deemed.  
 Yet Britomart attended duly on her,  
 As well became a knight, and did to her all  
   honor.

## IX

It so befell one evening, that they came  
 Unto a castell, lodged there to bee,  
 Where many a knight, and many a lovely  
   dame,  
 Was then assembled, deeds of armes to see:  
 Amongst all which was none more faire  
   then shee,  
 That many of them mov'd to eye her sore.  
 The custome of that place was such, that hee  
 Which had no love nor lemmen there in  
   store  
 Should either winne him one, or lye with-  
   out the dore.

## X

Amongst the rest there was a jolly knight,  
 Who, being asked for his love, avow'd  
 That fairest Amoret was his by right,  
 And offred that to justifie alowd.  
 The warlike virgine, seeing his so prowd  
 And boastfull chalenge, wexed inlie wroth,  
 But for the present did her anger shrowd;  
 And sayd, her love to lose she was full loth,  
 But either he should neither of them have,  
   or both.

## XI

So foorth they went, and both together  
   giusted;  
 But that same younker soone was over  
   throwne,  
 And made repent that he had rashly lusted  
 For thing unlawfull, that was not his owne:  
 Yet since he seemed valiant, though un-  
   knowne,  
 She, that no lesse was courteous then stout,  
 Cast how to salve, that both the custome  
   showne  
 Were kept, and yet that knight not locked  
   out;  
 That seem'd full hard t' accord two things  
   so far in dout.

## XII

The seneshall was cal'd to deeme the  
   right:  
 Whom she requir'd, that first fayre Amoret  
 Might be to her allow'd, as to a knight

That did her win and free from chalenge  
set:

Which straight to her was yeelded without  
let.

Then, since that strange knights love from  
him was quitted,

She claim'd that to her selfe, as ladies  
det,

He as a knight might justly be admitted;  
So none should be out shut, sith all of loves  
were fitted.

## XIII

With that, her glistring helmet she un-  
laced;

Which doft, her golden lockes, that were  
up bound

Still in a knot, unto her heeles downe  
traced,

And like a silken veile in compasse round  
About her backe and all her bodie wound:  
Like as the shining skie in summers night,  
What time the dayes with scorching heat  
abound,

Is creasted all with lines of firie light,  
That it prodigious seemes in common peo-  
ples sight.

## XIV

Such when those knights and ladies all  
about

Beheld her, all were with amazement smit,  
And every one gan grow in secret dout  
Of this and that, according to each wit:

Some thought that some enchantment  
faygned it;

Some, that Bellona in that warlike wise  
To them appear'd, with shield and armour  
fit;

Some, that it was a maske of strange dis-  
guise:

So diversely each one did sundrie doubts  
devise.

## XV

But that young knight, which through her  
gentle deed

Was to that goodly fellowship restor'd,  
Ten thousand thanks did yeeld her for her  
meed,

And, doubly overcommen, her ador'd:

So did they all their former strife accord;  
And eke fayre Amoret, now freed from  
feare,

More franke affection did to her afford,

And to her bed, which she was wont for-  
beare,  
Now freely drew, and found right safe  
assurance theare.

## XVI

Where all that night they of their loves did  
treat,

And hard adventures, twixt themselves  
alone,

That each the other gan with passion great  
And griefull pittie privately bemone.

The morow next, so soone as Titan shone,  
They both uprose, and to their waies them  
dight:

Long wandred they, yet never met with  
none

That to their willes could them direct  
aright,

Or to them tydings tell that mote their  
harts delight.

## XVII

Lo! thus they rode, till at the last they  
spide

Two armed knights, that toward them did  
pace,

And ech of them had ryding by his side  
A ladie, seeming in so farre a space;

But ladies none they were, albee in face  
And outward shew faire semblance they did

beare;

For under maske of beautie and good  
grace

Vile treason and fowle falshood hidden  
were,

That mote to none but to the warie wise  
appeare.

## XVIII

The one of them the false Duessa hight,  
That now had chang'd her former wonted  
hew:

For she could d'on so manie shapes in  
sight,

As ever could cameleon colours new;  
So could she forge all colours, save the  
trew.

The other no whit better was then shee,  
But that, such as she was, she plaine did  
shew;

Yet otherwise much worse, if worse might  
bee,

And dayly more offensive unto each de-  
gree.



## XIX

Her name was Ate, mother of debate  
 And all dissention, which doth dayly grow  
 Amongst fraile men, that many a publike  
 state

And many a private oft doth overthrow.  
 Her false Duessa, who full well did know  
 To be most fit to trouble noble knights,  
 Which hunt for honor, raised from below  
 Out of the dwellings of the damned sprights,  
 Where she in darknes wastes her cursed  
 daies and nights.

## XX

Hard by the gates of hell her dwelling is,  
 There whereas all the plagues and harmes  
 abound,

Which punish wicked men, that walke  
 amisse.

It is a darksome delve farre under ground,  
 With thornes and barren brakes enviroind  
 round,

That none the same may easily out win;  
 Yet many waies to enter may be found,  
 But none to issue forth when one is in:  
 For discord harder is to end then to begin.

## XXI

And all within, the riven walls were hung  
 With ragged monuments of times forepast,  
 All which the sad effects of discord sung:  
 There were rent robes and broken scepters  
 plast,

Altars defyl'd, and holy things defast,  
 Disshivered speares, and shields ytorne in  
 twaine,

Great cities ransackt, and strong castles  
 rast,

Nations captived, and huge armies slaine:  
 Of all which ruines there some relicks did  
 remaine.

## XXII

There was the signe of antique Babylon,  
 Of fatall Thebes, of Rome that raigned  
 long,

Of sacred Salem, and sad Ilion,  
 For memorie of which on high there hong  
 The golden apple, cause of all their wrong,  
 For which the three faire goddesses did  
 strive:

There also was the name of Ninrod strong,  
 Of Alexander, and his princes five,  
 Which shar'd to them the spoiles that he  
 had got alive:

## XXIII

And there the relicks of the drunken fray,  
 The which amongst the Lapithee's befell:  
 And of the bloodie feast, which sent away  
 So many Centaures drunken soules to hell,  
 That under great Alcides furie fell:

And of the dreadfull discord, which did  
 drive

The noble Argonauts to outrage fell,  
 That each of life sought others to deprive,  
 All mindlesse of the Golden Fleece, which  
 made them strive.

## XXIV

And eke of private persons many moe,  
 That were too long a worke to count them  
 all;

Some of sworne friends, that did their  
 faith forgoe;

Some of borne brethren, prov'd unnaturall;  
 Some of deare lovers, foes perpetuall:

Witnesse their broken bandes there to be  
 seene,

Their girlonds rent, their bowres despoyled  
 all;

The monuments whereof there byding  
 beene,

As plaine as at the first, when they were  
 fresh and greene.

## XXV

Such was her house within; but all without,  
 The barren ground was full of wicked  
 weedes,

Which she her selfe had sowen all about,  
 Now growen great, at first of little seedes,  
 The seedes of evill wordes and factious  
 deedes;

Which, when to ripenesse due they growen  
 arre,

Bring forth an infinite increase, that  
 breeds

Tumultuous trouble and contentious jarre,  
 The which most often end in bloudshed  
 and in warre.

## XXVI

And those same cursed seedes doe also  
 serve

To her for bread, and yeeld her living food:  
 For life it is to her, when others sterve

Through mischievous debate and deadly  
 feood,

That she may sucke their life and drinke  
 their blood,

With which she from her childhood had  
bene fed:  
For she at first was borne of hellish brood,  
And by infernall furies nourished,  
That by her monstrous shape might easily  
be red.

## XXVII

Her face most fowle and filthy was to see,  
With squinted eyes contrarie wayes intended,  
And loathly mouth, unmeete a mouth to  
bee,  
That nought but gall and venom comprehended,  
And wicked wordes that God and man  
offended:  
Her lying tongue was in two parts divided,  
And both the parts did speake, and both  
contended;  
And as her tongue, so was her hart divided,  
That never thoght one thing, but doubly stil  
was guided.

## XXVIII

Als as she double spake, so heard she  
double,  
With matchlesse eares deformed and distorted,  
Fild with false rumors and seditious trouble,  
Bred in assemblies of the vulgar sort,  
That still are led with every light report.  
And as her eares, so eke her feet were odde,  
And much unlike, th' one long, the other  
short,  
And both misplast; that, when th' one forward  
yode,  
The other backe retired, and contrarie  
trode.

## XXIX

Likewise unequal were her handes twaine:  
That one did reach, the other pusht away;  
That one did make, the other mard againe,  
And sought to bring all things unto decay;  
Whereby great riches, gathered manie a  
day,  
She in short space did often bring to  
nought,  
And their possessours often did dismay:  
For all her studie was and all her thought,  
How she might overthrow the things that  
Concord wrought.

## XXX

So much her malice did her might surpas,  
That even th' Almightie selfe she did  
maligne,  
Because to man so mercifull he was,  
And unto all his creatures so benigne,  
Sith she her selfe was of his grace indigne:  
For all this worlds faire workmanship she  
tride  
Unto his last confusion to bring,  
And that great golden chaine quite to  
divide,  
With which it blessed Concord hath to-  
gether tide.

## XXXI

Such was that hag which with Duessa  
roade,  
And serving her in her malicious use,  
To hurt good knights, was as it were her  
baude,  
To sell her borrowed beantie to abuse.  
For though, like withered trec that wanteth  
juyce,  
She old and crooked were, yet now of late  
As fresh and fragrant as the floure deluce  
She was become, by chaunge of her estate,  
And made full goodly joyance to her new  
found mate.

## XXXII

Her mate, he was a jollie youthfull knight,  
That bore great sway in armes and chivalrie,  
And was indeed a man of mickle might:  
His name was Blandamour, that did descrie  
His fickle mind full of inconstancie.  
And now himselfe he fitted had right well  
With two companions of like qualitie,  
Faithlesse Duessa, and false Paridell,  
That whether were more false, full hard it  
is to tell.

## XXXIII

Now when this gallant with his goodly crew  
From farre espide the famous Britomart,  
Like knight adventurous in outward vew,  
With his faire paragon, his conquests part,  
Approching nigh, eftsoones his wanton hart  
Was tickled with delight, and jesting sayd:  
'Lo! there, Sir Paridel, for your desart,  
Good lucke presents you with yond lovely  
mayd,  
For pitie that ye want a fellow for your  
ayd.'

## XXXIV

By that the lovely paire drew nigh to hond:  
Whom when as Paridel more plaine be-  
held,

Albee in heart he like affection fond,  
Yet mindfull how he late by one was feld,  
That did those armes and that same seuteh-  
ion weld,

He had small lust to buy his love so deare,  
But answerd: 'Sir, him wise I never held,  
That, having once escaped perill neare,  
Would afterwards afresh the sleeping evill  
reare.

## XXXV

'This knight too late his manhood and his  
might

I did assay, that me right dearely eost,  
Ne list I for revenge provoke new fight,  
Ne for light ladies love, that soone is lost.'  
The hot-spurre youth so seorning to be erost,  
'Take then to you this dame of mine,' quoth  
hee,

'And I, without your perill or your eost,  
Will challenge yond same other for my  
fee.'

So forth he fiereely prickt, that one him  
scaree could see.

## XXXVI

The warlike Britonesse her soone adrest,  
And with such uncouth welcome did re-  
eeave

Hler fayned paramour, her forced guest,  
That, being forst his saddle soone to leave,  
Him selfe he did of his new love deceave,  
And made him selfe thensample of his follie.  
Which done, she passed forth, not taking  
leave,

And left him now as sad as whilome jollie,  
Well warned to beware with whom he dar'd  
to dallie.

## XXXVII

Which when his other companie beheld,  
They to his sueecour ran with readie ayd:  
And finding him unable once to weld,  
They reared him on horsebacke, and up-  
stayd,

Till on his way they had him forth con-  
vayd:

And all the way, with wondrous grieve of  
mynd

And shame, he shewd him selfe to be dis-  
mayd,

More for the love which he had left be-  
lynd,  
Then that which he had to Sir Paridel re-  
synd.

## XXXVIII

Nathlesse he forth did march well as he  
might,

And made good semblanee to his companie,  
Dissembling his disease and evill plight;  
Till that ere long they ehaunced to espie  
Two other knights, that towards them did  
ply

With speedie course, as bent to echarge  
them new.

Whom when as Blandamour approching nie  
Pereceiv'd to be such as they seemd in vew,  
He was full wo, and gan his former grieve  
renew.

## XXXIX

For th' one of them he perfectly descride  
To be Sir Seudamour, by that he bore  
The God of Love with wings displayed wide,  
Whom mortally he hated evermore,  
Both for his worth, that all men did adore,  
And eke because his love he wonne by  
right:

Which when he thought, it grieved him  
full sore,

That, through the bruses of his former  
fight,

He now unable was to wreake his old de-  
spight.

## XL

Forthy he thus to Paridel bespake:

'Faire sir, of frieudship let me now you  
pray,

That as I late adventured for your sake,  
The hurts whereof me now from battell stay,  
Ye will me now with like good turne repay,  
And justifie my cause on yonder knight.'

'Ah! sir,' said Paridel, 'do not dismay  
Your selfe for this; my selfe will for you  
fight,

As ye have done for me: the left hand rubs  
the right.'

## XLI

With that he put his spurres unto his steed,  
With speare in rest, and toward him did  
fare,

Like shaft out of a bow preventing speed.  
But Seudamour was shortly well aware



Of his approch, and gan him selfe prepare  
Him to receiue with entertainment meete.  
So furiously they met, that either bare  
The other downe under their horses feete,  
That what of them became themselves did  
scarsly weete.

## XLII

As when two billowes in the Irish sowndes,  
Forcibly driven with contrarie tydes,  
Do meete together, each abacke rebowndes  
With roaring rage; and dashing on all sides,  
That fillth all the sea with fome, diuides  
The doubtfull current into diuers wayes:  
So fell those two in spight of both their  
prydes;  
But Scudamour himselfe did soone uprayse,  
And mounting light, his foe for lying long  
upbrayes.

## XLIII

Who, rolled on an heape, lay still in  
s wound,  
All carelesse of his taunt and bitter rayle;  
Till that the rest, him seeing lie on ground,  
Ran hastily, to weete what did him ayle:  
Where finding that the breath gan him to  
fayle,  
With busie care they strove him to awake,  
And doft his helmet, and undid his mayle:  
So much they did, that at the last they  
brake  
His slomber, yet so mazed that he nothing  
spake.

## XLIV

Which when as Blandamour beheld, he  
sayd:  
‘False faitour Scudamour, that hast by  
slight  
And foule advantage this good knight dis-  
mayd,  
A knight much better then thy selfe be-  
hight,  
Well falles it thee that I am not in plight,  
This day, to wreake the dammage by thee  
donne:  
Such is thy wont, that still when any knight  
Is weakned, then thou doest him overronne:  
So hast thou to thy selfe false honour often  
wonne.’

## XLV

He little answer’d, but in manly heart  
His mightie indignation did forbear,

Which was not yet so secret, but some part  
Thereof did in his frowning face appeare:  
Like as a gloomie cloud, the which doth  
beare  
An hideous storme, is by the northerne  
blast  
Quite overblowne, yet doth not passe so  
cleare,  
But that it all the skie doth overcast  
With darknes dred, and threatens all the  
world to wast.

## XLVI

‘Ah! gentle knight,’ then false Duessa  
sayd,  
‘Why do ye strive for ladies love so sore,  
Whose chiefe desire is love and friendly  
aid  
Mongst gentle knights to nourish ever-  
more?  
Ne be ye wroth, Sir Scudamour, therefore,  
That she your love list love another knight,  
Ne do your selfe dislike a whit the more;  
For love is free, and led with selfe de-  
light,  
Ne will enforced be with maisterdome or  
might.’

## XLVII

So false Duessa, but vile Ate thus:  
‘Both foolish knights, I can but laugh at  
both,  
That strive and storme, with stirre outra-  
geous,  
For her that each of you alike doth loth,  
And loves another, with whom now she goth  
In lovely wise, and sleepes, and sports, and  
playes;  
Whilest both you here with many a cursed  
oth  
Sweare she is yours, and stirre up bloudie  
frayes,  
To win a willow bough, whilest other  
weares the bayes.’

## XLVIII

‘Vile hag,’ sayd Scudamour, ‘why dost  
thou lye?  
And falsly seekst a vertuous wight to  
shame?’  
‘Fond knight,’ sayd she, ‘the thing that  
with this eye  
I saw, why should I doubt to tell the same?’  
‘Then tell,’ quoth Blandamour, ‘and feare  
no blame,’

Tell what thou saw'st, maulgre who so it heares.'

'I saw,' quoth she, 'a stranger knight, whose name

I wote not well, but in his shield he beares  
(That well I wote) the heads of many broken speares.

## XLIX

'I saw him have your Amoret at will,  
I saw him kisse, I saw him her embrace,  
I saw him sleepe with her all night his fill,  
All manie nights, and manie by in place,  
That present were to testifie the case.'  
Which when as Scudamour did heare, his heart

Was thirld with inward grieve, as when in chace

The Parthian strikes a stag with shivering dart,

The beast astonisht stands in midst of his smart.

## L

So stood Sir Scudamour, when this he heard,

Ne word he had to speake for great dismay,

But lookt on Glauce grim, who woxe afeard

Of outrage for the words which she heard say,  
Albee untrue she wist them by assay.

But Blandamour, whenas he did espie  
His chaunge of cheere, that anguish did bewray,

He woxe full blithe, as he had got thereby,  
And gan thereat to triumph without victorie.

## LI

'Lo! recreant,' said he, 'the fruitlesse end  
Of thy vaine boast, and spoile of love misgotten,

Whereby the name of knight-hood thou dost shend,

And all true lovers with dishonor blotten:  
All things not rooted well will soone be rotten.'

'Fy, fy! false knight,' then false Duessa cryde,

'Unworthy life, that love with guile hast gotten;

Be thou, where ever thou do go or ryde,  
Loathed of ladies all, and of all knights defyde.'

## LII

But Scudamour, for passing great despight,  
Staid not to answer, scarcely did refraine,  
But that in all those knights and ladies sight  
He for revenge had guiltlesse Glauce slaine:

But being past, he thus began amaine:  
'False traitour squire, false squire of falsest knight,

Why doth mine hand from thine avenge abstaine,

Whose lord hath done my love this foule despight?

Why do I not it wreake on thee now in my might?

## LIII

'Discourteous, disloyall Britomart,  
Untrue to God, and unto man unjust,  
What vengeance due can equal thy desert,  
That hast with shamefull spot of sinfull lust

Defil'd the pledge committed to thy trust?  
Let ugly shame and endlesse infamy  
Colour thy name with foule reproaches rust.  
Yet thou, false squire, his fault shalt deare aby,

And with thy punishment his penance shalt supply.'

## LIV

The aged dame, him seeing so enraged,  
Was dead with feare; nathlesse, as neede required,

His flaming furie sought to have assuaged  
With sober words, that sufferance desired  
Till time the tryall of her truth expyred:  
And evermore sought Britomart to cleare.  
But he the more with furious rage was fyred,

And thrise his hand to kill her did upreare,  
And thrise he drew it backe: so did at last forbear.

## CANTO II

Blandamour winnes false Florimell;  
Paridell for her strives;  
They are accorded: Agape  
Doth lengthen her sonnes lives.

## I

FIREBRAND of hell, first tynd in Phlegeton  
By thousand furies, and from thence out throwen

Into this world, to worke confusion  
 And set it all on fire by force unknowen,  
 Is wickied discord, whose small sparkes  
     once blowen  
 None but a god or godlike man can slake;  
 Sneh as was Orpheus, that when strife was  
     growen  
 Amongst those famous ympes of Greece,  
     did take  
 His silver harpe in hand, and shortly friends  
     them make;

## II

Or such as that celestiaall Psalmist was,  
 That when the wickied feend his lord tor-  
     mented,  
 With heavenly notes, that did all other pas,  
 The outrage of his furious fit relented.  
 Such musicke is wise words with time con-  
     cented,  
 To moderate stiffe mindes, disposd to  
     strive:  
 Sneh as that prudent Romane well in-  
     vented,  
 What time his people into partes did rive,  
 Them reconeyld againe, and to their homes  
     did drive.

## III

Such us'd wise Glauce to that wrathfull  
     knight,  
 To ealme the tempest of his troubled  
     thought:  
 Yet Blandamour, with termes of foule  
     despight,  
 And Paridell her seornd, and set at nought,  
 As old and crooked and not good for ought.  
 Both they unwise, and warelesse of the  
     evill  
 That by themselves unto themselves is  
     wrought,  
 Through that false witch, and that foule  
     aged drevill,  
 The one a feend, the other an incarnate  
     devill.

## IV

With whom as they thus rode acompanyde,  
 They were encountred of a lustie knight,  
 That had a goodly ladie by his side,  
 To whom he made great dalliancee and  
     delight.  
 It was to weete the bold Sir Ferragh  
     hight,  
 He that from Braggadocchio whilome reft

The snowy Florimell, whose beautie bright  
 Made him seeme happie for so glorious  
     theft;  
 Yet was it in due triall but a wandring weft.

## V

Which when as Blandamour, whose fancie  
     light  
 Was alwaies flitting, as the wavering wind,  
 After each beautie that appeard in sight,  
 Beheld, eftsoones it prickt his wanton mind  
 With sting of lust, that reasons eye did  
     blind,  
 That to Sir Paridell these words he sent:  
 'Sir knight, why ride ye dumpish thus  
     behind,  
 Since so good fortune doth to you present  
 So fayre a spoyle, to make you joyous  
     meriment?'

## VI

But Paridell, that had too late a tryall  
 Of the bad issue of his counsell vaine,  
 List not to hearke, but made this faire  
     denyall:  
 'Last turne was mine, well proved to my  
     paine;  
 This now be yours; God send you better  
     gaine.'  
 Whose scoffed words he taking halfe in  
     scorne,  
 Fiereely forth prickt his steed, as in  
     disdaine,  
 Against that knight, ere he him well could  
     torne;  
 By meanes whereof he hath him lightly  
     overborne.

## VII

Who, with the suddeu stroke astonisht sore  
 Upon the ground a while in slomber lay;  
 The whiles his love away the other bore,  
 And shewing her, did Paridell upbray:  
 'Lo! sluggish knight, the vietors happie  
     pray!  
 So Fortune friends the bold: 'whom Paridell  
 Seeing so faire indeede, as he did say,  
 His hart with seeret envie gan to swell,  
 And inly grudge at him, that he had sped so  
     well.

## VIII

Nathlesse proud man himselfe the other  
     deemed,  
 Having so peerelesse paragon ygot:



For sure the fayrest Florinell him seemed  
To him was fallen for his happie lot,  
Whose like alive on earth he weened  
not:

Therefore he her did court, did serve, did  
wooe,  
With humblest suit that he imagine mot,  
And all things did devise, and all things  
dooe,  
That might her love prepare, and liking win  
theretoo.

## IX

She, in regard thereof, him recompens  
With golden words and goodly counten-  
ance,  
And such fond favours sparingly dis-  
pens  
Sometimes him blessing with a light eye-  
glance,  
And coy lookes tempring with loose dalli-  
ance;  
Sometimes estranging him in sterner wise;  
That, having cast him in a foolish trance,  
He seemed brought to bed in Paradise,  
And prov'd himsef most fool in what he  
seem'd most wise.

## X

So great a mistresse of her art she was,  
And perfectly practiz'd in womans craft,  
That though therein himsef he thought to  
pas,  
And by his false allurements wylie draft  
Had thousand women of their love be-  
raft,  
Yet now he was surpriz'd: for that false  
spright,  
Which that same witch had in this forme  
engraft,  
Was so expert in every subtile slight,  
That it could overreach the wisest earthly  
wight.

## XI

Yet he to her did dayly service more,  
And dayly more deceived was thereby;  
Yet Paridell him envied therefore,  
As seeming plast in sole felicity:  
So blind is lust, false colours to desery.  
But Ate soone discovering his desire,  
And finding now fit opportunity  
To stirre up strife twixt love and spight and  
ire,  
Did privily put coles unto his secret fire.

## XII

By sundry meanes thereto she prickt him  
forth,  
Now with remembrance of those spightfull  
speaches,  
Now with opinion of his owne more worth,  
Now with recounting of like former  
breaches  
Made in their friendship, as that hag him  
teaches:  
And ever when his passion is allayd,  
She it revives and new occasion reaches:  
That, on a time, as they together way'd,  
He made him open chalenge, and thus  
boldly said:

## XIII

'Too boastfull Blandamour, too long I  
beare  
The open wrongs thou doest me day by  
day:  
Well know'st thou, when we friendship first  
did sweare,  
The covenant was, that every spoyle or  
pray  
Should equally be shard betwixt us tway:  
Where is my part, then, of this ladie bright,  
Whom to thy selfe thou takest quite away?  
Render therefore therein to me my right,  
Or answer for thy wrong, as shall fall out  
in fight.'

## XIV

Exceeding wroth thereat was Blandamour,  
And gan this bitter answer to him make:  
'Too foolish Paridell, that fayrest floure  
Wouldst gather faine, and yet no paines  
wouldst take!  
But not so easie will I her forsake;  
This hand her womme, this hand shall her  
defend.'  
With that they gan their shivering speares  
to shake,  
And deadly points at eithers breast to bend,  
Forgetfull each to have bene ever others  
frend.

## XV

Their fire steedes with so untamed forse  
Did beare them both to fell avenges end,  
That both their speares, with pitillesse re-  
morse,  
Through shield and mayle and haberjeon  
did wend,  
And in their flesh a griesly passage rend,

That with the furie of their owne affret  
Each other, horse and man, to ground did  
send;

Where lying still awhile, both did forget  
The perilous present stownd in which their  
lives were set.

## XVI

As when two warlike brigandines at sea,  
With murderous weapons arm'd to cruell  
fight,

Doe meete together on the watry lea,  
They stemme ech other with so fell de-  
spight,

That with the shooke of their owne heed-  
lesse might,

Their wooden ribs are shaken nigh a son-  
der;

They which from shore behold the dread-  
full sight

Of flashing fire, and heare the ordenance  
thonder,

Do greatly stand amaz'd at such unwonted  
wonder.

## XVII

At length they both upstart in amaze,  
As men awaked rashly out of dreme,  
And round about themselves a while did  
gaze;

Till, seeing her that Florimell did seme,  
In doubt to whom she victorie should  
deeme,

Therewith their dulled sprights they edg'd  
anew,

And drawing both their swords with rage  
extreme,

Like two mad mastiffes each on other flew,  
And shields did share, and mailes did rash,  
and helmes did hew.

## XVIII

So furiously each other did assayle,  
As if their soules they would attonce have  
rent

Out of their breasts, that streames of bloud  
did rayle

Adowne, as if their springs of life were  
spent;

That all the ground with purple bloud was  
sprent,

And all their armours staynd with bloudie  
gore;

Yet scarcely once to breath would they re-  
lent,

So mortall was their malice and so sore  
Become of fayned friendship which they  
vow'd afore.

## XIX

And that which is for ladies most besit-  
ting,

To stint all strife, and foster friendly  
peace,

Was from those dames so farre and so un-  
fitting,

As that, in stead of praying them surcease,  
They did much more their cruelty en-  
crease;

Bidding them fight for honour of their  
love,

And rather die then ladies cause release.  
With which vaine termes so much they did  
them move,

That both resolv'd the last extremities to  
prove.

## XX

There they, I weene, would fight untill this  
day,

Had not a squire, even he the Squire of  
Dames,

By great adventure travelled that way;  
Who seeing both bent to so bloody games,  
And both of old well knowing by their  
names,

Drew nigh, to weete the cause of their de-  
bate:

And first laide on those ladies thousand  
blames,

That did not seeke t' appease their deadly  
hate,

But gazed on their harmes, not pittying  
their estate.

## XXI

And then those knights he humbly did be-  
seech

To stay their hands, till he a while had  
spoken:

Who lookt a little up at that his speech,  
Yet would not let their battell so be broken,  
Both greedie fiers on other to be wroken.

Yet he to them so earnestly did call,  
And them conjur'd by some well knownen  
token,

That they at last their wrothfull hands let  
fall,

Content to heare him speake, and glad to  
rest withall.

## XXII

First he desir'd their cause of strife to see:  
They said, it was for love of Florimell.  
'Ah! gentle knights,' quoth he, 'how may  
that bee,

And she so farre astray, as none can tell?'  
'Fond squire,' full angry then sayd Paridell,

'Seest not the ladie there before thy face?'  
He looked backe, and her advizing well,  
Wcend, as he said, by that her outward  
grace,  
That fayrest Florimell was present there in  
place.

## XXIII

Glad man was he to see that joyous sight,  
For none alive but joy'd in Florimell,  
And lowly to her lowting, thus behight:  
'Fayrest of faire, that fairenesse doest excell,

This happie day I have to greete you well,  
In which you safe I see, whom thousand late  
Misdoubted lost through mischiefe that befell;

Long may you live in health and happie  
state.'

She litle answer'd him, but lightly did  
aggrate.

## XXIV

Then turning to those knights, he gan  
a new:

'And you, Sir Blandamour and Paridell,  
That for this ladie present in your vew  
Have rays'd this cruell warre and outrage  
fell,

Certes, me seemes, bene not advised well,  
But rather ought in friendship for her sake  
To joyne your force, their forces to repell  
That seeke perforce her from you both to  
take,

And of your gotten spoyle their owne triumph to make.'

## XXV

Thereat Sir Blandamour, with countenance  
sterne,

All full of wrath, thus fiercely him bespake:

'A read, thou squire, that I the man may  
learne,

That dare fro me thinke Florimell to take.'

'Not one,' quoth he, 'but many doe partake

Herein, as thus: It lately so befell,  
That Satyrane a girdle did uptake  
Well knowne to appertaine to Florimell,  
Which for her sake he wore, as him be-  
seemed well.

## XXVI

'But when as she her selfe was lost and  
gone,

Full many knights, that loved her like  
deare,

Thereat did greatly grudge, that he alone  
That lost faire ladies ornament should  
weare,

And gan therefore close spight to him to  
beare:

Which he to shun, and stop vile envies  
sting,

Hath lately caus'd to be proclaim'd each  
where

A solemne feast, with publike turneyng,  
To which all knights with them their ladies  
are to bring.

## XXVII

'And of them all she that is fayrest found  
Shall have that golden girdle for reward,  
And of those knights who is most stout on  
ground

Shall to that fairest ladie be prefard.  
Since therefore she her selfe is now your  
ward,

To you that ornament of hers pertaines  
Against all those that challenge it to gard,  
And save her honour with your ventrous  
paines;

That shall you win more glory then ye here  
find gaines.'

## XXVIII

When they the reason of his words had  
hard,

They gan abate the ranconr of their rage,  
And with their honours and their loves re-  
gard

The furious flames of malice to assuage.  
Tho each to other did his faith engage,  
Like faithfull friends thenceforth to joyne  
in one

With all their force, and battell strong to  
wage

Gainst all those knights, as their professed  
fone,

That chaleng'd ought in Florimell, save  
they alone.



## XXIX

So well accorded forth they rode together  
 In friendly sort, that lasted but a while,  
 And of all old dislikes they made faire  
 weather;  
 Yet all was forg'd and spread with golden  
 foyle,  
 That under it hidde hate and hollow guyle.  
 Ne certes can that friendship long endure,  
 How ever gay and goodly be the style,  
 That doth ill cause or evill end enure:  
 For vertue is the band that bindeth harts  
 most sure.

## XXX

Thus as they marched all in close disguise  
 Of fayned love, they chaunst to overtake  
 Two knights, that lincked rode in lovely  
 wise,  
 As if they secret counsels did partake;  
 And each not farre behinde him had his  
 make,  
 To weete, two ladies of most goodly hew,  
 That twixt themselves did gentle purpose  
 make,  
 Unmindfull both of that discordfull crew,  
 The which with speedie pace did after them  
 pursew.

## XXXI

Who, as they now approched nigh at hand,  
 Deeming them doughtie as they did ap-  
 peare,  
 They sent that squire afore, to understand  
 What mote they be: who, viewing them  
 more neare,  
 Returned readie newes, that those same  
 weare  
 Two of the prowest knights in Faery Lond,  
 And those two ladies their two lovers  
 deare;  
 Courageous Cambell, and stout Triamond,  
 With Canacee and Cambine linckt in lovely  
 bond.

## XXXII

Whylome, as antique stories tellen us,  
 Those two were foes the fellonest on  
 ground,  
 And battell made the dreddest daungerous  
 That ever shrilling trumpet did resound;  
 Though now their acts be no where to be  
 found,  
 As that renowned poet them compyled  
 With warlike numbers and heroicke sound,

Dan Chaucer, well of English undefyled,  
 On Fames eternall beadroll worthie to be  
 fyled.

## XXXIII

But wicked Time, that all good thoughts  
 doth waste,  
 And workes of noblest wits to nought out  
 weare,  
 That famous moniment hath quite defaste,  
 And robd the world of treasure endlesse  
 deare,  
 The which mote have enriched all us heare.  
 O cursed Eld, the cankerworme of writs!  
 How may these rimes, so rude as doth ap-  
 peare,  
 Hope to endure, sith workes of heavenly wits  
 Are quite devourd, and brought to nought  
 by little bits?

## XXXIV

Then pardon, O most sacred happie spirit,  
 That I thy labours lost may thus revive,  
 And steale from thee the meede of thy due  
 merit,  
 That none durst ever whilest thou wast  
 alive,  
 And, being dead, in vaine yet many strive:  
 Ne dare I like, but through infusion sweete  
 Of thine owne spirit, which doth in me sur-  
 vive,  
 I follow here the footing of thy feete,  
 That with thy meaning so I may the rather  
 meete.

## XXXV

Cambelloes sister was fayre Canacee,  
 That was the learnedst ladie in her dayes,  
 Well seene in everie science that mote bee,  
 And every secret worke of Natures wayes,  
 In wittie riddles, and in wise soothsayes,  
 In power of herbes, and tunes of beasts and  
 burds;  
 And, that augmented all her other prayse,  
 She modest was in all her deedes and words,  
 And wondrous chaste of life, yet lov'd of  
 knights and lords.

## XXXVI

Full many lords and many knights her  
 loved,  
 Yet she to none of them her liking lent,  
 Ne ever was with fond affection moved,  
 But rul'd her thoughts with goodly gov-  
 ernement.

For dread of blame and honours blemish-  
ment;  
And eke unto her lookes a law she made,  
That none of them once out of order went,  
But, like to warie centonels well stayd,  
Still wateht on every side, of seeret foes  
affrayd.

## XXXVII

So much the more as she refusd to love,  
So much the more she loved was and  
sought,  
That oftentimes unquiet strife did move  
Amongst her lovers, and great quarrels  
wrought,  
That oft for her in bloudie armes they  
fought.  
Which whenas Cambell, that was stout and  
wise,  
Perceiv'd would breede great mischiefe, he  
bethought  
How to prevent the perill that mote rise,  
And turne both him and her to honour in  
this wise.

## XXXVIII

One day, when all that troupe of warlike  
wooers  
Assembled were, to weet whose she should  
bee,  
All mightie men and dreadfull derring  
dooers,  
(The harder it to make them well agree)  
Amongst them all this end he did decree;  
That of them all, which love to her did make,  
They by consent should chose the stoutest  
three,  
That with himselfe should combat for her  
sake,  
And of them all the victour should his sis-  
ter take.

## XXXIX

Bold was the chalenge, as himselfe was  
bold,  
And courage full of haughtie hardiment,  
Approved oft in perils manifold,  
Which he atchiev'd to his great ornament:  
But yet his sisters skill unto him lent  
Most confidence and hope of happie speed,  
Conceived by a ring which she him sent,  
That, mongst the manie vertues which we  
reed,  
Had power to staunch al wounnds that mor-  
tally did bleed.

## XL

Well was that rings great vertue knowen  
to all,  
That dread thereof, and his redoubted  
might,  
Did all that youthly rout so much appall,  
That none of them durst undertake the  
fight;  
More wise they weend to make of love de-  
light,  
Then life to hazard for faire ladies looke,  
And yet uncertaine by such outward sight,  
Though for her sake they all that perill  
tooke,  
Whether she would them love, or in her  
liking brooke.

## XLI

Amongst those knights there were three  
brethren bold,  
Three bolder brethren never were yborne,  
Borne of one mother in one happie mold,  
Borne at one burden in one happie morne;  
Thrise happie mother, and thrise happie  
morne,  
That bore three such, three such not to be  
fond!  
Her name was Agape, whose children  
werne  
All three as one; the first hight Priamond,  
The second Dyamond, the youngest Triamond.

## XLII

Stont Priamond, but not so strong to strike,  
Strong Diamond, but not so stout a knight,  
But Triamond was stont and strong alike:  
On horsebacke used Triamond to fight,  
And Priamond on foote had more delight,  
But horse and foote knew Diamond to  
wield:

With curtaxe used Diamond to smite,  
And Triamond to handle speare and shield,  
But speare and curtaxe both usd Priamond  
in field.

## XLIII

These three did love each other dearely  
well,  
And with so firme affection were allyde,  
As if but one soule in them all did dwell,  
Which did her powre into three parts di-  
vyde;  
Like three faire branches budding farre  
and wide.

That from one roote deriv'd their vitall sap:  
 And like that roote that doth her life di-  
   vide  
 Their mother was, and had full blessed  
 hap,  
 These three so noble babes to bring forth  
 at one clap.

## XLIV

Their mother was a Fay, and had the skill  
 Of secret things, and all the powres of na-  
   ture,  
 Which she by art could use unto her will,  
 And to her service bind each living crea-  
   ture,  
 Through secret understanding of their fea-  
   ture.  
 Thereto she was right faire, when so her  
   face  
 She list discover, and of goodly stature;  
 But she, as Fayes are wont, in privie place  
 Did spend her dayes, and lov'd in forests  
   wyld to space.

## XLV

There on a day a noble youthly knight,  
 Seeking adventures in the salvage wood,  
 Did by great fortune get of her the sight,  
 As she sate carelesse by a cristall flood,  
 Combing her golden lockes, as seemd her  
   good;

And unawares upon her laying hold,  
 That strove in vaine him long to have with-  
   stood,  
 Oppressed her, and there (as it is told)  
 Got these three lovely babes, that prov'd  
   three champions bold.

## XLVI

Which she with her long fostred in that  
   wood,  
 Till that to ripenesse of mans state they  
   grew:  
 Then, shewing forth signes of their fathers  
   blood,  
 They loved armes, and knighthood did  
   ensew,  
 Seeking adventures, where they anie knew.  
 Which when their mother saw, she gan to  
   dout  
 Their safetie, least by searching daungers  
   new,  
 And rash provoking perils all about,  
 Their days mote be abridged through their  
   corage stout.

## XLVII

Therefore desirous th' end of all their dayes  
 To know, and them t' enlarge with long  
   extent,  
 By wondrous skill and many hidden wayes  
 To the three Fatall Sisters house she went.  
 Farre under ground from tract of living  
   went,  
 Downe in the bottome of the deepe Abygge,  
 Where Demogorgon, in dull darknesse  
   pent,  
 Farre from the view of gods and heavens  
   blis,  
 The hideous Chaos keepes, their dreadfull  
   dwelling is.

## XLVIII

There she them found, all sitting round  
   about  
 The direfull distaffe standing in the mid,  
 And with unwearied fingers drawing out  
 The lines of life, from living knowledge  
   hid.  
 Sad Clotho held the rocke, the whiles the  
   thrid  
 By griesly Lachesis was spun with paine,  
 That cruell Atropos eftsoones undid,  
 With cursed knife cutting the twist in  
   twaine:  
 Most wretched men, whose dayes depend on  
   thrids so vaine!

## XLIX

She them saluting, there by them sate  
   still,  
 Beholding how the thrids of life they span:  
 And when at last she had beheld her fill,  
 Trembling in heart, and looking pale and  
   wan,  
 Her cause of comming she to tell began.  
 To whom fierce Atropos: 'Bold Fay, that  
   durst  
 Come see the secret of the life of man,  
 Well worthie thou to be of Jove accurst,  
 And eke thy childrens thrids to be a sunder  
   burst.'

## L

Whereat she sore affrayd, yet her besought  
 To graunt her boone, and rigour to abate,  
 That she might see her childrens thrids  
   forth brought,  
 And know the measure of their utmost  
   date,  
 To them ordained by eternall Fate:



Which Clotho graunting, shewed her the same:

That when she saw, it did her much amate  
To see their thrids so thin as spiders frame,  
And eke so short, that seemd their ends out  
shortly came.

## LI

She then began them humbly to intreate  
To draw them longer out, and better twine,  
That so their lives might be prolonged late.  
But Lachesis thereat gan to repine,  
And sayd: 'Fond dame! that deem'st of  
things divine

As of humane, that they may altdred bee,  
And chaung'd at pleasure for those impes of  
thine:

Not so; for what the Fates do once decree,  
Not all the gods can chaunge, nor Jove him  
self can free.'

## LII

'Then since,' quoth she, 'the terme of each  
mans life

For nought may lessened nor enlarged bee,  
Graunt this, that when ye shred with fatall  
knife

His line which is the eldest of the three,  
Which is of them the shortest, as I see,  
Eftsoones his life may passe into the next;  
And when the next shali likewise ended  
bee,

That both their lives may likewise be  
annext

Unto the third, that his may so be trebly  
wext.'

## LIII

They graunted it; and then that carefull  
Fay

Departed thence with full contented mynd;  
And comming home, in warlike fresh aray  
Them found all three, according to their  
kynd:

But unto them what destinie was assynd,  
Or how their lives were eekt, she did not  
tell;

But evermore, when she fit time could fynd,  
She warn'd them to tend their safeties well,  
And love each other deare, what ever them  
befell.

## LIV

So did they surely during all their dayes,  
And never discord did amongst them fall;

Which much augmented all their other  
praise.

And now, t' increase affection naturall,  
In love of Canacee they joyned all:  
Upon which ground this same great battell  
grew,

Great matter growing of beginning small;  
The which, for length, I will not here  
pursew,

But rather will reserve it for a canto new.

## CANTO III

The battell twixt three brethren with  
Cambell for Canacee:  
Cambina with true friendships bond  
Doth their long strife agree.

## I

O WHY doe wretched men so much desire  
To draw their dayes unto the utmost date,  
And doe not rather wish them soone expire,  
Knowing the miserie of their estate,  
And thousand perills which them still awate,  
Tossing them like a boate amid the mayne,  
That every houre they knocke at Deathes  
gate?

And he that happie seemes and least in  
payne,

Yet is as nigh his end as he that most doth  
playne.

## II

Therefore this Fay I hold but fond and  
vaine,

The which, in seeking for her children three  
Long life, thereby did more prolong their  
paine.

Yet whilst they lived none did ever see  
More happie creatures then they seem'd to  
bee,

Nor more ennobled for their courtesie,  
That made them dearely lov'd of each  
degree,

Ne more renowned for their chevalrie,  
That made them dreaded much of all men  
farre and nie.

## III

These three that hardie chalenge tooke in  
hand,

For Canacee with Cambell for to fight:  
The day was set, that all might understand,  
And pledges pawnd the same to keepe  
a right:

That day, the dreeddest day that living  
wight

Did ever see upon this world to shine,  
So soone as heavens window shewed light,  
These warlike champions, all in armour shine,  
Assembled were in field, the challenge to  
define.

## IV

The field with listes was all about enclos'd,  
To barre the prease of people farre away;  
And at th' one side sixe judges were dis-  
pos'd,

To view and deeme the deedes of armes  
that day;

And on the other side, in fresh aray,  
Fayre Canacee upon a stately stage  
Was set, to see the fortune of that fray,  
And to be seene, as his most worthie wage  
That could her purchase with his lives ad-  
ventur'd gaze.

## V

Then entred Cambell first into the list,  
With stately steps and fearelesse counten-  
ance,

As if the conquest his he surely wist.  
Soone after did the brethren three advance,  
In brave aray and goodly amenance,  
With seutchins gilt and banners broad dis-  
playd;

And marching thrise in warlike ordinance,  
Thrise lowted lowly to the noble mayd,  
The whiles shril trumpets and loud clarions  
sweetly playd.

## VI

Which doen, the doughty challenger came  
forth,

All arm'd to point, his challenge to abet:  
Gainst whom Sir Priamond, with equall  
worth

And equall armes, himselfe did forward  
set.

A trompet blew; they both together met  
With dreadfull force and furious intent,  
Carelesse of perill in their fiers affret,  
As if that life to losse they had forelent,  
And cared not to spare that should be  
shortly spent.

## VII

Right practicke was Sir Priamond in fight,  
And thoroughly skild in use of shield and  
speare.

Ne lesse approved was Cambelloes might,  
Ne lesse his skill in weapons did appeare,  
That hard it was to weene which harder  
were.

Full many mightie strokes on either side  
Were sent, that seemed death in them to  
beare,

But they were both so watchfull and well  
eyde,

That they avoyded were, and vainely by  
did slyde.

## VIII

Yet one of many was so strongly bent  
By Priamond, that with unluckie glaunce  
Through Cambels shoulder it unwarely  
went,

That forced him his shield to disadvaunce:  
Much was he grieved with that gracelesse  
chaunce,

Yet from the wound no drop of blood there  
fell,

But wondrous paine, that did the more en-  
haunce

His haughtie courage to advengement fell:  
Smart daunts not mighty harts, but makes  
them more to swell.

## IX

With that, his poynant speare he fierce  
aventred,

With doubled force, close underneath his  
shield,

That through the mayles into his thigh it  
entred,

And there arresting, readie way did yield  
For blood to gush forth on the grassie  
field;

That he for paine himselfe not right up-  
reare,

But too and fro in great amazement reel'd,  
Like an old oke, whose pith and sap is  
seare,

At pufte of every storme doth stagger here  
and theare.

## X

Whom so dismayd when Cambell had  
espide,

Againe he drove at him with double might,  
That nought mote stay the steele, till in his  
side

The mortall point most cruelly empight:  
Where fast infixd, whilst he sought by  
slight

It forth to wrest, the staffe a sunder brake,  
 And left the head behind: with which des-  
 pight  
 He all enrag'd, his shivering speare did  
 shake,  
 And charging him a fresh, thus felly him  
 bespake:

## XI

'Lo! faitour, there thy meede unto thee  
 take,  
 The meede of thy mischallenge and abet:  
 Not for thine owne, but for thy sisters  
 sake,  
 Have I thus long thy life unto thee let:  
 But to forbear doth not forgive the det.'  
 The wicked weapon heard his wrathfull  
 vow,  
 And passing forth with furious affret,  
 Pierst through his bever quite into his brow,  
 That with the force it backward forced him  
 to bow.

## XII

Therewith a sunder in the midst it brast,  
 And in his hand nought but the troncheon  
 left;  
 The other halfe behind yet sticking fast  
 Out of his headpeece Cambell fiercely reft,  
 And with such furie backe at him it heft,  
 That, making way unto his dearest life,  
 His weasand pipe it through his gorget  
 cleft:  
 Thence streames of purple bloud issuing  
 rife  
 Let forth his wearie ghost, and made an  
 end of strife.

## XIII

His wearie ghost, asoyld from fleshly band,  
 Did not, as others wont, directly fly  
 Unto her rest in Plutoes griesly land,  
 Ne into ayre did vanish presently,  
 Ne chaunged was into a starre in sky:  
 But through traduction was eftsoones de-  
 rived,  
 Like as his mother prayd the Destinie,  
 Into his other brethren that survived,  
 In whom he liv'd a new, of former life de-  
 prived.

## XIV

Whom when on ground his brother next  
 beheld,  
 Though sad and sorie for so heavy sight,

Yet leave unto his sorrow did not yeeld;  
 But rather stird to vengeance and despight,  
 Through seeret feeling of his generous  
 spright,  
 Rusht fiercely forth, the battell to renew,  
 As in reversion of his brothers right;  
 And chalenging the virgin as his dew.  
 His foe was soone addrest: the trompets  
 freshly blew.

## XV

With that they both together fiercely met,  
 As if that each ment other to devoure;  
 And with their axes both so sorely bet,  
 That neither plate nor mayle, whereas their  
 powre  
 They felt, could once sustaine the hideous  
 stowre,  
 But rived were like rotten wood a sunder,  
 Whilest through their rifts the ruddie  
 bloud did showre,  
 And fire did flash, like lightning after  
 thunder,  
 That fild the lookers on attonce with ruth  
 and wonder.

## XVI

As when two tygers, prickt with hungers  
 rage,  
 Have by good fortune found some beasts  
 fresh spoyle,  
 On which they weene their famine to as-  
 swage,  
 And gaine a feastfull guerdon of their toyle;  
 Both falling out doe stirre up strifefull  
 broyle.  
 And cruell battell twixt themselves doe  
 make,  
 Whiles neither lets the other touch the  
 soyle,  
 But either sdeignes with other to partake:  
 So cruelly these knights strove for that  
 ladies sake.

## XVII

Full many strokes, that mortally were  
 ment,  
 The whiles were enterchaunged twixt them  
 two;  
 Yet they were all with so good wariment  
 Or warded, or avoyded and let goe,  
 That still the life stood fearelesse of her  
 foe:  
 Till Diamond, disdeigning long delay  
 Of doubtfull fortune wavering to and fro,



Resolv'd to end it one or other way;  
And heav'd his murderous axe at him with  
mighty sway.

## XVIII

The dreadfull stroke, in case it had arrived  
Where it was ment, (so deadly it was ment)  
The soule had sure out of his bodie rived,  
And stinted all the strife incontinent.  
But Cambels fate that fortune did prevent:  
For seeing it at hand, he swarv'd asyde,  
And so gave way unto his fell intent:  
Who, missing of the marke which he had  
eyde,  
Was with the force nigh feld whilst his  
right foot did slyde.

## XIX

As when a vulture greedie of his pray,  
Through hunger long, that hart to him doth  
lend,  
Strikes at an heron with all his bodies  
sway,  
That from his force seemes nought may it  
defend;  
The warie fowle, that spies him toward  
bend  
His dreadfull souse, avoydes it, shunning  
light,  
And maketh him his wing in vaine to spend;  
That with the weight of his owne weeld-  
lesse might,  
He falleth nigh to ground, and scarce re-  
covereth fight.

## XX

Which faire adventure when Cambello  
spide,  
Full lightly, ere himselfe he could recover,  
From dangers dread to ward his naked  
side,  
He can let drive at him with all his power,  
And with his axe him smote in evill hower,  
That from his shoulders quite his head he  
reft:  
The headlesse tronke, as heedlesse of that  
stower,  
Stood still a while, and his fast footing kept,  
Till, feeling life to fayle, it fell, and deadly  
slept.

## XXI

They which that piteous spectacle beheld  
Were much amaz'd the headlesse tronke to  
see

Stand up so long, and weapon vaine to weld,  
Unweeing of the Fates divine decree  
For lifes succession in those brethren three.  
For notwithstanding that one soule was  
reft,

Yet, had the bodie not dismembred bee,  
It would have lived, and revived eft;  
But finding no fit scat, the lifelesse corse it  
left.

## XXII

It left; but that same soule which therein  
dwelt,  
Streight entring into Triamond, him fild  
With double life and grieve; which when  
he felt,  
As one whose inner parts had bene ythrild  
With point of steele, that close his hartblound  
spild,  
He lightly left out of his place of rest,  
And rushing forth into the emptie field,  
Against Cambello fiercely him addrest;  
Who him affronting soone to fight was  
readie prest.

## XXIII

Well mote ye wonder how that noble knight,  
After he had so often wounded beene,  
Could stand on foot now to renew the fight.  
But had ye then him forth advauncing  
seene,  
Some newborne wight ye would him surely  
weene,  
So fresh he seemed and so fierce in sight;  
Like as a snake, whom wearie winters  
teene  
Hath worne to nought, now feeling som-  
mers might,  
Casts off his ragged skin and freshly doth  
him dight.

## XXIV

All was through vertue of the ring he wore,  
The which not onely did not from him let  
One drop of blood to fall, but did restore  
His weakned powers, and dulled spirits  
whet,  
Through working of the stone therein yset.  
Else how could one of equall might with  
most,  
Against so many no lesse mightie met,  
Once thinke to match three such on equall  
cost,  
Three such as able were to match a puissant  
host?

## XXV

Yet nought thereof was Triamond adredde,  
 Ne desperate of glorious victorie,  
 But sharpely him assayld, and sore be-  
   stedde,  
 With heapes of strokes, which he at him let  
   flie  
 As thicke as hayle forth poured from the  
   skie:  
 He stroke, he soust, he foynd, he hewd, he  
   lasht,  
 And did his yron brond so fast applie,  
 That from the same the fierie sparkles  
   flasht,  
 As fast as water-sprinkles gainst a rocke  
   are dasht.

## XXVI

Much was Cambello damnted with his  
   blowes,  
 So thicke they fell, and forcibly were sent,  
 That he was forst from daunger of the  
   throwes  
 Backe to retire, and somewhat to relent,  
 Till th' heat of his fierce furie he had spent:  
 Which when for want of breath gan to  
   abate,  
 He then afresh with new encouragement  
 Did him assaile, and mightily amate,  
 As fast as forward erst, now backward to  
   retrate.

## XXVII

Like as the tide, that comes fro th' ocean  
   mayne,  
 Flowes up the Shenan with contrarie forse,  
 And overruling him in his owne rayne,  
 Drives backe the current of his kindly  
   course,  
 And makes it seeme to have some other  
   sourse:  
 But when the floud is spent, then backe  
   again,  
 His borrowed waters forst to redisbourse,  
 He sends the sea his owne with double  
   gaine,  
 And tribute eke withall, as to his souveraine.

## XXVIII

Thus did the battell varie to and fro,  
 With diverse fortune doubtfull to be  
   deemed:  
 Now this the better had, now had his fo;  
 Then he halfe vanquisht, then the other  
   seemed;

Yet victors both them selves alwayes  
   esteemed.  
 And all the while the disentrayled blood  
 Adowne their sides like litle rivers stremed,  
 That with the wasting of his vitall flood  
 Sir Triamond at last full faint and feeble  
   stood.

## XXIX

But Cambell still more strong and greater  
   grew,  
 Ne felt his blood to wast, ne powres em-  
   perisht,  
 Through that rings vertue, that with vigour  
   new,  
 Still when as he enfeebled was, him  
   cherisht,  
 And all his wounds and all his bruises  
   guarisht:  
 Like as a withered tree, through husbands  
   toyle,  
 Is often seene full freshly to have florisht,  
 And fruitfull apples to have borne awhile,  
 As fresh as when it first was planted in the  
   soyle.

## XXX

Through which advantage, in his strength  
   he rose,  
 And smote the other with so wondrous  
   might,  
 That through the seame which did his  
   hauberk close  
 Into his throate and life it pierced quight,  
 That downe he fell as dead in all mens  
   sight:  
 Yet dead he was not, yet he sure did die,  
 As all men do that lose the living spright:  
 So did one soule out of his bodie flie  
 Unto her native home from mortall miserie.

## XXXI

But nathelesse whilst all the lookers on  
 Him dead behight, as he to all appeard,  
 All unawares he started up anon,  
 As one that had out of a dreame bene  
   reard,  
 And fresh assayld his foe; who halfe af-  
   feard  
 Of th' uncouth sight, as he some ghost had  
   seene,  
 Stood still amaz'd, holding his idle sweard;  
 Till, having often by him stricken beene,  
 He forced was to strike, and save him selfe  
   from teene.

## XXXII

Yet from thenceforth more warily he  
fought,  
As one in feare the Stygian gods t' offend,  
Ne followd on so fast, but rather sought  
Him selfe to save, and daunger to defend,  
Then life and labour both in vaine to spend.  
Which Triamond perceiving, weened sure  
He gan to faint toward the battels end,  
And that he should not long on foote endure,  
A signe which did to him the victorie assure.

## XXXIII

Whereof full blith, eftsoones his mightie  
hand  
He heav'd on high, in mind with that same  
blow  
To make an end of all that did withstand:  
Which Cambell seeing come, was nothing  
slow  
Him selfe to save from that so deadly  
throw;  
And at that instant reaching forth his  
sweard,  
Close underneath his shield, that scarce did  
show,  
Stroke him, as he his hand to strike up-  
reard,  
In th' arm-pit full, that through both sides  
the wound appeard.

## XXXIV

Yet still that direfull stroke kept on his  
way,  
And falling heavie on Cambelloes crest,  
Strooke him so hugely that in swowne he  
lay,  
And in his head an hideous wound imprest:  
And sure, had it not happily found rest  
Upon the brim of his brode plated shield,  
It would have cleft his braine downe to his  
breast.  
So both at once fell dead upon the field,  
And each to other seemd the victorie to  
yield.

## XXXV

Which when as all the lookers on beheld,  
They weened sure the warre was at an end,  
And judges rose, and marshals of the field  
Broke up the listes, their armes away to  
rend;  
And Canacee gan wayle her dearest frend.

All suddenly they both upstarted light,  
The one out of the swownd which him did  
blend,  
The other breathing now another spright,  
And fiercely each assayling, gan afresh to  
fight.

## XXXVI

Long while they then continued in that wize,  
As if but then the battell had begonne:  
Strokes, wounds, wards, weapons, all they  
did despise,  
Ne either car'd to ward, or perill shonne,  
Desirous both to have the battell donne;  
Ne either cared life to save or spill,  
Ne which of them did winne, ne which were  
wonne.  
So wearie both of fighting had their fill,  
That life it selfe seemd loathsome, and  
long safetie ill.

## XXXVII

Whilst thus the case in doubtfull ballance  
hong,  
Unsure to whether side it would incline,  
And all mens eyes and hearts, which there  
among  
Stood gazing, filled were with ruffull tine,  
And secret feare to see their fatall fine,  
All suddenly they heard a troublous noyes,  
That seemd some perilous tumult to de-  
sine,  
Confusd with womens cries and shouts of  
boyes,  
Such as the troubled theaters oftines an-  
noyes.

## XXXVIII

Thereat the champions both stood still a  
space,  
To weeten what that sudden clamour ment;  
Lo ! where they spyde with speedie whirl-  
ing pace  
One in a charet of straunge furniment  
Towards them driving like a storme out  
sent.  
The charet decked was in wondrous wize  
With gold and many a gorgeous ornament,  
After the Persian Monarks antique guize,  
Such as the maker selfe could best by art  
devize.

## XXXIX

And drawne it was (that wonder is to tell)  
Of two grim lyons, taken from the wood



In which their powre all others did exeell;  
Now made forget their former cruell mood,  
T' obey their riders hest, as seemed good.  
And therein sate a ladie passing faire  
And bright, that seemed borne of angels  
brood,

And with her beautie bountie did compare,  
Whether of them in her should have the  
greater share.

## XL

Thereto she learned was in magicke leare,  
And all the artes that subtile wits discover,  
Having therein bene trained many a yeare,  
And well instructed by the Fay her mother,  
That in the same she farre exeeld all other.  
Who, understanding by her mightie art  
Of th' evill plight in which her dearest  
brother

Now stood, came forth in hast to take his  
part,  
And pacifie the strife which causd so deadly  
smart.

## XLI

And as she passed through th' unruly preace  
Of people thronging thicke her to behold,  
Her angrie teame, breaking their bonds of  
peace,

Great heapes of them, like sheepe in nar-  
row fold,

For hast did over-runne, in dust enrould;  
That, thorough rude confusion of the rout,  
Some fearing shriekt, some being harmed  
hould,

Some laught for sport, some did for wonder  
shout,

And some, that would seeme wise, their  
wonder turnd to dout.

## XLII

In her right hand a rod of peace shee  
bore,

About the which two serpents weren wound,  
Entrayled mutually in lovely lore,  
And by the tailes together firmly bound,  
And both were with one olive garland  
erownd,

Like to the rod which Maias sonne doth  
wield,

Wherewith the hellish fiends he doth con-  
found.

And in her other hand a cup she hild,  
The which was with Nepenthe to the brim  
upfilld.

## XLIII

Nepenthe is a drinke of soverayne grace,  
Devised by the gods, for to asswage  
Harts grief, and bitter gall away to chaace,  
Which stirs up anguish and contentious  
rage:

In stead thereof sweet peace and quietage  
It doth establish in the troubled mynd.  
Few men, but such as sober are and sage,  
Are by the gods to drinke thereof assynd;  
But such as drinke, eternall happinesse do  
fynd.

## XLIV

Such famous men, such worthies of the  
earth,

As Jove will have advaunecd to the skie,  
And there made gods, though borne of mor-  
tall berth,

For their high merits and great dignitie,  
Are wont, before they may to heaven flie,  
To drinke hereof, whereby all cares fore-  
past

Are washt away quite from their memorie.  
So did those olde heroes hereof taste,  
Before that they in blisse amongst the gods  
were plaste.

## XLV

Much more of price and of more gracious  
powre

Is this, then that same water of Ardenne,  
The which Rinaldo drunck in happie howre,  
Described by that famous Tuscan penne:  
For that had might to change the hearts of  
men

Fro love to hate, a change of evill choise.  
But this doth hatred make in love to brenne,  
And heavy heart with comfort doth rejoyee.  
Who would not to this vertue rather yeeld  
his voice?

## XLVI

At last arriving by the listes side,  
Shee with her rod did softly smite the raile,  
Which straight flew ope, and gave her way  
to ride.

Eftsoones out of her coach she gan availe,  
And pacing fairely forth, did bid all haile,  
First to her brother, whom she loved deare,  
That so to see him made her heart to quaile:  
And next to Cambell, whose sad ruefull  
eheare

Made her to change her hew, and hidden  
love t' appeare.

## XLVII

They lightly her requit (for small delight  
 They had as then her long to entertaine,)  
 And oft them turned both againe to fight:  
 Which when she saw, downe on the bloody  
     plaine  
 Her selfe she threw, and teares gan shed  
     amaine;  
 Amongst her teares immixing prayers  
     meeke,  
 And with her prayers reasons, to restraine  
 From bloody strife; and blessed peace to  
     seeke,  
 By all that unto them was deare, did them  
     beseeke.

## XLVIII

But when as all might nought with them  
     prevaile,  
 Shee smote them lightly with her powre-  
     full wand.  
 Then suddenly as if their hearts did faile,  
 Their wrathfull blades downe fell out of  
     their hand,  
 And they like men astonisht still did stand.  
 Thus whilst their minds were doubtfully  
     distraught,  
 And mighty spirites bound with mightier  
     band,  
 Her golden cup to them for drinke she  
     raught,  
 Whereof, full glad for thirst, ech drunk an  
     harty draught.

## XLIX

Of which so soone as they once tasted had,  
 Wonder it is that sudden change to see:  
 Instead of strokes, each other kissed glad,  
 And lovely haulst, from feare of treason  
     free,  
 And plighted hands for ever friends to be.  
 When all men saw this sudden change of  
     things,  
 So mortall foes so friendly to agree,  
 For passing joy, which so great marvaile  
     brings,  
 They all gan shout aloud, that all the  
     heaven rings.

## L

All which when gentle Canacee beheld,  
 In hast she from her lofty chaire descended,  
 Too weet what sudden tidings was befel:  
 Where when she saw that cruell war so  
     ended,

And deadly foes so faithfully affrended,  
 In lovely wise she gan that lady greet,  
 Which had so great dismay so well  
     amended,  
 And entertaining her with curt'sies meet,  
 Profest to her true friendship and affection  
     sweet.

## LI

Thus when they all accorded goodly were,  
 The trumpets sounded, and they all arose,  
 Thence to depart with glee and gladsome  
     chere.  
 Those warlike champions both together  
     chose  
 Homeward to march, themselves there to  
     repose,  
 And wise Cambina, taking by her side  
 Faire Canacee, as fresh as morning rose,  
 Unto her coch remounting, home did ride,  
 Admir'd of all the people and much glori-  
     fide.

## LII

Where making joyous feast their daies  
     they spent  
 In perfect love, devoide of hatefull strife,  
 Allide with bands of mutuall couplement;  
 For Triamond had Canacee to wife,  
 With whom he ledd a long and happie life;  
 And Cambel tooke Cambina to his fere,  
 The which as life were each to other liefe.  
 So all alike did love, and loved were,  
 That since their days such lovers were not  
     found elsewhere.

## CANTO IV

Satyrane makes a turneyment  
 For love of Florimell:  
 Britomart winnes the prize from all,  
 And Artegall doth quell.

## I

It often fals, (as here it earst befell)  
 That mortall foes doe turne to faithfull  
     frends,  
 And friends profest are chaungd to foemen  
     fell:  
 The cause of both, of both their minds de-  
     pends,  
 And th' end of both, likewise of both their  
     ends:  
 For enmitie, that of no ill proceeds,  
 But of occasion, with th' occasion ends:

And friendship, which a faint affection  
breeds  
Without regard of good, dyes like ill  
grounded seeds.

## II

That well (me seemes) appeares by that of  
late  
Twixt Cambell and Sir Triamond befell,  
As els by this, that now a new debate  
Stird up twixt Blandamour and Paridell,  
The which by course befals me here to  
tell:  
Who having those two other knights espide,  
Marching afore, as ye remember well,  
Sent forth their squire to have them both  
descrie,  
And eke those masked ladies riding them  
beside.

## III

Who backe returning, told as he had seene,  
That they were doughtie knights of  
dreaded name,  
And those two ladies their two loves un-  
seene;  
And therefore wisht them without blot or  
blame  
To let them passe at will, for dread of  
shame.  
But Blandamour, full of vainglorious  
spright,  
And rather stird by his discordfull dame,  
Upon them gladly would have prov'd his  
might,  
But that he yet was sore of his late luck-  
lesse fight.

## IV

Yet, nigh approching, he them fowle be-  
spake,  
Disgracing them, him selfe thereby to  
grace,  
As was his wont, so weening way to make  
To ladies love, where so he came in place,  
And with lewd termes their lovers to de-  
face.  
Whose sharpe provokement them incenst  
so sore,  
That both were bent t' avenge his usage  
base,  
And gan their shields addresse them selves  
afore:  
For evill deedes may better then bad words  
be bore.

## V

But faire Cambina with perswasions myld  
Did mitigate the fiercenesse of their mode,  
That for the present they were reconcyld,  
And gan to treate of deeds of armes abrode,  
And strange adventures, all the way they  
rode:  
Amongst the which they told, as then be-  
fell,  
Of that great turney which was blazed  
brode,  
For that rich girdle of faire Florimell,  
The prize of her which did in beautie most  
excell.

## VI

To which folke-mote they all with one con-  
sent,  
Sith each of them his ladic had him by,  
Whose beautie each of them thought ex-  
cellent,  
Agreed to travell, and their fortunes try.  
So as they passed forth, they did espy  
One in bright armes, with ready speare in  
rest,  
That toward them his course seem'd to ap-  
ply;  
Gainst whom Sir Paridell himselfe ad-  
drest,  
Him weening, ere he nigh approcht, to have  
represt.

## VII

Which th' other seeing, gan his course re-  
lent,  
And vaunted speare eftsoones to disad-  
vantage,  
As if he naught but peace and pleasure  
ment,  
Now falne into their fellowship by chance,  
Whereat they shewed curteous counten-  
aunce.  
So as he rode with them accompanide,  
His roving eie did on the lady glauce  
Which Blandamour had riding by his side:  
Whom sure he weend that he some wher  
tofore had eide.

## VIII

It was to weete that snowy Florimell,  
Which Ferrau late from Braggadochic  
wonne;  
Whom he now seeing, her remembred well,  
How, having reft her from the witches  
sonne,



He soone her lost: wherefore he now be-  
gunne  
To challenge her anew, as his owne prize,  
Whom formerly he had in battell wonne,  
And proffer made by force her to reprice:  
Which scornefull offer Blandamour gan  
soone despize;

## IX

And said: 'Sir knight, sith ye this lady  
clame,  
Whom he that hath were loth to lose so  
light,  
(For so to lose a lady were great shame,)  
Yee shall her winne, as I have done, in fight:  
And lo! shee shall be placed here in sight,  
Together with this hag beside her set,  
That who so winnes her may her have by  
right:  
But he shall have the hag that is ybet,  
And with her alwaies ride, till he another  
get.'

## X

That offer pleased all the company,  
So Florimell with Ate forth was brought,  
At which they all gan laugh full merrily:  
But Braggadochio said, he never thought  
For such an hag, that seemed worse then  
nought,  
His person to emperill so in fight:  
But if to match that lady they had sought  
Another like, that were like faire and  
bright,  
His life he then would spend to justifie his  
right.

## XI

At which his vaine excuse they all gan  
smile,  
As scorning his unmanly cowardize:  
And Florimell him fowly gan revile,  
That for her sake refus'd to enterprize  
The battell, offred in so knightly wize:  
And Ate eke provokt him privily  
With love of her, and shame of such mes-  
prize.  
But naught he car'd for friend or enemy,  
For in base mind nor friendship dwels nor  
enmity.

## XII

But Cambell thus did shut up all in jest:  
'Brave knights and ladies, certes ye doe  
wrong

To stirre up strife, when most us needeth  
rest,  
That we may us reserve both fresh and  
strong  
Against the turnement, which is not long,  
When who so list to fight may fight his fill:  
Till then your challenges ye may prolong;  
And then it shall be tried, if ye will,  
Whether shall have the hag, or hold the  
lady still.'

## XIII

They all agreed; so, turning all to game  
And pleasaunt bord, they past forth on  
their way,  
And all that while, where so they rode or  
came,  
That masked mock-knight was their sport  
and play.  
Till that at length, upon th' appointed day,  
Unto the place of turneyment they came;  
Where they before them found in fresh  
aray  
Manie a brave knight and manie a daintie  
dame  
Assembled, for to get the honour of that  
game.

## XIV

There this faire crewe arriving did divide  
Them selves asunder: Blandamour with  
those  
Of his on th' onc; the rest on th' other  
side.  
But boastfull Braggadochio rather chose,  
For glorie vaine, their fellowship to lose,  
That men on him the more might gaze  
alone.  
The rest them selves in troupes did else  
dispose,  
Like as it seemed best to every one;  
The knights in couples marcht, with ladies  
linckt attone.

## XV

Then first of all forth came Sir Satyrane,  
Bearing that precious relicke in an arke  
Of gold, that bad eyes might it not pro-  
phane:  
Which drawing softly forth out of the  
darke,  
He open shewd, that all men it mote marke:  
A gorgeous girdle, curiously embost  
With pearle and precious stone, worth  
many a marke;

Yet did the workmanship farre passe the  
cost:  
It was the same which lately Florimel had  
lost.

## XVI

That same aloft he hong in open vew,  
To be the prize of beautie and of might;  
The which eftsoones discovered, to it drew  
The eyes of all, allur'd with close delight,  
And hearts quite robbed with so glorious  
sight,  
That all men threw out voves and wishes  
vaine.  
Thrise happie ladie, and thrise happie  
knight,  
Them seend, that could so goodly riches  
gaîne,  
So worthie of the perill, worthy of the  
paine.

## XVII

Then tooke the bold Sir Satyrane in hand  
An huge great speare, such as he wont to  
wield,  
And vauncing forth from all the other  
band  
Of knights, address his maiden-headed  
shield,  
Shewing him selfe all ready for the field.  
Gainst whom there singled from the other  
side  
A Painim knight, that well in armes was  
skild,  
And had in many a battell oft bene tride,  
Hight Bruncheval the bold, who fiersly  
forth did ride.

## XVIII

So furiously they both together met,  
That neither could the others force sus-  
taine:  
As two fierce buls, that strive the rule to  
get  
Of all the heard, meete with so hideous  
maine,  
That both, rebutted, tumble on the plaine;  
So these two champions to the ground were  
feld,  
Where in a maze they both did long  
remaine,  
And in their hands their idle troncheons  
held,  
Which neither able were to wag, or once to  
weld.

## XIX

Which when the noble Ferramont espide,  
He pricked forth in ayd of Satyran;  
And him against Sir Blandamour did ride  
With all the strength and stifnesse that he  
can.  
But the more strong and stiffely that he  
ran,  
So much more sorely to the ground he fell,  
That on an heape were tumbled horse and  
man.  
Unto whose rescue forth rode Paridell;  
But him likewise with that same speare he  
eke did quell.

## XX

Which Braggadocchio seeing, had no will  
To hasten greatly to his parties ayd,  
Albee his turne were next; but stood there  
still,  
As one that seemed doubtfull or dismayd.  
But Triamond, halfe wroth to see him staid,  
Sternly stept forth, and raight away his  
speare,  
With which so sore he Ferramont assaid,  
That horse and man to ground he quite did  
beare,  
That neither could in hast themselves  
againe upreare.

## XXI

Which to avenge, Sir Devon him did dight,  
But with no better fortune then the rest,  
For him likewise he quickly downe did  
smight;  
And after him Sir Douglas him address,  
And after him Sir Paliumord forth prest,  
But none of them against his strokes could  
stand;  
But all the more, the more his praise in-  
crest:  
For either they were left uppon the land,  
Or went away sore wounded of his haplesse  
hand.

## XXII

And now by this, Sir Satyrane abraid  
Out of the swowne, in which too long he  
lay;  
And looking round about, like one dismaid,  
When as he saw the mercilesse affray  
Which doughty Triamond had wrought  
that day  
Unto the noble Knights of Maidenhead,  
His mighty heart did almost rend in tway

For very gall, that rather wholly dead  
Himselfe he wisht have beene, then in so  
bad a stead.

## XXIII

Eftsoones he gan to gather up around  
His weapons, which lay scattered all  
abrode,  
And as it fell, his steed he ready found.  
On whom remounting, fiercely forth he  
rode,  
Like sparke of fire that from the andvile  
glode,  
There where he saw the valiant Triamond  
Chasing, and laying on them heavy lode,  
That none his force were able to with-  
stond,  
So dreadfull were his strokes, so deadly was  
his hond.

## XXIV

With that, at him his beamlike speare he  
aimed,  
And thereto all his power and might  
applide:  
The wicked steele for mischiefe first or-  
dained,  
And having now misfortune got for guide,  
Staid not till it arrived in his side,  
And therein made a very griesly wound,  
That streames of bloud his armour all  
bedide.  
Much was he daunted with that direfull  
stound,  
That scarce he him upheld from falling in a  
sound.

## XXV

Yet as he might, himselfe he soft withdrew  
Out of the field, that none perceiv'd it  
plaine.  
Then gan the part of chalengers anew  
To range the field, and victorlike to raine,  
That none against them battell durst main-  
taine.  
By that the gloomy evening on them fell,  
That forced them from fighting to refraine,  
And trumpets sound to cease did them com-  
pell.  
So Satyrane that day was judg'd to beare  
the bell.

## XXVI

The morrow next the turney gan anew,  
And with the first the hardy Satyrane

Appear'd in place, with all his noble crew:  
On th' other side full many a warlike  
swaine

Assembled were, that glorious prize to  
gaine.

But mongst them all was not Sir Triamond;  
Unable he new battell to darraine,  
Through grievance of his late received  
wound,  
That doubly did him grieve, when so him-  
selfe he found.

## XXVII

Which Cambell seeing, though he could not  
salve,  
Ne done undoe, yet for to salve his name,  
And purchase honour in his friends behalve,  
This goodly counterfesaunce he did frame:  
The shield and armes, well knowne to be  
the same  
Which Triamond had worne, unwares to  
wight,  
And to his friend unwist, for doubt of  
blame,  
If he misdid, he on himselfe did dight,  
That none could him discerne, and so went  
forth to fight.

## XXVIII

There Satyrane lord of the field he found,  
Triumphing in great joy and jolity;  
Gainst whom none able was to stand on  
ground;  
That much he gan his glorie to envy,  
And cast t' avenge his friends indignity.  
A mightie speare eftsoones at him he bent;  
Who, seeing him come on so furiously,  
Met him mid-way with equall hardiment,  
That forcibly to ground they both together  
went.

## XXIX

They up againe them selves can lightly  
reare,  
And to their tryed swords them selves be-  
take;  
With which they wrought such wondrous  
marvels there,  
That all the rest it did amazed make,  
Ne any dar'd their perill to partake;  
Now cuffling close, now chacing to and fro,  
Now hurtling round advantage for to take:  
As two wild boares together grapling go,  
Chaufing and foming choler each against  
his fo.



## XXX

So as they courst, and turneyd here and  
theare,  
It chaunst Sir Satyrane his steed at last,  
Whether through foundring, or through  
sodein feare,  
To stumble, that his rider nigh he cast;  
Which vauntage Cambell did pursue so  
fast,  
That ere him selfe he had recovered well,  
So sore he sowst him on the compast creast,  
That forced him to leave his loftie sell,  
And rudely tumbling downe under his  
horse feete fell.

## XXXI

Lightly Cambello leapt downe from his  
steed,  
For to have rent his shield and armes away,  
That whylome wont to be the victors  
meed;  
When all unwares he felt an hideous sway  
Of many swords, that lode on him did lay.  
An hundred knights had him enclosed  
round,  
To rescue Satyrane out of his pray;  
All which at once huge strokes on him did  
pound,  
In hope to take him prisoner, where he  
stood on ground.

## XXXII

He with their multitude was nought dis-  
mayd,  
But with stout courage turnd upon them  
all,  
And with his brondiron round about him  
layd;  
Of which he dealt large almes, as did befall:  
Like as a lion, that by chaunce doth fall  
Into the hunters toile, doth rage and rore,  
In royall heart disdainng to be thrall.  
But all in vaine: for what might one do  
more?  
They have him taken captive, though it  
grieve him sore.

## XXXIII

Whereof when newes to Triamond was  
brought,  
There as he lay, his wound he soone forgot,  
And starting up, streight for his armour  
sought:  
In vaine he sought; for there he found it  
not;

Cambello it away before had got:  
Cambelloes armes therefore he on him  
threw,  
And lightly issewd forth to take his lot.  
There he in troupe found all that warlike  
crew,  
Leading his friend away, full sorie to his  
vew.

## XXXIV

Into the thickest of that knightly preasse  
He thrust, and smote downe all that was  
betweene,  
Caried with fervent zeale, ne did he ceasse,  
Till that he came where he had Cambell  
seene,  
Like captive thral two other knights  
atweene:  
There he amongst them cruell havocke  
makes,  
That they which lead him soone enforced  
beene  
To let him loose, to save their proper  
stakes;  
Who being freed, from one a weapon  
fiercely takes.

## XXXV

With that he drives at them with dreadfull  
might,  
Both in remembrance of his friends late  
harne,  
And in revengement of his owne despight;  
So both together give a new allarme,  
As if but now the battell waxed warne.  
As when two greedy wolves doe breake by  
force  
Into an heard, farre from the husband  
farne,  
They spoile and ravine without all re-  
morse;  
So did these two through all the field their  
foes enforce.

## XXXVI

Fiercely they followd on their bolde em-  
prize,  
Till trumpets sound did warne them all to  
rest;  
Then all with one consent did yeeld the  
prize  
To Triamond and Cambell as the best.  
But Triamond to Cambell it relest,  
And Cambell it to Triamond transferd;  
Each labouring t' advance the others gest,

And make his praise before his owne pre-  
ferd:  
So that the doome was to another day dif-  
ferd.

## XXXVII

The last day came, when all those knightes  
again  
Assembled were their deedes of armes to  
shew.  
Full many deedes that day were shewed  
plaine:  
But Satyrane, bove all the other erew,  
His wondrous worth declared in all mens  
view;  
For from the first he to the last endured,  
And though some while Fortune from him  
withdrew,  
Yet evermore his honour he recured,  
And with unwearied powre his party still  
assured.

## XXXVIII

Ne was there knight that ever thought of  
armes,  
But that his utmost prowesse there made  
known;  
That by their many wounds, and carelesse  
harmes,  
By shivered speares, and swords all under  
strowen,  
By scattered shields was easie to be shoven.  
There might ye see loose steeds at randon  
ronne,  
Whose luckelesse riders late were over-  
throwen,  
And squiers make hast to helpe their lords  
fordonne:  
But still the Knights of Maidenhead the  
better womme.

## XXXIX

Till that there entred on the other side  
A straunger knight, from whence no man  
could reed,  
In queynt disguise, full hard to be descride.  
For all his armour was like salvage weed,  
With woody mosse bedight, and all his  
steed  
With oaken leaves attrapt, that seemed  
fit  
For salvage wight, and thereto well agreed  
His word, which on his ragged shield was  
writ,  
*Salvagesse sans finesse*, shewing secret wit.

## XL

He, at his first incomming, charg'd his spere  
At him that first appeared in his sight:  
That was to weete the stout Sir Sangliere,  
Who well was knownen to be a valiant  
knight,  
Approved oft in many a perlous fight.  
Him at the first encounter downe he smote,  
And overbore beyond his crouper quight,  
And after him another knight, that hote  
Sir Brianor, so sore, that none him life be-  
hote.

## XLI

Then, ere his hand he reard, he overthrew  
Seven knights, one after other, as they  
came:  
And when his speare was brust, his sword  
he drew,  
The instrument of wrath, and with the  
same  
Far'd like a lyon in his bloodie game,  
Hewing and slashing shields and helmets  
bright,  
And beating downe what ever nigh him  
came,  
That every one gan shun his dreadfull sight,  
No lesse then death it selfe, in daungerous  
affright.

## XLII

Much wondred all men, what, or whence he  
came,  
That did amongst the troupes so tyrannize;  
And each of other gan inquire his name.  
But when they could not learne it by no  
wize,  
Most answerable to his wyld disguise  
It seemed, him to terme the Salvage Knight.  
But certes his right name was otherwize,  
Though knowne to few that Arthegall he  
hight,  
The doughtiest knight that liv'd that day,  
and most of might.

## XLIII

Thus was Sir Satyrane with all his band  
By his sole manhood and atchievement  
stout  
Dismayd, that none of them in field durst  
stand,  
But beaten were, and chased all about  
So he continued all that day throughout,  
Till evening, that the sunne gan downward  
berd.

Then rushed forth out of the thickest rout  
A stranger knight, that did his glorie shend:  
So nought may be esteemed happie till the  
end.

## XLIV

He at his entrance charg'd his powrefull  
speare  
At Artegall, in midst of his pryde,  
And therewith smote him on his umbriere  
So sore, that, tumbling baeke, he downe did  
slyde

Over his horses taile above a stryde:  
Whence litle lust he had to rise againe.  
Which Cambell seeing, much the same en-  
vyde,  
And ran at him with all his might and  
maine;  
But shortly was likewise seene lying on  
the plaine.

## XLV

Whereat full inly wroth was Triamond,  
And cast t' avenge the shame doen to his  
freend:  
But by his friend himselfe eke soone he  
fond,  
In no lesse neede of helpe then him he  
weend.  
All which when Blandamour from end to  
end  
Beheld, he woxe therewith displeased sore,  
And thought in mind it shortly to amend:  
His speare he fentred, and at him it bore;  
But with no better fortune then the rest  
afore.

## XLVI

Full many others at him likewise ran:  
But all of them likewise dismounted were.  
Ne certes wonder; for no powre of man  
Could bide the force of that enchanted  
speare,  
The which this famous Britomart did beare;  
With which she wondrous deeds of arms  
atchieved,  
And overthrew what ever came her neare,  
That all those stranger knights full sore  
agrieved,  
And that late weaker band of chalengers  
relieved.

## XLVII

Like as in sommers day, when raging heat  
Doth burne the earth, and boyled rivers drie,

That all brute beasts, forst to refraine fro  
meat,  
Doe hunt for shade, where shrowded they  
may lie,  
And missing it, faine from themselves  
flie;  
All travellers tormented are with paine:  
A watry clond doth overcast the skie,  
And poureth forth a sudden shoure of raine,  
That all the wretched world recomforteth  
againe.

## XLVIII

So did the warlike Britomart restore  
The prize to Knights of Maydenhead that  
day,  
Which else was like to have bene lost, and  
bore  
The prayse of prowesse from them all  
away.  
Then shrilling trumpets loudly gan to bray,  
And bad them leave their labours and long  
toyle  
To joyous feast and other gentle play,  
Where beauties prize shold win that pre-  
tious spoyle:  
Where I with sound of trompe will also rest  
a while.

## CANTO V

The ladies for the girdle strive  
Of famous Florimell:  
Seudamour, coming to Cares house,  
Doth sleepe from him expell.

## I

It hath bene through all ages ever seene,  
That with the praise of armes and chevalrie  
The prize of beautie still hath joyned beene;  
And that for reasons speciall privitie:  
For either doth on other much relie.  
For he me seemes most fit the faire to  
serve,  
That can her best defend from villenie;  
And she most fit his service doth deserve,  
That fairest is and from her faith will  
never swerve.

## II

So fitly now here commeth next in place,  
After the proove of prowesse ended well,  
The controveerse of beauties souveraine  
grace;  
In which, to her that doth the most excell



Shall fall the girdle of faire Florimell:  
That many wish to win for glorie vaine,  
And not for vertuous use, which some doe  
tell  
That glorious belt did in it selfe containe,  
Which ladies ought to love, and seeke for  
to obtaine.

## III

That girdle gave the vertue of chaste love  
And wivehood true to all that did it beare;  
But whosoever contrarie doth prove  
Might not the same about her middle  
weare:  
But it would loose, or else a sunder teare.  
Whilome it was (as Faeries wont report)  
Dame Venus girdle, by her steemed deare,  
What time she usd to live in wively sort;  
But layd aside, when so she usd her looser  
sport.

## IV

Her husband Vulcan whylome for her  
sake,  
When first he loved her with heart entire,  
This pretious ornament, they say, did make,  
And wrought in Lemno with unquenched  
fire:  
And afterwards did for her loves first hire  
Give it to her, for ever to remaine,  
Therewith to bind lascivious desire,  
And loose affections streightly to restraine;  
Which vertue it for ever after did retaine.

## V

The same one day, when she her selfe dis-  
posd  
To visite her beloved paramoure,  
The God of Warre, she from her middle  
loosd,  
And left behind her in her secret bowre,  
On Acidalian mount, where many an howre  
She with the pleasant Graces wont to play.  
There Florimell in her first ages flowre  
Was fostered by those Graces, (as they say)  
And brought with her from thence that  
goodly belt away.

## VI

That goodly belt was Cestus hight by name,  
And as her life by her esteemed deare.  
No wonder then, if that to winne the same  
So many ladies sought, as shall appeare;  
For pearelesse she was thought, that did it  
beare.

And now by this their feast all being ended,  
The judges which thereto selected were  
Into the Martian field adowne descended,  
To deeme this doutfull case, for which  
they all contended.

## VII

But first was question made, which of those  
knights  
That lately turneyd had the wager wonue:  
There was it judged by those worthie  
wights,  
That Satyrane the first day best had donne:  
For he last ended, having first begonne.  
The second was to Triamond belight,  
For that he sav'd the victour from for-  
donne:  
For Cambell victour was in all mens sight,  
Till by mishap he in his foemens hand did  
light.

## VIII

The third dayes prize unto that straunger  
knight,  
Whom all men term'd Knight of the  
Hebene Speare,  
To Britomart, was given by good right;  
For that with puissant stroke she downe  
did beare  
The Salvage Knight, that victour was  
whileare,  
And all the rest which had the best afore,  
And to the last unconquer'd did appeare;  
For last is deemed best. To her therefore  
The fayrest ladie was adjudgd for para-  
more.

## IX

But thereat greatly grudged Arthegall,  
And much repynd, that both of victors  
meede  
And eke of honour she did him forestall.  
Yet mote he not withstand what was de-  
creede;  
But inly thought of ~~that~~ despightfull deede  
Fit time t'awaite avenged for to bee.  
This being ended thus, and all agreed,  
Then next ensw'd the paragon to see  
Of beauties praise, and yeeld the fayrest  
her due fee.

## X

Then first Cambello brought unto their  
view  
His faire Cambina, covered with a veale;

Which being once withdrawne, most perfect hew  
 And passing beautie did eftsoones reveale,  
 That able was weake harts away to steale.  
 Next did Sir Triamond unto their sight  
 The face of his deare Canaeee unheale;  
 Whose beauties beame eftsoones did shine  
 so bright,  
 That daz'd the eyes of all, as with exceeding light.

## XI

And after her did Paridell produce  
 His false Duessa, that she might be seene,  
 Who with her forged beautie did seduce  
 The hearts of some, that fairest her did weene;  
 As diverse wits affected divers beene.  
 Then did Sir Ferramont unto them shew  
 His Lucida, that was full faire and sheene:  
 And after these an hundred ladies moe  
 Appear'd in place, the which each other did outgoe.

## XII

All which who so dare thinke for to enchace,  
 Him needeth sure a golden pen, I weene,  
 To tell the feature of each goodly face.  
 For since the day that they created beene,  
 So many heavenly faces were not seene  
 Assembled in one place: ne he that thought  
 For Chianfolke to pourtraict beauties queene,  
 By view of all the fairest to him brought,  
 So many faire did see, as here he might have sought.

## XIII

At last, the most redoubted Britonesse  
 Her lovely Amoret did open shew;  
 Whose face discovered, plainly did expresse  
 The heavenly pourtraict of bright angels hew.  
 Well weened all, which her that time did vew,  
 That she should surely beare the bell away,  
 Till Blandamour, who thought he had the trew  
 And very Florimell, did her display:  
 The sight of whom once seene did all the rest dismay.

## XIV

For all afore that seemed fayre and bright,  
 Now base and contemptible did appeare,

Compar'd to her, that shone as Phebes light  
 Amongst the lesser starres in evening cleare.

All that her saw with wonder ravisht weare,  
 And weend no mortall creature she should bee,

But some celestiall shape, that flesh did beare:

Yet all were glad there Florimell to see;  
 Yet thought that Florimell was not so faire as shee.

## XV

As guilefull goldsmith that, by secret skill,  
 With golden foyle doth finely over spread  
 Some baser metall, which commend he will  
 Unto the vulgar for good gold insted,  
 He much more goodly glosse thereon doth shed,

To hide his falshood, then if it were trew:  
 So hard this idole was to be ared,  
 That Florimell her selfe in all mens vew  
 She seem'd to passe: so forged things do fairest shew.

## XVI

Then was that golden belt by doome of all

Graunted to her, as to the fayrest dame.  
 Which being brought, about her middle small

They thought to gird, as best it her became;

But by no meanes they could it thereto frame.

For, ever as they fastned it, it loos'd  
 And fell away, as feeling secret blame.  
 Full oft about her wast she it enclos'd;  
 And it as oft was from about her wast dis-clos'd.

## XVII

That all men wondred at the uneoneth sight,  
 And each one thought as to their fancies came.

But she her selfe did thinke it doen for spight,

And touched was with secret wrath and shame

Therewith, as thing deviz'd her to defame.  
 Then many other ladies likewise tride  
 About their tender loynes to knit the same'  
 But it would not on none of them abide,  
 But when they thought it fast, eftsoones it was untide.

## XVIII

Which when that scornfull Squire of  
 Dames did vew,  
 He lowdly gan to laugh, and thus to jest:  
 'Alas for pittie, that so faire a crew,  
 As like can not be seene from east to west,  
 Cannot find one this girdle to invest!  
 Fie on the man that did it first invent,  
 To shame us all with this, *Ungirt unblest!*  
 Let never ladie to his love assent,  
 That hath this day so many so unmanly  
 shent.'

## XIX

Thereat all knights gan laugh, and ladies  
 lowre:  
 Till that at last the gentle Amoret  
 Likewise assayd, to prove that girdles  
 powre;  
 And having it about her middle set,  
 Did find it fit withouten breach or let.  
 Whereat the rest gan greatly to envie:  
 But Florimell exceedingly did fret,  
 And snatching from her hand halfe angrily  
 The belt againe, about her bodie gan it tie.

## XX

Yet nathemore would it her bodie fit;  
 Yet nathelesse to her, as her dew right,  
 It yeelded was by them that judg'd it:  
 And she her selfe adjudged to the knight  
 That bore the hebeue speare, as woune in  
 fight.  
 But Britomart would not thereto assent,  
 Ne her owne Amoret forgoe so light  
 For that strange dame, whose beauties  
 wonderment  
 She lesse esteem'd then th' others vertuous  
 government.

## XXI

Whom when the rest did see her to re-  
 fuse,  
 They were full glad, in hope themselves to  
 get her:  
 Yet at her choise they all did greatly muse.  
 But after that, the judges did arret her  
 Unto the second best, that lov'd her better;  
 That was the Salvage Knight: but he was  
 gone  
 In great displeasure, that he could not get  
 her.  
 Then was she judg'd Triamond his one;  
 But Triamond lov'd Canacee, and other  
 none.

## XXII

Tho unto Satyran she was adjudged,  
 Who was right glad to gaine so goodly  
 meed:  
 But Blandamour thereat full greatly  
 grudged,  
 And litle prays'd his labours evill speed,  
 That, for to winne the saddle, lost the steed.  
 Ne lesse thereat did Paridell complaine,  
 And thought t' appeale from that which  
 was decreed  
 To single combat with Sir Satyrane.  
 Thereto him Ate stird, new discord to  
 maintaine.

## XXIII

And eke with these, full many other knights  
 She through her wicked working did in-  
 eense,  
 Her to demaund, and chalenge as their  
 rights,  
 Deserved for their perils reeompense.  
 Amongst the rest, with boastfull vaine  
 pretense  
 Stept Braggadochio forth, and as his thrall  
 Her elaym'd, by him in battell wonne long  
 sens:  
 Whereto her selfe he did to wnesse call;  
 Who being askt, accordingly confessed all.

## XXIV

Thereat exceeding wroth was Satyran;  
 And wroth with Satyran was Blandamour;  
 And wroth with Blandamour was Erivan;  
 And at them both Sir Paridell did loure.  
 So all together stird up strifull stoure,  
 And readie were new battell to darraine.  
 Each one profest to be her paramoure,  
 And vow'd with speare and shield it to  
 maintaine;  
 Ne judges powre, ne reasons rule, mote  
 them restraine.

## XXV

Which troublous stirre when Satyrane  
 aviz'd,  
 He gan to east how to appease the same,  
 And, to accord them all, this meanes  
 deviz'd:  
 First in the midst to set that fayrest dame,  
 To whom each one his chalenge should  
 diselame,  
 And he himselfe his right would eke  
 releasse:  
 Then looke, to whom she voluntarie came,



He should without disturbance her possesse:  
Sweete is the love that comes alone with  
willingnesse.

## XXVI

They all agreed, and then that suowy mayd  
Was in the middest plast among them all:  
All on her gazing wisht, and vovd, and prayd,  
And to the Queene of Beautie close did call,  
That she unto their portion might befall.  
Then when she long had lookt upon each  
one,

As though she wished to have pleasd them  
all,

At last to Braggadochio selfe alone  
She came of her accord, in spight of all his  
fone.

## XXVII

Which when they all beheld, they chafte, and  
rag'd,

And woxe nigh mad for very harts despight,  
That from revenge their willes they searse  
asswag'd:

Some thought from him her to have reft by  
might;

Some proffer made with him for her to  
fight.

But he nought car'd for all that they could  
say:

For he their words as wind esteemed light.  
Yet not fit place he thought it there to stay,  
But secretly from thence that night her  
bore away.

## XXVIII

They which remaynd, so soone as they  
perceiv'd

That she was gone, departed thence with  
speed,

And follow'd them, in mind her to have  
reav'd

From wight unworthie of so noble need.  
In which poursuit how each one did suc-  
ceede,

Shall else be told in order, as it fell.  
But now of Britomart it here doth neede,  
The hard adventures and strange haps to  
tell;

Since with the rest she went not after  
Florimell.

## XXIX

For soone as she them saw to discord set,  
Her list no longer in that place abide;

But taking with her lovely Amoret,  
Upon her first adventure forth did ride,  
To seeke her lov'd, making blind Love her  
guide.

Unluckie mayd, to seeke heremie !

Unluckie mayd, to seeke him farre and  
wide,

Whom, when he was unto her selfe most  
nie,

She through his late disguizement could  
him not descrie !

## XXX

So much the more her grieve, the more her  
toyle:

Yet neither toyle nor grieve she once did  
spare,

In seeking him that should her paine  
assoyle;

Whereto great comfort in her sad mis-  
fare

Was Amoret, companion of her care:

Who likewise sought her lover long mis-  
went,

The gentle Seudamour, whose hart whil-  
eare

That stryfull hag with gealous discontent  
Had fild, that he to fell reveng was fully  
bent.

## XXXI

Bent to revenge on blamelesse Britomart  
The crime which cursed Ate kindled earst,  
The which like thornes did pricke his geal-  
ous hart,

And through his soule like poysned arrow  
perst,

That by no reason it might be reverst,

For ought that Glauce could or doe or  
say.

For aye the more that she the same re-  
herst,

The more it gauld and griev'd him night  
and day,

That nought but dire revenge his anger  
mote defray.

## XXXII

So as they travelled, the drouping night,  
Covered with cloudie storme and bitter  
showre,

That dreadfull seem'd to every living wight,  
Upon them fell, before her timely howre;

That forced them to seeke some covert  
bowre,

Where they might hide their heads in quiet  
rest,  
And shrowd their persons from that stormie  
stowre.  
Not farre away, not meete for any guest,  
They spide a little cottage, like some  
poore mans nest.

## XXXIII

Under a steepe hilles side it placed was,  
There where the mouldred earth had cav'd  
the banke;  
And fast beside a little brooke did pas  
Of muddie water, that like puddle stanke,  
By which few crooked sallowes grew in  
ranke:  
Wherto approaching nigh, they heard the  
sound  
Of many yron hammers beating ranke,  
And answering their wearie turnes around,  
That seemed some blacksmith dwelt in that  
desert ground.

## XXXIV

There entring in, they found the goodman  
selfe  
Full busily unto his worke ybent;  
Who was to weete a wretched wearish elfe,  
With hollow eyes and rawbone cheekes for-  
spent,  
As if he had in prison long bene pent:  
Full blacke and griesly did his face ap-  
peare,  
Besmeard with smoke that nigh his eye-  
sight blent;  
With rugged beard, and hoarie shagged  
heare,  
The which he never wout to combe, or  
comely sheare.

## XXXV

Rude was his garment, and to rags all rent,  
Ne better had he, ne for better cared:  
With blistred hands emongst the cinders  
brent,  
And fingers filthie, with long nayles un-  
pared,  
Right fit to rend the food on which he fared.  
His name was Care; a blacksmith by his  
trade,  
That neither day nor night from working  
spared,  
But to small purpose yron wedges made;  
Those be unquiet thoughts, that carefull  
minds invade.

## XXXVI

In which his worke he had sixe servants  
prest,  
About the andvile standing evermore,  
With huge great hammers, that did never  
rest  
From heaping stroakes, which thereon  
soused sore:  
All sixe strong groomes, but one then other  
more:  
For by degrees they all were disagreed;  
So likewise did the hammers which they  
bore  
Like belles in greatnesse orderly succeed,  
That he which was the last the first did  
farre exceede.

## XXXVII

He like a monstrous gyant seem'd in sight,  
Farre passing Bronteus or Pyracmon great,  
The which in Lipari doe day and night  
Frame thunderbolts for Joves avengefull  
threate.  
So dreadfully he did the andvile beat,  
That seem'd to dust he shortly would it  
drive:  
So huge his hammer and so fierce his  
heat,  
That seem'd a rocke of diamond it could  
rive,  
And rend a sunder quite, if he thereto list  
strive.

## XXXVIII

Sir Scandamour, there entring, much ad-  
mired  
The manner of their worke and wearie  
paine;  
And having long beheld, at last enquired  
The cause and end thereof: but all in  
vaine;  
For they for nought would from their  
worke refraine,  
Ne let his speeches come unto their eare;  
And eke the breathfull bellowes blew  
amaine,  
Like to the northren winde, that none could  
heare:  
Those Pensifenesse did move; and Sighes  
the bellows weare.

## XXXIX

Which when that warriour saw, he said no  
more,  
But in his armour layd him downe to rest:

To rest he layd him downe upon the flore,  
(Whylome for ventrous knights the bed-  
ding best,)

And thought his wearie limbs to have re-  
drest.

And that old aged dame, his faithfull  
squire,

Her feeble joynts layd eke a downe to rest;  
That needed much her weake age to desire,  
After so long a travell, which them both  
did tire.

## XL

There lay Sir Scudamour long while ex-  
pecting

When gentle sleepe his heavie eyes would  
close;

Oft chaunging sides, and oft new place  
electing,

Where better seem'd he mote himselfe re-  
pose;

And oft in wrath he thence againe uprose;  
And oft in wrath he layd him downe againe.

But wheresoever he did himselfe dispose,  
He by no meanes could wished ease obtaine:  
So every place seem'd painefull, and ech  
changing vaine.

## XLI

And evermore, when he to sleepe did  
thinke,

The hammers sound his senses did molest;  
And evermore, when he began to winke,

The bellows noyse disturb'd his quiet rest,  
Ne suffred sleepe to settle in his brest.

And all the night the dogs did barke and  
howle

About the house, at sent of stranger guest:  
And now the crowing cocke, and now the

owle

Lowde shriking, him afflicted to the very  
sowle.

## XLII

And if by fortune any litle nap  
Upon his heavie eye-lids chaunst to fall,  
Eftsoones one of those villeins him did  
rap

Upon his headpeece with his yron mall,  
That he was soone awaked therewithall,

And lightly started up as one affrayd,  
Or as if one him suddenly did call:

So oftentimes he out of sleepe abrayd,

And then lay musing long on that him ill  
apayd.

## XLIII

So long he muzed, and so long he lay,  
That at the last his wearie sprite opprest  
With fleshly weaknesse, which no creature  
may

Long time resist, gave place to kindly rest,  
That all his senses did full soone arrest:

Yet, in his soundest sleepe, his dayly feare  
His ydle braine gan busily molest,

And made him dreame those two disloyall  
were:

The things that day most minds, at night  
doe most appeare.

## XLIV

With that, the wicked carle, the maister  
smith,

A paire of redwhot yron tongs did take  
Out of the burning cinders, and therewith

Under his side him nipt, that, forst to wake,  
He felt his hart for very paine to quake,

And started up avenged for to be  
On him the which his quiet slomber brake:

Yet, looking round about him, none could  
see;

Yet did the smart remaine, though he him-  
selfe did flee.

## XLV

In such disquiet and hartfretting payne  
He all that night, that too long night, did  
passe.

And now the day out of the ocean mayne  
Began to peepe above this earthly masse,  
With pearly dew sprinkling the morning  
grasse:

Then up he rose like heavie lumpe of lead,  
That in his face, as in a looking glasse,

The signes of anguish one mote plainly  
read,

And ghesse the man to be dismayd with  
gealous dread.

## XLVI

Unto his lofty steede he clombe anone,  
And forth upon his former voiage fared,

And with him eke that aged squire attone;  
Who, whatsoever perill was prepared,

Both equall paines and equall perill shared:  
The end whereof and daungerous event

Shall for another canticle be spared:

But here my wearie teeme, nigh over  
spent,

Shall breath it selfe awhile, after so long  
a went.



## CANTO VI

Both Scudamour and Arthegall  
Doe fight with Britomart:  
He sees her face; doth fall in love,  
And soone from her depart.

## I

WHAT equall torment to the griefe of mind,  
And pyning anguish hid in gentle hart,  
That inly feeds it selfe with thoughts un-  
kind,  
And nourisheth her owne consuming  
smart?

What medicine can any leaches art  
Yeeld such a sore, that doth her grievance  
hide,  
And will to none her maladie impart?  
Such was the wound that Scudamour did  
gride;  
For which Dan Phebus selfe cannot a salve  
provide.

## II

Who having left that restlesse House of Care,  
The next day, as he on his way did ride,  
Full of melancholie and sad misfare,  
Through misconceipt, all unawares espide  
An armed knight under a forrest side,  
Sitting in shade beside his grazing steede;  
Who, soone as them approaching he de-  
seride,  
Gan towards them to pricke with eger  
speede,  
That seem'd he was full bent to some mis-  
chievous deede.

## III

Which Scudamour perceiving, forth issewed  
To have rencountred him in equall race;  
But soone as th' other, nigh approaching,  
vewed  
The armes he bore, his speare he gan abase,  
And voide his course: at which so suddain  
case  
He wondred much. But th' other thus can  
say:  
'Ah! gentle Scudamour, unto your grace  
I me submit, and you of pardon pray,  
That almost had against you trespassed this  
day.'

## IV

Whereto thus Scudamour: 'Small harme it  
were  
For any knight upon a ventrous knight

Without displeasance for to prove his  
spere.

But reade you, sir, sith ye my name have  
hight,

What is your owne, that I mote you re-  
quite?'

'Certes,' sayd he, 'ye mote as now excuse  
Me from discovering you my name aright:  
For time yet serves that I the same re-  
fuse;

But call ye me the Salvage Knight, as  
others use.'

## V

'Then this, Sir Salvage Knight,' quoth he,  
'areede;

Or doe you here within this forrest wonne,  
That seemeth well to answeere to your  
weede?

Or have ye it for some occasion donne?  
That rather seemes, sith knowne armes ye  
shonne.'

'This other day,' sayd he, 'a stranger  
knight

Shame and dishonour hath unto me donne;  
On whom I waite to wreake that foule de-  
spight,

When ever he this way shall passe by day  
or night.'

## VI

'Shame be his meede,' quoth he, 'that  
meaneth shame.

But what is he by whom ye shamed were?'  
'A stranger knight,' sayd he, 'unknowne  
by name,

But knowne by fame, and by an hebene  
speare,

With which he all that met him downe did  
beare.

He in an open turney, lately held,  
Fro me the honour of that game did  
reare;

And having me, all wearie earst, downe  
feld,

The fayrest ladie reft, and ever since with-  
held.'

## VII

When Scudamour heard mention of that  
speare,

He wist right well that it was Britomart,  
The which from him his fairest love did  
beare.

Tho gan he swell in every inner part.

For fell despight, and gnaw his gealous  
hart,  
That thus he sharply sayd: 'Now by my  
head,  
Yet is not this the first unknighly part,  
Which that same knight, whom by his  
lance I read,  
Hath doon to noble knights, that many  
makes him dread.

## VIII

'For lately he my love hath fro me reft,  
And eke defiled with foule villanie  
The sacred pledge which in his faith was  
left,  
In shame of knighthood and fidelitie;  
The which ere long full deare he shall abie.  
And if to that avenge by you decreed  
This hand may helpe, or succour aught sup-  
plie,  
It shall not fayle, when so ye shall it need.'  
So both to wreake their wrathes on Brito-  
mart agreed.

## IX

Whiles thus they communed, lo! farre  
away  
A knight soft ryding towards them they  
spyde,  
Attyr'd in forraine armes and straunge  
aray:  
Whom when they nigh approcht, they  
plaine descryde  
To be the same for whom they did abyde.  
Sayd then Sir Sendamour, 'Sir Salvage  
Knight,  
Let me this crave, sith first I was defyde,  
That first I may that wrong to him requite:  
And, if I hap to fayle, you shall recure my  
right.'

## X

Which being yeelded, he his threatfull  
speare  
Gan fewter, and against her fiercely ran.  
Who soone as she him saw approaching  
neare  
With so fell rage, her selfe she lightly gan  
To fight, to welcome him well as she can:  
But entertained him in so rude a wise,  
That to the ground she smote both horse  
and man;  
Whence neither greatly hasted to arise,  
But on their common harmes together did  
devise.

## XI

But Artegall, beholding his mischaunce,  
New matter added to his former fire;  
And eft aventring his steeleheaded lance,  
Against her rode, full of despiteous ire,  
That nought but spoyle and vengeance did  
require.

But to himselfe his felonous intent  
Returning, disappointed his desire,  
Whiles unawares his saddle he forwent,  
And found himselfe on ground in great  
amazement.

## XII

Lightly he started up out of that stound,  
And snatching forth his direfull deadly  
blade,  
Did leape to her, as doth an eger hound  
Thrust to an hynd within some covert glade,  
Whom without perill he cannot invade.  
With such fell greedines he her assayed,  
That though she mounted were, yet he her  
made  
To give him ground, (so much his force  
prevayled)  
And shun his mightie strokes, gainst which  
no armes avayled.

## XIII

So as they coursed here and there, it  
chaunst  
That, in her wheeling round, behind her  
crest  
So sorely he her strooke, that thence it  
glaunst  
Adowne her backe, the which it fairely  
blest  
From foule mischaunce; ne did it ever rest,  
Till on her horses hinder parts it fell;  
Where byting deepe, so deadly it imprest,  
That quite it chynd his backe behind the  
sell,  
And to alight on foote her algates did com-  
pell.

## XIV

Like as the lightning brond from riven  
skie,  
Throwne out by angry Jove in his ven-  
geance,  
With dreadfull force falles on some steeple  
hie;  
Which battering, downe it on the church  
doth glance,  
And teares it all with terrible mischaunce.

Yet she no whit dismayd, her steed for-  
sooke,  
And casting from her that enchaunted  
lance,  
Unto her sword and shield her soone be-  
tooke;  
And therewithall at him right furiously she  
strooke.

## XV

So furiously she strooke in her first heat,  
Whiles with long fight on foot he breath-  
lesse was,  
That she him forced backward to retreat,  
And yeeld unto her weapon way to pas:  
Whose raging rigour neither steele nor  
bras  
Could stay, but to the tender flesh it went,  
And pour'd the purple bloud forth on the  
gras;  
That all his mayle yriv'd, and plates yrent,  
Shew'd all his bodie bare unto the cruell  
dent.

## XVI

At length, when as he saw her hastie heat  
Abate, and panting breath begin to fayle,  
He, through long sufferance growing now  
more great,  
Rose in his strength, and gan her fresh as-  
sayle,  
Heaping huge strokes, as thicke as showre  
of hayle,  
And lashing dreadfully at every part,  
As if he thought her soule to disentrayle.  
Ah! cruell hand, and thrise more cruell  
hart,  
That workst such wreeke on her to whom  
thou dearest art!

## XVII

What yron courage ever could endure,  
To worke such outrage on so faire a  
creature?  
And in his madnesse thinke with hands  
impure  
To spoyle so goodly workmanship of nature,  
The Maker selfe resembling in her feature?  
Certes some hellish furie, or some feend,  
This mischief framd, for their first loves  
defeature,  
To bath their hands in bloud of dearest  
freend,  
Thereby to make their loves beginning their  
lives end.

## XVIII

Thus long they trac'd and traversed to and  
fro,  
Sometimes pursewing, and sometimes pur-  
sewed,  
Still as advantage they espyde thereto:  
But toward th' end Sir Arthegall renewed  
His strength still more, but she still more  
decrewed.  
At last his lucklesse hand he heav'd on  
hie,  
Having his forces all in one accrewed,  
And therewith stroke at her so hideouslie,  
That seemed nought but death mote be her  
destinie.

## XIX

The wicked stroke upon her helmet  
chaunst,  
And with the force which in it selfe it bore  
Her ventayle shard away, and thence forth  
glaunst  
Adowne in vaine, ne harm'd her any more.  
With that, her angels face, unseene afore,  
Like to the ruddie morne appeard in sight,  
Deawed with silver drops, through sweat-  
ing sore,  
But somewhat redder then beseem'd aright,  
Through toylesome heate and labour of her  
weary fight.

## XX

And round about the same, her yellow  
heare,  
Having through stirring loosed their wonted  
band,  
Like to a golden border did appeare,  
Framed in goldsmithes forge with cunning  
hand:  
Yet goldsmithes cunning could not under-  
stand  
To frame such subtile wire, so shinie cleare.  
For it did glisten like the golden sand,  
The which Pactolus, with his waters shere,  
Throwes forth upon the rivage round about  
him nere.

## XXI

And as his hand he up againe did reare,  
Thinking to worke on her his utmost  
wracke,  
His powreflesse arme, benumbd with secret  
feare,  
From his revengefull purpose shronke  
abacke,



And cruell sword out of his fingers slacke  
 Fell downe to ground, as if the steele had  
     sence,  
 And felt some ruth, or sence his hand did  
     lacke,  
 Or both of them did thinke, obedience  
 To doe to so divine a beauties excellence.

## XXII

And he himselve long gazing thereupon,  
 At last fell humbly downe upon his kuee,  
 And of his wonder made religion,  
 Weening some heavenly goddesse he did  
     see,  
 Or else unweeting what it else might bee;  
 And pardon her besought his errour frayle,  
 That had done outrage in so high degree:  
 Whilest trembling horror did his sense  
     assayle,  
 And made ech member quake, and manly  
     hart to quayle.

## XXIII

Nathelesse she, full of wrath for that late  
     stroke,  
 All that long while upheld her wrathfull  
     hand,  
 With fell intent on him to bene ywroke:  
 And looking sterne, still over him did stand,  
 Threatning to strike, ulesse he would  
     withstand:  
 And bad him rise, or surely he should die.  
 But, die or live, for nought he would  
     upstand,  
 But her of pardon prayd more earnestlie,  
 Or wreake on him her will for so great  
     injurie.

## XXIV

Which when as Scudamour, who now  
     abrayd,  
 Beheld, where as he stood not farre aside,  
 He was therewith right wondrously dismayd,  
 And drawing nigh, when as he plaine  
     descride  
 That peerelesse paterne of Dame Natures  
     pride,  
 And heavenly image of perfection,  
 He blest himselfe, as one sore terrifide,  
 And turning feare to faint devotion,  
 Did worship her as some celestiall vision.

## XXV

But Glauce, seeing all that chaunced there,  
 Well weeting how their errour to assoyle,

Full glad of so good end, to them drew  
     nere,  
 And her sawld with seemly belaccoyle,  
 Joyous to see her safe after long toyle:  
 Then her besought, as she to her was deare,  
 To graunt unto those warriours truce a  
     whyte;  
 Which yeelded, they their bevers up did  
     reare,  
 And shew'd themselves to her, such as  
     indeed they were.

## XXVI

When Britomart with sharpe avizefull eye  
 Beheld the lovely face of Artegall,  
 Tempred with sternesse and stout majestie,  
 She gan eftsoones it to her mind to call,  
 To be the same which in her fathers hall  
 Long since in that enchaunted glasse she  
     saw.  
 Therewith her wrathfull courage gan  
     appall,  
 And haughtie spirits meekely to adaw,  
 That her enhaunced hand she downe can  
     soft withdraw.

## XXVII

Yet she it forst to have againe upheld,  
 As fayning choler, which was turn'd to  
     cold:  
 But ever when his visage she beheld,  
 Her hand fell downe, and would no longer  
     hold  
 The wrathfull weapon gainst his count-  
     nance bold:  
 But when in vaine to fight she oft assayd,  
 She arm'd her tongue, and thought at him  
     to scold;  
 Nathlesse her tongue not to her will obayd,  
 But brought forth speeches myld, when she  
     would have missayd.

## XXVIII

But Sendamour now woxen inly glad,  
 That all his gealous feare he false had  
     found,  
 And how that hag his love abused had  
 With breach of faith and loyaltie unsound,  
 The which long time his grieved hart did  
     wound,  
 Him thus bespake: 'Certes, Sir Artegall,  
 I joy to see you lout so low on ground,  
 And now become to live a ladies thrall,  
 That whylome in your minde wont to de-  
     spise them all.'

## XXIX

Soone as she heard the name of Artegall,  
 Her hart did leape, and all her hart-strings  
 tremble,  
 For sudden joy, and secret feare withall,  
 And all her vitall powres, with motion  
 nimble,  
 To succour it, themselves gan there assem-  
 ble,  
 That by the swift recourse of flushing  
 blood  
 Right plaine appeard, though she it would  
 dissemble,  
 And fayned still her former angry mood,  
 Thinking to hide the depth by troubling of  
 the flood.

## XXX

When Glauce thus gan wisely all upknit:  
 ‘Ye gentle knights, whom fortune here  
 hath brought,  
 To be spectators of this uncouth fit,  
 Which secret fate hath in this ladie  
 wrought,  
 Against the course of kind, ne mervaille  
 nought,  
 Ne thenceforth feare the thing that hether-  
 too  
 Hath troubled both your mindes with idle  
 thought,  
 Fearing least she your loves away should  
 woo,  
 Feared in vaine, sith meanes ye see there  
 wants theretoo.

## XXXI

‘And you, Sir Artegall, the Salvage Knight,  
 Henceforth may not disdaine that womans  
 hand  
 Hath conquered you anew in second fight:  
 For whylome they have conquerd sea and  
 land,  
 And heaven it selfe, that nought may them  
 withstand:  
 Ne henceforth be rebellious unto love,  
 That is the crowne of knighthood, and the  
 band  
 Of noble minds derived from above,  
 Which being knit with vertue, never will  
 remove.

## XXXII

‘And you, faire ladie knight, my dearest  
 dame,  
 Relent the rigour of your wrathfull will,

Whose fire were better turn’d to other  
 flame;  
 And wiping out remembrance of all ill,  
 Graunt him your grace, but so that he ful-  
 fill  
 The penance which ye shall to him em-  
 part:  
 For lovers heaven must passe by sorrowes  
 hell.’  
 Thereat full inly blushed Britomart;  
 But Artegall, close smyling, joy’d in secret  
 hart.

## XXXIII

Yet durst he not make love so suddenly,  
 Ne thinke th’ affection of her hart to  
 draw  
 From one to other so quite contrary:  
 Besides her modest countenance he saw  
 So goodly grave, and full of princely aw,  
 That it his ranging fancie did refraine,  
 And looser thoughts to lawfull bounds with-  
 draw;  
 Whereby the passion grew more fierce and  
 faine,  
 Like to a stubborne steede whom strong  
 hand would restraine.

## XXXIV

But Scudamour, whose hart twixt doubtfull  
 feare  
 And feeble hope hung all this while sus-  
 pence,  
 Desiring of his Amoret to heare  
 Some gladfull newes and sure intelligence,  
 Her thus bespake: ‘But, sir, without  
 offence  
 Mote I request you tydings of my love,  
 My Amoret, sith you her freed fro thence,  
 Where she, captived long, great woes did  
 prove;  
 That where ye left, I may her seeke, as  
 doth behove.’

## XXXV

To whom thus Britomart: ‘Certes, sir  
 knight,  
 What is of her become, or whether reft,  
 I can not unto you aread a right.  
 For from that time I from enchaunters  
 theft  
 Her freed, in which ye her all hopelesse  
 left,  
 I her preserv’d from perill and from feare,  
 And evermore from villenie her kept:

Ne ever was there wight to me more deare  
Then she, ne unto whom I more true love  
did beare.

## XXXVI

'Till on a day, as through a desert wyld  
We travelled, both wearie of the way,  
We did alight, and sate in shadow myld;  
Where fearelesse I to sleepe me downe did  
lay.

But when as I did out of sleepe abray,  
I found her not where I her left whyleare,  
But thought she wandred was, or gone  
astray.

I cal'd her loud, I sought her farre and  
neare;

But no where could her find, nor tydings of  
her heare.'

## XXXVII

When Scudamour those heavie tydings  
heard,

His hart was thrild with point of deadly  
feare;

Ne in his face or bloud or life appeard,  
But senselesse stood, like to a mazed steare  
That yet of mortall stroke the stonnd doth  
beare;

Till Glauce thus: 'Faire sir, be nought dis-  
mayd

With needelesse dread, till certaintie ye  
heare:

For yet she may be safe though somewhat  
strayd;

Its best to hope the best, though of the  
worst affrayd.'

## XXXVIII

Nathlesse he hardly of her chearefull  
speech

Did comfort take, or in his troubled sight  
Shew'd change of better cheare, so sore a  
breach

That sudden newes had made into his  
spright;

Till Britomart him fairely thus behight:

'Great cause of sorrow certes, sir, ye have:  
But comfort take: for by this heavens light  
I vow, you dead or living not to leave,  
Till I her find, and wreake on him that did  
her reave.'

## XXXIX

Therewith he rested, and well pleased was.  
So peace being confirm'd amongst them all,

They tooke their steeds, and forward thence  
did pas

Unto some resting place, which mote be-  
fall,

All being guided by Sir Artegall:

Where goodly solace was unto them made,  
And dayly feasting both in bowre and hall,  
Untill that they their wounds well healed  
had,

And wearie limmes recur'd after late usage  
bad.

## XL

In all which time, Sir Artegall made way  
Unto the love of noble Britomart,

And with meeke service and much suit did  
lay

Continuall siege unto her gentle hart:

Which being whylome launcht with lovely  
dart,

More eath was new impression to receive,  
How ever she her paynd with womanish art  
To hide her wound, that none might it per-  
ceive:

Vaine is the art that seekes it selfe for to  
deceive.

## XLI

So well he woo'd her, and so well he  
wrought her,

With faire entreatie and sweet blandish-  
ment,

That at the length unto a bay he brought her,  
So as she to his speeches was content

To lend an eare, and softly to relent.

At last, through many vowes which forth he  
pour'd,

And many othes, she yeelded her consent  
To be his love, and take him for her lord,  
Till they with mariage meet might finish  
that accord.

## XLII

Tho, when they had long time there taken  
rest,

Sir Artegall, who all this while was bound  
Upon an hard adventure yet in quest,

Fit time for him thence to depart it found,  
To follow that which he did long propound;  
And unto her his congee came to take.

But her therewith full sore displeas'd he  
found,

And loth to leave her late betrothed make,  
Her dearest love full loth so shortly to for-  
sake



## XLIII

Yet he with strong perswasions her as-  
swaged,  
And wonne her will to suffer him depart;  
For which his faith with her he fast  
engaged,  
And thousand vowes from bottoime of his  
hart,  
That all so soone as he by wit or art  
Could that atchieve, whereto he did aspire,  
He unto her would speedily revert:  
No longer space thereto he did desire,  
But till the horned moone three courses  
did expire.

## XLIV

With which she for the present was ap-  
peased,  
And yeelded leave, how ever malcontent  
She inly were, and in her mind displeased.  
So, early in the morrow next, he went  
Forth on his way, to which he was ybent;  
Ne wight him to attend, or way to guide,  
As whylome was the custome ancient  
Mongst knights, when on adventures they  
did ride,  
Save that she algates him a while accom-  
panide.

## XLV

And by the way she sundry purpose found  
Of this or that, the time for to delay,  
And of the perils whereto he was bound,  
The feare whereof seem'd much her to  
affray:  
But all she did was but to weare out day.  
Full oftentimes she leave of him did take;  
And eft againe deviz'd some what to say,  
Which she forgot, whereby excuse to make:  
So loth she was his companie for to for-  
sake.

## XLVI

At last, when all her speeches she had  
spent,  
And new occasion fayld her more to find,  
She left him to his fortunes government,  
And backe returned with right heave mind  
To Seudamour, who she had left behind:  
With whom she went to seeke faire Amo-  
ret,  
Her second care, though in another kind:  
For vertues onely sake, which doth beget  
True love and faithfull friendship, she by  
her did set.

## XLVII

Backe to that desert forrest they retyred,  
Where sorie Britomart had lost her late;  
There they her sought, and every where in-  
quired,  
Where they might tydings get of her estate:  
Yet found they none. But by what hap-  
lesse fate  
Or hard misfortune she was thence convayd,  
And stolne away from her beloved mate,  
Were long to tell; therefore I here will  
stay  
Untill another tyde, that I it finish may.

## CANTO VII

Amoret rapt by greedie Lust  
Belphebe saves from dread:  
The squire her loves, and being blam'd,  
His dayes in dole doth lead.

## I

GREAT God of Love, that with thy cruell  
darts  
Doeest conquer greatest conquerors on  
ground,  
And setst thy kingdome in the captive harts  
Of kings and keasars, to thy service bound,  
What glorie or what guerdon hast thou  
found  
In feeble ladies tyranning so sore,  
And adding anguish to the bitter wound,  
With which their lives thou lancedst long  
afore,  
By heaping stormes of trouble on them  
daily more?

## II

So whylome didst thou to faire Florimell;  
And so and so to noble Britomart:  
So doest thou now to her of whom I tell,  
The lovely Amoret, whose gentle hart  
Thou martyrest with sorow and with smart,  
In salvage forrests and in deserts wide,  
With beares and tygers taking heave part,  
Withouten comfort, and withouten guide,  
That pittie is to heare the perils which she  
tride.

## III

So soone as she with that brave Britonesse  
Had left that turneyment for beauties prise,  
They travel'd long; that now for weari-  
nesse,  
Both of the way and warlike exercise,

Both through a forest ryding did devise  
T' alight, and rest their wearie limbs  
awhile.

There heavie sleepe the eye-lids did sur-  
prise

Of Britomart, after long tedious toyle,  
That did her passed paines in quiet rest  
assoyle.

## IV

The whiles faire Amoret, of nought affeard,  
Walkt through the wood, for pleasure or  
for need;

When suddenly behind her backe she heard  
One rushing forth out of the thickest weed,  
That ere she backe could turne to taken  
heed,

Had unawares her snatched up from  
ground.

Feebly she shriekt, but so feebly indeed,  
That Britomart heard not the shrilling  
sound,

There where through weary travel she lay  
sleeping sound.

## V

It was to weete a wilde and salvage man,  
Yet was no man, but onely like in shape,  
And eke in stature higher by a span,  
All overgrowne with haire, that could  
awhape

An hardy hart, and his wide mouth did  
gape

With huge great teeth, like to a tusked  
bore:

For he liv'd all on ravin and on rape  
Of men and beasts; and fed on fleshly gore,  
The signe whereof yet stain'd his bloudy  
lips afore.

## VI

His neather lip was not like man nor beast,  
But like a wide deepe poke, downe hanging  
low,

In which he wont the relickes of his feast  
And cruell spoyle, which he had spard, to  
stow:

And over it his huge great nose did grow,  
Full dreadfully empurpled all with blood;  
And downe both sides two wide long eares  
did glow,

And raight downe to his waste, when up he  
stood,

More great then th' eares of elephants by  
Indus flood.

## VII

His wast was with a wreath of yvie greene  
Engirt about, ne other garment wore:

For all his haire was like a garment seene;  
And in his hand a tall young oake he bore,  
Whose knottie snags were sharpned all  
afore,

And beath'd in fire for steele to be in sted.  
But whence he was, or of what wombe  
ybore,

Of beasts, or of the earth, I have not red:  
But certes was with milke of wolves and  
tygres fed.

## VIII

This ugly creature in his armes her snatcht,  
And through the forrest bore her quite  
away,

With briers and bushes all to-rent and  
scratcht;

Ne care he had, ne pittie of the pray,  
Which many a knight had sought so many a  
day.

He stayed not, but in his armes her bear-  
ing

Ran, till he came to th' end of all his  
way,

Unto his eave, farre from all peoples  
hearing,

And there he threw her in, nought feeling,  
ne nought fearing.

## IX

For she, deare ladie, all the way was dead,  
Whilest he in armes her bore; but when she  
felt

Her selfe downe soust, she waked out of  
dread

Streight into griefe, that her deare hart  
nigh swelt,

And eft gan into tender teares to melt.  
Then when she lookt about, and nothing  
found

But darknesse and dread horreur, where  
she dwelt,

She almost fell againe into a swound,  
Ne wist whether above she were, or under  
ground.

## X

With that she heard some one elose by her  
side

Sighing and sobbing sore, as if the paine  
Her tender hart in peeces would divide:  
Which she long listning, softly askt againe

What mister wight it was that so did  
 plaine?  
 To whom thus aunswer'd was: 'Ah,  
 wretched wight!  
 That seekes to know anothers grieve in  
 vaine,  
 Unweeting of thine owne like haplesse  
 plight:  
 Selfe to forget to mind another, is  
 oversight.'

## XI

'Aye me!' said she, 'where am I, or with  
 whom?  
 Emong the living, or emong the dead?  
 What shall of me, unhappy maid, become?  
 Shall death be th' end, or ought else worse,  
 aread.'  
 'Unhappy mayd,' then answer'd she, 'whose  
 dread  
 Untride is lesse then when thou shalt it try:  
 Death is to him that wretched life doth  
 lead,  
 Both grace and gaine; but he in hell doth  
 lie,  
 That lives a loathed life, and wishing can-  
 not die.'

## XII

'This dismall day hath thee a caytive  
 made,  
 And vassall to the vilest wretch alive,  
 Whose cursed usage and ungodly trade  
 The heavens abhorre, and into darknesse  
 drive.  
 For on the spoile of women he doth live,  
 Whose bodies chaste, when ever in his  
 powre  
 He may them catch, unable to gainestrive,  
 He with his shamefull lust doth first de-  
 flowre,  
 And afterwards themselves doth crnelly  
 devour.'

## XIII

'Now twenty daies, by which the sonnes of  
 men  
 Divide their works, have past through  
 heven sheene,  
 Since I was brought into this dolefull den;  
 During which space these sory eies have  
 seen  
 Seaven women by him slaine, and eaten  
 elene.  
 And now no more for him but I alone,

And this old woman, here remaining beene;  
 Till thou cam'st hither to augment our  
 mone;  
 And of us three to morrow he will sure  
 eate one.'

## XIV

'Ah! dreadfull tidings which thou doest  
 declare,'  
 Quoth she, 'of all that ever hath bene  
 knowen!  
 Full many great calamities and rare  
 This feeble brest endured hath, but none  
 Equall to this, where ever I have gone.  
 But what are you, whom like unlucky lot  
 Hath linckt with me in the same chaine at-  
 tone?'  
 'To tell,' quoth she, 'that which ye see,  
 needs not;  
 A wofull wretched maid, of God and man  
 forgot.'

## XV

'But what I was it irkes me to reherse;  
 Daughter unto a lord of high degree,  
 That joyd in happy peace, till Fates per-  
 verse  
 With guilefull Love did secretly agree,  
 To overthrow my state and dignitie.  
 It was my lot to love a gentle swaine,  
 Yet was he but a squire of low degree;  
 Yet was he meet, unlesse mine eye did  
 faine,  
 By any ladies side for leman to have laine.'

## XVI

'But, for his meannesse and disparagement,  
 My sire, who me too dearely well did love,  
 Unto my choise by no meanes would assent,  
 But often did my folly fowle reprove.  
 Yet nothing could my fixed mind remove,  
 But whether willed or nilled friend or foe,  
 I me resolv'd the utmost end to prove,  
 And rather then my love abandon so,  
 Both sire, and friends, and all for ever to  
 forgo.'

## XVII

'Thenceforth I sought by secret meanes to  
 worke  
 Time to my will, and from his wrathfull  
 sight  
 To hide th' intent which in my heart did  
 lurke,  
 Till I thereto had all things ready dight.'



So on a day, unweeting unto wight,  
I with that squire agreede away to flit,  
And in a privy place, betwixt us light,  
Within a grove appointed him to meete;  
To which I boldly came upon my feeble  
feete.

## XVIII

‘But ah! unhappy houre me thither  
brought:  
For in that place where I him thought to  
find,  
There was I found, contrary to my thought,  
Of this accursed carle of hellish kind,  
The shame of men, and plague of woman-  
kind;  
Who trussing me, as eagle doth his pray,  
Me hether brought with him, as swift as  
wind,  
Where yet untouched till this present day,  
I rest his wretched thrall, the sad Æmylia.’

## XIX

‘Ah! sad Æmylia,’ then sayd Amoret,  
‘Thy ruefull plight I pittie as mine owne.  
But read to me, by what devise or wit  
Hast thou, in all this time, from him un-  
knowne  
Thine honor sav’d, though into thraldome  
throwne?’  
‘Through helpe,’ quoth she, ‘of this old  
woman here  
I have so done, as she to me hath showne:  
For ever, when he burnt in lustfull fire,  
She in my stead supplide his bestiall desire.’

## XX

Thus of their evils as they did discourse,  
And each did other much bewaile and mone,  
Loe! where the villaine selfe, their sor-  
rowes sourse,  
Came to the cave, and rolling thence the  
stone,  
Which wont to stop the mouth thereof,  
that none  
Might issue forth, came rudely rushing in,  
And spredding over all the flore alone,  
Gau dight him selfe unto his wonted sinne;  
Which ended, then his bloody banket should  
beginne.

## XXI

Which when as fearefull Amoret per-  
ceived,  
She staid not the utmost end thereof to try,

But like a ghastly gelt, whose wits are  
reaved,  
Ran forth in hast with hideous outcry,  
For horror of his shamefull villany.  
But after her full lightly he uprose,  
And her pursu’d as fast as she did flie:  
Full fast she flies, and farre afore him goës,  
Ne feeles the thorns and thickets pricke her  
tender toes.

## XXII

Nor hedge, nor ditch, nor hill, nor dale she  
staies,  
But overleapes them all, like robucke light,  
And through the thickest makes her nigh-  
est waies;  
And evermore when with regardfull sight  
She, looking backe, espies that griesly wight  
Approching nigh, she gins to mend her pace,  
And makes her feare a spur to hast her  
flight:  
More swift then Myrrh’ or Daphne in her  
race,  
Or any of the Thracian Nymphes in sal-  
vage chase.

## XXIII

Long so she fled, and so he follow’d long;  
Ne living aide for her on earth appeares,  
But if the heavens helpe to redresse her  
wrong,  
Moved with pity of her plenteous teares.  
It fortun’d, Belphebe with her peares,  
The woody nymphs, and with that lovely  
boy,  
Was hunting then the libbards and the  
beares,  
In these wild woods, as was her wonted joy,  
To banish sloth, that oft doth noble mindes  
annoy.

## XXIV

It so befell, as oft it fals in chace,  
That each of them from other sundred  
were,  
And that same gentle squire arriv’d in  
place  
Where this same cursed caytive did ap-  
peare,  
Pursuing that faire lady full of feare;  
And now he her quite overtaken had;  
And now he her away with him did beare  
Under his arme, as seeming wondrous glad,  
That by his grenning laughter mote farre  
off be rad.

## XXV

Which dreery sight the gentle squire espy-  
ing,

Doth hast to crosse him by the nearest way,  
Led with that wofull ladies piteous crying,  
And him assailes with all the might he  
may:

Yet will not he the lovely spoile downe lay,  
But with his craggy club in his right hand  
Defends him selfe, and saves his gotten  
pray.

Yet had it bene right hard him to with-  
stand,

But that he was full light and nimble on  
the land.

## XXVI

Thercto the villaine used craft in fight;  
For ever when the squire his javelin  
shooke,

He held the lady forth before him right,  
And with her body, as a buckler, broke  
The puissance of his intended stroke.  
And if it chaunst, (as needs it must in  
fight)

Whilest he on him was greedy to be wroke,  
That any little blow on her did light,  
Then would he laugh aloud, and gather  
great delight.

## XXVII

Which subtile sleight did him encumber  
much,

And made him oft, when he would strike,  
forbeare;

For hardly could he come the carle to  
touch,

But that he her must hurt, or hazard neare:  
Yet he his hand so carefully did beare,

That at the last he did himselfe attaine,  
And therein left the pike head of his speare  
A streame of coleblacke blood thence gusht  
amaïne,

That all her silken garments did with blood  
bestaine.

## XXVIII

With that he threw her rudely on the flore,  
And laying both his hands upon his glave,  
With dreadfull strokes let drive at him so  
sore,

That forst him flie abacke, himselfe to save:  
Yet he therewith so felly still did rave,  
That scarce the squire his hand could once  
upreare,

But, for advantage, ground unto him gave,  
Tracing and traversing, now here, now there;  
For bootlesse thing it was to think such  
blowes to beare.

## XXIX

Whilest thus in battell they embusied were,  
Belphebe, rauning in that forrest wide,  
The hideous noise of their huge strokes did  
heare,

And drew thereto, making her eare her  
guide.

Whom when that theefe approching nigh  
espide,

With bow in hand, and arrowes ready bent,  
He by his former combate would not bide,  
But fled away with ghastly dreriment,  
Well knowing her to be his deaths sole in-  
strument.

## XXX

Whom seeing flie, she speedily poursewed  
With winged feete, as nimble as the winde,  
And ever in her bow she ready shewed  
The arrow to his deadly marke desynde:

As when Latonaes daughter, cruell kynde,  
In vengeance of her mothers great dis-  
grace,

With fell despight her cruell arrowes tynde  
Gainst wofull Niobes unhappy race,  
That all the gods did mone her miserable  
case.

## XXXI

So well she sped her and so far she ventred,  
That ere unto his hellish den he raught,  
Even as he ready was there to have entred,  
She sent an arrow forth: with mighty  
draught,

That in the very dore him overcaught,  
And in his nape arriving, through it thrild  
His greedy throte, therewith in two dis-  
traught,

That all his vitall spirites thereby spild,  
And all his hairy brest with gory blood  
was fild.

## XXXII

Whom when on ground she groveling saw  
to rowle,

She ran in hast his life to have bereft:

But ere she could him reach, the sinfull  
sowle,

Having his carrion corse quite sencelesse  
left,

Was fled to hell, surcharg'd with spoile and theft.

Yet over him she there long gazing stood,  
And oft admir'd his monstrous shiape, and oft

His mighty limbs, whilst all with filthy blood

The place there overflowne seemd like a sodaine flood.

## XXXIII

Thenceforth she past into his dreadfull den,  
Where nought but darkesome drerinesse she found,

Ne creature saw, but hearkned now and then

Some litle whispering, and soft groning sound.

With that she askt, what ghosts there under ground

Lay hid in horror of eternall night;  
And bad them, if so be they were not bound,

To come and shew themselves before the light,

Now freed from feare and danger of that dismall wight.

## XXXIV

Then forth the sad Æmylia issewed,  
Yet trembling every joynt through former feare;

And after her the hag, there with her mewed,

A foule and lothsome creature, did appeare;

A leman fit for such a lover deare:  
That mov'd Belphebe her no lesse to hate,  
Then for to rue the others heavy cheare;  
Of whom she gan enquire of her estate:  
Who all to her at large, as hapned, did relate.

## XXXV

Thence she them brought toward the place where late

She left the gentle squire with Amoret:  
There she him found by that new lovely mate,

Who lay the whiles in swoune, full sadly set,

From her faire eyes wiping the dewy wet,

Which softly stild, and kissing them atweene,

And handling soft the hurts which she did get:

For of that carle she sorely bruz'd had beene,

Als of his owne rash hand one wound was to be seene.

## XXXVI

Which when she saw, with sodaine glauncing eye,

Her noble heart with sight thereof was filld  
With deepe disdaine, and great indignity,  
That in her wrath she thought them both have thrild

With that selfe arrow which the carle had kild:

Yet held her wrathfull hand from vengeance sore,

But drawing nigh, ere he her well beheld,  
'Is this the faith?' she said, — and said no more,

But turnd her face, and fled away for evermore.

## XXXVII

He, seeing her depart, arose up light,  
Right sore agrieved at her sharpe reproofe,  
And follow'd fast: but when he came in sight,

He durst not nigh approach, but kept aloofe,  
For dread of her displeasures utmost proofe.  
And evermore, when he did grace entreat,  
And framed speaches fit for his behoofe,  
Her mortall arrowes she at him did threat,  
And forst him backe with fowle dishonor to retreat.

## XXXVIII

At last, when long he follow'd had in vaine,  
Yet found no ease of griefe, nor hope of grace,

Unto those woods he turned backe againe,  
Full of sad anguish and in heavy case:

And finding there fit solitary place  
For wofull wight, chose out a gloomy glade,

Where hardly eye mote see bright heavens face,

For mossy trees, which covered all with shade

And sad melancholy: there he his cabin made.

## XXXIX

His wonted warlike weapons all he broke,  
And threw away, with vow to use no more,



Ne thenceforth ever strike in battell stroke,  
 Ne ever word to speake to woman more;  
 But in that wilderness, of men forlore,  
 And of the wicked world forgotten quight,  
 His hard mishap in dolor to deplore,  
 And wast his wretched daies in wofull  
 plight;  
 So on him selfe to wreake his follies owne  
 despight.

## XL

And eke his gariment, to be thereto meet,  
 He wilfully did cut and shape anew;  
 And his faire lockes, that wont with oint-  
 ment sweet  
 To be embaulm'd, and sweat out dainty dew,  
 He let to grow and griesly to concrew,  
 Uncomb'd, uncurl'd, and carelesly unshed;  
 That in short time his face they overgrew,  
 And over all his shoulders did dispred,  
 That who he whilome was, uneath was to  
 be red.

## XLI

There he continued in this carefull plight,  
 Wretchedly wearing out his youthly yeares,  
 Through wilfull penury consumed quight,  
 That like a pined ghost he soone appeares.  
 For other food then that wilde forrest  
 beares,  
 Ne other drinke there did he ever tast,  
 Then running water, tempred with his  
 teares,  
 The more his weakened body so to wast:  
 That out of all mens knowledge he was  
 worne at last.

## XLII

For on a day, by fortune as it fell,  
 His owne deare lord, Prince Arthure, came  
 that way,  
 Seeking adventures, where he mote heare  
 tell;  
 And as he through the wandring wood did  
 stray,  
 Having espide this cabin far away,  
 He to it drew, to weet who there did wonne;  
 Weening therein some holy hermit lay,  
 That did resort of sinfull people shonne;  
 Or else some woodman shrowded there  
 from scorching sunne.

## XLIII

Arriving there, he found this wretched man,  
 Spending his daies in dolour and despaire,

And through long fasting woxen pale and  
 wan,  
 All overgrown with rude and rugged haire;  
 That albeit his owne deare squire he were,  
 Yet he him knew not, ne aviz'd at all,  
 But like strange wight, whom he had  
 seene no where,  
 Saluting him, gan into speach to fall,  
 And pittie much his plight, that liv'd like  
 outcast thrall.

## XLIV

But to his speach he aunswered no whit,  
 But stood still mute, as if he had beene  
 dum,  
 Ne signe of sence did shew, ne common  
 wit,  
 As one with griefe and anguishe overcum,  
 And unto every thing did aunswere mum:  
 And ever when the Prince unto him spake,  
 He louted lowly, as did him becum,  
 And humble homage did unto him make,  
 Midst sorrow shewing joyous semblance  
 for his sake.

## XLV

At which his uncouth guise and usage  
 quaint  
 The Prince did wonder much, yet could  
 not ghesse  
 The cause of that his sorrowfull constraint;  
 Yet weend by secret signes of manlinesse,  
 Which close appeared in that rude brutish-  
 nesse,  
 That he whilome some gentle swaine had  
 beene,  
 Traind up in feats of armes and knightli-  
 nesse;  
 Which he observ'd, by that he him had  
 seene  
 To weld his naked sword, and try the  
 edges keene;

## XLVI

And eke by that he saw on every tree  
 How he the name of one engraven had,  
 Which likly was his liefest love to be,  
 For whom he now so sorely was bestad;  
 Which was by him Belphebe rightly rad.  
 Yet who was that Belphebe he ne wist;  
 Yet saw he often how he waxed glad,  
 When he it heard, and how the ground he  
 kist,  
 Wherein it written was, and how himselfe  
 he blist.

## XLVII

Tho, when he long had marked his demeanor,  
 And saw that all he said and did was vaine,  
 Ne ought mote make him change his wonted tenor,  
 Ne ought mote ease or mitigate his paine,  
 He left him there in languor to remaine,  
 Till time for him should remedy provide,  
 And him restore to former grace againe.  
 Which for it is too long here to abide,  
 I will deferre the end untill another tide.

## CANTO VIII

The gentle squire recovers grace :  
 Sclaunder her guests doth staine :  
 Corflambo chaseth Placidus,  
 And is by Arthure slaine.

## I

WELL said the wiseman, now prov'd true  
 by this,  
 Which to this gentle squire did happen late,  
 That the displeasure of the mighty is  
 Then death it selfe more dread and deperate.  
 For naught the same may calme ne mitigate,  
 Till time the tempest doe thereof delay  
 With sufferance soft, which rigour can abate,  
 And have the sterne remembrance wypt away  
 Of bitter thoughts, which deepe therein in-fixed lay.

## II

Like as it fell to this unhappy boy,  
 Whose tender heart the faire Belphebe had  
 With one sterne looke so daunted, that no joy  
 In all his life, which afterwards he lad,  
 He ever tasted; but with penance sad  
 And pensive sorrow pind and wore away,  
 Ne ever laught, ne once shew'd countenance glad;  
 But alwaies wept and wailed night and day,  
 As blasted bloosme through heat doth languish and decay.

## III

Till on a day, as in his wonted wise  
 His doole he made, there chaunst a turtle dove

To come where he his dolours did devise,  
 That likewise late had lost her dearest love,  
 Which losse her made like passion also prove.

Who seeing his sad plight, her tender heart  
 With deare compassion deeply did emmove,  
 That she gan mone his undeserved smart,  
 And with her dolefull accent beare with him a part.

## IV

Shee sitting by him, as on ground he lay,  
 Her mournfull notes full piteously did frame,  
 And thereof made a lamentable lay,  
 So sensibly compyl'd, that in the same  
 Him seemed oft he heard his owne right name.  
 With that he forth would poure so plentiful  
 teares,  
 And beat his breast unworthy of such blame,  
 And knocke his head, and rend his rugged heares,  
 That could have perst the hearts of tiges  
 and of beares.

## V

Thus, long this gentle bird to him did use  
 Withouten dread of perill to repaire  
 Unto his wonne, and with her mournfull muse  
 Him to recomfort in his greatest care,  
 That much did ease his mourning and misfare:  
 And every day, for guerdon of her song,  
 He part of his small feast to her would share;  
 That, at the last, of all his woe and wrong  
 Companion she became, and so continued long.

## VI

Upon a day, as she him sate beside,  
 By chance he certaine miniments forth drew,  
 Which yet with him as relickes did abide  
 Of all the bounty which Belphebe threw  
 On him, whilst goodly grace she did him shew:  
 Amongst the rest a jewell rich he found,  
 That was a ruby of right perfect hew,  
 Shap'd like a heart yet bleeding of the wound,  
 And with a litle golden chaine about it bound.

## VII

The same he tooke, and with a riband new,  
 In which his ladies colours were, did bind  
 About the turtles necke, that with the vew  
 Did greatly solace his engrieved mind.  
 All unawares the bird, when she did find  
 Her selfe so deckt, her nimble wings dis-  
 plaid,  
 And flew away, as lightly as the wind:  
 Which sodaine accident him much dismaid,  
 And looking after long, did marke which  
 way she straid.

## VIII

But when as long he looked had in vaine,  
 Yet saw her forward still to make her flight,  
 His weary eie returnd to him againe,  
 Full of discomfort and disquiet plight,  
 That both his juell he had lost so light,  
 And eke his deare companion of his care.  
 But that sweet bird departing flew forth  
 right  
 Through the wide region of the wastfull  
 aire,  
 Untill she came where womned his Belphebe  
 faire.

## IX

There found she her (as then it did betide)  
 Sitting in covert shade of arbors sweet,  
 After late weary toile, which she had tride  
 In salvage chase, to rest as seem'd her  
 meet.  
 There she alighting, fell before her feet,  
 And gan to her her mournfull plaint to  
 make,  
 As was her wont, thinking to let her weet  
 The great tormenting grieve that for her  
 sake  
 Her gentle squire through her displeasure  
 did pertake.

## X

She her beholding with attentive eye,  
 At length did marke about her purple brest  
 That precious juell, which she formerly  
 Had knowne right well, with colourd rib-  
 bands drest:  
 Therewith she rose in hast, and her adrest  
 With ready hand it to have reft away:  
 But the swift bird obeyd not her behest,  
 But swarv'd aside, and there againe did  
 stay;  
 She follow'd her, and thought againe it to  
 assay.

## XI

And ever when she nigh approcht, the dove  
 Would flit a litle forward, and then stay,  
 Till she drew neare, and then againe re-  
 move;  
 So tempting her still to pursue the pray,  
 And still from her escaping soft away:  
 Till that at length into that forrest wide  
 She drew her far, and led with slow delay.  
 In th' end she her unto that place did guide,  
 Whereas that wofull man in languor did  
 abide.

## XII

Eftsoones she flew unto his fearelesse hand,  
 And there a piteous ditty new deviz'd,  
 As if she would have made her understand  
 His sorrowes cause, to be of her despis'd.  
 Whom when she saw in wretched weedes  
 disguiz'd,  
 With heary glib deform'd, and meiger face,  
 Like ghost late risen from his grave  
 agryz'd,  
 She knew him not, but pittied much his  
 ease,  
 And wisht it werc in her to doe him any  
 grace.

## XIII

He her beholding, at her feet downe fell,  
 And kist the ground on which her sole did  
 tread,  
 And washt the same with water, which did  
 well  
 From his moist eies, and like two streames  
 proceed;  
 Yet spake no word whereby she might  
 aread  
 What mister wight he was, or what he  
 ment;  
 But as one daunted with her presence  
 dread,  
 Onely few ruefull lookes unto her sent,  
 As messengers of his true meaning and in-  
 tent.

## XIV

Yet nathemore his meaning she ared,  
 But wondred much at his so selcouth case,  
 And by his persons secret seemlyhed  
 Well weend that he had beene some man  
 of place,  
 Before misfortune did his hew deface:  
 That, being mov'd with ruth, she thus be-  
 spake:



'Ah, wofull man! what Heavens hard disgrace,  
Or wrath of cruell wight on thee ywrake,  
Or selfe disliked life, doth thee thus  
wretched make?

## XV

'If Heaven, then none may it redresse or  
blame,  
Sith to his powre we all are subject borne;  
If wrathfull wight, then fowle rebuke and  
shame  
Be theirs, that have so cruell thee forlorne;  
But if through inward grieve or wilfull  
scorne  
Of life it be, then better doe advise;  
For he whose daies in wilfull woe are  
worne,  
The grace of his Creator doth despise,  
That will not use his gifts for thanklesse  
nigardise.'

## XVI

When so he heard her say, eftsoones he  
brake  
His sodaine silence, which he long had pent,  
And sighing inly deepe, her thus bespake:  
'Then have they all themselves against me  
bent:  
For Heaven, first author of my languish-  
ment,  
Envyng my too great felicity,  
Did closely with a cruell one consent  
To cloud my daies in dolefull misery,  
And make me loath this life, still longing  
for to die.

## XVII

'Ne any but your selfe, O dearest dred,  
Hath done this wrong, to wreake on  
worthlesse wight  
Your high displeasure, through misdeeming  
bred:  
That, when your pleasure is to deeme aright,  
Ye may redresse, and me restore to light.'  
Which sory words her mightie hart did  
mate  
With mild regard, to see his ruefull plight,  
That her inburning wrath she gan abate,  
And him receiv'd againe to former favours  
state.

## XVIII

In which he long time afterwards did lead  
An happie life with grace and good accord,

Fearlesse of fortunes chaunge or envies  
dread,  
And eke all mindlesse of his owne deare  
lord,  
The noble Prince, who never heard one  
word  
Of tydings, what did unto him betide,  
Or what good fortune did to him afford,  
But through the endlesse world did wander  
wide,  
Him seeking evermore, yet no where him  
descride.

## XIX

Till on a day, as through that wood he  
rode,  
He channst to come where those two ladies  
late,  
Æmylia and Amoret, abode,  
Both in full sad and sorrowfull estate;  
The one right feeble through the evill rate  
Of food, which in her dresse she had  
found:  
The other almost dead and desperate  
Through her late hurts, and through that  
haplesse wound  
With which the squire in her defence her  
sore astound.

## XX

Whom when the Prince beheld, he gan to  
rew  
The evill case in which those ladies lay;  
But most was moved at the piteous vew,  
Of Amoret, so neare unto decay,  
That her great daunger did him much  
dismay.  
Eftsoones that pretious liquour forth he  
drew,  
Which he in store about him kept alway,  
And with few drops thereof did softly dew  
Her wounds, that unto strength restor'd her  
soone anew.

## XXI

Tho, when they both recovered were right  
well,  
He gan of them inquire, what evill guide  
Them thether brought, and how their  
harmes befell.  
To whom they told all that did them be-  
tide,  
And how from thraldome vile they were  
untide  
Of that same wicked carle, by virgins hond;

Whose bloudie corse they shew'd him there  
beside,  
And eke his cave, in which they both were  
bond:  
At which he wondred much, when all those  
signes he fond.

## XXII

And evermore he greatly did desire  
To know, what virgin did them thence  
unbind;  
And oft of them did earnestly inquire,  
Where was her won, and how he mote her  
find.  
But when as nought according to his mind  
He could outlearne, he them from ground  
did reare,  
(No service lothsome to a gentle kind)  
And on his warlike beast them both did beare,  
Himselfe by them on foot, to succour them  
from feare.

## XXIII

So when that forrest they had passed well,  
A litle cotage farre away they spide,  
To which they drew, ere night upon them  
fell;  
And entring in, found none therein abide,  
But one old woman sitting there beside,  
Upon the ground, in ragged rude attyre,  
With filthy lockes about her scattered wide,  
Gnawing her nayles for felnesse and for yre,  
And there out sucking venime to her parts  
entyre.

## XXIV

A foule and loathly creature sure in sight,  
And in conditions to be loath'd no lesse:  
For she was stufft with rancour and despyght  
Up to the throat; that oft with bitternesse  
It forth would breake, and gush in great  
excesse,  
Pouring out streames of poyson and of gall  
Gainst all that truth or vertue doe professe;  
Whom she with leasings lewdly did miscall,  
And wickedly backbite: her name men  
Sclaunder call.

## XXV

Her nature is, all goodnesse to abuse,  
And causelesse crimes continually to frame,  
With which she guiltlesse persons may ac-  
cuse,  
And steale away the crowne of their good  
name;

Ne ever knight so bold, ne ever dame  
So chaste and loyall liv'd, but she would  
strive  
With forged cause them falsely to defame;  
Ne ever thing so well was doen alive,  
But she with blame would blot, and of due  
praise deprive.

## XXVI

Her words were not, as common words are  
ment,  
T' expresse the meaning of the inward  
mind,  
But noysome breath, and poysnous spirit  
sent  
From inward parts, with cancred malice  
lind,  
And breathed forth with blast of bitter  
wind;  
Which passing through the eares would  
pierce the hart,  
And wound the soule it selfe with grieve  
unkind:  
For like the stings of aspes, that kill with  
smart,  
Her spitefull words did pricke and wound  
the inner part.

## XXVII

Such was that hag, unmeet to host such  
guests,  
Whom greatest princes court would wel-  
come fayne;  
But neede, that answers not to all requests,  
Bad them not looke for better entertayne;  
And eke that age despyd nicenesse vaine,  
Enur'd to hardnesse and to homely fare,  
Which them to warlike discipline did  
trayne,  
And manly limbs endur'd with litle care  
Against all hard mishaps and fortunelesse  
misfare.

## XXVIII

Then all that evening, welcommed with  
cold  
And chearelesse hunger, they together  
spent;  
Yet found no fault, but that the hag did  
scold  
And rayle at them with grudgefull discon-  
tent,  
For lodging there without her owne con-  
sent:  
Yet they endured all with patience milde,

And unto rest themselves all onely lent;  
 Regardlesse, of that queane so base and  
 vilde  
 To be unjustly blamd, and bitterly revilde.

## XXIX

Here well I weene, when as these rimes be  
 red  
 With misregard, that some rash witted  
 wight,  
 Whose looser thought will lightly be mis-  
 led,  
 These gentle ladies will misdeeme too light,  
 For thus conversing with this noble knight;  
 Sith now of dayes such temperance is rare  
 And hard to finde, that heat of youthfull  
 spright  
 For ought will from his greedie pleasure  
 spare:  
 More hard for hungry steed t' abstaine  
 from pleasant lare.

## XXX

But antique age, yet in the infancie  
 Of time, did live then like an innocent,  
 In simple truth and blamelesse chastitie,  
 Ne then of guile had made experiment,  
 But voide of vile and treacherous intent,  
 Held vertue for it selfe in soveraine awe:  
 Then loyall love had royall regiment,  
 And each unto his lust did make a lawe,  
 From all forbidden things his liking to with-  
 draw.

## XXXI

The lyon there did with the lambe consort,  
 And eke the dove sate by the faulcons side,  
 Ne each of other feared fraud or tort,  
 But did in safe securitie abide,  
 Withouten perill of the stronger pride:  
 But when the world woxe old, it woxe  
 warre old  
 (Whereof it hight) and having shortly tride  
 The traines of wit, in wickednesse woxe  
 bold,  
 And dared of all sinnes the secrets to un-  
 fold.

## XXXII

Then beautie, which was made to repre-  
 sent  
 The great Creatours owne resemblance  
 bright,  
 Unto abuse of lawlesse lust was lent,  
 And made the baite of bestiall delight:

Then faire grew foule, and foule grew faire  
 in sight,  
 And that which wont to vanquish God and  
 man  
 Was made the vassall of the victors might;  
 Then did her glorious flowre wex dead and  
 wan,  
 Despid and troden downe of all that over-  
 ran.

## XXXIII

And now it is so utterly decayd,  
 That any bud thereof doth scarce remaine,  
 But if few plants, preserv'd through heav-  
 enly ayd,  
 In princes court doe hap to sprout againe,  
 Dew'd with her drops of bountie soveraine,  
 Which from that goodly glorious flowre  
 proceed,  
 Sprung of the auncient stocke of princes  
 straine,  
 Now th' onely remnant of that royall breed,  
 Whose noble kind at first was sure of heav-  
 enly seed.

## XXXIV

Tho, soone as day discovered heavens face  
 To sinfull men with darknes overdight,  
 This gentle crew gan from their eye-lids  
 chace  
 The drowzie humour of the dampish night,  
 And did themselves unto their journey dight.  
 So forth they yode, and forward softly  
 paced,  
 That them to view had bene an uncouth  
 sight,  
 How all the way the Prince on footpace  
 traced,  
 The ladies both on horse, together fast em-  
 braced.

## XXXV

Soone as they thence departed were afore,  
 That shamefull hag, the slaunder of her sexe,  
 Them follow'd fast, and them reviled sore,  
 Him calling theefe, them whores; that much  
 did vexe  
 His noble hart: thereto she did annexe  
 False crimes and facts, such as they never  
 ment,  
 That those two ladies much asham'd did  
 wexe:  
 The more did she pursue her lewd intent,  
 And rayl'd and rag'd, till she had all her  
 poyson spent.



## XXXVI

At last, when they were passed out of sight,  
 Yet she did not her spightfull speach for-  
 beare,  
 But after them did barke, and still back-  
 bite,  
 Though there were none her hatefull words  
 to heare:  
 Like as a curre doth felly bite and teare  
 The stoue which passed straunger at him  
 threw;  
 So she them seeing past the reach of eare,  
 Against the stones and trees did rayle  
 anew,  
 Till she had duld the sting which in her  
 tongs end grew.

## XXXVII

They, passing forth, kept on their readie  
 way,  
 With easie steps so soft as foot could stryde,  
 Both for great feeblesse, which did oft as-  
 say  
 Faire Amoret, that scarcely she could ryde,  
 And eke through heauey armes, which sore  
 annoyd  
 The Prince on foot, not wonted so to fare;  
 Whose steadie hand was faine his steede to  
 guyde,  
 And all the way from trotting hard to  
 spare;  
 So was his toyle the more, the more that  
 was his care.

## XXXVIII

At length they spide where towards them  
 with speed  
 A squire came gallopping, as he would flie,  
 Bearing a litle dwarfe before his steed,  
 That all the way full loud for aide did crie,  
 That seem'd his shrikes would rend the  
 brasen skie:  
 Whom after did a nightie man pursew,  
 Ryding upon a dromedare on hie,  
 Of stature huge, and horrible of hew,  
 That would have maz'd a man his dreadfull  
 face to vew.

## XXXIX

For from his fearefull eyes two fierie  
 beames,  
 More sharpe then points of needles, did  
 proceede,  
 Shooting forth farre away two flaming  
 streames,

Full of sad powre, that poysonous bale did  
 breede  
 To all that on him lookt without good  
 heed,  
 And secretly his enemies did slay:  
 Like as the basiliske, of serpents seede,  
 From powrefull eyes close venom doth con-  
 vay  
 Into the lookers hart, and killeth farre away.

## XL

He all the way did rage at that same squire,  
 And after him full many threatnings threw,  
 With curses vaine in his avengefull ire:  
 But none of them (so fast away he flew)  
 Him overtooke before he came in vew.  
 Where when he saw the Prince in armour  
 bright,  
 He cald to him aloud, his case to rew,  
 And rescue him through succour of his  
 might,  
 From that his cruell foe, that him pursewd  
 in sight.

## XLI

Eftsoones the Prince tooke downe those  
 ladies twaine  
 From loftie steede, and mounting in their  
 stead,  
 Came to that squire, yet trembling every  
 vaine:  
 Of whom he gan enquire his cause of dread:  
 Who as he gan the same to him aread,  
 Loe! hard behind his backe his foe was  
 prest,  
 With dreadfull weapon aymed at his head,  
 That unto death had doen him unredrest,  
 Had not the noble Prince his readie stroke  
 repress.

## XLII

Who, thrusting boldly twixt him and the  
 blow,  
 The burden of the deadly brunt did beare  
 Upon his shield, which lightly he did throw  
 Over his head, before the harme came  
 neare.  
 Nathlesse it fell with so despiteous dreare  
 And heauey sway, that hard unto his crowne  
 The shield it drove, and did the covering  
 reare:  
 Therewith both squire and dwarfe did  
 tumble downe  
 Unto the earth, and lay long while in  
 senselesse swowne.

## XLIII

Whereat the Prince full wrath, his strong  
right hand  
In full avengement heaved up on hie,  
And stroke the Pagan with his steely brand  
So sore, that to his saddle bow thereby  
He bowed low, and so a while did lie:  
And sure, had not his massie yron mace  
Betwixt him and his hurt bene happily,  
It would have cleft him to the girding place;  
Yet, as it was, it did astonish him long  
space.

## XLIV

But when he to himselfe returnd againe,  
All full of rage he gan to curse and sweare,  
And vow by Mahoune that he should be  
slaine.  
With that his murderous mace he up did  
reare,  
That seemed nought the souse thereof  
could beare,  
And therewith smote at him with all his  
might.  
But ere that it to him approched neare,  
The royall child, with readie quicke fore-  
sight,  
Did shun the prooffe thereof and it avoyded  
light.

## XLV

But ere his hand he could recure againe,  
To ward his bodie from the balefull stound,  
He smote at him with all his might and  
maine,  
So furiously, that, ere he wist, he found  
His head before him tombling on the  
ground.  
The whiles his babling tongue did yet blas-  
pheme  
And curse his god, that did him so con-  
found;  
The whiles his life ran foorth in bloudie  
streame,  
His soule descended downe into the Stygian  
reame.

## XLVI

Which when that squire beheld, he woxe  
full glad  
To see his foe breath out his spright in  
vaine:  
But that same dwarfe right sorie seem'd  
and sad,  
And howld aloud to see his lord there slaine,

And rent his haire and scratcht his face  
for paine.

Then gan the Prince at leasure to inquire  
Of all the accident, there hapned plaine,  
And what he was, whose eyes did flame with  
fire;

All which was, thus to him declared by that  
squire.

## XLVII

‘This mightie man,’ quoth he, ‘whom you  
have slaine,  
Of an huge geauntesse whylome was bred;  
And by his strength rule to himselfe did  
gaine  
Of many nations into thraldome led,  
And mightie kingdomes of his force adred;  
Whom yet he conquer’d not by bloudie  
fight,  
Ne hostes of men with banners brode dis-  
spread,  
But by the powre of his infectious sight,  
With which he killed all that came within  
his might.

## XLVIII

‘Ne was he ever vanquished afore,  
But ever vanquisht all with whom he  
fought;  
Ne was there man so strong, but he downe  
bore,  
Ne woman yet so faire, but he her brought  
Unto his bay, and captived her thought.  
For most of strength and beantie his de-  
sire  
Was spoyle to make, and wast them unto  
nought,  
By casting secret flakes of lustfull fire  
From his false eyes, into their harts and  
parts entire.

## XLIX

‘Therefore Corflambo was he cald aright,  
Though namelesse there his bodie now doth  
lie;  
Yet hath he left one daughter that is  
hight  
The faire Peana; who seemes outwardly  
So faire as ever yet saw living eie:  
And were her vertue like her beantie  
bright,  
She were as faire as any under skie.  
But ah! she given is to vaine delight,  
And eke too loose of life, and eke of love  
too light.

## L

‘So as it fell, there was a gentle squire,  
That lov’d a ladie of high parentage;  
But for his meane degree might not aspire  
To match so high, her friends with counsell  
sage  
Dissuaded her from such a disparage.  
But she, whose hart to love was wholly  
lent,  
Out of his hands could not redeeme her  
gage,  
But firmly following her first intent,  
Resolv’d with him to wend, gainst all her  
friends consent.

## LI

‘So twixt themselves they pointed time and  
place,  
To which when he according did repaire,  
An hard mishap and disaventrous case  
Him chaunst; in stead of his Æmylia faire,  
This gyants sonne, that lies there on the  
laire  
An headlesse heape, him unawares there  
caught,  
And, all dismayd through mercillesse de-  
spaire,  
Him wretched thrall unto his dongeon  
brought,  
Where he remaines, of all unsuccour’d and  
unsought.

## LII

‘This gyants daughter came upon a day  
Unto the prison in her joyous glee,  
To view the thralls which there in bondage  
lay:  
Amongst the rest she chaunced there to see  
This lovely swaine, the squire of low de-  
gree;  
To whom she did her liking lightly cast,  
And wooed him her paramour to bee:  
From day to day she woo’d and prayd him  
fast,  
And for his love him promist libertie at last.

## LIII

‘He, though affide unto a former love,  
To whom his faith he firmly ment to hold,  
Yet seeing not how thence he mote remove,  
But by that meanes which fortune did un-  
fold,  
Her graunted love, but with affection cold,  
To win her grace his libertie to get.  
Yet she him still detaines in captive hold,

Fearing least, if she should him freely set,  
He would her shortly leave, and former  
love forget.

## LIV

‘Yet so much favour she to him hath hight  
Above the rest, that he sometimes may  
space  
And walke about her gardens of delight,  
Having a keeper still with him in place;  
Which keeper is this dwarfe, her dearling  
base,  
To whom the keyes of every prison dore  
By her committed be, of speciall grace,  
And at his will may whom he list restore,  
And whom he list reserve, to be afflicted  
more.

## LV

‘Whereof when tydings came unto mine  
eare,  
Full inly sorie, for the fervent zeale  
Which I to him as to my soule did beare,  
I thether went; where I did long conceale  
My selfe, till that the dwarfe did me re-  
veale,  
And told his dame her squire of low de-  
gree  
Did secretly out of her prison steale;  
For me he did mistake that squire to bee;  
For never two so like did living creature  
see.

## LVI

‘Then was I taken and before her brought:  
Who, through the likenesse of my outward  
hew,  
Being likewise beguiled in her thought,  
Gan blame me much for being so untrew,  
To seeke by flight her fellowship t’eschew,  
That lov’d me deare, as dearest thing alive.  
Thence she commaunded me to prison new;  
Whereof I glad did not gainsay nor strive,  
But suffred that same dwarfe me to her  
dongeon drive.

## LVII

‘There did I finde mine onely faithfull  
frend  
In heavy plight and sad perplexitie;  
Whereof I sorie, yet my selfe did bend  
Him to recomfort with my companie.  
But him the more agreev’d I found thereby.  
For all his joy, he said, in that distresse,  
Was mine and his Æmylias libertie.



Æmylia well he lov'd, as I mote ghesse;  
Yet greater love to me then her he did  
professe.

## LVIII

'But I with better reason him aviz'd,  
And shew'd him how, through error and  
mis-thought  
Of our like persons, eath to be disguiz'd,  
Or his exchange or freedome might be  
wrought.  
Whereto full loth was he, ne would for  
ought  
Consent that I, who stood all fearelesse  
free,  
Should wilfully be into thraldome brought,  
Till Fortune did perforce it so decree.  
Yet, overrul'd at last, he did to me agree.

## LIX

'The morrow next, about the wonted  
howre,  
The dwarfe cald at the doore of Amyas,  
To come forthwith unto his ladies bowre.  
In steed of whom forth came I, Placidas,  
And undiscerned forth with him did pas.  
There with great joyance and with glad-  
some glee  
Of faire Pœana I received was,  
And oft imbrast, as if that I were hee,  
And with kind words accoyd, vowing great  
love to mee.

## LX

'Which I, that was not bent to former love,  
As was my friend, that had her long refusd,  
Did well accept, as well it did behove,  
And to the present neede it wisely usd.  
My former hardnesse first I faire excusd;  
And after promist large amends to make.  
With such smooth termes her error I  
abusd,  
To my friends good more then for mine  
owne sake,  
For whose sole libertie I love and life did  
stake.

## LXI

'Thenceforth I found more favour at her  
hand,  
That to her dwarfe, which had me in his  
charge,  
She bad to lighten my too heavie band,  
And graunt more scope to me to walke at  
large.

So on a day, as by the flowrie marge  
Of a fresh streame I with that elfe did  
play,  
Finding no meanes how I might us enlarge,  
But if that dwarfe I could with me con-  
vay,  
I lightly snatcht him up, and with me bore  
away.

## LXII

'Thereat he shriekt aloud, that with his  
cry  
The tyrant selfe came forth with yelling  
bray,  
And me pursew'd; but nathemore would I  
Forgoe the purchase of my gotten pray,  
But have perforce him hether brought  
away.'  
Thus as they talked, loe! where nigh at  
hand  
Those ladies two, yet doubtfull through dis-  
may,  
In presence came, desirous t' understand  
Tydings of all which there had hapned on  
the land.

## LXIII

Where soone as sad Æmylia did espie  
Her captive lovers friend, young Placidas,  
All mindlesse of her wonted modestie,  
She to him ran, and him with streight em-  
bras  
Enfolding said: 'And lives yet Amyas?'  
'He lives,' quoth he, 'and his Æmylia  
loves.'  
'Then lesse,' said she, 'by all the woe I  
pas,  
With which my weaker patience Fortune  
proves.  
But what mishap thus long him fro my  
selfe removes?'

## LXIV

Then gan he all this storie to renew,  
And tell the course of his captivite;  
That her deare hart full deeply made to  
rew,  
And sigh full sore, to heare the miserie,  
In which so long he mercillesse did lie.  
Then, after many teares and sorrowes  
spent,  
She deare besought the Prince of remedie:  
Who thereto did with readie will consent,  
And well perform'd, as shall appeare by  
his event.

## CANTO IX

The squire of low degree, releast,  
 Pœana takes to wife:  
 Britomart fightes with many knights;  
 Prince Arthur stints their strife.

## I

HARD is the doubt, and difficult to deeme,  
 When all three kinds of love together meet,  
 And doe dispart the hart with powre extreme,

Whether shall weigh the balance downe;  
 to weet,

The deare affection unto kindred sweet,  
 Or raging fire of love to woman kind,  
 Or zeale of friends combynd with vertues meet.

But of them all, the band of vertuous mind,  
 Me seemes, the gentle hart should most assured bind.

## II

For naturall affection soone doth cesse,  
 And quenched is with Cupids greater flame:  
 But faithfull friendship doth them both suppress,

And them with maystring discipline doth tame,

Through thoughts aspyring to eternall fame.  
 For as the soule doth rule the earthly masse,  
 And all the service of the bodie frame,  
 So love of soule doth love of bodie passe,  
 No lesse then perfect gold surmounts the meanest brasse.

## III

All which who list by tryall to assay,  
 Shall in this storie find approved plaine;  
 In which these squires true friendship more did sway,

Then either care of parents could refraine,  
 Or love of fairest ladie could constraine.  
 For though Pœana were as faire as morne,  
 Yet did this trustie squire with proud disdain

For his friends sake her offred favours scorne,

And she her selfe her syre, of whom she was yborne.

## IV

Now after that Prince Arthur graunted had

To yeeld strong succour to that gentle swayne,

Who now long time had lyen in prison sad,

He gan advise how best he mote darrayne  
 That enterprize, for greatest glories gayne.  
 That headlesse tyrants tronke he reard from ground,

And having ympt the head to it agayne,  
 Upon his usuall beast it firmly bound,  
 And made it so to ride as it alive was found.

## V

Then did he take that chaced squire, and layd

Before the ryder, as he captive were,  
 And made his dwarfe, though with unwilling ayd,

To guide the beast that did his maister beare,

Till to his castle they approched neare.

Whom when the watch, that kept continuall ward,

Saw comming home, all voide of doubtfull feare,

He, running downe, the gate to him unbar'd;

Whom straight the Prince ensuing, in together far'd.

## VI

There he did find in her delitious boure

The faire Pœana playing on a rote,

Complayning of her cruell paramoure,

And singing all her sorrow to the note,

As she had learned readily by rote;

That with the sweetnesse of her rare delight

The Prince halfe rapt, began on her to dote:

Till, better him bethinking of the right,

He her unwares attacht, and captive held by might.

## VII

Whence being forth produc'd, when she perceived

Her owne deare sire, she cald to him for aide.

But when of him no aunswere she received,

But saw him sencelesse by the squire upstaide,

She weened well that then she was betraide:

Then gan she loudly cry, and weepe, and waile,

And that same squire of treason to upbraide:

But all in vaine; her plaints might not pre-  
vaile;  
Ne none there was to reskue her, ne none  
to baile.

## VIII

Then tooke he that same dwarfe, and him  
compeld  
To open unto him the prison dore,  
And forth to bring those thrals which there  
he held.  
Thence forth were brought to him above a  
score  
Of knights and squires to him unknowne  
afore:  
All which he did from bitter bondage free,  
And unto former liberty restore.  
Amongst the rest, that squire of low degree  
Came forth full weake and wan, not like  
him selfe to bee.

## IX

Whom soone as faire Æmylia beheld,  
And Piacidas, they both unto him ran,  
And him embracing fast betwixt them  
held,  
Striving to comfort him all that they can,  
And kissing oft his visage pale and wan;  
That faire Pæana, them beholding both,  
Gan both envy, and bitterly to ban;  
Through jealous passion weeping inly wroth,  
To see the sight perforce, that both her  
eyes were loth.

## X

But when a while they had together beene,  
And diversly conferred of their case,  
She, though full oft she both of them had  
seene  
A sunder, yet not ever in one place,  
Began to doubt, when she them saw em-  
brace,  
Which was the captive squire she lov'd so  
deare,  
Deceived through great likenesse of their  
face,  
For they so like in person did appeare,  
That she uneath discerned, whether whether  
weare.

## XI

And eke the Prince, when as he them  
avized,  
Their like resemblaunce much admired  
there,

And mazd how Nature had so well dis-  
guized  
Her worke, and counterfet her selfe so  
nere,  
As if that by one patterne seene somewhere  
She had them made a paragone to be,  
Or whether it through skill or errour were.  
Thus gazing long, at them much wondred  
he;  
So did the other knights and squires, which  
them did sec.

## XII

Then gan they ransacke that same castle  
strong,  
In which he found great store of hoorded  
treasure,  
The which that tyrant gathered had by  
wrong  
And tortious powre, without respect or  
measure.  
Upon all which the Briton Prince made  
seasure,  
And afterwards continu'd there a while,  
To rest him selfe, and solace in soft pleas-  
ure  
Those weaker ladies after weary toile;  
To whom he did divide part of his pur-  
chast spoile.

## XIII

And for more joy, that captive lady faire,  
The faire Pæana, he enlarged free,  
And by the rest did set in sumptuous chaire,  
To feast and frolicke; nathe more would  
she  
Shew glad some countenaunce nor pleasaunt  
glee,  
But grieved was for losse both of her sire,  
And eke of lordship, with both land and  
fee:  
But most she touched was with griefe en-  
tire  
For losse of her new love, the hope of her  
desire.

## XIV

But her the Prince, through his well wonted  
grace,  
To better termes of myldnesse did entreat  
From that fowle rudenesse which did her  
deface;  
And that same bitter eorsive, which did eat  
Her tender heart, and made refraine from  
meat,



He with good thewes and speaches well ap-  
plyde  
Did mollifie, and calme her raging heat.  
For though she were most faire, and goodly  
dyde,  
Yet she it all did mar with cruelty and  
pride.

## XV

And for to shut up all in friendly love,  
Sith love was first the ground of all her  
griefe,  
That trusty squire he wisely well did move  
Not to despise that dame, which lov'd him  
liefe,  
Till he had made of her some better priefe,  
But to accept her to his wedded wife.  
Thereto he offred for to make him chiefe  
Of all her land and lordship during life:  
He yeelded, and her tooke; so stinted all  
their strife.

## XVI

From that day forth in peace and joyous  
blis

They liv'd together long without debate,  
Ne private jarre, ne spite of enemies  
Could shake the safe assuraunce of their  
state.

And she, whom Nature did so faire create  
That she mote match the fairest of her  
daies,

Yet with lewd loves and lust intemperate  
Had it defaste, thenceforth reformed her  
waies,

That all men much admyrde her change,  
and spake her praise.

## XVII

Thus when the Prince had perfectly com-  
pylde

These paires of friends in peace and settled  
rest,

Him selfe, whose minde did travell as with  
chylde

Of his old love, conceav'd in secret brest,  
Resolved to pursue his former quest;  
And taking leave of all, with him did beare  
Faure Amoret, whom Fortune by bequest  
Had left in his protection whileare,  
Exchanged out of one into an other feare.

## XVIII

Feare of her safety did her not constraine,  
For well she wist now in a mighty hond

Her person, late in perill, did remaine,  
Who able was all daungers to withstood:  
But now in feare of shame she more did  
stond,

Seeing her selfe all soly succourlesse,  
Left in the victors powre, like vassall bond;  
Whose will her weakenesse could no way  
represe,

In case his burning lust should breake into  
excesse.

## XIX

But cause of feare sure had she none at  
all

Of him, who goodly learned had of yore  
The course of loose affection to forstall,  
And lawlesse lust to rule with reasons lore;  
That all the while he by his side her bore,  
She was as safe as in a sanctuary.

Thus many miles they two together wore,  
To seeke their loves dispersed diversly,  
Yet neither shewed to other their hearts  
privity.

## XX

At length they came, whereas a troupe of  
knights

They saw together skirmishing, as seemed:  
Sixe they were all, all full of fell despight,  
But foure of them the battell best be-  
seemed,

That which of them was best mote not be  
deemed.

Those foure were they from whom false  
Florimell

By Braggadochio lately was redeemed;  
To weet, sterne Druon, and lewd Clari-  
bell,

Love-lavish Blandamour, and lustfull Pari-  
dell.

## XXI

Druons delight was all in single life,  
And unto ladies love would lend no leasure:  
The more was Claribell enraged rife  
With fervent flames, and loved out of  
measure:

So eke lov'd Blandamour, but yet at  
pleasure

Would change his liking, and new lemans  
prove:

But Paridell of love did make no threasure,  
But lusted after all that him did move.

So diversly these foure disposed were to  
love.

## XXII

But those two other, which beside them  
 stoode,  
 Were Britomart and gentle Scudamour;  
 Who all the while beheld their wrathfull  
 moode,  
 And wondred at their impacable stoure,  
 Whose like they never saw till that same  
 houre:  
 So dreadfull strokes each did at other drive,  
 And laid on load with all their might and  
 powre,  
 As if that every dint the ghost would rive  
 Out of their wretched corsers, and their  
 lives deprive.

## XXIII

As when Dan Æolus, in great displeasure,  
 For losse of his deare love by Neptune  
 hent,  
 Sends forth the winds out of his hidden  
 treasure,  
 Upon the sea to wreake his fell intent;  
 They, breaking forth with rude unruliment  
 From all foure parts of heaven, doe rage  
 full sore,  
 And tosse the deepes, and teare the firma-  
 ment,  
 And all the world confound with wide up-  
 rore,  
 As if in stead thereof they Chaos would re-  
 store.

## XXIV

Cause of their discord and so fell debate  
 Was for the love of that same snowy  
 maid,  
 Whome they had lost in turneyment of  
 late,  
 And seeking long, to weet which way she  
 straid,  
 Met here together, where, through lewd  
 upbraide  
 Of Ate and Duessa, they fell out,  
 And each one taking part in others aide,  
 This cruell conflict raised thereabout,  
 Whose dangerous successe depended yet in  
 dout.

## XXV

For sometimes Paridell and Blandamour  
 The better had, and bet the others backe;  
 Eftsoones the others did the field recoure,  
 And on their foes did worke full cruell  
 wracke:

Yet neither would their fiendlike fury  
 slacke,  
 But evermore their malice did augment;  
 Till that uneath they forced were, for lacke  
 Of breath, their raging rigour to relent,  
 And rest themselves for to recover spirits  
 spent.

## XXVI

Then gan they change their sides, and new  
 parts take;  
 For Paridell did take to Druons side,  
 For old despight, which now forth newly  
 brake  
 Gainst Blandamour, whom alwaies he en-  
 vide;  
 And Blandamour to Claribell relide:  
 So all afresh gan former fight renew.  
 As when two barkes, this caried with the  
 tide,  
 That with the wind, contrary courses sew,  
 If wind and tide doe change, their courses  
 change anew.

## XXVII

Thenceforth they much more furiously gan  
 fare,  
 As if but then the battell had begonne,  
 Ne helmets bright ne hawberks strong did  
 spare,  
 That through the clifts the vermeil bloud  
 out sponne,  
 And all adowne their riven sides did ronne.  
 Such mortall malice wonder was to see  
 In friends profest, and so great outrage  
 donne:  
 But sooth is said, and tride in each degree,  
 Faint friends when they fall out most cruell  
 fomen bee.

## XXVIII

Thus they long while continued in fight,  
 Till Scudamour and that same Briton maide  
 By fortune in that place did chance to  
 light:  
 Whom soone as they with wrathfull eie  
 bewraide,  
 They gan remember of the fowle upbraide,  
 The which that Britonesse had to them  
 donne,  
 In that late turney for the snowy maide;  
 Where she had them both shamefully for-  
 donne,  
 And eke the famous prize of beauty from  
 them womne.

## XXIX

Eftsoones all burning with a fresh desire  
 Of fell revenge, in their malicious mood  
 They from them selves gan turne their fu-  
   rious ire,  
 And cruell blades, yet steeming with whot  
   bloud,  
 Against those two let drive, as they were  
   wood:  
 Who wondring much at that so sodaine  
   fit,  
 Yet nought dismayd, them stoutly well  
   withstood;  
 Ne yeelded foote, ne once abacke did flit,  
 But being doubly smitten, likewise doubly  
   smit.

## XXX

The warlike dame was on her part assaid  
 Of Claribell and Blandamour attone;  
 And Paridell and Druon fiercely laid  
 At Seudamour, both his professed fone.  
 Foure charged two, and two surcharged  
   one;  
 Yet did those two them selves so bravely  
   beare,  
 That the other litle gained by the lone,  
 But with their owne repayed duely weare,  
 And usury withall: such gaine was gotten  
   deare.

## XXXI

Full oftentimes did Britomart assay  
 To speake to them, and some emparlance  
   move;  
 But they for nought their cruell hands  
   would stay,  
 Ne lend an eare to ought that might be-  
   hove:  
 As when an eager mastiffe once doth prove  
 The tast of bloud of some engored beast,  
 No words may rate, nor rigour him re-  
   move  
 From greedy hold of that his bloudy  
   feast:  
 So litle did they hearken to her sweet be-  
   heast.

## XXXII

Whom when the Briton Prince a farre be-  
   held  
 With ods of so unequall match opprest,  
 His mighty heart with indignation sweld,  
 And inward grudge fild his heroicke brest:  
 Eftsoones him selfe he to their aide addrest,

And thrusting fierce into the thickest  
   preace,  
 Divided them, how ever loth to rest,  
 And would them faine from battell to sur-  
   ceasse,  
 With gentle words perswading them to  
   friendly peace.

## XXXIII

But they so farre from peace or patience  
   were,  
 That all at once at him gan fiercely fie,  
 And lay on load, as they him downe would  
   beare:  
 Like to a storme, which hovers under  
   skie,  
 Long here and there and round about doth  
   stie,  
 At length breakes downe in raine, and haile,  
   and sleet,  
 First from one coast, till nought thereof be  
   drie;  
 And then another, till that likewise fleet;  
 And so from side to side till all the world  
   it weat.

## XXXIV

But now their forces greatly were decayd,  
 The Prince yet being fresh untoucht afore;  
 Who them with speaches milde gan first  
   disswade  
 From such foule outrage, and them long  
   forbore:  
 Till, seeing them through suffrance hartned  
   more,  
 Him selfe he bent their furies to abate,  
 And layd at them so sharpely and so sore,  
 That shortly them compelled to retrate,  
 And being brought in daunger, to relent  
   too late

## XXXV

But now his courage being throughly fired,  
 He ment to make them know their follies  
   prise,  
 Had not those two him instantly desired  
 T' assuage his wrath, and pardon their  
   mesprise.  
 At whose request he gan him selfe advise  
 To stay his hand, and of a truee to treat  
 In milder tearmes, as list them to devise:  
 Mongst which, the cause of their so cruell  
   heat  
 He did them aske: who all that passed gan  
   repeat;



## XXXVI

And told at large how that same errant knight,  
 To weet, faire Britomart, them late had foyled  
 In open turney, and by wrongfull fight  
 Both of their publicke praise had them despoyled,  
 And also of their private loves beguyled;  
 Of two full hard to read the harder theft.  
 But she that wrongfull echallenge soone as-  
 soyled,  
 And shew'd that she had not that lady reft,  
 (As they supposd) but her had to her lik-  
 ing left.

## XXXVII

To whom the Prince thus goodly well re-  
 plied:  
 'Certes, sir knights, ye seemen much to  
 blame,  
 To rip up wrong that battell once hath  
 tried;  
 Wherein the honor both of armes ye shame,  
 And eke the love of ladies foule defame;  
 To whom the world this franchise ever  
 yeelded,  
 That of their loves choise they might free-  
 dom clame,  
 And in that right should by all knights be  
 shielded:  
 Gainst which, me seemes, this war ye  
 wrongfully have wielded.'

## XXXVIII

'And yet,' quoth she, 'a greater wrong re-  
 maines:  
 For I thereby my former love have lost,  
 Whom seeking ever sincee, with endlesse  
 paines,  
 Hath me much sorrow and much travell  
 cost:  
 Aye me, to see that gentle maide so tost!'  
 But Scudamour, then sighing deepe, thus  
 saide:  
 'Certes her losse ought me to sorrow most,  
 Whose right she is, where ever she be  
 straide,  
 Through many perils wonne, and many for-  
 tunes waide.

## XXXIX

'For from the first that I her love profest,  
 Unto this houre, this present hielesse  
 howre,

I never joyed happinesse nor rest,  
 But thus turmoild from one to other  
 stowre,

I wast my life, and doe my daies devowre  
 In wretched anguishe and incessant woe,  
 Passing the measure of my feeble powre,  
 That, living thus a wretch and loving so,  
 I neither can my love, ne yet my life forgo.'

## XL

Then good Sir Claribell him thus bespake:  
 'Now were it not, Sir Scudamour, to you  
 Dislikefull paine, so sad a taske to take,  
 Mote we entreat you, sith this gentle crew  
 Is now so well accorded all anew,  
 That, as we ride together on our way,  
 Ye will recount to us in order dew  
 All that adventure, which ye did assay  
 For that faire ladies love: past perils well  
 apay.'

## XLI

So gan the rest him likewise to require,  
 But Britomart did him importune hard  
 To take on him that paine: whose great  
 desire  
 He glad to satisfie, him selfe prepar'd  
 To tell through what misfortune he had  
 far'd  
 In that atchievement, as to him befell;  
 And all those daungers unto them de-  
 clar'd,  
 Which sith they eannot in this eanto well  
 Comprised be, I will them in another tell.

## CANTO X

Scudamour doth his conquest tell  
 Of vertuous Amoret:  
 Great Venus temple is describ'd,  
 And lovers life forth set.

## I

'TRUE he it said, what ever man it sayd,  
 That love with gall and hony doth abound,  
 But if the one be with the other wayd,  
 For every dram of hony therein found,  
 A pound of gall doth over it redound.  
 That I too true by triall have approved:  
 For since the day that first with deadly  
 wound  
 My heart was launeht, and learned to have  
 loved,  
 I never joyed howre, but still with care  
 was moved.

## II

‘And yet such grace is given them from  
above,  
That all the cares and evill which they  
meet  
May nought at all their settled mindes re-  
move,  
But seeme, gainst common sence, to them  
most sweet;  
As bosting in their martyrdome unmeet.  
So all that ever yet I have endured  
I count as naught, and tread downe under  
feet,  
Since of my love at length I rest assured,  
That to disloyalty she will not be allured.

## III

‘Long were to tell the travell and long  
toile,  
Through which this Shield of Love I late  
have wonne,  
And purchased this peerelesse beauties  
spoilc,  
That harder may be ended, then begonne:  
But since ye so desire, your will be donne.  
Then hearke, ye gentle knights and ladies  
free,  
My hard mishaps, that ye may learne to  
shonne;  
For though sweet love to conquer glorious  
bee,  
Yet is the paine thereof much greater then  
the fee.

## IV

‘What time the fame of this renowned  
prise  
Flew first abroad, and all mens eares pos-  
sest,  
I, having armes then taken, gan advise  
To winne me honour by some noble gest,  
And purchase me some place amongst the  
best.  
I boldly thought (so young mens thoughts  
are bold)  
That this same brave emprize for me did  
rest,  
And that both shield and she whom I be-  
hold  
Might be my lucky lot; sith all by lot we  
hold.

## V

‘So on that hard adventure forth I went,  
And to the place of perill shortly came.

That was a temple faire and auncient,  
Which of great mother Venus bare the  
name,  
And farre renowned through exceeding  
fame;  
Much more then that which was in Paphos  
built,  
Or that in Cyprus, both long since this  
same,  
Though all the pillours of the one were  
guilt,  
And all the others pavement were with  
yvory spilt.

## VI

‘And it was seated in an island strong,  
Abounding all with delices most rare,  
And wall’d by nature gainst invaders  
wrong,  
That none mote have accesse, nor inward  
fare,  
But by one way, that passage did prepare.  
It was a bridge ybuilt in goodly wize,  
With curious corbes and pendants graven  
faire,  
And, arched all with porches, did arize  
On stately pillours, fram’d after the  
Doricke guize.

## VII

‘And for defence thereof, on th’ other end  
There reared was a castle faire and strong,  
That warded all which in or out did wend,  
And flanked both the bridges sides along,  
Gainst all that would it faine to force or  
wrong.  
And therein wouned twenty valiant  
knights;  
All twenty tride in warres experience long;  
Whose office was, against all manner  
wights  
By all meanes to maintaine that castels  
ancient rights.

## VIII

‘Before that castle was an open plaine,  
And in the midst thereof a pillar placed;  
On which this shield, of many sought in  
vaine,  
The Shield of Love, whose guerdon me hath  
graced,  
Was hangd on high with golden ribbands  
laced;  
And in the marble stone was written this,  
With golden letters goodly well enchaced:

*Blessed the man that well can use his blis:  
Whose ever be the shield, faire Amoret be his.*

## IX

'Which when I red, my heart did inly  
earne,  
And pant with hope of that adventures hap:  
Ne stayed further newes thereof to learne,  
But with my speare upon the shield did rap,  
That all the castle ringed with the clap.  
Streight forth issewd a knight all arm'd to  
prooffe,  
And bravely mounted to his most mishap:  
Who, staying nought to question from  
aloofe,  
Ran fierce at me, that fire glaunst from his  
horses hoofe.

## X

'Whom boldly I encountred as I could,  
And by good fortune shortly him unseated.  
Eftsoones out sprung two more of equall  
mould;  
But I them both with equall hap defeated:  
So all the twenty I likewise entreated,  
And left them groning there upon the  
plaine.  
Then, preacing to the pillour, I repeated  
The read thereof for guerdon of my paine,  
And taking downe the shield, with me did it  
retaine.

## XI

'So forth without impediment I past,  
Till to the bridges utter gate I came:  
The which I found sure lockt and chained  
fast.  
I knockt, but no man aunswred me by  
name;  
I cald, but no man answerd to my clame.  
Yet I persever'd still to knocke and call,  
Till at the last I spide within the same  
Where one stood peeping through a crevis  
small,  
To whom I cald aloud, halfe angry  
therewithall.

## XII

'That was to weet the porter of the place,  
Unto whose trust the charge thereof was  
lent:  
His name was Doubt, that had a double  
face,  
Th' one forward looking, th' other backe-  
ward bent,

Therein resembling Janus auncient,  
Which hath in charge the ingate of the  
yeare:

And evermore his eyes about him went,  
As if some proved perill he did feare,  
Or did misdoubt some ill, whose cause did  
not appeare.

## XIII

'On th' one side he, on th' other sate Delay,  
Behinde the gate, that none her might  
espy;  
Whose manner was, all passengers to stay  
And entertaine with her occasions sly;  
Through which some lost great hope un-  
heedily,  
Which never they recover might againe;  
And others, quite excluded forth, did ly  
Long languishing there in unpittied paine,  
And seeking often entraunce afterwards in  
vaine.

## XIV

'Me when as he had privily espide  
Bearing the shield which I had conquerd  
late,  
He kend it streight, and to me opened wide.  
So in I past, and streight he closd the gate.  
But being in, Delay in close awaite  
Caught hold on me, and thought my steps  
to stay,  
Feigning full many a fond excuse to prate,  
And time to steale, the treasure of maus  
day,  
Whose smallest minute lost no riches  
render may.

## XV

'But by no meanes my way I would  
forslow,  
For ought that ever she could doe or say,  
But from my lofty steede dismounting low,  
Past forth on foote, beholding all the way  
The goodly workes, and stones of rich  
assay,  
Cast into sundry shapes by wondrous skill,  
That like on earth no where I reckon may:  
And underneath, the river rolling still  
With murmure soft, that seem'd to serve  
the workmans will.

## XVI

'Thence forth I passed to the second gate,  
The Gate of Good Desert, whose goodly  
pride



And costly frame were long here to relate.  
 The same to all stode alwaies open wide:  
 But in the porch did evermore abide  
 An hideous giant, dreadfull to behold,  
 That stopt the entraunce with his spacious  
 stride,  
 And with the terrour of his countenance  
 bold  
 Full many did affray, that else faine enter  
 would.

## XVII

‘His name was Daunger, dreaded over all,  
 Who day and night did watch and duely  
 ward,  
 From fearefull eowards entrance to for-  
 stall,  
 And faint-heart-fooles, whom shew of perill  
 hard  
 Could terrifie from Fortunes faire adward:  
 For oftentimes faint hearts, at first espiall  
 Of his grim faee, were from approaching  
 seard:  
 Unworthy they of grace, whom one deniall  
 Excludes from fairest hope, withouten fur-  
 ther triall.

## XVIII

‘Yet many doughty warriours, often tride  
 In greater perils to be stout and bold,  
 Durst not the sternnesse of his looke abide,  
 But soone as they his countenance did be-  
 hold,  
 Began to faint, and feeble their eorage cold.  
 Againe, some other, that in hard assaies  
 Were eowards knowne, and litle count did  
 hold,  
 Either through gifts, or guile, or such like  
 waies,  
 Crept in by stouping low, or stealing of the  
 kaies.

## XIX

‘But I, though meanest man of many moe,  
 Yet much disdainung unto him to lout,  
 Or creepe betweene his legs, so in to goe,  
 Resolv’d him to assault with manhood stout,  
 And either beat him in or drive him out.  
 Eftsoones, advameing that enchaunted  
 shield,  
 With all my might I gan to lay about:  
 Which when he saw, the glaive which he  
 did wield  
 He gan forthwith t’ avale, and way unto  
 me yield.

## XX

‘So as I entred, I did backward looke,  
 For feare of harme, that might lie hidden  
 there;  
 And loe! his hindparts, whereof heed I  
 tooke,  
 Much more deformed fearefull ugly were,  
 Then all his former parts did earst appere:  
 For Hatred, Murther, Treason, and De-  
 spight,  
 With many moe, lay in ambushment there,  
 Awayting to entrap the warelesse wight,  
 Which did not them prevent with vigilant  
 foresight.

## XXI

‘Thus having past all perill, I was come  
 Within the compasse of that islands space;  
 The which did seeme, unto my simple  
 doome,  
 The onely pleasant and delightfull place  
 That ever troden was of footings trace.  
 For all that Nature by her mother wit  
 Could frame in earth, and forme of sub-  
 stance base,  
 Was there, and all that Nature did omit,  
 Art, playing second Natures part, supplied  
 it.

## XXII

‘No tree, that is of count, in greenewood  
 growes,  
 From lowest juniper to cedar tall,  
 No flowre in field, that daintie odour  
 throwes,  
 And deekes his branch with blossomes over  
 all,  
 But there was planted, or grew naturall:  
 Nor sense of man so eoy and eurious nice,  
 But there mote find to please it selfe with-  
 all;  
 Nor hart could wish for any queint device,  
 But there it present was, and did fraile  
 sense entiee.

## XXIII

‘In such luxnrrious plentie of all pleasure,  
 It seem’d a second paradise to ghesse,  
 So lavishly euricht with Natures threasure,  
 That if the happie soules, which doe pos-  
 sesse  
 Th’ Elysian fields and live in lasting blesse,  
 Should happen this with living eye to see,  
 They soone would loath their lesser happi-  
 nesse,

And wish to life return'd againe to bee,  
That in this joyous place they mote have  
joyance free.

## XXIV

' Fresh shadowes, fit to shroud from sunny  
ray;  
Faيرة lawnds, to take the sunne in season  
dew;  
Sweet springs, in which a thousand nymphs  
did play;  
Soft rombling brookes, that gentle slomber  
drew;  
High reared mounts, the lands about to  
vew;  
Low looking dales, disloignd from common  
gaze;  
Delightfull bowres, to solace lovers trew;  
False labyrinthes, fond runners eyes to daze;  
All which by Nature made did Nature selfe  
amaze.

## XXV

' And all without were walkes and alleyes  
dight  
With divers trees, enrang'd in even rankes;  
And here and there were pleasant arbors  
pight,  
And shadie seates, and sundry flowring  
bankes,  
To sit and rest the walkers wearie shankes;  
And therein thousand payres of lovers walkt,  
Praying their god, and yeelding him great  
thanks,  
Ne ever ought but of their true loves talkt,  
Ne ever for rebuke or blame of any balkt.

## XXVI

' All these together by themselves did sport  
Their spotlesse pleasures, and sweet loves  
content.  
But farre away from these, another sort  
Of lovers lincked in true harts consent;  
Which loved not as these, for like intent,  
But on chaste vertue grounded their desire,  
Farre from all fraud, or fayned blandish-  
ment;  
Which, in their spirits kindling zealous fire,  
Brave thoughts and noble deedes did ever-  
more aspire.

## XXVII

' Such were great Hercules, and Hyllus  
deare;  
Trew Jonathan, and David trustie tryde;

Stout Theseus, and Pirithous his feare;  
Pylades, and Orestes by his syde;  
Myld Titus and Gesippus without pryde;  
Damon and Pythias, whom death could not  
sever:

All these, and all that ever had bene tyde  
In bands of friendship, there did live for  
ever;  
Whose lives although decay'd, yet loves  
decayed never.

## XXVIII

' Which when as I, that never tasted blis  
Nor happie howre, beheld with gazefull  
eye,  
I thought there was none other heaveu then  
this;  
And gan their endlesse happinesse envye,  
That, being free from feare and gealosye,  
Might frankly there their loves desire  
possesse;  
Whilest I through paines and perlous  
jeopardie  
Was forst to seeke my lifes deare patron-  
esse:  
Much dearer be the things which come  
through hard distresse.

## XXIX

' Yet all those sights, and all that else I  
saw,  
Might not my steps withhold, but that  
forthright  
Unto that purposd place I did me draw,  
Where as my love was lodged day and  
night:  
The temple of great Venus, that is hight  
The Queene of Beautie, and of Love the  
mother,  
There worshipped of every living wight;  
Whose goodly workmanship farre past all  
other  
That ever were on earth, all were they set  
together.

## XXX

' Not that same famous temple of Diane,  
Whose hight all Ephesus did oversee,  
And which all Asia sought with vowes pro-  
phane,  
One of the worlds seven wonders sayd to  
bee,  
Might match with this by many a degree:  
Nor that which that wise king of Jurie  
framed,

With endlesse cost, to be th' Almightyes  
see;  
Nor all that else through all the world is  
named  
To all the heathen gods, might like to this  
be clamed.

## XXXI

'I, much admyring that so goodly frame,  
Unto the porch approcht, which open  
stood;  
But therein sate an amiable dame,  
That seem'd to be of very sober mood,  
And in her semblant shewed great woman-  
hood:  
Strange was her tyre; for on her head a  
crowne  
She wore, much like unto a Danisk hood,  
Poudred with pearle and stone, and all her  
gowne  
Enwoven was with gold, that raught full  
low a downe.

## XXXII

'On either side of her two young men  
stood,  
Both strongly arm'd, as fearing one an-  
other;  
Yet were they brethren both of halfe the  
blood,  
Begotten by two fathers of one mother,  
Though of contrarie natures each to other:  
The one of them hight Love, the other  
Hate;  
Hate was the elder, Love the younger  
brother;  
Yet was the younger stronger in his state  
Then th' elder, and him maystred still in  
all debate.

## XXXIII

'Nathlesse that dame so well them tem-  
pred both,  
That she them forced hand to joyne in  
hand,  
Albe that Hatred was thereto full loth,  
And turn'd his face away, as he did stand,  
Unwilling to behold that lovely band.  
Yet she was of such grace and vertuous  
might,  
That her commaundment he could not  
withstand,  
But bit his lip for felonous despight,  
And gnasht his yron tuskes at that dis-  
pleasing sight.

## XXXIV

'Concord she cleeped was in common reed,  
Mother of blessed Peace and Friendship  
trew;  
They both her twins, both borne of heav-  
enly seed,  
And she her selfe likewise divinely grew;  
The which right well her workes divine  
did shew:  
For strength and wealth and happinesse  
she lends,  
And strife and warre and anger does sub-  
dew;  
Of litle much, of foes she maketh frends,  
And to afflicted minds sweet rest and quiet  
sends.

## XXXV

'By her the heaven is in his course con-  
tained,  
And all the world in state unmoved stands,  
As their Almighty Maker first ordained,  
And bound them with inviolable bands;  
Else would the waters overflow the lands,  
And fire devoure the ayre, and hell them  
quight,  
But that she holds them with her blessed  
hands.  
She is the nourse of pleasure and delight,  
And unto Venus grace the gate doth open  
right.

## XXXVI

'By her I entring halfe dismayed was,  
But she in gentle wise me entertayned,  
And twixt her selfe and Love did let me  
pas;  
But Hatred would my entrance have re-  
strayned,  
And with his club me threatned to have  
brayned,  
Had not the ladie with her powrefull  
speach  
Him from his wicked will uneath re-  
frayned;  
And th' other eke his malice did empeach,  
Till I was throughly past the perill of his  
reach

## XXXVII

'Into the inmost temple thus I came,  
Which fuming all with frankensence I  
found,  
And odours rising from the altars flame.  
Upon an hundred marble pillors round



The rooffe up high was reared from the  
ground,  
All deckt with crownes, and chaynes, and  
girlands gay,  
And thousand pretious gifts worth many a  
pound,  
The which sad lovers for their vowes did  
pay;  
And all the ground was strow'd with flow-  
res, as fresh as May.

## XXXVIII

'An hundred altars round about were set,  
All flaming with their sacrifices fire,  
That with the steme thereof the temple  
swet,  
Which rold in clouds to heaven did aspire,  
And in them bore true lovers vowes en-  
tire:  
And eke an hundred brasen caudrons  
bright,  
To bath in joy and amorous desire,  
Every of which was to a damzell hight;  
For all the priests were damzels, in soft  
linnen dight.

## XXXIX

'Right in the midst the goddesse selfe did  
stand  
Upon an altar of some costly masse,  
Whose substance was uneth to understand:  
For neither pretious stone, nor durefull  
brasse,  
Nor shining gold, nor mouldring clay it was;  
But much more rare and pretious to es-  
teeme,  
Pure in aspect, and like to christall glasse,  
Yet glasse was not, if one did rightly  
deceme,  
But being faire and bricke, likest glasse  
did seeme.

## XL

'But it in shape and beautie did excell  
All other idoles which the heathen adore,  
Farre passing that which by surpassing skill  
Phidias did make in Paphos isle of yore,  
With which that wretched Greeke, that life  
forlore,  
Did fall in love: yet this much fairer shined,  
But covered with a slender veile afore;  
And both her feete and legs together  
twyned  
Were with a snake, whose head and tail  
were fast combyned.

## XLI

'The cause why she was covered with a  
vele  
Was hard to know, for that her priests the  
same  
From peoples knowledge labour'd to con-  
cele.  
But sooth it was not sure for womanish  
shame,  
Nor any blemish, which the worke mote  
blame;  
But for, they say, she hath both kinds in  
one,  
Both male and female, both under one  
name:  
She syre and mother is her selfe alone,  
Begets and eke conceives, ne needeth other  
none.

## XLII

'And all about her necke and shoulders flew  
A flocke of litle loves, and sports, and  
joyes,  
With nimble wings of gold and purple hew,  
Whose shapes seem'd not like to terrestriall  
boyes,  
But like to angels playing heavenly toyes;  
The whilest their eldest brother was away,  
Cupid, their eldest brother: he enjoyes  
The wide kingdome of Love with lordly  
sway,  
And to his law compels all creatures to  
obay.

## XLIII

'And all about her altar, scattered lay  
Great sorts of lovers piteously complayn-  
ing,  
Some of their losse, some of their loves de-  
lay,  
Some of their pride, some paragons dis-  
dayning,  
Some fearing fraud, some fraudulently  
fayning,  
As every one had cause of good or ill.  
Amongst the rest some one, through loves  
constrayning,  
Tormented sore, could not containe it still,  
But thus brake forth, that all the temple it  
did fill:

## XLIV

“Great Venus, queene of beautie and of  
grace,  
The joy of gods and men, that under skie

Doest fayrest shine, and most adorne thy  
place,  
That with thy smyling looke doest pacific  
The raging seas, and makst the stormes to  
flie;  
Thee, goddessse, thee the winds, the clouds  
doe feare,  
And when thou spreadst thy mantle forth  
on hie,  
The waters play, and pleasant lands ap-  
peare,  
And heavens laugh, and al the world shews  
joyous cheare.

## XLV

“Then doth the dædale earth throw forth  
to thee  
Out of her fruitfull lap abundant flowres;  
And then all living wights, soone as they  
see  
The Spring breake forth out of his lusty  
bowres,  
They all doe learne to play the para-  
mours:  
First doe the merry birds, thy prety pages,  
Privily pricked with thy lustfull powres,  
Chirpe loud to thee out of their leavy  
cages,  
And thee their mother call to coole their  
kindly rages.

## XLVI

“Then doe the salvage beasts begin to  
play  
Their pleasant friskes, and loath their  
wonted food;  
The Lyons rore, the tygres loudly bray,  
The raging buls rebellow through the  
wood,  
And breaking forth, dare tempt the deep-  
est flood,  
To come where thou doest draw them with  
desire:  
So all things else, that nourish vitall blood,  
Soone as with fury thou doest them in-  
spire,  
In generation seeke to quench their inward  
fire.

## XLVII

“So all the world by thee at first was  
made,  
And dayly yet thou doest the same repayre:  
Ne ought on earth that merry is and glad,  
Ne ought on earth that lovely is and fayre,

But thou the same for pleasure didst pre-  
payre.  
Thou art the root of all that joyous is,  
Great god of men and women, queene of  
th’ ayre,  
Mother of laughter, and welspring of blisse,  
O grannt that of my love at last I may not  
misse.”

## XLVIII

‘So did he say: but I with murmure soft,  
That none might heare the sorrow of my  
hart,  
Yet inly groning deepe and sighing oft,  
Besought her to graunt ease unto my  
smart,  
And to my wound her gracious help impart.  
Whilest thus I spake, behold! with happy  
eye  
I spyde where at the idoles feet apart  
A bevie of fayre damzels close did lye,  
Wayting when as the antheime should be  
sung on hye.

## XLIX

‘The first of them did seeme of ryper  
yeares  
And graver countenance then all the rest;  
Yet all the rest were eke her equall peares,  
Yet unto her obeyed all the best.  
Her name was Womanhood, that she ex-  
prest  
By her sad semblant and demeanure wyse  
For stedfast still her eyes did fixed rest,  
Ne rov’d at randon, after gazers guyse,  
Whose luring baytes oftymes doe heedlesse  
harts entyse.

## L

‘And next to her sate goodly Shamefast-  
nesse,  
Ne ever durst her eyes from ground up-  
reare,  
Ne ever once did looke up from her desse,  
As if some blame of evill she did feare,  
That in her cheekes made roses oft ap-  
peare:  
And her against sweet Cherefulnessse was  
placed,  
Whose eyes, like twinkling stars in evening  
cleare,  
Were deckt with smyles, that all sad hu-  
mors chaced,  
And darted forth delights, the which her  
goodly graced.

## LI

‘And next to her sate sober Modestie,  
 Holding her hand upon her gentle hart;  
 And her against sate comely Curtesie,  
 That unto every person knew her part;  
 And her before was seated overthwart  
 Soft Silence, and submissee Obedience,  
 Both linckt together never to dispart,  
 Both gifts of God not gotten but from  
 thence,  
 Both girlonds of his saints against their  
 foes offence.

## LII

‘Thus sate they all a round in seemely rate.  
 And in the midst of them a goodly mayd,  
 Even in the lap of Womanhood, there  
 sate,  
 The which was all in lilly white arayd,  
 With silver streames amongst the lumen  
 stray’d;  
 Like to the Morne, when first her shyning  
 face  
 Hath to the gloomy world it selfe be-  
 wray’d:  
 That same was fayrest Amoret in place,  
 Shyning with beauties light and heavenly  
 vertues grace.

## LIII

‘Whom soone as I beheld, my hart gan  
 throb,  
 And wade in doubt, what best were to be  
 donne:  
 For sacrilege me seem’d the church to rob,  
 And folly seem’d to leave the thing un-  
 doune,  
 Which with so strong attempt I had be-  
 gonne.  
 Tho, shaking off all doubt and shamefast  
 feare,  
 Which ladies love I heard had never wonne  
 Mongst men of worth, I to her stepped  
 neare,  
 And by the lilly hand her labour’d up to  
 reare.

## LIV

‘Thereat that formost matrone me did  
 blame,  
 And sharpe rebuke, for being over bold;  
 Saying it was to knight unseemely shame,  
 Upon a recluse virgin to lay hold,  
 That unto Venus services was sold.  
 To whom I thus: “Nay, but it fitteth best

For Cupids man with Venus mayd to hold;  
 For ill your goddesse services are drest  
 By virgins, and her sacrifices let to rest.”

## LV

‘With that my shield I forth to her did  
 show,  
 Which all that while I elosely had conceald;  
 On which when Cupid with his killing bow  
 And cruell shafts emblazond she beheld,  
 At sight thereof she was with terror queld,  
 And said no more: but I, which all that  
 while  
 The pledge of faith, her hand, engaged held,  
 Like warie hynd within the weedie soyle,  
 For no intreatie would forgoe so glorious  
 spoyle.

## LVI

‘And evermore upon the goddesse face  
 Mine eye was fixt, for feare of her offence:  
 Whom when I saw with amiable grace  
 To laugh at me, and favour my pretence,  
 I was emboldn’d with more confidence,  
 And nought for nicenesse nor for envy  
 sparing,  
 In presenee of them all forth led her  
 thence,  
 All looking on, and like astonisht staring,  
 Yet to lay hand on her not one of all them  
 daring.

## LVII

‘She often prayd, and often me besought,  
 Sometime with tender teares to let her goe,  
 Sometime with witching smyles: but yet,  
 for nought  
 That ever she to me could say or doe,  
 Could she her wished freedome fro me  
 wooe;  
 But forth I led her through the temple  
 gate,  
 By which I hardly past with much adoe:  
 But that same ladie, which me friended  
 late  
 In entrance, did me also friend in my re-  
 trate.

## LVIII

‘No lesse did Daunger threaten me with  
 dread,  
 When as he saw me, maugre all his powre,  
 That glorious spoyle of beantie with me  
 lead,  
 Then Cerberus, when Orpheus did recoure



His leman from the Stygian princes boure.  
But evermore my shield did me defend  
Against the storme of every dreadfull  
    stoure:  
Thus safely with my love I thence did  
    wend.  
So ended he his tale, where I this canto  
    end.

## CANTO XI

Marinells former wound is heald;  
He comes to Proteus hall,  
Where Thames doth the Medway wedd,  
And feasts the sea-gods all.

## I

BUT ah for pittie that I have thus long  
Left a fayre ladie languishing in payne!  
Now well away! that I have doen such  
    wrong,  
To let faire Florimell in bands remayne,  
In bands of love, and in sad thralldomes  
    chayne!  
From which unlesse some heavenly powre  
    her free  
By miracle, not yet appearing playne,  
She lenger yet is like captiv'd to bee:  
That even to thinke thereof it inly pitties  
    mee.

## II

Here neede you to remember, how erewhile  
Unlovely Proteus, missing to his mind  
That virgins love to win by wit or wile,  
Her threw into a dongeon deepe and blind,  
And there in chaynes her cruelly did bind,  
In hope thereby her to his bent to draw:  
For when as neither gifts nor graces kind  
Her constant mind could move at all, he  
    saw,  
He thought her to compell by crueltie and  
    awe.

## III

Deepe in the bottome of an huge great  
    rocke  
The dongeon was, in which her bound he  
    left,  
That neither yron barres, nor brasen locke,  
Did neede to gard from force or secret theft  
Of all her lovers, which would her have  
    reft.  
For wall'd it was with waves, which rag'd  
    and ror'd

As they the cliffe in peeces would have  
    cleft;  
Besides, ten thousand monsters foule ab-  
    hor'd  
Did waite about it, gaping griesly, all be-  
    gor'd.

## IV

And in the midst thereof did horror dwell,  
And darknesse dredd, that never viewed  
    day,  
Like to the balefull house of lowest hell,  
In which old Styx her aged bones alway,  
Old Styx the grandame of the gods, doth  
    lay.  
There did this lucklesse mayd seven months  
    abide,  
Ne ever evening saw, ne mornings ray,  
Ne ever from the day the night descride,  
But thought it all one night, that did no  
    houres divide.

## V

And all this was for love of Marinell,  
Who her despysd (ah! who would her de-  
    spyse?)  
And womens love did from his hart expell,  
And all those joyes that weake mankind  
    entyse.  
Nathlesse his pride full dearly he did  
    pryse;  
For of a womans hand it was ywroke,  
That of the wound he yet in languor lyes,  
Ne can be cured of that cruell stroke  
Which Britomart him gave, when he did  
    her provoke.

## VI

Yet farre and neare the nymph, his mother,  
    sought,  
And many salves did to his sore applie,  
And many herbes did use. But when as  
    nought  
She saw could ease his rankling maladie,  
At last to Tryphon she for helpe did hie,  
(This Tryphon is the seagods surgeon hight)  
Whom she besought to find some remedie:  
And for his paines a whistle him behight,  
That of a fishes shell was wrought with rare  
    delight.

## VII

So well that leach did hearke to her re-  
    quest,  
And did so well employ his carefull paine,

That in short space his hurts he had redrest,  
And him restor'd to healthfull state againe:  
In which he long time after did remaine  
There with the nymph his mother, like her  
thrall;

Who sore against his will did him retaine,  
For feare of perill, which to him mote fall,  
Through his too ventrous prowesse proved  
over all.

## VIII

It fortun'd then, a solemne feast was there  
To all the sea-gods and their fruitfull seede,  
In honour of the spousalls which then were  
Betwixt the Medway and the Thames  
agreed.

Long had the Thames (as we in records  
reed)

Before that day her wooed to his bed;  
But the proud nymph would for no worldly  
need,

Nor no entreatie to his love be led;  
Till now at last relenting, she to him was  
wed.

## IX

So both agreed that this their bridale feast  
Should for the gods in Proteus house be  
made;

To which they all repayr'd, both most and  
least,

Aswell which in the mightie ocean trade,  
As that in rivers swim, or brookes doe wade.  
All which not if an hundred tongues to tell,  
And hundred mouthes, and voice of brasse I  
had,

And endlesse memorie, that mote excell,  
In order as they came, could I recount them  
well.

## X

Helpe therefore, O thou sacred imp of  
Jove,

The noursling of Dame Memorie his deare,  
To whom those rolles, layd up in heaven  
above,

And records of antiquitie appeare,  
To which no wit of man may comen neare;  
Helpe me to tell the names of all those  
floods,

And all those nymphes, which then assem-  
bled were

To that great banquet of the watry gods,  
And all their sundry kinds, and all their hid  
abodes.

## XI

First came great Neptune with his three-  
forkt mace,

That rules the seas, and makes them rise  
or fall;

His dewy lockes did drop with brine apace  
Under his diademe imperiall:

And by his side his queene with coronall,  
Faire Amphitrite, most divinely faire,  
Whose yvorie shoulders weren covered all,  
As with a robe, with her owne silver haire,  
And deckt with pearles, which th' Indian  
seas for her prepaire.

## XII

These marched farre afore the other crew;  
And all the way before them as they went,  
Triton his trompet shrill before them blew,  
For goodly triumph and great jollyment,  
That made the rockes to roare, as they  
were rent.

And after them the royall issue came,  
Which of them sprung by lineall descent:  
First the sea-gods, which to themselves doe  
clame

The powre to rule the billowes, and the  
waves to tame:

## XIII

Phoreys, the father of that fatall brood,  
By whom those old heroes wonne such  
fame;

And Glaucus, that wise southsayes under-  
stood;

And tragicke Inoes sonne, the which be-  
came

A god of seas through his mad mothers  
blame,

Now hight Palemon, and is saylers frend;  
Great Brontes, and Astræus, that did shame  
Himselfe with incest of his kin unkend;  
And huge Orion, that doth tempests still  
portend;

## XIV

The rich Cteatus, and Enrytus long;  
Neleus and Pelias, lovely brethren both;  
Mightie Chrysaor, and Cæus strong;  
Eurypulus, that calmes the waters wroth;  
And faire Euphemus, that upon them goth  
As on the ground, without dismay or dread;  
Fierce Eryx, and Alebius that know'th  
The waters depth, and doth their bottome  
tread;

And sad Asopus, comely with his hoarie head.

## XV

There also some most famous founders  
 were  
 Of puissant nations, which the world pos-  
 sest;  
 Yet somes of Neptune, now assembled  
 here:  
 Ancient Ogyges, even th' auncientest,  
 And Inachus renound above the rest;  
 Phœnix, and Aon, and Pelasgus old,  
 Great Belus, Phœax, and Agenor best;  
 And mightie Albion, father of the bold  
 And warlike people which the Britaine  
 Islands hold.

## XVI

For Albion the soune of Neptune was,  
 Who, for the prooue of his great puissance,  
 Out of his Albion did on dry-foot pas  
 Into old Gall, that now is cleeped France,  
 To fight with Hercules, that did advance  
 To vanquish all the world with matchlesse  
 might,  
 And there his mortall part by great mis-  
 chance  
 Was slaine: but that which is th' immortall  
 spright  
 Lives still, and to this feast with Neptunes  
 seed was dight.

## XVII

But what doe I their names seeke to re-  
 herse,  
 Which all the world have with their issue  
 fild?  
 How can they all in this so narrow verse  
 Contayned be, and in small compasse hild?  
 Let them record them, that are better skild,  
 And know the moniments of passed age:  
 Onely what needeth shall be here fulfild,  
 T' expresse some part of that great equip-  
 age,  
 Which from great Neptune do derive their  
 parentage.

## XVIII

Next came the aged Ocean, and his dame,  
 Old Tethys, th' oldest two of all the rest,  
 For all the rest of those two parents came,  
 Which afterward both sea and land pos-  
 sest:  
 Of all which Nereus, th' eldest and the best,  
 Did first proceed, then which none more  
 upright,  
 Ne more sincere in word and deed profest;

Most voide of guile, most free from fowle  
 despight,  
 Doing him selfe, and teaching others to doe  
 right.

## XIX

Thereto he was expert in prophecies,  
 And could the ledden of the gods unfold,  
 Through which, when Paris brought his  
 famous prise,  
 The faire Tindarid lasse, he him fortold,  
 That her all Greece with many a champion  
 bold  
 Should fetch againe, and finally destroy  
 Proud Priams towne. So wise is Nereus  
 old,  
 And so well skild; nathlesse he takes great  
 joy  
 Oft-times amongst the wanton nymphs to  
 sport and toy.

## XX

And after him the famous rivers came,  
 Which doe the earth enrich and beauti-  
 fie:  
 The fertile Nile, which creatures new doth  
 frame;  
 Long Rhodanus, whose sourse springs from  
 the skie;  
 Faire Ister, flowing from the mountaines  
 hie;  
 Divine Scamander, purpled yet with blood  
 Of Greekes and Trojans, which therein did  
 die;  
 Pactolus glistring with his golden flood,  
 And Tygris fierce, whose streames of none  
 may be withstood;

## XXI

Great Ganges, and immortall Euphrates,  
 Deepe Indus, and Mæander intricate,  
 Slow Peneus, and tempestuous Phasides,  
 Swift Rhene, and Alpheus still immacu-  
 late;  
 Ooraxes, feared for great Cyrus fate;  
 Tybris, renowned for the Romaines fame;  
 Rich Oranochy, though but knowen late;  
 And that huge river, which doth beare his  
 name  
 Of warlike Amazons, which doe possesse  
 the same.

## XXII

Joy on those warlike women, which so long  
 Can from all men so rich a kingdome hold!



And shame on you, O men, which boast  
 your strong  
 And valiant hearts, in thoughts lesse hard  
 and bold,  
 Yet quaille in conquest of that land of gold !  
 But this to you, O Britons, most pertaines,  
 To whom the right hereof it selfe hath  
 sold;  
 The which, for sparing litle cost or paines,  
 Loose so immortall glory, and so endlesse  
 gaines.

## XXIII

Then was there heard a most celestiall  
 sound  
 Of dainty musicke, which did next ensue  
 Before the spouse: that was Arion crownd;  
 Who, playing on his harpe, unto him drew  
 The eares and hearts of all that goodly  
 crew,  
 That even yet the dolphin, which him bore  
 Through the Agean seas from pirates vew,  
 Stood still by him astonisht at his lore,  
 And all the raging seas for joy forgot to  
 rore.

## XXIV

So went he playing on the watery plaine.  
 Soone after whom the lovely bridegroome  
 came,  
 The noble Thamis, with all his goodly  
 traine;  
 But him before there went, as best became,  
 His ancient parents, namely th' auncient  
 Thame:  
 But much more aged was his wife then he,  
 The Onze, whom men doe Isis rightly  
 name;  
 Full weake and crooked creature seemed  
 shee,  
 And almost blind through eld, that scarce  
 her way could see.

## XXV

Therefore on either side she was sustained  
 Of two smal grooms, which by their names  
 were hight  
 The Churne and Charwell, two small  
 streames, which pained  
 Them selves her footing to direct aright,  
 Which fayled oft through faint and feeble  
 plight:  
 But Thame was stronger, and of better  
 stay;  
 Yet seem'd full aged by his outward sight,

With head all hoary, and his beard all gray,  
 Deawed with silver drops, that trickled  
 downe away.

## XXVI

And eke he somewhat seem'd to stoupe  
 afore  
 With bowed backe, by reason of the lode  
 And auncient heavy burden which he bore  
 Of that faire city, wherein make abode  
 So many learned impes, that shoote abroad,  
 And with their braunches spred all Britany,  
 No lesse then do her elder sisters broode.  
 Joy to you both, ye double nursery  
 Of arts ! but, Oxford, thine doth Thame  
 most glorify.

## XXVII

But he their sonne full fresh and jolly was,  
 All decked in a robe of watchet hew,  
 On which the waves, glittering like christall  
 glas,  
 So cunningly enwoven were, that few  
 Could weenen whether they were false or  
 trew.  
 And on his head like to a coronet  
 He wore, that seemed strange to common  
 vew,  
 In which were many towres and castels set,  
 That it encompass round as with a golden  
 fret.

## XXVIII

Like as the mother of the gods, they say,  
 In her great iron charet wents to ride,  
 When to Joves pallace she doth take her  
 way,  
 Old Cybele, arayd with pompous pride,  
 Wearing a diademe embattild wide  
 With hundred turrets, like a turribant.  
 With such an one was Thamis beautifide;  
 That was to weete the famous Troynovant,  
 In which her kingdomes throne is chiefly  
 resiant.

## XXIX

And round about him many a pretty page  
 Attended duely, ready to obay;  
 All little rivers, which owe vassallage  
 To him, as to their lord, and tribute pay:  
 The chaulky Kenet, and the Thetis gray,  
 The morish Cole, and the soft sliding  
 Breane,  
 The wanton Lee, that oft doth loose his  
 way.

And the still Darent, in whose waters  
cleane  
Ten thousand fishes play, and decke his  
pleasant streame.

## XXX

Then came his neighbour fouds, which  
nigh him dwell,  
And water all the English soile through-  
out;  
They all on him this day attended well,  
And with meet service waited him about;  
Ne none disdained low to him to lout:  
No, not the stately Severne grudg'd at  
all,  
Ne storming Humber, though he looked  
stout;  
But both him honor'd as their principall,  
And let their swelling waters low before  
him fall.

## XXXI

There was the speedy Tamar, which de-  
vides  
The Cornish and the Devonish confines;  
Through both whose borders swiftly downe  
it glides,  
And meeting Plim, to Plimmouth thence  
declines:  
And Dart, nigh chockt with sands of tinny  
mines.  
But Avon marched in more stately path,  
Proud of his adamants, with which he  
shines  
And glisters wide, as als' of wondrous  
Bath,  
And Bristow faire, which on his waves he  
builded hath.

## XXXII

And there came Stoure with terrible aspect,  
Bearing his sixe deformed heads on hye,  
That doth his course through Blandford  
plains direct,  
And washeth Wiuborne meades in season  
drye.  
Next him went Wylibourne with passage  
slye,  
That of his wylinesse his name doth take,  
And of him selfe doth name the shire  
thereby:  
And Mole, that like a nousling mole doth  
make  
His way still under ground, till Thamys he  
overtake.

## XXXIII

Then came the Rother, decked all with  
woods  
Like a wood god, and flowing fast to Rhy:  
And Sture, that parteth with his pleasant  
floods  
The easterne Saxons from the southerne ny,  
And Clare and Harwitch both doth beau-  
tify:  
Him follow'd Yar, soft washing Norwitch  
wall,  
And with him brought a present joyfully  
Of his owne fish unto their festivall,  
Whose like none else could shew, the which  
they ruffins call.

## XXXIV

Next these the plenteous Ouse came far  
from land,  
By many a city, and by many a towne,  
And many rivers taking under hand  
Into his waters, as he passeth downe,  
The Cle, the Were, the Grant, the Sture,  
the Rowne,  
Thence doth by Huntingdon and Cambridge  
flit,  
My mother Cambridge, whom as with a  
crowne  
He doth adorne, and is adorn'd of it  
With many a gentle muse, and many a  
learned wit.

## XXXV

And after him the fatall Welland went,  
That if old sawes prove true (which God  
forbid)  
Shall drowne all Holland with his excre-  
ment,  
And shall see Stamford, though now  
homely hid,  
Then shine in learning, more then ever  
did  
Cambridge or Oxford, Englands goodly  
beames.  
And next to him the Nene downe softly  
slid;  
And bounteous Trent, that in him selfe en-  
seames  
Both thirty sorts of fish and thirty sundry  
streames.

## XXXVI

Next these came Tyne, along whose stony  
bancke  
Tha' Romaine monarch built a brasen wall,

Which mote the feebled Britons strongly  
 flanke  
 Against the Piets, that swarmed over all,  
 Which yet thereof Gualsever they doe call:  
 And Twede, the limit betwixt Logris land  
 And Albany: and Eden, though but small,  
 Yet often stainde with bloud of many a band  
 Of Scots and English both, that tynd on  
 his strand.

## XXXVII

Then came those sixe sad brethren, like  
 forlorne,  
 That whilome were (as antique fathers tell)  
 Sixe valiant knights, of one faire nymphe  
 yborne,  
 Which did in noble deedes of armes excell,  
 And wonned there where now Yorke people  
 dwell:  
 Still Ure, swift Werfe, and Oze the most  
 of might,  
 High Swale, unquiet Nide, and troublous  
 Skell;  
 All whom a Scythian king, that Humber  
 hight,  
 Slew cruelly, and in the river drowned  
 quight.

## XXXVIII

But past not long, ere Brutus warlicke  
 sonne,  
 Locrinus, them aveng'd, and the same date,  
 Which the proud Humber unto them had  
 donne,  
 By equall dome repayd on his owne pate:  
 For in the selfe sanie river, where he late  
 Had drenched them, he drowned him  
 againe;  
 And nam'd the river of his wretched fate;  
 Whose bad eondition yet it doth retaine,  
 Oft tossed with his stormes, which therein  
 still remaine.

## XXXIX

These after, came the stony shallow Lone,  
 That to old Loncaster his name doth lend;  
 And following Dee, which Britons long  
 ygone  
 Did call divine, that doth by Chester tend;  
 And Conway, which out of his streame doth  
 send  
 Plenty of pearles to decke his dames with-  
 all;  
 And Lindus, that his pikes doth most com-  
 mend,

Of which the auncient Lincolne men doe  
 call:  
 All these together marched toward Pro-  
 tens hall.

## XL

Ne thence the Irishe rivers absent were:  
 Sith no lesse famous then the rest they bee,  
 And joyne in neighbourhood of kingdome  
 nere,  
 Why should they not likewise in love agree,  
 And joy likewise this solemne day to see?  
 They saw it all, and present were in place;  
 Though I them all, according their degree,  
 Cannot recount, nor tell their hidden race,  
 Nor read the salvage cuntreis thorough  
 which they pace.

## XLI

There was the Liffy rolling downe the lea,  
 The sandy Slane, the stony Aubrian,  
 The spacious Shenan spreading like a sea,  
 The pleasant Boyne, the fishy fruitfull Ban,  
 Swift Awniduff, which of the English man  
 Is cal'de Blackewater, and the Liffar deep,  
 Sad Trowis, that once his people overran,  
 Strong Allo tombling from Slewlogher  
 steep,  
 And Mulla mine, whose waves I whilom  
 taught to weep.

## XLII

And there the three renowned brethren  
 were,  
 Which that great gyant Bloinius begot  
 Of the faire nimph Rheusa wandring there.  
 One day, as she to shunne the season whot,  
 Under Slewbloome in shady grove was got,  
 This gyant found her, and by force de-  
 flowr'd;  
 Whereof conceiving, she in time forth  
 brought  
 These three faire sons, which, being thence  
 forth powrd,  
 In three great rivers ran, and many  
 countreis scowrd.

## XLIII

The first, the gentle Shure, that, making  
 way  
 By sweet Clonmell, adornes rich Water-  
 ford;  
 The next, the stubborne Newre, whose  
 waters gray  
 By faire Kilkenny and Rosseponde boord;



The third, the goodly Barow, which doth  
hoord  
Great heapes of salmons in his deepe  
bosome:  
All which long sundred, doe at last accord  
To joyne in one, ere to the sea they come,  
So, flowing all from one, all one at last  
become.

## XLIV

There also was the wide embayed Mayre,  
The pleasaunt Bandon, crownd with many a  
wood,  
The spreading Lee, that like an island  
fayre  
Encloseth Corke with his devided flood;  
And balefull Oure, late staine with English  
blood:  
With many more, whose names no tongue  
can tell.  
All which that day in order seemly good  
Did on the Thamis attend, and waited  
well  
To doe their duefull service, as to them  
befell.

## XLV

Then came the bride, the lovely Medua  
came,  
Clad in a vesture of unknown geare,  
And uncouth fashion, yet her well became;  
That seem'd like silver, sprinkled here and  
there  
With glittering spangs, that did like starres  
apeare,  
And wav'd upon, like water chamelot,  
To hide the metall, which yet every where  
Bewrayd it selfe, to let men plainely wot,  
It was no mortall worke, that seem'd and  
yet was not.

## XLVI

Her goodly lookes adowne her backe did  
flow  
Unto her waste, with flowres beseattered,  
The which ambrosiall odours forth did  
throw  
To all about, and all her shoulders spred  
As a new spring; and likewise on her hed  
A chapelet of sundry flowers she wore,  
From under which the dewy humour shed  
Did trie cle downe her haire, like to the  
hore  
Congealed litle drops, which doe the morne  
adore

## XLVII

On her two pretty handmaides did attend,  
One cald the Theise, the other cald the  
Crane;  
Which on her waited, things amisse to  
mend,  
And both behind upheld her spreading  
traine;  
Under the which her feet appeared plaine,  
Her silver feet, faire washt against this  
day:  
And her before there paced pages twaine,  
Both clad in colours like, and like array,  
The Doune and eke the Frith, both which  
prepard her way.

## XLVIII

And after these the sea nymphs marched  
all,  
All goodly damzels, deckt with long greene  
haire,  
Whom of their sire Nereides men call,  
All which the Oceans daughter to him  
bare,  
The gray eyde Doris: all which fifty are;  
All which she there on her attending had:  
Swift Proto, milde Euerate, Thetis faire,  
Soft Spio, sweete Eudore, Sao sad,  
Light Doto, wanton Glaucē, and Galene  
glad,

## XLIX

White hand Eunice, proud Dynamene,  
Joyous Thalia, goodly Amphitrite,  
Lovely Pasithee, kinde Eulimene,  
Light foote Cymothoe, and sweete Melite,  
Fairest Pherusa, Phao lilly white,  
Wondred Agave, Poris, and Nesēa,  
With Erato, that doth in love delite,  
And Panopæ, and wise Protomedæa,  
And snowy neckd Doris, and milkewhite  
Galathæa,

## L

Speedy Hippothoe, and chaste Actea,  
Large Lisianassa, and Pronæa sage,  
Evagore, and light Pontoporea,  
And she that with her least word can  
asswage  
The surging seas, when they do sorest rage,  
Cymodoce, and stout Autonoe,  
And Neso, and Eione well in age,  
And seeming still to smile, Glauconome,  
And she that hight of many heastes  
Polynome,

## LI

Fresh Alimeda, deckt with girloud greene,  
 Hyponeo, with salt bedewed wrests,  
 Laomedia, like the christall sheene,  
 Liagore, much praised for wise behests,  
 And Psamathe, for her brode snowy brests,  
 Cymo, Eupompe, and Themiste just,  
 And she that vertue loves and vice detests,  
 Evarna, and Menippe true in trust,  
 And Nemertea, learned well to rule her lust.

## LII

All these the daughters of old Nereus were,  
 Which have the sea in charge to them as-  
 siude,  
 To rule his tides, and surges to uprere,  
 To bring forth stormes, or fast them to up-  
 binde,  
 And sailers save from wreekes of wrath-  
 full winde.  
 And yet besides, three thousand more there  
 were  
 Of th' Oceans seede, but Joves and Phœbus  
 kinde;  
 The which in floods and fountaines doe ap-  
 pere,  
 And all mankinde do nourish with their  
 waters elere.

## LIII

The which, more eath it were for mortall  
 wight  
 To tell the sands, or count the starres on  
 hye,  
 Or ought more hard, then thinke to reckon  
 right.  
 But well I wote that these which I desery  
 Were present at this great solemnity:  
 And there, amongst the rest, the mother was  
 Of luekelesse Marinell, Cymodoce;  
 Which, for my Muse her selfe now tyred  
 has,  
 Unto an other canto I will overpas.

## CANTO XII

Marin, for love of Florimell,  
 In languor wastes his life:  
 The nymph his mother getteth her,  
 And gives to him for wife.

## I

O WHAT an endlesse worke have I in  
 hand,  
 To count the seas abundant progeny,

Whose fruitfull seede farre passeth those  
 in land,  
 And also those which womme in th' azure  
 sky!  
 For much more eath to tell the starres on  
 hy,  
 Albe they endlesse seeme in estimation,  
 Then to recount the seas posterity:  
 So fertile be the floods in generation,  
 So huge their numbers, and so numberlesse  
 their nation.

## II

Therefore the antique wisards well in-  
 vented,  
 That Venus of the fomy sea was bred;  
 For that the seas by her are most aug-  
 mented.  
 Witnessse th' excceding fry which there are  
 fed,  
 And wondrous sholes, which may of none  
 be red.  
 Then blame me not, if I have err'd in  
 count  
 Of gods, of nymphs, of rivers yet unred:  
 For though their numbers do much more  
 surmount,  
 Yet all those same were there, which erst I  
 did recount.

## III

All those were there, and many other more,  
 Whose names and nations were too long to  
 tell,  
 That Proteus house they fild even to the  
 dore;  
 Yet were they all in order, as befell,  
 According their degrees disposed well.  
 Amongst the rest was faire Cymodoce,  
 The mother of unlucky Marinell,  
 Who thither with her came, to learne and  
 see  
 The manner of the gods when they at ban-  
 quet be.

## IV

But for he was halfe mortall, being bred  
 Of mortall sire, though of immortall  
 wombe,  
 He might not with immortall food be fed,  
 Ne with th' eternall gods to baneket come;  
 But walkt abroad, and round about did  
 rome,  
 To view the building of that uneouth plaec,  
 That seem'd unlike unto his earthly home:

Where, as he to and fro by chaunce did  
trace,  
There unto him betid a disaventrons case.

## V

Under the hanging of an hideous clieffe  
He heard the lamentable voice of one  
That piteously complaind her carefull  
grieffe,  
Which never she before disclosd to none,  
But to her selfe her sorrow did bemone.  
So feelingly her case she did complaine,  
That ruth it moved in the rocky stone,  
And made it seeme to feelee her grievous  
paine,  
And oft to grone with billowes beating from  
the maine.

## VI

'Though vaine I see my sorrowes to unfold,  
And count my cares, when none is nigh to  
heare,  
Yet, hoping griefe may lessen being told,  
I will them tell though unto no man neare:  
For Heaven, that unto all lends equal eare,  
Is farre from hearing of my heavy plight;  
And lowest Hell, to which I lie most neare,  
Cares not what evils hap to wretched wight;  
And greedy seas doe in the spoile of life  
delight.

## VII

'Yet loe! the seas I see by often beating  
Doe pearce the rockes, and hardest mar-  
ble weares;  
But his hard rocky hart for no entreating  
Will yeeld, but when my piteous plaints he  
heares,  
Is hardned more with my abundant teares.  
Yet though he never list to me relent,  
But let me waste in woe my wretched  
yeares,  
Yet will I never of my love repent,  
But joy that for his sake I suffer prisonment.

## VIII

'And when my weary ghost, with griefe  
outworne,  
By timely death shall winne her wished  
rest,  
Let then this plaint unto his eares be borne,  
That blame it is to him, that armes pro-  
fest,  
To let her die, whom he might have re-  
drest.'

There did she pause, inforced to give place  
Unto the passion that her heart opprest;  
And after she had wept and wail'd a space,  
She gan afresh thus to renew her wretched  
case:

## IX

'Ye gods of seas, if any gods at all  
Have care of right, or ruth of wretches  
wrong,  
By one or other way me, woefull thrall,  
Deliver hence out of this dungeon strong,  
In which I daily dying am too long.  
And if ye deeme me death for loving one  
That loves not me, then doe it not prolong,  
But let me die and end my daies attone,  
And let him live unlov'd, or love him selfe  
alone.

## X

'But if that life ye unto me decree,  
Then let mee live as lovers ought to do,  
And of my lifes deare love beloved be:  
And if he shall through pride your doome  
undo,  
Do you by duresse him compell thereto,  
And in this prison put him here with me:  
One prison fittest is to hold us two:  
So had I rather to be thrall then free;  
Such thraldome or such freedome let it  
surely be.

## XI

'But O vaine judgement, and conditions  
vaine,  
The which the prisoner points unto the free!  
The whiles I him condemne, and deeme his  
paine,  
He where he list goes loose, and laughs at  
me.  
So ever loose, so ever happy be.  
But where so loose or happy that thou art,  
Know, Marinell, that all this is for thee.'  
With that she wept and wail'd, as if her  
hart  
Would quite have burst through great  
abundance of her smart.

## XII

All which complaint when Marinell had  
heard,  
And understood the cause of all her care  
To come of him, for using her so hard,  
His stubborne heart, that never felt mis-  
fare.



Was tought with soft remorse and pitty rare;  
That even for grieve of minde he oft did  
grone,  
And inly wish that in his powre it weare  
Her to redresse: but since he meanes found  
none,  
He could no more but her great misery be-  
mone.

## XIII

Thus whilst his stony heart with tender  
ruth  
Was tought, and mighty courage mollifide,  
Danie Venus sonne, that tameth stubborne  
youth  
With iron bit, and maketh him abide,  
Till like a victor on his backe he ride,  
Into his mouth his maystring bridle threw,  
That made him stoupe, till he did him be-  
stride:  
Then gan he make him tread his steps  
anew,  
And learne to love, by learning lovers  
paines to rew.

## XIV

Now gan he in his grieved minde devise,  
How from that dungeon he might her en-  
large:  
Some while he thought, by faire and hum-  
ble wise  
To Proteus selfe to sue for her discharge;  
But then he fear'd his mothers former  
charge  
Gainst womens love, long given him in  
vaine:  
Then gan he thinke, perforce with sword  
and targe  
Her forth to fetch, and Proteus to con-  
straine;  
But soone he gan such folly to forthinke  
again.

## XV

Then did he cast to steale her thence away,  
And with him beare, where none of her  
might know.  
But all in vaine: forwhy he found no way  
To enter in, or issue forth below:  
For all about that rocke the sea did flow.  
And though unto his will she given were,  
Yet without ship or bote her thence to row,  
He wist not how her thence away to bere;  
And daunger well he wist long to continue  
there.

## XVI

At last when as no meanes he could in-  
vent,  
Backe to him selfe he gan returne the  
blame,  
That was the author of her punishment;  
And with vile curses and reprochfull shame  
To damne him selfe by every evill name;  
And deeme unworthy or of love or life,  
That had despise so chaste and faire a  
dame,  
Which him had sought through trouble and  
long strife,  
Yet had refusde a god that her had sought  
to wife.

## XVII

In this sad plight he walked here and there,  
And romed round about the rocke in vaine,  
As he had lost him selfe, he wist not where;  
Oft listening if he mote her heare againe,  
And still bemoaning her unworthy paine:  
Like as an hynde whose calfe is false un-  
wares  
Into some pit, where she him heares com-  
plaine,  
An hundred times about the pit side fares,  
Right sorrowfully mourning her bereaved  
cares.

## XVIII

And now by this the feast was throughly  
ended,  
And every one gan homeward to resort.  
Which seeing, Marinell was sore offended,  
That his departure thence should be so  
short,  
And leave his love in that sea-walled fort.  
Yet durst he not his mother disobay;  
But her attending in full seemly sort,  
Did march amongst the many all the way:  
And all the way did inly mourne, like one  
astray.

## XIX

Being returned to his mothers bowre,  
In solitary silence far from wight,  
He gan record the lamentable stowre  
In which his wretched love lay day and  
night,  
For his deare sake, that ill deserv'd that  
plight:  
The thought whereof empierst his hart so  
deepe,  
That of no worldly thing he tooke delight;

Ne dayly food did take, ne nightly sleepe,  
But pyn'd, and mourn'd, and languisht, and  
alone did weepe;

## XX

That in short space his wonted chearefull  
hew  
Gan fade, and lively spirits deaded quight:  
His checke bones raw, and eie-pits hollow  
grew,  
And brawney armes had lost their knowen  
might,  
That nothing like himselfe he seem'd in  
sight.  
Ere long so weake of limbe, and sicke of  
love  
He woxe, that lenger he note stand up-  
right,  
But to his bed was brought, and layd above,  
Like ruefull ghost, unable once to stirre or  
move.

## XXI

Which when his mother saw, she in her  
mind  
Was troubled sore, ne wist well what to  
weene,  
Ne could by search nor any meanes out  
find  
The secret cause and nature of his teene,  
Whereby she might apply some medicine;  
But weeping day and night, did him attend,  
And mourn'd to see her losse before her  
eyne,  
Which griev'd her more that she it could  
not mend:  
To see an helpelesse evill double grieve  
doth lend.

## XXII

Nought could she read the roote of his  
disease,  
Ne weene what mister maladie it is,  
Whereby to seeke some meanes it to ap-  
pease.  
Most did she thinke, but most she thought  
amis,  
That that same former fatall wound of his  
Whyleare by Tryphon was not throughly  
healed,  
But closely rankled under th' orifis:  
Least did she thinke, that which he most  
concealed,  
That love it was, which in his hart lay  
unrevealed.

## XXIII

Therefore to Tryphon she againe doth hast,  
And him doth chyde as false and fraudu-  
lent,  
That fayld the trust which she in him had  
plast,  
To cure her sonne, as he his faith had lent:  
Who now was false into new languishment  
Of his old hurt, which was not throughly  
cured.  
So backe he came unto her patient:  
Where searching every part, her well as-  
sured,  
That it was no old sore which his new paine  
procured;

## XXIV

But that it was some other maladie,  
Or grieve unknowne, which he could not  
discerne:  
So left he her withouten remedie.  
Then gan her heart to faint, and quake, and  
earne,  
And inly troubled was, the truth to learne.  
Unto himselfe she came, and him besought,  
Now with faire speches, now with threat-  
nings sterne,  
If ought lay lidden in his grieved thought,  
It to reveale: who still her answered, there  
was nought.

## XXV

Nathlesse she rested not so satisfide,  
But leaving watry gods, as booting nought,  
Unto the shinie heaven in haste she hide,  
And thence Apollo, king of leaches,  
brought.  
Apollo came; who, soone as he had sought  
Through his disease, did by and by out  
find  
That he did languish of some inward  
thought,  
The which afflicted his engrieved mind;  
Which love he red to be, that leads each  
living kind.

## XXVI

Which when he had unto his mother told,  
She gan thereat to fret and greatly grieve;  
And comming to her sonne, gan first to  
seold  
And chyde at him, that made her misbe-  
lieve:  
But afterwards she gan him soft to shrieve,  
And woove with faire intreatie, to disclose

Which of the nymphes his heart so sore did  
mieve;  
For sure she weend it was some one of  
those  
Which he had lately seene, that for his love  
he chose.

## XXVII

Now lesse she feared that same fatall read,  
That warned him of womens love beware:  
Which being ment of mortall creatures  
sead,  
For love of nymphes she thought she need  
not eare,  
But promist him, what ever wight she  
weare,  
That she her love to him would shortly  
gaine:  
So he her told: but soone as she did heare  
That Florimell it was, which wrought his  
paine,  
She gan a fresh to chafe, and grieve in every  
vaine.

## XXVIII

Yet since she saw the streight extremitie,  
In which his life unluckily was layd,  
It was no time to scan the prophecie,  
Whether old Proteus true or false had sayd,  
That his decay should happen by a mayd:  
It's late, in death, of daunger to advize,  
Or love forbid him that is life denyd:  
But rather gan in troubled mind devise  
How she that ladies libertie might enter-  
prize.

## XXIX

To Proteus selfe to sew she thought it  
vaine,  
Who was the root and worker of her woe,  
Nor unto any meaner to complaine;  
But unto great King Neptune selfe did goe,  
And on her knee before him falling lowe,  
Made humble suit unto his Majestie,  
To graunt to her her sonnes life, which his  
foe,  
A cruell tyrant, had presumptuouslie  
By wicked doome condemn'd a wretched  
death to die.

## XXX

To whom God Neptune, softly smyling,  
thus:  
'Daughter, me seemes of double wrong ye  
plaine,

Gainst one that hath both wronged you and  
us:

For death t' adward I ween'd did apper-  
taine

To none but to the seas sole souveraine.  
Read therefore who it is, which this hath  
wrought,

And for what eause; the truth discover  
plaine.

For never wight so evill did or thought,  
But would some rightfull eause pretend,  
though rightly nought.'

## XXXI

To whom she answerd: 'Then it is by name  
Proteus, that hath ordayn'd my sonne to  
die;

For that a waift, the which by fortune  
came

Upon your seas, he claym'd as propertie:  
And yet nor his, nor his in equitie,  
But yours the waift by high prerogative.  
Therefore I humbly crave your Majestie,  
It to replevie, and my sonne reprive:  
So shall you by one gift save all us three  
alive.'

## XXXII

He graunted it: and streight his warrant  
made,

Under the sea-gods seale autentieall,  
Commaunding Proteus straight t' enlarge  
the mayd

Which, wandring on his seas imperially,  
He lately tooke, and sithence kept as thrall.  
Which she receiving with meete thankeful-  
nesse,

Departed straight to Proteus therewithall:  
Who, reading it with inward loathfulnesse,  
Was grieved to restore the pledge he did  
possesse.

## XXXIII

Yet durst he not the warrant to withstand,  
But unto her delivered Florimell.

Whom she receiving by the lilly hand,  
Admyr'd her beautie much, as she mote  
well;

For she all living creatures did exeell;  
And was right joyous, that she gotten had  
So faire a wife for her sonne Marinell.

So home with her she streight the virgin  
lad,

And shewed her to him, then being sore  
bestad.



## XXXIV

Who soone as he beheld that angels face,  
 Adorn'd with all divine perfection,  
 His cheared heart eftsoones away gan chace  
 Sad death, revived with her sweet inspection,  
 And feeble spirit inly felt refection;  
 As withered weed through cruell winters  
 tine,  
 That feelles the warinthe of sunny beames  
 reflection,  
 Liftes up his head, that did before decline,  
 And gins to spread his leafe before the faire  
 sunshine.

## XXXV

Right so himselfe did Marinell upreare,  
 When he in place his dearest love did  
 spy;  
 And though his limbs could not his bodie  
 beare,  
 Ne former strength returne so suddenly,  
 Yet chearefull signes he shewed outwardly.  
 Ne lesse was she in secret hart affected,  
 But that she masked it with modestie,  
 For feare she should of lightnesse be detected:  
 Which to another place I leave to be  
 perfected.

THE FIFTH BOOKE  
 OF THE FAERIE QUEENE  
 CONTAYNING  
 THE LEGEND OF ARTEGALL  
 OR  
 OF JUSTICE

## I

So oft as I with state of present time  
 The image of the antique world compare,  
 When as mans age was in his freshest prime,  
 And the first blossome of faire vertue bare,  
 Such oddes I finde twixt those, and these  
 which are,  
 As that, through long continuance of his  
 course,  
 Me seemes the world is runne quite out of  
 square  
 From the first point of his appointed sourse,  
 And being once amisse, growes daily wourse  
 and wourse.

## II

For from the golden age, that first was  
 named,  
 It's now at earst become a stonie one;  
 And men themselves, the which at first  
 were framed  
 Of earthly mould, and form'd of flesh and  
 bone,  
 Are now transformed into hardest stone:  
 Such as behind their backs (so backward  
 bred)  
 Were throwne by Pyrrha and Deucalion:  
 And if then those may any worse be red,  
 They into that ere long will be degenerated.

## III

Let none then blame me, if in discipline  
 Of vertue and of civill uses lore,  
 I doe not forme them to the common line  
 Of present dayes, which are corrupted  
 sore,  
 But to the antique use which was of yore,  
 When good was onely for it selfe desyred,  
 And all men sought their owne, and none  
 no more;  
 When Justice was not for most meed out-  
 hyred,  
 But simple Truth did rayne, and was of all  
 admyred.

## IV

For that which all men then did vertue  
 call  
 Is now cald vee; and that which vice was  
 hight,  
 Is now hight vertue, and so us'd of all:  
 Right now is wrong, and wrong that was is  
 right,  
 As all things else in time are chaunged  
 quight.  
 Ne wonder; for the heavens revolution  
 Is wandred farre from where it first was  
 pight,  
 And so doe make contrarie constitution  
 Of all this lower world, toward his disso-  
 lution.

## V

For who so list into the heavens looke,  
 And search the courses of the rowling  
 speares,  
 Shall find that from the point where they  
 first tooke  
 Their setting forth, in these few thousand  
 yeares

They all are wandred much; that plaine  
appeares.  
For that same golden fleecy Ram, which  
bore  
Phrixus and Helle from their stepdames  
feares,  
Hath now forgot where he was plast of  
yore,  
And shouldred hath the Bull, which fayre  
Europa bore.

## VI

And eke the Bull hath with his bow-bent  
horne  
So hardly butted those two Twinnes of  
Jove,  
That they have crusht the Crab, and quite  
him borne  
Into the great Nemæan Lions grove.  
So now all range, and doe at randon rove  
Out of their proper places farre away,  
And all this world with them amisse doe  
move,  
And all his creatures from their course  
astray,  
Till they arrive at their last ruinous de-  
cay.

## VII

Ne is that same great glorious lampe of  
light,  
That doth enlumine all these lesser fyres,  
In better case, ne keeps his course more  
right,  
But is miscaried with the other spheres.  
For since the terme of fourteene hundred  
yeres,  
That learned Ptolomæe his hight did  
take,  
He is declyned from that marke of theirs  
Nigh thirtie minutes to the southerne lake;  
That makes me feare in time he will us quite  
forsake.

## VIII

And if to those Ægyptian wisards old,  
Which in star-read were wont have best in-  
sight,  
Faith may be given, it is by them told,  
That since the time they first tooke the  
sunnes hight,  
Foure times his place he shifted hath in  
sight,  
And twice hath risen where he now doth  
west.

And wested twice where he ought rise  
aright.  
But most is Mars amisse of all the rest,  
And next to him old Saturne, that was wont  
be best.

## IX

For during Saturnes ancient raigne it's  
sayd  
That all the world with goodnesse did  
abound:  
All loved vertue, no man was affrayd  
Of force, ne fraud in wight was to be found.  
No warre was knowne, no dreadfull trom-  
pets sound,  
Peace universall rayn'd mougst men and  
beasts,  
And all things freely grew out of the  
ground:  
Justice sate high ador'd with solemne  
feasts,  
And to all people did divide her dred be-  
heasts.

## X

Most sacred vertue she of all the rest,  
Resembling God in his imperiall might;  
Whose sovaine powre is herein most  
exprest,  
That both to good and bad he dealeth  
right,  
And all his workes with justice hath be-  
dight.  
That powre he also doth to princes lend,  
And makes them like himselfe in glorious  
sight,  
To sit in his owne seate, his cause to end,  
And rule his people right, as he doth re-  
commend.

## XI

Dread soverayne goddess, that doest high-  
est sit  
In seate of judgement, in th' Almighties  
stead,  
And with magnifice knight and wondrous  
wit  
Doe to thy people righteous doome aread,  
That furthest nations filles with awfull  
dread,  
Pardon the boldnesse of thy basest thrall,  
That dare discourse of so divine a read,  
As thy great justice prayed over all:  
The instrument whereof, loe! here thy  
Antegall.

## CANTO I

Artegall trayn'd in Justice lore  
Irenaes quest pursuwed;  
He doeth avenge on Sanglier  
His ladies bloud embrewed.

## I

THOUGH vertue then were held in highest  
price,  
In those old times of which I doe intreat,  
Yet then likewise the wicked seede of  
vice  
Began to spring; which shortly grew full  
great,  
And with their boughes the gentle plants  
did beat.  
But evermore some of the vertuous race  
Rose up, inspired with heroicke heat,  
That cropt the branches of the sient base,  
And with strong hand their fruitfull ranck-  
nes did deface.

## II

Such first was Bacchus, that with furious  
might  
All th' East, before untam'd, did overronne,  
And wrong repressed, and establisht right,  
Which lawlesse men had formerly fordonne:  
There Justice first her princely rule be-  
gonne.  
Next Hercules his like ensample shewed,  
Who all the West with equall conquest  
wonne,  
And monstrous tyrants with his club sub-  
dewed;  
The club of Justice dread, with kingly  
powre endewed.

## III

And such was he of whom I have to tell,  
The champion of true Justice, Artégall:  
Whom (as ye lately mote remember well)  
An hard adventure, which did then befall,  
Into redoubted perill forth did call;  
That was to succour a distressed dame,  
Whom a strong tyrant did unjustly thrall,  
And from the heritage which she did clame  
Did with strong hand withhold: Grantorto  
was his name.

## IV

Wherefore the lady, which Eirena hight,  
Did to the Faery Queene her way addresse,  
To whom complaying her afflicted plight,  
She her besought of gracious redresse.

That soveraine queene, that mightie em-  
peresse,  
Whose glorie is to aide all suppliants  
pore,  
And of weake princes to be patronesse,  
Chose Artégall to right her to restore;  
For that to her he seem'd best skild in  
righteous lore.

## V

For Artégall in justice was upbrought  
Even from the cradle of his infancie,  
And all the depth of rightfull doome was  
taught  
By faire Astræa, with great industrie,  
Whilest here on earth she lived mortallie.  
For till the world from his perfection fell  
Into all filth and foule iniquitie,  
Astræa here mongst earthly men did dwell,  
And in the rules of justice them instructed  
well.

## VI

Whiles through the world she walked in  
this sort,  
Upon a day she found this gentle childe,  
Amongst his peres playing his childish  
sport:  
Whom seeing fit, and with no crime de-  
filde,  
She did allure with gifts and speaches  
milde  
To wend with her. So thence him farre  
she brought  
Into a cave from companie exilde,  
In which she nounsled him, till yeares he  
raught,  
And all the discipline of justice there him  
taught.

## VII

There she him taught to weigh both right  
and wrong  
In equall ballance with due recompence,  
And equitie to measure out along,  
According to the line of conscience,  
When so it needs with rigour to dis-  
pence.  
Of all the which, for want there of man-  
kind,  
She caused him to make experience  
Upon wyld beasts, which she in woods  
did find,  
With wrongfull powre oppressing others of  
their kind.



## VIII

Thus she him trayned, and thus she him  
taught,  
In all the skill of deeming wrong and  
right,  
Untill the ripenesse of mans yeares he  
raught;  
That even wilde beasts did feare his awfull  
sight,  
And men admyr'd his overruling might;  
Ne any liv'd on ground, that durst with-  
stand  
His dreadfull heast, much lesse him match  
in fight,  
Or bide the horror of his wreekfull hand,  
When so he list in wrath lift up his steely  
brand.

## IX

Which steely brand, to make him dreaded  
more,  
She gave unto him, gotten by her slight  
And earnest search, where it was kept in  
store  
In Joves eternall house, unwist of wight,  
Since he himselfe it us'd in that great fight  
Against the Titans, that whylome rebelled  
Gainst highest heaven; Chrysaor it was  
hight;  
Chrysaor that all other swords excelled,  
Well prov'd in that same day, when Jove  
those gyants quelled.

## X

For of most perfect metall it was made,  
Tempred with adamant amongst the same,  
And garnisht all with gold upon the blade  
In goodly wise, whereof it tooke his name,  
And was of no lesse vertue then of fame:  
For there no substance was so firme and  
hard,  
But it would pierce or cleave, where so it  
came;  
Ne any armour could his dint out ward;  
But wheresoever it did light, it throughly  
shard.

## XI

Now when the world with sinne gan to  
abound,  
Astræa loathing lenger here to space  
Mongst wicked men, in whom no truth she  
found,  
Return'd to heaven, whence she deriv'd her  
race;

Where she hath now an everlasting place,  
Mongst those twelve signes which nightly  
we doe see  
The heavens bright-shining baudricke to en-  
chace;  
And is the Virgin, sixt in her degree,  
And next her selfe her righteous ballance  
hanging bee.

## XII

But when she parted hence, she left her  
groomer,  
An yron man, which did on her attend  
Alwayes, to execute her stedfast doome,  
And willed him with Artégall to wend,  
And doe what ever thing he did intend.  
His name was Talus, made of yron mould,  
Immoveable, resistlesse, without end;  
Who in his hand an yron flae did hould,  
With which he thresht out falshood, and  
did truth unfould.

## XIII

He now went with him in this new inquest,  
Him for to aide, if aide he chaunst to neede,  
Against that cruell tyrant, which opprest  
The faire Irena with his foule misdeede,  
And kept the crowne in which she should  
succeed.  
And now together on their way they bin,  
When as they saw a squire in squallid weed,  
Lamenting sore his sorowfull sad tyne,  
With many bitter teares shed from his  
blubbred eyne.

## XIV

To whom as they approched, they espide  
A sorie sight, as ever seene with eye;  
An headlesse ladie lying him beside,  
In her owne blood all wallow'd wofully,  
That her gay clothes did in discolour die.  
Much was he moved at that ruefull sight;  
And flam'd with zeale of vengeance in-  
wardly,  
He askt who had that dame so foully dight;  
Or whether his owne hand, or whether  
other wight?

## XV

'Ah, woe is me, and well away!' quoth hee,  
Bursting forth teares, like springs out of a  
banke,  
'That ever I this dismall day did see!  
Full farre was I from thinking such a  
pranke;

Yet litle losse it were, and mickle thanke,  
If I should graunt that I have doen the  
same,  
That I mote drinke the cup whereof she  
dranke:  
But that I should die guiltie of the blame,  
The which another did, who now is fled  
with shame.'

## XVI

'Who was it then,' sayd Artegall, 'that  
wrought?  
And why? doe it declare unto me trew.'  
'A knight,' said he, 'if knight he may be  
thought,  
That did his hand in ladies bloud embrew,  
And for no cause, but as I shall you shew.  
This day as I in solace sate hereby  
With a fayre love, whose losse I now do  
rew,  
There came this knight, having in com-  
panie  
This lucklesse ladie, which now here doth  
headlesse lie.

## XVII

'He, whether mine seem'd fayrer in his  
eye,  
Or that he waxed weary of his owne,  
Would change with me; but I did it denye;  
So did the ladies both, as may be knowne:  
But he, whose spirit was with pride up-  
blowne,  
Would not so rest contented with his right,  
But having from his courser her downe  
throwne,  
Fro me reft mine away by lawlesse might,  
And on his steed her set, to beare her out  
of sight.

## XVIII

'Which when his ladie saw, she follow'd  
fast,  
And on him catching hold, gan loud to crie  
Not so to leave her, nor away to cast,  
But rather of his hand besought to die.  
With that his sword he drew all wrath-  
fully,  
And at one stroke cropt off her head with  
scorne,  
In that same place whereas it now doth  
lie.  
So he my love away with him hath borne,  
And left me here, both his and mine owne  
love to morne.'

## XIX

'Aread,' sayd he, 'which way then did he  
make?  
And by what markes may he be knowne  
again?'  
'To hope,' quoth he, 'him soone to over-  
take,  
That hence so long departed, is but vaine:  
But yet he pricked over yonder plaine,  
And as I marked, bore upon his shield,  
By which it's easie him to know againe,  
A broken sword within a bloodie field;  
Expressing well his nature, which the same  
did wield.'

## XX

No sooner sayd, but streight he after sent  
His yron page, who him pursu'd so light,  
As that it seem'd above the ground he went:  
For he was swift as swallow in her flight,  
And strong as lyon in his lordly might.  
It was not long before he overtooke  
Sir Sanglier (so cleeped was that knight);  
Whom at the first he ghessed by his looke,  
And by the other markes which of his shield  
he tooke.

## XXI

He bad him stay, and backe with him re-  
tire;  
Who, full of scorne to be commaunded so,  
The lady to alight did eft require,  
Whilest he reformed that uncivill fo:  
And streight at him with all his force did  
go.  
Who mov'd no more therewith, then when  
a rocke  
Is lightly stricken with some stones throw;  
But to him leaping, lent him such a knocke,  
That on the ground he layd him like a  
sencelesse blocke.

## XXII

But ere he could him selfe recure againe,  
Him in his iron paw he seized had;  
That when he wak't out of his warelesse  
paine,  
He found him selfe, unwist, so ill bestad,  
That him he could not wag. Thence he  
him lad,  
Bound like a beast appointed to the stall:  
The sight whereof the lady sore adrad,  
And fain'd to fly for feare of being thrall;  
But he her quickly stayd, and forst to wend  
withall.

## XXIII

When to the place they came, where  
 Artegall  
 By that same carefull squire did then abide,  
 He gently gan him to demanda of all,  
 That did betwixt him and that squire betide.  
 Who with sterne countenance and indignant  
 pride  
 Did aunswere, that of all he guiltlesse  
 stood,  
 And his accuser thereuppon defide:  
 For neither he did shed that ladies bloud,  
 Nor tooke away his love, but his owne  
 proper good.

## XXIV

Well did the squire perceive him selfe too  
 weake,  
 To aunswere his defiaunce in the field,  
 And rather chose his challenge off to  
 breake,  
 Then to approve his right with speare and  
 shield,  
 And rather guilty chose him selfe to yield.  
 But Artegall by signes perceiving plaine  
 That he it was not which that lady kild,  
 But that strange knight, the fairer love to  
 gaine,  
 Did cast about by sleight the truth there-  
 out to straine;

## XXV

And sayd: 'Now sure this doubtfull causes  
 right  
 Can hardly but by sacrament be tride,  
 Or else by ordele, or by bloody fight;  
 That ill perhaps mote fall to either side.  
 But if ye please that I your cause decide,  
 Perhaps I may all further quarrell end,  
 So ye will sweare my judgement to abide.'  
 Thereto they both did franckly condescend,  
 And to his doome with listfull eares did  
 both attend.

## XXVI

'Sith then,' sayd he, 'ye both the dead  
 deny,  
 And both the living lady claime your right,  
 Let both the dead and living equally  
 Devided be betwixt you here in sight,  
 And each of either take his share aright.  
 But looke, who does dissent from this my  
 read,  
 He for a twelve moneths day shall in de-  
 spigat

Beare for his penaunce that same ladies  
 head;  
 To witsse to the world that she by him is  
 dead.'

## XXVII

Well pleased with that doome was San-  
 gliere,  
 And offred streight the lady to be slaine.  
 But that same squire, to whom she was  
 more dere,  
 When as he saw she should be cut in twaine,  
 Did yield, she rather should with him re-  
 maine  
 Alive, then to him selfe be shared dead;  
 And rather then his love should suffer  
 paine,  
 He chose with shame to beare that ladies  
 head.  
 True love despiseth shame, when life is  
 cald in dread.

## XXVIII

Whom when so willing Artegall perceaved,  
 'Not so, thou squire,' he sayd, 'but thine  
 I deeme  
 The living lady, which from thee he  
 reaved:  
 For worthy thou of her doest rightly seeme.  
 And you, sir knight, that love so light es-  
 teeme,  
 As that ye would for little leave the same,  
 Take here your owne, that doth you best  
 beseeme,  
 And with it beare the burden of defame;  
 Your owne dead ladies head, to tell abroad  
 your shame.'

## XXIX

But Sangliere disdained much his doome,  
 And sternly gan repine at his beheast;  
 Ne would for ought obay, as did become,  
 To beare that ladies head before his  
 breast:  
 Untill that Talus had his pride repress,  
 And forced him, maulgre, it up to reare.  
 Who when he saw it bootelesse to resist,  
 He tooke it up, and thence with him did  
 beare,  
 As rated spaniell takes his burden up for  
 feare.

## XXX

Much did that squire Sir Artegall adore,  
 For his great justice, held in high regard;



And as his squire him offred evermore  
To serve, for want of other meete reward,  
And wend with him on his adventure hard.  
But he thereto would by no meanes consent;

But leaving him, forth on his journey far'd:  
Ne wight with him but onely Talus went;  
They two enough t'encounter an whole  
regiment.

## CANTO II

Arte gall heares of Florimell;  
Does with the Pagan fight:  
Him slaies, drownes Lady Munera,  
Does race her castle quight.

## I

NOUGHT is more honorable to a knight,  
Ne better doth beseeme brave chevalry,  
Then to defend the feeble in their right,  
And wrong redresse in such as wend awry.  
Whilome those great heroes got thereby  
Their greatest glory, for their rightfull  
deedes,

And place deserved with the gods on hy.  
Herein the noblesse of this knight exceedes,  
Who now to perils great for justiee sake  
proceedes.

## II

To which as he now was upon the way,  
He chaunst to meet a dwarfe in hasty  
course;

Whom he requir'd his forward hast to  
stay,

Till he of tidings mote with him discourse.  
Loth was the dwarfe, yet did he stay per-  
forse,

And gan of sundry newes his store to tell,  
As to his memory they had recourse:  
But chiefly of the fairest Florimell,  
How she was found againe, and spoused to  
Marinell.

## III

For this was Dony, Florimels owne dwarfe,  
Whom having lost (as ye have heard  
whyleare)

And finding in the way the scattred scarfe,  
The fortune of her life long time did feare.  
But of her health when Arte gall did heare,  
And safe returne, he was full inly glad,  
And askt him where and when her bridale  
cheare

Should be solemniz'd: for if time he had,  
He would be there, and honor to her  
spousall ad.

## IV

'Within three daies,' quoth he, 'as I do here,  
It will be at the Castle of the Strond;  
What time, if naught me let, I will be there  
To doe her service, so as I am bond.  
But in my way a little here beyond  
A cursed cruell Sarazin doth wonne,  
That keepe a bridges passage by strong  
hond,

And many errant knights hath there for-  
donne;

That makes all men for feare that passage  
for to shonne.'

## V

'What mister wight,' quoth he, 'and how  
far hence

Is he, that doth to travellers such harmes?'  
'He is,' said he, 'a man of great defence;  
Expert in battell and in deedes of armes;  
And more emboldned by the wicked  
charmes,

With which his daughter doth him still  
support;

Having great lordships got and goodly  
farmes,

Through strong oppression of his powre  
extort;

By which he stil them holds, and keepe  
with strong effort.

## VI

'And dayly he his wrongs enereaseth more;  
For never wight he lets to passe that way,  
Over his bridge, albee he rich or poore,  
But he him makes his passage-penny pay:  
Else he doth hold him baeke or beat away.  
Thereto he hath a groome of evill guise,  
Whose scalp is bare, that bondage doth be-  
wray,

Which pols and pils the poore in piteous  
wize;

But he him selfe upon the rich doth  
tyrannize.

## VII

'His name is hight Pollente, rightly so,  
For that he is so puissant and strong,  
That with his powre he all doth overgo,  
And makes them subject to his mighty  
wrong;

And some by sleight he eke doth under-  
fong:

For on a bridge he custometh to fight,  
Which is but narrow, but exceeding long;  
And in the same are many trap fals pight,  
Through which the rider downe doth fall  
through oversight.

## VIII

'And underneath the same a river flowes,  
That is both swift and dangerous deepe  
withall;

Into the which whom so he overthrowes,  
All destitute of helpe doth headlong fall;  
But he him selfe, through practise usuall,  
Leapes forth into the flood, and there as-  
saies

His foe confused through his sodaine fall,  
That horse and man he equally dismaies,  
And either both them drownes, or trayter-  
ously slaies.

## IX

'Then doth he take the spoile of them at  
will,  
And to his daughter brings, that dwels  
thereby:

Who all that comes doth take, and there-  
with fill

The coffers of her wicked threasury;  
Which she with wrongs hath heaped up so  
hy,

That many princes she in wealth exceeds,  
And purchast all the countrey lying ny  
With the revenue of her plenteous meedes:  
Her name is Munera, agreeing with her  
deedes.

## X

'Thereto she is full faire, and rich attired,  
With golden hands and silver feete beside,  
'That many lords have her to wife desired:  
But she them all despiseth for great pride.'  
'Now by my life,' sayd he, 'and God to  
guide,

None other way will I this day betake,  
But by that bridge, whereas he doth abide:  
Therefore me thither lead.' No more he  
spake,

But thitherward forthright his ready way  
did make.

## XI

Unto the place he came within a while,  
Where on the bridge he ready armed saw

The Sarazin, awayting for some spoile.  
Who as they to the passage gan to draw,  
A villaine to them came with scull all raw,  
That passage money did of them require,  
According to the custome of their law.  
To whom he aunswerd wroth, 'Loe! there  
thy hire;'

And with that word him strooke, that  
streight he did expire.

## XII

Which when the Pagan saw, he waxed  
wroth,

And streight him selfe unto the fight ad-  
drest,

Ne was Sir Artegall behinde: so both  
Together ran with ready speares in rest.  
Right in the midst, whereas they brest to  
brest

Should meete, a trap was letten downe to  
fall

Into the flood: streight leapt the carle un-  
blest,

Well weening that his foe was falne withall:  
But he was well aware, and leapt before  
his fall.

## XIII

There being both together in the flood,  
They each at other tyrannously flew;  
Ne ought the water cooled their whot  
bloud,

But rather in them kindled choler new.  
But there the Paynim, who that use well  
knew

To fight in water, great advantage had,  
That oftentimes him nigh he overthrew:  
And eke the courser whereuppon he rad  
Could swim like to a fish, whiles he his  
backe bestrad.

## XIV

Which oddes when as Sir Artegall espide,  
He saw no way but close with him in hast;  
And to him driving strongly downe the  
tide,

Upon his iron coller griped fast,  
That with the straint his wesand nigh he  
brast.

There they together strove and struggled  
long,

Either the other from his steede to cast;  
Ne ever Artegall his griple strong  
For any thing wold slacke, but still upon  
him hong.

## XV

As when a dolphin and a sele are met  
 In the wide champion of the ocean plaine:  
 With cruell chanfe their courages they whet,  
 The maysterdome of each by force to  
   gaine,  
 And dreadfull battaile twixt them do dar-  
   raine:  
 They snuf, they snort, they bounce, they  
   rage, they rore,  
 That all the sea, disturbed with their traine,  
 Doth frie with fome above the surges hore:  
 Such was betwixt these two the trouble-  
   some uprore.

## XVI

So Artegall at length him forst forsake  
 His horses backe, for dread of being  
   drownd,  
 And to his handy swimming him betake.  
 Eftsoones him selfe he from his hold un-  
   bownd,  
 And then no ods at all in him he fownd:  
 For Artegall in swimming skilfull was,  
 And durst the depth of any water sownd.  
 So ought each knight, that use of perill has,  
 In swimming be expert, through waters  
   force to pas.

## XVII

Then very doubtfull was the warres event,  
 Uncertaine whether had the better side:  
 For both were skild in that experiment,  
 And both in armes well trained and throughly  
   tride.  
 But Artegall was better breath'd beside,  
 And towards th' end grew greater in his  
   might,  
 That his faint foe no longer could abide  
 His puissance, ne beare him selfe upright,  
 But from the water to the land betooke his  
   flight.

## XVIII

But Artegall pursewd him still so neare,  
 With bright Chrysaor in his cruell hand,  
 That, as his head he gan a litle reare  
 Above the brinke, to tread upon the land,  
 He smote it off, that tumbling on the strand  
 It bit the earth for very fell despight,  
 And gnashed with his teeth, as if he band  
 High God, whose goodnesse he despaired  
   quight,  
 Or curst the hand which did that vengeance  
   on him dight.

## XIX

His corps was carried downe along the lee,  
 Whose waters with his filthy bloud it  
   stayned:  
 But his blasphemous head, that all might  
   see,  
 He pitcht upon a pole on high ordayned;  
 Where many years it afterwards remayned,  
 To be a mirrour to all mighty men,  
 In whose right hands great power is con-  
   tayned,  
 That none of them the feeble overren,  
 But alwaies doe their powre within just  
   compaspe pen.

## XX

That done, unto the castle he did wend,  
 In which the Paynims daughter did abide,  
 Guarded of many which did her defend:  
 Of whom he entrance sought, but was de-  
   nide,  
 And with reprochfull blasphemy defide,  
 Beaten with stones downe from the battil-  
   ment,  
 That he was forced to withdraw aside;  
 And bad his servant Talus to invent  
 Which way he enter might without endan-  
   germent.

## XXI

Eftsoones his page drew to the castle gate,  
 And with his iron flae at it let flie,  
 That all the warders it did sore amate,  
 The which erewhile spake so reprochfully,  
 And made them stoupe, that looked earst  
   so hie.  
 Yet still he bet and bounst uppon the dore,  
 And thundred strokes thereon so hideous-  
   lie,  
 That all the peeee he shaken from the  
   flore,  
 And filled all the house with feare and  
   great uprore.

## XXII

With noise whereof the lady forth appeared  
 Uppon the castle wall; and when she saw  
 The daungerous state in which she stood,  
   she feared  
 The sad effect of her neare overthrow;  
 And gan entreat that iron man below  
 To cease his outrage, and him faire be-  
   sought,  
 Sith neither force of stones which they did  
   throw,



Nor powr of charms, which she against him  
wrought,  
Might otherwise prevaile, or make him  
cease for ought.

## XXIII

But when as yet she saw him to proceede,  
Unmov'd with praier or with piteous  
thought,  
She ment him to corrupt with goodly  
meede;  
And causde great sackes with endlesse  
riches fraught,  
Unto the battilment to be upbrought,  
And powred forth over the castle wall,  
That she might win some time, though  
dearly bought,  
Whilest he to gathering of the gold did  
fall.  
But he was nothing mov'd nor tempted  
therewithall;

## XXIV

But still continu'd his assault the more,  
And layd on load with his huge yron  
faile,  
That at the length he has yrent the dore,  
And made way for his maister to assaile.  
Who being entred, nought did then availe  
For wight, against his powre them selves to  
reare:  
Each one did flie; their hearts began to  
faile;  
And hid them selves in corners here and  
there;  
And eke their dame halfe dead did hide  
her self for feare.

## XXV

Long they her sought, yet no where could  
they finde her,  
That sure they ween'd she was escapt  
away:  
But Talus, that could like a limehound  
winde her,  
And all things secrete wisely could be-  
wray,  
At length found out whereas she hidden  
lay  
Under an heape of gold. Thence he her  
drew  
By the faire lockes, and fowly did array,  
Withouten pittie of her goodly hew,  
That Artegall him selfe her seemelesse  
plight did rew.

## XXVI

Yet for no pittie would he change the cours  
Of justice, which in Talus hand did lye;  
Who rudely hayld her forth without re-  
morse,  
Still holding up her suppliant hands on  
hye,  
And kneeling at his feete submissively.  
But he her suppliant hands, those hands o-  
gold,  
And eke her feete, those feete of silver  
trye,  
Which sought unrighteousnesse, and just-  
ice sold,  
Chopt off, and nayld on high, that all  
might them behold.

## XXVII

Her selfe then tooke he by the selender  
wast,  
In vaine loud crying, and into the flood  
Over the castle wall adowne her cast,  
And there her drowned in the durty mud:  
But the streame washt away her guilty  
blood.  
Thereafter all that mucky pelfe he tooke,  
The spoile of peoples evill gotten good,  
The which her sire had scrap't by hooke  
and crooke,  
And burning all to ashes, powr'd it downe  
the brooke.

## XXVIII

And lastly all that castle quite he raced,  
Even from the sole of his foundation,  
And all the hewen stones thereof defaced,  
That there mote be no hope of reparation,  
Nor memory thereof to any nation.  
All which when Talus throughly had per-  
fourmed,  
Sir Artegall undid the evill fashion,  
And wicked customes of that bridge re-  
fourmed:  
Which done, unto his former journey he  
retourned.

## XXIX

In which they measur'd mickle weary  
way,  
Till that at length nigh to the sea they  
drew;  
By which as they did travell on a day,  
They saw before them, far as they could  
vew,  
Full many people gathered in a crew;

Whose great assembly they did much admire;  
 For never there the like resort they knew.  
 So towards them they coasted, to enquire  
 What thing so many nations met did there desire.

## XXX

There they beheld a mighty gyant stand  
 Upon a rocke, and holding forth on hie  
 An huge great paire of ballance in his hand,  
 With which he boasted in his surquedrie,  
 That all the world he would weigh equallie,  
 If ought he had the same to counterpoys.  
 For want whereof he weighed vanity,  
 And fild his ballaunce full of idle toys:  
 Yet was admired much of fooles, women,  
 and boys.

## XXXI

He sayd that he would all the earth up-  
 take,  
 And all the sea, devided each from either:  
 So would he of the fire one ballaunce make,  
 And one of th' ayre, without or wind or  
 wether:  
 Then would he ballaunce heaven and hell  
 together,  
 And all that did within them all containe;  
 Of all whose weight he would not misse a  
 fether:  
 And looke what surplus did of each re-  
 maine,  
 He would to his owne part restore the same  
 againe.

## XXXII

Forwhy, he sayd, they all unequall were,  
 And had encroched uppon others share,  
 Like as the sea (which plaine he shewed  
 there)  
 Had worne the earth, so did the fire the  
 aire,  
 So all the rest did others parts empaire,  
 And so were realmes and nations run awry.  
 All which he undertooke for to repaire,  
 In sort as they were formed aunciently;  
 And all things would reduce unto equality.

## XXXIII

Therefore the vulgar did about him flocke,  
 And cluster thicke unto his leasings vaine,  
 Like foolish flies about an hony croke,  
 In hope by him great benefite to gaine,

And uncontrolled freedome to obtaine.  
 All which when Artegall did see and heare,  
 How he mis-led the simple peoples traine,  
 In sdeignfull wize he drew unto him neare,  
 And thus unto him spake, without regard  
 or feare:

## XXXIV

'Thou that presum'st to weigh the world  
 anew,  
 And all things to an equall to restore,  
 In stead of right me seemes great wrong  
 dost shew,  
 And far above thy forces pitch to sore.  
 For ere thou limit what is lesse or more  
 In every thing, thou oughtest first to know,  
 What was the poyse of every part of yore:  
 And looke then, how much it doth over-  
 flow,  
 Or faile thereof, so much is more then just  
 to trow.

## XXXV

'For at the first they all created were  
 In goodly measure by their Makers might,  
 And weighed out in ballaunces so nere,  
 That not a dram was missing of their  
 right:  
 The earth was in the middle centre pight,  
 In which it doth immoveable abide,  
 Hemd in with waters like a wall in sight;  
 And they with aire, that not a drop can  
 slide:  
 Al which the heavens containe, and in their  
 courses guide.

## XXXVI

'Such heavenly justice doth among them  
 raine,  
 That every one doe know their certaine  
 bound,  
 In which they doe these many yeares re-  
 maine,  
 And amongst them al no change hath yet  
 beene fonn'd.  
 Bnt if thou now shouldst weigh them new  
 in pound,  
 We are not sure they would so long re-  
 maine:  
 All change is perillous, and all chaunce un-  
 sound.  
 Therefore leave off to weigh them all  
 againe,  
 Till we may be assur'd they shall their  
 course retaine.'

## XXXVII

'Thou foolishe Elfe,' said then the gyant  
wroth,  
'Seest not, how badly all things present  
bee,  
And each estate quite out of order goth ?  
The sea it selfe doest thou not plainly see  
Eneroch uppon the land there under thee;  
And th' earth it selfe how daily its increast  
By all that dying to it turned be ?  
Were it not good that wrong were then  
surceast,  
And from the most, that some were given  
to the least ?

## XXXVIII

'Therefore I will throw downe these moun-  
taines hie,  
And make them levell with the lowly  
plaine:  
These towring rocks, which reach unto the  
skie,  
I will thrust downe into the deepest maine,  
And as they were, them equalize againe.  
Tyrants, that make men subject to their  
law,  
I will suppress, that they no more may  
raigne;  
And lordings curbe, that commons over-aw;  
And all the wealth of rich men to the poore  
will draw.'

## XXXIX

'Of things unseene how canst thou decme  
aright,'  
Then answered the righteous Artegall,  
'Sith thou misdeem'st so much of things in  
sight ?  
What though the sea with waves continuall  
Doe eate the earth ? it is no more at all,  
Ne is the earth the lesse, or loseth ought:  
For whatsoever from one place doth fall  
Is with the tide unto an other brought:  
For there is nothing lost, that may be  
found, if sought.

## XL

'Likewise the earth is not augmented more  
By all that dying into it doe fade:  
For of the earth they formed were of yore;  
How ever gay their blossome or their blade  
Doe flourish now, they into dust shall vade.  
What wrong then is it, if that when they die,  
They turne to that whereof they first were  
made ?

All in the powre of their great Maker lie:  
All creatures must obey the voice of the  
Most Hie.

## XLI

'They live, they die, like as He doth ordaine,  
Ne ever any asketh reason why.  
The hils doe not the lowly dales disdaine;  
The dales doe not the lofty hils envy.  
He maketh kings to sit in soverainty;  
He maketh subjects to their powre obay;  
He pulleth downe, He setteth up on hy;  
He gives to this, from that He takes away:  
For all we have is His: what He list doe,  
He may.

## XLII

'What ever thing is done, by Him is donne,  
Ne any may His mighty will withstand;  
Ne any may His soveraine power shoume,  
Ne loose that He hath bound with stedfast  
band.  
In vaine therefore doest thou now take in  
hand,  
To call to count, or weigh His workes anew,  
Whose counsels depth thou canst not under-  
stand;  
Sith of things subject to thy daily vew  
Thou doest not know the causes, nor their  
courses dew.

## XLIII

'For take thy ballannce, if thou be so wise,  
And weigh the winde that under heaven  
doth blow;  
Or weigh the light that in the East doth rise;  
Or weigh the thought that from mans mind  
doth flow.  
But if the weight of these thou canst not  
show,  
Weigh but one word which from thy lips  
doth fall:  
For how canst thou those greater secrets  
know,  
That doest not know the least thing of  
them all ?  
Ill can he rule the great, that cannot reach  
the small.'

## XLIV

Therewith the gyant much abashed sayd,  
That he of little things made reckoning  
light,  
Yet the least word that ever could be layd  
Within his ballaunce he could way aright.



'Which is,' sayd he, 'more heavy then in weight,  
The right or wrong, the false or else the trew?'

He answered that he would try it streight:  
So he the words into his ballaunce threw;  
But streight the winged words out of his ballaunce flew.

## XLV

Wroth wext he then, and sayd that words were light,  
Ne would within his ballaunce well abide:  
But he could justly weigh the wrong or right.

'Well then,' sayd Artegall, 'let it be tride.  
First in one ballance set the true aside.'  
He did so first; and then the false he layd

In th' other scale; but still it downe did slide,  
And by no meane could in the weight be stayd:

For by no meanes the false will with the truth be wayd.

## XLVI

'Now take the right likewise,' sayd Artegale,  
'And counterpeise the same with so much wrong.'

So first the right he put into one scale;  
And then the gyant strove with puissance strong

To fill the other scale with so much wrong.  
But all the wrongs that he therein could lay

Might not it peise; yet did he labour long,  
And swat, and chauf'd, and proved every way:

Yet all the wrongs could not a litle right downe way.

## XLVII

Which when he saw, he greatly grew in rage,

And almost would his balances have broken:

But Artegall him fairely gan asswage,  
And said: 'Be not upon thy balance wroken;

For they doe nought but right or wrong be-token;

But in the mind the doome of right must bee:

And so likewise of words, the which be spoken,

The eare must be the ballance, to decree  
And judge, whether with truth or falshood they agree.

## XLVIII

'But set the truth and set the right aside,  
For they with wrong or falshood will not fare;

And put two wrongs together to be tride,  
Or else two falses, of each equall share,  
And then together doe them both compare:  
For truth is one, and right is ever one.'  
So did he, and then plaine it did appeare,  
Whether of them the greater were attone.  
But right sate in the midst of the beame alone.

## XLIX

But he the right from thence did thrust away,

For it was not the right which he did seeke;  
But rather strove extremities to way,  
Th' one to diminish, th' other for to eeke:  
For of the meane he greatly did misleeke.  
Whom when so lewdly minded Talus found,  
Approching nigh unto him, cheeke by cheeke,

He shouldered him from off the higher ground,

And down the rock him throwing, in the sea him dround.

## L

Like as a ship, whom cruell tempest drives  
Upon a rocke with horrible dismay,  
Her shattered ribs in thousand peeces rives,  
And spoyling all her geares and goodly ray,  
Does make her selfe misfortunes piteous pray:

So downe the cliffe the wretched gyant tumbled;

His battred ballances in peeces lay,  
His timbered bones all broken rudely rumbled:

So was the high aspyring with huge ruine humbled.

## LI

That when the people, which had there about

Long wayted, saw his sudden desolation,  
They gan to gather in tumultuous rout,  
And mutining, to stirre up civill faction,

For certaine losse of so great expectation.  
 For well they hoped to have got great  
     good,  
 And wondrous riches by his innovation.  
 Therefore resolving to revenge his blood,  
 They rose in armes, and all in battell order  
     stood.

## LII

Which lawlesse multitude him conning  
     too,  
 In warlike wise, when Artegall did vew,  
 He much was troubled, ne wist what to  
     doo.  
 For loth he was his noble hands t' enbrew  
 In the base blood of such a rascall crew;  
 And otherwise, if that he should retire,  
 He fear'd least they with shame would him  
     pursew.  
 Therefore he Talus to them sent, t' inquire  
 The cause of their array, and truce for to  
     desire.

## LIII

But soone as they him nigh approaching  
     spide,  
 They gan with all their weapons him as-  
     say,  
 And rudely stroke at him on every side:  
 Yet nought they could him hurt, ne ought  
     dismay.  
 But when at them he with his flaile gan  
     lay,  
 He like a swarme of flyes them overthrew;  
 Ne any of them durst come in his way,  
 But here and there before his presence  
     flew,  
 And hid themselves in holes and bushes  
     from his vew.

## LIV

As when a faulcon hath with nimble flight  
 Flowne at a flush of ducks, foreby the  
     brooke,  
 The trembling foule, dismayd with dread-  
     full sight  
 Of death, the which them almost overtooke,  
 Doe hide themselves from her astonying  
     looke  
 Amongst the flags and covert round about.  
 When Talus saw they all the field for-  
     sooke,  
 And none appear'd of all that raskall rout,  
 To Artegall he turn'd, and went with him  
     throughout.

## CANTO III

The spousals of faire Florimell,  
 Where turney many knights:  
 There Braggadochio is uncas'd  
     In all the ladies sights.

## I

AFTER long stormes and tempests over-  
     blowne,  
 The sunne at length his joyous face doth  
     cleare:  
 So when as Fortune all her spight hath  
     showne,  
 Some blisfull houres at last must needes  
     appeare;  
 Else should afflicted wights oftymes de-  
     spaire.  
 So comes it now to Florimell by tourne,  
 After long sorrowes suffered whyleare,  
 In which captiv'd she many moneths did  
     mourne,  
 To tast of joy, and to wont pleasures to re-  
     tourne.

## II

Who being freed from Proteus cruell band  
 By Marinell, was unto him affide,  
 And by him brought againe to Faerie Land;  
 Where he her spous'd, and made his joyous  
     bride.  
 The time and place was blazed farre and  
     wide,  
 And solemne feasts and giusts ordain'd  
     therefore.  
 To which there did resort from every  
     side  
 Of lords and ladies infinite great store;  
 Ne any knight was absent, that brave cour-  
     age bore.

## III

To tell the glorie of the feast that day,  
 The goodly service, the devicefull sights,  
 The bridegromes state, the brides most  
     rich aray,  
 The pride of ladies, and the worth of  
     knights,  
 The royall banquets, and the rare de-  
     lights  
 Were worke fit for an herauld, not for  
     me:  
 But for so much as to my lot here lights,  
 That with this present treatise doth agree,  
 True vertue to advance, shall here re-  
     counted bee.

## IV

When all men had with full satietie  
Of meates and drinckes their appetites suf-  
fiz'd,

To deedes of armes and prooffe of chevalrie  
They gan themselves addresse, full rich  
agniz'd,

As each one had his furnitures deviz'd.  
And first of all issu'd Sir Marinell,  
And with him sixe knights more, which en-  
terpriz'd

To challenge all in right of Florimell,  
And to maintaine that she all others did  
excell.

## V

The first of them was hight Sir Orimont,  
A noble knight, and tride in hard assayes;  
The second had to name Sir Bellisont,  
But second unto none in prowesse prayse;  
The third was Brunell, famous in his dayes;  
The fourth Ecastor, of exceeding might;  
The fift Armeddan, skild in lovely layes;  
The sixt was Lansack, a redoubted knight:  
All sixe well seene in armes, and prov'd in  
many a fight.

## VI

And then against came all that list to  
giust,  
From every coast and countrie under sunne:  
None was debard, but all had leave that  
lust.

The trumpets sound; then all together  
ronne.

Full many deedes of armes that day were  
donne,  
And many knights unhorst, and many  
wounded,

As fortune fell; yet litle lost or wonne:  
But all that day the greatest prayse re-  
dounded

To Marinell, whose name the heralds loud  
resounded.

## VII

The second day, so soone as morrow light  
Appear'd in heaven, into the field they  
came,

And there all day continew'd cruell fight,  
With divers fortune fit for such a game,  
In which all strove with perill to winne  
fame.

Yet whether side was victor note be ghest:  
But at the last the trumpets did proclame

That Marinell that day deserved best.  
So they disparted were, and all men went  
to rest.

## VIII

The third day came, that should due tryall  
lend

Of all the rest, and then this warlike crew  
Together met, of all to make an end.

There Marinell great deedes of armes did  
shew;

And through the thickest like a lyon flew,  
Rashing off helmes, and rying plates a  
sonder,

That every one his daunger did eschew.  
So terribly his dreadfull strokes did thonder,  
That all men stood amaz'd, and at his  
might did wonder.

## IX

But what on earth can alwayes happie  
stand?

The greater prowesse greater perils find.  
So farre he past amongst his enemies band,  
That they have him enclosed so behind,  
As by no meanes he can himselfe outwind.  
And now perforce they have him prisoner  
taken;

And now they doe with captive bands him  
bind;

And now they lead him thence, of all for-  
saken,

Unlesse some succour had in time him over-  
taken.

## X

It fortun'd whylest they were thus ill beset,  
Sir Artegall into the tilt-yard came,  
With Braggadochio, whom he lately met  
Upon the way, with that his snowy dame.  
Where when he understood by common  
fame

What evill hap to Marinell betid,  
He much was mov'd at so unworthie shame,  
And streight that boaster prayd, with whom  
he rid,

To change his shield with him, to be the  
better hid.

## XI

So forth he went, and soone them over hent,  
Where they were leading Marinell away;  
Whom he assayld with dreadlesse hardiment,  
And forst the burden of their prize to stay.  
They were an hundred knights of that array;



Of which th' one halfe upon himselfe did set,  
The other stayd behind to gard the pray.  
But he ere long the former fiftie bet;  
And from the other fiftie soone the prisoner  
fet.

## XII

So backe he brought Sir Marinell againe;  
Whom having quickly arm'd againe anew,  
They both together joynd might and  
maine,  
To set afresh on all the other crew.  
Whom with sore havocke soone they over-  
threw,  
And chased quite out of the field, that none  
Against them durst his head to perill shew.  
So were they left lords of the field alone:  
So Marinell by him was rescu'd from his  
fone.

## XIII

Which when he had perform'd, then backe  
againe  
To Braggadochio did his shield restore:  
Who all this while behind him did remaine,  
Keeping there close with him in pretious  
store  
That his false ladie, as ye heard afore.  
Then did the trumpets sound, and judges  
rose,  
And all these knights, which that day ar-  
mour bore,  
Came to the open hall, to listen whose  
The honour of the prize should be adjudg'd  
by those.

## XIV

And thether also came in open sight  
Fayre Florimell, into the common hall,  
To greet his guerdon unto every knight,  
And best to him to whom the best should  
fall.  
Then for that stranger knight they loud  
did call,  
To whom that day they should the girlond  
yield:  
Who came not forth: but for Sir Artegall  
Came Braggadochio, and did shew his shield,  
Which bore the sunne brode blazed in a  
golden field.

## XV

The sight whereof did all with gladnesse  
fill:  
So unto him they did addeeme the prise

Of all that triumph. Then the trumpets  
shrill  
Don Braggadochios name resounded thrise:  
So courage lent a cloke to cowardise.  
And then to him came fayrest Florimell,  
And goodly gan to greet his brave em-  
prise,  
And thousand thanks him yeeld, that had  
so well  
Approv'd that day that she all others did  
excell.

## XVI

To whom the boaster, that all knights did  
blot,  
With proud disdaine did scornefull answer  
make,  
That what he did that day, he did it not  
For her, but for his owne deare ladies  
sake,  
Whom on his perill he did undertake,  
Both her and eke all others to excell:  
And further did uncomely speaches crake.  
Much did his words the gentle ladie quell,  
And turn'd aside for shame to heare what  
he did tell.

## XVII

Then forth he brought his snowy Florinele,  
Whom Trompart had in keeping there be-  
side,  
Covered from peoples gazement with a  
vele.  
Whom when discovered they had throughly  
eide,  
With great amazement they were stupe-  
fide;  
And said, that surely Florimell it was,  
Or if it were not Florimell so tride,  
That Florimell her selfe she then did pas.  
So feeble skill of perfect things the vulgar  
has.

## XVIII

Which when as Marinell beheld likewise,  
He was therewith exceedingly dismayd;  
Ne wist he what to thinke, or to devise,  
But, like as one whom feends had made  
affrayd,  
He long astonisht stood, ne ought he sayd,  
Ne ought he did, but with fast fixed eies  
He gazed still upon that snowy mayd;  
Whom ever as he did the more avize,  
The more to be true Florimell he did sur-  
mize.

## XIX

As when two sunnes appeare in the azure  
 skye,  
 Mounted in Phœbus charet fierie bright,  
 Both darting forth faire beames to each  
 mans eye,  
 And both adorn'd with lampes of flaming  
 light,  
 All that behold so strange prodigious  
 sight,  
 Not knowing Natures worke, nor what to  
 weene,  
 Are rapt with wonder and with rare af-  
 fright:

So stood Sir Marinell, when he had seene  
 The semblant of this false by his faire  
 beauties queene.

## XX

All which when Artegall, who all this  
 while  
 Stood in the preasse close covered, well  
 adwewd,  
 And saw that boasters pride and gracelesse  
 guile,  
 He could no longer beare, but forth is-  
 sewed,  
 And unto all himselfe there open shewed,  
 And to the boaster said: 'Thou losell  
 base,  
 That hast with borrowed plumes thy selfe  
 endewed,  
 And others worth with leasings doest de-  
 face,  
 When they are all restor'd, thou shalt rest  
 in disgrace.

## XXI

'That shield, which thou doest beare, was  
 it indeed,  
 Which this dayes honour sav'd to Mari-  
 nell;  
 But not that arme, nor thou the man, I  
 reed,  
 Which didst that service unto Florimell.  
 For prooffe shew forth thy sword, and let  
 it tell  
 What strokes, what dreadfull stoure it  
 stird this day:  
 Or shew the wounds which unto thee be-  
 fell;  
 Or shew the sweat with which thou diddest  
 sway  
 So sharpe a battell, that so many did dis-  
 may.

## XXII

'But this the sword which wrought those  
 cruell stounds,  
 And this the arme the which that shield  
 did beare,  
 And these the signes,' (so shewed forth his  
 wounds)  
 'By which that glorie gotten doth appeare.  
 As for this ladie, which he sheweth here,  
 Is not (I wager) Florimell at all;  
 But some fayre franion, fit for such a fere,  
 That by misfortune in his hand did fall.'  
 For prooffe whereof, he bad them Florimell  
 forth call.

## XXIII

So forth the noble ladie was ybrought,  
 Adorn'd with honor and all comely grace:  
 Whereto her bashfull shamefastnesse  
 ywrought  
 A great increase in her faire blushing face;  
 As roses did with lillies interlace.  
 For of those words, the which that boaster  
 threw,  
 She inly yet conceived great disgrace.  
 Whom when as all the people such did  
 vew,  
 They shouted loud, and signes of gladnesse  
 all did shew.

## XXIV

Then did he set her by that snowy one,  
 Like the true saint beside the image set,  
 Of both their beauties to make paragone,  
 And triall, whether should the honor get.  
 Streight way so soone as both together met,  
 Th' enchanted damzell vanisht into  
 nought:  
 Her snowy substance melted as with heat,  
 Ne of that goodly hew remayned ought,  
 But th' emptie girdle, which about her  
 wast was wrought.

## XXV

As when the daughter of Thaumantes faire  
 Hath in a watry cloud displayed wide  
 Her goodly bow, which paints the liquid  
 ayre;  
 That all men wonder at her colours pride;  
 All suddenly, ere one can looke aside,  
 The glorious picture vanisheth away,  
 Ne any token doth thereof abide:  
 So did this ladies goodly forme decay,  
 And into nothing goe, ere one could it be-  
 wray.

## XXVI

Which when as all that present were beheld,  
 They stricken were with great astonishment,  
 And their faint harts with senselesse hor-  
 rour queld,  
 To see the thing, that seem'd so excellent,  
 So stolen from their fancies wonderment;  
 That what of it became none understood.  
 And Braggadochio selfe with dreriment  
 So daunted was, in his despeyring mood,  
 That like a lifelesse corse immoveable he  
 stood.

## XXVII

But Artegall that golden belt uptooke,  
 The which of all her spoyle was onely left;  
 Which was not hers, as many it mistooke,  
 But Florimells owne girdle, from her reft,  
 While she was flying, like a weary weft,  
 From that foule monster which did her  
 compell  
 To perils great; which he unbuckling eft,  
 Presented to the fayrest Florimell;  
 Who round about her tender wast it fitted  
 well.

## XXVIII

Full many ladies often had assayd  
 About their middles that faire belt to knit;  
 And many a one suppos'd to be a mayd:  
 Yet it to none of all their loynes would fit,  
 Till Florimell about her fastned it.  
 Such power it had, that to no womans wast  
 By any skill or labour it would sit,  
 Unlesse that she were continent and chast,  
 But it would lose or breake, that many had  
 disgrast.

## XXIX

Whilest thus they busied were bout Flori-  
 mell,  
 And boastfull Braggadochio to defame,  
 Sir Guyon, as by fortune then befell,  
 Forth from the thickest preasse of people  
 came,  
 His owne good steed, which he had stolne,  
 to claime;  
 And th' one hand seizing on his golden bit,  
 With th' other drew his sword: for with  
 the same  
 He ment the thiefe there deadly to have  
 smit:  
 And had he not bene held, he nought had  
 fayld of it.

## XXX

Thereof great hurly burly moved was  
 Throughout the hall, for that same war-  
 like horse:  
 For Braggadochio would not let him pas;  
 And Guyon would him algates have per-  
 forse,  
 Or it approve upon his carrion corse.  
 Which troublous stirre when Artegall per-  
 ceived,  
 He nigh them drew to stay th' avengers  
 forse,  
 And gan inquire how was that steed be-  
 reaved,  
 Whether by might extort, or else by slight  
 deceived.

## XXXI

Who all that piteous storie, which befell  
 About that wofull couple which were slaine,  
 And their young bloodie babe, to him gan  
 tell;  
 With whom whiles he did in the wood re-  
 maine,  
 His horse purloyned was by subtile traine:  
 For which he chalenged the thiefe to fight.  
 But he for nought could him thereto con-  
 straine;  
 For as the death he hated such despight,  
 And rather had to lose, then trie in armes  
 his right.

## XXXII

Which Artegall well hearing, though no  
 more  
 By law of armes there neede ones right to  
 trie,  
 As was the wont of warlike knights of  
 yore,  
 Then that his foe should him the field de-  
 nie,  
 Yet further right by tokens to descrie,  
 He askt what privie tokens he did beare.  
 'If that,' said Guyon, 'may you satisfie,  
 Within his month a blacke spot doth ap-  
 peare,  
 Shapt like a horses shoe, who list to seeke  
 it there.'

## XXXIII

Whereof to make due tryall, one did take  
 The horse in hand, within his mouth to  
 looke:  
 But with his heeles so sorely he him strake,  
 That all his ribs he quite in peeces broke,



That never word from that day forth he  
spoke.

Another, that would seeme to have more  
wit,

Him by the bright embrodered hedstall  
tooke:

But by the shoulder him so sore he bit,  
That he him maymed quite, and all his  
shoulder split.

## XXXIV

Ne he his mouth would open unto wight,  
Untill that Guyon selfe unto him spake,  
And called Brigadore (so was he light);  
Whose voice so soone as he did under-  
take,

Eftsoones he stood as still as any stake,  
And suffred all his secret marke to see:  
And when as he him nam'd, for joy he  
brake

His bands, and follow'd him with gladfull  
glee,  
And friskt, and flong aloft, and louted low  
on knee.

## XXXV

Thereby Sir Artegall did plaine areed,  
That unto him the horse belong'd, and  
sayd:

'Lo there, Sir Guyon, take to you the  
steed,

As he with golden saddle is arayd;  
And let that losell, plainly now displayd,  
Hence fare on foot, till he an horse have  
gayned.'

But the proud boaster gan his doome up-  
brayd,

And him revil'd, and rated, and disdayned,  
That judgement so unjust against him had  
ordayned.

## XXXVI

Much was the knight incenst with his lewd  
word,

To have revenged that his villeny;  
And thrise did lay his hand upon his sword,  
To have him slaine, or dearely doen aby.

But Guyon did his choler pacify,  
Saying, 'Sir knight, it would dishonour  
hee

To you, that are our judge of equity,  
To wreake your wrath on such a carle as  
hee:

It's punishment enough, that all his shame  
doe see.'

## XXXVII

So did he mitigate Sir Artegall;  
But Talus by the backe the boaster hent,  
And drawing him out of the open hall,  
Upon him did inflict this punishment:  
First he his beard did shave, and fowly  
shent;

Then from him reft his shield, and it ren-  
verst,

And blotted out his armes with falshood  
blent,

And himselfe baffuld, and his armes un-  
herst,

And broke his sword in twaine, and all his  
armour sperst.

## XXXVIII

The whiles his guilefull groome was fled  
away:

But vaine it was to thinke from him to  
flie.

Who overtaking him did disaray,  
And all his face deform'd with infamie,  
And out of court him scourged openly.

So ought all faytours, that true knighthood  
shame,

And armes dishonour with base villanie,  
From all brave knights be banisht with  
defame:

For oft their lewdnes blotteth good deserts  
with blame.

## XXXIX

Now when these counterfeits were thus  
incased

Out of the foreside of their forgerie,  
And in the sight of all men cleane dis-  
graced,

All gan to jest and gibe full merilie  
At the remembrance of their knaverie.

Ladies can laugh at ladies, knights at  
knights,

To thinke with how great vaunt of braverie  
He them abused, through his subtill slights,  
And what a glorious shew he made in all  
their sights.

## XL

There leave we them in pleasure and re-  
past

Spending their joyous dayes and gladfull  
nights,

And taking usurie of time forepast,  
With all deare delices and rare delights,  
Fit for such ladies and such lovely knights:

And turne we here to this faire furrowes  
end  
Our wearie yokes, to gather fresher sprights,  
That, when as time to Artegall shall tend,  
We on his first adventure may him forward  
send.

## CANTO IV

Artegall dealeth right betwixt  
Two brethren that doe strive;  
Saves Terpine from the gallow tree,  
And doth from death reprove.

## I

WHO so upon him selfe will take the skill  
True justice unto people to divide,  
Had neede have mightie hands, for to fulfill  
That which he doth with righteous doome  
decide,  
And for to maister wrong and puissant  
pride.  
For vaine it is to deeme of things aright,  
And makes wrong doers justice to deride,  
Unlesse it be perform'd with dreadlesse  
might:  
For powre is the right hand of Justice  
truely hight.

## II

Therefore whylome to knights of great  
emprise  
The charge of Justice given was in trust,  
That they might execute her judgements  
wise,  
And with their might beat downe licentious  
lust,  
Which proudly did impugne her sentence  
just.  
Whereof no braver president this day  
Remaines on earth, preserv'd from yron  
rust  
Of rude oblivion, and long times decay,  
Then this of Artegall, which here we have  
to say.

## III

Who, having lately left that lovely payre,  
Enlincked fast in wedlockes loyall bond,  
Bold Marinell with Florimell the fayre,  
With whom great feast and goodly glee he  
fond,  
Departed from the Castle of the Strond,  
To follow his adventures first intent,  
Which long agoe he taken had in hond:

Ne wight with him for his assistance went,  
But that great yron groome, his gard and  
government.

## IV

With whom as he did passe by the sea  
shore,  
He chaunst to come whereas two comely  
squires,  
Both brethren, whom one wombe together  
bore,  
But stirred up with different desires,  
Together strove, and kindled wrathfull  
fires:  
And them beside two seemely damzels  
stood,  
By all meanes seeking to asswage their ires,  
Now with faire words; but words did little  
good,  
Now with sharpe threats; but threats the  
more increast their mood.

## V

And there before them stood a coffer  
strong,  
Fast bound on every side with iron bands,  
But seeming to have suffred mickle wrong,  
Either by being wreckt uppon the sands,  
Or being carried farre from forraine lands.  
Seem'd that for it these squires at ods did  
fall,  
And bent against them selves their cruell  
hands.  
But evermore, those damzels did forestall  
Their furious encounter, and their fierce-  
nesse pall.

## VI

But firmly fixt they were, with dint of  
sword  
And battailes doubtfull prooffe their rights  
to try,  
Ne other end their fury would afford,  
But what to them fortune would justify.  
So stood they both in readinesse, thereby  
To joyne the combate with cruell intent;  
When Artegall arriving happily,  
Did stay a while their greedy bickermment,  
Till he had questioned the cause of their  
dissent.

## VII

To whom the elder did this aunswere  
frame:  
'Then weete ye, sir, that we two brethren be,

To whom our sire, Milesio by name,  
 Did equally bequeath his lands in fee,  
 Two ilands, which ye there before you see  
 Not farre in sea; of which the one appears  
 But like a little mount of small degree;  
 Yet was as great and wide ere many yeares,  
 As that same other isle, that greater bredth  
 now beares.

## VIII

‘But tract of time, that all things doth decay,  
 And this devouring sea, that naught doth spare,  
 The most part of my land hath washt away,  
 And throwne it up unto my brothers share:  
 So his encreased, but mine did empaire.  
 Before which time I lov’d, as was my lot,  
 That further mayd, hight Philtera the faire,  
 With whom a goodly dowe I should have got,  
 And should have joyned bene to her in wedlocks knot.

## IX

‘Then did my younger brother Amidas  
 Love that same other damzell, Lucy bright,  
 To whom but little dowre allotted was;  
 Her vertue was the dowre that did delight.  
 What better dowre can to a dame be hight?  
 But now when Philtra saw my lands decay,  
 And former livelod fayle, she left me knight,  
 And to my brother did ellope streight way:  
 Who, taking her from me, his owne love left astray.

## X

‘She seeing then her selfe forsaken so,  
 Through dolorous despaire, which she conceyved,  
 Into the sea her selfe did headlong throw,  
 Thinking to have her grieffe by death be-reaved.  
 But see how much her purpose was deceived.  
 Whilest thus amidst the billowes beating of her  
 Twixt life and death, long to and fro she weaved,  
 She chaunst unwares to light uppon this coffer,  
 Which to her in that daunger hope of life did offer.

## XI

‘The wretched mayd, that earst desir’d to die,  
 When as the paine of death she tasted had,  
 And but halfe seene his ugly visnomie,  
 Gan to repent that she had beene so mad,  
 For any death to chaunge life, though most bad:  
 And catching hold of this sea-beaten chest,  
 The lucky pylot of her passage sad,  
 After long tossing in the seas distrest,  
 Her weary barke at last uppon mine isle did rest.

## XII

‘Where I, by chaunce then wandring on the shore,  
 Did her espy, and through my good endeavour  
 From dreadfull mouth of death, which threatned sore  
 Her to have swallow’d up, did helpe to save her.  
 She then, in recompence of that great favour  
 Which I on her bestowed, bestowed on me  
 The portion of that good which fortune gave her,  
 Together with her selfe in dowry free;  
 Both goodly portions, but of both the better she.

## XIII

‘Yet in this coffer, which she with her brought,  
 Great treasure sithence we did finde contained;  
 Which as our owne we tooke, and so it thought.  
 But this same other damzell since hath fained,  
 That to her selfe that treasure appertained;  
 And that she did transport the same by sea,  
 To bring it to her husband new ordained,  
 But suffred cruell shipwracke by the way.  
 But whether it be so or no, I can not say.

## XIV

‘But whether it indeede be so or no,  
 This doe I say, that what so good or ill  
 Or God or Fortune unto me did throw,  
 Not wronging any other by my will,



I hold mine owne, and so will hold it still.  
 And though my land he first did winne  
     away,  
 And then my love (though now it little  
     skill)  
 Yet my good lucke he shall not likewise  
     pray;  
 But I will it defend, whilst ever that I  
     may.'

## XV

So having sayd, the younger did ensew:  
 'Full true it is, what so about our land  
 My brother here declared hath to you:  
 But not for it this ods twixt us doth stand,  
 But for this treasure throwne uppon his  
     strand;  
 Which well I prove, as shall appeare by  
     triall,  
 To be this maides with whom I fastned  
     hand,  
 Known by good markes and perfect good  
     espiall,  
 Therefore it ought be rendred her without  
     denial.'

## XVI

When they thus ended had, the knight be-  
     gan:  
 'Certes your strife were easie to accord,  
 Would ye remit it to some righteous man.'  
 'Unto your selfe,' said they, 'we give our  
     word,  
 To bide what judgement ye shall us af-  
     ford.'  
 'Then for assuraunce to my doome to  
     stand,  
 Under my foote let each lay downe his  
     sword,  
 And then you shall my sentence under-  
     stand.'  
 So each of them layd downe his sword out  
     of his hand.

## XVII

Then Artegall thus to the younger sayd:  
 'Now tell me, Amidas, if that ye may,  
 Your brothers land, the which the sea hath  
     layd  
 Unto your part, and pluekt from his away,  
 By what good right doe you withhold this  
     day?'  
 'What other right,' quoth he, 'should you  
     esteeme,  
 But that the sea it to my share did lay?'

'Your right is good,' sayd he, 'and so I  
     deeme,  
 That what the sea unto you sent your own  
     should seeme.'

## XVIII

Then turning to the elder thus he sayd:  
 'Now, Bracidas, let this likewise be showne:  
 Your brothers treasure, which from him is  
     strayd,  
 Being the dowry of his wife well knowne,  
 By what right doe you claime to be your  
     owne?'  
 'What other right,' quoth he, 'should you  
     esteeme,  
 But that the sea hath it unto me throwne?'  
 'Your right is good,' sayd he, 'and so I  
     deeme,  
 That what the sea unto you sent your own  
     should seeme.'

## XIX

'For equall right in equall things doth  
     stand;  
 For what the mighty sea hath once possest,  
 And plucked quite from all possessors hand,  
 Whether by rage of waves, that never  
     rest,  
 Or else by wracke, that wretches hath dis-  
     trest,  
 He may dispose by his imperiall might,  
 As thing at randon left, to whom he list.  
 So, Amidas, the land was yours first hight,  
 And so the treasure yours is, Braeidas, by  
     right.'

## XX

When he his sentence thus pronounced had,  
 Both Amidas and Philtra were displeased:  
 But Braeidas and Luey were right glad,  
 And on the treasure by that judgement  
     seased.  
 So was their discord by this doome ap-  
     peased,  
 And each one had his right. Then Arte-  
     gall,  
 When as their sharpe contention he had  
     ceased,  
 Departed on his way, as did befall,  
 To follow his old quest, the which him  
     forth did call.

## XXI

So as he travelled uppon the way,  
 He chaunst to come, where happily he spide

A rout of many people farre away;  
To whom his course he hastily applide,  
To weete the cause of their assemblaunce  
wide.

To whom when he approched neare in sight,  
(An uncouth sight) he plainely then descride

To be a troupe of women warlike dight,  
With weapons in their hands, as ready for  
to fight.

## XXII

And in the midst of them he saw a knight,  
With both his hands behinde him pinnoed  
hard,

And round about his necke an halter tight,  
As ready for the gallow tree prepard:  
His face was covered, and his head was  
bar'd,

That who he was uneath was to descry;  
And with full heavy heart with them he  
far'd,

Griev'd to the soule, and groning in-  
wardly,

That he of womens hands so base a death  
should dy.

## XXIII

But they like tyrants, mercilesse the more,  
Rejoyced at his miserable case,  
And him reviled, and reproched sore  
With bitter taunts, and termes of vile dis-  
grace.

Now when as Artegall, arriv'd in place,  
Did aske what cause brought that man to  
decay,

They round about him gan to swarme  
apace,

Meaning on him their cruell hands to lay,  
And to have wrought unwares some vil-  
lanous assay.

## XXIV

But he was soone aware of their ill minde,  
And drawing backe deceived their intent;  
Yet though him selfe did shame on woman-  
kinde

His mighty hand to shend, he Talus sent  
To wrecke on them their follies hardy-  
ment:

Who with few sowces of his yron flae  
Dispersed all their troupe incontinent,  
And sent them home to tell a piteous tale  
Of their vaine prowesse turned to their pro-  
per bale.

## XXV

But that same wretched man, ordaynd to  
die,

They left behind them, glad to be so quit:  
Him Talus tooke out of perplexitie,  
And horroure of fowle death for knight unfit,  
Who more then losse of life ydreaded it;  
And him restoring unto living light,  
So brought unto his lord, where he did sit,  
Beholding all that womanish weake fight;  
Whom soone as he beheld, he knew, and  
thus behight:

## XXVI

'Sir Turpine, haplesse man, what make  
you here ?

Or have you lost your selfe and your dis-  
cretion,

That ever in this wrtched case ye were ?  
Or have ye yeelded you to proude oppres-  
sion

Of womens powre, that boast of mens sub-  
jection ?

Or else what other deadly dismall day  
Is falne on you, by heavens hard direction,  
That ye were runne so fondly far astray,  
As for to lead your selfe unto your owne  
decay ?'

## XXVII

Much was the man confounded in his mind,  
Partly with shame, and partly with dismay,  
That all astonisht he him selfe did find,

And little had for his excuse to say,  
But onely thus: 'Most haplesse well ye  
may

Me justly terme, that to this shame am  
brought,

And made the scorne of knighthod this  
same day.

But who can scape what his owne fate hath  
wrought ?

The worke of heavens will surpasseth hu-  
maine thought.'

## XXVIII

'Right true: but faulty men use oftentimes  
To attribute their folly unto fate,  
And lay on heaven the guilt of their owne  
crimes.

But tell, Sir Terpin, ne let you amate  
Your misery, how fell ye in this state ?'

'Then sith ye needs,' quoth he, 'will know  
my shame,

And all the ill which chaunst to me of late,

I shortly will to you rehearse the same,  
In hope ye will not turne misfortune to my  
blame.

## XXIX

‘Being desirous (as all knights are woont)  
Through hard adventures deedes of armes  
to try,  
And after fame and honour for to huut,  
I heard report that farre abroad did fly,  
That a proud Amazon did late defy  
All the brave knights that hold of Maiden-  
head,  
And unto them wrought all the villany  
That she could forge in her malicious head,  
Which some hath put to shame, and many  
done be dead.

## XXX

‘The cause, they say, of this her cruell  
hate,  
Is for the sake of Bellodant the bold,  
To whom she bore most fervent love of  
late,  
And wooed him by all the waies she could:  
But when she saw at last, that he ne would  
For ought or nought be woune unto her  
will,  
She turn’d her love to hatred manifold,  
And for his sake vow’d to doe all the ill  
Which she could doe to knights; which  
now she doth fulfill.

## XXXI

‘For all those knights, the which by force  
or guile  
She doth subdue, she fowly doth entreate.  
First she doth them of warlike armes de-  
spoil,  
And cloth in womens weedes: and then  
with threat  
Doth them compell to worke, to earne their  
meat,  
To spin, to card, to sew, to wash, to wring;  
Ne doth she give them other thing to  
eat,  
But bread and water, or like feeble thing,  
Them to disable from revenge adventuring.

## XXXII

‘But if through stout disdaine of manly  
mind,  
Any her proud observaunce will withstand,  
Uppon that gibbet, which is there behind,  
She causeth them be hang’d up out of hand;

In which condition I right now did stand.  
For being overcome by her in fight,  
And put to that base service of her band,  
I rather chose to die in lives despight,  
Then lead that shamefull life, unworthy of  
a knight.’

## XXXIII

‘How hight that Amazon,’ sayd Artegall,  
‘And where and how far hence does she  
abide?’  
‘Her name,’ quoth he, ‘they Radigund doe  
call,  
A princesse of great powre and greater  
pride,  
And queene of Amazons, in armes well  
tride  
And sundry battels, which she hath at-  
chieved  
With great successe, that her hath glorifide,  
And made her famous, more then is be-  
lieved;  
Ne would I it have ween’d, had I not late  
it priev’d.’

## XXXIV

‘Now sure,’ said he, ‘and by the faith that I  
To Maydenhead and noble knighthood owe,  
I will not rest, till I her might doe trie,  
And venge the shame that she to knights  
doth show.  
Therefore, Sir Terpin, from you lightly  
throw  
This squalid weede, the patterne of di-  
spaire,  
And wend with me, that ye may see and  
know,  
How fortune will your ruin’d name repaire,  
And knights of Maidenhead, whose praise  
she would empaire.’

## XXXV

With that, like one that hopelesse was re-  
pryv’d  
From deathes dore, at which he lately lay,  
Those yron fetters wherewith he was gyv’d,  
The badges of reproch, he threw away,  
And nimbly did him dight to guide the  
way  
Unto the dwelling of that Amazone,  
Which was from thence not past a mile or  
tway:  
A goodly city and a mighty one,  
The which of her owne name she called  
Radegone.



## XXXVI

Where they arriving, by the watchman  
 were  
 Descried streight, who all the citty warned,  
 How that three warlike persons did ap-  
 peare,  
 Of which the one him seem'd a knight all  
 armed,  
 And th' other two well likely to have  
 harmed.  
 Eftsoones the people all to harnesse ran,  
 And like a sort of bees in clusters swarmed:  
 Ere long their queene her selfe, halfe like  
 a man,  
 Came forth into the rout, and them t' ar-  
 ray began.

## XXXVII

And now the knights, being arrived neare,  
 Did beat uppon the gates to enter in,  
 And at the porter, skorning them so few,  
 Threw many threats, if they the towne did  
 win,  
 To teare his flesh in peeces for his sin.  
 Which when as Radigund there comming  
 heard,  
 Her heart for rage did grate, and teeth  
 did grin:  
 She bad that streight the gates should be  
 unbard,  
 And to them way to make, with weapons  
 well prepar'd.

## XXXVIII

Soone as the gates were open to them set,  
 They pressed forward, entraunce to have  
 made.  
 But in the middle way they were ymet  
 With a sharpe showre of arrowes, which  
 them staid,  
 And better bad advise, ere they assaid  
 Unknownen perill of bold womens pride.  
 Then all that rout uppon them rudely laid,  
 And heaped strokes so fast on every side,  
 And arrowes haild so thicke, that they  
 could not abide.

## XXXIX

But Radigund her selfe, when she espide  
 Sir Terpin, from her direfull doome acquit,  
 So cruell doale amongst her maides divide,  
 T' avenge that shame they did on him com-  
 mit,  
 All sodainely enflam'd with furious fit,  
 Like a fell lionesse at him she flew,

And on his head-peece him so fiercely smit,  
 That to the ground him quite she overthrew,  
 Dismayd so with the stroke that he no  
 colours knew.

## XL

Soone as she saw him on the ground to  
 grovell,  
 She lightly to him leapt, and in his necke  
 Her proud foote setting, at his head did  
 levell,  
 Weening at once her wrath on him to  
 wreake,  
 And his contempt, that did her judg'ment  
 breake.  
 As when a beare hath seiz'd her cruell  
 clawes  
 Uppon the carkasse of some beast too  
 weake,  
 Proudly stands over, and a while doth  
 pause,  
 To heare the piteous beast pleading her  
 plaintiffe cause.

## XLI

Whom when as Artegall in that distresse  
 By chaunce beheld, he left the bloody  
 slaughter  
 In which he swam, and ranne to his re-  
 dresse.  
 There her assayling fiercely fresh, he  
 raught her  
 Such an huge stroke, that it of sence dis-  
 traught her:  
 And had she not it warded warily,  
 It had depriv'd her mother of a daughter.  
 Natlesse for all the powre she did apply,  
 It made her stagger oft, and stare with  
 ghastly eye.

## XLII

Like to an eagle in his kingly pride,  
 Soring through his wide empire of the aire,  
 To weather his brode sailes, by chaunce  
 hath spide  
 A goshauke, which hath seized for her  
 share  
 Uppon some fowle, that should her feast  
 prepare;  
 With dreadfull force he flies at her bylive,  
 That with his souce, which none enduren  
 dare,  
 Her from the quarrey he away doth drive,  
 And from her griping pounce the greedy  
 prey doth rive.

## XLIII

But soone as she her sence recover'd had,  
 She fiercely towards him her selfe gan dight,  
 Through vengeful wrath and sdeignfull  
 pride half mad:  
 For never had she suffred such despight.  
 But ere she could joyne hand with him to  
 fight,  
 Her warlike maides about her flockt so  
 fast,  
 That they disparted them, maugre their  
 might,  
 And with their troupes did far a sunder  
 cast:  
 But mongst the rest the fight did untill  
 evening last.

## XLIV

And every while that mighty yron man,  
 With his strange weapon, never wont in  
 warre,  
 Them sorely vext, and courst, and overran,  
 And broke their bowes, and did their shoot-  
 ing marre,  
 That none of all the many once did darre  
 Him to assault, nor once approach him nie,  
 But like a sort of sheepe dispersed farre  
 For dread of their devouring enemie,  
 Through all the fields and vallies did be-  
 fore him flie.

## XLV

But when as daies faire shinie-beame,  
 yelowded  
 With fearefull shadowes of deformed night,  
 Warn'd man and beast in quiet rest be  
 shrowded,  
 Bold Radigund, with sound of trumpe on  
 hight,  
 Causd all her people to surcease from  
 fight,  
 And gathering them unto her citties gate,  
 Made them all enter in before her sight,  
 And all the wounded, and the weake in  
 state,  
 To be conveyed in, ere she would once  
 retrate.

## XLVI

When thus the field was voided all away,  
 And all things quieted, the Elfin knight,  
 Weary of toile and travell of that day,  
 Causd his pavilion to be richly pight  
 Before the city gate, in open sight;  
 Where he him selfe did rest in safety,

Together with Sir Terpin, all that night:  
 But Talus usde in times of jeopardy  
 To keepe a nightly watch, for dread of  
 treachery.

## XLVII

But Radigund full of heart-gnawing grieve,  
 For the rebuke which she sustain'd that  
 day,  
 Could take no rest, ne would receive re-  
 liefe,  
 But tossed in her troublous minde, what  
 way  
 She mote revenge that blot which ou her  
 lay.  
 There she resolv'd her selfe in single fight  
 To try her fortune, and his force assay,  
 Rather then see her people spoiled quight,  
 As she had seene that day, a disaventerous  
 sight.

## XLVIII

She called forth to her a trusty mayd,  
 Whom she thought fittest for that busi-  
 nesse,  
 (Her name was Clarin,) and thus to her  
 sayd:  
 'Goe, damzell, quickly, doe thy selfe ad-  
 dresse,  
 To doe the message which I shall expresse  
 Goe thou unto that stranger Faery knight,  
 Who yeester day drove us to such di-  
 stresse;  
 Tell, that to morrow I with him wil fight,  
 And try in equall field, whether hath  
 greater might.

## XLIX

'But these conditions doe to him propound  
 That if I vanquishe him, he shall obay  
 My law, and ever to my lore be bound;  
 And so will I, if me he vanquish may,  
 What ever he shall like to doe or say.  
 Goe streight, and take with thee, to wit-  
 nesse it,  
 Sixe of thy fellows of the best array,  
 And beare with you both wine and jun-  
 cates fit,  
 And bid him eate; henceforth he oft shall  
 hungry sit.'

## L

The damzell streight obayd, and putting all  
 In readinesse, forth to the towne-gate  
 went,

Where sounding loud a trumpet from the  
wall,  
Unto those warlike knights she warning  
sent.  
Then Talus, forth issuing from the tent,  
Unto the wall his way did fearelesse take,  
To weeten what that trumpets sounding  
ment:  
Where that same damzell lowdly him be-  
spake,  
And shew'd that with his lord she would  
emparlaunce make.

## II

So he them streight conducted to his lord,  
Who, as he could, them goodly well did  
greete,  
Till they had told their message word by  
word:  
Which he accepting well, as he could weete,  
Them fairely entertaynd with curt'sies  
meete,  
And gave them gifts and things of deare  
delight.  
So backe againe they homeward turnd  
their feete.  
But Artegall him selfe to rest did dight,  
That he mote fresher be against the next  
daies fight.

## CANTO V

Artegall fights with Radigund,  
And is subdewd by guile:  
He is by her emprisoned,  
But wrought by Clarins wile.

## I

So soone as day forth dawning from the  
East,  
Nights humid curtaine from the heavens  
withdrew,  
And earely calling forth both man and  
beast,  
Comaunded them their daily workes re-  
new,  
These noble warriors, mindefull to pursue  
The last daies purpose of their vowed  
fight,  
Them selves thereto preparte in order  
dew;  
The knight, as best was seeming for a  
knight,  
And th' Amazon, as best it likt her selfe to  
dight:

## II

All in a camis light of purple silke  
Woven uppon with silver, subtly wrought,  
And quilted uppon sattin white as milke,  
Trayled with ribbands diversly distraught,  
Like as the workeman had their courses  
taught;  
Which was short tucked for light motion  
Up to her ham, but, when she list, it raught  
Downe to her lowest heele, and thereuppon  
She wore for her defence a mayled haber-  
geon.

## III

And on her legs she painted buskins wore,  
Basted with bends of gold on every side,  
And mailles betweene, and laced close afore:  
Uppon her thigh her cemitare was tide,  
With an embrodered belt of mickell pride;  
And on her shoulder hung her shield, be-  
deckt  
Uppon the bosse with stones, that shined  
wide  
As the faire moone in her most full aspect,  
That to the moone it mote be like in each  
respect.

## IV

So forth she came out of the citty gate,  
With stately port and proud magnificence,  
Guarded with many damzels, that did waite  
Uppon her person for her sure defence,  
Playing on shaumes and trumpets, that  
from hence  
Their sound did reach unto the heavens  
light.  
So forth into the field she marched thence,  
Where was a rich pavilion ready pight,  
Her to receive, till time they should begin  
the fight.

## V

Then forth came Artegall out of his tent,  
All arm'd to point, and first the lists did  
enter:  
Soone after eke came she, with fell intent,  
And countenance fierce, as having fully  
bent her,  
That battels utmost triall to aduenter.  
The lists were closed fast, to barre the rout  
From rudely pressing to the middle center;  
Which in great heapes them circled all  
about,  
Wayting how fortune would resolve that  
daungerous dout.



## VI

The trumpets sounded, and the field began;  
With bitter strokes it both began and  
ended.

She at the first encounter on him ran  
With furious rage, as if she had intended  
Out of his breast the very heart have  
rended:

But he, that had like tempests often tride,  
From that first flaw him selfe right well  
defended.

The more she rag'd, the more he did abide;  
She hewd, she foynd, she lasht, she laid on  
every side.

## VII

Yet still her blowes he bore, and her for-  
bore,

Weening at last to win advantage new;  
Yet still her crueltie increased more,  
And though powre faild, her courage did  
accrow;

Which fayling, he gan fiercely her pursew.  
Like as a smith that to his cunning feat  
The stubborne mettall seeketh to subdew,  
Soone as he feeles it mollifide with heat,  
With his great yron sledge doth strongly  
on it beat.

## VIII

So did Sir Artegal upon her lay,  
As if she had an yron andvile beene,  
That flakes of fire, bright as the sunny  
ray,

Out of her steely armes were flashing seene,  
That all on fire ye would her surely weene.  
But with her shield so well her selfe she  
warded

From the dread daunger of his weapon  
keene,  
That all that while her life she safely  
garded:

But he that helpe from her against her will  
discarded.

## IX

For with his trenchant blade at the next  
blow

Halfe of her shield he shared quite away,  
That halfe her side it selfe did naked show,  
And thenceforth unto daunger opened way.  
Much was she moved with the mightie  
sway

Of that sad stroke, that halfe enrag'd she  
grew,

And like a greedie beare unto her pray,  
With her sharpe cemitare at him she flew,  
That glauncing downe his thigh, the purple  
bloud forth drew.

## X

Thereat she gan to triumph with great  
boast,

And to upbrayd that chaunce which him  
misfell,

As if the prize she gotten had almost,  
With spightfull speaches, fitting with her  
well;

That his great hart gan inwardly to swell  
With indignation at her vaunting vaine,  
And at her strooke with puissance feareful  
fell;

Yet with her shield she warded it againe.  
That shattered all to peeces round about  
the plaine.

## XI

Having her thus disarmed of her shield,  
Upon her helmet he againe her strooke,  
That downe she fell upon the grassie field,  
In sencelesse swoune, as if her life for-  
sooke,

And pangs of death her spirit overtooke.  
Whom when he saw before his foote pro-  
strated,

He to her lept with deadly dreadfull looke,  
And her sunshynie helmet soone unlaced,  
Thinking at once both head and helmet to  
have raced.

## XII

But when as he discovered had her face,  
He saw, his senses straunge astonishment,  
A miracle of Natures goodly grace  
In her faire visage voide of ornament,  
But bath'd in bloud and sweat together  
ment;

Which, in the rudenesse of that evill plight,  
Bewrayd the signes of feature excellent:  
Like as the moone, in foggie winters night,  
Doth seeme to be her selfe, though dark-  
ned be her light.

## XIII

At sight thereof his cruell minded hart  
Empierced was with pittifull regard,  
That his sharpe sword he threw from him  
apart,

Cursing his hand that had that visage mard:  
No hand so cruell, nor no hart so hard,

But ruth of beautie will it mollifie.  
 By this upstarting from her swoune, she  
     star'd  
 A while about her with confused eye;  
 Like one that from his dreame is waked  
     suddenlye.

## XIV

Soone as the knight she there by her did  
     spy,  
 Standing with emptie hands all weapon-  
     lesse,  
 With fresh assault upon him she did fly,  
 And gan renew her former crueltiesse:  
 And though he still retyr'd, yet nathelesse  
 With huge redoubled strokes she on him  
     layd;  
 And more increast her outrage mercilesse,  
 The more that he with meeke intreatie  
     prayd,  
 Her wrathful hand from greedy vengeance  
     to have stayd.

## XV

Like as a puttocke having spyde in sight  
 A gentle faulcon sitting on an hill,  
 Whose other wing, now made unmeete for  
     flight,  
 Was lately broken by some fortune ill;  
 The foolish kyte, led with licentious will,  
 Doth beat upon the gentle bird in vaine,  
 With many idle stoups her troubling still:  
 Even so did Radigund with bootlesse paine  
 Annoy this noble knight, and sorely him  
     constraine.

## XVI

Nought could he do, but shun the dred  
     despight  
 Of her fierce wrath, and backward still  
     retyre,  
 And with his single shield, well as he might,  
 Beare off the burden of her raging yre;  
 And evermore he gently did desyre  
 To stay her stroks, and he himselfe would  
     yield:  
 Yet nould she hearke, ne let him once  
     respyre,  
 Till he to her delivered had his shield,  
 And to her mercie him submitted in plaine  
     field.

## XVII

So was he overcome, not overcome,  
 But to her yeelded of his owne accord;

Yet was he justly damned by the doome  
 Of his owne mouth, that spake so warelesse  
     word,  
 To be her thrall, and service her afford.  
 For though that he first victorie obtayned,  
 Yet after, by abandoning his sword,  
 He wilfull lost that he before attayned.  
 No fayrer conquest then that with goodwill  
     is gayned.

## XVIII

Tho with her sword on him she flatling  
     strooke,  
 In signe of true subjection to her powre,  
 And as her vassall him to thraldome tooke.  
 But Terpine, borne to' a more unhappy  
     howre,  
 As he on whom the lucklesse starres did  
     lowre,  
 She causd to be attacht, and forthwith led  
 Unto the crooke, t' abide the balefull stowre  
 From which he lately had through reskew  
     fled:  
 Where he full shamefully was hanged by  
     the hed.

## XIX

But when they thought on Talus hands to  
     lay,  
 He with his yron flaile amongst them  
     thondred,  
 That they were fayne to let him scape away,  
 Glad from his companie to be so sondred;  
 Whose presence all their troupes so much  
     encombred,  
 That th' heapes of those which he did wound  
     and slay,  
 Besides the rest dismayd, might not be  
     nombred:  
 Yet all that while he would not once assay  
 To reskew his owne lord, but thought it  
     just t' obay.

## XX

Then tooke the Amazon this noble knight,  
 Left to her will by his owne wilfull blame,  
 And caused him to be disarmed quight  
 Of all the ornaments of knightly name,  
 With which whylome he gotten had great  
     fame:  
 In stead whereof she made him to be dight  
 In womans weedes, that is to manhood  
     shame,  
 And put before his lap a napron white,  
 In stead of curiets and bases fit for fight.

## XXI

So being clad, she brought him from the field,  
 In which he had bene trayned many a day,  
 Into a long large chamber, which was sield  
 With monuments of many knights decay,  
 By her subdued in victorious fray:  
 Amongst the which she causd his warlike  
   armes  
 Be hang'd on high, that mote his shame  
   bewray;  
 And broke his sword, for feare of further  
   harmes,  
 With which he wont to stirre up battailous  
   alarmes.

## XXII

There entred in, he round about him saw  
 Many brave knights, whose names right  
   well he knew,  
 There bound t' obay that Amazons proud  
   law,  
 Spinning and carding all in comely rew,  
 That his bigge hart loth'd so uncomely vew.  
 But they were forst, through penurie and  
   pyne,  
 To doe those workes to them appointed  
   dew:  
 For nought was given them to sup or dyne,  
 But what their hands could earne by twist-  
   ing linnen twyne.

## XXIII

Amongst them all she placed him most  
   low,  
 And in his hand a distaffe to him gave,  
 That he thereon should spin both flax and  
   tow;  
 A sordid office for a mind so brave:  
 So hard it is to be a womans slave.  
 Yet he it tooke in his owne selves despight,  
 And thereto did himselfe right well behave,  
 Her to obay, sith he his faith had plight,  
 Her vassall to become, if she him wonne in  
   fight.

## XXIV

Who had him seene, imagine mote thereby  
 That whylome hath of Hercules bene told,  
 How for Iolas sake he did apply  
 His mightie hands the distaffe vile to hold,  
 For his huge club, which had subdued of  
   old  
 So many monsters which the world annoyed;  
 His Lyons skin chaungd to a pall of gold,

In which, forgetting warres, he onely joyed  
 In combats of sweet love, and with his mis-  
   tresse toyed.

## XXV

Such is the crueltie of women kynd,  
 When they have shaken off the shamefast  
   band,  
 With which wise Nature did them strongly  
   bynd,  
 T' obay the heasts of mans well ruling  
   hand,  
 That then all rule and reason they with-  
   stand,  
 To purchase a licentious libertie.  
 But vertuous women wisely understand,  
 That they were borne to base humilitie,  
 Unlesse the heavens them lift to lawfull  
   soveraintie.

## XXVI

Thus there long while continu'd Artégall,  
 Serving proud Radigund with true subjec-  
   tion;  
 How ever it his noble heart did gall  
 T' obay a womans tyrannous direction,  
 That might have had of life or death  
   election:  
 But having chosen, now he might not  
   chaunge.  
 During which time, the warlike Amazon,  
 Whose wandring fancie after lust did  
   raunge,  
 Gan cast a secret liking to this captive  
   straunge.

## XXVII

Which long concealing in her covert brest,  
 She chaw'd the cud of lovers carefull plight;  
 Yet could it not so thoroughly digest,  
 Being fast fixed in her wounded spright,  
 But it tormented her both day and night:  
 Yet would she not thereto yeeld free ac-  
   cord,  
 To serve the lowly vassall of her might,  
 And of her servant make her soverayne  
   lord:  
 So great her pride, that she such basenesse  
   much abhord.

## XXVIII

So much the greater still her anguish grew,  
 Through stubborne handling of her love-  
   sicke hart;  
 And still the more she strove it to subdew,



The more she still augmented her owne  
smart,  
And wyder made the wound of th' hidden  
dart.  
At last, when long she struggled had in  
vaine,  
She gan to stoupe, and her proud mind  
convert  
To meeke obeysance of Loves mightie raine,  
And him entreat for grace, that had pro-  
cur'd her paine.

## XXXIX

Unto her selfe in secret she did call  
Her nearest handmayd, whom she most did  
trust,  
And to her said: 'Clarinda, whom of all  
I trust a live, sith I thee fostred first;  
Now is the time that I untimely must  
Thereof make tryall, in my greatest need:  
It is so hapued that the heavens unjust,  
Spighting my happie freedome, have agreed  
To thrall my looser life, or my last bale  
to breed.'

## XXX

With that she turn'd her head, as halfe  
abashed,  
To hide the blush which in her visage  
rose,  
And through her eyes like sudden light-  
ning flashed,  
Decking her cheekes with a vermilion rose:  
But soone she did her countenance com-  
pose,  
And to her turning, thus began againe:  
'This griefes deepe wound I would to thee  
disclose,  
Thereto compelled through hart-murdring  
paine,  
But dread of shame my doubtfull lips doth  
still restraine.'

## XXXI

'Ah! my deare dread,' said then the faith-  
full mayd,  
'Can dread of ought your dreadlesse hart  
withhold,  
That many hath with dread of death dis-  
mayd,  
And dare even deathes most dreadfull face  
behold?  
Say on, my soverayne ladie, and be bold:  
Doth not your handmayds life at your foot  
lie?'

Therewith much comforted, she gan unfold  
The cause of her conceived maladie,  
As one that would confesse, yet faine would  
it denie.

## XXXII

'Clarín,' sayd she, 'thou seest yond Fayry  
knight,  
Whom not my valour, but his owne brave  
mind  
Subjected hath to my unequall might:  
What right is it, that he should thraldome  
find,  
For lending life to me, a wretch unkind,  
That for such good him recompence with ill?  
Therefore I cast how I may him unbind,  
And by his freedome get his free goodwill;  
Yet so, as bound to me he may continue still:

## XXXIII

'Bound unto me, but not with such hard  
bands  
Of strong compulsion and streight violence,  
As now in miserable state he stands;  
But with sweet love and sure benevolence,  
Voide of malitious mind or foule offence.  
To which if thou canst win him any way,  
Without discoverie of my thoughts pretence,  
Both goodly meede of him it purchase may,  
And eke with gratefull service me right  
well apay.

## XXXIV

'Which that thou mayst the better bring to  
pas,  
Loe here this ring, which shall thy warrant  
bee,  
And token true to old Eumenias,  
From time to time, when thou it best shalt  
see,  
That in and out thou mayst have passage  
free.  
Goe now, Clarinda; well thy wits advise,  
And all thy forces gather unto thee,  
Armies of lovely lookes, and speeches wise,  
With which thou canst even Jove himselfe  
to love entise.'

## XXXV

The trustie mayd, conceiving her intent,  
Did with sure promise of her good indeavour  
Give her great comfort and some harts con-  
tent.  
So from her parting, she thenceforth did  
labour

By all the meanes she might, to curry  
favour  
With th' Elfin knight, her ladies best be-  
loved:  
With daily shew of courteous kind behav-  
iour,  
Even at the markewhite of his hart she  
roved,  
And with wide glauncing words, one day  
she thus him proved:

## XXXVI

'Unhappie knight, upon whose hopelesse  
state  
Fortune, envying good, hath felly frowned,  
And cruell heavens have heapt an heavy  
fate;  
I rew that thus thy better dayes are  
drowned  
In sad despaire, and all thy senses swowned  
In stupid sorow, sith thy juster merit  
Might else have with felicitie bene crowned:  
Looke up at last, and wake thy dulled spirit,  
To thinke how this long death thou mightest  
disinherit.'

## XXXVII

Much did he marvell at her uncouth speach,  
Whose hidden drift he could not well  
perceive;  
And gan to doubt, least she him sought t'  
appeach  
Of treason, or some guilefull traine did  
weave,  
Through which she might his wretched  
life bereave.  
Both which to barre, he with this answer  
met her:  
'Faire damzell, that with ruth (as I per-  
ceave)  
Of my mishaps, art mov'd to wish me  
better,  
For such your kind regard I can but rest  
your detter.

## XXXVIII

'Yet weete ye well, that to a courage great  
It is no lesse beseeeming well, to beare  
The storme of Fortunes frowne, or Heavens  
threat,  
Then in the sunshine of her countenance  
cleare  
Timely to joy and carrie comely cheare.  
For though this cloud have now me over-  
cast,

Yet doe I not of better times despayre;  
And, though unlike, they should for ever  
last,  
Yet in my truthes assurance I rest fixed  
fast.'

## XXXIX

'But what so stonie mind,' she then replyde,  
'But, if in his owne powre occasion lay,  
Would to his hope a window open wyde,  
And to his fortunes helpe make readie  
way?'  
'Unworthy sure,' quoth he, 'of better day,  
That will not take the offer of good hope,  
And eke pursew, if he attaine it may.'  
Which speaches she applying to the scope  
Of her intent, this further purpose to him  
shope:

## XL

'Then why doest not, thou ill advized man,  
Make meanes to win thy libertie forlorne,  
And try if thou by faire entreatie can  
Move Radigund? who, though she still have  
worne  
Her dayes in warre, yet (weet thou) was  
not borne  
Of beares and tygres, nor so salvage  
mynded,  
As that, albe all love of men she scorne,  
She yet forgets that she of men was  
kynded:  
And sooth oft seene, that proudest harts  
base love hath blynded.'

## XLI

'Certes, Clarinda, not of cancred will,'  
Sayd he, 'nor obstinate disdainefull mind,  
I have forbore this duetie to fulfill:  
For well I may this weene, by that I fynd,  
That she, a queene, and come of princely  
kynd,  
Both worthie is for to be sewd unto,  
Chiefely by him whose life her law doth  
bynd,  
And eke of powre her owne doome to undo,  
And als' of princely grace to be inclyn'd  
thereto.

## XLII

'But want of meanes hath bene mine onely  
let  
From seeking favour, where it doth abound;  
Which if I might by your good office get,  
I to your selfe should rest for ever bound,

And readie to deserve what grace I found.  
 She feeling him thus bite upon the bayt,  
 Yet doubting least his hold was but unsound,  
 And not well fastened, would not strike him strait,  
 But drew him on with hope, fit leasure to awayt.

## XLIII

But foolish mayd ! whyles, heedlesse of the hooke,  
 She thus oft times was beating off and on,  
 Through slipperie footing fell into the brooke,  
 And there was caught to her confusion.  
 For seeking thus to salve the Amazon,  
 She wounded was with her deceits owne dart,  
 And gan thenceforth to cast affection,  
 Conceived close in her beguiled hart,  
 To Artegall, through pittie of his causelesse smart.

## XLIV

Yet durst she not disclose her fancies wound,  
 Ne to himselfe, for doubt of being sdayned,  
 Ne yet to any other wight on ground,  
 For feare her mistresse shold have knowledge gayned,  
 But to her selfe it secretly retayned,  
 Within the closet of her covert brest:  
 The more thereby her tender hart was payned.  
 Yet to awayt fit time she weened best,  
 And fairely did dissemble her sad thoughts unrest.

## XLV

One day her ladie, calling her apart,  
 Gan to demaund of her some tydings good,  
 Touching her loves successe, her lingring smart.  
 Therewith she gan at first to change her mood,  
 As one adaw'd, and halfe confused stood;  
 But quickly she it overpast, so soone  
 As she her face had wypt, to fresh her blood:  
 Tho gan she tell her all that she had donne,  
 And all the wayes she sought, his love for to have wonne:

## XLVI

But sayd, that he was obstinate and sterne,  
 Scorning her offers and conditions vaine;  
 Ne would be taught with any termes to lerne  
 So fond a lesson as to love againe.  
 Die rather would he in penurious paine,  
 And his abridged dayes in dolour wast,  
 Then his foes love or liking entertaine:  
 His resolution was, both first and last,  
 His bodie was her thrall, his hart was freely plast.

## XLVII

Which when the cruell Amazon perceived,  
 She gan to storine, and rage, and rend her gall,  
 For very fell despight, which she conceived,  
 To be so scorned of a base borne thrall,  
 Whose life did lie in her least eye-lids fall;  
 Of which she vow'd with many a cursed threat,  
 That she therefore would him ere long for-stall.  
 Nathlesse, when calmed was her furious heat,  
 She chang'd that threatfull mood, and mildly gan entreat:

## XLVIII

'What now is left, Clarinda ? what remaines,  
 That we may compasse this our enterprize ?  
 Great shame to lose so long employed paines,  
 And greater shame t' abide so great misprize,  
 With which he dares our offers thus despize.  
 Yet that his guilt the greater may appeare,  
 And more my gracious mercie by this wize,  
 I will a while with his first folly beare,  
 Till thou have tride againe, and tempted him more neare.

## XLIX

'Say and do all that may thereto prevaile;  
 Leave nought unpromist that may him perswade,  
 Life, freedome, grace, and gifts of great availe,  
 With which the gods themselves are mylder made:  
 Thereto adde art, even womens witty trade,  
 The art of mightie words, that men can charme;



With which in case thou canst him not invade,  
 Let him feele hardnesse of thy heavie arme:  
 Who will not stoupe with good shall be made stoupe with harne.

## L

'Some of his diet doe from him withdraw;  
 For I him find to be too proudly fed:  
 Give him more labour, and with streighter law,  
 That he with worke may be forwearied:  
 Let him lodge hard, and lie in strawen bed,  
 That may pull downe the courage of his pride;  
 And lay upon him, for his greater dread,  
 Cold yron chaines, with which let him be tide;  
 And let what ever he desires be him denide.

## LI

'When thou hast all this doen, then bring me newes  
 Of his demeane: thenceforth not like a lover,  
 But like a rebell stout I will him use.  
 For I resolve this siege not to give over,  
 Till I the conquest of my will recover.'  
 So she departed, full of grieve and sdaine,  
 Which inly did to great impatience move her.  
 But the false mayden shortly turn'd againe  
 Unto the prison, where her hart did thrall remaine.

## LII

There all her subtill nets she did unfold,  
 And all the engins of her wit display;  
 In which she meant him warelesse to unfold,  
 And of his innocence to make her pray.  
 So cunningly she wrought her crafts assay,  
 That both her ladie, and her selfe withall,  
 And eke the knight attonce she did betray:  
 But most the knight, whom she with guilefull call  
 Did cast for to allure, into her trap to fall.

## LIII

As a bad nurse, which, fayning to receive  
 In her owne mouth the food ment for her chyld,

Withholdes it to her selfe, and doeth deceive

The infant, so for want of nourture spoyld:  
 Even so Clarinda her owne dame beguyld,  
 And turn'd the trust which was in her affyde

To feeding of her private fire, which boyld  
 Her inward brest, and in her entrayles fryde,  
 The more that she it sought to cover and to hyde.

## LIV

For comming to this knight, she purpose fayned,  
 How earnest suit she earst for him had made  
 Unto her queene, his freedome to have gayned;  
 But by no meanes could her thereto perswade:  
 But that, in stead thereof, she sternely bade  
 His miserie to be augmented more,  
 And many yron bands on him to lade;  
 All which nathlesse she for his love forbore:  
 So praying him t' accept her service evermore.

## LV

And more then that, she promist that she would,  
 In case she might finde favour in his eye,  
 Devize how to enlarge him out of hould.  
 The Fayrie, glad to gaine his libertie,  
 Can yeeld great thanks for such her curtesie;  
 And with faire words, fit for the time and place,  
 To feede the humour of her maladie,  
 Promist, if she would free him from that case,  
 He wold, by all good means he might, deserve such grace.

## LVI

So daily he faire semblant did her shew,  
 Yet never meant he in his noble mind,  
 To his owne absent love to be untrew:  
 Ne ever did deceitfull Clarin find  
 In her false hart, his bondage to unbind;  
 But rather how she mote him faster tye.  
 Therefore unto her mistresse most unkind  
 She daily told, her love he did defye,  
 And him she told, her dame his freedome did denye.

## LVII

Yet thus much friendship she to him did  
show,  
That his scarce diet somewhat was amended,  
And his worke lessened, that his love mote  
grow:  
Yet to her dame him still she discom-  
mended,  
That she with him mote be the more  
offended.  
Thus he long while in thraldome there  
remayned,  
Of both beloved well, but litle frended;  
Untill his owne true love his freedome  
gayned,  
Which in an other canto will be best con-  
tained.

## CANTO VI

Talus brings newes to Britomart  
Of Artegals mishap:  
She goes to seeke him, Dolon meetes,  
Who seekes her to entrap.

## I

SOME men, I wote, will deeme in Artegal  
Great weaknesse, and report of him much  
ill,  
For yeelding so himselfe a wretched thrall  
To th' insolent commaund of womens will;  
That all his former praise doth fowly spill.  
But he the man, that say or doe so dare,  
Be well adviz'd that he stand stedfast still:  
For never yet was wight so well aware,  
But he at first or last was trapt in womens  
snare.

## II

Yet in the streightnesse of that captive  
state,  
This gentle knight himselfe so well behaved,  
That notwithstanding all the subtill bait,  
With which those Amazons his love still  
craved,  
To his owne love his loialtie he saved:  
Whose character in th' adamantie mould  
Of his true hart so firmly was engraved,  
That no new loves impression ever could  
Bereave it thence: such blot his honour  
blemish should.

## III

Yet his owne love, the noble Britomart,  
Scarse so conceived in her jealous thought,

What time sad tydings of his balefull smart  
In womans bondage Talus to her brought  
Brought in untimely houre, ere it was  
sought.

For after that the utmost date, assynde  
For his returne, she waited had for nought,  
She gan to cast in her misdoubtfull mynde  
A thousand feares, that love-sicke fancies  
faine to fynde.

## IV

Sometime she feared, least some hard mis-  
hap  
Had him misfalne in his adventurous quest;  
Sometime least his false foe did him entrap  
In traytrous traine, or had unwares opprest:  
But most she did her troubled mynd molest,  
And secretly afflict with jealous feare,  
Least some new love had him from her  
possest;  
Yet loth she was, since she no ill did heare,  
To thinke of him so ill: yet could she not  
forbeare.

## V

One while she blam'd her selfe; another  
whyle  
She him condemn'd, as trustlesse and un-  
trew:  
And then, her grieve with errour to beguyle,  
She fayn'd to count the time againe anew,  
As if before she had not counted trew.  
For houres but dayes; for weekes, that  
passed were,  
She told but moneths, to make them seeme  
more few:  
Yet when she reckned them, still drawing  
neare,  
Each hour did seeme a moneth, and every  
moneth a yeare.

## VI

But when as yet she saw him not returne,  
She thought to send some one to seeke him  
out;  
But none she found so fit to serve that  
turne,  
As her owne selfe, to ease her selfe of dout.  
Now she deviz'd, amongst the warlike rout  
Of errant knights, to seeke her errant  
knight;  
And then againe resolv'd to hunt him out  
Amongst loose ladies, lapped in delight:  
And then both knights envide, and ladies  
eke did spight.

## VII

One day, when as she long had sought for ease  
 In every place, and every place thought best,  
 Yet found no place that could her liking please,  
 She to a window came, that opened west,  
 Towards which coast her love his way addrest.  
 There looking forth, shee in her heart did find  
 Many vaine fancies, working her unrest;  
 And sent her winged thoughts, more swift then wind,  
 To beare unto her love the message of her mind.

## VIII

There as she looked long, at last she spide  
 One comming towards her with hasty speede:  
 Well weend she then, ere him she plaine describe,  
 That it was one sent from her love indeede.  
 Who when he nigh approcht, shee mote arede  
 That it was Talus, Artegall his groome;  
 Whereat her heart was fild with hope and drede;  
 Ne would she stay till he in place could come,  
 But ran to meete him forth, to know his tidings somme.

## IX

Even in the dore him meeting, she begun:  
 'And where is he thy lord, and how far hence?  
 Declare at once; and hath he lost or wun?'  
 The yron man, albe he wanted sence  
 And sorrowes feeling, yet with conscience  
 Of his ill newes, did inly chill and quake,  
 And stood still mute, as one in great suspense,  
 As if that by his silence he would make  
 Her rather reade his meaning, then him selfe it spake.

## X

Till she againe thus sayd: 'Talus, be bold,  
 And tell what ever it be, good or bad,  
 That from thy tongue thy hearts intent doth hold.'  
 To whom he thus at length: 'The tidings sad,

That I would hide, will needs, I see, be rad.  
 My lord, your love, by hard mishap doth lie  
 In wretched bondage, wofully bestad.'  
 'Ay me,' quoth she, 'what wicked destinie!  
 And is he vanquisht by his tyrant enemy?'

## XI

'Not by that tyrant, his intended foe;  
 But by a tyrannesse,' he then replide,  
 'That him captived hath in haplesse woe.'  
 'Cease, thou bad newes-man; badly doest thou hide  
 Thy maisters shaine, in harlots bondage tide.  
 The rest my selfe too readily can spell.'  
 With that in rage she turn'd from him aside,  
 Forcing in vaine the rest to her to tell,  
 And to her chamber went like solitary cell.

## XII

There she began to make her monefull plaint  
 Against her knight, for being so untrew;  
 And him to touch with falshoods fowle attaint,  
 That all his other honour overthrew.  
 Oft did she blame her selfe, and often rew,  
 For yeelding to a straungers love so light,  
 Whose life and manners straunge she never knew;  
 And evermore she did him sharpely twight  
 For breach of faith to her, which he had firmly plight.

## XIII

And then she in her wrathfull will did cast,  
 How to revenge that blot of honour blent;  
 To fight with him, and goodly die her last:  
 And then againe she did her selfe torment,  
 Inflicting on her selfe his punishment.  
 A while she walkt, and chaunft; a while she threw  
 Her selfe npon her bed, and did lament:  
 Yet did she not lament with loude alew,  
 As women wont, but with deepe sighes, and singulfs few.

## XIV

Like as a wayward childe, whose sounder sleepe  
 Is broken with some fearefull dreames affright,  
 With froward will doth set him selfe to weepe;  
 Ne can be stild for all his nurses might,



But kicks, and squals, and shriekes for fell  
despight;  
Now scratching her, and her loose locks  
misusing;  
Now seeking darkenesse, and now seeking  
light;  
Then craving sucke, and then the sucke re-  
fusing:  
Such was this ladies fit, in her loves fond  
accusing.

## XV

But when she had with such unquiet fits  
Her selfe there close afflicted long in vaine,  
Yet found no easement in her troubled wits,  
She unto Talus forth return'd againe,  
By change of place seeking to ease her  
paine;  
And gan enquire of him, with mylder mood,  
The certaine cause of Artegals detaine;  
And what he did, and in what state he  
stood,  
And whether he did woo, or whether he  
were woo'd.

## XVI

' Ah wellaway !' sayd then the yron man,  
' That he is not the while in state to woo;  
But lies in wretched thraldome, weake and  
wan,  
Not by strong hand compelled thereunto,  
But his owne doome, that none can now  
undoo.'  
' Sayd I not then,' quoth shee, ' erwhile  
aright,  
That this is thinge compacte betwixt you  
two,  
Me to deceive of faith unto me plight,  
Since that he was not forst, nor overcome  
in fight ?'

## XVII

With that he gan at large to her dilate  
The whole discourse of his captivance sad,  
In sort as ye have heard the same of late.  
All which when she with hard enduraunce  
had  
Heard to the end, she was right sore bestad,  
With sodaine stounds of wrath and grieve  
attone:  
Ne would abide, till she had aunswere made,  
But streight her selfe did dight, and armor  
don;  
And mounting to her steede, bad Talus  
guide her on.

## XVIII

So forth she rode uppon her ready way,  
To seeke her knight, as Talus her did  
guide:  
Sadly she rode, and never word did say,  
Nor good nor bad, ne ever lookt aside,  
But still right downe, and in her thought did  
hide  
The felnesse of her heart, right fully bent  
To fiercé avengement of that womans pride,  
Which had her lord in her base prison  
pent,  
And so great honour with so fowle reproch  
had blent.

## XIX

So as she thus melancholicke did ride,  
Chawing the cud of grieve and inward paine,  
She chaunst to meete toward the even-tide  
A knight, that softly paced on the plaine,  
As if him selfe to solace he were faine.  
Well shot in yeares he seem'd, and rather  
bent  
To peace, then needlesse trouble to con-  
straine;  
As well by view of that his vestiment,  
As by his modest semblant, that no evill  
ment.

## XX

He, comming neare, gan gently her salute  
With curteous words, in the most comely  
wize;  
Who though desirous rather to rest mute,  
Then termes to entertaine of common guize,  
Yet rather then she kindnesse would de-  
spize,  
She would her selfe displease, so him re-  
quite.  
Then gan the other further to devise  
Of things abroad, as next to hand did light,  
And many things demaund, to which she  
answer'd light.

## XXI

For little lust had she to talke of ought,  
Or ought to heare, that mote delightfull  
bee;  
Her minde was whole possessed of one  
thought,  
That gave none other place. Which when  
as hee  
By outward signes (as well he might) did  
see,  
He list no lenger to use lothfull speach,

But her besought to take it well in gree,  
Sith shady dampe had dimd the heavens  
reach,  
To lodge with him that night, unles good  
cause empeach.

## XXII

The championesse, now seeing night at  
dore,  
Was glad to yeeld unto his good request:  
And with him went without gaine-saying  
more.  
Not farre away, but little wide by west,  
His dwelling was, to which he him adress;  
Where soone arriving, they received were  
In seemely wise, as them beseemed best:  
For he their host them goodly well did  
cheare,  
And talk't of pleasant things, the night  
away to weare.

## XXIII

Thus passing th' evening well, till time of  
rest,  
Then Britomart unto a bowre was brought;  
Where groomes awayted her to have undrest.  
But she ne would undressed be for ought,  
Ne doffe her armes, though he her much  
besought.  
For she had vow'd, she sayd, not to for-  
go  
Those warlike weedes, till she revenge had  
wrought  
Of a late wrong uppon a mortall foe;  
Which she would sure performe, betide her  
wele or wo.

## XXIV

Which when their host perceiv'd, right dis-  
content  
In minde he grew, for feare least by that  
art  
He should his purpose misse, which close  
he ment:  
Yet taking leave of her, he did depart.  
There all that night remained Britomart,  
Restlesse, recomfortlesse, with heart deepe  
grieved,  
Not suffering the least twinc kling sleepe  
to start  
Into her eye, which th' heart mote have  
relieved,  
But if the least appear'd, her eyes she  
streight reprieved.

## XXV

'Ye guilty eyes,' sayd she, 'the which with  
gnyle  
My heart at first betrayd, will ye betray  
My life now to, for which a little whyle  
Ye will not watch? False watches, well-  
away!  
I wote when ye did watch both night and  
day  
Unto your losse: and now needes will ye  
sleepe?  
Now ye have made my heart to wake al-  
way,  
Now will ye sleepe? ah! wake, and rather  
weepe,  
To thinke of your nights want, that should  
yee waking keepe.'

## XXVI

Thus did she watch, and weare the weary  
night  
In wayfull plaints, that none was to ap-  
pease;  
Now walking soft, now sitting still upright,  
As sundry chaunge her seemed best to ease.  
Ne lesse did Talus suffer sleepe to seaze  
His eye-lids sad, but watcht continually,  
Lying without her dore in great disease;  
Like to a spaniell wayting carefully,  
Least any should betray his lady treacher-  
ously.

## XXVII

What time the native belman of the night,  
The bird that warn'd Peter of his fall,  
First rings his silver bell t' each sleepey  
wight,  
That should their mindes up to devotion  
call,  
She heard a wondrous noise below the hall.  
All sodainely the bed, where she should lie,  
By a false trap was let adowne to fall  
Into a lower roome, and by and by  
The loft was raysd againe, that no man  
could it spie.

## XXVIII

With sight whereof she was dismayd right  
sore,  
Perceiving well the treason which was  
ment:  
Yet stirred not at all for doubt of more,  
But kept her place with courage confident,  
Wayting what would ensue of that event.  
It was not long before she heard the sound

Of armed men, comming with close intent  
Towards her chamber; at which dreadfull  
stound  
She quickly caught her sword, and shield  
about her bound.

## XXX

With that there came unto her chamber  
dore  
Two knights, all armed ready for to fight,  
And after them full many other more,  
A raskall rout, with weapons rudely dight.  
Whom soone as Talus spide by glins of  
night,  
He started up, there where ou ground he  
lay,  
And in his hand his thrasher ready keight.  
They seeing that, let drive at him streight  
way,  
And roud about him preace in riotous  
aray.

## XXX

But soone as he began to lay about  
With his rude yron flaile, they gan to fie,  
Both armed knights and eke unarmed rout:  
Yet Talus after them apace did plie,  
Where ever in the darke he could them  
spie;  
That here and there like scattred sheepe  
they lay.  
Then backe returning, where his dame did  
lie,  
He to her told the story of that fray,  
And all that treason there intended did  
bewray.

## XXXI

Wherewith though wondrous wroth, and  
inly burning  
To be avenged for so fowle a deede,  
Yet being forst to abide the daies return-  
ing,  
She there remain'd, but with right wary  
heede,  
Least any more such practise should pro-  
ceede.  
Now mote ye know (that which to Brito-  
mart  
Unknownen was) whence all this did pro-  
ceede,  
And for what cause so great mischievous  
smart  
Was ment to her, that never evill ment in  
hart.

## XXXII

The Goodman of this house was Dolon  
hight,  
A man of subtile wit and wicked minde,  
That whilome in his youth had bene a knight,  
And armes had borne, but little good  
could finde,  
And much lesse honour by that warlike  
kinde  
Of life: for he was nothing valorous,  
But with slie shiftes and wiles did under-  
minde  
All noble knights which were adventurous,  
And many brought to shame by treason  
treacherous.

## XXXIII

He had three sonnes, all three like fathers  
sonnes,  
Like treacherous, like full of fraud and  
guile,  
Of all that on this earthly compasse wonnes:  
The eldest of the which was slaine erewhile  
By Artegall, through his owne guilty wile;  
His uame was Guizor; whose untimely fate  
For to avenge, full many treasons vile  
His father Dolon had deviz'd of late  
With these his wicked sons, and shewd his  
cankred hate.

## XXXIV

For sure he weend that this his present  
gnest  
Was Artegall, by many tokens plaine;  
But chiefly by that yron page he ghest,  
Which still was wont with Artegall re-  
maine;  
And therefore ment him surely to have  
slaine.  
But by Gods grace, and her good heedinesse,  
She was preserved from their traytrous  
traine.  
Thus she all night wore out in watchfulnesse,  
Ne suffred slothfull sleepe her eyelids to  
opresse.

## XXXV

The morrow next, so soone as dawning  
houre  
Discovered had the light to living eye,  
She forth yssew'd out of her loathed bowre,  
With full intent t' avenge that villany  
On that vilde man and all his family:  
And comming down to seeke them where  
they wond,



Nor sire, nor sonnes, nor any could she spie:  
Each rowme she sought, but them all  
empty fond:  
They all were fled for feare, but whether,  
nether kond.

## XXXVI

She saw it vaine to make there lenger stay,  
But tooke her steede, and thereon mount-  
ing light,  
Gan her addresse unto her former way.  
She had not rid the mountenance of a flight,  
But that she saw there present in her sight  
Those two false brethren, on that perillous  
bridge  
On which Pollente with Artegall did fight.  
Streight was the passage like a ploughed  
ridge,  
That, if two met, the one mote needes fall  
over the lidge.

## XXXVII

There they did thinke them selves on her  
to wreake:  
Who as she nigh unto them drew, the one  
These vile reproches gan unto her speake:  
'Thou recreant false traytor, that with lone  
Of armes hast knighthood stolne, yet knight  
art none,  
No more shall now the darkenesse of the  
night  
Defend thee from the vengeance of thy fone,  
But with thy bloud thou shalt appease the  
spright  
Of Guizor, by thee slaine, and mured by  
thy slight.'

## XXXVIII

Strange were the words in Britomartis eare;  
Yet stayd she not for them, but forward  
fared,  
Till to the perillous bridge she came, and  
there  
Talus desir'd that he might have prepared  
The way to her, and those two losels scared.  
But she thereat was wroth, that for despight  
The glauncing sparkles through her bever  
glared,  
And from her eies did flash out fiery light,  
Like coles that through a silver censer  
sparkle bright.

## XXXIX

She stayd not to advise which way to take;  
But putting spurres unto her fiery beast,

Thorough the midst of them she way did  
make.

The one of them, which most her wrath  
increast,

Uppon her speare she bore before her breast,  
Till to the bridges further end she past,  
Where falling downe, his challenge he re-  
least:

The other over side the bridge she cast  
Into the river, where he drunke his deadly  
last.

## XL

As when the flashing levin haps to light  
Uppon two stubborne oakes, which stand so  
neare

That way betwixt them none appeares in  
sight;

The engin fiercely flying forth, doth teare  
Th' one from the earth, and through the  
aire doth beare;

The other it with force doth overthrow  
Uppon one side, and from his rootes doth  
reare:

So did the Championesse those two there  
strow,

And to their sire their carcasses left to be-  
stow.

## CANTO VII

Britomart comes to Isis Church,  
Where shee strange visions sees:  
She fights with Radigund, her slaies,  
And Artegall thence frees.

## I

NOUGHT is on earth more sacred or divine,  
That gods and men doe equally adore,  
Then this same vertue that doth right de-  
fine:

For th' heavens themselves, whence mortal  
men implore

Right in their wrongs, are rul'd by right-  
eous lore

Of highest Jove, who doth true justice  
deale

To his inferiour gods, and evermore  
Therewith contains his heavenly common-  
weale:

The skill whereof to princes hearts he doth  
reveale.

## II

Well therefore did the antique world invent,  
That Justice was a god of soveraine grace,

And altars unto him, and temples lent,  
 And heavenly honours in the highest place;  
 Calling him great Osyris, of the race  
 Of th' old Egyptian kings, that whylome  
     were;  
 With fayned colours shading a true case:  
 For that Osyris, whilst he lived here,  
 The justest man alive and truest did ap-  
     peare.

## III

His wife was Isis, whom they likewise made  
 A goddess of great powre and sovereignty,  
 And in her person cunningly did shade  
 That part of justice which is equity,  
 Whereof I have to treat here presently.  
 Unto whose temple when as Britomart  
 Arrived, shee with great humility  
 Did enter in, ne would that night depart;  
 But Talus mote not be admitted to her part.

## IV

There she received was in goodly wize  
 Of many priests, which duely did attend  
 Upon the rites and daily sacrifice,  
 All clad in linnen robes with silver hemd;  
 And on their heads, with long locks comely  
     kemd,  
 They wore rich mitres shaped like the  
     moone,  
 To shew that Isis doth the moone portend;  
 Like as Osyris signifies the sunne:  
 For that they both like race in equall just-  
     ice runne.

## V

The championesse them greeting, as she  
     could,  
 Was thence by them into the temple led;  
 Whose goodly building when she did be-  
     hould,  
 Borne uppon stately pillours, all dispred  
 With shining gold, and arched over hed,  
 She wondred at the workemaus passing  
     skill,  
 Whose like before she never saw nor red;  
 And thereuppon long while stood gazing  
     still,  
 But thought that she thereon could never  
     gaze her fill.

## VI

Thence forth unto the idoll they her  
     brought,  
 The which was framed all of silver fine,

So well as could with cunning hand be  
     wrought,  
 And clothed all in garments made of line,  
 Hemd all about with fringe of silver twine.  
 Uppon her head she wore a crowne of gold,  
 To shew that she had powre in things di-  
     vine;  
 And at her feete a crocodile was rold,  
 That with his wreathed taile her middle did  
     enfold.

## VII

One foote was set uppon the crocodile,  
 And on the ground the other fast did stand,  
 So meaning to suppress both forged guile  
 And open force: and in her other hand  
 She stretched forth a long white selender  
     wand.  
 Such was the goddess; whom when Brito-  
     mart  
 Had long beheld, her selfe uppon the land  
 She did prostrate, and with right humble  
     hart,  
 Unto her selfe her silent prayers did im-  
     part.

## VIII

To which the idoll as it were inclining,  
 Her wand did move with amiable looke,  
 By outward shew her inward sence desin-  
     ing.  
 Who well perceiving how her wand she  
     shooke,  
 It as a token of good fortune tooke.  
 By this the day with dampe was overcast,  
 And joyous light the house of Jove for-  
     sooke:  
 Which when she saw, her helmet she un-  
     laste,  
 And by the altars side her selfe to slumber  
     plaste.

## IX

For other beds the priests there used none,  
 But on their mother Earths deare lap did  
     lie,  
 And bake their sides uppon the cold hard  
     stone,  
 T' enure them selves to sufferance thereby  
 And proud rebellious flesh to mortify.  
 For, by the vow of their religion,  
 They tied were to stedfast chastity,  
 And continence of life, that, all forgon,  
 They mote the better tend to their devo-  
     tion.

## X

Therefore they mote not taste of fleshly  
 food,  
 Ne feed on ought the which doth bloud  
 containe,  
 Ne drinke of wine, for wine they say is  
 blood,  
 Even the bloud of gyants, which were  
 slaine  
 By thundring Jove in the Phlegrean plaine:  
 For which the Earth (as they the story  
 tell)  
 Wroth with the gods, whieh to perpetuall  
 paine  
 Had damn'd her sonnes, which gainst them  
 did rebell,  
 With inward griefe and malice did against  
 them swell.

## XI

And of their vitall bloud, the which was  
 shed  
 Into her pregnant bosome, forth she brought  
 The fruitfull vine, whose liquor bloudy  
 red,  
 Having the mindes of men with fury fraught,  
 Mote in them stirre up old rebellious  
 thought,  
 To make new warre against the gods againe:  
 Such is the powre of that same fruit, that  
 nought  
 The fell contagion may thereof restraine,  
 Ne within reasons rule her madding mood  
 containe.

## XII

There did the warlike maide her selfe re-  
 pose,  
 Under the wings of Isis all that night,  
 And with sweete rest her heavy eyes did  
 close,  
 After that long daies toile and weary plight.  
 Where whilst her earthly parts with soft  
 delight  
 Of sencelesse sleepe did deeply drowned lie,  
 There did appeare unto her heavenly spright  
 A wondrous vision, which did close implie  
 The course of all her fortune and posteritie.

## XIII

Her seem'd, as she was doing saerifize  
 To Isis, deekt with mitre on her hed  
 And linnen stole, after those priestes guize,  
 All sodainely she saw transfigured  
 Her linnen stole to robe of scarlet red,

And moone-like mitre to a crowne of gold,  
 That even she her selfe much wondered  
 At such a chaunge, and joyed to behold  
 Her selfe adorn'd with gems and jewels  
 manifold.

## XIV

And in the midst of her felicity,  
 An hideous tempest seemed from below  
 To rise through all the temple sodainely,  
 That from the altar all about did blow  
 The holy fire, and all the embers strow  
 Uppon the ground, which, kindled privily,  
 Into outrageous flames unwares did grow,  
 That all the temple put in jeopardy  
 Of flaming, and her selfe in great per-  
 plexity.

## XV

With that the crocodile, which sleeping lay  
 Under the idols feete in fearelesse bowre,  
 Seem'd to awake in horrible dismay,  
 As being troubled with that stormy stowre;  
 And gaping greedy wide, did streight de-  
 voure  
 Both flames and tempest: with which  
 growen great,  
 And swolne with pride of his owne peere-  
 lesse powre,  
 He gan to threaten her likewise to eat;  
 But that the goddesse with her rod him  
 backe did beat.

## XVI

Tho turning all his pride to humblesse  
 meeke,  
 Him selfe before her feete he lowly threw,  
 And gan for grace and love of her to seeke:  
 Which she accepting, he so neare her drew,  
 That of his game she soone enwombed  
 grew,  
 And forth did bring a lion of great might;  
 That shortly did all other beasts subdew.  
 With that she waked, full of fearefull  
 fright,  
 And doubtfully dismayd through that so  
 uncouth sight.

## XVII

So thereuppon long while she musing lay,  
 With thousand thoughts feeding her fan-  
 tasie,  
 Untill she spide the lampe of lightsome  
 day,  
 Up-lifted in the poreh of heaven hie.



Then up she rose fraught with melancholy,  
And forth into the lower parts did pas;  
Whereas the priestes she found full busily  
About their holy things for morrow mas:  
Whom she saluting faire, faire resaluted  
was.

## XVIII

But, by the change of her unchearefull  
looke,  
They might perceive she was not well in  
plight;  
Or that some pensivenesse to heart she  
tooke.  
Therefore thus one of them, who seem'd in  
sight  
To be the greatest and the gravest wight,  
To her bespake: 'Sir knight, it seemes to  
me,  
That, thorough evill rest of this last night,  
Or ill apayd or much dismayd ye be,  
That by your change of cheare is easie for  
to see.'

## XIX

'Certes,' sayd she, 'sith ye so well have  
spide  
The troublous passion of my pensive mind,  
I will not seeke the same from you to hide,  
But will my cares unfold, in hope to find  
Your aide, to guide me out of errour blind.'  
'Say on,' quoth he, 'the secret of your hart:  
For by the holy vow which me doth bind  
I am adjur'd, best counsell to impart  
To all that shall require my comfort in their  
smart.'

## XX

Then gan she to declare the whole discourse  
Of all that vision which to her appeared,  
As well as to her minde it had recourse.  
All which when he unto the end had heard,  
Like to a weake faint-hearted man he fared,  
Through great astonishment of that strange  
sight;  
And with long locks up-standing, stifly stared  
Like one adawed with some dreadful  
spright.  
So fild with heavenly fury, thus he her be-  
hight:

## XXI

'Magnificeke virgin, that in queint disguise  
Of British armes doest maske thy royall  
blood,

So to pursue a perillous emprise,  
How couldst thou weene, through that dis-  
guized hood,  
To hide thy state from being understood?  
Can from th' immortal gods ought hidden  
bee?

They doe thy linage, and thy lordly brood,  
They doe thy sire, lamenting sore for thee,  
They doe thy love, forlorne in womens  
thraldome, see.

## XXII

'The end whereof, and all the long event,  
They doe to thee in this same dreame dis-  
cover.

For that same crocodile doth represent  
The righteous knight that is thy faithfull  
lover,

Like to Osyris in all just endeavor.  
For that same crocodile Osyris is,  
That under Isis feete doth sleepe for ever:  
To shew that clemence oft, in things amis,  
Restraines those sterne behests and cruell  
doomes of his.

## XXIII

'That knight shall all the troublous stormes  
asswage,  
And raging flames, that many foes shall  
reare,  
To hinder thee from the just heritage  
Of thy sires crowne, and from thy countrey  
deare.

Then shalt thou take him to thy loved fere,  
And joyne in equall portion of thy realme:  
And afterwards a sonne to him shalt beare,  
That lion-like shall shew his powre ex-  
treame.

So blesse thee God, and give thee joyance  
of thy dreame.'

## XXIV

All which when she unto the end had  
heard,  
She much was eased in her troublous  
thought,

And on those priests bestowed rich reward:  
And royall gifts of gold and silver wrought  
She for a present to their goddess brought.  
Then taking leave of them, she forward  
went,

To seeke her love, where he was to be  
sought;

Ne rested till she came without relent  
Unto the land of Amazons, as she was bent.

## XXV

Whereof when newes to Radigund was  
brought,  
Not with amaze, as women wonted bee,  
She was confused in her troublous thought,  
But fild with courage and with joyous glee,  
As glad to heare of armes, the which now  
she  
Had long surceast, she bad to open bold,  
That she the face of her new foe might see.  
But when they of that yron man had told,  
Which late her folke had slaine, she bad  
them forth to hold.

## XXVI

So there without the gate (as seemed best)  
She caused her pavilion be pight;  
In which stout Britomart her selfe did rest,  
Whiles Talus watched at the dore all night.  
All night likewise, they of the towne in  
fright  
Uppon their wall good watch and ward did  
keepe.  
The morrow next, so soone as dawning light  
Bad doe away the dampe of drouzie sleepe,  
The warlike Amazon out of her bowre did  
peepe;

## XXVII

And caused streight a trumpet loud to  
shrill,  
To warne her foe to battell soone be prest:  
Who, long before awoke, (for she ful ill  
Could sleepe all night, that in unquiet brest  
Did closely harbour such a jealous guest)  
Was to the battell whilome ready dight.  
Eftsoones that warriouresse with haughty  
crest  
Did forth issue, all ready for the fight:  
On th' other side her foe appeared soone in  
sight.

## XXVIII

But ere they reared hand, the Amazone  
Began the streight conditions to propound,  
With which she used still to tie her fone:  
To serve her so, as she the rest had bound.  
Which when the other heard, she sternly  
frownd  
For high disdaine of such indignity,  
And would no lenger treat, but bad them  
sound.  
For her no other termes should ever tie,  
Then what prescribed were by lawes of  
chevalrie.

## XXIX

The trumpets sound, and they together run  
With greedy rage, and with their faulchins  
smot;  
Ne either sought the others strokes to shun,  
But through great fury both their skill  
forgot,  
And practicke use in armes: ne spared not  
Their dainty parts, which Nature had created  
So faire and tender, without staine or spot,  
For other uses then they them translated;  
Which they now hackt and hewd, as if such  
use they hated.

## XXX

As when a tygre and a lionesse  
Are met at spoyling of some hungry pray,  
Both challenge it with equall greedinesse:  
But first the tygre clawes thereon did lay;  
And therefore loth to loose her right away,  
Doth in defence thereof full stoutly stond:  
To which the lion strongly doth gainesay,  
That she to hunt the beast first tooke in  
hond;  
And therefore ought it have, where ever  
she it fond.

## XXXI

Full fiercely layde the Amazon about,  
And dealt her blowes unmercifully sore:  
Which Britomart withstood with courage  
stout,  
And them repaide againe with double more.  
So long they fought, that all the grassie  
flore  
Was fild with bloud, which from their sides  
did flow,  
And gushed through their armes, that all  
in gore  
They trode, and on the ground their lives  
did strow,  
Like fruitles seede, of which untimely  
death should grow.

## XXXII

At last proud Radigund with fell despight,  
Having by chaunce espide advantage neare,  
Let drive at her with all her dreadfull  
might,  
And thus upbrayding said: 'This token  
beare  
Unto the man whom thou doest love so  
deare;  
And tell him for his sake thy life thou  
gavest.'

Which spitefull words she sore engriev'd to  
 heare,  
 Thus answer'd: 'Lewdly thou my love de-  
 pravest,  
 Who shortly must repent that now so  
 vainely bravest.'

## XXXIII

Nath'lesse that stroke so cruell passage  
 found,  
 That, glauncing on her shoulder plate, it bit  
 Unto the bone, and made a griesly wound,  
 That she her shield through raging smart  
 of it  
 Could scarce uphold; yet soone she it re-  
 quit:  
 For having force increast through furious  
 paine,  
 She her so rudely on the helmet smit,  
 That it empierced to the very braine,  
 And her proud person low prostrated on  
 the plaine.

## XXXIV

Where being layd, the wrothfull Britonesse  
 Stayd not till she came to her selfe againe,  
 But in revenge both of her loves distresse,  
 And her late vile reproch, though vaunted  
 vaine,  
 And also of her wound, which sore did  
 paine,  
 She with one stroke both head and helmet  
 cleft.  
 Which dreadfull sight when all her warlike  
 traine  
 There present saw, each one, of sence bereft,  
 Fled fast into the towne, and her sole vic-  
 tor left.

## XXXV

But yet so fast they could not home retrate,  
 But that swift Talus did the formost win;  
 And pressing through the preace unto the  
 gate,  
 Pelmel with them attonce did enter in.  
 There then a piteous slaughter did begin:  
 For all that ever came within his reach  
 He with his yron flae did thresh so thin.  
 That he no worke at all left for the leach:  
 Like to an hideous storme, which nothing  
 may empeach.

## XXXVI

And now by this the noble conqueresse  
 Her selfe came in, her glory to partake;

Where, though revengefull vow she did  
 professe,  
 Yet when she saw the heapes which he did  
 make  
 Of slaughtred carkasses, her heart did  
 quake  
 For very ruth, which did it almost rive,  
 That she his fury willed him to slake:  
 For else he sure had left not one alive,  
 But all, in his revenge, of spirite would  
 deprive.

## XXXVII

Tho, when she had his execution stayd,  
 She for that yron prison did enquire,  
 In which her wretched love was captive layd:  
 Which breaking open with indignant ire,  
 She entred into all the partes entire:  
 Where when she saw that lothly uncouth  
 sight,  
 Of men disguiz'd in womanishe attire,  
 Her heart gan grudge, for very deepe  
 despight  
 Of so unmanly maske, in misery misdight.

## XXXVIII

At last when as to her owne love she came,  
 Whom like disguise no lesse deformed had,  
 At sight thereof abasht with secrete shame,  
 She turnd her head aside, as nothing glad  
 To have beheld a spectacle so bad.  
 And then too well beleev'd that which tofore  
 Jealous suspect as true untruely drad:  
 Which vaine conceipt now nourishing no  
 more,  
 She sought with ruth to salve his sad mis-  
 fortunes sore.

## XXXIX

Not so great wonder and astonishment  
 Did the most chast Penelope possesse,  
 To see her lord, that was reported drent,  
 And dead long since in dolorous distresse,  
 Come home to her in piteous wretchednesse,  
 After long travell of full twenty yeares,  
 That she knew not his favours likeliness,  
 For many scarres and many hoary heares,  
 But stood long staring on him, mongst un-  
 certaine feares.

## XL

'Ah! my deare lord, what sight is this?'  
 quoth she;  
 'What May-game hath misfortune made of  
 you?'



Where is that dreadfull manly looke ?  
 where be  
 Those mighty palmes, the which ye wont  
 t' embrew  
 In bloud of kings, and great hoastes to  
 subdew ?  
 Could ought on earth so wondrous change  
 have wrought,  
 As to have robde you of that manly hew ?  
 Could so great courage stouped have to  
 ought ?  
 Then farewell, fleshly force; I see thy pride  
 is nought.'

## XLI

Thenceforth she streight into a bowre him  
 brought,  
 And cansd him those uncomely weedes un-  
 dight,  
 And in their steede for other rayment  
 sought,  
 Whereof there was great store, and ar-  
 mours bright,  
 Which had bene reft from many a noble  
 knight;  
 Whom that proud Amazon subdewed had,  
 Whilest fortune favoured her successe in  
 fight:  
 In which when as she him anew had clad,  
 She was reviv'd, and joyd much in his  
 semblance glad.

## XLII

So there a while they afterwards remained,  
 Him to refresh, and her late wounds to  
 heale:  
 During which space she there as princes  
 rained,  
 And changing all that forme of common  
 weale,  
 The liberty of women did repeale,  
 Which they had long usnrpt; and them re-  
 storing  
 To mens subjection, did true justice deale:  
 That all they, as a goddesse her adoring,  
 Her wisdomedid admire, and hearkued to  
 her loring.

## XLIII

For all those knights, which long in captive  
 shade  
 Had shrowded bene, she did from thraldome  
 free,  
 And magistrates of all that city made,  
 And gave to them great living and large fee:

And that they should for ever faithfull bee,  
 Made them sweare fealty to Artegall:  
 Who when him selfe now well recur'd did  
 see,  
 He purposed to proceed, what so be fall,  
 Upon his first adventure, which him forth  
 did call.

## XLIV

Full sad and sorrowfull was Britomart  
 For his departure, her new cause of griefe;  
 Yet wisely moderated her owne smart,  
 Seeing his honor, which she tendred chiefe,  
 Consisted much in that adventures priefe.  
 The care whereof, and hope of his successe,  
 Gave unto her great comfort and reliefe,  
 That womanish complaints she did repress,  
 And tempred for the time her present  
 heaviness.

## XLV

There she continu'd for a certaine space,  
 Till through his want her woe did more in-  
 crease:  
 Then, hoping that the change of aire and  
 place  
 Would change her paine, and sorrow some-  
 what ease,  
 She parted thence, her anguish to appease.  
 Meane while her noble lord, Sir Artegall,  
 Went on his way, ne ever howre did cease,  
 Till he redeemed had that lady thrall:  
 That for another canto will more fitly fall.

## CANTO VIII

Prince Arthure and Sir Artegall  
 Free Samient from feare:  
 They slay the Soudan, drive his wife  
 Adicia to despaire.

## I

NOUGHT under heaven so strongly doth  
 allure  
 The sence of man, and all his minde pos-  
 sesse,  
 As beauties lovely baite, that doth procure  
 Great warriors oft their rigour to repress,  
 And mighty hands forget their manlinesse;  
 Drawne with the powre of an heart-robbing  
 eye,  
 And wrapt in fetters of a golden tresse,  
 That can with melting pleasaunce mollifye  
 Their hardned hearts, enur'd to bloud and  
 cruelty.

## II

So whylome learnd that mighty Jewish  
swaine,  
Each of whose lockes did match a man in  
might,  
To lay his spoiles before his lemans traine:  
So also did that great Oetean knight  
For his loves sake his lions skin undight:  
And so did warlike Antony neglect  
The worlds whole rule for Cleopatras sight.  
Such wondrous powre hath wemens faire  
aspect,  
To captive men, and make them all the  
world reject.

## III

Yet could it not sterne Artegall retaine,  
Nor hold from suite of his avowed quest,  
Which he had undertane to Gloriane;  
But left his love, albe her strong request,  
Faire Britomart, in languor and unrest,  
And rode him selfe uppon his first in-  
tent:  
Ne day nor night did ever idly rest;  
Ne wight but onely Talus with him went,  
The true guide of his way and vertuous  
government.

## IV

So travelling, he chaunst far off to heed  
A damzell, flying on a palfrey fast  
Before two knights, that after her did  
speed  
With all their powre, and her full fiercely  
ehast  
In hope to have her overhent at last:  
Yet fled she fast, and both them farre out-  
went,  
Carried with wings of feare, like fowle  
aghost,  
With locks all loose, and rayment all to-  
rent;  
And ever as she rode, her eye was backe-  
ward bent.

## V

Soone after these he saw another knight,  
That after those two former rode apace,  
With speare in rest, and prickt with all his  
might:  
So ran they all, as they had bene at bace,  
They being chased, that did others chase.  
At length he saw the hindmost overtake  
One of those two, and force him turne his  
face;

How ever loth he were his way to slake,  
Yet mote he algates now abide, and an-  
swere make.

## VI

But th' other still pursu'd the fearefull  
mayd;  
Who still from him as fast away did flie,  
Ne once for ought her speedy passage  
stayd,  
Till that at length she did before her spie  
Sir Artegall, to whom she streight did hie  
With gladfull hast, in hope of him to get  
Succour against her greedy enemy:  
Who, seeing her approach, gan forward set,  
To save her from her feare, and him from  
force to let.

## VII

But he like hound full greedy of his pray,  
Being impatient of impediment,  
Continu'd still his course, and by the way  
Thought with his speare him quight have  
overwent.  
So both together, ylike felly bent,  
Like fiercely met. But Artegall was  
stronger,  
And better skild in tilt and turnament,  
And bore him quite out of his saddle,  
longer  
Then two speares length: so mischief  
overmatcht the wronger.

## VIII

And in his fall misfortune him mistooke;  
For on his head unhappily he pight,  
That his owne waight his necke asunder  
broke,  
And left there dead. Meane while the  
other knight  
Defeated had the other faytour quight,  
And all his bowels in his body brast:  
Whom leaving there in that dispiteous  
plight,  
He ran still on, thinking to follow fast  
His other fellow Pagan, which before him  
past.

## IX

In stead of whom finding there ready prest  
Sir Artegall, without discretion  
He at him ran, with ready speare in rest:  
Who, seeing him come still so fiercely on,  
Against him made againe. So both anon  
Together met, and strongly either strooke

And broke their speares; yet neither has  
 forgon  
 His horses backe, yet to and fro long shooke,  
 And tottred like two towres, which through  
 a tempest quooke.

## X

But when againe they had recovered sence,  
 They drew their swords, in mind to make  
 amends  
 For what their speares had fayld of their  
 pretence.  
 Which when the damzell, who those deadly  
 ends  
 Of both her foes had seene, and now her  
 friends  
 For her beginning a more fearefull fray,  
 She to them runnes in hast, and her haire  
 rends,  
 Crying to them their cruell hands to stay,  
 Untill they both doe heare what she to  
 them will say.

## XI

They stayd their hands, when she thus gan  
 to speake:  
 'Ah! gentle knights, what meane ye thus  
 unwise  
 Upon your selves anothers wrong to  
 wreake?  
 I am the wrong'd, whom ye did enterprise  
 Both to redresse, and both redrest like-  
 wise:  
 Witnesse the Paynims both, whom ye may  
 see  
 There dead on ground. What doe ye then  
 devise  
 Of more revenge? if more, then I am shee  
 Which was the roote of all; end your revenge  
 on mee.'

## XII

Whom when they heard so say, they lookt  
 about,  
 To weete if it were true, as she had told;  
 Where when they saw their foes dead out  
 of doubt,  
 Eftsoones they gan their wrothfull hands  
 to hold,  
 And ventailes reare, each other to behold.  
 Tho, when as Artegall did Arthure vew,  
 So faire a creature, and so wondrous bold,  
 He much admired both his heart and hew,  
 And touched with intire affection, nigh him  
 drew,

## XIII

Saying: 'Sir knight, of pardon I you pray,  
 That all unweeting have you wrong'd thus  
 sore,  
 Suffring my hand against my heart to stray:  
 Which if ye please forgive, I will therefore  
 Yeeld for amends my selfe yours evermore,  
 Or what so penaunce shall by you be red.'  
 To whom the Prince: 'Certes, me needeth  
 more  
 To crave the same, whom errour so misled,  
 As that I did mistake the living for the ded.

## XIV

'But sith ye please that both our blames  
 shall die,  
 Amends may for the trespasse soone be made,  
 Since neither is endamadg'd much thereby.'  
 So can they both them selves full eath per-  
 swade  
 To faire accordaunce, and both faults to  
 shade,  
 Either embracing other lovingly,  
 And swearing faith to either on his blade,  
 Never thenceforth to nourish enmity,  
 But either others cause to maintaine mu-  
 tually.

## XV

Then Artegall gan of the Prince enquire,  
 What were those knights, which there on  
 ground were layd,  
 And had receiv'd their follies worthy hire,  
 And for what cause they chased so that  
 mayd.  
 'Certes, I wote not well,' the Prince then  
 sayd,  
 'But by adventure found them faring so,  
 As by the way unweetingly I strayd,  
 And lo the damzell selfe, whence all did  
 grow,  
 Of whom we may at will the whole occa-  
 sion know.'

## XVI

Then they that damzell called to them nie,  
 And asked her, what were those two her  
 fone,  
 From whom she earst so fast away did flie;  
 And what was she her selfe so woe begone,  
 And for what cause pursu'd of them attone.  
 To whom she thus: 'Then wote ye well,  
 that I  
 Doe serve a queene, that not far hence doth  
 wone,



A princesse of great powre and majestie,  
Famous through all the world, and honor'd  
far and nic.

## XVII

' Her name Mercilla most men use to call;  
That is a mayden queene of high renowne,  
For her great bounty knowne over all,  
And soveraine grace, with which her royall  
croune  
She doth support, and strongly beateth  
downe  
The malice of her foes, which her envy,  
And at her happinesse do fret and frowne:  
Yet she her selfe the more doth magnify,  
And even to her foes her mercies multiply.

## XVIII

' Mongst many which maligne her happy  
state,  
There is a mighty man, which womes here  
by,  
That with most fell despight and deadly  
hate  
Seekes to subvert her croune and dignity,  
And all his powre doth thereunto apply:  
And her good knights, of which so brave a  
band  
Serves her as any princesse under sky,  
He either spoiles, if they against him stand,  
Or to his part allures, and bribeth under  
hand.

## XIX

' Ne him sufficeth all the wrong and ill,  
Which he unto her people does each day,  
But that he seekes by traytrous traines to  
spill  
Her person, and her sacred selfe to slay:  
That, O ye heavens, defend, and turne away  
From her unto the miscreant him selfe,  
That neither hath religion nor fay,  
But makes his god of his ungodly pelfe,  
And idols serves; so let his 'dols serve the  
elfe.

## XX

' To all which cruell tyranny, they say,  
He is provokt, and stird up day and night  
By his bad wife, that hight Adicia,  
Who counsels him, through confidence of  
might,  
To breake all bonds of law and rules of  
right.  
For she her selfe professeth mortall foe

To Justice, and against her still doth fight,  
Working to all that love her deadly woe,  
And making all her knights and people to  
doe so.

## XXI

' Which my liege lady seeing, thought it  
best,  
With that his wife in friendly wise to deale,  
For stint of strife and stablishment of rest  
Both to her selfe and to her common weale,  
And all forepast displeasures to repeale.  
So me in message unto her she sent,  
To treat with her, by way of enterdeale,  
Of finall peace and faire attonement,  
Which might concluded be by mutuall con-  
sent.

## XXII

' All times have wont safe passage to afford  
To messengers that come for causes just:  
But this proude dame, disdayning all accord,  
Not onely into bitter termes forth brust,  
Reviling me, and rayling as she lust,  
But lastly, to make prooffe of utmost  
shame,  
Me like a dog she out of dores did thrust,  
Miscalling me by many a bitter name,  
That never did her ill, ne once deserved  
blame.

## XXIII

' And lastly, that no shame might wanting  
be,  
When I was gone, soone after me she sent  
These two false knights, whom there ye ly-  
ing see,  
To be by them dishonoured and shent:  
But thankt be God, and your good hardi-  
ment,  
They have the price of their owne folly  
payd.'  
So said this damzell, that hight Samient,  
And to those knights, for their so noble ayd,  
Her selfe most gratefull shew'd, and heap-  
ed thanks repayd.

## XXIV

But they now having throughly heard, and  
seene  
Al those great wrongs, the which that  
mayd complained  
To have bene done against her lady queene  
By that proud dame, which her so much  
disdained,

Were moved much thereat, and twixt them  
fained  
With all their force to worke avengement  
strong  
Uppon the Souldan selfe, which it mayn-  
tained,  
And on his lady, th' author of that wrong,  
And uppou all those knights that did to her  
belong.

## XXV

But thinking best by counterfet disguise  
To their deseigne to make the easier way,  
They did this complot twixt them selves de-  
vise:

First, that Sir Artegall should him array  
Like one of those two knights which dead  
there lay;

And then that damzell, the sad Samient,  
Should as his purchast prize with him  
convay

Unto the Souldans court, her to present  
Unto his scornfull lady, that for her had  
sent.

## XXVI

So as they had deviz'd, Sir Artegall  
Him clad in th' armour of a Pagan  
knight,

And taking with him, as his vanquisht  
thrall,

That damzell, led her to the Souldans  
right.

Where soone as his proud wife of her had  
sight,

Forth of her window as she looking lay,  
She weened streight it was her Paynim  
knight,

Which brought that damzell as his purchast  
pray;

And sent to him a page, that mote direct  
his way.

## XXVII

Who bringing them to their appointed place,  
Offred his service to disarm the knight;  
But he refusing him to let unlace,  
For doubt to be discovered by his sight,  
Kept himselfe still in his straunge armour  
dight.

Soone after whom the Prince arrived there,  
And sending to the Souldan in despight  
A bold defiance, did of him requere  
That damzell, whom he held as wrongfull  
prisonere.

## XXVIII

Wherewith the Souldan all with furie  
fraught,  
Swearing and banning most blasphemously,  
Commaunded straight his armour to be  
brought,

And mounting straight upon a charret hye,  
(With yron wheelles and hookes arm'd  
dreadfully,

And drawne of cruell steedes, which he  
had fed

With flesh of men, whom through fell  
tyranny

He slaughtred had, and ere they were halfe  
ded,

Their bodies to his beasts for provender did  
spred,)

## XXIX

So forth he came, all in a cote of plate,  
Burnisht with bloudie rust; whiles on the  
greene

The Briton Prince him readie did awayte,  
In glistering armes right goodly well be-  
seene,

That shone as bright as doth the heaven  
sheene;

And by his stirrup Talus did attend,  
Playing his pages part, as he had beene  
Before directed by his lord; to th' end  
He should his flae to finall execution bend.

## XXX

Thus goe they both together to their geare,  
With like fierce minds, but meanings dif-  
ferent:

For the proud Souldan, with presumptuous  
cheare,

And countenance sublime and insolent,  
Sought onely slaughter and avengement:

But the brave Prince for honour and for  
right,

Gainst tortious powre and lawlesse regi-  
ment,

In the behalfe of wronged weake did fight:  
More in his causes truth he trusted then in  
might.

## XXXI

Like to the Thracian tyrant, who, they  
say,

Unto his horses gave his guests for meat,  
Till he himselfe was made their greedie  
pray,

And torne in peeces by Alcides great:

So thought the Souldan in his follies threat,  
 Either the Prince in peeces to have torne  
 With his sharpe wheelles, in his first rages  
     heat,  
 Or under his fierce horses feet have borne,  
 And trampled downe in dust his thoughts  
     disdained scorne.

## XXXII

But the bold child that perill well espying,  
 If he too rashly to his charet drew,  
 Gave way unto his horses speedie flying,  
 And their resistlesse rigour did eschew.  
 Yet, as he passed by, the Pagan threw  
 A shivering dart with so impetuous force,  
 That, had he not it shun'd with heedfull  
     vew,  
 It had himselfe transfixt, or his horse,  
 Or made them both one masse withouten  
     more remorse.

## XXXIII

Oft drew the Prince unto his charret nigh,  
 In hope some stroke to fasten on him  
     neare;  
 But he was mounted in his seat so high,  
 And his wingfooted coursers him did beare  
 So fast away, that ere his readie speare  
 He could advance, he farre was gone and  
     past.  
 Yet still he him did follow every where,  
 And followed was of him likewise full  
     fast,  
 So long as in his steedes the flaming breath  
     did last.

## XXXIV

Againe the Pagan threw another dart,  
 Of which he had with him abundant store,  
 On every side of his embatteld cart,  
 And of all other weapons lesse or more,  
 Which warlike uses had devis'd of yore.  
 The wicked shaft, guyded through th' ayrie  
     wyde  
 By some bad spirit, that it to mischief  
     bore,  
 Stayd not, till through his curat it did  
     glyde,  
 And made a griesly wound in his enriuen  
     side.

## XXXV

Much was he grieved with that haplesse  
     throe,  
 That opened had the welspring of his blood;

But much the more that to his hatefull foe  
 He mote not come, to wreake his wrathfull  
     mood.

That made him rave, like to a lyon wood,  
 Which, being wounded of the huntsmans  
     hand,  
 Can not come neare him in the covert  
     wood,  
 Where he with boughes hath built his  
     shady stand,  
 And fenst himselfe about with many a  
     flaming brand.

## XXXVI

Still when he sought t' approach unto him  
     ny,  
 His charret wheelles about him whirled  
     round,  
 And made him backe againe as fast to fly;  
 And eke his steedes, like to an hungry  
     hound,  
 That hunting after game hath carrion  
     found,  
 So cruelly did him pursue and chace,  
 That his good steed, all were he much re-  
     nound  
 For noble courage and for hardie race,  
 Durst not endure their sight, but fled from  
     place to place.

## XXXVII

Thus long they trast and traverst to and  
     fro,  
 Seeking by every way to make some  
     breach,  
 Yet could the Prince not nigh unto him goe,  
 That one sure stroke he might unto him  
     reach,  
 Whereby his strengthes assay he might  
     him teach.  
 At last from his victorious shield he drew  
 The vaile which did his powrefull light em-  
     peach;  
 And comming full before his horses vew,  
 As they upon him prest, it plaine to them  
     did shew.

## XXXVIII

Like lightening flash, that hath the gazer  
     burned,  
 So did the sight thereof their sense dismay,  
 That backe againe upon themselves they  
     turned,  
 And with their ryder ranne perforce away:  
 Ne could the Souldan them from flying stay



With raynes, or wonted rule, as well he knew.

Nought feared they what he could do or say,

But th' onely feare that was before their vew;

From which, like mazed deare, dismayfully they flew.

## XXXIX

Fast did they fly as them their feete could beare,

High over hilles, and lowly over dales,

As they were follow'd of their former feare.

In vaine the Pagan bannes, and sweares, and rayles,

And backe with both his hands unto him hayles

The resty raynes, regarded now no more:

He to them calles and speakes, yet nought awayles;

They heare him not, they have forgot his lore,

But go which way they list; their guide they have forlore.

## XL

As when the fire-mouthed steeds, which drew

The sunnes bright wayne to Phaetons decay,

Soone as they did the monstrous Scorpion vew,

With ugly craples crawling in their way,

The dreadfull sight did them so sore affray,

That their well known courses they forwent,

And leading th' ever-burning lampe astray,

This lower world nigh all to ashes brent,

And left their scorched path yet in the firmament.

## XLI

Such was the furie of these head-strong steeds,

Soone as the infants sunlike shield they saw,

That all obedience both to words and deeds

They quite forgot, and scornd all former law:

Through woods, and rocks, and mountaines they did draw

The yron charet, and the wheelles did teare,

And tost the Paynim, without feare or awe;

From side to side they tost him here and there,

Crying to them in vaine, that nould his crying heare.

## XLII

Yet still the Prince pursew'd him close behind,

Oft making offer him to smite, but found No easie meanes according to his mind.

At last they have all overthrowne to ground,

Quite topside turvey, and the Pagan bound

Amongst the yron hookes and graples keene

Torne all to rags, and rent with many a wound,

That no whole peece of him was to be seene,

But scattred all about, and strow'd upon the Greene.

## XLIII

Like as the cursed sonne of Theseus,

That, following his chace in dewy morne,

To fly his stepdames loves outrageous,

Of his owne steedes was all to peeces torne,

And his faire limbs left in the woods forlorne;

That for his sake Diana did lament,

And all the wooddy nymphes did wayle and mourne:

So was this Souldan rapt and all to-rent,

That of his shape appear'd no litle monument.

## XLIV

Onely his shield and armour, which there lay,

Though nothing whole, but all to-brusd and broken,

He up did take, and with him brought away,

That mote remaine for an eternall token

To all mongst whom this storie should be spoken,

How worthily, by Heavens high decree,

Justice that day of wrong her selfe had wroken,

That all men which that spectacle did see,

By like ensample mote for ever warned bee.

## XLV

So on a tree, before the tyrants dore,

He caused them be hung in all mens sight,

To be a monument for evermore.

Which when his ladie from the castles hight

Beheld, it much appald her troubled spright:  
 Yet not, as women wont, in dolefull fit  
 She was dismayd, or faynted through  
 affright,  
 But gathered unto her her troubled wit,  
 And gan eftsoones devise to be aveng'd for  
 it.

## XLVI

Streight downe she ranne, like an enraged  
 cow,  
 That is herobbed of her youngling dere,  
 With knife in hand, and fatallly did vow  
 To wreake her on that mayden messengere,  
 Whom she had causd be kept as prisonere  
 By Artegall, misween'd for her owne knight,  
 That brought her backe. And comming  
 present there,  
 She at her ran with all her force and might,  
 All flaming with revenge and furious de-  
 spight.

## XLVII

Like raging Ino, when with knife in hand  
 She threw her husbands murdred infant  
 out;  
 Or fell Medea, when on Colchicke strand  
 Her brothers bones she scattered all about;  
 Or as that madding mother, mongst the  
 rout  
 Of Bacchus priests, her owne deare flesh  
 did teare.  
 Yet neither Ino, nor Medea stout,  
 Nor all the Mœnades so furious were,  
 As this bold woman, when she saw that  
 damzell there.

## XLVIII

Bnt Artegall, being thereof aware,  
 Did stay her cruell hand, ere she her  
 raught,  
 And as she did her selfe to strike prepare,  
 Out of her fist the wicked weapon caught:  
 With that, like one enfelon'd or distraught,  
 She forth did rome, whether her rage her  
 bore,  
 With franticke passion and with furie  
 fraught;  
 And breaking forth out at a posterne dore,  
 Unto the wyld wood ranne, her dolours to  
 deplore.

## XLIX

As a mad bytch, when as the franticke fit  
 Her burning tongue with rage inflamed hath,

Doth runne at randon, and with furions  
 bit  
 Snatching at every thing, doth wreake her  
 wrath  
 On man and beast that commeth in her  
 path.  
 There they doe say that she transformed  
 was  
 Into a tygre, and that tygres seath  
 In crueltie and outrage she did pas,  
 To prove her surname true, that she im-  
 posed has.

## L

Then Artegall himselve discovering plaine,  
 Did issue forth gainst all that warlike rout  
 Of knights and armed men, which did  
 maintaine  
 That ladies part, and to the Souldan lout:  
 All which he did assault with courage stout,  
 All were they nigh an hundred knights of  
 name,  
 And like wyld goates them chaced all about,  
 Flying from place to place with cowheard  
 shame,  
 So that with finall force them all he over-  
 came.

## LI

Then caused he the gates be opened wyde,  
 And there the Prince, as victour of that  
 day,  
 With tryumph entertayn'd and glorifyde,  
 Presenting him with all the rich array  
 And roiall pompe, which there long hidden  
 lay,  
 Purchase through lawlesse powre and tor-  
 tions wrong  
 Of that proud Souldan, whom he earst did  
 slay.  
 So both, for rest there having stayd not  
 long,  
 Marcht with that mayd, fit matter for an-  
 other song.

## CANTO IX

Arthur and Artegall catch Guyle,  
 Whom Talus doth disnay:  
 They to Mercillaes pallace come,  
 And see her rich array.

## I

WHAT tygre, or what other salvage wight,  
 Is so exceeding furious and fell

As Wrong, when it bath arm'd it selfe with  
might ?

Not fit mongst men, that doe with reason  
mell,

But mongst wyld beasts and salvage woods  
to dwell;

Where still the stronger doth the weake de-  
voure,

And they that most in boldnesse doe excell  
Are dreaded most, and feared for their  
powre:

Fit for Adicia, there to build her wicked  
bowre.

## II

There let her wonne farre from resort of  
men,

Where righteous Artegall her late exyled;  
There let her ever keepe her damned den,

Where none may be with her lewd parts  
defyled,

Nor none but beasts may be of her de-  
spoyled:

And turne we to the noble Prince, where  
late

We did him leave, after that he had foyled  
The cruell Souldan, and with dreadfull  
fate

Had utterly subverted his unrighteous  
state.

## III

Where having with Sir Artegall a space  
Well solast in that Souldans late delight,

They both resolving now to leave the place,  
Both it and all the wealth therein behight

Unto that damzell in her ladies right,  
And so would have departed on their way.

But she them woo'd by all the meanes she  
might,

And earnestly besought, to wend that day  
With her, to see her ladie thence not farre

away.

## IV

By whose entreatie both they overcommen,  
Agree to goe with her, and by the way,

(As often falles) of sundry things did com-  
men.

Mongst which that damzell did to them  
bewray

A straunge adventure, which not farre  
thence lay;

To weet, a wicked villaine, bold and stout,  
Which wonned in a rocke not farre away,

That robbed all the countrie there about,  
And brought the pillage home, whence  
none could get it out.

## V

Thereto both his owne wylie wit (she sayd)  
And eke the fastnesse of his dwelling place,

Both unassaylable, gave him great ayde:  
For he so crafty was to forge and face,

So light of hand, and nymble of his pace,  
So smooth of tongne, and subtile in his tale,

That could deceive one looking in his face;  
Therefore by name Malengin they him call,

Well known by his feates, and famous  
over all.

## VI

Through these his slights he many doth  
confound,

And eke the rocke, in which he wents to  
dwell,

Is wondrous strong, and hewen farre under  
ground

A dreadfull depth, how deepe no man can  
tell;

But some doe say, it goeth downe to hell.  
And all within, it full of wyndings is,

And hidden wayes, that scarce an hound  
by smell

Can follow out those false footsteps of his,  
Ne none can backe returne that once are  
gone amis.

## VII

Which when those knights had heard, their  
harts gan earne

To understand that villeins dwelling place,  
And greatly it desir'd of her to learne,

And by which way they towards it should  
trace.

'Were not,' sayd she, 'that it should let  
your pace

Towards my ladies presence by yon ment,  
I would you guyde directly to the place.'

'Then let not that,' said they, 'stay your  
intent;

For neither will one foot, till we that carle  
have hent.'

## VIII

So forth they past, till they approched ny  
Unto the rocke where was the villains  
won:

Which when the damzell neare at hand did  
spy,



She warn'd the knights thereof: who there-  
upon  
Gan to advize what best were to be done.  
So both agreed to send that mayd afore,  
Where she might sit nigh to the den alone,  
Wayling, and raysing pittifull uprore,  
As if she did some great calamitie de-  
plore.

## IX

With noyse whereof when as the caytive  
carle  
Should issue forth, in hope to find some  
spoyle,  
They in awayt would closely him ensnarle,  
Ere to his den he backward could recoyle,  
And so would hope him easily to foyle.  
The damzell straight went, as she was di-  
rected,  
Unto the rocke, and there upon the soyle  
Having her selfe in wretched wize ab-  
jected,  
Gan weepe and wayle, as if great grieve  
had her affected.

## X

The cry whereof entring the hollow cave,  
Eftsoones brought forth the villaine, as  
they ment,  
With hope of her some wishfull boot to  
have.  
Full dreadfull wight he was, as ever went  
Upon the earth, with hollow eyes deepe  
pent,  
And long curld locks, that downe his  
shoulders shagged,  
And on his backe an uncouth vestiment  
Made of straunge stuffe, but all to-worne  
and ragged,  
And underneath his breech was all to-torne  
and jagged.

## XI

And in his hand an huge long staffe he  
held,  
Whose top was arm'd with many an yron  
hooke,  
Fit to catch hold of all that he could weld,  
Or in the compasse of his clouches tooke;  
And ever round about he cast his looke.  
Als at his backe a great wyde net he bore,  
With which he seldome fished at the brooke,  
But usd to fish for fooles on the dry shore,  
Of which he in faire weather wont to take  
great store.

## XII

Him when the damzell saw fast by her side,  
So ugly creature, she was nigh dismayd,  
And now for helpe aloud in earnest cride.  
But when the villaine saw her so affrayd,  
He gan with guilefull words her to per-  
swade

To banish feare, and with Sardonian smyle  
Laughing on her, his false intent to shade,  
Gan forth to lay his bayte her to beguyle,  
That from her self unwares he might her  
steale the whyle.

## XIII

Like as the fouler on his guilefull pype  
Charmes to the birds full many a pleasant  
lay,  
That they the whiles may take lesse heedie  
keepe,  
How he his nets doth for their ruine lay:  
So did the villaine to her prate and play,  
And many pleasant trickes before her show,  
To turne her eyes from his intent away:  
For he in slights and jugling feates did flow,  
And of legierdemayne the mysteries did  
know.

## XIV

To which whilest she lent her intentive  
mind,  
He suddenly his net upon her threw,  
That oversprad her like a puffe of wind;  
And snatching her soone up, ere well she  
knew,  
Ran with her fast away unto his mew,  
Crying for helpe aloud. But when as ny  
He came unto his cave, and there did vew  
The armed knights stopping his passage by,  
He threw his burden downe, and fast away  
did fly.

## XV

But Artegall him after did pursew,  
The whiles the Prince there kept the en-  
trance still:  
Up to the rocke he ran, and thereon flew  
Like a wyld gote, leaping from hill to hill,  
And dauncing on the craggy cliffes at will;  
That deadly danger seem'd in all mens  
sight,  
To tempt such steps, where footing was so  
ill:  
Ne ought avayled for the armed knight  
To thinke to follow him, that was so swift  
and light.

## XVI

Which when he saw, his yron man he sent  
To follow him; for he was swift in chace.  
He him pursewd, where ever that he went;  
Both over rockes, and hilles, and every  
place,

Where so he fled, he followd him apace:  
So that he shortly forst him to forsake  
The hight, and downe descend unto the  
base.

There he him courst a fresh, and soone did  
make

To leave his proper forme, and other shape  
to take.

## XVII

Into a foxe himselfe he first did tourne;  
But he him hunted like a foxe full fast:  
Then to a bush himselfe he did transforme;  
But he the bush did beat, till that at last  
Into a bird it chaung'd, and from him past,  
Flying from tree to tree, from wand to  
wand:

But he then stones at it so long did cast,  
That like a stone it fell upon the land;  
But he then tooke it up, and held fast in  
his hand.

## XVIII

So he it brought with him unto the knights,  
And to his lord, Sir Artegall, it lent,  
Warning him hold it fast, for feare of  
slights.

Who whilst in hand it gryping hard he  
hent,

Into a hedgehogge all unwares it went,  
And prickt him so that he away it threw.  
Then gan it runne away incontinent,  
Being returned to his former hew:

But Talus soone him overtooke, and back-  
ward drew.

## XIX

But when as he would to a snake againe  
Have turn'd himselfe, he with his yron flayle  
Gan drive at him, with so huge might and  
maine,

That all his bones as small as sandy grayle  
He broke, and did his bowels disentrayle;  
Crying in vaine for helpe, when helpe was  
past.

So did deceive the selfe deceiver fayle.  
There they him left a carrion outcast,  
For beasts and foules to feede upon for  
their repast.

## XX

Tbence forth they passed with that gentle  
mayd,

To see her ladie, as they did agree.

To which when she approached, thus she  
sayd:

'Loe now, right noble knights, arriv'd ye  
bee

Nigh to the place which ye desir'd to see:

There shall ye see my soverayne Lady  
Queene,

Most sacred wight, most debonayre and  
free,

That ever yet upon this earth was seene,

Or that with diademe hath ever crowned  
beene.'

## XXI

The gentle knights rejoyced much to heare  
The prayses of that prince so manifold,  
And passing litle further, commen were  
Where they a stately pallace did behold,  
Of pompous show, much more then she had  
told;

With many towres and tarras mounted hye,  
And all their tops bright glistering with  
gold,

That seemed to outshine the dimmed skye,  
And with their brightnesse daz'd the  
straunge beholders eye.

## XXII

There they alighting, by that damzell were  
Directed in, and shewed all the sight:

Whose porch, that most magnificke did ap-  
peare,

Stood open wyde to all men day and night;  
Yet warded well by one of mickle might,  
That sate thereby, with gyantlike resem-  
blance,

To keepe out Guyle, and Malice, and De-  
spight,

That under shew oftymes of fayned sem-  
blance

Are wont in princes courts to worke great  
seath and hindrance.

## XXIII

His name was Awe; by whom they passing  
in

Went up the hall, that was a large wyde  
roome,

All full of people making troublous din,

And wondrous noyse, as if that there were  
some

Which unto them was dealing righteous  
doome.

By whom they passing, through the thickest  
preasse,

The marshall of the hall to them did  
come;

His name hight Order, who, commaunding  
peace,

Them guyded through the throng, that did  
their clamors cease.

## XXIV

They ceast their clamors upon them to  
gaze;

Whom seeing all in armour bright as day,  
Straunge there to see, it did them much  
amaze,

And with unwonted terror halfe affray:  
For never saw they there the like array;  
Ne ever was the name of warre there  
spoken,

But joyous peace and quietnesse alway,  
Dealing just judgements, that mote not be  
broken

For any brybes, or threatens of any to be  
wroken.

## XXV

There as they entred at the scriene, they  
saw

Some one, whose tongue was for his tres-  
passe vyle

Nayld to a post, adjudged so by law:  
For that therewith he falsely did revyle  
And foule blaspheme that queene for  
forged guyle,

Both with bold speeches which he blazed  
had,

And with lewd poems which he did com-  
pile;

For the bold title of a poet bad  
He on himselfe had ta'en, and rayling  
rymes had sprad.

## XXVI

Thus there he stood, whylest high over his  
head

There written was the purport of his sin,  
In cyphers strange, that few could rightly  
read,

*Bon font*: but *Bon*, that once had written  
bin,

Was raced out, and *Mal* was now put in:  
So now *Malfont* was plainly to be red;  
Eyther for th' evill which he did therein,

Or that he likened was to a welhed  
Of evill words, and wicked sclaunders by  
him shed.

## XXVII

They, passing by, were guyded by degree  
Unto the presence of that gracious queene:  
Who sate on high, that she might all men  
see,

And might of all men royally be seenc,  
Upon a throne of gold full bright and  
sheene,

Adorned all with gemmes of endlesse price,  
As either might for wealth have gotten  
bene,

Or could be fram'd by workmans rare de-  
vice;

And all embost with lyons and with flour-  
delice.

## XXVIII

All over her a cloth of state was spred,  
Not of rich tisew, nor of cloth of gold,  
Nor of ought else that may be richest  
red,

But like a cloud, as likest may be told,  
That her brode spreading wings did wyde  
unfold;

Whose skirts were bordred with bright  
sunny beams,

Glistring like gold, amongst the plights en-  
rold,

And here and there shooting forth silver  
streames,

Mongst which crept litle angels through  
the glittering gleames.

## XXIX

Seemed those litle angels did uphold  
The cloth of state, and on their purpled  
wings

Did beare the pendants, through their nim-  
blesse bold:

Besides, a thousand more of such as sings  
Hymnes to High God, and carols heavenly  
things,

Encompassed the throne on which she sate:  
She angel-like, the heyre of ancient kings  
And mightie conquerors, in royall state,  
Whylest kings and kesars at her feet did  
them prostrate.

## XXX

Thus she did sit in soverayne majestie,  
Holding a scepter in her royall hand,



The sacred pledge of peace and clemencie,  
 With which High God had blest her happie  
 land,  
 Maugre so many foes which did withstand.  
 But at her feet her sword was likewise  
 layde,  
 Whose long rest rusted the bright steely  
 brand;  
 Yet when as foes enforst, or friends sought  
 ayde,  
 She could it sternely draw, that all the  
 world dismayde.

## XXXI

And round about, before her feet there sate  
 A bevie of faire virgins clad in white,  
 That goodly seem'd t' adorne her royall  
 state,  
 All lovely daughters of high Jove, that  
 light  
 Litæ, by him begot in loves delight  
 Upon the righteous Themis: those they say  
 Upon Joves judgement seat wayt day and  
 night,  
 And when in wrath he threats the worlds  
 decay,  
 They doe his anger calme, and cruell ven-  
 geance stay.

## XXXII

They also doe by his divine permission  
 Upon the thrones of mortall princes tend,  
 And often treat for pardon and remission  
 To suppliants, through frayltie which of-  
 fend.  
 Those did upon Mercillaes throne attend:  
 Just Dice, wise Eunomie, myld Eirene;  
 And them amongst, her glorie to commend,  
 Sate goodly Temperance in garments clene,  
 And sacred Reverence, yborne of heavenly  
 strene.

## XXXIII

Thus did she sit in royall rich estate,  
 Admyr'd of many, honoured of all,  
 Whylest underneath her feete, there as she  
 sate,  
 An huge great lyon lay, that mote appall  
 An hardie courage, like captived thrall,  
 With a strong yron chaine and collar bound,  
 That once he could not move, nor quich at  
 all;  
 Yet did he murmure with rebellious sound,  
 And softly royne, when salvage choler gan  
 redound.

## XXXIV

So sitting high in dreaded soverayntie,  
 Those two strange knights were to her pre-  
 sence brought;  
 Who, bowing low before her majestie,  
 Did to her myld obeysance, as they ought,  
 And meekest boone that they imagine  
 mought.  
 To whom she eke inclyning her withall,  
 As a faire stoupe of her high soaring  
 thought,  
 A chearefull countenance on them let fall,  
 Yet tempred with some majestie imperiall.

## XXXV

As the bright summe, what time his fierie  
 teme  
 Towards the westernne brim begins to draw,  
 Gins to abate the brightnesse of his beme,  
 And fervour of his flames somewhat adaw:  
 So did this mightie ladie, when she saw  
 Those two strange knights such homage to  
 her make,  
 Bate somewhat of that majestie and awe,  
 That whylome wont to doe so many quake,  
 And with more myld aspect those two to  
 entertake.

## XXXVI

Now at that instant, as occasion fell,  
 When these two stranger knights arriv'd in  
 place,  
 She was about affaires of common wele,  
 Dealing of justice with indifferent grace,  
 And hearing pleas of people meane and  
 base.  
 Mongst which, as then, there was for to be  
 heard  
 The tryall of a great and weightie case,  
 Which on both sides was then debating  
 hard:  
 But at the sight of these, those were a while  
 debard.

## XXXVII

But after all her princely entertayne,  
 To th' hearing of that former cause in  
 hand  
 Her selfe eftsoones she gan convert againe;  
 Which that those knights likewise mote un-  
 derstand,  
 And witnesse forth aright in forrain land,  
 Taking them up unto her stately throne,  
 Where they mote heare the matter  
 throughly scand

On either part, she placed th' one on th'  
one,  
The other on the other side, and neare them  
none.

## XXXVIII

Then was there brought, as prisoner to the  
barre,  
A ladie of great countenance and place,  
But that she it with foule abuse did marre;  
Yet did appeare rare beauteie in her face,  
But blotted with condition vile and base,  
That all her other honour did obscure,  
And titles of nobilitie deface:  
Yet in that wretched semblant, she did sure  
The peoples great compassion unto her al-  
lure.

## XXXIX

Then up arose a person of deepe reach,  
And rare in-sight, hard matters to revele;  
That well could charme his tongue, and  
time his speach  
To all assayes; his name was called Zele:  
He gan that ladie strongly to appele  
Of many haynous crymes, by her enured,  
And with sharpe reasons rang her such a  
pele,  
That those whom she to pitie had allured  
He now t' abhorre and loath her person had  
procured.

## XL

First gan he tell, how this, that seem'd so  
faire  
And royally arayd, Duessa hight,  
That false Duessa, which had wrought great  
care  
And mickle mischief unto many a knight,  
By her beguyled and confounded quight:  
But not for those she now in question came,  
Though also those mote question'd be  
aright,  
But for vyld treasons and outrageous shaine,  
Which she against the dred Mercilla oft did  
frame.

## XLI

For she whylome (as ye mote yet right  
well  
Remember) had her counsels false con-  
spyred  
With faithlesse Blandamour and Paridell,  
(Both two her paramours, both by her  
hyred,

And both with hope of shadowes vaine in-  
spyred,)  
And with them practiz'd, how for to de-  
pryve  
Mercilla of her crowne, by her aspyred,  
That she might it unto her selfe deryve,  
And tryumph in their blood, whom she to  
death did dryve.

## XLII

But through high heavens grace, which fav-  
our not  
The wicked driftes of trayterous desynes  
Gainst loiall princes, all this cursed plot,  
Ere prooffe it tooke, discovered was be-  
tymes,  
And th' actours won the meede meet for  
their crymes.  
Such be the meede of all that by such mene  
Unto the type of kingdomes title clymes.  
But false Duessa, now untitled queene,  
Was brought to her sad doome, as here was  
to be seene.

## XLIII

Strougly did Zele her haynous fact enforce,  
And many other crimes of foule defame  
Against her brought, to banish all remorse,  
And aggravate the horror of her blame.  
And with him to make part against her,  
came  
Many grave persons, that against her pled:  
First was a sage old syre, that had to name  
The Kingdomes Care, with a white silver  
hed,  
That many high regards and reasons gainst  
her red.

## XLIV

Then gan Authority her to appose  
With peremptorie powre, that made all  
mute;  
And then the Law of Nations gainst her  
rose,  
And reasons brought, that no man could  
refute;  
Next gan Religion gainst her to impute  
High Gods behest, and powre of holy  
lawes;  
Then gan the Peoples Cry and Commons  
Sute  
Importune care of their owne publicke  
cause;  
And lastly Justice charged her with breach  
of lawes.

## XLV

But then for her, on the contrarie part,  
 Rose many advocates for her to plead:  
 First there came Pittie, with full tender  
     hart,  
 And with her joyn'd Regard of Woman-  
     head;  
 And then came Daunger, threatning hid-  
     den dread  
 And high alliance unto forren powre;  
 Then came Nobilitie of Birth, that bread  
 Great ruth through her misfortunes tra-  
     gicke stowre;  
 And lastly Griefe did plead, and many  
     teares forth powre.

## XLVI

With the neare touch whereof in tender  
     hart  
 The Briton Prince was sore empassionate,  
 And woxe inclined much unto her part,  
 Through the sad terror of so dreadfull fate,  
 And wretched ruine of so high estate,  
 That for great ruth his courage gan relent.  
 Which when as Zele perceived to abate,  
 He gan his earnest fervour to augment,  
 And many fearefull objects to them to pre-  
     sent.

## XLVII

He gan t' efforce the evidence anew,  
 And new accusements to produce in place:  
 He brought forth that old hag of hellish  
     hew,  
 The cursed Ate, brought her face to face,  
 Who privie was, and partie in the case:  
 She, glad of spoyle and ruinous decay,  
 Did her appeach, and, to her more dis-  
     grace,  
 The plot of all her practise did display,  
 And all her traynes and all her treasons  
     forth did lay.

## XLVIII

Then brought he forth, with griesly grim  
     aspect,  
 Abhorred Murder, who with bloudie knyfe  
 Yet dropping fresh in hand did her detect,  
 And there with guiltie bloudshed charged  
     ryfe:  
 Then brought he forth Sedition, breeding  
     stryfe  
 In troublous wits, and mutinous uprore:  
 Then brought he forth Incontinence of  
     Lyfe,

Even foule Adulterie her face before,  
 And lewd Impietie, that her accused sore.

## XLIX

All which when as the Prince had heard  
     and seene,  
 His former fancies ruth he gan repent,  
 And from her partie eftsoones was drawen  
     cleene.  
 But Artegal, with constant firme intent,  
 For zeale of justice was against her bent.  
 So was she guiltie deemed of them all.  
 Then Zele began to urge her punishment,  
 And to their queene for judgement loudly  
     call,  
 Unto Mercilla myld, for justice gainst the  
     thrall.

## L

But she, whose princely breast was touched  
     nere  
 With piteous ruth of her so wretched  
     plight,  
 Though plaine she saw, by all that she did  
     heare,  
 That she of death was guiltie found by  
     right,  
 Yet would not let just vengeance on her  
     light;  
 But rather let in stead thereof to fall  
 Few perling drops from her faire lampes  
     of light;  
 The which she covering with her purple  
     pall  
 Would have the passion hid, and up arose  
     withall.

## CANTO X

Prince Arthur takes the enterprize  
 For Belgee for to fight:  
 Gerioneos seneschall  
 He slayes in Belges right.

## I

SOME clarkes doe doubt in their devicefull  
     art,  
 Whether this heavenly thing whereof I  
     treat,  
 To weeten Mercie, be of Justice part,  
 Or drawne forth from her by divine ex-  
     treate.  
 This well I wote, that sure she is as great,  
 And meriteth to have as high a place,  
 Sith in th' Almightyes everlasting seat



She first was bred, and borne of heavenly  
 race;  
 From thence pour'd down on men, by influ-  
 ence of grace.

## II

For if that vertue be of so great might,  
 Which from just verdict will for nothing  
 start,  
 But, to preserve inviolated right,  
 Oft spilles the principall, to save the part;  
 So much more then is that of powre and  
 art,  
 That seekes to save the subject of her  
 skill,  
 Yet never doth from doome of right de-  
 part:  
 As it is greater prayse to save then spill,  
 And better to reforme then to cut off the  
 ill.

## III

Who then can thee, Mercilla, throughly  
 prayse,  
 That herein doest all earthly princes pas?  
 What heavenly muse shall thy great honour  
 rayse  
 Up to the skies, whence first deriv'd it was,  
 And now on earth it selfe enlarged has  
 From th' utmost brinke of the Americke  
 shore  
 Unto the margent of the Molucas?  
 Those nations farre thy justice doe adore:  
 But thine owne people do thy mercy prayse  
 much more.

## IV

Much more it praysed was of those two  
 knights,  
 The noble Prince and righteous Artegall,  
 When they had seene and heard her doome  
 a rights  
 Against Duessa, damned by them all;  
 But by her tempred without griefe or gall,  
 'Till strong constraint did her thereto en-  
 force:  
 And yet even then ruing her wilfull fall  
 With more then needfull naturall remorse,  
 And yeelding the last honour to her  
 wretched corse.

## V

During all which, those knights continu'd  
 there,  
 Both doing and receiving curtesies

Of that great ladie, who with goodly chere  
 Them entertayn'd, fit for their dignities,  
 Approving dayly to their noble eyes  
 Royall examples of her mercies rare,  
 And worthie paterns of her clemencies;  
 Which till this day mongst many living  
 are,  
 Who them to their posterities doe still  
 declare.

## VI

Amongst the rest, which in that space  
 befell,  
 There came two springals of full tender  
 yeares,  
 Farre thence from forrein land, where they  
 did dwell,  
 To seeke for succour of her and of her  
 peares,  
 With humble prayers and intreatfull teares;  
 Sent by their mother, who a widow was,  
 Wrapt in great dolours and in deadly feares  
 By a strong tyrant, who invaded has  
 Her land, and slaine her children ruefully,  
 alas!

## VII

Her name was Belgæ, who in former age  
 A ladie of great worth and wealth had  
 beene,  
 And mother of a frutefull heritage,  
 Even seventene goodly sonnes; which who  
 had seene  
 In their first flowre, before this fatall teene  
 Them overtooke, and their faire blossomes  
 blasted,  
 More happie mother would her surely weene  
 Then famous Niobe, before she tasted  
 Latonaes childrens wrath, that all her issue  
 wasted.

## VIII

But this fell tyrant, through his tortious  
 powre,  
 Had left her now but five of all that brood:  
 For twelve of them he did by times de-  
 voure,  
 And to his idole sacrifice their blood,  
 Whylest he of none was stopped, nor with-  
 stood.  
 For soothly he was one of matchlesse might,  
 Of horrible aspect and dreadfull mood,  
 And had three bodies in one wast empight,  
 And th' armes and legs of three, to succour  
 him in fight.

## IX

And sooth they say that he was borne and  
bred  
Of gyants race, the sonne of Geryon,  
He that whylome in Spaine so sore was  
dred  
For his huge powre and great oppression,  
Which brought that land to his subjection  
Through his three bodies powre, in one  
combynd;  
And eke all strangers, in that region  
Arryving, to his kyne for food assynd;  
The fayrest kyne alive, but of the fiercest  
kynd.

## X

For they were all, they say, of purple hew,  
Kept by a cowheard, hight Eurytion,  
A cruell carle, the which all strangers  
slew,  
Ne day nor night did sleepe, t' attend them  
on,  
But walkt about them ever and anone,  
With his two headed dogge, that Orthrus  
hight;  
Orthrus begotten by great Typhaon  
And foule Echidna, in the house of Night;  
But Hercules them all did overcome in  
fight.

## XI

His some was this, Geryoneo hight;  
Who, after that his monstrous father fell  
Under Alcides club, streight tooke his flight  
From that sad land, where he his syre did  
quell,  
And came to this, where Belge then did  
dwell  
And flourish in all wealth and happinesse,  
Being then new made widow (as befell)  
After her noble husbands late decesse;  
Which gave beginning to her woe and  
wretchednesse.

## XII

Then this bold tyrant, of her widowed  
Taking advantage, and her yet fresh woes,  
Himselfe and service to her offered,  
Her to defend against all forrein foes,  
That should their powre against her right  
oppose.  
Whereof she glad, now needing strong de-  
fence,  
Him entertayn'd, and did her champion  
chose:

Which long he usd with carefull diligence,  
The better to confirme her fearelesse con-  
fidence.

## XIII

By meanes whereof, she did at last commit  
All to his hands, and gave him souveraine  
powre  
To doe what ever he thought good or fit.  
Which having got, he gan forth from that  
howre  
To stirre up strife, and many a tragiecke  
stowre,  
Giving her dearest children one by one  
Unto a dreadfull monster to devoure,  
And setting up an idole of his owne,  
The image of his monstrous parent Geryone.

## XIV

So tyrannizing, and oppressing all,  
The woefull widow had no meanes now left,  
But unto gracious great Mercilla call  
For ayde against that cruell tyrants theft,  
Ere all her children he from her had reft.  
Therefore these two, her eldest sonnes, she  
sent,  
To seeke for succour of this ladies gieft:  
To whom their sute they humbly did pre-  
sent,  
In th' hearing of full many knights and  
ladies gent.

## XV

Amongst the which then fortun'd to bee  
The noble Briton Prince, with his brave  
peare;  
Who when he none of all those knights did  
see  
Hastily bent that enterprise to heare,  
Nor undertake the same, for cowheard feare,  
He stepped forth with courage bold and  
great,  
Admyr'd of all the rest in presence there,  
And humbly gan that mightie queene en-  
treat  
To graunt him that adventure for his former  
feat.

## XVI

She gladly graunted it: then he straight  
way  
Himselfe unto his journey gan prepare,  
And all his armours readie dight that day,  
That nought the morrow next mote stay  
his fare.

The merrow next appear'd, with purple  
hayre  
Yet dropping fresh out of the Indian fount,  
And bringing light into the heavens fayre,  
When he was readie to his steede to mount,  
Unto his way, which now was all his care  
and count.

## XVII

Then taking humble leave of that great  
queene,  
Who gave him roiall giftes and riches rare,  
As tokens of her thankefull mind beseene,  
And leaving Artegall to his owne care,  
Upon his voyage forth he gan to fare,  
With those two gentle youthes, which him  
did guide,  
And all his way before him still prepare.  
Ne after him did Artigall abide,  
But on his first adventure forward forth  
did ride.

## XVIII

It was not long till that the Prince arrived  
Within the land where dwelt that ladie sad,  
Whereof that tyrant had her now deprived,  
And into moores and marshes banisht had,  
Out of the pleasant soyle and citties glad,  
In which she wont to harbour happily:  
But now his cruelty so sore she drad,  
That to those fennes for fastnesse she did  
fly,  
And there her selfe did hyde from his hard  
tyranny.

## XIX

There he her found in sorrow and dismay,  
All solitarie without living wight;  
For all her other children, through affray,  
Had hid themselves, or taken further  
flight:  
And eke her selfe through sudden strange  
affright,  
When one in armes she saw, began to  
fly;  
But when her owne two sonnes she had in  
sight,  
She gan take hart, and looke up joyfully:  
For well she wist this knight came succour  
to supply:

## XX

And running unto them with greedy joyes,  
Fell straight about their neckes, as they did  
kneele,

And bursting forth in teares, 'Ah! my  
sweet boyes,'

Sayd she, 'yet now I gin new life to feele,  
And feeble spirits, that gan faint and reele,  
Now rise againe at this your joyous sight.  
Alreadie seemes that Fortunes headlong  
wheele

Begins to turne, and sunne to shine more  
bright

Then it was wont, through comfort of this  
noble knight.'

## XXI

Then turning unto him, 'And you, sir  
knight,'

Said she, 'that taken have this toylesome  
paine

For wretched woman, miserable wight,  
May you in heaven immortall guerdon gaine  
For so great travell as you doe sustaine:

For other meede may hope for none of  
mee,

To whom nought else but bare life doth re-  
maine;

And that so wretched one, as ye do see,  
Is liker lingring death then loathed life to  
bee.'

## XXII

Much was he moved with her piteous plight,  
And low dismounting from his loftie steede,  
Gan to recomfort her all that he might,  
Seeking to drive away deepe rooted dreede,  
With hope of helpe in that her greatest  
neede.

So thence he wished her with him to wend,  
Unto some place where they mote rest and  
feede,

And she take comfort, which God now did  
send:

Good hart in evils doth the evils much  
amend.

## XXIII

'Ay me!' sayd she, 'and whether shall I  
goe?

Are not all places full of forraine powres?  
My pallaces possessed of my foe,  
My cities sackt, and their sky-threatening  
towres

Raced, and made smooth fields now full of  
flowres?

Onely these marishes and myrie bogs,  
In which the fearefull ewftes do build their  
bowres,



Yeeld me an hostry mongst the croking  
frogs,  
And harbour here in safety from those  
ravenous dogs.'

## XXIV

'Nathlesse,' said he, 'deare ladie, with me  
goe;  
Some place shall us receive, and harbour  
yield;  
If not, we will it force, maugre your foe,  
Aud purchase it to us with speare and  
shield:  
And if all fayle, yet farewell open field:  
The Earth to all her creatures lodging  
lends.'  
With such his chearefull speaches he doth  
wield  
Her mind so well, that to his will she  
bends,  
And bynding up her locks and weeds, forth  
with him wends.

## XXV

They came unto a citie farre up land,  
The which whylome that ladies owne had  
bene;  
But now by force extort out of her hand  
By her strong foe, who had defaced cleene  
Her stately towres and buildings sunny  
sheene,  
Shut up her haven, mard her marchants  
trade,  
Robbed her people, that full rich had  
beene,  
And in her necke a castle huge had made,  
The which did her commaund, without  
needing perswade.

## XXVI

That castle was the strength of all that  
state,  
Untill that state by strength was pulled  
downe,  
And that same citie, so now ruinate,  
Had bene the keye of all that kingdomes  
crowne;  
Both goodly castle, and both goodly towne,  
Till that th' offended Heavens list to lowre  
Upon their blisse, and balefull Fortune  
frowne.  
When those gainst states and kingdomes  
do conjure,  
Who then can thinke their hedlong ruine  
to recure?

## XXVII

But he had brought it now in servile bond,  
And made it beare the yoke of Inquisition,  
Stryving long time in vaine it to withstond;  
Yet glad at last to make most base sub-  
mission,  
And life enjoy for any composition.  
So now he hath new lawes and orders new  
Imposd on it, with many a hard condi-  
tion,  
And forced it the honour that is dew  
To God to doe unto his idole most untrew.

## XXVIII

To him he hath, before this castle greene,  
Built a faire chappell, and an altar framed  
Of costly ivory, full rich besene,  
On which that cursed idole, farre proclaimed,  
He hath set up, and him his god hath  
named,  
Offering to him in sinfull sacrifice  
The flesh of men, to Gods owne likenesse  
framed,  
And powring forth their bloud in brutishe  
wize,  
That any yron eyes to see it would agrize.

## XXIX

And for more horror and more crueltie,  
Under that cursed idols altar stone  
An hideous monster doth in darknesse lie,  
Whose dreadfull shape was never seene of  
none  
That lives on earth, but unto those alone  
The which unto him sacrificed bee.  
Those he devoures, they say, both flesh and  
bone:  
What else they have is all the tyrants fee;  
So that no whit of them remayning one may  
see.

## XXX

There eke he placed a strong garrisone,  
And set a seneschall of dreaded might,  
That by his powre oppressed every one,  
And vanquished all ventrous knights in  
fight;  
To whom he wont shew all the shame he  
might,  
After that them in battell he had wonne.  
To which when now they gan approach in  
sight,  
The ladie counseld him the place to shonne,  
Whereas so many knights had fouly bene  
fordonne.

## XXXI

Her fearefull speaches nought he did regard,  
But ryding streight under the castle wall,  
Called aloud unto the watchfull ward,  
Which there did wayte, willing them forth  
to call

Into the field their tyrants seneschall.

To whom when tydings thereof came, he  
streight

Cals for his armes, and arming him withall,  
Eftsoones forth pricked proudly in his  
might,

And gan with courage fierce addresse him to  
the fight.

## XXXII

They both encounter in the middle plaine,  
And their sharpe speares doe both together  
smite

Amid their shields, with so huge might  
and maine,

That seem'd their soules they wold have  
ryven quight

Out of their breasts, with furious despight.

Yet could the seneschals no entrance find

Into the Princes shield, where it empight,

So pure the mettall was, and well refynd,

But shivered all about, and scattered in the  
wynd.

## XXXIII

Not so the Princes, but with restlesse force  
Into his shield it readie passage found,  
Both through his haberjeon and eke his  
corse:

Which tombling downe upon the sense-  
lesse ground,

Gave leave unto his ghost from thraldome  
bound,

To wander in the griesly shades of night.

There did the Prince him leave in deadly  
swound,

And thence unto the castle marched right,

To see if entrance there as yet obtaine he  
might.

## XXXIV

But as he nigher drew, three knights he  
spyde,

All arm'd to point, issuing forth a pace,

Which towards him with all their powre  
did ryde,

And meeting him right in the middle race,

Did all their speares attonce on him en-  
chace.

As three great culverings for battrie bent,  
And leveld all against one certaine place,  
Doe all attonce their thunders rage forth  
rent,

That makes the wals to stagger with aston-  
ishment.

## XXXV

So all attonce they on the Prince did thon-  
der;

Who from his saddle swarved nought  
asyde,

Ne to their force gave way, that was great  
wonder,

But like a bulwarke firmly did abyde,  
Rebutting him which in the midst did  
ryde,

With so huge rigour, that his mortall  
speare

Past through his shield, and pierst through  
either syde,

That downe he fell uppon his mother deare,  
And powred forth his wretched life in  
deadly dreare.

## XXXVI

Whom when his other fellowes saw, they  
fled

As fast as feete could carry them away;  
And after them the Prince as swiftly sped,  
To be aveng'd of their unknightly play.

There whilst they, entring, th' one did th'  
other stay,

The hindmost in the gate he overhent,

And as he pressed in, him there did slay:

His carkasse, tumbling on the threshold,  
sent

His groning soule unto her place of punish-  
ment.

## XXXVII

The other, which was entred, laboured fast  
To sperre the gate; but that same lumpe  
of clay,

Whose grudging ghost was thereout fled  
and past,

Right in the midst of the threshold lay,  
That it the posterne did from closing stay:

The whiles the Prince hard preased in be-  
twene,

And entraunce wonne. Streight th' other  
fled away,

And ran into the hall, where he did weene  
Him selfe to save: but he there slew him  
at the skreene.

## XXXVIII

Then all the rest which in that castle were,  
 Seeing that sad ensample them before,  
 Durst not abide, but fled away for feare,  
 And them conveyd out at a posterne dore.  
 Long sought the Prince, but when he  
 found no more  
 T' oppose against his powre, he forth is-  
 sued  
 Unto that lady, where he her had lore,  
 And her gan cheare with what she there  
 had vewed,  
 And what she had not scene within unto  
 her shewed.

## XXXIX

Who with right humble thanks him goodly  
 greeting,  
 For so great prowesse as he there had  
 proved,  
 Much greater then was ever in her weet-  
 ing,  
 With great admiraunce inwardly was  
 moved,  
 And honoured him with all that her be-  
 haved.  
 Thenceforth into that castle he her led,  
 With her two sommes, right deare of her be-  
 loved,  
 Where all that night them selves they  
 cherished,  
 And from her balefull minde all care he  
 banished.

## CANTO XI

Prince Arthure overcomes the great  
 Gerioneo in fight:  
 Doth slay the monster, and restore  
 Belge unto her right.

## I

It often fals in course of common life,  
 That right long time is overborne of  
 wrong,  
 Through avarice, or powre, or guile, or  
 strife,  
 That weakens her, and makes her party  
 strong:  
 But Justice, though her dome she doe pro-  
 long,  
 Yet at the last she will her owne cause  
 right:  
 As by sad Belge seemes, whose wrongs  
 though long

She suffred, yet at length she did requight,  
 And sent redresse thereof by this brave  
 Briton knight.

## II

Whereof when newes was to that tyrant  
 brought,  
 How that the Lady Belge now had found  
 A champion, that had with his champion  
 fought,  
 And laid his seneschall low on the ground,  
 And eke him selfe did threaten to con-  
 found,  
 He gan to burne in rage, and friese in  
 feare,  
 Doubting sad end of principle unsound:  
 Yet sith he heard but one that did appeare,  
 He did him selfe encourage, and take bet-  
 ter cheare.

## III

Nathelesse him selfe he armed all in hast,  
 And forth he far'd with all his many bad,  
 Ne stayed step, till that he came at last  
 Unto the castle which they conquerd had.  
 There with huge terrour, to be more ydrad,  
 He sternely marcht before the castle gate,  
 And with bold vaunts and ydle threatning  
 bad  
 Deliver him his owne, ere yet too late,  
 To which they had no right, nor any wrong-  
 full state.

## IV

The Prince staid not his aunswere to devise,  
 But opening streight the sparre, forth to  
 him came,  
 Full nobly mounted in right warlike wize;  
 And asked him, if that he were the same,  
 Who all that wrong unto that wofull dame  
 So long had done, and from her native land  
 Exiled her, that all the world spake shame.  
 He boldly aunswerd him, he there did  
 stand  
 That would his doings justifie with his owne  
 hand.

## V

With that so furiously at him he flew,  
 As if he would have overrun him streight,  
 And with his huge great yron axe gan hew  
 So hideously uppon his armour bright,  
 As he to peeces would have chopt it quight:  
 That the bold Prince was forced foote to  
 give



To his first rage, and yeeld to his despight;  
The whilest at him so dreadfully he drive,  
That seem'd a marble rocke asunder could  
have rive.

## VI

Thereto a great aduantage eke he has  
Through his three double hands thrise  
multiplyde,  
Besides the double strength which in them  
was:

For stil when fit occasion did betyde,  
He could his weapon shift from side to syde,  
From hand to hand, and with such nimblesse  
sly  
Could wield about, that ere it were espide,  
The wicked stroke did wound his enemy,  
Behinde, beside, before, as he it list apply.

## VII

Which uncouth use when as the Prince  
perceived,  
He gan to watch the wielding of his hand,  
Least by such slight he were unwares de-  
ceived;

And ever ere he saw the stroke to land,  
He would it meete and warily withstand.  
One time, when he his weapon faynd to  
shift,  
As he was wont, and chang'd from hand to  
hand,  
He met him with a counterstroke so swift,  
That quite smit off his arme, as he it up  
did lift.

## VIII

Therewith, all fraught with fury and dis-  
daine,  
He brayd aloud for very fell despight,  
And sodainely t' avenge him selfe againe,  
Gan into one assemble all the might  
Of all his hands, and heaved them on hight,  
Thinking to pay him with that one for all:  
But the sad steele seizd not, where it was  
hight,  
Uppon the childe, but somewhat short did  
fall,  
And lighting on his horses head, him quite  
did mall.

## IX

Downe streight to ground fell his astonisht  
steed,  
And eke to th' earth his burden with him  
bare:

But he him selfe full lightly from him  
freed,

And gan him selfe to fight on foote prepare.  
Whereof when as the gyant was aware,  
He wox right blyth, as he had got thereby,  
And laught so loud, that all his teeth wide  
bare

One might have seene enraung'd disorderly,  
Like to a rancke of piles, that pitched are  
awry.

## X

Eftsoones againe his axe he raught on hie,  
Ere he were thoroughly buckled to his geare,  
And can let drive at him so dreadfullie,  
That had he chaunced not his shield to  
reare,

Ere that huge stroke arrived on him neare,  
He had him surely cloven quite in twaine.  
But th' adamantine shield which he did  
beare

So well was tempred, that, for all his maine,  
It would no passage yeeld unto his purpose  
vaine.

## XI

Yet was the stroke so forcibly applide,  
That made him stagger with uncertaine  
sway,

As if he would have tottered to one side.  
Wherewith full wroth, he fiercely gan assay  
That curt'sie with like kindnesse to repay;  
And smote at him with so importune might,  
That two more of his armes did fall away,  
Like fruitlesse braunches, which the  
hatchets slight

Hath pruned from the native tree, and  
cropped quight.

## XII

With that all mad and furious he grew,  
Like a fell mastiffe through enraging heat,  
And curst, and band, and blasphemies forth  
threw

Against his gods, and fire to them did  
threat,

And hell unto him selfe with horreur great.  
Thenceforth he car'd no more which way  
he strooke,

Nor where it light, but gan to chaufe and  
sweat,

And gnasht his teeth, and his head at him  
shooke,

And sternely him beheld with grim and  
ghastly looke.

## XIII

Nought fear'd the childe his lookes, ne yet  
 his threats,  
 But onely wexed now the more aware,  
 To save him selfe from those his furious  
 heats,  
 And watch advauntage, how to worke his  
 care;  
 The which good fortune to him offred faire.  
 For as he in his rage him overstrooke,  
 He, ere he could his weapon backe repaire,  
 His side all bare and naked overtooke,  
 And with his mortal steel quite through  
 the body strooke.

## XIV

Through all three bodies he him strooke  
 attonce,  
 That all the three attonce fell on the plaine:  
 Else should he thrise have needed for the  
 nonce  
 Them to have stricken, and thrise to have  
 slaine.  
 So now all three one sencelesse lumpe re-  
 maine,  
 Enwallow'd in his owne blacke bloody  
 gore,  
 And byting th' earth for very deaths dis-  
 daine;  
 Who, with a cloud of night him covering,  
 bore  
 Downe to the house of dole, his daies there  
 to deplore.

## XV

Which when the lady from the castle  
 saw,  
 Where she with her two sonnes did look-  
 ing stand,  
 She towards him in hast her selfe did  
 draw,  
 To greet him the good fortune of his hand:  
 And all the people both of towne and  
 land,  
 Which there stood gazing from the citties  
 wall  
 Uppon these warriours, greedy t' under-  
 stand  
 To whether should the victory befall,  
 Now when they saw it falne, they eke him  
 greeted all.

## XVI

But Belge with her sonnes prostrated low  
 Before his feete, in all that peoples sight,

Mongst joyes mixing some tears, mongst  
 wele some wo,  
 Him thus bespake: 'O most redoubted  
 knight,  
 The which hast me, of all most wretched  
 wight,  
 That earst was dead, restor'd to life againe,  
 And these weake impes replanted by thy  
 might;  
 What guerdon can I give thee for thy paine,  
 But even that which thou savedst, thine  
 still to remaine?'

## XVII

He tooke her up forby the lilly hand,  
 And her recomforted the best he might,  
 Saying: 'Deare lady, deedes ought not be  
 scand  
 By th' authors manhood, nor the doers  
 might,  
 But by their trueth and by the causes right:  
 That same is it, which fought for you this  
 day.  
 What other meed then need me to requight,  
 But that which yeeldeth vertues meed  
 alway?  
 That is the vertue selfe, which her reward  
 doth pay.'

## XVIII

She humbly thankt him for that wondrous  
 grace,  
 And further sayd: 'Ah! sir, but mote ye  
 please,  
 Sith ye thus farre have tendred my poore  
 case,  
 As from my chiefest foe me to release,  
 That your victorious arme will not yet  
 cease,  
 Till ye have rooted all the relickes out  
 Of that vilde race, and stablished my  
 peace.'  
 'What is there else,' sayd he, 'left of their  
 rout?  
 Declare it boldly, dame, and doe not stand  
 in dout.'

## XIX

'Then wote you, sir, that in this church  
 hereby,  
 There stands an idole of great note and  
 name,  
 The which this gyant reared first on hie,  
 And of his owne vaine fancies thought did  
 frame:

To whom, for endlesse horror of his  
 shame,  
 He offred up for daily sacrifice  
 My children and my people, burnt in flame,  
 With all the tortures that he could devise,  
 The more t' aggrate his god with such his  
 blonddy guize.

## XX

' And underneath this idoll there doth lie  
 An hideous monster, that doth it defend,  
 And feedes on all the carkasses that die  
 In sacrifice unto that cursed feend:  
 Whose ugly shape none ever saw, nor  
 kend,  
 That ever scap'd: for of a man they say  
 It has the voice, that speaches forth doth  
 send,  
 Even blasphemous words, which she doth  
 bray  
 Out of her poysnous entrails, fraught with  
 dire decay.'

## XXI

Which when the Prince heard tell, his heart  
 gan earne  
 For great desire, that monster to assay,  
 And prayd the place of her abode to  
 learne.  
 Which being shew'd, he gan him selfe  
 streight way  
 Thereto addresse, and his bright shield  
 display.  
 So to the church he came, where it was  
 told  
 The monster underneath the altar lay;  
 There he that idoll saw of massy gold  
 Most richly made, but there no monster  
 did behold.

## XXII

Upon the image with his naked blade  
 Three times, as in defiance, there he strooke;  
 And the third time, out of an hidden shade,  
 There forth issewd, from under th' altars  
 smooke,  
 A dreadfull feend, with fowle deformed  
 looke,  
 That stretcht it selfe, as it had long lyen  
 still;  
 And her long taile and fethers strongly  
 shooke,  
 That all the temple did with terrour fill;  
 Yet him nought terrifide, that feared no-  
 thing ill.

## XXIII

An huge great beast it was, when it in  
 length  
 Was stretched forth, that nigh fild all the  
 place,  
 And seem'd to be of infinite great strength;  
 Horrible, hideous, and of hellich race,  
 Borne of the brooding of Echidna base,  
 Or other like infernall Furies kinde:  
 For of a mayd she had the outward face,  
 To hide the horror which did lurke be-  
 hinde,  
 The better to beguile whom she so fond did  
 finde.

## XXIV

Thereto the body of a dog she had,  
 Full of fell ravin and fierce greedinesse;  
 A lions clawes, with powre and rigour clad,  
 To rend and teare what so she can op-  
 presse;  
 A dragons taile, whose sting without re-  
 dresse  
 Full deadly wounds, where so it is em-  
 pight;  
 And eagles wings, for scope and speedinesse,  
 That nothing may escape her reaching  
 might,  
 Whereto she ever list to make her hardy  
 flight.

## XXV

Much like in foulnesse and deformity  
 Unto that monster whom the Theban  
 knight,  
 The father of that fatall progeny,  
 Made kill her selfe for very hearts de-  
 spight,  
 That he had red her riddle, which no wight  
 Could ever loose, but suffred deadly doole.  
 So also did this monster use like slight  
 To many a one which came unto her schoole,  
 Whom she did pnt to death, deceived like a  
 foole.

## XXVI

She comming forth, when as she first be-  
 held  
 The armed Prince, with shield so blazing  
 bright,  
 Her ready to assaile, was greatly queld,  
 And much dismayd with that dismayfull  
 sight,  
 That backe she would have turnd for great  
 affright.



But he gan her with courage fierce assay,  
That forst her turne againe in her despight,  
To save her selfe, least that he did her slay:  
And sure he had her slaine, had she not  
turnd her way.

## XXVII

Tho, when she saw that she was forst to  
fight,  
She flew at him, like to an hellish feend,  
And on his shield tooke hold with all her  
might,  
As if that it she would in peeces rend,  
Or reave out of the hand that did it hend.  
Strongly he strove out of her greedy gripe  
To loose his shield, and long while did contend:  
But when he could not quite it, with one  
stripe  
Her lions clawes he from her feete away  
did wipe.

## XXVIII

With that aloude she gan to bray and yell,  
And fowle blasphemous speaches forth did  
cast,  
And bitter curses, horrible to tell,  
That even the temple, wherein she was plast,  
Did quake to heare, and nigh asunder brast.  
Tho with her huge long taile she at him  
strooke,  
That made him stagger, and stand halfe  
agast  
With trembling joynts, as he for terrour  
shooke;  
Who nought was terrifide, but greater  
courage tooke.

## XXIX

As when the mast of some well timbred  
hulke  
Is with the blast of some outragious storme  
Blowne downe, it shakes the bottoime of  
the bulke,  
And makes her ribs to cracke, as they were  
torne,  
Whilest still she stands as stonisht and  
forlorne:  
So was he stound with stroke of her huge  
taile.  
But ere that it she backe againe had borne,  
He with his sword it strooke, that without  
faile  
He joynted it, and mard the swinging of  
her faile.

## XXX

Then gan she cry much louder then afore,  
That all the people there without it heard,  
And Belge selfe was therewith stonied sore,  
As if the onely sound thereof she feard.  
But then the feend her selfe more fiercely  
reard  
Uppon her wide great wings, and strongly  
flew  
With all her body at his head and beard,  
That had he not foreseene with heedfull  
vew,  
And thrown his shield atween, she had  
him done to rew.

## XXXI

But as she prest on him with heavy sway,  
Under her wombe his fatall sword he thrust,  
And for her entrailles made an open way  
To issue forth; the which, once being brust,  
Like to a great mill damb forth fiercely  
gusht,  
And powred out of her infernall sinke  
Most ugly filth, and poyson therewith rusht,  
That him nigh choked with the deadly  
stinke:  
Such loathly matter were small lust to  
speake, or thinke.

## XXXII

Then downe to ground fell that deformed  
masse,  
Breathing out clouds of sulphure fowle and  
blacke,  
In which a puddle of contagion was,  
More loathd then Lerna, or then Stygian  
lake,  
That any man would nigh awhaped make.  
Whom when he saw on ground, he was full  
glad,  
And streight went forth his gladnesse to  
partake  
With Belge, who watcht all this while full  
sad,  
Wayting what end would be of that same  
daunger drad.

## XXXIII

Whom when she saw so joyously come  
forth,  
She gan rejoyce, and shew triumphant chere,  
Lauding and praying his renowned worth  
By all the names that honorable were.  
Then in he brought her, and her shewed  
there

The present of his paines, that monsters  
 spoyle,  
 And eke that idoll deem'd so costly dere;  
 Whom he did all to peeces breake, and  
 foyle  
 In filthy durt, and left so in the loathely  
 soyle.

## XXXIV

Then all the people, which beheld that day,  
 Gan shout aloud, that unto heaven it rong;  
 And all the damzels of that towne in ray  
 Came dauncing forth, and joyous carrols  
 song:  
 So him they led through all their streetes  
 along,  
 Crowned with girlonds of immortall baies,  
 And all the vulgar did about them throng,  
 To see the man, whose everlasting praise  
 They all were bound to all posterities to  
 raise.

## XXXV

There he with Belgæ did a while remaine,  
 Making great feast and joyous merriment,  
 Untill he had her settled in her raine,  
 With safe assuraunce and establishment.  
 Then to his first emprise his mind he lent,  
 Full loath to Belgæ and to all the rest:  
 Of whom yet taking leave, thenceforth he  
 went  
 And to his former journey him adrest,  
 On which long way he rode, ne ever day  
 did rest.

## XXXVI

But turne we now to noble Artegall;  
 Who, having left Mercilla, streight way went  
 On his first quest, the which him forth did  
 call,  
 To weete, to worke Irenæes franchisement,  
 And eke Grantortoes worthy punishment.  
 So forth he fared as his manner was,  
 With onely Talus wayting diligent,  
 Through many perils and much way did  
 pas,  
 Till nigh unto the place at length approcht  
 he has.

## XXXVII

There as he traveld by the way, he met  
 An aged wight, wayfaring all alone,  
 Who through his yeares long since aside  
 had set  
 The use of armes, and battell quite forgone:

To whom as he approcht, he knew anone  
 That it was he which whilome did attend  
 On faire Irene in her affliction,  
 When first to Faery court he saw her  
 wend,  
 Unto his Sovereaine Queene her suite for to  
 commend.

## XXXVIII

Whom by his name saluting, thus he gan:  
 'Haile, good Sir Sergis, truest knight alive,  
 Well tride in all thy ladies troubles than  
 When her that tyrant did of crowne de-  
 prive;  
 What new ocasion doth thee hither drive,  
 Whiles she alone is left, and thou here  
 found?  
 Or is she thrall, or doth she not survive?'  
 To whom he thus: 'She liveth sure and  
 sound;  
 But by that tyrant is in wretched thral-  
 dome bound.

## XXXIX

'For she, presuming on th' appointed tyde,  
 In which ye promist, as ye were a knight,  
 To meete her at the Salvage Ilands syde,  
 And then and there for triall of her right  
 With her unrighteous enemy to fight,  
 Did thither come, where she, afrajd of  
 nought,  
 By guilefull treason and by subtile slight  
 Surprized was, and to Grantorto brought,  
 Who her imprisond hath, and her life often  
 sought.

## XL

'And now he hath to her prefixt a day,  
 By which if that no champion doe appeare,  
 Which will her cause in battailous array  
 Against him justifie, and prove her cleare  
 Of all those crimes that he gainst her doth  
 reare,  
 She death shall sure aby.' Those tidings  
 sad  
 Did much abash Sir Artegall to heare,  
 And grieved sore, that through his fault  
 she had  
 Fallen into that tyrants hand and usage bad.

## XLI

Then thus replide: 'Now sure and by my  
 life,  
 Too much am I too blame for that faire  
 maide,

That have her drawne to all this troublous  
 strife,  
 Through promise to afford her timely aide,  
 Which by default I have not yet defraide.  
 But witnesse unto me, ye heavens, that  
 know  
 How cleare I am from blame of this up-  
 braide:  
 For ye into like thraldome me did throw,  
 And kept from complishing the faith which  
 I did owe.

## XLII

'But now aread, Sir Sergis, how long space  
 Hath he her lent, a champion to provide.'  
 'Ten daies,' quoth he, 'he graunted hath of  
 grace,  
 For that he weeneth well, before that tide  
 None can have tidings to assist her side.  
 For all the shores, which to the sea accoste,  
 He day and night doth ward both far and  
 wide,  
 That noue can there arrive without an  
 hoste:  
 So her he deemes already but a damned  
 ghoste.'

## XLIII

'Now turne againe,' Sir Artegall then  
 sayd;  
 'For if I live till those ten daies have end,  
 Assure your selfe, sir knight, she shall have  
 ayd,  
 Though I this dearest life for her doe  
 spend.'  
 So backward he attone with him did wend.  
 Tho, as they rode together on their way,  
 A rout of people they before them kend,  
 Flocking together in confusde array,  
 As if that there were some tumultuous af-  
 fray.

## XLIV

To which as they approcht, the cause to  
 know,  
 They saw a knight in daungerous distresse  
 Of a rude rout him chasing to and fro,  
 That sought with lawlesse powre him to  
 oppresse,  
 And bring in bondage of their brutishnesse:  
 And farre away, amid their rakehell bands,  
 They spide a lady left all succourlesse,  
 Crying, and holding up her wretched hands  
 To him for aide, who long in vaine their  
 rage withstands.

## XLV

Yet still he strives, ne any perill spares,  
 To reskue her from their rude violence,  
 And like a lion wood amongst them fares,  
 Dealing his dreadfull blowes with large dis-  
 pence,  
 Gainst which the pallid death findes no de-  
 fence.  
 But all in vaine; their numbers are so  
 great,  
 That naught may boot to banishe them  
 from thence:  
 For sooue as he their outrage backe doth  
 beat,  
 They turne afresh, and oft renew their for-  
 mer threat.

## XLVI

And now they doe so sharply him assay,  
 That they his shield in peeces battred have,  
 And forced him to throw it quite away,  
 Fro dangers dread his doubtfull life to save;  
 Albe that it most safety to him gave,  
 And much did magnifie his noble name:  
 For from the day that he thus did it leave,  
 Amongst all knights he blotted was with  
 blame,  
 And counted but a recreant knight, with  
 endles shame.

## XLVII

Whom when they thus distressed did be-  
 hold,  
 They drew unto his aide; but that rude  
 rout  
 Them also gan assaile with outrage bold,  
 And forced them, how ever strong and  
 stout  
 They were, as well approv'd in many a  
 doubt,  
 Backe to recule; untill that yron man  
 With his huge flaile began to lay about,  
 From whose sterne presence they diffused  
 ran,  
 Like scattred chaffe, the which the wind  
 away doth fan.

## XLVIII

So when that knight from perill cleare was  
 freed,  
 He, drawing neare, began to greete them  
 faire,  
 And yeeld great thanks for their so good-  
 ly deed,  
 In saving him from daungerous despaire



Of those which sought his life for to em-  
paire.

Of whom Sir Artegall gan then enquire  
The whole occasion of his late misfare,  
And who he was, and what those villaines  
were,  
The which with mortall malice him pursu'd  
so nere.

## XLIX

To whom he thus: 'My name is Burbon  
hight,  
Well knowne, and far renowned hereto-  
fore,  
Untill late mischiefe did uppon me light,  
That all my former praise hath blemisht  
sore;  
And that faire lady, which in that uprore  
Ye with those caytives saw, Flourdels  
hight,  
Is mine owne love, though me she have  
forlore,  
Whether withheld from me by wrongfull  
might,  
Or with her owne good will, I cannot read  
aright.

## L

'But sure to me her faith she first did  
plight,  
To be my love, and take me for her lord,  
Till that a tyrant, which Grandtorto hight,  
With golden giftes and many a guilefull  
word  
Entyceed her, to him for to accord.  
O who may not with gifts and words be  
tempted?  
Sith which she hath me ever since abhord,  
And to my foe hath guilefully consented:  
Ay me, that ever guyle in women was in-  
vented!

## LI

'And now he hath this troupe of villains  
sent,  
By open force to fetch her quite away:  
Gainst whom my selfe I long in vaine have  
bent  
To rescue her, and daily meanes assay,  
Yet rescue her thence by no meanes I may:  
For they doe me with multitude oppresse,  
And with unequall might doe overlay,  
That oft I driven am to great distresse,  
And forced to forgoe th' attempt remedi-  
lesse.'

## LII

'But why have ye,' said Artegall, 'forborne  
Your owne good shield in daungerous dis-  
may?  
That is the greatest shame and foulest  
scorne,  
Which unto any knight be happen may,  
To loose the badge that should his deedes  
display.'  
To whom Sir Burbon, blushing halfe for  
shame,  
'That shall I unto you,' quoth he, 'bewray;  
Least ye therefore mote happily me blame,  
And deeme it doen of will, that through  
inforcement came.

## LIII

'True is, that I at first was dubbed knight  
By a good knight, the Knight of the Red-  
crosse;  
Who when he gave me armes, in field to  
fight,  
Gave me a shield, in which he did endosse  
His deare Redecmers badge upon the bosse:  
The same long while I bore, and there-  
withall  
Fought many battels without wound or  
losse;  
Therewith Grandtorto selfe I did appall,  
And made him oftentimes in field before  
me fall.

## LIV

'But for that many did that shield envie,  
And cruell enemies increased more;  
To stint all strife and troublous enmitie,  
That bloudie scutchin being battered sore,  
I layd aside, and have of late forbore,  
Hoping thereby to have my love obtayned:  
Yet can I not my love have nathemore;  
For she by force is still fro me detayned,  
And with corruptfull brybes is to untruth  
mis-trayned.'

## LV

To whom thus Artegall: 'Certes, sir knight,  
Hard is the case the which ye doe com-  
plaine;  
Yet not so hard (for nought so hard may  
light,  
That it to such a streight mote you con-  
straine)  
As to abandon that which doth containe  
Your honours stile, that is your warlike  
shield.

All perill ought be lesse, and lesse all  
paine,  
Then losse of fame in disaventrous field:  
Dye rather, then doe ought that mote dis-  
honour yield.'

## LVI

'Not so,' quoth he; 'for yet, when time  
doth serve,  
My former shield I may resume againe:  
To temporize is not from truth to swerve,  
Ne for advantage terme to entertaine,  
When as necessitie doth it constraine.'  
'Fie on such forgerie,' said Artegall,  
'Under one hood to shadow faces twaine!  
Knights ought be true, and truth is one in  
all:  
Of all things, to dissemble foully may be-  
fall.'

## LVII

'Yet let me you of courtesie request,'  
Said Burbon, 'to assist me now at need  
Against these pesants which have me op-  
prest,  
And forced me to so infamous deed,  
That yet my love may from their hands be  
freed.'  
Sir Artegall, albe he carst did wyte  
His wavering mind, yet to his aide agreed,  
And buckling him eftsoones unto the fight,  
Did set upon those troupes with all his  
powre and might.

## LVIII

Who flocking round about them, as a  
swarme  
Of flies upon a birchen bough doth cluster,  
Did them assault with terrible allarme,  
And over all the fields themselves did  
muster,  
With bils and glayves making a dreadfull  
luster;  
That forst at first those knights backe to  
retyre:  
As when the wrathfull Boreas doth bluster,  
Nought may abide the tempest of his yre;  
Both man and beast doe fly, and succour  
doe inquire.

## LIX

But when as overblown was that brunt,  
Those knights began a fresh them to assayle,  
And all about the fields like squirrels hunt;  
But chiefly Talus with his yron flayle,

Gainst which no flight nor rescue mote  
avayle,  
Made cruell havocke of the baser crew,  
And chaced them both over hill and dale:  
The raskall manie soone they overthrew,  
But the two knights themselves their cap-  
tains did subdew.

## LX

At last they came whereas that ladie bode,  
Whom now her keepers had forsaken  
quight,  
To save themselves, and scattered were  
abrode:  
Her halfe dismayd they found in doubtfull  
plight,  
As neither glad nor sorie for their sight;  
Yet wondrous faire she was, and richly  
clad  
In roiall robes, and many jewels dight,  
But that those villens through their usage  
bad  
Them foully rent and shamefully defaced  
had.

## LXI

But Burbon, streight dismounting from his  
steed,  
Unto her ran with greedie great desyre,  
And catching her fast by her ragged weed,  
Would have embraced her with hart en-  
tyre.  
But she, backstarting with disdainefull yre,  
Bad him avaunt, ne would unto his lore  
Allured be, for prayer nor for meed.  
Whom when those knights so froward and  
forlore  
Beheld, they her rebuked and upbrayded  
sore.

## LXII

Sayd Artegall: 'What foule disgrace is  
this  
To so faire ladie as ye seeme in sight,  
To blot your beautie, that unblemisht is,  
With so foule blame as breach of faith once  
plight,  
Or change of love for any worlds de-  
light!  
Is ought on earth so pretious or deare,  
As prayse and honour? Or is ought so  
bright  
And beautifull as glories beames appeare,  
Whose goodly light then Phebus lampe  
doth shine more cleare?

## LXIII

'Why then will ye, fond dame, attempted  
bee

Unto a strangers love, so lightly placed,  
For guiftes of gold or any worldly glee,  
To leave the love that ye before embraced,  
And let your fame with falshood be de-  
faced?

Fie on the pelfe for which good name is  
sold,

And honour with indignitie debased!

Dearer is love then life, and fame then  
gold;

But dearer then them both your faith once  
plighted hold.'

## LXIV

Much was the ladie in her gentle mind  
Abasht at his rebuke, that bit her neare,  
Ne ought to answer thereunto did find;  
But hanging downe ber head with heavie  
cheare,

Stood long amaz'd, as she amated weare.  
Which Burbon seeing, her againe assayd,  
And clasping twixt his armes, her up did  
reare

Upon his steede, whiles she no whit gaine-  
sayd;

So bore her quite away, nor well nor ill  
apayd.

## LXV

Nathlesse the yron man did still pursew  
That raskall many with unpittied spoyle,  
Ne ceassed not, till all their scattred crew  
Into the sea he drove quite from that soyle,  
The which they troubled had with great  
turmoyle.

But Artegall, seeing his cruell deed,  
Commaunded him from slaughter to re-  
coyle,

And to his voyage gan againe proceed:

For that the terme, approching fast, re-  
quired speed.

## CANTO XII

Artegall doth Sir Burbon aide,  
And blames for changing shield:  
He with the great Grantorto fights,  
And slaieth him in field.

## I

O SACRED hunger of ambitious mindes,  
And impotent desire of men to raine,

Whom neither dread of God, that devils  
bindes,

Nor lawes of men, that common weales  
containe,

Nor bands of nature, that wilde beastes  
restraine,

Can keepe from outrage and from doing  
wrong,

Where they may hope a kingdome to  
obtaine.

No faith so firme, no trust can be so strong,  
No love so lasting then, that may endure  
long.

## II

Witnesse may Burbon be, whom all the  
bands

Which may a knight assure had surely  
bound,

Untill the love of lordship and of lands  
Made him become most faithlesse and un-  
sound:

And witnesse be Gerioneo found,  
Who for like cause faire Belge did oppresse,  
And right and wrong most cruelly con-  
found:

And so be now Grantorto, who no lesse  
Then all the rest burst out to all outrageous-  
nesse.

## III

Gainst whom Sir Artegall, long having  
since

Taken in hand th' exploit, being theretoo  
Appointed by that mightie Faerie prince,  
Great Gloriane, that tyrant to fordoo,  
Through other great adventures hethertoo  
Had it forslackt. But now time drawing ny,  
To him assynd, her high behest to doo,  
To the sea shore he gan his way apply,  
To weete if shipping readie he mote there  
descry.

## IV

Tho, when they came to the sea coast, they  
found

A ship all readie (as good fortune fell)  
To put to sea, with whom they did com-  
pound

To passe them over, where them list to tell:  
The winde and weather served them so  
well,

That in one day they with the coast did  
fall;

Whereas they readie found, them to repell,



Great hostes of men in order martiall,  
Which them forbad to land, and footing  
did forstall.

## V

But nathemore would they from land re-  
fraine,  
But when as nigh unto the shore they drew,  
That foot of man might sound the bottome  
plaine,  
Talus into the sea did forth issew,  
Though darts from shore and stones they  
at him threw;  
And wading through the waves with sted-  
fast sway,  
Mangre the might of all those troupes in  
vew,  
Did win the shore, whence he them chast  
away,  
And made to fly, like doves whom the eagle  
doth affray.

## VI

The whyles Sir Artegall with that old  
knight  
Did forth descend, there being none them  
neare,  
And forward marched to a towne in sight.  
By this came tydings to the tyrants eare,  
By those which earst did fly away for feare,  
Of their arrivall: wherewith troubled sore,  
He all his forces streight to him did reare,  
And forth issuing with his scouts afore,  
Meant them to have incountred, ere they  
left the shore.

## VII

But ere he marched farre, he with them  
met,  
And fiercely charged them with all his  
force;  
But Talus sternely did upon them set,  
And brusht and battred them without re-  
morse,  
That on the ground he left full many a corse;  
Ne any able was him to withstand,  
But he them overthrew both man and horse,  
That they lay scattred over all the land,  
As thicke as doth the seede after the sow-  
ers hand.

## VIII

Till Artegall, him seeing so to rage,  
Willd him to stay, and signe of truce did  
make:

To which all harkning, did a while asswage  
Their forces furie, and their terror slake;  
Till he an herauld cald, and to him spake,  
Willing him wend unto the tyrant streight,  
And tell him that not for such slaughters  
sake

He thether came, but for to trie the right  
Of fayre Irenas cause with him in single  
fight:

## IX

And willed him for to reclayme with speed  
His scattred people, ere they all were slaine,  
And time and place convenient to areed,  
In which they two the combat might dar-  
raine.

Which message when Grantorto heard, full  
fayne

And glad he was the slaughter so to stay,  
And pointed for the combat twixt them  
twayne

The morrow next, ne gave him longer day:  
So sounded the retraite, and drew his folke  
away.

## X

That night Sir Artegall did cause his tent  
There to be pitched on the open plaine;  
For he had given streight commaundement,  
That none should dare him once to enter-  
taine:

Which none durst breake, though many  
would right faine

For fayre Irena, whom they loved deare.  
But yet old Sergis did so well him paine,  
That from close friends, that dar'd not to  
appeare,

He all things did purvay, which for them  
needfull weare.

## XI

The morrow next, that was the dismall day  
Appointed for Irenas death before,  
So soone as it did to the world display  
His chearefull face, and light to men re-  
store,

The heavy mayd, to whom none tydings  
bore

Of Artegals arryvall, her to free,  
Lookt up with eyes full sad and hart full  
sore;

Weening her lifes last howre then neare to  
bee,

Sith no redemption nigh she did nor heare  
nor see.

## XII

Then up she rose, and on her selfe did  
 dight  
 Most squalid garments, fit for such a day,  
 And with dull countenance, and with dole-  
 ful spright,  
 She forth was brought in sorrowfull dis-  
 may,  
 For to receive the doome of her decay.  
 But comming to the place, and finding  
 there  
 Sir Artegall, in battailous array  
 Wayting his foe, it did her dead hart  
 cheare,  
 And new life to her lent, in midst of deadly  
 feare.

## XIII

Like as a tender rose in open plaine,  
 That with untimely drought nigh withered  
 was,  
 And hung the head, soone as few drops of  
 raine  
 Thereon distill, and deaw her daintie face,  
 Gins to looke up, and with fresh wonted  
 grace  
 Dispreeds the glorie of her leaves gay;  
 Such was Irenas countenance, such her  
 case,  
 When Artegall she saw in that array,  
 There wayting for the tyrant, till it was  
 farre day.

## XIV

Who came at length, with proud presump-  
 tuous gate,  
 Into the field, as if he fearelesse were,  
 All armed in a cote of yron plate,  
 Of great defence to ward the deadly feare,  
 And on his head a steele cap he did weare  
 Of colour rustie browne, but sure and  
 strong;  
 And in his hand an huge polaxe did beare,  
 Whose steale was yron studded, but not  
 long,  
 With which he wont to fight, to justifie his  
 wrong.

## XV

Of stature huge and hideous he was,  
 Like to a giant for his monstrous hight,  
 And did in strength most sorts of men sur-  
 pas,  
 Ne ever any found his match in might;  
 Thereto he had great skill in single fight:

His face was ugly and his countenance  
 sterne,  
 That could have frayd one with the very  
 sight,  
 And gaped like a gulfe when he did gerne,  
 That whether man or monster one could  
 searse discern.

## XVI

Soone as he did within the listes appeare,  
 With dreadfull looke he Artegall beheld,  
 As if he would have daunted him with  
 feare,  
 And grinning griesly, did against him weld  
 His deadly weapon, which in hand he held.  
 But th' Elfin swayne, that oft had seene  
 like sight,  
 Was with his ghastly count'nance nothing  
 queld,  
 But gan him streight to buckle to the fight,  
 And cast his shield about, to be in readie  
 plight.

## XVII

The trompets sound, and they together goe,  
 With dreadfull terror and with fell intent;  
 And their huge strokes full daungerously  
 bestow,  
 To doe most dammage where as most they  
 ment.  
 But with such force and furie violent  
 The tyrant thundred his thicke blowes so  
 fast,  
 That through the yron walles their way  
 they rent,  
 And even to the vitall parts they past,  
 Ne ought could them endure, but all they  
 cleft or brast.

## XVIII

Which cruell outrage when as Artegall  
 Did well avize, thenceforth with warie heed  
 He shund his strokes, where ever they did  
 fall,  
 And way did give unto their gracelesse  
 speed:  
 As when a skilfull marriner doth reed  
 A storme approaching, that doth perill  
 threat,  
 He will not bide the daunger of such  
 dread,  
 But strikes his sayles, and vereth his main-  
 sheat,  
 And lends unto it leave the emptie ayre to  
 beat.

## XIX

So did the Faerie knight himselfe abeare,  
And stouped oft, his head from shame to  
shield;

No shame to stoupe, ones head more high  
to reare,

And, much to gaine, a litle for to yield;  
So stoutest knights doen oftentimes in field.  
But still the tyrant sternely at him layd,  
And did his yron axe so nimble wield,  
That many wounds into his flesh it made,  
And with his burdenous blowes him sore  
did overlade.

## XX

Yet when as fit advantage he did spy,  
The whiles the cursd felon high did reare  
His cruell hand, to smite him mortally,  
Under his stroke he to him stepping neare,  
Right in the flanke him strooke with  
deadly dreare,

That the gore bloud, thence gushing griev-  
ously,

Did underneath him like a pond appeare,  
And all his armour did with purple dye:  
Thereat he brayed loud, and yelled dread-  
fully.

## XXI

Yet the huge stroke, which he before in-  
tended,

Kept on his course, as he did it direct,  
And with such monstrous poise adowne de-  
scended,

That seemed nought could him from death  
protect:

But he it well did ward with wise respect,  
And twixt him and the blow his shield did  
cast,

Which thereon seizing, tooke no great  
effect,

But byting deepe therein did sticke so fast,  
That by no meanes it backe againe he forth  
could wrast.

## XXII

Long while he tug'd and strove, to get it  
out,

And all his powre applyed thereunto,  
That he therewith the knight drew all  
about:

Nathlesse, for all that ever he could doe,  
His axe he could not from his shield undoe.  
Which Artegall perceiving, strooke no  
more,

But loosing soone his shield, did it forgoe,  
And whiles he combred was therewith so  
sore,  
He gan at him let drive more fiercely then  
afore.

## XXIII

So well he him pursew'd, that at the last  
He stroke him with Chrysaor on the hed,  
That with the souse thereof full sore  
aghast,

He staggered to and fro in doubtfull sted.  
Againe, whiles he him saw so ill bested,  
He did him smite with all his might and  
maine,

That, falling, on his mother earth he fed:  
Whom when he saw prostrated on the  
plaine,

He lightly reft his head, to ease him of his  
paine.

## XXIV

Which when the people round about him  
saw,

They shouted all for joy of his successe,  
Glad to be quit from that proud tyrants  
awe,

Which with strong powre did them long  
time oppresse;

And running all with greedie joyfulnessse  
To faire Irena, at her feet did fall,  
And her adored with due humblenesse,  
As their true liege and princesse naturall;  
And eke her champions glorie sounded over  
all.

## XXV

Who streight her leading with meete  
majestie

Unto the pallace, where their kings did  
rayne,

Did her therein establish peaceable,  
And to her kingdomes seat restore agayne;  
And all such persons as did late maintayne  
That tyrants part, with close or open ayde,  
He sorely punished with heavie payne;  
That in short space, whiles there with her  
he stayd,

Not one was left that durst her once have  
disobayd.

## XXVI

During which time that he did there re-  
maine,

His studie was true justice how to deale,



And day and night employ'd his busie paine  
 How to reforme that ragged common-weale:  
 And that same yron man, which could re-  
   veale  
 All hidden crimes, through all that realme  
   he sent,  
 To search out those that usd to rob and  
   steale,  
 Or did rebell gainst lawfull government;  
 On whom he did inflict most grievous pun-  
   ishment.

## XXVII

But ere he could reforme it thoroughly,  
 He through occasion called was away  
 To Faerie court, that of necessity  
 His course of justice he was forst to stay,  
 And Talus to revoke from the right way,  
 In which he was that realme for to re-  
   dresse.  
 But envies cloud still dimmeth vertues ray.  
 So having freed Irena from distresse,  
 He tooke his leave of her, there left in  
   heaviness.

## XXVIII

Tho, as he backe returned from that land,  
 And there arriv'd againe, whence forth he  
   set,  
 He had not passed farre upon the strand,  
 When as two old ill favour'd hags he met,  
 By the way side being together set;  
 Two griesly creatures; and, to that their  
   faces  
 Most foule and filthie were, their garments  
   yet,  
 Being all rag'd and tatter'd, their disgraces  
 Did much the more augment, and made  
   most ugly cases.

## XXIX

The one of them, that elder did appeare,  
 With her dull eyes did seeme to looke  
   askew,  
 That her mis-shape much helpt; and her  
   foule heare  
 Hung loose and loathsomely: thereto her  
   hew  
 Was wan and leane, that all her teeth arew  
 And all her bones might through her  
   cheekes be red;  
 Her lips were like raw lether, pale and blew,  
 And as she spake, therewith she slavered;  
 Yet spake she seldom, but thought more,  
   the lesse she sed.

## XXX

Her hands were foule and durtie, never  
   washt  
 In all her life, with long nayles over raught,  
 Like puttocks clawes: with th' one of  
   which she scracht  
 Her cursed head, although it itched naught;  
 The other held a snake with venime fraught,  
 On which she fed and gnawed hungrily,  
 As if that long she had not eaten ought;  
 That round about her jawes one might de-  
   sery  
 The bloudie gore and poyson dropping  
   lothsomely.

## XXXI

Her name was Envie, knowen well thereby;  
 Whose nature is to grieve and grudge at all  
 That ever she sees doen prays-worthily,  
 Whose sight to her is greatest crosse may  
   fall,  
 And vexeth so, that makes her eat her gall.  
 For when she wanteth other thing to eat,  
 She feedes on her owne maw unnaturall,  
 And of her owne foule entrayles makes her  
   meat;  
 Meat fit for such a monsters monstrous  
   dyeat.

## XXXII

And if she hapt of any good to heare,  
 That had to any happily betid,  
 Then would she inly fret, and grieve, and  
   teare  
 Her flesh for felnesse, which she inward hid:  
 But if she heard of ill that any did,  
 Or harme that any had, then would she make  
 Great cheare, like one unto a banquet bid;  
 And in others losse great pleasure take,  
 As she had got thereby, and gayned a great  
   stake.

## XXXIII

The other nothing better was then shee;  
 Agreeing in bad will and cancred kynd,  
 But in bad maner they did disagree:  
 For what so Envie good or bad did fynd  
 She did conceale, and murder her owne  
   mynd;  
 But this, what ever evill she conceived,  
 Did spred abroad, and throw in th' oper  
   wynd.  
 Yet this in all her words might be perceived,  
 That all she sought was mens good name to  
   have bereaved.

## XXXIV

For what soever good by any sayd  
 Or doen she heard, she would streight-  
     wayes invent  
 How to deprave, or slaunderously upbrayd,  
 Or to misconstrue of a mans intent,  
 And turne to ill the thing that well was ment.  
 Therefore she used often to resort  
 To common haunts, and companies frequent,  
 To hearke what any one did good report,  
 To blot the same with blame, or wrest in  
     wicked sort.

## XXXV

And if that any ill she heard of any,  
 She would it eeke, and make much worse  
     by telling,  
 And take great joy to publish it to many,  
 That every matter worse was for her  
     melling.  
 Her name was hight Detraction, and her  
     dwelling  
 Was neare to Envie, even her neighbour  
     next;  
 A wicked hag, and Envy selfe excelling  
 In mischief: for her selfe she onely vext;  
 But this same both her selfe and others eke  
     perplext.

## XXXVI

Her face was ugly, and her mouth distort,  
 Foming with poyson round about her gils,  
 In which her cursed tongue full sharpe and  
     short  
 Appear'd like aspis sting, that closely kils,  
 Or cruelly does wound, whom so she wils:  
 A distaffe in her other hand she had,  
 Upon the which she litle spinnes, but spils,  
 And faynes to weave false tales and leasings  
     bad,  
 To throw amongst the good, which others  
     had disprad.

## XXXVII

These two now had themselves combynd in  
     one,  
 And linckt together gainst Sir Artegall,  
 For whom they wayted as his mortall fone,  
 How they might make him into mischief  
     fall,  
 For freeing from their snares Irena thrall:  
 Besides, unto themselves they gotten had  
 A monster, which the Blatant Beast men  
     call,

A dreadfull feend, of gods and men ydrad,  
 Whom they by slights allur'd, and to their  
     purpose lad.

## XXXVIII

Such were these hags, and so unhandsome  
     drest:  
 Who when they nigh approaching had espyde  
 Sir Artegall, return'd from his late quest,  
 They both arose, and at him loudly cryde,  
 As it had bene two shepheards cures had  
     scryde  
 A ravenous wolfe amongst the scattered  
     flocks.  
 And Envie first, as she that first him eyde,  
 Towardes him runs, and with rude flaring  
     lockes  
 About her eares, does beat her brest and  
     forhead knockes.

## XXXIX

Then from her mouth the gobbet she does  
     take,  
 The which whyleare she was so greedily  
 Devouring, even that halfe-gnawen snake,  
 And at him throwes it most despightfully.  
 The cursed serpent, though she hungrily  
 Earst chawd thereon, yet was not all so dead,  
 But that some life remayned secretly,  
 And as he past afore withouten dread,  
 Bit him behind, that long the marke was to  
     be read.

## XL

Then th' other comming neare, gan him  
     revile  
 And fouly rayle, with all she could invent;  
 Saying that he had with unmanly guile  
 And foule abnsion both his honour blent,  
 And that bright sword, the sword of Justice  
     lent,  
 Had stayned with reprochfull crueltie  
 In guiltlesse blood of many an innocent:  
 As for Grandtorto, him with treacherie  
 And traynes having surpriz'd, he fouly did  
     to die.

## XLI

Thereto the Blatant Beast, by them set on,  
 At him began aloud to barke and bay,  
 With bitter rage and fell contention,  
 That all the woods and rockes nigh to that  
     way  
 Began to quake and tremble with dismay,  
 And all the aire rebellowed againe,

So dreadfully his hundred tongues did bray:  
And evermore those hags them selves did  
paine  
To sharpen him, and their owne cursed  
tongs did straine.

## XLII

And still among, most bitter wordes they  
spake,  
Most shamefull, most unrighteous, most  
untrew,  
That they the mildest man alive would make  
Forget his patience, and yeeld vengeaunce  
dew  
To her, that so false sciaunders at him  
threw.  
And more to make them pierce and wound  
more deepe,  
She with the sting which in her vile tongue  
grew  
Did sharpen them, and in fresh poyson  
steepe:  
Yet he past on, and seem'd of them to take  
no keepe.

## XLIII

But Talus, hearing her so lewdly raile,  
And speake so ill of him that well deserved,  
Would her have chastiz'd with his yron  
flaile,  
If her Sir Artégall had not preserved,  
And him forbidden, who his heast observed.  
So much the more at him still did she  
scold,  
And stones did cast; yet he for nought  
would swerve  
From his right course, but still the way did  
hold  
To Faery court, where what him fell shall  
else be told.

THE SIXTE BOOKE  
OF THE FAERIE QUEENE

## CONTAYNING

## THE LEGEND OF SIR CALIDORE

## OR

## OF COURTESIE

## I

THE waies, through which my weary steps  
I gwyde,  
In this delightfull land of Faery,

Are so exceeding spacious and wyde,  
And sprinckled with such sweet variety  
Of all that pleasant is to eare or eye,  
That I, nigh ravisht with rare thoughts de-  
light,

My tedious travell doe forget thereby;  
And when I gin to feele decay of might,  
It strength to me supplies, and chears my  
dulled spright.

## II

Such secret comfort and such heavenly  
pleasures,  
Ye sacred imps, that on Parnasso dwell,  
And there the keeping have of learnings  
treasures,  
Which doe all worldly riches farre excell,  
Into the mindes of mortall men doe well,  
And goodly fury into them infuse;  
Guyde ye my footing, and conduct me  
well  
In these strange waies, where never foote  
did use,  
Ne none can find, but who was taught them  
by the Muse.

## III

Revele to me the sacred noursery  
Of Vertue, which with you doth there re-  
maine,  
Where it in silver bowre does hidden ly  
From view of men, and wicked worlds dis-  
daine;  
Since it at first was by the gods with paine  
Planted in earth, being deriv'd at furst  
From heavenly seedes of bounty soveraine,  
And by them long with carefull labour  
nurst,  
Till it to ripenesse grew, and forth to hon-  
our burst.

## IV

Amongst them all growes not a fayrer  
flowre,  
Then is the bloosme of comely Courtesie,  
Which, though it on a lowly stalke doe  
bowre,  
Yet brancheth forth in brave nobilitie,  
And spreads it selfe through all civilitie:  
Of which though present age doe plenteous  
seeme,  
Yet, being matcht with plaine antiquitie,  
Ye will them all but fayned shoves esteeme,  
Which carry colours faire, that feeble eies  
misdeeme.



## V

But in the triall of true Curtesie,  
 Its now so farre from that which then it  
 was,  
 That it indeed is nought but forgerie,  
 Fashion'd to please the eies of them that  
 pas,

Which see not perfect things but in a glas:  
 Yet is that glasse so gay that it can blynd  
 The wisest sight, to thinke gold that is bras.  
 But Vertues seat is deepe within the mynd,  
 And not in outward shows, but inward  
 thoughts defynd.

## VI

But where shall I in all antiquity  
 So faire a patterne finde, where may be  
 seene  
 The goodly praise of princely Curtesie,  
 As in your selfe, O soveraine Lady Queene?  
 In whose pure minde, as in a mirrour sheene,  
 It showes, and with her brightnesse doth  
 inflame  
 The eyes of all which thereon fixed beene;  
 But meriteth indeede an higher name:  
 Yet so from low to high uplifted is your  
 fame.

## VII

Then pardon me, most dreaded Soveraine,  
 That from your selfe I doe this vertue bring,  
 And to your selfe doe it returne againe:  
 So from the ocean all rivers spring,  
 And tribute backe repay as to their king:  
 Right so from you all goodly vertues well  
 Into the rest which round about you ring,  
 Faire lords and ladies, which about you  
 dwell,  
 And doe adorne your court, where courtesies  
 excell.

## CANTO I

Calidore saves from Maleffort  
 A damzell used vylde:  
 Doth vanquish Crudor, and doth make  
 Briana wexe more mylde.

## I

OF Court, it seemes, men Courtesie doe call,  
 For that it there most useth to abound;  
 And well beseemeth that in princes hall  
 That vertue should be plentifully found,  
 Which of all goodly manners is the ground,  
 And roote of civill conversation.

Right so in Faery court it did redound,  
 Where curteous knights and ladies most did  
 won  
 Of all on earth, and made a matchlesse  
 paragon.

## II

But mongst them all was none more courteous  
 knight  
 Then Calidore, beloved over all:  
 In whom it seemes that gentlenesse of  
 spright  
 And manners mylde were planted naturall;  
 To which he adding comely guize withall,  
 And gracious speach, did steale mens hearts  
 away.  
 Nathlesse thereto he was full stout and tall,  
 And well approv'd in batteilous affray,  
 That him did much renowme, and far his  
 fame display.

## III

Ne was there knight, ne was there lady  
 found  
 In Faery court, but him did deare embrace  
 For his faire usage and conditions sound,  
 The which in all mens liking gayned place,  
 And with the greatest purchast greatest  
 grace:  
 Which he could wisely use, and well apply,  
 To please the best, and th' evill to embase:  
 For he loathd leasing and base flattery,  
 And loved simple truth and stedfast honesty.

## IV

And now he was in travell on his way,  
 Uppon an hard adventure sore bestad,  
 Whenas by chaunce he met uppon a day  
 With Artegall, returning yet halfe sad  
 From his late conquest which he gotten  
 had.  
 Who whenas each of other had a sight,  
 They knew them selves, and both their persons  
 rad:  
 When Calidore thus first: 'Haile, noblest  
 knight  
 Of all this day on ground that breathe living  
 spright!

## V

'Now tell, if please you, of the good  
 succeesse  
 Which ye have had in your late enter-  
 prize.'

To whom Sir Artegall gan to expresse  
His whole exploite and valorous emprise,  
In order as it did to him arise.  
'Now, happy man!' sayd then Sir Calidore,  
'Which have, so goodly as ye can devise,  
Atchiev'd so hard a quest as few before;  
That shall you most renowned make for  
evermore.

## VI

But where ye ended have, now I begin  
To tread an endlesse trace, withouten  
guyde,  
Or good direction how to enter in,  
Or how to issue forth in waies untryde,  
In perils strange, in labours long and wide,  
In which although good fortune me befall,  
Yet shall it not by none be testifyde.'  
'What is that quest,' quoth then Sir Artegall,  
'That you into such perils presently doth  
call?'

## VII

'The Blattant Beast,' quoth he, 'I doe  
pursue,  
And through the world incessantly doe  
chase,  
Till I him overtake, or else subdew:  
Yet know I not or how or in what place  
To find him out, yet still I forward trace.'  
'What is that Blattant Beast?' then he  
replide.  
'It is a monster bred of hellishe race,'  
Then answerd he, 'which often hath annoyd  
Good knights and ladies true, and many  
else destroyd.

## VIII

'Of Cerberus whilome he was begot,  
And fell Chimæra in her darkesome den,  
Through fowle commixture of his filthy  
blot;  
Where he was fostred long in Stygian  
fen,  
Till he to perfect ripenesse grew, and then  
Into this wicked world he forth was sent,  
To be the plague and scourge of wretched  
men:  
Whom with vile tongue and venomous in-  
tent  
He sore doth wound, and bite, and cruelly  
torment.'

## IX

'Then, since the Salvage Island I did  
leave,'  
Sayd Artegall, 'I such a beast did see,  
The which did seeme a thousand tongues to  
have,  
That all in spight and malice did agree,  
With which he bayd and loudly barked at  
mee,  
As if that he attonce would me devour.  
But I, that knew my selfe from perill free,  
Did nought regard his malice nor his  
powre,  
But he the more his wicked poyson forth  
did poure.'

## X

'That surely is that beast,' saide Calidore,  
'Which I pursue, of whom I am right  
glad  
To heare these tidings, which of none afore  
Through all my weary travell I have had:  
Yet now some hope your words unto me  
add.'  
'Now God you speed,' quoth then Sir  
Artegall,  
'And keepe your body from the daunger  
drad:  
For ye have much adoe to deale withall.'  
So both tooke goodly leave, and parted  
severall.

## XI

Sir Calidore thence travelled not long,  
When as by chaunce a comely squire he  
found,  
That thorough some more mighty enemies  
wrong  
Both hand and foote unto a tree was bound:  
Who, seeing him from farre, with piteous  
sound  
Of his shrill cries him called to his aide.  
To whom approching, in that painefull  
stound  
When he him saw, for no demaunds he  
staide,  
But first him losde, and afterwards thus to  
him saide:

## XII

'Unhappy squire! what hard mishap thee  
brought  
Into this bay of perill and disgrace?  
What cruell hand thy wretched thralldome  
wrought,

And thee eaptyved in this shamefull  
place?’

To whom he answerd thus: ‘My haplesse  
ease

Is not occasiond through my misdesert,  
But through misfortune, which did me  
abase

Unto this shame, and my young hope sub-  
vert,

Ere that I in her guilefull traines was well  
expert.

## XIII

‘Not farre from hence, uppon yond rocky  
hill,

Hard by a streight there stands a castle  
strong,

Which doth observe a eustome lewd and  
ill,

And it hath long mayntaind with mighty  
wrong:

For may no knight nor lady passe along  
That way, (and yet they needs must passe  
that way,

By reason of the streight, and rocks  
among,)

But they that ladies lookes doe shave away,  
And that knights berd for toll, which they

for passage pay.’

## XIV

‘A shamefull use as ever I did heare,’  
Sayd Calidore, ‘and to be overthrowne.

But by what meanes did they at first it  
reare,

And for what cause? tell, if thou have it  
knowne.’

Sayd then that squire: ‘The lady which  
doth owne

This castle is by name Briana hight;  
Then which a prouder lady liveth none:

She long time hath deare lov’d a doughty  
knight,

And sought to win his love by all the  
meanes she might.

## XV

‘His name is Crudor; who, through high  
disdaine

And proud despight of his selfe pleasing  
mynd,

Refused hath to yeeld her love againe,  
Untill a mantle she for him doe fynd,

With beards of knights and locks of ladies  
lynd.

Which to provide, she hath this eastle dight,  
And therein hath a seneschall assynd,  
Cald Maleffort, a man of mickle might,  
Who exeutes her wicked will, with worse  
despight.

## XVI

‘He this same day, as I that way did come  
With a faire damzell, my beloved deare,

In execution of her lawlesse doome,  
Did set uppon us flying both for feare:

For little bootes against him hand to reare  
Me first he tooke, unhable to withstond,

And whiles he her pursued every where,  
Till his returne unto this tree he bond:

Ne wote I surely, whether her he yet have  
fond.’

## XVII

Thus whiles they spake, they heard a rue-  
full shrieke

Of one loud eryl, which they streight  
way ghest

That it was she, the which for helpe did  
seeke.

Tho looking up unto the ery to lest,  
They saw that carle from farre, with hand  
unblest

Hayling that mayden by the yellow heare,  
That all her garments from her snowy brest,

And from her head her lockes he nigh did  
teare,

Ne would he spare for pitty, nor refraine  
for feare.

## XVIII

Which laynous sight when Calidore be-  
held,

Eftsoones he loosd that squire, and so him  
left,

With hearts dismay and inward dolour  
queld,

For to pursue that villaine, which had reft  
That piteous spoile by so injurious theft.

Whom overtaking, loude to him he eryde:  
‘Leave, faytor, quickly that misgotten  
weft

To him that hath it better justifyde,  
And turne thee soone to him of whom thou  
art defyde.’

## XIX

Who hearkning to that voice, him selfe  
upreard,

And seeing him so fiercely towards make,



Against him stoutly ran, as nought afeard,  
But rather more enrag'd for those words  
sake;

And with sterne count'naunce thus unto  
him spake:

'Art thou the caytive that defyest me,  
And for this mayd, whose party thou doest  
take,

Wilt give thy beard, though it but little  
bee?

Yet shall it not her lockes for raunsome  
fro me free.'

## XX

With that he fiercely at him flew, and layd  
On hideous strokes with most importune  
might,

That oft he made him stagger as unstayd,  
And oft recule to shunne his sharpe de-  
spight.

But Calidore, that was well skild in fight,  
Him long forbore, and still his spirite  
spar'd,

Lying in waite, how him he damadge might.  
But when he felt him shrinke, and come to  
ward,

He greater grew, and gan to drive at him  
more hard.

## XXI

Like as a water streame, whose swelling  
sourse

Shall drive a mill, within strong bancks is  
pent,

And long restrayned of his ready course;  
So soone as passage is unto him lent,  
Breakes forth, and makes his way more  
violent:

Such was the fury of Sir Calidore,  
When once he felt his foeman to relent;  
He fiercely him pursu'd, and pressed sore,  
Who as he still decayd, so he encreased  
more.

## XXII

The heavy burden of whose dreadfull  
might

When as the carle no longer could sustaine,  
His heart gan faint, and streight he tooke  
his flight

Toward the castle, where, if need constraine,  
His hope of refuge used to remaine.

Whom Calidore perceiuing fast to flie,  
He him pursu'd and chaced through the  
plaine,

That he for dread of death gan loude to  
crie  
Unto the ward, to open to him hastilie.

## XXIII

They from the wall him seeing so aghast,  
The gate soone opened to receive him in,  
But Calidore did follow him so fast,  
That even in the porch he him did win,  
And cleft his head asunder to his chin.  
The carkasse, tumbling downe within the  
dore,

Did choke the entraunce with a lump of  
sin,

That it could not be shut, whilest Calidore  
Did enter in, and slew the porter on the  
floore.

## XXIV

With that the rest, the which the castle  
kept,

About him flockt, and hard at him did lay;  
But he them all from him full lightly swept,  
As doth a steare, in heat of sommers day,  
With his long taile the bryzes brush away.  
Thence passing forth, into the hall he came,  
Where of the lady selfe in sad dismay  
He was ymett, who with uncomely shame  
Gan him salute, and fowle upbrayd with  
faulty blame.

## XXV

'False traytor knight,' sayd she, 'no knight  
at all,

But scorne of armes, that hast with guilty  
hand

Murdred my men, and slaine my seneschall;  
Now comest thou to rob my house unmand,  
And spoile my selfe, that can not thee  
withstand?

Yet doubt thou not, but that some better  
knight

Then thou, that shall thy treason under-  
stand,

Will it avenge, and pay thee with thy right:  
And if none do, yet shame shal thee with  
shame requight.'

## XXVI

Much was the knight abashed at that word;  
Yet answerd thus: 'Not unto me the shame,  
But to the shamefull doer it afford.

Bloud is no blemish; for it is no blame  
To punish those that doe deserve the same;  
But they that breake bands of civilitie,

And wicked customes make, those doe de-  
fame  
Both noble armes and gentle curtesie.  
No greater shame to man then inhumani-  
tie.

## XXVII

‘Then doe your selfe, for dread of shame,  
forgoe  
This evill manner which ye here maintaine,  
And doe in stead thereof mild curt’sie showe  
To all that passe. That shall you glory gaine  
More then his love, which thus ye seeke  
t’ obtaine.’

Wherewith all full of wrath, she thus re-  
plyde:

‘Vile recreant! know that I doe much dis-  
daine

Thy courteous lore, that doest my love de-  
ride,

Who scornes thy ydle scoffe, and bids thee  
be defyde.’

## XXVIII

‘To take defiaunce at a ladies word,’

Quoth he, ‘I hold it no indignity;

But were he here, that would it with his  
sword

Abett, perhaps he mote it deare aby.’

‘Cowherd,’ quoth she, ‘were not that thou  
wouldst fly

Ere he doe come, he should be soone in  
place.’

‘If I doe so,’ sayd he, ‘then liberty

I leave to yon, for aye me to disgrace

With all those shames that erst ye spake  
me to deface.’

## XXIX

With that a dwarfe she cald to her in hast,  
And taking from her hand a ring of gould,  
A privy token which betweene them past,  
Bad him to flie with all the speed he could  
To Crudor, and desire him that he would  
Vouchsafe to reskue her against a knight,  
Who through strong powre had now her  
self in hould,

Having late slaine her seneschall in fight,  
And all her people mured with outrageous  
might.

## XXX

The dwarfe his way did hast, and went all  
night;

But Calidore did with her there abyde

The comming of that so much threatned  
knight;

Where that discourteous dame with scorn-  
full pryde

And fowle entreaty him indignifyde,

That yron heart it hardly could sustaine:

Yet he, that could his wrath full wisely  
guyde,

Did well endure her womanish disdaine,

And did him selfe from fraile impatience  
refraine.

## XXXI

The morrow next, before the lampe of light  
Above the earth upreard his flaming head,  
The dwarfe, which bore that message to  
her knight,

Brought aunsweare backe, that ere he tasted  
bread

He would her succour, and alive or dead

Her foe deliver up into her hand:

Therefore he wild her doe away all dread;

And that of him she mote assured stand,

He sent to her his basenet, as a faithfull  
band.

## XXXII

Thereof full blyth the lady streight became,  
And gan t’ augment her bitternesse much  
more:

Yet no whit more appalled for the same,

Ne ought dismayed was Sir Calidore,

But rather did more chearefull seeme there-  
fore;

And having soone his armes about him dight,

Did issue forth, to meete his foe afore;

Where long he stayed not, when as a knight

He spide come pricking on with al his powre  
and might.

## XXXIII

Well weend he streight, that he should be  
the same

Which tooke in hand her quarrell to main-  
taine;

Ne stayd to aske if it were he by name,

But coucht his speare, and ran at him  
amaine.

They bene ymett in midst of the plaine,

With so fell fury and dispiteous forse,

That neither could the others stroke sus-  
taine,

But rudely rowld to ground both man and  
horse,

Neither of other taking pitty nor remorse.

## XXXIV

But Calidore uprose againe full light,  
 Whiles yet his foe lay fast in sencelesse  
 sound;  
 Yet would he not him hurt, although he  
 might:  
 For shame he weend a sleeping wight to  
 wound.  
 But when Briana saw that drery stound,  
 There where she stood uppon the castle wall,  
 She deem'd him sure to have bene dead on  
 ground,  
 And made such piteous mourning therewith-  
 all,  
 That from the battlements she ready seem'd  
 to fall.

## XXXV

Nathlesse at length him selfe he did upreare  
 In lustlesse wise, as if against his will,  
 Ere he had slept his fill, he wakened were,  
 And gan to stretch his limbs; which feel-  
 ing ill  
 Of his late fall, a while he rested still:  
 But when he saw his foe before in vew,  
 He shooke off luskishnesse, and courage  
 chill  
 Kindling a fresh, gan battell to renew,  
 To prove if better foote then horsebacke  
 would ensew.

## XXXVI

There then began a fearefull cruell fray  
 Betwixt them two, for maystery of might:  
 For both were wondrous practicke in that  
 play,  
 And passing well expert in single fight,  
 And both inflam'd with furious despight:  
 Which as it still encreast, so still increast  
 Their cruell strokes and terrible affright;  
 Ne once for ruth their rigour they releast,  
 Ne once to breath a while their angers tem-  
 pest ceast.

## XXXVII

Thus long they trac'd and traversed to and  
 fro,  
 And tryde all waies, how each mote en-  
 trance make  
 Into the life of his malignant foe;  
 They hew'd their helmes, and plates asunder  
 brake,  
 As they had potshares bene; for nought  
 mote slake  
 Their greedy vengeaunces, but goary blood;

That at the last like to a purple lake  
 Of bloody gore congeal'd about them stood,  
 Which from their riven sides forth gushed  
 like a flood.

## XXXVIII

At length it chaunst that both their hands  
 on hie  
 At once did heave, with all their powre and  
 might,  
 Thinking the utmost of their force to trie,  
 And prove the finall fortune of the fight:  
 But Calidore, that was more quicke of sight,  
 And nimbler handed then his enemye,  
 Prevented him before his stroke could  
 light,  
 And on the helmet smote him formerlie,  
 That made him stoupe to ground with  
 meeke humilitie.

## XXXIX

And ere he could recover foot againe,  
 He following that faire advantage fast,  
 His stroke redoubled with such might and  
 maine,  
 That him upon the ground he groveling  
 cast;  
 And leaping to him light, would have un-  
 last  
 His helme, to make unto his vengeance way.  
 Who, seeing in what daunger he was plast,  
 Cryde out: 'Ah mercie, sir! doe me not  
 slay,  
 But save my life, which lot before your  
 foot doth lay.'

## XL

With that his mortall hand a while he  
 stayd,  
 And having somewhat calm'd his wrathfull  
 heat  
 With goodly patience, thus he to him sayd:  
 'And is the boast of that proud ladies threat,  
 That menaced me from the field to beat,  
 Now brought to this? By this now may  
 ye learne,  
 Strangers no more so rudely to intreat,  
 But put away proud looke, and usage sterne,  
 The which shal nought to you but foule  
 dishonor yearne.

## XLI

'For nothing is more blamefull to a knight,  
 That court'sie doth as well as armes pro-  
 fesse,



How ever strong and fortunate in fight,  
Then the reproch of pride and cruellenesse.  
In vaine he seeketh others to suppress,  
Who hath not learnd him selfe first to sub-  
dew:

All flesh is frayle, and full of ficklenesse,  
Subject to fortunes chance, still chaunging  
new;

What haps to day to me to morrow may to  
you.

## XLII

'Who will not mercie unto others shew,  
How can he mercy ever hope to have?  
To pay each with his owne is right and  
dew.

Yet since ye mercie now doe need to crave,  
I will it graunt, your hopelesse life to save;  
With these conditions, which I will pro-  
pound:

First, that ye better shall your selfe be-  
have

Unto all errant knights, whereso on ground;  
Next, that ye ladies ayde in every stead  
and stound.'

## XLIII

The wretched man, that all this while did  
dwell

In dread of death, his heasts did gladly  
heare,

And promist to performe his precept well,  
And whatsoever else he would requere.

So suffering him to rise, he made him sweare  
By his owne sword, and by the crosse  
thereon,

To take Briana for his loving fere,  
Withouten dowre or composition;  
But to release his former foule condition.

## XLIV

All which accepting, and with faithfull oth  
Bynding himselfe most firmly to obey,  
He up arose, how ever lief or loth,  
And swore to him true fealtie for aye.

Then forth he cald from sorrowfull dismay  
The sad Briana, which all this beheld:

Who comming forth yet full of late affray,  
Sir Calidore upheard, and to her teld  
All this accord, to which he Crudor had  
compeld.

## XLV

Whereof she now more glad then sory earst,  
All o' ercome with infinite affect

For his exceeding courtesie, that pearst  
Her stubborne hart with inward deepe  
effect,

Before his feet her selfe she did project,  
And him adoring as her lives deare lord,  
With all due thanks and dutifull respect,  
Her selfe acknowledg'd bound for that ac-  
cord,

By which he had to her both life and love  
restord.

## XLVI

So all returning to the castle glad,  
Most joyfully she them did entertaine,  
Where goodly glee and feast to them she  
made,

To shew her thankefull mind and meaning  
faine,

By all the meanes she mote it best explaine:  
And after all, unto Sir Calidore

She freely gave that castle for his paine,  
And her selfe bound to him for evermore;  
So wondrously now chaung'd from that she  
was afore.

## XLVII

But Calidore himselfe would not retaine  
Nor land nor fee, for hyre of his good deede,  
But gave them streight unto that squire  
again,

Whom from her seneschall he lately freed,  
And to his damzell, as their rightfull meed,  
For recompence of all their former wrong:  
There he remaind with them right well  
agreed,

Till of his wounds he wexed hole and  
strong,

And then to his first quest he passed forth  
along.

## CANTO II

Calidore sees young Tristram slay  
A proud, discourteous knight:  
He makes him squire, and of him learnes  
His state and present plight.

## I

WHAT vertue is so fitting for a knight,  
Or for a ladie whom a knight should love,  
As curtesie, to beare themselves aright  
To all of each degree, as doth behove?  
For whether they be placed high above,  
Or low beneath, yet ought they well to  
know

Their good, that none them rightly may  
reprove  
Of rudenesse, for not yeelding what they  
owe:  
Great skill it is such duties timely to be-  
stow.

## II

Thereto great helpe Dame Nature selfe  
doth lend:  
For some so goodly grations are by kind,  
That every action doth them much com-  
mend,  
And in the eyes of men great liking find;  
Which others, that have greater skill in  
mind,  
Though they enforce themselves, cannot  
attaine.  
For everie thing, to which one is inclin'd,  
Doth best become, and greatest grace doth  
gaine:  
Yet praise likewise deserve good thewes,  
enforst with paine.

## III

That well in courteous Calidore appeares,  
Whose every deed and word that he did  
say  
Was like enchantment, that through both  
the eares  
And both the eyes did steale the hart  
away.  
He now againe is on his former way,  
To follow his first quest, when as he  
spyde  
A tall young man from thence not farre  
away,  
Fighting on foot, as well he him descryde,  
Against an armed knight, that did on  
horsebacke ryde.

## IV

And them beside, a ladie faire he saw,  
Standing alone on foot, in foule array:  
To whom himselfe he hastily did draw,  
To weete the cause of so uncomely fray,  
And to depart them, if so be he may.  
But ere he came in place, that youth had  
kild  
That armed knight, that low on ground he  
lay;  
Which when he saw, his hart was inly  
child  
With great amazement, and his thought  
with wonder fild.

## V

Him stedfastly he markt, and saw to bee  
A goodly youth of amiable grace,  
Yet but a slender slip, that scarce did see  
Yet seventene yeares, but tall and faire of  
face,  
That sure he deem'd him borne of noble  
race.  
All in a woodmans jacket he was clad  
Of Lincolne greene, belayd with silver  
lace;  
And on his head an hood with aglets sprad,  
And by his side his hunters horne he hang-  
ing had.

## VI

Buskins he wore of costliest cordwayne,  
Pinckt upon gold, and paled part per part,  
As then the guize was for each gentle  
swayne;  
In his right hand he held a trembling dart,  
Whose fellow he before had sent apart;  
And in his left he held a sharpe bore-  
speare,  
With which he wont to launch the salvage  
hart  
Of many a lyon and of many a beare,  
That first unto his hand in chase did hap-  
pen neare.

## VII

Whom Calidore a while well having vewed,  
At length bespake: 'What meanes this,  
gentle swaine?  
Why hath thy hand too bold it selfe em-  
brewed  
In blood of knight, the which by thee is  
slaine,  
By thee no knight; which armes impugn-  
eth plaine?'  
'Certes,' said he, 'loth were I to have bro-  
ken  
The law of armes; yet breake it should  
again,  
Rather then let my selfe of wight be stro-  
ken,  
So long as these two armes were able to be  
wroken.

## VIII

'For not I him, as this his ladie here  
May witnesse well, did offer first to wrong,  
Ne surely thus unarm'd I likely were;  
But he me first, through pride and puis-  
sance strong

Assayld, not knowing what to armes doth long.'

'Perdie, great blame,' then said Sir Calidore,

'For armed knight a wight unarm'd to wrong.

But then aread, thou gentle chyld, wherefore

Betwixt you two began this strife and sterne upore.'

## IX

'That shall I sooth,' said he, 'to you declare.

I whose unryper yeares are yet unfit  
For thing of weight, or worke of greater care,

Doe spend my dayes and bend my carelesse wit

To salvage chace, where I thereon may hit  
In all this forrest and wyld wooddie raine:  
Where, as this day I was enraunging it,  
I chaunst to meete this knight, who there lyes slaine,

Together with this ladie, passing on the plaine.

## X

'The knight, as ye did see, on horsebacke was,

And this his ladie, (that him ill became,)  
On her faire feet by his horse side did pas  
Through thicke and thin, unfit for any dame.

Yet not content, more to increase his shame,

When so she lagged, as she needs mote so,  
He with his speare, that was to him great blame,

Would thumpe her forward, and inforce to goe,

Weeping to him in vaine, and making pitious woe.

## XI

'Which when I saw, as they me passed by,

Much was I moved in indignant mind,  
And gan to blame him for such ernelty  
Towards a ladie, whom with usage kind  
He rather should have taken up behind.

Wherewith he wroth, and full of proud disdain,

Tooke in foule scorne, that I such fault did find,

And me in lieu thereof revil'd againe,  
Threatning to chastize me, as doth t' a chyld pertaine.

## XII

'Which I no lesse disdayning, backe returned

His scornefull taunts unto his teeth againe,  
That he streight way with haughtie choler burned,

And with his speare strooke me one stroke or twaine;

Which I enforst to beare, though to my paine,

Cast to requite, and with a slender dart,  
Fellow of this I beare, throwne not in vaine,

Strooke him, as seemeth, underneath the hart,

That through the wound his spirit shortly did depart.'

## XIII

Much did Sir Calidore admyre his speach  
Tempred so well, but more admyr'd the stroke

That through the mayles had made so strong a breach

Into his hart, and had so sternely wroke  
His wrath on him that first occasion broke.  
Yet rested not, but further gan inquire  
Of that same ladie, whether what he spoke  
Were soothly so, and that th' unrighteous ire  
Of her owne knight had given him his owne due hire.

## XIV

Of all which when as she could nought deny,  
But cleard that stripling of th' imputed blame,

Sayd then Sir Calidore: 'Neither will I  
Him charge with guilt, but rather doe quite clame:

For what he spake, for you he spake it, dame;

And what he did, he did him selfe to save:  
Against both which that knight wrought knightlesse shame.

For knights and all men this by nature have,  
Towards all womenkind them kindly to be have.

## XV

'But sith that he is gone irrevocable,  
Please it you, ladie, to us to aread,



What cause could make him so dishonour-  
able,

To drive you so on foot, unfit to tread  
And lackey by him, gainst all womanhead ?  
' Certes, sir knight,' sayd she, ' full loth I  
were

To rayse a lyving blame against the dead:  
But since it me concernes, my selfe to clere,  
I will the truth discover, as it chaunst  
whylere.

## XVI

' This day, as he and I together roade  
Upon our way, to which we weren bent,  
We chaunst to come foreby a covert glade  
Within a wood, whereas a ladie gent  
Sate with a knight in joyous jolliment  
Of their franke loves, free from all gealous  
spyes:

Faire was the ladie sure, that mote content  
An hart not carried with too curious eyes,  
And unto him did shew all lovely courtesyes.

## XVII

' Whom when my knight did see so lovely  
faire,  
He inly gan her lover to envy,  
And wish that he part of his spoyle might  
share.

Whereto when as my presence he did spy  
To be a let, he bad me by and by  
For to alight: but when as I was loth  
My loves owne part to leave so suddenly,  
He with strong hand down from his steed  
me throw'th,  
And with presumptuous powre against that  
knight streight go'th.

## XVIII

' Unarm'd all was the knight, as then more  
meete  
For ladies service and for loves delight,  
Then fearing any foeman there to meete:  
Whereof he taking oddes, streight bids him  
dight

Himselfe to yeeld his love, or else to fight.  
Whereat the other starting up dismayd,  
Yet boldly answer'd, as he rightly might,  
To leave his love he should be ill apayd,  
In which he had good right gaynst all that  
it gainesayd.

## XIX

' Yet since he was not presently in plight  
Her to defend, or his to justifie,

He him requested, as he was a knight,  
To lend him day his better right to trie,  
Or stay till he his armes, which were  
thereby,

Might lightly fetch. But he was fierce and  
whot,

Ne time would give, nor any termes aby,  
But at him flew, and with his speare him  
smot;

From which to thinke to save himselfe it  
booted not.

## XX

' Meane while his ladie, which this outrage  
saw,

Whilest they together for the quarrey  
strove,

Into the covert did her selfe withdraw,  
And closely hid her selfe within the grove.  
My knight hers soone, as seemes, to daun-  
ger drove

And left sore wounded: but when her he  
mist,

He woxe halfe mad, and in that rage gan  
rove

And range through all the wood, where so  
he wist

She hidden was, and sought her so long as  
him list.

## XXI

' But when as her he by no meanes could  
find,

After long search and chauff, he turned  
backe

Unto the place where me he left behind:  
There gan he me to curse and ban, for lacke  
Of that faire bootie, and with bitter wracke  
To wreake on me the guilt of his owne  
wrong.

Of all which I yet glad to beare the packe,  
Strove to appease him, and perswaded long:  
But still his passion grew more violent and  
strong.

## XXII

' Then as it were t' avenge his wrath on mee,  
When forward we should fare, he flat re-  
fused

To take me up (as this young man did see)  
Upon his steed, for no just cause accused,  
But forst to trot on foot, and foule misused,  
Pounching me with the butt end of his  
speare,

In vaine complayning to be so abused;

For he regarded neither playnt nor teare,  
But more enforst my paine, the more my  
  plaints to heare.

## XXIII

‘So passed we, till this young man us met,  
And being moov’d with pittie of my plight,  
Spake, as was meet, for ease of my regret:  
Whereof befell what now is in your sight.’  
‘Now sure,’ then said Sir Calidore, ‘and  
  right  
Me seemes, that him befell by his owne  
  fault:  
Who ever thinkes through confidence of  
  might,  
Or through support of count’nance proud  
  and hault,  
To wrong the weaker, oft falles in his owne  
  assault.’

## XXIV

Then turning backe unto that gentle boy,  
Which had himselfe so stoutly well acquit;  
Seeing his face so lovely sterne and coy,  
And hearing th’ answeres of his pregnant  
  wit,  
He prayd it much, and much admyred it;  
That sure he weend him borne of noble  
  blood,  
With whom those graces did so goodly fit:  
And when he long had him beholding stood,  
He burst into these words, as to him seemed  
  good:

## XXV

‘Faire gentle swayne, and yet as stout as  
  fayre,  
That in these woods amongst the nymphs  
  dost wonne,  
Which daily may to thy sweete lookes re-  
  payre,  
As they are wont unto Latonaes sonne,  
After his chace on woodie Cynthus donne:  
Well may I certes such an one thee read,  
As by thy worth thou worthily hast wonne,  
Or surely borne of some heroicke sead,  
That in thy face appeares and gracious  
  goodlyhead.

## XXVI

‘But should it not displease thee it to tell,  
(Unlesse thou in these woods thy selfe con-  
  ceale  
For love amongst the woodie gods to dwell,)  
I would thy selfe require thee to reveale,

For deare affection and unfayned zeale,  
Which to thy noble personage I beare,  
And wish thee grow in worship and great  
  weale.

For since the day that armes I first did  
  reare,  
I never saw in any greater hope appeare.’

## XXVII

To whom then thus the noble youth: ‘May  
  be,  
Sir knight, that, by discovering my estate,  
Harme may arise unweeting unto me;  
Nathelesse, sith ye so courteous seemed  
  late,  
To you I will not feare it to relate.  
Then wote ye that I am a Briton borne,  
Sonne of a king, how ever thorough fate  
Or fortune I my countrie have forlorne,  
And lost the crowne which should my head  
  by right adorne.

## XXVIII

‘And Tristram is my name, the onely heire  
Of good King Meliograss, which did rayne  
In Cornewale, till that he through lives  
  despeire  
Untimely dyde, before I did attaine  
Ripe yeares of reason, my right to main-  
  taine.  
After whose death, his brother seeing mee  
An infant, weake a kingdome to sustaine,  
Upon him tooke the roiall high degree,  
And sent me, where him list, instructed for  
  to bee.

## XXIX

‘The widow queene, my mother, which then  
  hight  
Faire Emiline, conceiving then great feare  
Of my fraile safetie, resting in the might  
Of him that did the kingly scepter beare,  
Whose gealous dread induring not a peare  
Is wont to cut off all that doubt may breed,  
Thought best away me to remove some-  
  where  
Into some forrein land, where as no need  
Of dreaded daunger might his doubtfull  
  humor feed.

## XXX

‘So taking counsell of a wise man red,  
She was by him adviz’d to send me quight  
Out of the countrie wherein I was bred,  
The which the fertile Lionesse is hight,

Into the land of Faerie, where no wight  
Should weet of me, nor worke me any  
wrong.

To whose wise read she hearkning, sent me  
streight

Into this land, where I have wond thus  
long,

Since I was ten yeares old, now grown to  
stature strong.

## XXXI

‘All which my daies I have not lewdly  
spent,

Nor spilt the blossome of my tender yeares  
In ydlesse, but, as was convenient,  
Have trayned bene with many noble feres  
In gentle thewes, and such like seemely  
leres.

Mongst which my most delight hath alwaies  
been,

To hunt the salvage chace amongst my  
peres,

Of all that raungeth in the forrest greene;  
Of which none is to me unknowne, that ev’r  
was seene.

## XXXII

‘Ne is there hauke which mantleth her on  
pearch,

Whether high towring, or accoasting low,  
But I the measure of her flight doe search,  
And all her pray, and all her diet know.  
Such be our joyes, which in these forrests  
grow:

Onely the use of armes, which most I joy,  
And fitteth most for noble swayne to know,  
I have not tasted yet, yet past a boy,  
And being now high time these strong  
joynts to imploy.

## XXXIII

‘Therefore, good sir, sith now occasion fit  
Doth fall, whose like hereafter seldome  
may,

Let me this crave, unworthy though of it,  
That ye will make me squire without de-  
lay,

That from henceforth in batteilous array  
I may beare armes, and learne to use them  
right;

The rather since that fortune hath this  
day

Given to me the spoile of this dead knight,  
These goodly gilden armes, which I have  
won in fight.’

## XXXIV

All which when well Sir Calidore had  
heard,

Him much more now then earst he gan ad-  
mire,

For the rare hope which in his yeares ap-  
pear’d,

And thus replide: ‘Faie chyld, the high  
desire

To love of armes, which in you doth aspire,  
I may not certes without blame denie;

But rather wish that some more noble hire  
(Though none more noble then is chevalrie)  
I had, you to reward with greater dignitie.’

## XXXV

There him he causd to kneele, and made to  
swear

Faith to his knight, and truth to ladies all,  
And never to be recreant, for feare

Of perill, or of ought that might befall:

So he him dubbed, and his squire did call.  
Full glad and joyous then young Tristram

grew,  
Like as a flowre, whose silken leaves small,  
Long shut up in the bud from heavens vew,

At length breakes forth, and brode dis-  
plays his smyling hew.

## XXXVI

Thus when they long had treated to and fro,  
And Calidore betooke him to depart,

Chyld Tristram prayd that he with him  
might goe

On his adventure, vowing not to start,

But wat on him in every place and part.

Whereat Sir Calidore did much delight,

And greatly joy’d at his so noble hart,

In hope he sure would prove a doughtie  
knight:

Yet for the time this answer he to him  
behight:

## XXXVII

‘Glad would I surely be, thou courteous  
squire,

To have thy presence in my present quest,  
That mote thy kindled courage set on fire,

And flame forth honour in thy noble brest:  
But I am bound by vow, which I profest

To my dread Sovereaine, when I it assayd,

That in atchievement of her high behest

I should no creature joyne unto mine ayde;

Forthy I may not graunt that ye so  
greatly prayde.



## XXXVIII

'But since this ladie is all desolate,  
 And needeth safegard now upon her way,  
 Ye may doe well in this her needfull state  
 To succour her from daunger of dismay;  
 That thankfull guerdon may to you repay.'  
 The noble ympe, of such new service fayne,  
 It gladly did accept, as he did say.  
 So taking courteous leave, they parted  
     twayne,  
 And Calidore forth passed to his former  
     payne.

## XXXIX

But Tristram, then despoyleing that dead  
     knight  
 Of all those goodly implements of prayse,  
 Long fed his greedie eyes with the faire  
     sight  
 Of the bright mettall, shyning like sunne  
     rayes;  
 Handling and turning them a thousand  
     wayes.  
 And after having them upon him dight,  
 He tooke that ladie, and her up did rayse  
 Upon the steed of her owne late dead  
     knight,  
 So with her marched forth, as she did him  
     beight.

## XL

There to their fortune leave we them  
     awhile,  
 And turne we backe to good Sir Calidore;  
 Who, ere he thence had traveld many a  
     mile,  
 Came to the place, whereas ye heard afore  
 This knight, whom Tristram slew, had  
     wounded sore  
 Another knight in his despiteous pryde;  
 There he that knight found lying on the  
     flore,  
 With many wounds full perilous and wyde,  
 That all his garments and the grasse in ver-  
     meill dyde.

## XLI

And there beside him sate upon the ground  
 His wofull ladie, piteously complayning  
 With loud laments that most unluckie  
     stound,  
 And her sad selfe with carefull hand con-  
     strayning  
 To wype his wounds, and ease their bitter  
     payning.

Which sorie sight when Calidore did vew  
 With heavie eyne, from teares uneath re-  
     frayning,  
 His mightie hart their mournefull case can  
     rew,  
 And for their better comfort to them nigher  
     drew.

## XLII

Then speaking to the ladie, thus he sayd:  
 'Ye dolefull dame, let not your grieve em-  
     peach  
 To tell what cruell hand hath thus arayd  
 This knight unarm'd, with so unknighly  
     breach  
 Of armes, that if I yet him nigh may reach,  
 I may avenge him of so foule despight.'  
 The ladie, hearing his so courteous speach,  
 Gan reare her eyes as to the chearefull light,  
 And from her sory hart few heavie words  
     forth sight:

## XLIII

In which she shew'd, how that discourteous  
     knight  
 (Whom Tristram slew) them in that  
     shadow found,  
 Joying together in unblam'd delight,  
 And him unarm'd, as now he lay on ground,  
 Charg'd with his speare and mortally did  
     wound,  
 Withouten cause, but onely her to reave  
 From him, to whom she was for ever  
     bound:  
 Yet when she fled into that covert greave,  
 He, her not finding, both them thus nigh  
     dead did leave.

## XLIV

When Calidore this ruefull storie had  
 Well understood, he gan of her demand,  
 What manner wight he was, and how yclad,  
 Which had this outrage wrought with  
     wicked hand.  
 She then, like as she best could understand,  
 Him thus describ'd, to be of stature large,  
 Clad all in gilden armes, with azure band  
 Quartred athwart, and bearing in his targe  
 A ladie on rough waves row'd in a sommer  
     barge.

## XLV

Then gan Sir Calidore to ghesse streight  
     way,  
 By many signes which she described had,

That this was he whom Tristram earst did  
 slay,  
 And to her said: 'Dame, be no longer sad:  
 For he that hath your knight so ill bestad  
 Is now him selfe in much more wretched  
 plight;  
 These eyes him saw upon the cold earth  
 sprad,  
 The meede of his desert for that despight,  
 Which to your selfe he wrought, and to  
 your loved knight.

## XLVI

'Therefore, faire lady, lay aside this grieve,  
 Which ye have gathered to your gentle  
 hart,  
 For that displeasure; and thinke what re-  
 liefe  
 Were best devise for this your lovers smart,  
 And how ye may him hence, and to what  
 part,  
 Convey to be recur'd.' She thank't him  
 deare,  
 Both for that newes he did to her impart,  
 And for the courteous care which he did  
 beare  
 Both to her love and to her selfe in that sad  
 dreare.

## XLVII

Yet could she not devise by any wit,  
 How thence she might convey him to some  
 place.  
 For him to trouble she it thought unfit,  
 That was a straunger to her wretched case;  
 And him to beare, she thought it thing too  
 base.  
 Which when as he perceiv'd, he thus be-  
 spake:  
 'Faire lady, let it not yon seeme disgrace,  
 To beare this burden on your dainty backe;  
 My selfe will beare a part, coportion of  
 your packe.'

## XLVIII

So off he did his shield, and downeward  
 layd  
 Upon the ground, like to an hollow beare;  
 And powring balme, which he had long pur-  
 vayd,  
 Into his wounds, him up thereon did reare,  
 And twixt them both with parted paines did  
 beare,  
 Twixt life and death, not knowing what was  
 donne.

Thence they him carried to a castle neare,  
 In which a worthy auncient knight did  
 wonne:  
 Where what ensu'd shall in next canto be  
 begonne.

## CANTO III

Calidore brings Priscilla home;  
 Pursues the Blatant Beast;  
 Saves Serena, whilst Calepine  
 By Turpine is opprest.

## I

TRUE is, that whilome that good poet sayd,  
 The gentle minde by gentle deeds is knowne:  
 For a man by nothing is so well bewrayd  
 As by his manners, in which plaine is  
 showne  
 Of what degree and what race he is growne.  
 For seldome seene, a trotting stalion get  
 An ambling colt, that is his proper owne:  
 So seldome seene, that one in basenesse set  
 Doth noble courage shew, with courteous  
 manners met.

## II

But evermore contrary hath bene tryde,  
 That gentle blood will gentle manners breed;  
 As well may be in Calidore descryde,  
 By late ensample of that courteous deed  
 Done to that wounded knight in his great  
 need,  
 Whom on his backe he bore, till he him  
 brought  
 Unto the castle where they had decreed.  
 There of the knight, the which that castle  
 ought,  
 To make abode that night he greatly was  
 besought.

## III

He was to weete a man of full ripe yeares,  
 That in his youth had beene of mickle  
 might,  
 And borne great sway in armes amongst his  
 peares:  
 But now weake age had dimd his candle  
 light.  
 Yet was he courteous still to every wight,  
 And loved all that did to armes incline;  
 And was the father of that wounded knight,  
 Whom Calidore thus carried on his chine;  
 And Aldus was his name, and his sonnes  
 Aladine.

## IV

Who, when he saw his sonne so ill bedight  
With bleeding wounds, brought home upon  
a beare

By a faire lady and a straunger knight,  
Was inly touched with compassion deare,  
And deare affection of so dolefull dreare,  
That he these words burst forth: 'Ah, sory  
boy!

Is this the hope that to my hoary heare  
Thou brings? aie me! is this the timely joy,  
Which I expected long, now turnd to sad  
anuoy?

## V

'Such is the weakenesse of all mortall hope;  
So tickle is the state of earthly thiings,  
That ere they come unto their aymed scope,  
They fall too short of our fraile reckon-  
ings,

And bring us bale and bitter sorrowings,  
In stead of comfort, which we should em-  
brace:

This is the state of keasars and of kings.  
Let none therefore, that is in meaner place,  
Too greatly grieve at any his unlucky case.'

## VI

So well and wisely did that good old knight  
Temper his griefe, and turued it to cheare,  
To cheare his guests, whom he had stayd  
that night,

And make their welcome to them well ap-  
peare:

That to Sir Calidore was easie geare;  
But that faire lady would be cheard for  
nought,

But sigh'd and sorrow'd for her lover deare,  
And inly did afflict her pensive thought,  
With thinking to what case her name should  
now be brought.

## VII

For she was daughter to a noble lord,  
Which dwelt thereby, who sought her to  
affy

To a great pere; but she did disaccord,  
Ne could her liking to his love apply,  
But lov'd this fresh young knight, who  
dwelt her ny,

The lusty Aladine, though meaner borne  
And of lesse livelihood and hability,  
Yet full of valour, the which did adorne  
His meanesse much, and make her th' others  
riches scorne.

## VIII

So having both foud fit occasion,  
They met together in that luckelesse glade;  
Where that proud knight in his presump-  
tion

The gentle Aladine did earst invade,  
Being unarm'd and set in secret shade.  
Whereof she now bethinking, gau t' advize,  
How great a hazard she at earst had made  
Of her good fame, and further gan devize,  
How she the blame might salve with  
coloured disguise.

## IX

But Calidore with all good courtesie  
Fain'd her to frolicke, and to put away  
The pensive fit of her melancholie;  
And that old knight by all meanes did  
assay

To make them both as merry as he may.  
So they the evening past, till time of rest,  
When Calidore in seemly good array  
Unto his bowre was brought, and, there  
undrest,

Did sleepe all night through weary travell  
of his quest.

## X

But faire Priscilla (so that lady hight)  
Would to no bed, nor take no kindly  
sleepe,

But by her wounded love did watch all  
night,

And all the ight for bitter anguish weepe,  
And with her teares his wounds did wash  
and steepe.

So well she washt them, and so well she  
wacht him,

That of the deadly swound, in which full  
deepe

He drenched was, she at the length dis-  
pacht him,

And drove away the stound which mortally  
attacht him.

## XI

The morrow next, when day gan to up-  
looke,

He also gan uplooke with drery eye,  
Like one that out of deadly dreame awooke:  
Where when he saw his faire Priscilla by,  
He deeply sigh'd, and groaned inwardly,  
To thinke of this ill state in which she  
stood,

To which she for his sake had weetingly



Now brought her selfe, and blam'd her  
noble blood:  
For first, next after life, he tendered her  
good.

## XII

Which she perceiving, did with plenteous  
teares

His care more then her owne compassionate,  
Forgetfull of her owne, to minde his feares:  
So both conspiring, gan to intimate  
Each others grieve with zeale affectionate,  
And twixt them twaine with equall care to  
cast,

How to save hole her hazarded estate;  
For which the onely helpe now left them last  
Seem'd to be Calidore: all other helpes  
were past.

## XIII

Him they did deeme, as sure to them he  
seemed,

A courteous knight, and full of faithfull  
trust:

Therefore to him their cause they best  
esteemed

Whole to commit, and to his dealing just.  
Earely, so soone as Titans beames forth  
brust

Through the thicke clouds, in which they  
steeped lay

All night in darknesse, duld with yron rust,  
Calidore, rising up as fresh as day,  
Gan freshly him addresse unto his former  
way.

## XIV

But first him seemed fit, that wounded  
knight

To visite, after this nights perillous passe,  
And to salute him, if he were in plight,  
And eke that lady, his faire lovely lasse.  
There he him found much better then he  
was,

And moved speach to him of things of  
course,

The anguish of his paine to overpasse:  
Mongst which he namely did to him dis-  
course

Of former daies mishap, his sorrowes  
wicked sourse.

## XV

Of which occasion Aldine taking hold,  
Gan breake to him the fortunes of his love,

And all his disadvantages to unfold;  
That Calidore it dearly deepe did move.  
In th' end, his kyndly courtesie to prove,  
He him by all the bands of love besought,  
And as it mote a faithfull friend behove,  
To safeconduct his love, and not for ought  
To leave, till to her fathers house he had  
her brought.

## XVI

Sir Calidore his faith thereto did plight,  
It to performe: so after little stay,  
That she her selfe had to the journey dight,  
He passed forth with her in faire array,  
Fearelesse, who ought did thinke or ought  
did say,  
Sith his own thought he knew most cleare  
from wite.

So as they past together on their way,  
He can devise this counter-cast of slight,  
To give faire colour to that ladies cause in  
sight.

## XVII

Streight to the carkasse of that knight he  
went,

The cause of all this evill, who was slaine  
The day before by just avengement  
Of noble Tristram, where it did remaine:  
There he the necke thereof did cut in twaine,  
And tooke with him the head, the signe of  
shame.

So forth he passed thorough that daies paine,  
Till to that ladies fathers house he came,  
Most pensive man, through feare, what of  
his childe became.

## XVIII

There he arriving boldly, did present  
The fearefull lady to her father deare,  
Most perfect pure, and guiltlesse innocent  
Of blame, as he did on his knighthood sweare,  
Since first he saw her, and did free from  
feare

Of a discourteous knight, who her had reft,  
And by outrageous force away did beare:  
Witnesse thereof he shew'd his head there  
left,

And wretched life forlorne for vengeance  
of his theft.

## XIX

Most joyfull man her sire was, her to see,  
And heare th' adventure of her late mis-  
chance;

And thousand thanks to Calidore for fee  
Of his large paines in her deliveraunce  
Did yeeld; ne lesse the lady did advaunce.  
Thus having her restored trustily,  
As he had vow'd, some small continuaunce  
He there did make, and then most carefully  
Unto his first exploite he did him selfe apply.

## XX

So as he was pursuing of his quest,  
He chaunst to come whereas a jolly knight  
In covert shade him selfe did safely rest,  
To solace with his lady in delight:  
His warlike armes he had from him undight;  
For that him selfe he thought from daunger  
free,  
And far from envious eyes that mote him  
sight.  
And eke the lady was full faire to see,  
And courteous withall, becomming her de-  
gree.

## XXI

To whom Sir Calidore approaching nye,  
Ere they were well aware of living wight,  
Them much abasht, but more him selfe  
thereby,  
That he so rudely did upon them light,  
And troubled had their quiet loves delight.  
Yet since it was his fortune, not his fault,  
Him selfe thereof he labour'd to acquite,  
And pardon crav'd for his so rash default,  
That he gainst courtesie so fowly did de-  
fault.

## XXII

With which his gentle words and goodly wit  
He soone allayd that knights conceiv'd dis-  
pleasure,  
That he besought him downe by him to sit,  
That they mote treat of things abroad at  
leasure;  
And of adventures, which had in his mea-  
sure  
Of so long waies to him befallen late.  
So downe he sate, and with delightfull  
pleasure  
His long adventures gan to him relate,  
Which he endured had through daungerous  
debate.

## XXIII

Of which whilest they discoursed both to-  
gether,  
The faire Serena (so his lady hight)

Allur'd with myldnesse of the gentle wether,  
And pleasaunce of the place, the which was  
dight  
With divers flowres distinct with rare de-  
light,  
Wandred about the fields, as liking led  
Her wavering lust after her wandring sight,  
To make a garland to adorne her hed,  
Without suspect of ill or daungers hidden  
dred.

## XXIV

All sodainely out of the forrest nere  
The Blatant Beast forth rushing unaware,  
Caught her thus loosely wandring here and  
there,  
And in his wide great mouth away her bare,  
Crying aloud in vaine, to shew her sad mis-  
fare  
Unto the knights, and calling oft for ayde,  
Who with the horror of her haplesse care  
Hastily starting up, like men dismayde,  
Ran after fast to reskue the distressed  
mayde.

## XXV

The Beast, with their pursuit incited more,  
Into the wood was bearing her apace  
For to have spoyled her, when Calidore,  
Who was more light of foote and swift in  
chace,  
Him overtooke in middest of his race:  
And fiercely charging him with all his  
might,  
Forst to forgoe his pray there in the place,  
And to betake him selfe to fearefull flight;  
For he durst not abide with Calidore to  
fight.

## XXVI

Who nathelesse, when he the lady saw  
There left on ground, though in full evill  
plight,  
Yet knowing that her knight now neare did  
draw,  
Staide not to succour her in that affright,  
But follow'd fast the monster in his flight:  
Through woods and hils he follow'd him so  
fast,  
That he nould let him breath nor gather  
sprint,  
Butorst him gape and gaspe, with dread  
aghost,  
As if his lungs and lites were nigh a sunder  
brast.

## XXVII

And now by this, Sir Calepine (so hight)  
 Came to the place, where he his lady found  
 In dolorous dismay and deadly plight,  
 All in gore bloud there tumbled on the  
     ground,  
 Having both sides through grypt with  
     griesly wound.  
 His weapons soone from him he threw away,  
 And stouping downe to her in drery swound,  
 Uprear'd her from the ground, whereon she  
     lay,  
 And in his tender armes her forced up to  
     stay.

## XXVIII

So well he did his busie paines apply,  
 That the faint sprite he did revoke againe  
 To her fraile mansion of mortality.  
 Then up he tooke her twixt his armes twaine,  
 And setting on his steede, her did sustaine  
 With carefull hands, soft footing her be-  
     side,  
 Till to some place of rest they mote at-  
     taine,  
 Where she in safe assuraunce mote abide,  
 Till she recured were of those her woundes  
     wide.

## XXIX

Now when as Phœbus with his fiery waine  
 Unto his innue began to draw apace,  
 Tho, waxing weary of that toylesome paine,  
 In travelling on foote so long a space,  
 Not went on foote with heavy armes to  
     trace,  
 Downe in a dale forby a rivers syde,  
 He chaunst to spie a faire and stately place,  
 To which he meant his weary steps to  
     guyde,  
 In hope there for his love some succour to  
     provyde.

## XXX

But comming to the rivers side he found  
 That hardly passable on foote it was:  
 Therefore there still he stood as in a stound,  
 Ne wist which way he through the foord  
     mote pas.  
 Thus whilest he was in this distressed case,  
 Devising what to doe, he nigh espyde  
 An armed knight approaching to the place,  
 With a faire lady lincked by his syde,  
 The which themselves prepar'd thorough the  
     foord to ride.

## XXXI

Whom Calepine saluting (as became)  
 Besought of courtesie, in that his neede,  
 For safe conducting of his sickely dame  
 Through that same perillous foord with  
     better heede,  
 To take him up behinde upon his steed:  
 To whom that other did this taunt returne.  
 'Perdy, thou peasant knight, mightst  
     rightly reed  
 Me then to be full base and evill borne,  
 If I would beare behinde a burden of such  
     sorne.

## XXXII

'But as thou hast thy steed forlorne with  
     shame.  
 So fare on foote till thou another gayne,  
 And let thy lady likewise doe the same,  
 Or beare her on thy backe with pleasing  
     payne,  
 And prove thy manhood on the billowes  
     vayne.'  
 With which rude speach his lady much dis-  
     pleased,  
 Did him reprove, yet could him not re-  
     strayne,  
 And would on her owne palfrey him have  
     eased,  
 For pittie of his dame, whom she saw so  
     diseased.

## XXXIII

Sir Calepine her thauct, yet, inly wroth  
 Against her knight, her gentlenesse refused,  
 And carelesly into the river goth,  
 As in despight to be so fowle abused  
 Of a rude churle, whom often he accused  
 Of fowle discourtesie, unfit for knight;  
 And strongly wading through the waves  
     unused,  
 With speare in th' oue hand, stayd him  
     selfe upright,  
 With th' other staide his lady up with  
     steddy might.

## XXXIV

And all the while, that same discourteous  
     knight  
 Stood on the further baucke beholding him,  
 At whose calamity, for more despight,  
 He laught, and mockt to see him like to  
     swim.  
 But when as Calepine came to the brim,  
 And saw his carriage past that perill well,



Looking at that same carle with count'nance  
grim,  
His heart with vengeaunce inwardly did  
swell,  
And forth at last did breake in speaches  
sharpe and fell:

## XXXV

'Unknightly knight, the blemish of that  
name,  
And blot of all that armes upon them take,  
Which is the badge of honour and of fame,  
Loe ! I defie thee, and here challenge make,  
That thou for ever doe those armes forsake,  
And be for ever held a recreant knight,  
Unlesse thou dare for thy deare ladies sake,  
And for thine owne defence, on foote alight,  
To justifie thy fault gainst me in equall  
fight.'

## XXXVI

'The dastard, that did heare him selfe  
defyde,  
Seem'd not to weigh his threatfull words  
at all,  
But laught them out, as if his greater pryde  
Did scorne the challenge of so base a thrall:  
Or had no courage, or else had no gall.  
So much the more was Calepine offended,  
That him to no revenge he forth could call,  
But both his challenge and him selfe con-  
temned,  
Ne cared as a coward so to be condemned.

## XXXVII

But he, nought weighing what he sayd or  
did,  
Turned his steede about another way,  
And with his lady to the castle rid,  
Where was his won; ne did the other stay,  
But after went directly as he may,  
For his sicke charge some harbour there to  
seeke;  
Where he arriving with the fall of day,  
Drew to the gate, and there with prayers  
meeke,  
And myld entreaty, lodging did for her  
beseeke.

## XXXVIII

But the rude porter, that no manners had,  
Did shut the gate against him in his face,  
And entraunce boldly unto him forbad.  
Nathelless the knight, now in so needy case,  
Gan him entreat even with submission base,

And humbly praid to let them in that night:  
Who to him aunswer'd, that there was no  
place  
Of lodging fit for any errant knight,  
Unlesse that with his lord he formerly did  
fight.

## XXXIX

'Full loth am I,' quoth he, 'as now at earst,  
When day is spent, and rest us needeth most,  
And that this lady, both whose sides are  
pearst  
With wounds, is ready to forgo the ghost:  
Ne would I gladly combate with mine host,  
That should to me such curtesie afford,  
Unlesse that I were thereunto enforst.  
But yet aread to me, how hight thy lord,  
That doth thus strongly ward the castle of  
the ford.'

## XL

'His name,' quoth he, 'if that thou list to  
learne,  
Is hight Sir Turpine, one of mickle might  
And manhood rare, but terrible and stearne  
In all assaies to every errant knight,  
Because of one that wrought him fowle  
despight.'  
'Ill seemes,' sayd he, 'if he so valiaunt be,  
That he should be so sterne to stranger  
wight:  
For seldome yet did living creature see  
That curtesie and manhood ever disagree.

## XLI

'But go thy waies to him, and fro me say,  
That here is at his gate an errant knight,  
That house-rome craves, yet would be loth  
t' assay  
The prooffe of battell, now in doubtfull night,  
Or curtesie with rudenesse to requite:  
Yet if he needes will fight, crave leave till  
morne,  
And tell with all the lamentable plight  
In which this lady languisheth forlorne,  
That pittie craves, as he of woman was  
yborne.'

## XLII

The groome went streight way in, and to  
his lord  
Declar'd the message, which that knight  
did move;  
Who sitting with his lady then at bord,  
Not onely did not his demaund approve,

But both himselve revil'd, and eke his love;  
 Albe his lady, that Blandina hight,  
 Him of ungentle usage did reprove,  
 And earnestly entreated that they might  
 Finde favour to be lodged there for that  
 same night.

## XLIII

Yet would he not perswaded be for ought,  
 Ne from his currish will a whit reclame.  
 Which answer when the groome returning  
 brought  
 To Calepine, his heart did inly flame  
 With wrathfull fury for so foule a shame,  
 That he could not thereof avenged bee:  
 But most for pittie of his dearest dame,  
 Whom now in deadly daunger he did see;  
 Yet had no meanes to comfort, nor procure  
 her glee.

## XLIV

But all in vaine; forwhy no remedy  
 He saw, the present mischiefe to redresse,  
 But th' utmost end perforce for to aby,  
 Which that nights fortune would for him  
 addresse.  
 So downe he tooke his lady in distresse,  
 And layd her underneath a bush to sleepe,  
 Cover'd with cold, and wrapt in wretched-  
 nesse,  
 Whiles he him selfe all night did nought  
 but weepe,  
 And wary watch about her for her safegard  
 keepe.

## XLV

The morrow next, so soone as joyous day  
 Did shew it selfe in sunny beames bedight,  
 Serena full of dolorous dismay,  
 Twixt darknesse dread and hope of living  
 light,  
 Uprear'd her head to see that chearefull  
 sight.  
 Then Calepine, how ever inly wroth,  
 And greedy to avenge that vile despight,  
 Yet for the feeble ladies sake, full loth  
 To make there lenger stay, forth on his  
 journey goth.

## XLVI

He goth on foote all armed by her side,  
 Upstaying still her selfe upon her steede,  
 Being unable else alone to ride;  
 So sore her sides, so much her wounds did  
 bleede:

Till that at length, in his extreamest neede,  
 He chaunst far off an armed knight to spy,  
 Pursuing him apace with greedy speede,  
 Whom well he wist to be some enemy,  
 That meant to make advantage of his  
 misery.

## XLVII

Wherefore he stayd, till that he nearer  
 drew,  
 To weet what issue would thereof betyde:  
 Tho, whenas he approached nigh in vew,  
 By certaine signes he plainly him descryde  
 To be the man that with such scornefull  
 pryde  
 Had him abuse and shamed yesterday;  
 Therefore misdoubting, least he should  
 misguyde  
 His former malice to some new assay,  
 He cast to keepe him selfe so safely as he  
 may.

## XLVIII

By this the other came in place likewise,  
 And couching close his speare and all his  
 powre,  
 As bent to some malicious enterprise,  
 He bad him stand, t' abide the bitter stoure  
 Of his sore vengeance, or to make avoure  
 Of the lewd words and deedes which he  
 had done:  
 With that ran at him, as he would devoure  
 His life attonce; who nought could do, but  
 shun  
 The perill of his pride, or else be overrun.

## XLIX

Yet he him still pursew'd from place to  
 place,  
 With full intent him cruelly to kill,  
 And like a wilde goate round about did  
 chace,  
 Flying the fury of his bloody will.  
 But his best succour and refuge was still  
 Behinde his ladies backe, who to him cryde,  
 And called oft with prayers loud and shrill,  
 As ever he to lady was affyde,  
 To spare her knight, and rest with reason  
 pacifyde.

## L

But he the more thereby enraged was,  
 And with more eager felnesse him pursew'd,  
 So that at length, after long weary chace,  
 Having by chaunce a close advantage vew'd,

He over raught him, having long eschew'd  
His violence in vaine, and with his spere  
Strooke through his shoulder, that the blood  
    ensew'd

In great abundance, as a well it were,  
That forth out of an hill fresh gushing did  
    appere.

## LI

Yet ceast he not for all that cruell wound,  
But chaste him still, for all his ladies cry,  
Not satisfyde till on the fatall ground  
He saw his life powrd forth dispiteously:  
The which was certes in great jeopardy,  
Had not a wondrous chaunce his reskue  
    wrought,

And saved from his cruell villany:  
Such chaunces oft exceed all humaine  
    thought:  
That in another canto shall to end be  
    brought.

## CANTO IV

Calepine by a salvage man  
    From Turpine reskewed is;  
And whylest an infant from a beare  
    He saves, his love doth misse.

## I

LIKE as a ship with dreadfull storme long  
    tost,

Having spent all her mastes and her  
    ground-hold,

Now farre from harbour likely to be lost,  
At last some fisher barke doth neare be-  
    hold,

That giveth comfort to her courage cold:  
Such was the state of this most courteous  
    knight,

Being oppressed by that faytour bold,  
That he remayned in most perilous plight,  
And his sad ladie left in pitifull affright.

## II

Till that by fortune, passing all foresight,  
A salvage man, which in those woods did  
    wonne,

Drawne with that ladies loud and piteous  
    shright,

Toward the same incessantly did ronne,  
To understand what there was to be donne.  
There he this most discourteous craven  
    found,

As fiercely yet as when he first begonne

Chasing the gentle Calepine around,  
Ne sparing him the more for all his griev-  
    ous wound.

## III

The salvage man, that never till this houre  
Did taste of pittie, neither gentlesse knew,  
Seeing his sharpe assault and cruell stoure,  
Was much emmoved at his perils vew,  
That even his ruder hart began to rew,  
And feele compassion of his evill plight,  
Against his foe that did him so pursew:  
From whom he meant to free him, if he  
    might,

And him avenge of that so villenous de-  
    spight.

## IV

Yet armes or weapon had he none to fight,  
Ne knew the use of warlike instruments,  
Save such as sudden rage him lent to smite.  
But naked, without needfull vestiments  
To clad his corpe with meete habiliments,  
He cared not for dint of sword nor speere,  
No more then for the stroke of strawes or  
    bents:

For from his mothers wombe, which him  
    did beare,

He was invulnerable made by magicke  
    leare.

## V

He stayed not t' advize, which way were  
    best

His foe t' assayle, or how himselfe to gard,  
But with fierce fury and with force infest  
Upon him ran; who being well prepard,  
His first assault full warily did ward,  
And with the push of his sharp-pointed  
    speare

Full on the breast him strooke, so strong  
    and hard

That forst him backe recoyle, and reele  
    areare;

Yet in his bodie made no wound nor bloud  
    appere.

## VI

With that the wyld man more enraged  
    grew,

Like to a tygre that hath mist his pray,  
And with mad mood againe upon him  
    flew,

Regarding neither speare, that mote him  
    slay,



Nor his fierce steed, that mote him much  
dismay:

The salvage nation doth all dread despize.  
Tho on his shield he griple hold did lay,  
And held the same so hard, that by no wize  
He could him force to loose, or leave his  
enterprize.

## VII

Long did he wrest and wring it to and fro,  
And every way did try, but all in vaine:  
For he would not his greedie grype forgoe,  
But hayld and pld with all his might and  
maine,

That from his steed him nigh he drew  
againe.

Who having now no use of his long speare,  
So nigh at hand, nor force his shield to  
straine,

Both speare and shield, as things that need-  
lesse were,

He quite forsooke, and fled himselfe away  
for feare.

## VIII

But after him the wyld man ran apace,  
And him pursewed with importune speed,  
(For he was swift as any bucke in chace)  
And had he not in his extreamest need,  
Bene helped through the swiftnesse of his  
steed,

He had him overtaken in his flight.

Who ever, as he saw him nigh succeed,  
Gan cry aloud with horrible affright,  
And shrieked out, a thing uncomely for a  
knight.

## IX

But when the salvage saw his labour vaine,  
In following of him that fled so fast,  
He wearie woxe, and backe return'd againe  
With speede unto the place whereas he last  
Had left that comple, nere their utmost  
cast.

There he that knight full sorely bleeding  
found,

And eke the ladie fearefully aghast,  
Both for the perill of the present stound,  
And also for the sharpnesse of her rank-  
ling wound.

## X

For though she were right glad, so rid to bee  
From that vile lozell which her late of-  
fended,

Yet now no lesse encombrance she did see,  
And perill, by this salvage man pretended;  
Gainst whom she saw no meanes to be de-  
fended,

By reason that her knight was wounded  
sore.

Therefore her selfe she wholly recom-  
mended

To Gods sole grace, whom she did oft im-  
plore

To send her succour, being of all hope for-  
lore.

## XI

But the wyld man, contrarie to her feare,  
Came to her creeping like a fawning hound,  
And by rude tokens made to her appeare  
His deepe compassion of her dolefull stound,  
Kissing his hands, and crouching to the  
ground;

For other language had he none, nor speach,  
But a soft murmure, and confused sound  
Of senselesse words, which Nature did him  
teach,

T' expresse his passions, which his reason  
did impeach.

## XII

And comming likewise to the wounded  
knight,

When he beheld the streames of purple  
blood

Yet flowing fresh, as moved with the sight,  
He made great mone after his salvage  
mood,

And running streight into the thickest wood,  
A certaine herbe from thence unto him  
brought,

Whose vertue he by use well understood:  
The juyce whereof into his wound he  
wrought,

And stopt the bleeding straight, ere he it  
staunched thought.

## XIII

Then taking up that recreants shield and  
speare,

Which earst he left, he signes unto them  
made,

With him to wend unto his wonning neare:  
To which he easily did them perswade.

Farre in the Forrest, by a hollow glade,  
Covered with mossie shrubs, which spread-  
ding brode

Did underneath them make a gloomy shade;

Where foot of living creature never trode,  
Ne scarse wyld beasts durst come, there  
was this wights abode.

## XIV

Thether he brought these unacquainted  
guests;  
To whom faire semblance, as he could, he  
shewed  
By signes, by lookes, and all his other  
gests.  
But the bare ground, with hoarie mosse be-  
strowed,  
Must be their bed, their pillow was unsowed,  
And the frutes of the forrest was their  
feast:  
For their bad stuard ueither plough'd nor  
sowed,  
Ne fed on flesh, ne ever of wyld beast  
Did taste the bloud, obaying Natures first  
beheast.

## XV

Yet howsoever base and meane it were,  
They tooke it well, and thanked God for  
all,  
Which had them freed from that deadly  
feare,  
And sav'd from being to that caytive thrall.  
Here they of force (as fortune now did fall)  
Compelled were themselves a while to rest,  
Glad of that easement, though it were but  
small;  
That having there their wounds awhile re-  
drest,  
They mote the abler be to passe unto the  
rest.

## XVI

During which time, that wyld man did apply  
His best endeavour and his daily paine,  
In seeking all the woods both farre and nye  
For herbes to dresse their wounds; still  
seeming faine,  
When ought he did that did their lyking  
gaue.  
So as ere long he had that knightes wound  
Recured well, and made him whole againe:  
But that same ladies hurt no herbe he found  
Which could redresse, for it was inwardly  
unsound.

## XVII

Now when as Calepine was woxen strong,  
Upon a day he cast abroad to wend,

To take the ayre and heare the thrushes  
song,  
Unarm'd, as fearing ueither foe nor frend,  
And without sword his person to defend.  
There him befell, unlooked for before,  
An hard adventure with unhappie end,  
A cruell beare, the which an infant bore  
Betwixt his bloodie jawes, besprinkled all  
with gore.

## XVIII

The litle babe did loudly srike and squall,  
And all the woods with piteous plaints did  
fill,  
As if his cry did meane for helpe to call  
To Calepine, whose eares those shrieches  
shrill,  
Percing his hart, with pities point did thrill;  
That after him he ran with zealous haste,  
To rescue th' infant, ere he did him kill:  
Whom though he saw now somewhat over-  
past,  
Yet by the cry he follow'd, and pursewed  
fast.

## XIX

Well then him chaunst his heavy armes to  
waut,  
Whose burden mote empeach his needfull  
speed,  
And hinder him from libertie to pant:  
For having long time, as his daily weed,  
Them wont to weare, and wend on foot for  
need,  
Now wanting them he felt himselfe so light,  
That like an hauke, which feeling her selfe  
freed  
From bels and jesses, which did let her flight,  
Him seem'd his feet did fly, and in their  
speed delight.

## XX

So well he sped him, that the wearie beare  
Ere long he overtooke, and forst to stay,  
And without weapon him assayling neare,  
Compeld him soone the spoyle adowne to  
lay.  
Wherewith the beast, enrag'd to loose his  
pray,  
Upon him turned, and with greedie force  
And furie, to be crossed in his way,  
Gaping full wyde, did thinke without re-  
morse  
To be aveng'd on him, and to deuoure hi  
corse.

## XXI

But the bold knight, no whit thereat dismayd,  
 But catching up in hand a ragged stone,  
 Which lay thereby (so Fortune him did ayde)  
 Upon him ran, and thrust it all attone  
 Into his gaping throte, that made him grone  
 And gaspe for breath, that he nigh choked  
 was,  
 Being unable to digest that bone;  
 Ne could it upward come, nor downward  
 passe,  
 Ne could he brooke the coldnesse of the  
 stony masse.

## XXII

Whom when as he thus combred did behold,  
 Stryving in vaine that nigh his bowels brast,  
 He with him closd, and laying mightie hold  
 Upon his throte, did gripe his gorge so fast,  
 That, wanting breath, him downe to ground  
 he cast;  
 And then oppressing him with urgent paine,  
 Ere long enforst to breath his utmost blast,  
 Gnashing his cruell teeth at him in vaine,  
 And threatning his sharpe clawes, now  
 wanting powre to straine.

## XXIII

Then tooke he up betwixt his armes twaine  
 The litle babe, sweet relickes of his pray;  
 Whom pitying to heare so sore complaine,  
 From his soft eyes the teares he wypt away,  
 And from his face the filth that did it ray,  
 And every litle limbe he searcht around,  
 And every part that under sweathbands lay,  
 Least that the beasts sharpe teeth had any  
 wound  
 Made in his tender flesh; but whole them all  
 he found.

## XXIV

So having all his bands againe uptyde,  
 He with him thought backe to returne  
 againe:  
 But when he lookt about on every syde,  
 To weet which way were best to entertaine,  
 To bring him to the place where he would  
 faine,  
 He could no path nor tract of foot descry,  
 Ne by inquirie learne, nor ghesse by ayme;  
 For nought but woods and forrests farre  
 and nye,  
 That all about did close the compasse of his  
 eye.

## XXV

Much was he then encombred, ne could  
 tell  
 Which way to take: now west he went a  
 while,  
 Then north; then neither, but as fortune  
 fell.  
 So up and downe he wandred many a mile,  
 With wearie travell and uncertaine toile,  
 Yet nought the nearer to his journeyes end;  
 And evermore his lovely litle spoile  
 Crying for food did greatly him offend.  
 So all that day in wandring vainely he did  
 spend.

## XXVI

At last, about the setting of the sunne,  
 Him selfe out of the forest he did wynd,  
 And by good fortune the plaine champion  
 wonne:  
 Where looking all about, where he mote fynd  
 Some place of succour to content his mynd,  
 At length he heard under the forrests syde  
 A voice, that seemed of some woman kynd  
 Which to her selfe lamenting loudly cryde,  
 And oft complayn'd of Fate, and Fortune  
 oft defyde.

## XXVII

To whom approching, when as she perceived  
 A stranger wight in place, her plaint she  
 stayd,  
 As if she doubted to have bene deceived,  
 Or loth to let her sorrowes be bewrayd.  
 Whom when as Calepine saw so dismayd,  
 He to her drew, and with faire blandish-  
 ment  
 Her chearing up, thus gently to her sayd:  
 'What be you, wofull dame, which thus  
 lament?  
 And for what cause declare, so mote ye not  
 repent.'

## XXVIII

To whom she thus: 'What need me, sir, to  
 tell  
 That which your selfe have earst arcd so  
 right?  
 A wofull dame ye have me termed well;  
 So much more wofull, as my wofull plight  
 Cannot redressed be by living wight.'  
 'Nathlesse,' quoth he, 'if need doe not you  
 bynd,  
 Doe it disclose, to ease your grieved spright:



Oftimes it haps, that sorrowes of the mynd  
Find remedie unsought, which seeking can-  
not fynd.'

## XXIX

Then thus began the lamentable dame:  
'Sith then ye needs will know the grieve I  
hoord,  
I am th' unfortunate Matilde by name,  
The wife of bold Sir Bruin, who is lord  
Of all this land, late conquer'd by his sword  
From a great gyant, called Cornoraunt;  
Whom he did overthrow by yonder foord,  
And in three battailes did so deadly daunt,  
That he dare not returne for all his daily  
vaunt.

## XXX

'So is my lord now seiz'd of all the land,  
As in his fee, with peaceable estate,  
And quietly doth hold it in his hand,  
Ne any dares with him for it debate.  
But to these happie fortunes cruell fate  
Hath joyn'd one evill, which doth overthrow  
All these our joyes, and all our blisse abate;  
And like in time to further ill to grow,  
And all this land with endlesse losse to over-  
flow.

## XXXI

'For th' heavens, envying our prosperitie,  
Have not vouchsaft to graunt unto us twaine  
The gladfull blessing of posteritie,  
Which we might see after our selves re-  
maine

In th' heritage of our unhappie paine:  
So that for want of heires it to defend,  
All is in time like to returne againe  
To that foule feend, who dayly doth attend  
To leape into the same after our lives end.

## XXXII

'But most my lord is grieved herewithall,  
And makes exceeding mone, when he does  
thinke

That all this land unto his foe shall fall,  
For which he long in vaine did sweat and  
swinke,

That now the same he greatly doth for-  
thinke.

Yet was it sayd, there should to him a sonne  
*Be gotten, not begotten*, which should drinke  
And dry up all the water which doth ronne  
In the next brooke, by whom that feend  
shold be fordonne.

## XXXIII

'Well hop't he then, when this was prophe-  
side,

That from his sides some noble chyld should  
rize,

The which through fame should farre be  
magnifide,

And this proud gyant should with brave  
emprize

Quite overthrow, who now ginnes to de-  
spize

The good Sir Bruin, growing farre in yeares;  
Who thinkes from me his sorrow all doth  
rize.

Lo! this my cause of grieve to you ap-  
peares;

For which I thus doe mourne, and poure  
forth ceaselesse teares.'

## XXXIV

Which when he heard, he inly touched was  
With tender ruth for her unworthy grieve,  
And when he had devized of her case,  
He gan in mind conceive a fit reliefe  
For all her paine, if please her make the  
prieife.

And having cheared her, thus said: 'Faire  
dame,

In evils counsell is the comfort chiefe;  
Which though I be not wise enough to  
frame,

Yet, as I well it meane, vouchsafe it with-  
out blame.

## XXXV

'If that the cause of this your languish-  
ment

Be lacke of children to supply your place,  
Lo! how good fortune doth to you present

This litle babe, of sweete and lovely face,  
And spotlesse spirit, in which ye may en-  
chace

What ever formes ye list thereto apply,  
Being now soft and fit them to embrace;  
Whether ye list him traine in chevalry,  
Or noursle up in lore of learn'd philosophy.

## XXXVI

'And certes it hath oftentimes bene seene,  
That of the like, whose linage was un-  
knowne,

More brave and noble knights have rayseed  
beene,

As their victorious deedes have often  
showne,

Being with fame through many nations  
blowen,  
Then those which have bene daudled in the  
lap.  
Therefore some thought that those brave  
imps were sowen  
Here by the gods, and fed with heavenly sap,  
That made them grow so high t' all honor-  
able hap.'

## XXXVII

The ladie, hearkning to his sensefull speach,  
Found nothing that he said unmeet nor  
geason,

Having oft seene it tryde, as he did teach.  
Therefore inclyning to his goodly reason,  
Agreeing well both with the place and sea-  
son,

She gladly did of that same babe accept,  
As of her owne by liverey and seisin,  
And having over it a litle wept,  
She bore it thence, and ever as her owne it  
kept.

## XXXVIII

Right glad was Calepine to be so rid  
Of his young charge, whereof he skilled  
nought:

Ne she lesse glad; for she so wisely did,  
And with her husband under hand so  
wrought,

That when that infant unto him she brought,  
She made him thinke it surely was his owne,  
And it in goodly thewes so well upbrought,  
That it became a famous knight well knowne,  
And did right noble deedes; the which els-  
where are showne.

## XXXIX

But Calepine now being left alone  
Under the greenewoods side in sorie plight,  
Withouten armes or steede to ride upon,  
Or house to hide his head from heavens  
spight,

Albe that dame, by all the meanes she might,  
Him oft desired home with her to wend,  
And offred him, his courtesie to requite,  
Both horse and armes, and what so else to  
lend,

Yet he them all refusd, though thankd her  
as a frend;

## XL

And for exceeding grieve which inly grew,  
That he his love so lucklesse now had lost,

On the cold ground, maugre, himselfe he  
threw,  
For fell despight, to be so sorely crost;  
And there all night himselfe in anguish tost,  
Vowing that never he in bed againe  
His limbes would rest, ne lig in ease em-  
bost,  
Till that his ladies sight he mote attaine,  
Or understand that she in safetie did re-  
maine.

## CANTO V

The salvage serves Serena well  
Till she Prince Arthure fynd;  
Who her together with his squyre  
With th' hermit leaves behynd.

## I

O WHAT an easie thing is to desery  
The gentle blood, how ever it be wrapt  
In sad misfortunes foule deformity,  
And wretched sorrowes, which have often  
hapt!

For howsoever it may grow mis-shapt,  
Like this wyld man, being undisciplynd,  
That to all vertue it may seeme unapt,  
Yet will it shew some sparkes of gentle  
mynd,  
And at the last breake forth in his owne  
proper kynd.

## II

That plainely may in this wyld man be red,  
Who, though he were still in this desert  
wood,  
Mongst salvage beasts, both rudely borne  
and bred,

Ne ever saw faire guize, ne learned good,  
Yet shewd some token of his gentle blood  
By gentle usage of that wretched dame.  
For certes he was borne of noble blood,  
How ever by hard hap he hether came;  
As ye may know, when time shall be to tell  
the same.

## III

Who, when as now long time he lacked had  
The good Sir Calepine, that farre was  
strayd,

Did wexe exceeding sorrowfull and sad,  
As he of some misfortune were afraid:  
And leaving there this ladie all dismayd,  
Went forth streightway into the forrest  
wyde,

To seeke if he perchance a sleepe were layd,  
Or what so else were unto him betyde:  
He sought him farre and neare, yet him no  
where he spyde.

## IV

Tho, backe returning to that sorie dame,  
He shewed semblant of exceeding mone,  
By speaking signes, as he them best could  
frame;

Now wringing both his wretched hands in  
one,

Now beating his hard head upon a stone,  
That ruth it was to see him so lament.  
By which she well perceiving what was  
done,

Gan teare her hayre, and all her garments  
rent,

And beat her breast, and piteously her selfe  
torment.

## V

Upon the ground her selfe she fiercely  
threw,

Regardlesse of her wounds, yet bleeding  
rife,

That with their bloud did all the flore im-  
brew,

As if her breast new launcht with murd-  
rous knife

Would streight dislodge the wretched  
wearie life.

There she long groveling and deepe gron-  
ing lay,

As if her vitall powers were at strife  
With stronger death, and feared their de-  
cay:

Such were this ladies pangs and dolorous  
assay.

## VI

Whom when the salvage saw so sore dis-  
trest,

He reared her up from the bloudie ground,  
And sought, by all the meanes that he  
could best,

Her to recure out of that stony swound,  
And staunch the bleeding of her dreary  
wound.

Yet nould she be recomforted for nought,  
Ne cease her sorrow and impatient stound,  
But day and night did vexe her carefull  
thought,

And ever more and more her owne afflic-  
tion wrought.

## VII

At length, when as no hope of his retourne  
She saw now left, she cast to leave the  
place,

And wend abroad, though feeble and for-  
lorne,

To seeke some comfort in that sorie case.  
His steede, now strong through rest so long  
a space,

Well as she could, she got, and did bedight,  
And being thereon mounted, forth did  
pace,

Withouten guide, her to conduct aright,  
Or gard, her to defend from bold oppres-  
sors might.

## VIII

Whom when her host saw readie to de-  
part,

He would not suffer her alone to fare,  
But gan himselfe addresse to take her part.

Those warlike armes, which Calepine whyl-  
eare

Had left behind, he gan eftsoones prepare,  
And put them all about himselfe unfit,

His shield, his helmet, and his curats bare;  
But without sword upon his thigh to sit:

Sir Calepine himselfe away had hidden it.

## IX

So forth they traveld, an uneven payre,  
That mote to all men seeme an uncouth  
sight;

A salvage man matcht with a ladie fayre,  
That rather seem'd the conquest of his  
might,

Gotten by spoyle, then purchaced aright.  
But he did her attend most carefully,

And faithfully did serve both day and  
night,

Withouten thought of shame or villeny,  
Ne ever shewed signe of foule disloyalty.

## X

Upon a day, as on their way they went,  
It chaunst some furniture about her steed  
To be disordred by some accident:

Which to redresse, she did th' assistance  
need

Of this her groome, which he by signes did  
reede,

And streight his combrous armes aside did  
lay

Upon the ground, withouten doubt or  
dreed,



And in his homely wize began to assay  
T' amend what was amisse, and put in right  
array.

## XI

Bout which whilest he was busied thus  
hard,  
Lo where a knight together with his squire,  
All arm'd to point, came ryding thether-  
ward,  
Which seemed by their portance and attire,  
To be two errant knights, that did inquire  
After adventures, where they mote them  
get.  
Those were to wect (if that ye it require)  
Prince Arthur and young Timias, which  
met  
By straunge occasion, that here needs forth  
be set.

## XII

After that Timias had againe recured  
The favour of Belphebe, (as ye heard)  
And of her grace did stand againe assured,  
To happie blisse he was full high uprear'd,  
Nether of envy nor of chaunge afeard,  
Though many foes did him maligne there-  
fore,  
And with unjust detraction him did beard;  
Yet he himselfe so well and wisely bore,  
That in her souveraine lyking he dwelt ever-  
more.

## XIII

But of them all which did his ruine seeke,  
Three mightie enemies did him most de-  
spight,  
Three mightie ones, and cruell minded eeke,  
That him not onely sought by open might  
To overthrow, but to supplant by slight.  
The first of them by name was cald De-  
spetto,  
Exceeding all the rest in powre and hight;  
The second, not so strong, but wise, De-  
cetto;  
The third, nor strong nor wise, but spight-  
fullest, Defetto.

## XIV

Oftimes their sundry powres they did em-  
ploy,  
And severall deceipts, but all in vaine:  
For neither they by force could him de-  
stroy,  
Ne yet entrap in treasons subtile traine.

Therefore conspiring all together plaine,  
They did their counsels now in one com-  
pound;  
Where singled forces faile, conjoynd may  
gaine.  
The Blatant Beast the fittest meanes they  
found,  
To worke his utter shame, and throughly  
him confound.

## XV

Upon a day, as they the time did waite,  
When he did raunge the wood for salvage  
game,  
They sent that Blatant Beast to be a baite,  
To draw him from his deare beloved dame  
Unwares into the daunger of defame.  
For well they wist that squire to be so  
bold,  
That no one beast in forrest, wylde or tame,  
Met him in chase, but he it challenge would,  
And plucke the pray oftymes out of their  
greedy hould.

## XVI

The hardy boy, as they devised had,  
Seeing the ugly monster passing by,  
Upon him set, of perill nought adrad,  
Ne skilfull of the uncouth jeopardy;  
And charged him so fierce and furiously,  
That, his great force unable to endure,  
He forced was to turne from him and fly:  
Yet, ere he fled, he with his tooth impure  
Him heedlesse bit, the whiles he was thereof  
secure.

## XVII

Securely he did after him pursew,  
Thinking by speed to overtake his flight;  
Who through thicke woods and brakes and  
briers him drew,  
To weary him the more, and waste his  
spight,  
So that he now has almost spent his spright:  
Till that at length unto a woody glade  
He came, whose covert stopt his further  
sight;  
There his three foes, shrowded in guilefull  
shade,  
Out of their ambush broke, and gan him to  
invade.

## XVIII

Sharpely they all attonce did him assaile,  
Burning with inward rancour and despight,

And heaped strokes did round about him  
haile  
With so huge force, that seemed nothing  
might  
Beare off their blowes from percing  
thorough quite.  
Yet he them all so warily did ward,  
That none of them in his soft flesh did bite,  
And all the while his backe for best safe-  
gard  
He lent against a tree, that backward on-  
set bard.

## XIX

Like a wylde bull, that, being at a bay,  
Is bayted of a mastiffe and a hound  
And a curre-dog, that doe him sharpe as-  
say  
On every side, and beat about him round;  
But most that curre, barking with bitter  
sownd,  
And creeping still behinde, doth him in-  
comber,  
That in his chauffe he digs the trampled  
ground,  
And threats his horns, and bellowes like  
the thonder:  
So did that squire his foes disperse and  
drive asonder.

## XX

Him well behaved so; for his three foes  
Sought to encompass him on every side,  
And dangerously did round about enclose.  
But most of all Defetto him annoyde,  
Creeping behinde him still to have de-  
stroyde;  
So did Decetto eke him circumvent;  
But stout Despetto, in his greater pryde,  
Did front him face to face against him  
bent:  
Yet he them all withstood, and often made  
relent.

## XXI

Till that at length, nigh tyrd with former  
chace,  
And weary now with carefull keeping ward,  
He gan to shrinke, and somewhat to give  
place,  
Full like ere long to have escaped hard;  
When as unwares he in the forrest heard  
A trampling steede, that with his neighing  
fast  
Did warne his rider be uppon his gard;

With noise whereof the squire, now nigh  
aghast,  
Revived was, and sad dispaire away did  
cast.

## XXII

Eftsoones he spide a knight approching nye,  
Who, seeing one in so great daunger set  
Mongst many foes, him selfe did faster hye,  
To reskue him, and his weake part abet,  
For pitty so to see him overset.  
Whom soone as his three enemies did vew,  
They fled, and fast into the wood did get:  
Him bootied not to thinke them to pursew,  
The covert was so thicke, that did no pas-  
sage shew.

## XXIII

Then turning to that swaine, him well he  
knew  
To be his Timias, his owne true squire:  
Whereof exceeding glad, he to him drew,  
And him embracing twixt his armes entire,  
Him thus bespake: 'My lief, my lifes  
desire,  
Why have ye me alone thus long yleft?  
Tell me, what worlds despight, or heavens  
yre,  
Hath you thus long away from me bereft?  
Where have ye all this while bin wandring,  
where bene weft?'

## XXIV

With that he sighed deepe for inward tyne:  
To whom the squire nought aunswered  
again,  
But shedding few soft teares from tender  
eyne,  
His deare affect with silence did restraine,  
And shut up all his plaint in privy paine.  
There they awhile some gracious speaches  
spent,  
As to them seemed fit time to entertaine.  
After all which up to their steedes they  
went,  
And forth together rode, a comely couple-  
ment.

## XXV

So now they be arrived both in sight  
Of this wyld man, whom they full busie  
found  
About the sad Serena things to dight,  
With those brave armours lying on the  
ground,

That seem'd the spoile of some right well  
renownd.  
Which when that squire beheld, he to them  
stept,  
Thinking to take them from that hylding  
hound:  
But he it seeing, lightly to him leapt,  
And sternely with strong hand it from his  
handling kept.

## XXVI

Gnashing his grinded teeth with griesly  
looke,  
And sparkling fire out of his furious eyne,  
Him with his fist unwares on th' head he  
strooke,  
That made him downe unto the earth en-  
cline;  
Whence soone upstarting, much he gan re-  
pine,  
And laying hand upon his wrathfull blade,  
Thought therewithall forthwith him to have  
slaine;  
Who it perceiving, hand upon him layd,  
And greedily him griping, his avengement  
stayd.

## XXVII

With that aloude the faire Serena cryde  
Unto the knight, them to dispart in twaine:  
Who to them stepping did them soone  
divide,  
And did from further violence restraine,  
Albe the wyld-man hardly would refraine.  
Then gan the Prince of her for to de-  
mand,  
What and from whence she was, and by what  
traine  
She feil into that salvage villaines hand,  
And whether free with him she now were,  
or in band.

## XXVIII

To whom she thus: 'I am, as now ye see,  
The wretchedst dame, that live this day on  
ground,  
Who both in minde, the which most grieveth  
me,  
And body have receiv'd a mortall wound,  
That hath me driven to this dreary stound.  
I was erewhile the love of Calepine,  
Who whether he alive be to be found,  
Or by some deadly chaunce be done to  
pine,  
Since I him lately lost, uneath is to define.

## XXIX

'In salvage forrest I him lost of late,  
Where I had surely long ere this bene dead,  
Or else remained in most wretched state,  
Had not this wyld man in that wofull stead  
Kept and delivered me from deadly dread.  
In such a salvage wight, of brutish kynd,  
Amongst wilde beastes in desert Forrests  
bred,  
It is most straunge and wonderfull to fynd  
So milde humanity and perfect gentle mynd.

## XXX

'Let me therefore this favour for him finde,  
That ye will not your wrath upon him  
wreake,  
Sith he cannot expresse his simple minde,  
Ne yours conceive, ne but by tokens speake:  
Small praise to prove your powre on wight  
so weake.'  
With such faire words she did their heate  
asswage,  
And the strong course of their displeasure  
breake,  
That they to pittty turnd their former rage,  
And each sought to supply the office of her  
page.

## XXXI

So having all things well about her dight,  
She on her way cast forward to proceede,  
And they her forth conducted, where they  
might  
Finde harbour fit to comfort her great  
neede.  
For now her wounds corruption gan to breed;  
And eke this squire, who likewise wounded  
was  
Of that same monster late, for lacke of  
heed,  
Now gan to faint, and further could not pas  
Through feeblennesse, which all his limbes  
oppressed has.

## XXXII

So forth they rode together all in troupe,  
To seeke some place, the which mote yeeld  
some ease  
To these sicke twaine, that now began to  
droupe:  
And all the way the Prince sought to ap-  
pease  
The bitter anguish of their sharpe disease,  
By all the courteous meanes he could in-  
vent;



Somewhile with merry purpose fit to please,  
And otherwhile with good encouragement,  
To make them to endure the pains did them  
torment.

## XXXIII

Mongst which, Serena did to him relate  
The foule discour'tsies and unknightly  
parts,  
Which Turpine had unto her shewed late,  
Without compassion of her cruell smarts,  
Although Blandina did with all her arts  
Him otherwise perswade, all that she  
might;  
Yet he of malice, without her desarts,  
Not onely her excluded late at night,  
But also trayterously did wound her weary  
knight.

## XXXIV

Wherewith the Prince sore moved, there  
avoud  
That, soone as he returned backe againe,  
He would avenge th' abuses of that proud  
And shamefull knight, of whom she did  
complane.  
This wize did they each other entertaine,  
To passe the tedious travell of the way;  
Till towards night they came unto a plaine,  
By which a little hermitage there lay,  
Far from all neighbourhood, the which  
annoy it may.

## XXXV

And nigh thereto a little chappell stode,  
Which being all with yvy overspred,  
Deckt all the rooffe and shadowing the roode,  
Seem'd like a grove faire braunched over  
hed:  
Therein the hermite, which his life here led  
In streight observaunce of religious vow,  
Was wont his howres and holy things to  
bed;  
And therein he likewise was praying now,  
Whenas these knights arriv'd, they wist not  
where nor how.

## XXXVI

They stayd not there, but streight way in  
did pas.  
Whom when the hermite present saw in  
place,  
From his devotion streight he troubled was;  
Which breaking of, he toward them did  
pace,

With stayed steps and grave beseeching  
grace:

For well it seem'd that whilome he had  
beene

Some goodly person, and of gentle race,  
That could his good to all, and well did  
weene,

How each to entertaine with curt'sie well  
beseene.

## XXXVII

And soothly it was said by common fame,  
So long as age enabled him thereto,  
That he had bene a man of mickle name,  
Renowned much in armes and derring doe:  
But being aged now and weary to  
Of warres delight and worlds contentious  
toyle,

The name of knighthood he did disavow,  
And hanging up his armes and warlike  
spoyl,

From all this worlds incombraunce did  
himselke assoyle.

## XXXVIII

He thence them led into his hermitage,  
Letting their steedes to graze upon the  
greene:

Small was his house, and like a little cage,  
For his owne turne, yet inly neate and  
clene,

Deckt with greene boughes and flowers gay  
beseene.

Therein he them full faire did entertaine,  
Not with such forged showes, as fitter  
beene

For courting fooles, that curtesies would  
faine,

But with entire affection and appearaunce  
plaine.

## XXXIX

Yet was their fare but homely, such as hee  
Did use his feeble body to sustaine;

The which full gladly they did take in gree,  
Such as it was, ne did of want complaine,  
But being well suffiz'd, them rested faine.

But faire Serene all night could take no  
rest,

Ne yet that gentle squire, for grievous  
paine

Of their late woundes, the which the Blat-  
ant Beast

Had given them, whose grieve through suf-  
fraunce sore increast.

## XL

So all that night they past in great disease,  
 Till that the morning, bringing carely light  
 To guide mens labours, brought them also  
 ease,  
 And some asswagement of their painefull  
 plight.  
 Then up they rose, and gan them selves to  
 dight  
 Unto their journey; but that squire and  
 dame  
 So faint and feeble were, that they ne  
 might  
 Endure to travell, nor one foote to frame:  
 Their hearts were sicke, their sides were  
 sore, their feete were lame.

## XLI

Therefore the Prince, whom great affaires  
 in mynd  
 Would not permit to make there lenger  
 stay,  
 Was forced there to leave them both be-  
 hynd,  
 In that good hermits charge, whom he did  
 pray  
 To tend them well. So forth he went his  
 way,  
 And with him eke the salvage, that whyl-  
 eare,  
 Seeing his royall usage and array,  
 Was greatly growne in love of that brave  
 pere,  
 Would needes depart, as shall declared be  
 elsewhere.

## CANTO VI

The hermite heales both squire and dame  
 Of their sore maladies;  
 He Turpine doth defeate, and shame  
 For his late villanies.

## I

No wound, which warlike hand of enemy  
 Inflicts with dint of sword, so sore doth light  
 As doth the poysnous sting, which infamy  
 Infixeth in the name of noble wight:  
 For by no art, nor any leaches might,  
 It ever can recured be againe;  
 Ne all the skill, which that immortall  
 spright  
 Of Podalyrius did in it retaine,  
 Can remedy such hurts; such hurts are  
 hellish paine.

## II

Such were the wounds the which that Blat-  
 ant Beast  
 Made in the bodies of that squire and  
 dame;  
 And being such, were now much more in-  
 creast,  
 For want of taking heede unto the same,  
 That now corrupt and curelesse they be-  
 came.  
 Howbe that carefull hermite did his best,  
 With many kindes of medicines meete, to  
 tame  
 The poysnous humour, which did most infest  
 Their ranckling wounds, and every day them  
 duely drest.

## III

For he right well in leaches craft was seene,  
 And through the long experience of his  
 dayes,  
 Which had in many fortunes tossed beene,  
 And past through many perillous assayes,  
 He knew the diverse went of mortall wayes,  
 And in the miudes of men had great insight;  
 Which with sage counsell, when they went  
 astray,  
 He could enforme, and them reduce aright,  
 And al the passions heale, which wound the  
 weaker spright.

## IV

For whylome he had bene a doughty  
 knight,  
 As any one that lived in his daies,  
 And proved oft in many perillous fight,  
 Of which he grace and glory wonne al-  
 waies,  
 And in all battels bore away the baies.  
 But being now attacht with timely age,  
 And weary of this worlds unquiet waies,  
 He tooke him selfe unto this hermitage,  
 In which he liv'd alone, like carelesse bird  
 in cage.

## V

One day, as he was searching of their  
 wounds,  
 He found that they had festred privily,  
 And ranckling inward with unruly stounds,  
 The inner parts now gan to putrify,  
 That quite they seem'd past helpe of sur-  
 gery,  
 And rather needed to be disciplinde  
 With holesome reede of sad sobriety,

To rule the stubborne rage of passion  
 blinde:  
 Give salves to every sore, but counsell to  
 the minde.

## VI

So taking them apart into his cell,  
 He to that point fit speeches gan to frame,  
 As he the art of words knew wondrous  
 well,  
 And eke could doe, as well as say, the  
 same,  
 And thus he to them sayd: 'Faire daugh-  
 ter dame,  
 And you, faire sonne, which here thus long  
 now lie  
 In piteous languor, since ye hither came,  
 In vaine of me ye hope for remedie,  
 And I likewise in vaine doe salves to you  
 applie.

## VII

'For in your selfe your onely helpe doth lie,  
 To heale your selves, and must proceed  
 alone  
 From your owne will to cure your maladie.  
 Who can him cure, that will be cur'd of  
 none?  
 If therefore health ye seeke, observe this  
 one.  
 First learne your outward sences to refraine  
 From things that stirre up fraile affection;  
 Your eies, your eares, your tongue, your  
 talke restraine  
 From that they most affect, and in due  
 termes containe.

## VIII

'For from those outward sences, ill affected,  
 The seede of all this evill first doth spring,  
 Which at the first, before it had infected,  
 Mote easie be suppress with little thing:  
 But being growen strong, it forth doth  
 bring  
 Sorrow, and anguish, and impatient paine  
 In th' inner parts, and lastly, scattering  
 Contagious poyson close through every  
 vaine,  
 It never rests, till it have wrought his finall  
 bane.

## IX

'For that beastes teeth, which wounded you  
 tofore,  
 Are so exceeding venemous and keene,

Made all of rusty yron, ranckling sore,  
 That where they bite, it booteth not to  
 weene  
 With salve, or antidote, or other mene,  
 It ever to amend: ne marvaile ought;  
 For that same beast was bred of hellish  
 strene,  
 And long in darksome Stygian den up-  
 brought,  
 Begot of foule Echidna, as in bookes is  
 taught.

## X

'Echidna is a monster direfull dred,  
 Whom gods doe hate, and heavens abhor to  
 see;  
 So hideous is her shape, so huge her hed,  
 That even the hellish fiends affrighted bee  
 At sight thereof, and from her presence  
 flee:  
 Yet did her face and former parts professe  
 A faire young mayden, full of comely glee;  
 But all her hinder parts did plaine expresse  
 A monstrous dragon, full of fearefull ugl-  
 nesse.

## XI

'To her the gods, for her so dreadfull face,  
 In fearefull darknesse, furthest from the  
 skie,  
 And from the earth, appointed have her  
 place  
 Mongst rocks and caves, where she enrold  
 doth lie  
 In hideous horror and obscurity,  
 Wasting the strength of her immortall age.  
 There did Typhaon with her company,  
 Cruell Typhaon, whose tempestuous rage  
 Make th' heavens tremble oft, and him with  
 vowes assuage.

## XII

'Of that commixtion they did then beget  
 This hellish dog, that hight the Blatant  
 Beast;  
 A wicked monster, that his tongue doth  
 whet  
 Gainst all, both good and bad, both most  
 and least,  
 And poures his poysnous gall forth to infest  
 The noblest wights with notable defame:  
 Ne ever knight, that bore so lofty creast,  
 Ne ever lady of so honest name,  
 But he them spotted with reproch, or se-  
 crete shame.



## XIII

'In vaine therefore it were, with medicine  
To goe about to salve such kynd of sore,  
That rather needes wise read and discipli-  
ne,

Then outward salves, that may augment it  
more.'

'Aye me!' sayd then Serena, sighing sore,  
'What hope of helpe doth then for us re-  
maine,

If that no salves may us to health restore?'

'But sith we need good counsell,' sayd the  
swaine,

'Aread, good sire, some counsell, that may  
us sustaine.'

## XIV

'The best,' sayd he, 'that I can you ad-  
vize,

Is to avoide the occasion of the ill:

For when the cause, whence evill doth arize,  
Removed is, th' effect surceaseth still.

Abstaine from pleasure, and restraine your  
will,

Subdue desire, and bridle loose delight,

Use scantied diet, and forbear your fill,

Shun secresie, and talke in open sight:

So shall you soone repaire your present  
evill plight.'

## XV

Thus having sayd, his sickely patients  
Did gladly hearken to his grave behest,  
And kept so well his wise commaunde-  
ments,

That in short space their malady was ceast,  
And eke the biting of that harmefull beast  
Was throughly heal'd. Tho when they did  
perceave

Their wounds recur'd, and forces reincreast,  
Of that good hermite both they tooke their  
leave,

And went both on their way, ne ech would  
other leave;

## XVI

But each the other vow'd t' accompany:  
The lady, for that she was much in dred,  
Now left alone in great extremity;  
The squire, for that he courteous was in-  
ded,

Would not her leave alone in her great need.  
So both together traveld, till they met  
With a faire mayden elad in mourning  
weed,

Upon a mangy jade unmeetely set,  
And a lewd foole her leading thorough dry  
and wet.

## XVII

But by what meanes that shame to her be-  
fell,

And how thereof her selfe she did acquite,  
I must a while forbear to you to tell;

Till that, as comes by course, I doe recite

What fortune to the Briton Prince did lite,

Pursuing that proud knight, the which  
whileare

Wrought to Sir Calepine so foule despight;  
And eke his lady, though she sickely were,  
So lewdly had abusde, as ye did lately heare.

## XVIII

The Prince, according to the former token,  
Which faire Serene to him delivered had,  
Pursu'd him streight, in mynd to bene  
ywroken

Of all the vile demeane, and usage bad,

With which he had those two so ill bestad:

Ne wight with him on that adventure went,

But that wyld man, whom though he oft  
forbad,

Yet for no bidding, nor for being shent,  
Would he restrayned be from his attende-  
ment.

## XIX

Arriving there, as did by chaunce befall,  
He found the gate wyde ope, and in he rode,  
Ne stayd, till that he came into the hall:

Where soft dismounting like a weary lode,

Upon the ground with feeble feete he trode,

As he unable were for very neede

To move one foote, but there must make  
abode;

The whiles the salvage man did take his  
steede,

And in some stable neare did set him up to  
feede.

## XX

Ere long to him a homely groome there  
came,

That in rude wise him asked, what he was,

That durst so boldly, without let or shame,  
Into his lords forbidden hall to passe.

To whom the Prince, him fayning to embase,

Mylde answer made, he was an errant  
knight,

The which was fall'n into this feeble case

Through many wounds, which lately he in  
fight  
Received had, and prayd to pittie his ill  
plight.

## XXI

But he, the more outrageous and bold,  
Sternely did bid him quickly thence  
avaunt,  
Or deare aby, forwhy his lord of old  
Did hate all errant knights, which there did  
haunt,  
Ne lodging would to any of them graunt;  
And therefore lightly bad him packe away,  
Not sparing him with bitter words to taunt;  
And therewithall rude hand on him did  
lay,  
To thrust him out of dore doing his worst  
assay.

## XXII

Which when the salvage, comming now in  
place,  
Beheld, eftsoones he all enraged grew,  
And running streight upon that villaine  
base,  
Like a fell lion at him fiercely flew,  
And with his teeth and nailes, in present  
vew,  
Him rudely rent, and all to peeces tore:  
So miserably him all helpelesse slew,  
That with the noise, whilst he did loudly  
rore,  
The people of the house rose forth in great  
uprore.

## XXIII

Who when on ground they saw their fellow  
slaine,  
And that same knight and salvage standing  
by,  
Upon them two they fell with might and  
maine,  
And on them layd so huge and horribly,  
As if they would have slaine them presently.  
But the bolde Prince defended him so well,  
And their assault withstood so mightily,  
That, maugre all their might, he did repell  
And beat them back, whilst many under-  
neath him fell.

## XXIV

Yet he them still so sharply did pursew,  
That few of them he left alive, which  
fled,

Those evill tidings to their lord to shew.  
Who hearing how his people badly sped,  
Came forth in hast: where when as with  
the dead

He saw the ground all strow'd, and that  
same knight  
And salvage with their blond fresh steem-  
ing red,  
He woxe nigh mad with wrath and fell de-  
spight,  
And with reprochfull words him thus be-  
spake on hight:

## XXV

'Art thou he, traytor, that with treason  
vile  
Hast slaine my men in this unmanly maner,  
And now triumphest in the piteous spoile  
Of these poore folk, whose soules with black  
dishonor  
And foule defame doe decke thy bloody  
baner?  
The meede whereof shall shortly be thy  
shame,  
And wretched end, which still attendeth on  
her.'  
With that him selfe to battell he did frame;  
So did his forty yeomen, which there with  
him came.

## XXVI

With dreadfull force they all did him as-  
saile,  
And round about with boystrous strokes  
opresse,  
That on his shield did rattle like to haile  
In a great tempest; that, in such distresse,  
He wist not to which side him to addresse.  
And evermore that craven cowherd knight  
Was at his backe with heartlesse heednesse,  
Wayting if he unwares him murther might:  
For cowardize doth still in villany delight.

## XXVII

Whereof whenas the Prince was well aware,  
He to him turnd with furious intent,  
And him against his powre gan to prepare;  
Like a fierce bull, that being busie bent  
To fight with many foes about him ment,  
Feeling some enurre behinde his heeles to bite,  
Turnes him about with fell avengement;  
So likewise turnde the Prince upon the  
knight,  
And layd at him amaine with all his will  
and might.

## XXVIII

Who when he once his dreadfull strokes  
 had tasted,  
 Durst not the furie of his force abyde,  
 But turn'd abacke, and to retyre him hasted  
 Through the thick prease, there thinking  
 him to hyde.  
 But when the Prince had once him plainly  
 eyde,  
 He foot by foot him followed alway,  
 Ne would him suffer once to shrink asyde,  
 But joyning close, huge lode at him did lay:  
 Who flying still did ward, and warding fly  
 away.

## XXIX

But when his foe he still so eger saw,  
 Unto his heeles himselfe he did betake,  
 Hoping unto some refuge to withdraw:  
 Ne would the Prince him ever foot for-  
 sake,  
 Where so he went, but after him did make.  
 He fled from roome to roome, from place to  
 place,  
 Whylest every joynt for dread of death did  
 quake,  
 Still looking after him that did him chace;  
 That made him evermore increase his  
 speedie pace.

## XXX

At last he up into the chamber came,  
 Whereas his love was sitting all alone,  
 Wayting what tydings of her folke became.  
 There did the Prince him overtake anone,  
 Crying in vaine to her, him to bemone;  
 And with his sword him on the head did  
 smyte,  
 That to the ground he fell in senselesse  
 swone:  
 Yet whether thwart or flatly it did lyte,  
 The tempred steele did not into his brayne-  
 pan byte.

## XXXI

Which when the ladie saw, with great  
 affright  
 She starting up, began to shrieke aloud,  
 And with her garment covering him from  
 sight,  
 Seem'd under her protection him to shroud;  
 And falling lowly at his feet, her bowd  
 Upon her knee, intreating him for grace,  
 And often him besought, and prayd, and  
 vowd;

That, with the ruth of her so wretched  
 case,  
 He stayd his second strooke, and did his  
 hand abase.

## XXXII

Her weed she then withdrawing, did him  
 discover,  
 Who now come to himselfe, yet would not  
 rize,  
 But still did lie as dead, and quake, and  
 quiver,  
 That even the Prince his basenesse did de-  
 spize,  
 And eke his dame, him seeing in such  
 guize,  
 Gan him recomfort, and from ground to  
 reare.  
 Who rising up at last in ghastly wize,  
 Like troubled ghost did dreadfully appeare,  
 As one that had no life him left through  
 former feare.

## XXXIII

Whom when the Prince so deadly saw dis-  
 mayd,  
 He for such basenesse shamefully him shent,  
 And with sharpe words did bitterly up-  
 braid:  
 'Vile cowheard dogge, now doe I much re-  
 pent,  
 That ever I this life unto thee lent,  
 Whereof thou, caytive, so unworthie art;  
 That both thy love, for lacke of hardiment,  
 And eke thy selfe, for want of manly hart,  
 And eke all knights hast shamed with this  
 knightlesse part.

## XXXIV

'Yet further hast thou heaped shame to  
 shame,  
 And crime to crime, by this thy cowheard  
 feare.  
 For first it was to thee reprochfull blame,  
 To erect this wicked custome, which I  
 heare  
 Gainst errant knights and ladies thou dost  
 reare;  
 Whom, when thou mayst, thou dost of arms  
 despoile,  
 Or of their upper garment which they weare:  
 Yet dost thou not with manhood, but with  
 guile,  
 Maintaine this evill use, thy foes thereby to  
 foile.



## XXXV

'And lastly, in approvance of thy wrong  
To shew such faintnesse and foule cowardize  
Is greatest shame: for oft it falles, that  
strong

And valiant knights doe rashly enterprize,  
Either for fame, or else for exercize,  
A wrongfull quarrell to maintaine by fight;  
Yet have, through prowesse and their brave  
emprize,

Gotten great worship in this worldes sight:  
For greater force there needs to maintaine  
wrong then right.

## XXXVI

'Yet since thy life unto this ladie fayre  
I given have, live in reproch and scorne;  
Ne ever armes, ne ever knighthood dare  
Hence to professe: for shame is to adorne  
With so brave badges one so basely borne;  
But onely breath, sith that I did forgive.'  
So having from his craven bodie torne  
Those goodly armes, he them away did give,  
And onely suffred him this wretched life to  
live.

## XXXVII

There whilest he thus was setling things  
above,

Atwene that ladie myld and recreant knight,  
To whom his life he graunted for her love,  
He gan bethinke him, in what perilous  
plight

He had behynd him left that salvage wight,  
Amongst so many foes, whom sure he  
thought

By this quite slaine in so unequall fight:  
Therefore descending backe in haste, he  
sought

If yet he were alive, or to destruction  
brought.

## XXXVIII

There he him found environed about  
With slaughtred bodies, which his hand had  
slaine,

And laying yet a fresh, with courage stout,  
Upon the rest that did alive remaine;  
Whom he likewise right sorely did con-  
straine,

Like scattred sheepe, to seeke for safetie,  
After he gotten had with busie paine  
Some of their weapons which thereby did lie,  
With which he layd about, and made them  
fast to flie.

## XXXIX

Whom when the Prince so felly saw to rage,  
Approching to him neare, his hand he stayd,  
And sought, by making signes, him to as-  
swage:

Who them perceiving, streight to him  
obayd,

As to his lord, and downe his weapons layd,  
As if he long had to his heasts bene trayned.  
Thence he him brought away, and up con-  
vayd

Into the chamber, where that dame re-  
mayned

With her unworthy knight, who ill him en-  
tertayned.

## XL

Whom when the salvage saw from daunger  
free,

Sitting beside his ladie there at ease,  
He well remembred that the same was hee  
Which lately sought his lord for to dis-  
please:

Tho all in rage, he on him streight did  
seaze,

As if he would in peeces him have rent;  
And were not that the Prince did him ap-  
peaze,

He had not left one limbe of him unrent:  
But streight he held his hand at his com-  
maundement.

## XLI

Thus having all things well in peace or-  
dayned,

The Prince himselfe there all that night  
did rest,

Where him Blandina fayrely entertayned,  
With all the courteous glee and goodly  
feast

The which for him she could imagine best.  
For well she knew the wayes to win good  
will

Of every wight, that were not too infest,  
And how to please the minds of good and  
ill,

Through tempering of her words and lookes  
by wondrous skill.

## XLII

Yet were her words and lookes but false  
and fayned,

To some hid end to make more easie way,  
Or to allure such fondlings, whom she  
trayned

Into her trap unto their owne decay:  
 Thereto, when needed, she could weepe and  
     pray,  
 And when her listed, she could fawne and  
     flatter;  
 Now smyling smoothly, like to sommers  
     day,  
 Now glooming sadly, so to cloke her mat-  
     ter;  
 Yet were her words but wynd, and all her  
     teares but water.

## XLIII

Whether such grace were given her by  
     kynd,  
 As women wont their guilefull wits to  
     guyde,  
 Or learn'd the art to please, I doe not fynd.  
 This well I wote, that she so well applyde  
 Her pleasing tongue, that soone she paci-  
     fyde  
 The wrathfull Prince, and wrought her hus-  
     bands peace.  
 Who nathelesse not therewith satisfyde,  
 His rancorous despight did not releasse,  
 Ne secretly from thought of fell revenge  
     surceasse.

## XLIV

For all that night, the whyles the Prince  
     did rest  
 In carelesse couch, not weeting what was  
     ment,  
 He watcht in close awayt with weapons  
     prest,  
 Willing to worke his villenous intent  
 On him that had so shamefully him shent:  
 Yet durst he not for very cowardize  
 Effect the same, whylest all the night was  
     spent.  
 The morrow next the Prince did early rize,  
 And passed forth, to follow his first enter-  
     prize.

## CANTO VII

Turpine is baffuld; his two knights  
 Doe gaine their treasons meed.  
 Fayre Mirabellæes punishment  
 For loves disdaine decreed.

## I

LIKE as the gentle hart it selfe bewrayes  
 In doing gentle deedes with franke delight,  
 Even so the baser mind it selfe displayes  
 In cancred malice and revengefull spight.

For to maligne, t' envie, t' use shifting  
     slight,  
 Be arguments of a vile donghill mind,  
 Which what it dare not doe by open might,  
 To worke by wicked treason wayes doth  
     find,  
 By such discourteous deeds discovering his  
     base kind.

## II

That well appears in this discourteous  
     knight,  
 The coward Turpine, whereof now I treat;  
 Who notwithstanding that in former fight  
 He of the Prince his life received late,  
 Yet in his mind malicious and ingrate  
 He gan devise to be aveng'd anew  
 For all that shame, which kindled inward  
     hate.  
 Therefore, so soone as he was out of vew,  
 Himselfe in hast he arm'd, and did him  
     fast pursue.

## III

Well did he tract his steps, as he did  
     ryde,  
 Yet would not neare approach in daungers  
     eye,  
 But kept aloofe for dread to be descryde,  
 Untill fit time and place he mote espy,  
 Where he mote worke him scath and vil-  
     leny.  
 At last he met two knights to him un-  
     knowne,  
 The which were armed both agreeably,  
 And both combynd, what ever chaunce  
     were blowne,  
 Betwixt them to divide, and each to make  
     his owne.

## IV

To whom false Turpine comming courte-  
     ously,  
 To cloke the mischiefe which he inly ment,  
 Gan to complaine of great discourtesie,  
 Which a straunge knight, that neare afore  
     him went,  
 Had doen to him, and his deare ladie shent:  
 Which if they would afford him ayde at  
     need  
 For to avenge, in time convenient,  
 They should accomplish both a knightly  
     deed,  
 And for their paines obtaine of him a goodly  
     meed.

## V

The knights beleev'd that all he sayd was  
trew,  
And being fresh and full of youthly spright,  
Were glad to heare of that adventure new,  
In which they mote make triall of their  
might,  
Which never yet they had approv'd in fight;  
And eke desirous of the offred meed.  
Said then the one of them: 'Where is that  
wight,  
The which hath doen to thee this wrongfull  
deed,  
That we may it avenge, and punish him  
with speed?'

## VI

'He rides,' said Turpine, 'there not farre  
afore,  
With a wyld man soft footing by his syde,  
That if ye list to haste a litle more,  
Ye may him overtake in timely tyde.'  
Eftsoones they pricked forth with forward  
pryde,  
And ere that litle while they ridden had,  
The gentle Prince not farre away they  
spyde,  
Ryding a softly pace with portance sad,  
Devizing of his love more then of daunger  
drad.

## VII

Then one of them aloud unto him cryde,  
Bidding him turne againe, false traytour  
knight,  
Foule womanwronger, for he him defyde.  
With that they both at once with equall  
spight  
Did bend their speares, and both with  
equall might  
Against him ran; but th' one did misse his  
marke,  
And being carried with his force forth-  
right,  
Glaunst swiftly by; like to that heavenly  
sparke,  
Which, glyding through the ayre, lights all  
the heavens darke.

## VIII

But th' other, ayming better, did him smite  
Full in the shield, with so impetuous  
powre,  
That all his lance in peeces shivered quite,  
And scattered all about, fell on the flowre.

But the stout Prince, with much more  
steddy stowre,  
Full on his bever did him strike so sore,  
That the cold steele, through piercing, did  
devowre  
His vitall breath, and to the ground him  
bore,  
Where still he bathed lay in his owne  
bloody gore.

## IX

As when a cast of faulcons make their  
flight  
At an hernesshaw, that lyes aloft on wing,  
The whyles they strike at him with heed-  
lesse might,  
The warie foule his bill doth backward  
wring;  
On which the first, whose force her first  
doth bring,  
Her selfe quite through the bodie doth en-  
gore,  
And falleth downe to ground like sense-  
lesse thing,  
But th' other, not so swift as she before,  
Fayles of her souse, and passing by doth  
hurt no more.

## X

By this the other, which was passed by,  
Himselfe recovering, was return'd to fight;  
Where when he saw his fellow lifelesse ly,  
He much was daunted with so dismall sight;  
Yet nought abating of his former spight,  
Let drive at him with so malicious mynd,  
As if he would have passed through him  
quight:  
But the steele-head no stedfast hold could  
fynd,  
But glauncing by, deceiv'd him of that he  
desynd.

## XI

Not so the Prince: for his well learned  
speare  
Tooke snrer hould, and from his horses  
backe  
Above a launces length him forth did  
beare,  
And gainst the cold hard earth so sore him  
strake,  
That all his bones in peeces nigh he bracke.  
Where seeing him so lie, he left his steed,  
And to him leaping, vengeance thought to  
take



Of him, for all his former follies meed,  
With flaming sword in hand his terror  
more to breed.

## XII

The fearefull swayne, beholding death so  
nie,

Cryde out aloud, for mercie, him to save;  
In lieu whereof he would to him descrie  
Great treason to him meant, his life to  
reave.

The Prince soone hearkned, and his life  
forgave.

Then thus said he: 'There is a straunger  
knight,

The which, for promise of great meed, us  
drave

To this attempt, to wreake his hid despight,  
For that himselfe thereto did want suffi-  
cient might.'

## XIII

The Prince much mused at such villenie,  
And sayd: 'Now sure ye well have earn'd  
your meed,

For th' one is dead, and th' other soone  
shall die,

Unlesse to me thou hether bring with  
speed

The wretch that hyr'd you to this wicked  
deed.'

He glad of life, and willing eke to wreake  
The guilt on him which did this mischiefe  
breed,

Swore by his sword, that neither day nor  
weeke

He would surceasse, but him, where so he  
were, would seeke.

## XIV

So up he rose, and forth streight way he  
went

Backe to the place where Turpine late he  
lore:

There he him found in great astonishment,  
To see him so bedight with bloodie gore  
And griesly wounds that him appalled  
sore.

Yet thus at length he said: 'How now, sir  
knight?

What meaneth this which here I see be-  
fore?

How fortuneth this foule uncomely plight,  
So different from that which earst ye  
seem'd in sight?'

## XV

'Perdie,' said he, 'in evill houre it fell,  
That ever I for meed did undertake  
So hard a taske as life for hyre to sell;  
The which I earst adventur'd for your sake.  
Witnesse the wounds, and this wyde bloudie  
lake,

Which ye may see yet all about me steeme.  
Therefore now yeeld, as ye did promise  
make,

My due reward, the which right well I  
deeme

I yearned have, that life so dearely did re-  
deeme.'

## XVI

'But where then is,' quoth he halfe wroth-  
fully,

'Where is the bootie, which therefore I  
bought,

That cursed caytive, my strong enemy,  
That recreant knight, whose hated life I  
sought?

And where is eke your friend, which halfe  
it ought?'

'He lyes,' said he, 'upon the cold bare  
ground,

Slayne of that errant knight, with whom he  
fought;

Whom afterwards my selfe with many a  
wound

Did slay againe, as ye may see there in the  
stound.'

## XVII

Thereof false Turpin was full glad and  
faine,

And needs with him streight to the place  
would ryde,

Where he himselfe might see his foeman  
slaine;

For else his feare could not be satisfyde.  
So as they rode, he saw the way all dyde  
With streames of bloud; which tracting by  
the traile,

Ere long they came whereas in evill tyde  
That other swayne, like ashes deadly pale,  
Lay in the lap of death, rewing his wretched  
bale.

## XVIII

Much did the craven seeme to mone his  
case,

That for his sake his deare life had for-  
gone;

And him bewayling with affection base,  
Did counterfeit kind pittie, where was none:  
For wheres no courage, theres no ruth nor  
mone.

Thence passing forth, not farre away he  
found

Whereas the Prince himselfe lay all alone,  
Loosely displayd upon the grassie ground,  
Possessed of sweete sleepe, that luld him  
soft in swound.

## XIX

Wearie of travell in his former fight,  
He there in shade himselfe had layd to rest  
Having his armes and warlike things un-  
dight,

Fearelesse of foes that mote his peace  
molest;

The whyles his salvage page, that wont be  
prest,

Was wandred in the wood another way,  
To doe some thing, that seemed to him best,  
The whyles his lord in silver slomber lay,  
Like to the evening starre adorn'd with  
deawy ray.

## XX

Whom when as Turpin saw so loosely layd,  
He weened well that he in deed was dead,  
Like as that other knight to him had sayd:  
But when he nigh approcht, he mote aread  
Plaine signes in him of life and livelihead.

Whereat much griev'd against that  
straunger knight,

That him too light of credence did mislead,  
He would have backe retyred from that  
sight,

That was to him on earth the deadliest de-  
spight.

## XXI

But that same knight would not once let  
him start,

But plainly gan to him declare the case  
Of all his mischiefe and late lucklesse  
smart;

How both he and his fellow there in place  
Were vanquished, and put to foule dis-  
grace,

And how that he, in lien of life him lent,  
Had vow'd unto the victor, him to trace  
And follow through the world, where so he  
went,

Till that he him delivered to his punish-  
ment.

## XXII

He, therewith much abashed and affrayd,  
Began to tremble every limbe and vaine;  
And softly whispering him, entyrelly prayd  
T' advize him better then by such a traine  
Him to betray unto a straunger swaine:

Yet rather counseld him contrarywise,  
Sith he likewise did wrong by him sustaine,  
To joyne with him and vengeance to de-  
vize,

Whylest time did offer meanes him sleeping  
to surprize.

## XXIII

Nathelesse, for all his speach, the gentle  
knight

Would not be tempted to such villenie,  
Regarding more his faith which he did  
plight,

All were it to his mortall enemye,  
Then to entrap him by false treacherie:  
Great shame in lieges blood to be embrew'd.  
Thus whylest they were debating diverslie,  
The salvage forth out of the wood issew'd  
Backe to the place whereas his lord he sleep-  
ing vew'd.

## XXIV

There when he saw those two so neare him  
stand,

He doubted much what mote their meaning  
bee,

And throwing downe his load out of his  
hand,

To weet great store of forrest frute, which  
hee

Had for his food late gathered from the  
tree,

Himselfe unto his weapon he betooke,  
That was an oaken plant, which lately hee  
Rent by the root; which he so sternely  
shooke,

That like an hazell wand it quivered and  
quooke.

## XXV

Whereat the Prince awaking, when he spyde  
The traytour Turpin with that other knight,  
He started up, and snatching neare his  
syde

His trustie sword, the servant of his might,  
Like a fell lyon leaped to him light,  
And his left hand upon his collar layd.

Therewith the cowheard, deaded with af-  
fright,

Fell flat to ground, ne word unto him sayd,  
But holding up his hands, with silence  
    mercie prayd.

## XXVI

But he so full of indignation was,  
That to his prayer nought he would in-  
    cline,  
But as he lay upon the humbled gras,  
His foot he set on his vile necke, in signe  
Of servile yoke, that nobler harts repine.  
Then, letting him arise like abject thrall,  
He gan to him object his haynous crime,  
And to revile, and rate, and recreant call,  
And lastly to despoyle of knightly banner-  
    all.

## XXVII

And after all, for greater infamie,  
He by the heeles him hung upon a tree,  
And baffuld so, that all which passed by  
The picture of his punishment might see,  
And by the like ensample warned bee,  
How ever they through treason doe tres-  
    passe.  
But turn we now backe to that ladie free,  
Whom late we left ryding upon an asse,  
Led by a carle and foole, which by her side  
    did passe.

## XXVIII

She was a ladie of great dignitie,  
And lifted up to honorable place,  
Famous through all the land of Faerie,  
Though of meane parentage and kindred  
    base,  
Yet deckt with wondrous giftes of Natures  
    grace,  
That all men did her person much admire,  
And praise the feature of her goodly face,  
The beames whereof did kindle lovely fire  
In th' harts of many a knight, and many a  
    gentle squire.

## XXIX

But she thereof grew proud and insolent,  
That none she worthie thought to be her  
    fere,  
But scordn them all, that love unto her  
    ment:  
Yet was she lov'd of many a worthy pere;  
Unworthy she to be belov'd so dere,  
That could not weigh of worthinesse aright:  
For beautie is more glorions bright and  
    clere,

The more it is admir'd of many a wight,  
And noblest she that served is of noblest  
    knight.

## XXX

But this coy damzell thought contrariwise,  
That such proud looks would make her  
    prayed more;  
And that the more she did all love despize,  
The more would wretched lovers her adore.  
What cared she, who sighed for her sore,  
Or who did wayle or watch the wearie  
    night?  
Let them that list their lucklesse lot de-  
    plore;  
She was borne free, not bound to any wight,  
And so would ever live, and love her owne  
    delight.

## XXXI

Through such her stubborne stifnesse and  
    hard hart,  
Many a wretch, for want of remedie,  
Did languish long in lifeconsuming smart,  
And at the last through dreary dolour die:  
Whylest she, the ladie of her libertie,  
Did boast her beautie had such soveraine  
    might,  
That with the onely twinkle of her eye,  
She could or save or spill whom she would  
    hight.  
What could the gods doe more, but doe it  
    more aright?

## XXXII

But loe! the gods, that mortall follies vew,  
Did worthily revenge this maydeus pride;  
And nought regarding her so goodly hew,  
Did laugh at her, that many did deride,  
Whilest she did weepe, of no man mercifde.  
For on a day, when Cupid kept his court,  
As he is wont at each Saint Valentide,  
Unto the which all lovers doe resort,  
That of their loves successe they there may  
    make report;

## XXXIII

It fortun'd then, that when the roubles were  
    red,  
In which the names of all Loves folke were  
    fyled,  
That many there were missing, which were  
    ded,  
Or kept in bands, or from their loves ex-  
    yled,



Or by some other violence despoyled.  
Which when as Cupid heard, he wexed  
    wroth,  
And doubting to be wronged, or beguyled,  
He bad his eyes to be unblindfold both,  
That he might see his men, and muster  
    them by oth.

## XXXIV

Then found he many missing of his crew,  
Which wont doe suit and service to his  
    night;  
Of whom what was becomen no man knew.  
Therefore a jurie was impaneld streight,  
T' enquire of them, whether by force, or  
    sleight,  
Or their owne guilt, they were away con-  
    vayd.  
To whom foule Infamie and fell Despight  
Gave evidence, that they were all betrayd,  
And mured cruely by a rebellious mayd.

## XXXV

Fayre Mirabella was her name, whereby  
Of all those crymes she there indited  
    was:  
All which when Cupid heard, he by and  
    by,  
In great displeasure, wild a capias  
Should issue forth, t' attach that scornfull  
    lasse.  
The warrant straight was made, and there-  
    withall  
A baylieffe errant forth in post did passe,  
Whom they by name there Portamore did  
    call;  
He which doth summon lovers to Loves  
    judgement hall.

## XXXVI

The damzell was attacht, and shortly  
    brought  
Unto the barre, whereas she was arrayned:  
But she thereto nould plead, nor answere  
    ought,  
Even for stubborne pride, which her re-  
    strayned.  
So judgement past, as is by law ordayned  
In cases like; which when at last she saw,  
Her stubborne hart, which love before dis-  
    dayned,  
Gan stoupe, and falling downe with humble  
    awe,  
Cryde mercie, to abate the extremitie of  
    law.

## XXXVII

The sonne of Venus, who is myld by kynd,  
But where he is provokt with peevishnesse,  
Unto her prayers piteously enclynd,  
And did the rigour of his doome represse;  
Yet not so freely, but that nathelesse  
He unto her a penance did impose,  
Which was, that through this worlds wyde  
    wildernes  
She wander should in companie of those,  
Till she had sav'd so many loves as she did  
    lose.

## XXXVIII

So now she had bene wandring two whole  
    yeares  
Throughout the world, in this uncomely  
    case,  
Wasting her goodly hew in heavie teares,  
And her good dayes in dolorous disgrace:  
Yet had she not in all these two yeares  
    space  
Saved but two, yet in two yeares before,  
Throgh her dispiteous pride, whilst love  
    lackt place,  
She had destroyed two and twenty more.  
Aie me! how could her love make half  
    amends therefore?

## XXXIX

And now she was uppon the weary way,  
When as the gentle squire, with faire Se-  
    rene,  
Met her in such misseeming foule array;  
The whiles that mighty man did her de-  
    meane  
With all the evill termes and cruell meane,  
That he could make; and eeke that angry  
    foole  
Which follow'd her, with cursed hands un-  
    cleane  
Whipping her horse, did with his smarting  
    toole  
Oft whip her dainty selfe, and much aug-  
    ment her doole.

## XL

Ne ought it mote availe her to entreat  
The one or th' other, better her to use:  
For both so wilfull were and obstinate,  
That all her piteous plaint they did refuse,  
And rather did the more her beate and  
    bruse.  
But most the former villaine, which did  
    lead

Her tyreling jade, was bent her to abuse;  
 Who, though she were with wearinesse nigh  
 dead,  
 Yet would not let her lite, nor rest a little  
 stead.

## XLI

For he was sterne and terrible by nature,  
 And eeke of person huge and hideous,  
 Exceeding much the measure of mans  
 stature,  
 And rather like a gyant monstrous.  
 For sooth he was descended of the hous  
 Of those old gyants, which did warres dar-  
 raine  
 Against the heaven in order battailous,  
 And sib to great Orgolio, which was slaine  
 By Arthure, when as Unas knight he did  
 maintaine.

## XLII

His lookes were dreadfull, and his fiery  
 eies,  
 Like two great beacons, glared bright and  
 wyde,  
 Glauncing askew, as if his enemies  
 He scorned in his overweening pryde;  
 And stalking stately like a crane, did stryde  
 At every step upon the tiptoes hie;  
 And all the way he went, on every syde  
 He gaz'd about, and stared horrible,  
 As if he with his lookes would all men  
 terrifie.

## XLIII

He wore no armour, ne for none did care,  
 As no whit dreading any living wight;  
 But in a jacket, quilted richly rare  
 Upon checklaton, he was straungely dight;  
 And on his head a roll of linnen plight,  
 Like to the Mores of Malaber, he wore,  
 With which his locks, as blacke as pitchy  
 night,  
 Were bound about, and voyded from be-  
 fore;  
 And in his hand a mighty yron club he bore.

## XLIV

This was Disdaine, who led that ladies  
 horse  
 Through thick and thin, through mountains  
 and through plains,  
 Compelling her, wher she would not, by  
 force,  
 Haling her palfrey by the hempen raines.

But that same foole, which most increast  
 her paines,  
 Was Scorene, who, having in his hand a  
 whip,  
 Her therewith yirks, and still when she  
 complaines,  
 The more he laughs, and does her closely  
 quip,  
 To see her sore lament, and bite her tender  
 lip.

## XLV

Whose cruell handling when that squire  
 beheld,  
 And saw those villaines her so vildely  
 use,  
 His gentle heart with indignation sweld,  
 And could no lenger beare so great abuse,  
 As such a lady so to beate and bruse;  
 But to him stepping, such a stroke him  
 lent,  
 That forst him th' halter from his hand to  
 loose,  
 And maugre all his might, backe to re-  
 lent:  
 Else had he surely there bene slaine, or  
 fowly shent.

## XLVI

The villaine, wroth for greeting him so  
 sore,  
 Gathered him selfe together soone againe,  
 And with his yron batton which he bore  
 Let drive at him so dreadfully amaine,  
 That for his safety he did him constraine  
 To give him ground, and shift to every  
 side,  
 Rather then once his burden to sustaine:  
 For bootelesse thing him seemed, to abide  
 So mighty blowes, or prove the puissance  
 of his pride.

## XLVII

Like as a mastiffe, having at a bay  
 A salvage bull, whose cruell hornes doe  
 threat  
 Desperate daunger, if he them assay,  
 Traceth his ground, and round about doth  
 beat,  
 To spy where he may some advauntage  
 get,  
 The whiles the beast doth rage and loudly  
 rore;  
 So did the squire, the whiles the carle did  
 fret

And fume in his disdainefull mynd the  
more,  
And oftentimes by Turmagant and Ma-  
hound swore.

## XLVIII

Nathelesse so sharply still he him pur-  
sewd,  
That at advantage him at last he tooke,  
When his foote slipt (that slip he dearly  
rewd,)  
And with his yron club to ground him  
strooke;  
Where still he lay, ne out of swoune  
awooke,  
Till heavy hand the carle upon him layd,  
And bound him fast: tho, when he up did  
looke,  
And saw him selfe captiv'd, he was dis-  
mayd,  
Ne powre had to withstand, ne hope of any  
ayd.

## XLIX

Then up he made him rise, and forward  
fare,  
Led in a rope, which both his hands did  
bynd;  
Ne ought that foole for pittie did him spare,  
But with his whip him following behynd,  
Him often scourg'd, and forst his feete to  
fynd:  
And other whiles with bitter mockes and  
mowes  
He would him scorne, that to his gentle  
mynd  
Was much more grievous then the others  
blowes:  
Words sharply wound, but greatest grieve  
of scorning growes.

## L

The faire Serena, when she saw him fall  
Under that villaines club, then surely  
thought  
That slaine he was, or made a wretched  
thrall,  
And fled away with all the speede she  
mought,  
To seeke for safety; which long time she  
sought,  
And past through many perils by the way,  
Ere she againe to Calepine was brought;  
The which discourse as now I must delay,  
Till Mirabellaes fortunes I doe further say.

## CANTO VIII

Prince Arthure overcomes Diadaine;  
Quites Mirabell from dreed;  
Serena, found of salvages,  
By Calepine is freed.

## I

YE gentle ladies, in whose soveraine powre  
Love hath the glory of his kingdome left,  
And th' hearts of men, as your eternall  
dowre,  
In yron chaines, of liberty bereft,  
Delivered hath into your hands by gift;  
Be well aware, how ye the same doe use,  
That pride doe not to tyranny you lift;  
Least, if men you of cruelty accuse,  
He from you take that chiefedome, which  
ye doe abuse.

## II

And as ye soft and tender are by kynde,  
Adorn'd with goodly gifts of beauties grace,  
So be ye soft and tender eeke in mynde;  
But cruelty and hardnesse from you chace,  
That all your other praises will deface,  
And from you turne the love of men to  
hate.  
Ensample take of Mirabellaes case,  
Who from the high degree of happy state  
Fell into wretched woes, which she repented  
late.

## III

Who after thraldome of the gentle squire,  
Which she beheld with lamentable eye,  
Was touched with compassion entire,  
And much lamented his calamity,  
That for her sake fell into misery:  
Which bootied nought for prayers, nor for  
threat  
To hope for to release or mollify;  
For aye the more that she did them entreat,  
The more they him misust, and cruelly did  
beat.

## IV

So as they forward on their way did pas,  
Him still reviling and afflicting sore,  
They met Prince Arthure with Sir Enias,  
(That was that courteous knight, whom he  
before  
Having subdew'd, yet did to life restore,)  
To whom as they approcht, they gan aug-  
ment  
Their cruelty, and him to punish more,



Scourging and haling him more vehement;  
As if it them should grieve to see his punishment.

## V

The squire him selfe, when as he saw his lord,

The witnesse of his wretchednesse, in place,  
Was much asham'd, that with an hempen cord

He like a dog was led in captive case,  
And did his head for bashfulnesse abase,  
As loth to see, or to be seene at all:  
Shame would be hid. But whenas Enias  
Beheld two such, of two such villaines thrall,  
His manly mynde was much emmoued there-withall;

## VI

And to the Prince thus sayd: 'See you, sir knight,

The greatest shame that ever eye yet saw,  
Yond lady and her squire with foule despight

Abusde, against all reason and all law,  
Without regard of pittie or of awe?

See how they doe that squire beat and re-vile!

See how they doe the lady hale and draw!  
But if ye please to lend me leave a while,  
I will them soone acquite, and both of blame assoile.'

## VII

The Prince assented, and then he streight way

Dismounting light, his shield about him threw,

With which approching, thus he gan to say:

'Abide, ye caytive treachetours untrew,  
That have with treason thralld unto you  
These two, unworthy of your wretched bands;

And now your crime with cruelty pursew.  
Abide, and from them lay your loathly hands;

Or else abide the death that hard before you stands.'

## VIII

The villaine stayd not aunswer to invent,  
But with his yron club preparing way,  
His mindes sad message backe unto him sent;

The which descended with such dreadfull sway,

That seemed nought the course thereof could stay,

No more then lightening from the lofty sky:  
Ne list the knight the powre thereof assay,

Whose doome was death, but lightly slipping by,

Unwares defrauded his intended destiny.

## IX

And to requite him with the like againe,  
With his sharpe sword he fiercely at him flew,

And strooke so strongly, that the carle with paine

Saved him selfe, but that he there him slew:  
Yet sav'd not so, but that the bloud it drew,  
And gave his foe good hope of victory.

Who therewith flesht, upon him set anew,  
And with the second stroke thought certainly

To have supplyde the first, and paid the usury.

## X

But Fortune aunswerd not unto his call;  
For as his hand was heaved up on hight,  
The villaine met him in the middle fall,  
And with his club bet backe his brondyron bright

So forcibly, that with his owne hands might  
Rebeaten backe upon him selfe againe,  
He driven was to ground in selfe despight;  
From whence ere he recovery could gaine,  
He in his necke had set his foote with fell disdaine.

## XI

With that the foole, which did that end awayte,

Came running in, and whilest on ground he lay,

Laide heavy hands on him, and held so straye,

That downe he kept him with his scornerfull sway,

So as he could not weld him any way.

The whiles that other villaine went about  
Him to have bound, and thrald without delay;

The whiles the foole did him revile and flout,

Threatning to yoke them two and tame their corage stont.

## XII

As when a sturdy ploughman with his  
hynde  
By strength have overthrowne a stubborne  
steare,  
They downe him hold, and fast with cords do  
bynde,  
Till they him force the buxome yoke to  
beare:  
So did these two this knight oft tug and  
teare.  
Which when the Prince beheld, there stand-  
ing by,  
He left his lofty steede to aide him neare,  
And buckling soone him selfe, gan fiercely  
fly  
Uppon that carle, to save his friend from  
jeopardy.

## XIII

The villaine, leaving him unto his mate,  
To be captiv'd and handled as he list,  
Himselfe addrest unto this new debate,  
And with his club him all about so blist,  
That he which way to turne him scarcely  
wist:  
Sometimes aloft he layd, sometimes alow,  
Now here, now there, and oft him neare he  
mist;  
So doubtfully, that hardly one could know  
Whether more wary were to give or ward  
the blow.

## XIV

But yet the Prince so well enured was  
With such huge strokes, approved oft in  
fight,  
That way to them he gave forth right to  
pas;  
Ne would endure the daunger of their  
might,  
Bnt wayt advantage, when they downe did  
light.  
At last the caytive after long discourse,  
When all his strokes he saw avoyded quite,  
Resolved in one t' assemble all his force,  
And make one end of him without ruth or  
remorse.

## XV

His dreadfull hand he heaved up aloft,  
And with his dreadfull instrument of yre  
Thought sure have pownded him to powder  
soft,  
Or deepe emboweld in the earth entyre:

But Fortune did not with his will conspire;  
For ere his stroke attayned his intent,  
The noble childe, preventing his desire,  
Under his club with wary boldnesse went,  
And smote him on the knee, that never yet  
was bent.

## XVI

It never yet was bent, ne bent it now,  
Albe the stroke so strong and puissant  
were,  
That seem'd a marble pillour it could bow;  
But all that leg, which did his body beare,  
It crackt throughout (yet did no bloud ap-  
peare)  
So as it was unable to support  
So huge a burden on such broken geare,  
Bnt fell to ground, like to a lump of  
durt,  
Whence he assayd to rise, but could not for  
his hurt.

## XVII

Eftsoones the Prince to him full nimble  
stept,  
And least he should recover foote againe,  
His head meant from his shoulders to have  
swept.  
Which when the lady saw, she cryde amaine:  
'Stay, stay, sir knight, for love of God ab-  
staine  
From that unwares ye weetlesse doe intend;  
Slay not that carle, though worthy to be  
slaine:  
For more on him doth then him selfe de-  
pend;  
My life will by his death have lamentable  
end.'

## XVIII

He staide his hand according her desire,  
Yet nathemore him suffred to arize;  
But still suppressing, gan of her inquire,  
What meaning mote those unconth words  
comprize,  
That in that villaines health her safety  
lies:  
That, were no might in man, uor heart in  
knights,  
Which durst her dreaded reskue enter-  
prize,  
Yet heavens them selves, that favour feeble  
rights,  
Would for it selfe redresse, aud pnnish such  
despights.

## XIX

Then bursting forth in teares, which gushed  
fast  
Like many water streames, a while she  
stayd;  
Till the sharpe passion being overpast,  
Her tongue to her restord, then thus she  
sayd:  
'Nor heavens, nor men can me, most  
wretched mayd,  
Deliver from the doome of my desart,  
The which the God of Love hath on me  
layd,  
And damned to endure this direfull smart,  
For penance of my proud and hard re-  
bellious hart.

## XX

'In prime of youthly yeares, when first the  
flowre  
Of beauty gan to bud, and bloosme delight,  
And Nature me endu'd with plenteous  
dowre  
Of all her gifts, that pleasde each living  
sight,  
I was belov'd of many a gentle knight,  
And sude and sought with all the service  
dew:  
Full many a one for me deepe groand and  
sight,  
And to the dore of death for sorrow drew,  
Complayning out on me, that would not on  
them rew.

## XXI

'But let them love that list, or live or die;  
Me list not die for any lovers doole:  
Ne list me leave my loved libertie,  
To pittie him that list to play the foole:  
To love my selfe I learned had in schoole.  
Thus I triumphed long in lovers paine,  
And sitting carelesse on the scornors stoole,  
Did laugh at those that did lament and  
plaine:  
But all is now repayd with interest againe.

## XXII

'For loe! the winged god, that woundeth  
harts,  
Causde me be called to accompt therefore,  
And for revengement of those wrongfull  
smarts,  
Which I to others did inflict afore,  
Addeem'd me to endure this penance sore;  
That in this wize, and this unmeete array,

With these two lewd companions, and no  
more,  
Disdaine and Scorne, I through the world  
should stray,  
Till I have sav'd so many, as I earst did  
slay.'

## XXIII

'Certes,' sayd then the Prince, 'the god is  
just,  
That taketh vengeance of his peoples  
spoil.  
For were no law in love, but all that lust  
Might them oppresse, and painefully tur-  
moile,  
His kingdome would continue but a while.  
But tell me, lady, wherefore doe you beare  
This bottle thus before you with such toile,  
And eeke this wallet at your backe arreare,  
That for these carles to carry much more  
comely were?'

## XXIV

'Here in this bottle,' sayd the sory mayd,  
'I put the teares of my contrition,  
Till to the brim I have it full defrayd:  
And in this bag, which I behinde me don,  
I put repentaunce for things past and gon.  
Yet is the bottle leake, and bag so torne  
That all which I put in fals out anon,  
And is behinde me trodden downe of  
Scorne,  
Who mocketh all my paine, and laughs the  
more I mourn.'

## XXV

The infant hearkned wisely to her tale,  
And wondred much at Cupids judg'ment  
wise,  
That could so meekly make proud hearts  
avale,  
And wreake him selfe on them that him  
despise.  
Then suffred he Disdaine up to arise,  
Who was not able up him selfe to reare,  
By meanes his leg, through his late lucke-  
lesse prise,  
Was crackt in twaine, but by his foolish  
feare  
Was holpen up, who him supported stand-  
ing neare.

## XXVI

But being up, he lookt againe aloft,  
As if he never had received fall;



And with sterne eye-browes stared at him  
oft,  
As if he would have daunted him with all:  
And standing on his tiptoes, to seeme tall,  
Downe on his golden feete he often gazed,  
As if such pride the other could apall;  
Who was so far from being ought amazed,  
That he his lookes despised, and his boast  
dispraized.

## XXVII

Then turning backe unto that captive  
thrall,  
Who all this while stood there beside them  
bound,  
Unwilling to be knowne, or seene at all,  
He from those bands weend him to have  
unwound.  
But when, approching neare, he plainly  
found  
It was his owne true groome, the gentle  
squire,  
He thereat wext exceedingly astound,  
And him did oft embrace, and oft admire,  
Ne could with seeing satisfie his great de-  
sire.

## XXVIII

Meane while the salvage man, when he be-  
held  
That huge great foole oppressing th' other  
knight,  
Whom with his weight unweldy downe he  
held,  
He flew upon him, like a greedy kight  
Unto some carrion offered to his sight,  
And downe him plucking, with his nayles  
and teeth  
Gan him to hale, and teare, and scratch,  
and bite;  
And from him taking his owne whip, there-  
with  
So sore him scourgeth, that the bloud downe  
followeth.

## XXIX

And sure I weene, had not the ladies cry  
Procur'd the Prince his cruell hand to  
stay,  
He would with whipping him have done to  
dye:  
But being checkt, he did abstaine streight  
way,  
And let him rise. Then thus the Prince  
gan say:

'Now, lady, sith your fortunes thus dis-  
pose,  
That, if ye list have liberty, ye may,  
Unto your selfe I freely leave to chose,  
Whether I shall you leave, or from these  
villaines lose.'

## XXX

'Ah! nay, sir knight,' sayd she, 'it may  
not be,  
But that I needes must by all meanes ful-  
fill  
This penaunce, which enjoyned is to me,  
Least unto me betide a greater ill;  
Yet no lesse thanks to you for your good  
will.'  
So humbly taking leave, she turnd aside:  
But Arthure with the rest went onward  
still  
On his first quest, in which did him be-  
tide  
A great adventure, which did him from  
them devide.

## XXXI

But first it falleth me by course to tell  
Of faire Serena, who, as earst you heard,  
When first the gentle squire at variaunce  
fell  
With those two carles, fled fast away,  
afeard  
Of villany to be to her inferd:  
So fresh the image of her former dread,  
Yet dwelling in her eye, to her appeard,  
That every foote did tremble, which did  
tread,  
And every body two, and two she foure did  
read.

## XXXII

Through hils and dales, through bushes and  
through breres  
Long thus she fled, till that at last she  
thought  
Her selfe now past the perill of her feares.  
Then looking round about, and seeing  
nought  
Which doubt of daunger to her offer  
mought,  
She from her palfrey lighted on the plaine,  
And sitting downe, her selfe a waile be-  
thought  
Of her long travell and turmoyling paine:  
And often did of love, and oft of lucke  
complaine.

## XXXIII

And evermore she blamed Calepine,  
 The good Sir Calepine, her owne true  
 knight,  
 As th' ouely author of her wofull tine:  
 For behing of his love to her so light,  
 As her to leave in such a piteous plight.  
 Yet never turtle truer to his make,  
 Then he was tride unto his lady bright:  
 Who all this while endured for her sake  
 Great perill of his life, and restlesse paines  
 did take.

## XXXIV

Tho when as all her plaints she had dis-  
 playd,  
 And well disburdened her engrieved brest,  
 Upon the grasse her selfe adowne she layd;  
 Where, being tyrde with travell, and op-  
 prest  
 With sorrow, she betooke her selfe to rest.  
 There whilst in Morpheus bosome safe  
 she lay,  
 Fearelesse of ought that mote her peace  
 molest,  
 False Fortune did her safety betray  
 Unto a straunge mischaunce, that menac'd  
 her decay.

## XXXV

In these wylde deserts, where she now  
 abode,  
 There dwelt a salvage nation, which did  
 live  
 Of stealth and spoile, and making nightly  
 rode  
 Into their neighbours borders; ne did give  
 Them selves to any trade, as for to drive  
 The painefull plough, or cattell for to  
 breed,  
 Or by adventrous marchandize to thrive;  
 But on the labours of poore men to feed,  
 And serve their owne necessities with others  
 need.

## XXXVI

Thereto they usde one most accursed or-  
 der,  
 To eate the flesh of men, whom they mote  
 fynde,  
 And straungers to devoure, which on their  
 border  
 Were brought by errour, or by wreckfull  
 wynde:  
 A monstrous cruelty gainst course of kynde.

They towards evening wandring every way,  
 To seeke for booty, came by fortune blynde  
 Whereas this lady, like a sheepe astray,  
 Now drowned in the depth of sleepe all  
 fearelesse lay.

## XXXVII

Soone as they spide her, lord ! what glad-  
 full glee  
 They made amongst them selves ! but  
 when her face  
 Like the faire yvory shining they did see,  
 Each gan his fellow solace and embrace,  
 For joy of such good hap by heavenly  
 grace.  
 Then gan they to devize what course to  
 take:  
 Whether to slay her there upon the place,  
 Or suffer her out of her sleepe to wake,  
 And then her eate attonce, or many meales  
 to make.

## XXXVIII

The best advizement was, of bad, to let her  
 Sleepe out her fill, without encomberment:  
 For sleepe, they sayd, would make her bat-  
 till better.  
 Then, when she wakt, they all gave one  
 consent,  
 That since by grace of God she there was  
 sent,  
 Unto their god they would her sacrificize,  
 Whose share, her guiltlesse bloud, they  
 would present;  
 But of her dainty flesh they did devize  
 To make a common feast, and feed with  
 gurmardize.

## XXXIX

So round about her they them selves did  
 place  
 Upon the grasse, and diversely dispose,  
 As each thought best to spend the lingring  
 space.  
 Some with their eyes the daintest morsels  
 chose;  
 Some praise her paps, some praise her lips  
 and nose;  
 Some whet their knives, and strip their  
 elboes bare:  
 The priest him selfe a garland doth com-  
 pose  
 Of finest flowres, and with full busie care  
 His bloody vessels wash, and holy fire pre-  
 pare.

## XL

The damzell wakes; then all attonce up-  
start,  
And round about her flocke, like many flies,  
Whooping and hallowing on every part,  
As if they would have reut the brasen skies.  
Which when she sees with ghastly griefful  
eies,  
Her heart does quake, and deadly pallid  
hew  
Benumbs her cheekes: then out aloud she  
cries,  
Where none is nigh to heare, that will her  
rew,  
And rends her golden locks, and snowy  
brests embrew.

## XLI

But all bootes not: they hands upou her  
lay;  
And first they spoile her of her jewels  
deare,  
And afterwards of all her rich array;  
The which amongst them they in peeces  
teare,  
And of the pray each one a part doth beare.  
Now being naked, to their sordid eyes  
The goodly treasures of Nature appeare:  
Which as they view with lustfull fantasyes,  
Each wisheth to him selfe, and to the rest  
envyes.

## XLII

Her yvorie necke, her alabaster brest,  
Her paps, which like white silken pillowes  
were,  
For Love in soft delight thereon to rest;  
Her tender sides, her bellie white and clere,  
Which like an altar did it selfe upreare,  
To offer sacrifice divine thereon;  
Her goodly thighes, whose glorie did ap-  
peare  
Like a triumphall arch, and thereupon  
The spoiles of princes hang'd, which were  
in battel won.

## XLIII

Those daintie parts, the dearlings of de-  
light,  
Which mote uot be prophan'd of common  
eyes,  
Those villeins vew'd with loose lascivious  
sight,  
And closely tempted with their craftie  
spyes;

And some of them gan inongst themselves  
devize,  
Thereof by force to take their beastly  
pleasure:  
But them the priest rebuking, did advize  
To dare not to pollute so sacred threas-  
ure,  
Vow'd to the gods: religion held even  
theeves in measure.

## XLIV

So being stayd, they her from thence di-  
rected  
Unto a litle grove not farre asyde,  
In which an altar shortly they erected,  
To slay her on. And now the eventyde  
His brode black wings had through the  
heavens wyde  
By this dispred, that was the tyme or-  
dayned  
For such a dismall deed, their guilt to  
hyde:  
Of few greene turfes an altar soone they  
fayned,  
And deckt it all with flowres, which they  
nigh hand obtayned.

## XLV

Tho, when as all things readie were aright,  
The damzell was before the altar set,  
Being already dead with fearefull fright.  
To whom the priest with naked armes full  
net  
Approching nigh, and murderous knife well  
whet,  
Gan mutter close a certaine secret charme,  
With other divelish ceremonies met:  
Which doen, he gan aloft t'advance his  
arme,  
Whereat they shouted all, and made a loud  
alarme.

## XLVI

Then gan the bagpipes and the hornes to  
shrill,  
And shrieke aloud, that, with the peoples  
voyce  
Confused, did the ayre with terror fill,  
And made the woud to tremble at the  
noyce:  
The whyles she wayld, the more they did  
rejoyce.  
Now mote ye understand that to this grove  
Sir Calepine, by chaunce more then by  
choyce,



The selfe same evening fortune hether  
drove,  
As he to seeke Serena through the woods  
did rove.

## XLVII

Long had he sought her, and through many  
a soyle  
Had travelld still on foot in heavie armes,  
Ne ought was tyred with his endlesse toyle,  
Ne ought was feared of his certaine  
harmes:  
And now, all weetlesse of the wretched  
stormes,  
In which his love was lost, he slept full fast,  
Till, being waked with these loud alarmes,  
He lightly started up like one aghast,  
And catching up his arms, streight to the  
noise forth past.

## XLVIII

There by th' uncertaine glims of starry  
night,  
And by the twinkling of their sacred fire,  
He mote perceive a litle dawning sight  
Of all which there was doing in that quire:  
Mongst whom a woman spoyld of all attire  
He spyde, lamenting her unluckie strife,  
And groning sore from grieved hart en-  
tire;  
Eftsoones he saw one with a naked knife  
Readie to launch her brest, and let out  
loved life.

## XLIX

With that he thrusts into the thickest  
throng,  
And even as his right hand adowne de-  
scends,  
He him preventing, layes on earth along,  
And sacrificeth to th' infernall feends.  
Then to the rest his wrathfull hand he  
bends,  
Of whom he makes such havocke and such  
hew,  
That swarmes of damned soules to hell he  
sends:  
The rest, that scape his sword and death  
eschew,  
Fly like a flocke of doves before a faulcons  
vew.

## L

From them returning to that ladie backe,  
Whom by the altar he doth sitting find,

Yet fearing death, and next to death the  
lacke  
Of clothes to cover what they ought by  
kind,  
He first her hands beginneth to unbind,  
And then to question of her present woe,  
And afterwards to cheare with speaches  
kind.  
But she, for nought that he could say or  
doe,  
One word durst speake, or answer him a  
whit thereto.

## LI

So inward shame of her uncomely case  
She did conceive, through care of woman-  
hood,  
That though the night did cover her dis-  
grace,  
Yet she in so unwomanly a mood  
Would not bewray the state in which she  
stood.  
So all that night to him unknownen she  
past.  
But day, that doth discover bad and good,  
Ensewing, made her knownen to him at  
last:  
The end whereof Ile keepe untill another  
cast.

## CANTO IX

Calidore hostes with Melibœ  
And loves fayre Pastorell;  
Coridon envies him, yet he  
For ill rewards him well.

## I

Now turne againe my teme, thou jolly  
swayne,  
Backe to the furrow which I lately left;  
I lately left a furrow, one or twayne,  
Unplough'd, the which my coulter hath  
not cleft:  
Yet seem'd the soyle both fayre and frute-  
full eft,  
As I it past, that were too great a shame,  
That so rich frute should be from us be-  
reft;  
Besides the great dishonour and defame,  
Which should befall to Calidores immor-  
tall name.

## II

Great travell hath the gentle Calidore  
And toyle endured, sith I left him last

Sewing the Blatant Beast, which I forbore  
 To finish then, for other present hast.  
 Full many pathes and perils he hath past,  
 Through hils, through dales, through for-  
   ests, and through plaines,  
 In that same quest which fortune on him  
   cast,  
 Which he atchieved to his owne great  
   gaines,  
 Reaping eternall glorie of his restlesse  
   paines.

## III

So sharply he the monster did pursew,  
 That day nor night he suffred him to rest,  
 Ne rested he himselve but natures dew,  
 For dread of daunger, not to be redrest,  
 If he for slouth forslackt so famous quest.  
 Him first from court he to the citties  
   coursed,  
 And from the citties to the townes him  
   prest,  
 And from the townes into the countrie  
   forced,  
 And from the country back to private  
   farines he scorsed.

## IV

From thence into the open fields he fled,  
 Whereas the heardes were keeping of their  
   neat,  
 And shepheards singing to their flockes,  
   that fed,  
 Layes of sweete love and youthes delight-  
   full heat:  
 Him thether eke for all his fearefull threat  
 He followed fast, and chaced him so nie,  
 That to the folds, where sheepe at night  
   doe seat,  
 And to the litle cots, where shepherds lie  
 In winters wrathfull time, he forced him  
   to flie.

## V

There on a day, as he pursew'd the chace,  
 He chaunst to spy a sort of shepheard  
   groomes,  
 Playing on pypes, and caroling apace,  
 The whyles their beasts there in the  
   budded broomes  
 Beside them fed, and nipt the tender  
   bloomes:  
 For other worldly wealth they cared  
   nought.  
 To whom Sir Calidore yet sweating comes,

And them to tell him courteously be-  
   sought,  
 If such a beast they saw, which he had  
   thether brought.

## VI

They answer'd him that no such beast they  
   saw,  
 Nor any wicked feend that mote offend  
 Their happie flockes, nor daunger to them  
   draw:  
 But if that such there were (as none they  
   kend)  
 They prayd High God them farre from  
   them to send.  
 Then one of them him seeing so to sweat,  
 After his rusticke wise, that well he weend,  
 Offred him drinke, to quench his thirstie  
   heat,  
 And if he hungry were, him offred eke to  
   eat.

## VII

The knight was nothing nice, where was  
   no need,  
 And tooke their gentle offer: so adowne  
 They prayd him sit, and gave him for to  
   feed  
 Such homely what as serves the simple  
   clowne,  
 That doth despise the dainties of the towne.  
 Tho, having fed his fill, he there besyde  
 Saw a faire damzell, which did weare a  
   crowne  
 Of sundry flowres, with silken ribbands  
   tyde,  
 Yclad in home-made greene that her owne  
   hands had dyde.

## VIII

Upon a litle hillocke she was placed  
 Higher then all the rest, and round about  
 Environ'd with a girland, goodly graced,  
 Of lovely lasses, and them all without  
 The lustie shepheard swaynes sate in a rout,  
 The which did pype and sing her prayses  
   dew,  
 And oft rejoyce, and oft for wonder shout,  
 As if some miracle of heavenly hew  
 Were downe to them descended in that  
   earthly vew.

## IX

And soothly sure she was full fayre of face,  
 And perfectly well shapt in every lim,

Which she did more augment with modest  
grace  
And comely carriage of her count'nance  
trim,  
That all the rest like lesser lamps did dim:  
Who, her admiring as some heavenly wight,  
Did for their soveraine goddesses her es-  
teeme,  
And caroling her name both day and night,  
The fayrest Pastorella her by name did  
hight.

## X

Ne was there heard, ne was there shep-  
heard's swayne,  
But her did honour, and eke many a one  
Burnt in her love, and with sweet pleasing  
payne  
Full many a night for her did sigh and  
grone:  
But most of all the shepherd Coridon  
For her did languish, and his deare life  
spend;  
Yet neither she for him nor other none  
Did care a whit, ne any liking lend:  
Though meane her lot, yet higher did her  
mind ascend.

## XI

Her whyles Sir Calidore there vewed well,  
And markt her rare demeanure, which him  
seemed  
So farre the meane of shepherds to ex-  
cell,  
As that he in his mind her worthy deemed  
To be a princes paragone esteemed,  
He was unware surpris'd in subtile bands  
Of the Blynd Boy, ne thence could be re-  
deemed  
By any skill out of his cruell hands,  
Caught like the bird which gazing still on  
others stands.

## XII

So stood he still long gazing thereupon,  
Ne any will had thence to move away,  
Although his quest were farre afore him  
gon;  
But after he had fed, yet did he stay,  
And sate there still, untill the flying day  
Was farre forth spent, discoursing diversly  
Of sundry things, as fell, to worke delay;  
And evermore his speach he did apply  
To th' heards, but meant them to the  
damzels fantasy.

## XIII

By this the moystie night approaching fast,  
Her dewy humour gan on th' earth to  
shed,  
That warn'd the shepherds to their homes  
to hast  
Their tender flocks, now being fully fed,  
For feare of wetting them before their  
bed;  
Then came to them a good old aged syre,  
Whose silver lockes bedeckt his beard and  
hed,  
With shepherds hooke in hand, and fit  
attyre,  
That wild the damzell rise; the day did  
now expyre.

## XIV

He was, to weet, by common voice es-  
teemed  
The father of the fayrest Pastorell,  
And of her selfe in very deede so deemed;  
Yet was not so, but, as old stories tell,  
Found her by fortune, which to him befell,  
In th' open fields an infant left alone,  
And taking up brought home, and noursed  
well  
As his owne chyld; for other he had none;  
That she in tract of time accompted was  
his owne.

## XV

She at his bidding meekely did arise,  
And streight unto her litle flocke did fare:  
Then all the rest about her rose likewise,  
And each his sundrie sheepe with severall  
care  
Gathered together, and them homeward  
bare:  
Whylest everie one with helping hands did  
strive  
Amongst themselves, and did their labours  
share,  
To helpe faire Pastorella home to drive  
Her fleecie flocke; but Coridon most helpe  
did give.

## XVI

But Melibœe (so hight that good old man)  
Now seeing Calidore left all alone,  
And night arrived hard at hand, began  
Him to invite unto his simple home;  
Which though it were a cottage clad with  
lome,  
And all things therein meane, yet better so



To lodge then in the salvage fields to rome.  
The knight full gladly soone agreed thereto,  
Being his harts owne wish, and home with  
him did go.

## XVII

There he was welcom'd of that honest  
syre,  
And of his aged beldame homely well;  
Who him besought himselfe to disattyre,  
And rest himselfe, till supper time befell;  
By which home came the fayrest Pastorell,  
After her flocke she in their fold had tyde;  
And, supper readie dight, they to it fell  
With small adoe, and nature satisfyde,  
The which doth litle crave, contented to  
abyde.

## XVIII

Tho when they had their hunger slaked  
well,  
And the fayre mayd the table ta'ne away,  
The gentle knight, as he that did excell  
In courtesie, and well could doe and say,  
For so great kindnesse as he found that  
day  
Gan greatly thanke his host and his good  
wife;  
And drawing thence his speach another  
way,  
Gan highly to commend the happie life  
Which shepheards lead, without debate or  
bitter strife.

## XIX

'How much,' sayd he, 'more happie is the  
state,  
In which ye, father, here doe dwell at ease,  
Leading a life so free and fortunate  
From all the tempests of these worldly  
seas,  
Which tosse the rest in daungerous dis-  
ease;  
Where warres, and wreckes, and wicked  
enmitie  
Doe them afflict, which no man can ap-  
pease!  
That certes I your happinesse envie,  
And wish my lot were plast in such fel-  
icitie.'

## XX

'Surely, my sonne,' then answer'd he  
again,  
'If happie, then it is in this intent,

That, having small, yet doe I not com-  
plaine  
Of want, ne wish for more it to augment,  
But doe my selfe, with that I have, con-  
tent;  
So taught of nature, which doth litle need  
Of forreine helpe to lifes due nourish-  
ment:  
The fields my food, my flocke my rayment  
breed;  
No better doe I weare, no better doe I feed.

## XXI

'Therefore I doe not any one envy,  
Nor am envye of any one therefore;  
They that have much, feare much to loose  
thereby,  
And store of cares doth follow riches store.  
The litle that I have growes dayly more  
Without my care, but onely to attend it;  
My lambes doe every yeare increase their  
score,  
And my flockes father daily doth amend it.  
What have I, but to praise th' Almighty,  
that doth send it?

## XXII

'To them that list, the worlds gay showes I  
leave,  
And to great ones such follies doe for-  
give,  
Which oft through pride do their owne  
perill weave,  
And through ambition downe themselves  
doe drive  
To sad decay, that might contented live.  
Me no such cares nor combrous thoughts  
offend,  
Ne once my minds unmoved quiet grieve,  
But all the night in silver sleepe I spend,  
And all the day, to what I list I doe attend.

## XXIII

'Sometimes I hunt the fox, the vowed foe  
Unto my lambes, and him dislodge away;  
Sometime the fawne I practise from the  
doe,  
Or from the goat her kidde how to convey;  
Another while I baytes and nets display,  
The birds to catch, or fishes to beguyle:  
And when I wearie am, I downe doe lay  
My limbes in every shade, to rest from  
toyle,  
And drinke of every brooke, when thirst  
my throte doth boyle.

## XXIV

'The time was once, in my first prime of  
yeares,  
When pride of youth forth pricked my  
desire,  
That I disdain'd amongst mine equall peares  
To follow sheepe, and shepherds base at-  
tire:

For further fortune then I would inquire,  
And leaving home, to roiall court I sought;  
Where I did sell my selfe for yearely hire,  
And in the princes gardin daily wrought:  
There I beheld such vaineesse, as I never  
thought.

## XXV

'With sight whereof soome cloyd, and long  
deluded

With idle hopes, which them doe enter-  
taine,

After I had ten yeares my selfe exclud'd  
From native home, and spent my youth in  
vaine,

I gan my follies to my selfe to plaine,  
And this sweet peace, whose lacke did then  
appeare.

Tho backe returning to my sheepe againe,  
I from thenceforth have learn'd to love  
more deare

This lowly quiet life, which I inherite here.'

## XXVI

Whylest thus he talkt, the knight with  
greedy eare

Hong still upon his melting mouth attent;  
Whose sensefull words empierst his hart  
so neare,

That he was rapt with double ravishment,  
Both of his speach, that wrought him great  
content,

And also of the object of his vew,  
On which his hungry eye was alwayes  
bent;

That twixt his pleasing tongue and her  
faire hew

He lost himselfe, and like one halfe en-  
traunced grew.

## XXVII

Yet to occasion meanes to worke his mind,  
And to insinuate his harts desire,

He thus replyde: 'Now surely, syre, I  
find,

That all this worlds gay showes, which we  
admire,

Be but vaine shadowes to this safe retyre  
Of life, which here in lowlinesse ye lead,  
Fearelesse of foes, or Fortunes wrackfull  
yre,

Which tosseth states, and under foot doth  
tread

The mightie ones, affrayd of every chaunges  
dread.

## XXVIII

'That even I, which daily doe behold  
The glorie of the great, mongst whom I  
won,

And now have prov'd what happinesse ye  
hold

In this small plot of your dominion,  
Now loath great lordship and ambition;  
And wish the heavens so much had graced  
mee,

As graunt me live in like condition;  
Or that my fortunes might transposed bee  
From pitch of higher place unto this low  
degree.'

## XXIX

'In vaine,' said then old Melibæ, 'doe  
men

The heavens of their fortunes fault accuse,  
Sith they know best what is the best for  
them:

For they to each such fortune doe diffuse,  
As they doe know each can most aptly use.  
For not that which men covet most is  
best,

Nor that thing worst which men do most  
refuse;

But fittest is, that all contented rest  
With that they hold: each hath his fortune  
in his brest.

## XXX

'It is the mynd that maketh good or ill,  
That maketh wretch or happie, rich or  
poore:

For some, that hath abundance at his will,  
Hath not enough, but wants in greatest  
store;

And other, that hath litle, askes no more,  
But in that litle is both rich and wise;  
For wisdom is most riches; fooles there-  
fore

They are, which fortunes doe by vowes de-  
vize,

Sith each unto himselfe his life may for-  
tunize.'

## XXXI

'Since then in each mans self,' said Calidore,  
 'It is, to fashion his owne lyfes estate,  
 Give leave awhyle, good father, in this  
 shore  
 To rest my barcke, which hath bene beaten  
 late  
 With stormes of fortune and tempestuous  
 fate,  
 In seas of troubles and of toylesome paine,  
 That, whether quite from them for to re-  
 trate  
 I shall resolve, or backe to turne againe,  
 I may here with your selfe some small  
 repose obtaine.

## XXXII

'Not that the burden of so bold a guest  
 Shall chargefull be, or chaunge to you at  
 all;  
 For your meane food shall be my daily  
 feast,  
 And this your cabin both my bowre and  
 hall.  
 Besides, for recompence hereof, I shall  
 You well reward, and golden guerdon give,  
 That may perhaps you better much withall,  
 And in this quiet make you safer live.'  
 So forth he drew much gold, and toward  
 him it drive.

## XXXIII

But the good man, nought tempted with  
 the offer  
 Of his rich mould, did thrust it farre away,  
 And thus bespake: 'Sir knight, your boun-  
 teous proffer  
 Be farre fro me, to whom ye ill display  
 That mucky masse, the cause of mens  
 decay,  
 That mote enpaire my peace with daungers  
 dread.  
 But, if ye algates covet to assay  
 This simple sort of life, that shepherds  
 lead,  
 Be it your owne: our rudenesse to your  
 selfe aread.'

## XXXIV

So there that night Sir Calidore did dwell,  
 And long while after, whilst him list re-  
 maine,  
 Dayly beholding the faire Pastorell,  
 And feeding on the bayt of his owne bane.  
 During which time he did her enttaine

With all kind courtesies he could invent;  
 And every day, her companie to gaine,  
 When to the field she went, he with her  
 went:  
 So for to quench his fire, he did it more  
 augment.

## XXXV

But she, that never had acquainted beene  
 With such queint usage, fit for queenes and  
 kings,  
 Ne ever had such knightly service seene,  
 But, being bred under base shepherds  
 wings,  
 Had ever learn'd to love the lowly things,  
 Did litle whit regard his courteous guize,  
 But cared more for Colins carolings  
 Then all that he could doe, or ever devize:  
 His layes, his loves, his lookes she did them  
 all despize.

## XXXVI

Which Calidore perceiving, thought it best  
 To chaunge the manner of his loftie looke;  
 And doffing his bright armes, himselfe ad-  
 drest  
 In shepherds weed, and in his hand he  
 tooke,  
 In stead of steelehead speare, a shep-  
 herds hooke,  
 That who had scene him then would have  
 bethought  
 On Phrygian Paris by Plexippus brooke,  
 When he the love of fayre Oenone sought,  
 What time the golden apple was unto him  
 brought.

## XXXVII

So being clad, unto the fields he went  
 With the faire Pastorella every day,  
 And kept her sheepe with diligent attent,  
 Watching to drive the ravenous wolfe away,  
 The whylest at pleasure she mote sport and  
 play;  
 And every evening helping them to fold:  
 And otherwhiles, for need, he did assay  
 In his strong hand their rugged teats to  
 hold,  
 And out of them to presse the milke: love  
 so much could.

## XXXVIII

Which seeing Coridon, who her likewise  
 Long time had lov'd, and hop'd her love to  
 gaine,



He much was troubled at that straungers  
 guize,  
 And many gealous thoughts conceiv'd in  
 vaine,  
 That this of all his labour and long paine  
 Should reap the harvest, ere it ripened  
 were;  
 That made him scoule, and pout, and oft  
 complaine  
 Of Pastorell to all the shepherds there,  
 That she did love a stranger swayne then  
 him more dere.

## XXXIX

And ever, when he came in companie  
 Where Calidore was present, he would  
 loure  
 And byte his lip, and even for gealousie  
 Was readie oft his owne hart to devoure,  
 Impatient of any paramoure:  
 Who on the other side did seeme so farre  
 From malicing, or grndging his good  
 houre,  
 That all he could, he graced him with her,  
 Ne ever shewed signe of rancour or of  
 jarre.

## XL

And oft, when Coridon unto her brought  
 Or litle sparrows, stolen from their nest,  
 Or wanton squirrels, in the woods farre  
 sought,  
 Or other daintie thing for her adrest,  
 He would commend his guift, and make  
 the best.  
 Yet she no whit his presents did regard,  
 Ne him could find to fancie in her brest:  
 This newcome shepherd had his market  
 mard.  
 Old love is litle worth when new is more  
 prefard.

## XLI

One day when as the shepherd swaynes  
 together  
 Were met, to make their sports and merrie  
 glee,  
 As they are wont in faire sunshynie  
 weather,  
 The whiles their flockes in shadowes  
 shrouded bee,  
 They fell to daunce: then did they all agree,  
 That Coliu Clout should pipe, as one most  
 fit;  
 And Calidore should lead the ring, as hee

That most in Pastorellaes grace did sit.  
 Thereat frown'd Coridon, and his lip closely  
 bit.

## XLII

But Calidore, of courteous inclination,  
 Tooke Coridon and set him in his place,  
 That he should lead the daunce, as ~~was~~ his  
 fashion;  
 For Coridon could daunce, and trimly  
 trace.  
 And when as Pastorella, him to grace,  
 Her flowry garland tooke from her owne  
 head,  
 And plast on his, he did it soone displace,  
 And did it put on Coridons in stead:  
 Then Coridon woxe frolicke, that earst  
 seemed dead.

## XLIII

Another time, when as they did dispose  
 To practise games, and maisteries to try,  
 They for their judge did Pastorella chose;  
 A garland was the meed of victory.  
 There Coridon, forth stepping openly,  
 Did chalenge Calidore to wrestling game:  
 For he, through long and perfect industry,  
 Therein well practisd was, and in the same  
 Thought sure t' avenge his grudge, and  
 worke his foe great shame.

## XLIV

But Calidore he greatly did mistake;  
 For he was strong and mightily stiffe pight,  
 That with ouc fall his necke he almost  
 brake,  
 And had he not upon him fallen light,  
 His dearest joynt he sure had broken  
 quight.  
 Then was the oaken crowne by Pastorell  
 Given to Calidore, as his due right;  
 But he, that did in courtesie excell,  
 Gave it to Coridon, and said he wonne it  
 well.

## XLV

Thus did the gentle knight himselfe abeare  
 Amongst that rusticke rout in all his deeds,  
 That even they the which his rivals were  
 Could not maligne him, but commend him  
 needs:  
 For courtesie amongst the rudest breeds  
 Good will and favour. So it surely wrought  
 With this faire mayd, and in her mynde  
 the seeds

Of perfect love did sow, that last forth  
brought  
The fruite of joy and blisse, though long  
time dearly bought.

## XLVI

Thus Calidore continu'd there long time,  
To winne the love of the faire Pastorell;  
Which having got, he used without crime  
Or blamefull blot, but menaged so well,  
That he, of all the rest which there did  
dwell,  
Was favoured, and to her grace com-  
mended.  
But what straunge fortunes unto him be-  
fell,  
Ere he attain'd the point by him intended,  
Shall more conveniently in other place be  
ended.

## CANTO X

Calidore sees the Graces daunce  
To Colins melody:  
The whiles his Pastorell is led  
Into captivity.

## I

WHO now does follow the foule Blatant  
Beast,  
Whilest Calidore does follow that faire  
mayd,  
Unmyndfull of his vow, and high beheast  
Which by the Faery Queene was on him  
layd,  
That he should never leave, nor be delayd  
From chasing him, till he had it att-  
chieved?  
But now entrapt of Love, which him be-  
trayd,  
He mindeth more how he may be relieved  
With grace from her whose love his heart  
hath sore engrieved.

## II

That from henceforth he meanes no more  
to sew  
His former quest, so full of toile and paine;  
Another quest, another game in vew  
He hath, the guerdon of his love to gaine:  
With whom he myndes for ever to remaine,  
And set his rest amongst the rusticke sort,  
Rather then hunt still after shadowes vaine  
Of courtly favour, fed with light report  
Of every blaste, and sayling alwaies in the  
port.

## III

Ne certes mote he greatly blamed be,  
From so high step to stoupe unto so low.  
For who had tasted once (as oft did he)  
The happy peace which there doth over-  
flow,  
And prov'd the perfect pleasures which  
doe grow  
Amongst poore hyndes, in hils, in woods,  
in dales,  
Would never more delight in painted show  
Of such false blisse, as there is set for  
stales,  
T' entrap unwary fooles in their eternall  
bales.

## IV

For what hath all that goodly glorious  
gaze  
Like to one sight which Calidore did vew?  
The glauce whereof their dimmed eies  
would daze,  
That never more they should endure the  
shew  
Of that sunne-shine, that makes them looke  
askew.  
Ne ought in all that world of beauties rare,  
(Save onely Glorianaes heavenly hew,  
To which what can compare?) can it com-  
pare;  
The which, as commeth now by course, I  
will declare.

## V

One day as he did ranunge the fields abroad,  
Whilest his faire Pastorella was elsewhere,  
He chaunst to come, far from all peoples  
troad,  
Unto a place, whose pleasaunce did appere  
To passe all others on the earth which  
were:  
For all that ever was by Natures skill  
Devised to worke delight was gathered  
there,  
And there by her were poured forth at fill,  
As if, this to adorne, she all the rest did  
pill.

## VI

It was an hill plaste in an open plaine,  
That round about was bordered with a  
wood  
Of matchlesse hight, that seem'd th' earth  
to disdaine;  
In which all trees of honour stately stood,

And did all winter as in sommer bud,  
 Spredde pavilions for the birds to bowre,  
 Which in their lower braunches sung aloud;  
 And in their tops the soring hauke did  
   towre,  
 Sitting like king of fowles in majesty and  
   powre.

## VII

And at the foote thereof, a gentle flud  
 His silver waves did softly tumble downe,  
 Unmard with ragged mosse or filthy mud;  
 Ne mote wylde bestes, ne mote the ruder  
   clowne  
 Thereto approach, ne filth mote therein  
   drowne:  
 But nymphes and faeries by the bancks did  
   sit,  
 In the woods shade, which did the waters  
   crowne,  
 Keeping all noysome things away from it,  
 And to the waters fall tuning their accents  
   fit.

## VIII

And on the top thereof a spacious plaine  
 Did spread it selfe, to serve to all delight,  
 Either to daunce, when they to daunce  
   would faine,  
 Or else to course about their bases light;  
 Ne ought there wanted, which for pleasure  
   might  
 Desired be, or thence to banish bale:  
 So pleasauntly the hill with equall hight  
 Did seeme to overlooke the lowly vale;  
 Therefore it rightly cleped was Mount  
   Acidale.

## IX

They say that Venus, when she did dispose  
 Her selfe to pleasaunce, used to resort  
 Unto this place, and therein to repose  
 And rest her selfe, as in a gladsome port,  
 Or with the Graces there to play and  
   sport;  
 That even her owne Cytheron, though in it  
 She used most to keepe her royall court,  
 And in her souveraine majesty to sit,  
 She in regard hereof refusde and thought  
   unfit.

## X

Unto this place when as the Elfin knight  
 Approcht, him seemed that the merry  
   sound

Of a shrill pipe he playing heard on hight,  
 And many feete fast thumping th' hollow  
   ground,  
 That through the woods their eccho did  
   rebound.  
 He nigher drew, to weete what mote it be;  
 There he a troupe of ladies dauncing found  
 Full merrily, and making gladfull glee,  
 And in the midst a shepherd piping he  
   did see.

## XI

He durst not enter into th' open greene,  
 For dread of them unwares to be descryde,  
 For breaking of their daunce, if he were  
   seene;  
 But in the covert of the wood did byde,  
 Beholding all, yet of them unespyde.  
 There he did see, that pleased much his  
   sight,  
 That even he him selfe his eyes envyde,  
 An hundred naked maidens lilly white,  
 All raunged in a ring, and dauncing in de-  
   light.

## XII

All they without were raunged in a ring,  
 And daunced round; but in the midst of  
   them  
 Three other ladies did both daunce and  
   sing,  
 The whilest the rest them round about did  
   hemme,  
 And like a girlond did in compasse stemme:  
 And in the midst of those same three was  
   placed  
 Another damzell, as a precious gemme  
 Amidst a ring most richly well enchaced,  
 That with her goodly presence all the rest  
   much graced.

## XIII

Looke how the crowne, which Ariadne wore  
 Upon her ivory forehead that same day  
 That Theseus her unto his bridale bore,  
 When the bold Centaures made that bloody  
   fray  
 With the fierce Lapithes, which did them  
   dismay,  
 Being now placed in the firmament,  
 Through the bright heaven doth her beams  
   display,  
 And is unto the starres an ornament,  
 Which round about her move in order ex-  
   cellent:



## XIV

Such was the beauty of this goodly band,  
 Whose sundry parts were here too long to  
 tell:  
 But she that in the midst of them did  
 stand  
 Seem'd all the rest in beauty to excell,  
 Crownd with a rosie girlond, that right  
 well  
 Did her beseme. And ever, as the crew  
 About her daunst, sweet flowres, that far  
 did smell,  
 And fragrant odours they uppon her threw;  
 But most of all, those three did her with  
 gifts endew.

## XV

Those were the Graces, daughters of de-  
 light,  
 Handmaidens of Venus, which are wont to  
 haunt  
 Uppon this hill, and daunce there day and  
 night:  
 Those three to men all gifts of grace do  
 graunt,  
 And all that Venus in her selfe doth vaunt  
 Is borrowed of them. But that faire one,  
 That in the midst was placed paravaunt,  
 Was she to whom that shepherd pypt  
 alone,  
 That made him pipe so merrily, as never  
 none.

## XVI

She was, to weete, that jolly shepherds  
 lasse,  
 Which piped there unto that merry rout;  
 That jolly shepherd which there piped  
 was  
 Poore Colin Clout (who knowes not Colin  
 Clout?)  
 He pypt apace, whilst they him daunst  
 about.  
 Pype, jolly shepherd, pype thou now  
 apace  
 Unto thy love, that made thee low to lout;  
 Thy love is present there with thee in  
 place,  
 Thy love is there advaunst to be another  
 Grace.

## XVII

Much wondred Calidore at this straunge  
 sight,  
 Whose like before his eye had never seene

And standing long astonished in spright,  
 And rapt with pleasaunce, wist not what to  
 weene;  
 Whether it were the traine of Beauties  
 Queene,  
 Or nymphes, or faeries, or enchaunted  
 show,  
 With which his eyes mote have deluded  
 beene.  
 Therefore resolving, what it was, to know,  
 Out of the wood he rose, and toward them  
 did go.

## XVIII

But soone as he appeared to their vew,  
 They vanisht all away out of his sight,  
 And cleane were gone, which way he never  
 knew;  
 All save the shepheard, who, for fell de-  
 spight  
 Of that displeasure, broke his bag-pipe  
 quight,  
 And made great mone for that unhappy  
 turne.  
 But Calidore, though no lesse sory wight  
 For that mishap, yet seeing him to mourne,  
 Drew neare, that he the truth of all by  
 him mote learne:

## XIX

And first him greeting, thus unto him  
 spake:  
 'Haile, jolly shepheard, which thy joyous  
 dayes  
 Here ledest in this goodly merry make,  
 Frequented of these gentle nymphes al-  
 wayes,  
 Which to thee flocke, to heare thy lovely  
 layes!  
 Tell me, what mote these dainty damzels  
 be,  
 Which here with thee doe make their  
 pleasant playes?  
 Right happy thou, that mayst them freely  
 see:  
 But why, when I them saw, fled they away  
 from me?'

## XX

'Not I so happy,' answerd then that  
 swaine,  
 'As thou unhappy, which them thence  
 didst chace,  
 Whom by no meanes thou canst recall  
 againe;

For being gone, none can them bring in  
place,  
But whom they of them selves list so to  
grace.'

'Right sorry I,' saide then Sir Calidore,  
'That my ill fortune did them hence dis-  
place.

But since things passed none may now re-  
store,

Tell me, what were they all, whose lacke  
thee grieues so sore.'

## XXI

Tho gau that shepheard thus for to dilate:  
'Then wote thou shepheard, whatsoever  
thou bee,

That all those ladies which thou sawest  
late

Are Venus damzels, all within her fee,

But differing in honour and degree:

They all are Graces, which on her depend,  
Besides a thousand more, which ready bee  
Her to adorne, when so she forth doth  
wend:

But those three in the midst doe chiefe on  
her attend.

## XXII

'They are the daughters of sky-ruling  
Jove,

By him begot of faire Eurynome,

The Oceans daughter, in this pleasant  
grove,

As he, this way comming from feastfull glee

Of Thetis wedding with Æacidee,

In sommers shade him selfe here rested  
weary.

The first of them hight mylde Euphrosyne,  
Next faire Aglaia, last Thalia merry:

Sweete goddesses all three, which me in  
mirth do cherry.

## XXIII

'These three on men all gracious gifts be-  
stow,

Which decke the body or adorne the  
mynde,

To make them lovely or well favoured  
show,

As comely carriage, entertainment kynde,  
Sweete semblaunt, friendly offices that  
bynde,

And all the complements of curtesie:

They teach us, how to each degree and  
kynde

We should our selves demeane, to low, to  
hie,  
To friends, to foes; which skill men call  
civility.

## XXIV

'Therefore they alwaies smoothly seeme  
to smile,

That we likewise should mylde and gentle  
be,

And also naked are, that without guile  
Or false dissemblaunce all them plaine  
may see,

Simple and true, from covert malice free:  
And eke them selves so in their daunce  
they bore,

That two of them still froward seem'd to  
bee,

But one still towards shew'd her selfe  
afore;

That good should from us goe, then come,  
in greater store.

## XXV

'Such were those goddesses which ye did  
see;

But that fourth mayd, which there amidst  
them traced,

Who can aread what creature mote she bee,  
Whether a creature, or a goddesse graced  
With heavenly gifts from heven first en-  
raced?

But what so sure she was, she worthy was  
To be the fourth with those three other  
placed:

Yet was she certes but a countrey lasse,  
Yet she all other countrey lasses farre did  
passe.

## XXVI

'So farre as doth the daughter of the day  
All other lesser lights in light excell,  
So farre doth she in beautyfull array  
Above all other lasses beare the bell:

Ne lesse in vertue, that beseemes her well,  
Doth she exceede the rest of all her race;  
For which the Graces, that here wont to  
dwell,

Have for more honor brought her to this  
place,

And graced her so much to be another Grace.

## XXVII

'Another Grace she well deserves to be,  
In whom so many graces gathered are,

Excelling much the meane of her degree;  
 Divine resemblaunce, beauty souveraine  
     rare,  
 Firme chastity, that spight ne blemish  
     dare;  
 All which she with such courtesie doth  
     grace,  
 That all her peres cannot with her com-  
     pare,  
 But quite are dimmed when she is in place.  
 She made me often pipe, and now to pipe  
     apace.

## XXVIII

'Sunne of the world, great glory of the  
     sky,  
 That all the earth doest lighten with thy  
     rayes,  
 Great Gloriana, greatest Majesty,  
 Pardon thy shepheard, mongst so many  
     layes  
 As he hath sung of thee in all his dayes,  
 To make one minime of thy poore hand-  
     mayd,  
 And underneath thy feete to place her  
     prayse,  
 That, when thy glory shall be farre dis-  
     playd  
 To future age, of her this mention may be  
     made.'

## XXIX

When thus that shepherd ended had his  
     speach,  
 Sayd Calidore: 'Now sure it yrketh mee,  
 That to thy blisse I made this luckelesse  
     breach,  
 As now the author of thy bale to be,  
 Thus to bereave thy loves deare sight  
     from thee:  
 But, gentle shepheard, pardon thou my  
     shame,  
 Who rashly sought that which I mote not  
     see.'  
 Thus did the courteous knight excuse his  
     blame,  
 And to recomfort him all comely meanes  
     did frame.

## XXX

In such discourses they together spent  
 Long time, as fit occasion forth them led;  
 With which the knight him selfe did much  
     content,  
 And with delight his greedy fancy fed,

Both of his words, which he with reason  
     red,  
 And also of the place, whose pleasures rare  
 With such regard his sences ravished,  
 That thence he had no will away to fare,  
 But wisht that with that shepheard he  
     mote dwelling share.

## XXXI

But that envenind sting, the which of yore  
 His poysnous point deepe fixed in his hart  
 Had left, now gan afresh to rancle sore,  
 And to renew the rigour of his smart:  
 Which to recure, no skill of leaches art  
 Mote him avails, but to returne againe  
 To his wounds worker, that with lovely dart  
 Dinting his brest, had bred his restlesse  
     paine,  
 Like as the wounded whale to shore flies  
     from the maine.

## XXXII

So taking leave of that same gentle swaine,  
 He backe returned to his rusticke wonne,  
 Where his faire Pastorella did remaine:  
 To whome, in sort as he at first begonne,  
 He daily did apply him selfe to donne  
 All dewfull service, voide of thoughts im-  
     pure:  
 Ne any paines ne perill did he shonne,  
 By which he might her to his love allure,  
 And liking in her yet untamed heart pro-  
     cure.

## XXXIII

And evermore the shepheard Coridon,  
 What ever thing he did her to aggrate,  
 Did strive to match with strong contention,  
 And all his paines did closely emulate;  
 Whether it were to caroll, as they sate  
 Keeping their sheepe, or games to exercise,  
 Or to present her with their labours late;  
 Through which if any grace chaunst to  
     arize  
 To him, the shepheard streight with jeal-  
     ousie did frize.

## XXXIV

One day as they all three together went  
 To the greene wood, to gather strawberries,  
 There chaunst to them a dangerous acci-  
     dent:  
 A tigre forth out of the wood did rise,  
 That with fell claws full of fierce gour-  
     mandize,



And greedy mouth, wide gaping like hell  
gate,  
Did runne at Pastorell her to surprize;  
Whom she beholding, now all desolate  
Gan cry to them aloud, to helpe her all too  
late.

## XXXV

Which Coridon first hearing, ran in hast  
To reskue her, but when he saw the feend,  
Through cowherd feare he fled away as  
fast,  
Ne durst abide the daunger of the end;  
His life he steemed dearer then his frend.  
Bnt Calidore soone comming to her ayde,  
When he the beast saw ready now to rend  
His loves deare spoile, in which his heart  
was prayde,  
He ran at him enraged, in stead of being  
frayde.

## XXXVI

He had no weapon, but his shepherds  
hooke,  
To serve the vengeaunce of his wrathfull  
will;  
With which so sternely he the monster  
strooke,  
That to the ground astonished he fell;  
Whence ere he could recov'r, he did him  
quell,  
And hewing off his head, it presented  
Before the feete of the faire Pastorell;  
Who scarcely yet from former feare ex-  
empted,  
A thousand times him thank't, that had her  
death prevented.

## XXXVII

From that day forth she gan him to affect,  
And daily more her favour to augment;  
But Coridon for cowherdize reject,  
Fit to keepe sheepe, unfit for loves content:  
The gentle heart scornes base disparage-  
ment.  
Yet Calidore did not despise him quight,  
But usde him friendly for further intent,  
That by his fellowship he colour might  
Both his estate and love from skill of any  
wight.

## XXXVIII

So well he wood her, and so well he  
wrought her,  
With humble service, and with daily sute,

That at the last unto his will he brought  
her;  
Which he so wisely well did prosecute,  
That of his love he reapt the timely frute,  
And joyed long in close felicity:  
Till Fortune, fraught with malice, blinde  
and brute,  
That envies lovers long prosperity,  
Blew up a bitter storme of foule adversity.

## XXXIX

It fortun'd one day, when Calidore  
Was hunting in the woods (as was his  
trade)  
A lawlesse people, Brigants hight of yore,  
That never usde to live by plough nor  
spade,  
But fed on spoile and booty, which they  
made  
Upon their neighbours which did nigh  
them border,  
The dwelling of these shepherds did in-  
vade,  
And spoyld their houses, and them selves  
did murder,  
And drove away their flocks, with other  
much disorder.

## XL

Amongst the rest, the which they then did  
pray,  
They spoyld old Melibee of all he had,  
And all his people captive led away;  
Mongst which this lucklesse mayd away  
was lad,  
Faire Pastorella, sorrowfull and sad,  
Most sorrowfull, most sad, that ever sight,  
Now made the spoile of theeves and Bri-  
gants bad,  
Which was the conquest of the gentlest  
knight  
That ever liv'd, and th' onely glory of his  
might.

## XLI

With them also was taken Coridon,  
And carried captive by those theeves away;  
Who in the covert of the night, that none  
Mote them descry, nor reskue from their  
pray,  
Unto their dwelling did them close con-  
vey.  
Their dwelling in a little island was,  
Covered with shrubby woods, in which no  
way

Appeard for people in nor out to pas,  
Nor any footing fynde for overgrown gras.

## XLII

For underneath the ground their way was  
made,  
Through hollow caves, that no man mote  
discover  
For the thicke shrubs, which did them  
alwaies shade  
From view of living wight, and covered  
over:  
But darknesse dred and daily night did  
hover  
Through all the inner parts, wherein they  
dwelt;  
Ne lightned was with window, nor with  
lover,  
But with continuall candlelight, which delt  
A doubtfull sense of things, not so well  
seene as felt.

## XLIII

Hither those Brigants brought their pre-  
sent pray,  
And kept them with continuall watch and  
ward,  
Meaning, so soone as they convenient may,  
For slaves to sell them, for no small re-  
ward,  
To merchants, which them kept in bond-  
age hard,  
Or sold againe. Now when faire Pastorell  
Into this place was brought, and kept with  
gard  
Of griesly theeves, she thought her self  
in hell,  
Where with such damned fiends she should  
in darknesse dwell.

## XLIV

But for to tell the dolefull dreriment,  
And pittifull complaints, which there she  
made,  
Where day and night she nought did but  
lament  
Her wretched life, shut up in deadly shade,  
And waste her goodly beauty, which did  
fade  
Like to a flowre that feeles no heate of  
sunne,  
Which may her feeble leaves with comfort  
glade —  
But what befell her in that theevish wonne  
Will in an other canto better be begonne.

## CANTO XI

The theeves fall out for Pastorell,  
Whilest Mellbee is slaine:  
Her Calidore from them redeemes,  
And bringeth backe againe.

## I

THE joyes of love, if they should ever last,  
Without affliction or disquietnesse,  
That worldly chaunces doe amongst them  
cast,  
Would be on earth too great a blessed-  
nesse,  
Liker to heaven then mortall wretched-  
nesse.  
Therefore the winged god, to let men  
weet  
That here on earth is no sure happinesse,  
A thousand sowres hath tempred with one  
sweet,  
To make it seeme more deare and dainty,  
as is meet.

## II

Like as is now befallne to this faire mayd,  
Faire Pastorell, of whom is now my song,  
Who being now in dreadfull darknesse  
layd,  
Amongst those theeves, which her in bond-  
age strong  
Detaynd, yet Fortune, not with all this  
wrong  
Contented, greater mischief on her threw,  
And sorrowes heapt on her in greater  
throng;  
That who so heares her heavinesse would  
rew  
And pittie her sad plight, so chang'd from  
pleasaunt hew.

## III

Whylest thus she in these hellish dens re-  
mayned,  
Wrapped in wretched cares and hearts  
unrest,  
It so befell (as Fortune had ordayned)  
That he which was their capitaine profest,  
And had the chiefe commaund of all the  
rest,  
One day as he did all his prisoners vew,  
With lustfull eyes beheld that lovely guest,  
Faire Pastorella, whose sad mournfull  
hew  
Like the faire morning clad in misty fog  
did shew.

## IV

At sight whereof his barbarous heart was  
fired,  
And inly burnt with flames most raging  
whot,  
That her alone he for his part desired  
Of all the other pray which they had got,  
And her in mynde did to him selfe allot.  
From that day forth he kyndnesse to her  
showed,  
And sought her love by all the meanes he  
mote;  
With looks, with words, with gifts he oft  
her wowed,  
And mixed threats among, and much unto  
her vowed.

## V

But all that ever he could doe or say  
Her constant mynd could not a whit re-  
move,  
Nor draw unto the lure of his lewd lay,  
To graunt him favour or afford him love.  
Yet ceast he not to sew, and all waies  
prove,  
By which he mote accomplish his request,  
Saying and doing all that mote behove;  
Ne day nor night he suffred her to rest,  
But her all night did watch, and all the  
day molest.

## VI

At last when him she so importune saw,  
Fearing least he at length the raines would  
lend  
Unto his lust, and make his will his law,  
Sith in his powre she was to foe or frend,  
She thought it best, for shadow, to pretend  
Some shew of favour, by him gracing  
small,  
That she thereby mote either freely wend,  
Or at more ease continue there his thrall:  
A little well is lent, that gaineth more  
withall.

## VII

So from thenceforth, when love he to her  
made,  
With better tearmes she did him entertaine,  
Which gave him hope, and did him halfe  
perswade,  
That he in tyme her joyaunce should ob-  
taine.  
But when she saw, through that small  
favours gaine,

That further then she willing was he prest,  
She found no meanes to barre him, but to  
faine  
A sodaine sicknesse, which her sore op-  
prest,  
And made unfit to serve his lawlesse  
minides behest.

## VIII

By meanes whereof she would not him per-  
mit  
Once to approach to her in privy,  
But onely mongst the rest by her to sit,  
Mourning the rigour of her malady,  
And seeking all things meete for remedy.  
But she resolv'd no remedy to fynde,  
Nor better cheare to shew in misery,  
Till Fortune would her captive bonds un-  
bynde:  
Her sicknesse was not of the body, but  
the mynde.

## IX

During which space that she thus sicke did  
lie,  
It chaunst a sort of merchants, which were  
wount  
To skim those coastes, for bondmen there  
to buy,  
And by such trafficke after gaines to hunt,  
Arrived in this isle, though bare and blunt,  
T' inquire for slaves; where being readie  
met  
By some of these same theeves, at the in-  
stant brunt,  
Were brought unto their captaine, who was  
set  
By his faire patients side with sorrowfull  
regret.

## X

To whom they shewed, how those marchants  
were  
Arriv'd in place, their bondslaves for to buy,  
And therefore prayd that those same cap-  
tives there  
Mote to them for their most commodity  
Be sold, and mongst them shared equally.  
This their request the captaine much ap-  
palled;  
Yet could he not their just demaund deny,  
And willed streight the slaves should forth  
be called,  
And sold for most advantage, not to be  
forestalled.



## XI

Thenforth the good old Melibœ was brought,  
 And Coridon, with many other moe,  
 Whom they before in diverse spoyles had  
   caught:  
 All which he to the marchants sale did  
   showe.  
 Till some, which did the sundry prisoners  
   knowe,  
 Gan to inquire for that faire shepherdesse,  
 Which with the rest they tooke not long  
   agee,  
 And gan her forme and feature to expresse,  
 The more t' augment her price through  
   praise of comlinesse.

## XII

To whom the captaine in full angry wize  
 Made answere, that the mayd of whom  
   they spake  
 Was his owne purchase and his onely prize,  
 With which none had to doe, ne ought par-  
   take,  
 But he himselfe, which did that conquest  
   make;  
 Little for him to have one silly lasse:  
 Besides through sicknesse now so wan and  
   weake,  
 That nothing meet in marchandise to passe.  
 So shew'd them her, to prove how pale and  
   weake she was.

## XIII

The sight of whom, though now decayd  
   and mard,  
 And eke but hardly seene by candle-light,  
 Yet like a diamond of rich regard,  
 In doubtfull shadow of the darkesome  
   night,  
 With starrie beames about her shining  
   bright,  
 These marchants fixed eyes did so amaze,  
 That what through wonder, and what  
   through delight,  
 A while on her they greedily did gaze,  
 And did her greatly like, and did her  
   greatly praise.

## XIV

At last when all the rest them offred were,  
 And prises to them placed at their pleas-  
   ure,  
 They all refused in regard of her,  
 Ne ought would buy, how ever prisd with  
   measure,

Withouten her, whose worth above all  
   threasure  
 They did esteeme, and offred store of gold.  
 But then the captaine, fraught with more  
   displeasure,  
 Bad them be still, his love should not be  
   sold:  
 The rest take if they would, he her to him  
   would hold.

## XV

Therewith some other of the chiefest  
   theeves  
 Boldly him bad such injurie forbear;  
 For that same mayd, how ever it him  
   greeves,  
 Should with the rest be sold before him  
   theare,  
 To make the prises of the rest more deare.  
 That with great rage he stoutly doth denay;  
 And fiercely drawing forth his blade, doth  
   swear,  
 That who so hardie hand on her doth lay,  
 It dearly shall aby, and death for handsell  
   pay.

## XVI

Thus as they words amongst them multiply,  
 They fall to strokes, the frute of too much  
   talke,  
 And the mad steele about doth fiercely fly,  
 Not sparing wight, ne leaving any balke,  
 But making way for Death at large to  
   walke:  
 Who, in the horror of the griesly night,  
 In thousand dreadful shapes doth mongst  
   them stalke,  
 And makes huge havocke, whiles the can-  
   dlelight  
 Out quenched leaves no skill nor difference  
   of wight.

## XVII

Like as a sort of hungry dogs, ymet  
 About some carcase by the common way,  
 Doe fall together, stryving each to get  
 The greatest portion of the greedie pray;  
 All on confused heapes themselves assay,  
 And snatch, and byte, and rend, and tug,  
   and teare,  
 That who them sees would wonder at their  
   fray,  
 And who sees not would be affrayd to heare:  
 Such was the conflict of those cruell Brig-  
   ants there.

## XVIII

But first of all, their captives they doe kill,  
 Least they should joyne against the weaker  
 side,  
 Or rise against the remnant at their will:  
 Old Melibœ is slaine, and him beside  
 His aged wife, with many others wide;  
 But Coridon, escaping craftily,  
 Creepes forth of dores, whilst darknes him  
 doth hide,  
 And flyes away as fast as he can hye,  
 Ne stayeth leave to take, before his friends  
 doe dye.

## XIX

But Pastorella, wofull wretched elfe,  
 Was by the captaine all this while defended,  
 Who, minding more her safety then him-  
 selfe,  
 His target alwayes over her pretended;  
 By meanes whereof, that mote not be  
 amended,  
 He at the length was slaine, and layd on  
 ground,  
 Yet holding fast twixt both his armes ex-  
 tended  
 Fayre Pastorell, who with the selfe same  
 wound  
 Launcht through the arme, fell down with  
 him in dreerie swound.

## XX

There lay she covered with confused  
 preasse  
 Of carcases, which dying on her fell.  
 Tho, when as he was dead, the fray gan  
 cease,  
 And each to other calling, did compell  
 To stay their cruell hands from slaughter  
 fell,  
 Sith they that were the cause of all were  
 gone.  
 Thereto they all attonce agreed well,  
 And lighting candles new, gan search  
 anone,  
 How many of their friends were slaine,  
 how many fone.

## XXI

Their captaine there they cruelly found  
 kild,  
 And in his armes the dreary dying mayd,  
 Like a sweet angell twixt two clouds up-  
 hild:  
 Her lovely light was dimmed and decayd,

With cloud of death upon her eyes dis-  
 playd;  
 Yet did the cloud make even that dimmed  
 light  
 Seeme much more lovely in that darknesse  
 layd,  
 And twixt the twinkling of her eye-lids  
 bright  
 To sparke out litle beames, like starres in  
 foggie night.

## XXII

But when they mov'd the carcases aside,  
 They found that life did yet in her re-  
 maine:  
 Then all their helps they busily applyde,  
 To call the soule backe to her home  
 againe;  
 And wrought so well with labour and long  
 paine,  
 That they to life recovered her at last.  
 Who sighing sore, as if her hart in twaine  
 Had riven bene, and all her hart strings  
 brast,  
 With drearie drouping eyne lookt up like  
 one aghast.

## XXIII

There she beheld, that sore her griev'd to  
 see,  
 Her father and her friends about her  
 lying,  
 Her selfe sole left, a second spoyle to bee  
 Of those that, having saved her from  
 dying,  
 Renew'd her death by timely death deny-  
 ing.  
 What now is left her but to wayle and  
 weepe,  
 Wringing her hands, and ruefully loud  
 crying?  
 Ne cared she her wound in teares to  
 steepe,  
 Albe with all their might those Brigants  
 her did keepe.

## XXIV

But when they saw her now reliv'd againe,  
 They left her so, in charge of one the best  
 Of many worst, who with unkind disdaine  
 And cruell rigour her did much molest;  
 Scarse yelding her due food, or timely  
 rest,  
 And scarcely suffring her infestred wound,  
 That sore her payn'd, by any to be drest.

So leave we her in wretched thraldome  
bound,  
And turne we backe to Calidore, where we  
him found.

## XXV

Who when he backe returned from the  
wood,  
And saw his shepherds cottage spoyled  
quight,  
And his love reft away, he wexed wood,  
And halfe enrag'd at that ruefull sight,  
That even his hart, for very fell despight,  
And his owne flesh he readie was to teare:  
He chaufft, he griev'd, he fretted, and he  
sight,  
And fared like a furious wyld beare,  
Whose whelpes are stolne away, she being  
otherwise.

## XXVI

Ne wight he found, to whom he might  
complaine,  
Ne wight he found, of whom he might in-  
quire;  
That more increast the anguish of his  
paine.  
He sought the woods; but no man could  
see there:  
He sought the plaines; but could no tydings  
heare:  
The woods did nought but ecchoes vaine  
rebound;  
The playnes all waste and emptie did ap-  
peare:  
Where wont the shepherds oft their pypes  
resound,  
And feed an hundred flocks, there now not  
one he found.

## XXVII

At last, as there he romed up and downe,  
He chaunst one comming towards him to  
spy,  
That seem'd to be some sorie simple clowne,  
With ragged weedes, and lockes upstaring  
hye,  
As if he did from some late daunger fly,  
And yet his feare did follow him be-  
hynd:  
Who as he unto him approached nye,  
He mote perceiue by signes which he did  
fynd,  
That Coridon it was, the silly shepherds  
hynd.

## XXVIII

Tho to him running fast, he did not stay  
To greet him first, but askt, where were  
the rest;  
Where Pastorell? Who full of fresh dis-  
may,  
And gushing forth in teares, was so opprest,  
That he no word could speake, but smit his  
breast,  
And up to heaven his eyes fast streiming  
threw.  
Whereat the knight amaz'd, yet did not rest,  
But askt againe, what ment that ruefull hew:  
Where was his Pastorell? where all the  
other crew?

## XXIX

'Ah, well away!' said he then sighing sore,  
'That ever I did live, this day to see,  
This dismall day, and was not dead before,  
Before I saw faire Pastorella dye!'  
'Die? out alas!' then Calidore did cry,  
'How could the death dare ever her to quell?  
But read, thou shepherd, read what destiny  
Or other dyrefull hap from heaven or hell  
Hath wrought this wicked deed: doe feare  
away, and tell.'

## XXX

Tho, when the shepherd breathed had a  
whyle,  
He thus began: 'Where shall I then com-  
mence  
This wofull tale? or how those Brigants  
vyle,  
With cruell rage and dreadfull violence  
Spoyle all our cots, and caried us from  
hence?  
Or how faire Pastorell should have bene  
sold  
To marchants, but was sav'd with strong  
defence?  
Or how those theeves, whilest one sought  
her to hold,  
Fell all at ods, and fought through fury  
fierce and bold?

## XXXI

'In that same conflict (woe is me!) befell  
This fatall chaunce, this dolefull accident,  
Whose heavy tydings now I have to tell.  
First all the captives, which they here had  
hent,  
Were by them slaine by generall consent;  
Old Melibæ and his good wife withall



These eyes saw die, and dearly did lament:  
But when the lot to Pastorell did fall,  
Their captaine long withstood, and did her death forstall.

## XXXII

‘But what could he gainst all them doe alone?  
It could not boot; needs mote she die at last:  
I onely scapt through great confusione  
Of cryes and clamors, which amongst them past,  
In dreadfull darknesse dreadfully aghast;  
That better were with them to have bene dead,  
Then here to see all desolate and wast,  
Despoyled of those joyes and jollyhead,  
Which with those gentle shepherds here I wont to lead.’

## XXXIII

When Calidore these ruefull newes had raught,  
His hart quite deaded was with anguish great,  
And all his wits with doole were nigh distraught,  
That he his face, his head, his brest did beat,  
And death it selfe unto himselfe did threat;  
Oft cursing th’ heavens, that so cruell were  
To her, whose name he often did repeat;  
And wishing oft, that he were present there,  
When she was slaine, or had bene to her succour nere.

## XXXIV

But after grieve awhile had had his course,  
And spent it selfe in mourning, he at last  
Began to mitigate his swelling sourse,  
And in his mind with better reason cast,  
How he might save her life, if life did last;  
Or if that dead, how he her death might wreake,  
Sith otherwise he could not mend thing past;  
Or if it to revenge he were too weake,  
Then for to die with her, and his lives threed to breake.

## XXXV

Tho Coridon he prayd, sith he well knew  
The readie way unto that theevish wonne,  
To wend with him, and be his conduct trew  
Unto the place, to see what should be donne.  
But he, whose hart through feare was late fordonne,  
Would not for ought be drawne to former drede,  
But by all meanes the daunger knowne did shonne:  
Yet Calidore so well him wrought with meed,  
And faire bespoke with words, that he at last agreed.

## XXXVI

So forth they goe together (God before)  
Both clad in shepherds weeds agreeably,  
And both with shepherds hookes: but Calidore  
Had, underneath, him armed privily.  
Tho, to the place when they approched nye,  
They chaunst, upon an hill not farre away,  
Some flockes of sheepe and shepherds to espy;  
To whom they both agreed to take their way,  
In hope there newes to learne, how they mote best assay.

## XXXVII

There did they find, that which they did not feare,  
The selfe same flocks the which those theeves had reft  
From Melibœ and from themselves whyl-eare,  
And certaine of the theeves there by them left,  
The which for want of heards themselves then kept.  
Right well knew Coridon his owne late sheepe,  
And seeing them, for tender pittie wept:  
But when he saw the theeves which did them keepe,  
His hart gan fayle, albe he saw them all asleepe.

## XXXVIII

But Calidore recomforting his grieve,  
Though not his feare; for nought may feare disswade;

Him hardly forward drew, whereas the  
thiefe

Lay sleeping soundly in the bushes shade;  
Whom Coridon him counseld to invade  
Now all unwares, and take the spoyle away;  
But he, that in his mind had closely made  
A further purpose, would not so them slay,  
But gently waking them, gave them the  
time of day.

## XXXIX

Tho sitting downe by them upon the greene,  
Of sundrie things he purpose gan to faine;  
That he by them might certaine tydings  
weene

Of Pastorell, were she alive or slaine.  
Mongst which the theeves them questioned  
again,

What mister men, and eke from whence  
they were.

To whom they answer'd, as did appertaine,  
That they were poore heardgroomes, the  
which whylere

Had from their maisters fled, and now  
sought hyre elsewhere.

## XL

Whereof right glad they seem'd, and offer  
made

To hyre them well, if they their flockes  
would keepe:

For they themselves were evill groomes,  
they sayd,

Unwont with heards to watch, or pasture  
sheepe,

But to forray the land, or scoure the deepe.  
Thereto they soone agreed, and earnest  
tooke,

To keepe their flockes for litle hyre and  
chepe;

For they for better hyre did shortly looke:  
So there all day they bode, till light the  
sky forsooke.

## XLI

Tho, when as towards darksome night it  
drew,

Unto their hellish dens those theeves them  
brought,

Where shortly they in great acquaintance  
grew,

And all the secrets of their entrayles sought.  
There did they find, contrarie to their  
thought,

That Pastorell yet liv'd, but all the rest

Were dead, right so as Coridon had taught:  
Whereof they both full glad and blyth did  
rest,

But chiefly Calidore, whom grieve had most  
possest.

## XLII

At length, when they occasion fittest found,  
In dead of night, when all the theeves did  
rest

After a late forray, and slept full sound,  
Sir Calidore him arm'd, as he thought best,  
Having of late by diligent inquest

Provided him a sword of meanest sort:  
With which he streight went to the cap-  
taines nest.

But Coridon durst not with him consort,  
Ne durst abide behind, for dread of worse  
effort.

## XLIII

When to the cave they came, they found  
it fast:

But Calidore with huge resistlesse might  
The dores assayed, and the locks upbrast.  
With noyse whereof the theefe awaking  
light,

Unto the entrance ran: where the bold  
knight,

Encountring him, with small resistance  
slew;

The whiles faire Pastorell through great  
affright

Was almost dead, misdoubting least of new  
Some uprore were like that which lately  
she did vew.

## XLIV

But when as Calidore was comen in,  
And gan aloud for Pastorell to call,  
Knowing his voice, although not heard long  
sin,

She sudden was revived therewithall,  
And wondrous joy felt in her spirits thrall:  
Like him that being long in tempest tost,  
Looking each houre into deathes mouth to  
fall,

At length espyes at hand the happie cost,  
On which he safety hopes, that earst feard  
to be lost.

## XLV

Her gentle hart, that now long season past  
Had never joyance felt, nor chearefull  
thought,

Began some smacke of comfort new to tast,  
Like lyfull heat to nummed senses brought,  
And life to feele, that long for death had  
sought;

Ne lesse in hart rejoyced Calidore,  
When he her found, but, like to one dis-  
traught

And robd of reason, towards her him bore,  
A thousand times embrast, and kist a thou-  
sand more.

## XLVI

But now by this, with noyse of late uprore,  
The hue and cry was raysed all about;  
And all the Brigants, flocking in great store,  
Unto the cave gan preasse, nought having  
dout

Of that was doen, and entred in a rout.  
But Calidore in th' entry close did stand,  
And entertayning them with courage stout,  
Still slew the formost that came first to  
hand,  
So long, till all the entry was with bodies  
mand.

## XLVII

Tho, when no more could nigh to him ap-  
proch,  
He breath'd his sword, and rested him till  
day:

Which when he spyde upon the earth t'  
eneroch,

Through the dead carcases he made his way,  
Mongst which he found a sword of better  
say,

With which he forth went into th' open  
light:

Where all the rest for him did readie stay,  
And fierce assayling him, with all their  
might

Gan all upon him lay: there gan a dreadfull  
fight.

## XLVIII

How many flies in whottest sommers day  
Do seize upon some beast, whose flesh is  
bare,

That all the place with swarmes do overlay,  
And with their litle stings right felly fare;  
So many theeves about him swarming are,  
All which do him assayle on every side,  
And sore oppresse, ne any him doth spare:  
But he doth with his raging brond divide  
Their thickest troupes, and round about him  
scattreth wide.

## XLIX

Like as a lion mongst an heard of dere,  
Disperseth them to catch his choysest pray;  
So did he fly amongst them here and there,  
And all that nere him came did hew and  
slay,

Till he had strowd with bodies all the way;  
That none his daunger daring to abide,  
Fled from his wrath, and did themselves  
conuay

Into their caves, their heads from death to  
hide,

Ne any left, that victorie to him envide.

## L

Then backe returning to his dearest deare,  
He her gan to recomfort, all he might,  
With gladfull speaches and with lovely  
cheare,

And forth her bringing to the joyous light,  
Whereof she long had lackt the wishfull  
sight,

Deviz'd all goodly meanes, from her to  
drive

The sad remembrance of her wretched  
plight.

So her uneath at last he did revive,  
That long had lyen dead, and made againe  
alive.

## LI

This doen, into those theevish dens he went,  
And thence did all the spoyles and threa-  
sures take,

Which they from many long had robd and  
rent,

But Fortune now the victors meed did make;  
Of which the best he did his love betake;  
And also all those flockes, which they be-  
fore

Had reft from Melibæ and from his make,  
He did them all to Coridon restore:

So drove them all away, and his love with  
him bore.

## CANTO XII

Fayre Pastorella by great hap  
Her parents understands.  
Calidore doth the Blatant Beast  
Subdew, and bynd in bands.

## I

LIKE as a ship, that through the ocean wyde  
Directs her course unto one certaine cost,



Is met of many a counter winde and tyde,  
With which her winged speed is let and  
    crost,

And she her selfe in stormic surges tost;  
Yet making many a borde, and many a bay,  
Still winneth way, ne hath her compasse  
    lost:

Right so it fares with me in this long way.  
Whose course is often stayd, yet never is  
    astray.

## II

For all that hetherto hath long delayd  
This gentle knight from sewing his first  
    quest,

Though out of course, yet hath not bene  
    mis-sayd,

To shew the courtesie by him profest  
Even unto the lowest and the least.

But now I come into my course againe,  
To his atchievement of the Blatant Beast;  
Who all this while at will did range and  
    raïne,

Whilst none was him to stop, nor none him  
    to restraine.

## III

Sir Calidore, when thus he now had raught  
Faire Pastorella from those Brigants powre,  
Unto the Castle of Beigard her brought,  
Whereof was lord the good Sir Bella-  
    monre;

Who whylome was, in his youthes freshest  
    flowre,

A lustie knight as ever wielded speare,  
And had endured many a dreadfull stoure  
In bloody battell for a ladie deare,  
The fayrest ladie then of all that living  
    were.

## IV

Her name was Claribell, whose father hight  
The Lord of Many Ilands, farre renound  
For his great riches and his greater might.  
He, through the wealth wherein he did  
    abound,

This daughter thought in wedlocke to have  
    bound

Unto the Prince of Picteland bordering  
    nere;

But she, whose sides before with secret  
    wound

Of love to Bellamoure empierced were,  
By all meanes shund to match with any  
    forrein fere.

## V

And Bellamour againe so well her pleased,  
With dayly service and attendance dew,  
That of her love he was entyrelly seized,  
And closely did her wed, but knowne to  
    few.

Which when her father understood, he grew  
In so great rage, that them in dongeon  
    deepe

Without compassion cruelly he threw;  
Yet did so streightly them a sunder keepe,  
That neither could to company of th' other  
    creepe.

## VI

Nathlesse Sir Bellamour, whether through  
    grace

Or secret gifts, so with his keepers  
    wrought,

That to his love sometimes he came in  
    place,

Whereof her wombe, unwist to wight, was  
    fraught,

And in dew time a mayden child forth  
    brought.

Which she streight way, for dread least, if  
    her syre

Should know thereof, to slay he would  
    have sought,

Delivered to her handmayd, that for hyre  
She should it cause be fostred under  
    straunge attyre.

## VII

The trustie damzell bearing it abroad  
Into the emptie fields, where living wight  
Mote not bewray the secret of her lode,  
She forth gan lay unto the open light  
The litle babe, to take thereof a sight.

Whom whylest she did with watrie eyne  
    behold,

Upon the litle brest, like christall bright,  
She mote perceiue a litle purple mold,  
That like a rose her silken leaves did faire  
    unfold.

## VIII

Well she it markt, and pittied the more,  
Yet could not remedie her wretched case,  
But, closing it againe like as before,  
Bedeaw'd with teares there left it in the  
    place:

Yet left not quite, but drew a litle space  
Behind the bushes, where she **her did**  
    hyde,

To weet what mortall hand, or heavens  
grace,  
Would for the wretched infants helpe pro-  
vyde,  
For which it loudly cald, and pittifully  
cryde.

## IX

At length a shepheard, which there by did  
keepe  
His fleecie flocke upon the playnes around,  
Led with the infants cry, that loud did  
weepe,  
Came to the place; where when he wrapped  
found  
Th' abandond spoyle, he softly it unbound;  
And seeing there that did him pittie sore,  
He tooke it up, and in his mantle wound;  
So home unto his honest wife it bore,  
Who as her owne it nurst, and named  
evermore.

## X

Thus long continu'd Claribell a thrall,  
And Bellamour in bands, till that her syre  
Departed life, and left unto them all.  
Then all the stormes of Fortunes former  
yre  
Were turnd, and they to freedome did re-  
tyre.  
Thenceforth they joy'd in happinesse to-  
gether,  
And lived long in peace and love entyre,  
Without disquiet or dislike of ether,  
Till time that Calidore brought Pastorella  
thether.

## XI

Both whom they goodly well did entertaine;  
For Bellamour knew Calidore right well,  
And loved for his prowesse, sith they twaine  
Long since had fought in field: als Clari-  
bell  
No lesse did tender the faire Pastorell,  
Seeing her weake and wan, through durance  
long.  
There they a while together thus did dwell  
In much delight, and many joyes among,  
Untill the damzell gan to wex more sound  
and strong.

## XII

Tho gan Sir Calidore him to advize  
Of his first quest, which he had long for-  
loze.

Asham'd to thinke, how he that enter-  
prize,  
The which the Faery Queene had long  
afore  
Bequeath'd to him, forslacked had so sore;  
That much he feared, least reprochfull  
blame  
With foule dishonour him mote blot there-  
fore;  
Besides the losse of so much loos and fame,  
As through the world thereby should glorifie  
his name.

## XIII

Therefore resolving to returne in hast  
Unto so great atchievement, he bethought  
To leave his love, now perill being past,  
With Claribell, whylest he that monster  
sought  
Throughout the world, and to destruction  
brought.  
So taking leave of his faire Pastorell,  
Whom to recomfort all the meanes he  
wrought,  
With thanks to Bellamour and Claribell,  
He went forth on his quest, and did that  
him befall.

## XIV

But first, ere I doe his adventures tell  
In this exploite, me needeth to declare  
What did betide to the faire Pastorell,  
During his absence left in heavy care,  
Through daily mourning and nightly mis-  
fare:  
Yet did that auncient matrone all she night,  
To cherish her with all things choice and  
rare;  
And her owne handmayd, that Melissa  
hight,  
Appointed to attend her dewly day and  
night.

## XV

Who in a morning, when this mayden faire  
Was dighting her, having her snowy brest  
As yet not laced, nor her golden haire  
Into their comely tresses dewly drest,  
Chaunst to espy upon her yvory chest  
The rosie marke, which she remembred  
well  
That litle infant had, which forth she kest,  
The daughter of her Lady Claribell,  
The which she bore the whiles in prison she  
did dwell.

## XVI

Which well avizing, streight she gan to cast  
In her conceitfull mynd, that this faire  
mayd

Was that same infant, which so long sith past  
She in the open fields had loosely layd  
To fortunes spoile, unable it to ayd.  
So, full of joy, streight forth she ran in hast  
Unto her mistresse, being halfe dismayd,  
To tell her how the heavens had her graste,  
To save her chylde, which in misfortunes  
mouth was plaste.

## XVII

The sober mother, seeing such her mood,  
Yet knowing not what meant that sodaine  
thro,

Askt her, how mote her words be under-  
stood,  
And what the matter was, that mov'd her so.  
'My lief,' sayd she, 'ye know that long ygo,  
Whilest ye in durance dwelt, ye to me gave  
A little mayde, the which ye chylded tho;  
The same againe if now ye list to have,  
The same is yonder lady, whom High God  
did save.'

## XVIII

Much was the lady troubled at that speach,  
And gan to question streight how she it  
knew.

'Most certaine markes,' sayd she, 'do me  
it teach,

For on her brest I with these eyes did vew  
The litle purple rose which thereon grew,  
Whereof her name ye then to her did give.  
Besides, her countenance and her likely  
hew,

Matched with equall yeares, do surely  
prieve

That yond same is your daughter sure,  
which yet doth live.'

## XIX

The matrone stayd no lenger to enquire,  
But forth in hast ran to the straunger mayd;  
Whom catcheng greedily for great desire,  
Rent up her brest, and bosome open layd,  
In which that rose she plainly saw displayd.  
Then her embracing twixt her armes  
twaine,

She long so held, and softly weeping sayd:  
'And livest thou, my daughter, now againe?  
And art thou yet alive, whom dead I long  
did faine?'

## XX

Tho further asking her of sundry things,  
And times comparing with their accidents,  
She found at last by very certaine signes,  
And speaking markes of passed monu-  
ments,

That this young mayd, whom chance to her  
presents,

Is her owne daughter, her owne infant  
deare.

Tho, wondring long at those so straunge  
events,

A thousand times she her embraced nere,  
With many a joyfull kisse, and many a  
melting teare.

## XXI

Who ever is the mother of one chylde,  
Which having thought long dead, she  
fyndes alive,

Let her by proove of that which she hath  
fylde

In her owne breast, this mothers joy de-  
scribe:

For other none such passion can contrive  
In perfect forme, as this good lady felt,  
When she so faire a daughter saw survive,  
As Pastorella was, that nigh she swelt  
For passing joy, which did all into pittie  
melt.

## XXII

Thence running forth unto her loved lord,  
She unto him recounted all that fell:

Who joyning joy with her in one accord,  
Acknowledg'd for his owne faire Pastorell.  
There leave we them in joy, and let us tell  
Of Calidore, who, seeking all this while  
That monstrons beast by finall force to  
quell,

Through every place, with restlesse paine  
and toile,

Him follow'd by the tract of his outrageous  
spoile.

## XXIII

Through all estates he found that he had  
past,

In which he many massacres had left,  
And to the clergy now was come at last;  
In which such spoile, such havecke, and  
such theft

He wrought, that thence all goodnesse he  
bereft,

That endlesse were to tell. The Elfin knight,



Who now no place besides unsought had  
left,  
At length into a monastere did light,  
Where he him found despoyling all with  
maine and might.

## XXIV

Into their cloysters now he broken had,  
Through which the monckes he chased here  
and there,  
And them pursu'd into their dortours sad,  
And searched all their cels and secrets  
neare;  
In which what filth and ordure did appeare  
Were yrkesome to report; yet that foule  
beast,  
Nought sparing them, the more did tosse  
and teare,  
And ransacke all their dennes from most to  
least,  
Regarding nought religion, nor their holy  
heast.

## XXV

From thence into the sacred church he broke,  
And robd the chancell, and the deskes  
downe threw,  
And altars fouled, and blasphemy spoke,  
And th' images, for all their goodly hew,  
Did cast to ground, whilst none was them  
to rew;  
So all confounded and disordered there.  
But seeing Calidore, away he flew,  
Knowing his fatall hand by former feare;  
But he him fast pursuing, soone approched  
neare

## XXVI

Him in a narrow place he overtooke,  
And fierce assailing forst him turne againe:  
Sternely he turnd againe, when he him  
strooke  
With his sharpe steele, and ran at him  
amaine  
With open mouth, that seemed to containe  
A full good pecke within the utmost brim,  
All set with yron teeth in raunges twaine,  
That terrifide his foes, and armed him,  
Appearing like the mouth of Orcus grisly  
grim.

## XXVII

And therein were a thousand tongs em-  
pight,  
Of sundry kindes, and sundry quality;

Some were of dogs, that barked day and  
night,  
And some of cats, that wrawling still did cry,  
And some of beares, that groynd continu-  
ally,  
And some of tygres, that did seeme to gren  
And snar at all that ever passed by:  
But most of them were tongues of mortall  
men,  
Which spake reprochfully, not caring where  
nor when.

## XXVIII

And them amongst were mingled here and  
there  
The tongues of serpents with three forked  
stings,  
That spat out poyson and gore bloody gere  
At all that came within his ravenings,  
And spake licentious words and hatefull  
things  
Of good and bad alike, of low and hie;  
Ne kesars spared he a whit, nor kings,  
But either blotted them with infamie,  
Or bit them with his banefull teeth of injury.

## XXIX

But Calidore, thereof no whit afrayd,  
Rencountred him with so impetuous might,  
That th' outrage of his violence he stayd,  
And bet abacke, threatening in vaine to bite,  
And spitting forth the poyson of his spight,  
That fomed all about his bloody jawes.  
Tho, rearing up his former feete on light,  
He ramp't upon him with his ravenous  
pawes,  
As if he would have rent him with his  
cruell clawes.

## XXX

But he right well aware, his rage to ward,  
Did cast his shield atweene, and there-  
withall  
Putting his puissance forth, pursu'd so  
hard,  
That backward he enforced him to fall,  
And being downe, ere he new helpe could  
call,  
His shield he on him threw, and fast  
downe held,  
Like as a bullocke, that in bloody stall  
Of butchers balefull hand to ground is  
feld,  
Is forcibly kept downe, till he be throughly  
queld.

## XXXI

Full cruelly the beast did rage and rore,  
 To be downe held, and maystred so with  
 might,  
 That he gan fret and fome out bloudy gore,  
 Striving in vaine to rere him selfe upright.  
 For still the more he strove, the more the  
 knight  
 Did him suppress, and forcibly subdew;  
 That made him almost mad for fell de-  
 spight.  
 He grind, hee bit, he scratcht, he venim  
 threw,  
 And fared like a feend, right horrible in  
 hew:

## XXXII

Or like the hell-borne Hydra, which they  
 faine  
 That great Alcides whilome overthrew,  
 After that he had laboured long in vaine  
 To crop his thousand heads, the which still  
 new  
 Forth budded, and in greater number grew.  
 Such was the fury of this hellish beast,  
 Whilest Calidore him under him downe  
 threw;  
 Who nathemore his heavy load releast,  
 But aye the more he rag'd, the more his  
 powre increast.

## XXXIII

Tho when the beast saw he mote nought  
 availe  
 By force, he gan his hundred tongues apply,  
 And sharply at him to revile and raile,  
 With bitter termes of shamefull infamy;  
 Oft interlacing many a forged lie,  
 Whose like he never once did speake, nor  
 heare,  
 Nor ever thought thing so unworthily:  
 Yet did he nought, for all that, him for-  
 beare,  
 But strained him so streightly that he chokt  
 him neare.

## XXXIV

At last, when as he found his force to  
 shrinecke,  
 And rage to quaille, he tooke a muzzell strong  
 Of surest yron, made with many a lincke;  
 Therewith he mured up his mouth along,  
 And therein shut up his blasphemous tong,  
 For never more defaming gentle knight,  
 Or unto lovely lady doing wrong:

And thereunto a great long chaine he tight,  
 With which he drew him forth, even in his  
 own despight.

## XXXV

Like as whylome that strong Tirynthian  
 swaine  
 Brought forth with him the dreadfull dog  
 of hell,  
 Against his will fast bound in yron chaine,  
 And roring horribly, did him compell  
 To see the hatefull sunne, that he might tell  
 To griesly Pluto what on earth was donne,  
 And to the other damned ghosts, which dwell  
 For aye in darkenesse, which day light doth  
 shonne:  
 So led this knight his captyve with like  
 conquest wonne.

## XXXVI

Yet greatly did the beast repine at those  
 Straunge bands, whose like till then he  
 never bore,  
 Ne ever any durst till then impose,  
 And chauffed inly, seeing now no more  
 Him liberty was left aloud to rore:  
 Yet durst he not draw backe, nor once  
 withstand  
 The proved powre of noble Calidore,  
 But trembled underneath his mighty hand,  
 And like a fearefull dog him followed  
 through the land.

## XXXVII

Him through all Faery Land he follow'd so,  
 As if he learned had obedience long,  
 That all the people, where so he did go,  
 Out of their townes did round about him  
 throng,  
 To see him leade that beast in bondage  
 strong,  
 And seeing it, much wondred at the sight;  
 And all such persons as he earst did wrong  
 Rejoyced much to see his captive plight,  
 And much admyr'd the beast, but more  
 admyr'd the knight.

## XXXVIII

Thus was this monster, by the maystring  
 might  
 Of doughty Calidore, suppress and tamed,  
 That never more he mote endammadgo  
 wight  
 With his vile tongue, which many had de-  
 famed.

And many causelesse caused to be blamed:  
So did he eeke long after this remaine,  
Untill that, whether wicked fate so framed,  
Or fault of men, he broke his yron chaine,  
And got into the world at liberty againe.

## XXXIX

Thenceforth more mischiefe and more seath  
he wrought  
To mortall men, then he had done before;  
Ne ever could, by any, more be brought  
Into like bands, ne maystred any more:  
Albe that long time after Calidore,  
The good Sir Pelleas him tooke in hand,  
And after him Sir Lamoracke of yore,  
And all his brethren borne in Britaine  
land;  
Yet none of them could ever bring him into  
band.

## XL

So. now he raungeth through the world  
again,  
And rageth sore in each degree and state;

Ne any is, that may him now restraine,  
He growen is so great and strong of late,  
Barking and biting all that him doe bate,  
Albe they worthy blame, or cleare of crime.  
Ne spareth he most learned wits to rate,  
Ne spareth he the gentle poets rime,  
But rends without regard of person or of  
time.

## XLI

Ne may this homely verse, of many meanest,  
Hope to escape his venemous despise,  
More then my former writs, all were they  
cleanest  
From blamefull blot, and free from all that  
wite,  
With which some wicked tongues did it  
backebite,  
And bring into a mighty peres displeasure,  
That never so deserved to endite.  
Therefore do you, my rimes, keep better  
measure,  
And seeke to please, that now is counted  
wisemens threasure.

## TWO CANTOS

## OF

## MUTABILITIE

WHICH, BOTH FOR FORME AND MATTER, APPEARE TO BE PARCELL OF SOME FOL-  
LOWING BOOKE OF THE

## FAERIE QUEENE

## UNDER THE LEGEND

## OF

## CONSTANCIE

## NEVER BEFORE IMPRINTED

## CANTO VI

Proud Change (not pleas'd in mortall things  
Beneath the moone to raigne)  
Pretends, as well of gods as men,  
To be the souveraine.

## I

WHAT man that sees the ever-whirling  
wheele  
Of Change, the which all mortall things  
doth sway,  
But that therby doth find, and plainly feelee,

How Mutability in them doth play  
Her cruell sports, to many mens decay?  
Which that to all may better yet appeare,  
I will rehearse that whylome I heard say,  
How she at first her selfe began to reare  
Gainst all the gods, and th' empire sought  
from them to beare.

## II

But first, here falleth fittest to unfold  
Her antique race and linage ancient,  
As I have found it registred of old



In Faery Land mongst records permanent.  
She was, to weet, a daughter by descent  
Of those old Titans that did whylome  
strive

With Saturnes sonne for heavens regiment;  
Whom though high Jove of kingdome did  
deprive,

Yet many of their stemme long after did  
survive.

## III

And many of them afterwards obtain'd  
Great power of Jove, and high authority:  
As Hecatè, in whose almighty hand  
He plac't all rule and principality,  
To be by her disposed diversly,  
To gods and men, as she them list divide;  
And drad Bellona, that doth sound on hie  
Warres and allarums unto nations wide,  
That makes both heaven and earth to trem-  
ble at her pride.

## IV

So likewise did this Titanesse aspire,  
Rule and dominion to her selfe to gaine;  
That as a goddesse men might her ad-  
mire,  
And heavenly honours yield, as to them  
twaine.

And first, on earth she sought it to ob-  
taine;

Where she such prooffe and sad examples  
shewed

Of her great power, to many ones great  
paine,

That not men onely (whom she soone sub-  
dewed),

But eke all other creatures, her bad dooings  
rewed.

## V

For she the face of earthly things so  
changed,

That all which Nature had establisht first  
In good estate, and in meet order ranged,  
She did pervert, and all their statutes  
burst:

And all the worlds faire frame (which none  
yet durst

Of gods or men to alter or misguide)  
She alter'd quite, and made them all ac-  
cursd

That God had blest, and did at first pro-  
vide

In that still happy state for ever to abide.

## VI

Ne shee the lawes of Nature onely brake,  
But eke of Justice, and of Policie;  
And wrong of right, and bad of good did  
make,

And death for life exchanged foolishlie:  
Since which, all living wights have learn'd  
to die,

And all this world is woxen daily worse.  
O pittious worke of Mutabilitie!

By which we all are subject to that curse,  
And death, in stead of life, have suck'd  
from our nurse.

## VII

And now, when all the earth she thus had  
brought

To her behest, and thrall'd to her might,  
She gan to cast in her ambitious thought  
T' attempt the empire of the heavens hight,  
And Jove himselfe to shoulder from his  
right.

And first, she past the region of the ayre,  
And of the fire, whose substance thin and  
slight

Made no resistance, ne could her contraire,  
But ready passage to her pleasure did pre-  
paire.

## VIII

Thence to the circle of the Moone she  
clambe,

Where Cynthia raignes in everlasting glory,  
To whose bright shining palace straight she  
came,

All fairely deckt with heavens goodly story:  
Whose silver gates (by which there sate an  
hory

Old aged sire, with hower-glasse in hand,  
Hight Tyne) she entred, were he lief or  
sory:

Ne staide till she the highest stage had  
scand,

Where Cynthia did sit, that never still did  
stand.

## IX

Her sitting on an ivory throne shee found,  
Drawne of two steeds, th' one black, the  
other white,

Environd with tenne thousand starres  
around,

That duly her attended day and night;  
And by her side there ran her page, that  
hight

Vesper, whom we the evening-starre intend:  
That with his torche, still twinkling like twylight,  
Her lightened all the way where she should wend,  
And joy to weary wandring travellers did lend:

## X

That when the hardy Titanesse beheld  
The goodly building of her palace bright,  
Made of the heaveus substance, and up-held  
With thousand crystall pillars of huge height,  
Shee gan to burne in her ambitious spright,  
And t'envie her that in such glorie raigned.  
Eftsoones she cast by force and tortious might  
Her to displace, and to her selfe to have gained  
The kingdome of the night, and waters by her wained.

## XI

Boldly she bid the goddessc downe descend,  
And let her selfe into that ivory throne;  
For shee her selfe more worthy thereof wend,  
And better able it to guide alone:  
Whether to men, whose fall she did be-mone,  
Or unto gods, whose state she did maligne,  
Or to th'infernall powers, her need give lone  
Of her faire light and bounty most benigne,  
Her selfe of all that rule shee deemed most condigne.

## XII

But shee that had to her that soveraigne seat  
By highest Jove assign'd, therein to beare  
Nights burning lamp, regarded not her threat,  
Ne yielded ought for favour or for feare;  
But with sterne countenance and disdainfull cheare,  
Bending her horned browes, did put her back:  
And boldly blaming her for comming there,  
Bade her attonce from heavens coast to pack,  
Or at her perill bide the wrathfull thunders wrack.

## XIII

Yet nathemore the Giantesse forbare:  
But boldly preacing-on, raught forth her hand  
To pluck her downe perforce from off her chaire;  
And there-with lifting up her golden wand,  
Threatned to strike her if she did withstand.  
Where-at the starres, which round about her blazed,  
And eke the Moones bright wagon, still did stand.  
All beeing with so bold attempt amazed,  
And on her uncouth habit and sterne looke still gazed.

## XIV

Meane-while the lower world, which nothing knew  
Of all that chaunced here, was darkned quite;  
And eke the heavens, and all the heavenly crew  
Of happy wights, now unpurvaide of light,  
Were much afraid, and wondred at that sight;  
Fearing least Chaos broken had his chaine,  
And brought againe on them eternall night:  
But chiefly Mercury, that next doth raigne,  
Ran forth in haste, unto the king of gods to plaine.

## XV

All ran together with a great out-cry  
To Joves faire palace, fixt in heavens hight;  
And beating at his gates full earnestly,  
Gan call to him aloud with all their might,  
To know what meant that suddaine lack of light.  
The father of the gods, when this he heard,  
Was troubled much at their so strange affright,  
Doubting least Typhon were againe up-rear'd,  
Or other his old foes, that once him sorely fear'd.

## XVI

Eftsoones the sonne of Maia forth he sent  
Downe to the circle of the Moone, to knowe  
The cause of this so strange astonishment,  
And why shee did her wonted course for-slowe;  
And if that any were on earth belowe

That did with charmes or magick her  
molest,  
Him to attache, and downe to hell to  
throwe:  
But, if from heaven it were, then to arrest  
The author, and him bring before his pre-  
seuce prest.

## XVII

The wingd-foot god so fast his plumes did  
beat,  
That soone he came where-as the Titanesse  
Was striving with faire Cynthia for her  
seat:  
At whose strange sight and haughty hard-  
inesse  
He wondred much, and feared her no lesse.  
Yet laying feare aside to doe his charge,  
At last he bade her (with bold stedfast-  
nesse)  
Ceasse to molest the Moone to walke at  
large,  
Or come before high Jove, her dooings to  
discharge.

## XVIII

And there-with-all, he on her shoulder  
laid  
His snaky-wreathed inace, whose awfull  
power  
Doth make both gods and hellish fiends  
affraid:  
Wherc-at the Titanesse did sternely lower,  
And stoutly answer'd, that in evill hower  
He from his Jove such message to her  
brought,  
To bid her leave faire Cynthia's silver bower;  
Sith shée his Jove and him esteemed nought,  
No more then Cynthia's selfe; but all their  
kingdoms sought.

## XIX

The heavens herald staid not to reply,  
But past away, his doings to relate  
Unto his lord; who now, in th' highest sky,  
Was placed in his principall estate,  
With all the gods about him congregate:  
To whom when Hermes had his message  
told,  
It did them all exceedingly amate,  
Save Jove; who, changing nought his coun-  
t'nance bold,  
Did unto them at length these speeches  
wise unfold:

## XX

'Harken to mee awhile, yee heavenly pow-  
ers:  
Ye may remember since th' Earths cursed  
seed  
Sought to assaile the heavens eternall tow-  
ers,  
And to us all exceeding feare did breed:  
But how we then defeated all their deed,  
Yee all doe knowe, and them destroyed  
quite;  
Yet not so quite, but that there did suc-  
ceed  
An off-spring of their blood, which did alite  
Upon the fruitfull earth, which doth us yet  
despite.

## XXI

'Of that bad seed is this bold woman bred,  
That now with bold presumption doth aspire  
To thrust faire Phœbe from her silver bed,  
And eke our selves from heavens high em-  
pire,  
If that her might were match to her desire:  
Wherefore, it now behoves us to advise  
What way is best to drive her to retire;  
Whether by open force or counsell wise,  
Areed, ye sonnes of God, as best ye can  
devise.'

## XXII

So having said, he ceast; and with his brow  
(His black eye-brow, whose doomefull  
dreaded beek  
Is wont to wield the world unto his vow,  
And even the highest powers of heaven to  
check)  
Made signe to them in their degrees to  
speake:  
Who straight gan cast their counsell grave  
and wise.  
Meane-while th' Earths daughter, thogh she  
nought did reck  
Of Hermes message, yet gan now advise,  
What course were best to take in this hot  
bold emprise.

## XXIII

Eftsoones she thus resolv'd; that whil'st  
the gods  
(After returne of Hermes embassie)  
Were troubled, and amongst themselves at  
ods,  
Before they could new counsels re-allie,  
To set upon them in that extasie;



And take what fortune time and place would  
lend:  
So forth she rose, and through the purest  
sky  
To Joves high palace straight cast to ascend,  
To prosecute her plot: good on-set boads  
good end.

## XXIV

Shee there arriving, boldly in did pass;  
Where all the gods she found in counsell  
close,  
All quite unarm'd, as then their manner  
was.

At sight of her they suddaine all arose,  
In great amaze, ne wist what way to chose.  
But Jove, all fearelesse, forc't them to aby;  
And in his soveraine throne, gan straight  
dispose  
Himselfe more full of grace and majestie,  
That mote encheare his friends, and foes  
mote terrifie.

## XXV

That when the haughty Titanesse beheld,  
All were she fraught with pride and impu-  
dence,

Yet with the sight thereof was almost queld;  
And inly quaking, seem'd as reft of sense,  
And voyd of speech in that drad audience;  
Untill that Jove himselfe her selfe bespake:  
'Speake, thou fraile woman, speake with  
confidence;

Whence art thou, and what doost thou here  
now make?

What idle errand hast thou, earths man-  
sion to forsake?'

## XXVI

Shee, halfe confused with his great com-  
maund,

Yet gathering spirit of her natures pride,  
Him boldly answer'd thus to his demaund:  
'I am a daughter, by the mothers side,  
Of her that is grand-mother magnifide  
Of all the gods, great Earth, great Chaos  
child:

But by the fathers (be it not envie)  
I greater am in bloud (whereon I build)  
Then all the gods, though wrongfully from  
heaven exil'd.

## XXVII

'For Titan (as ye all acknowledge must)  
Was Saturnes elder brother by birth-right;

Both, sonnes of Uranus: but by unjust  
And guilefull meanes, through Corybantes  
slight,

The younger thrust the elder from his  
right:

Since which thou, Jove, injuriously hast  
held

The heavens rule from Titans sonnes by  
might;

And them to hellish dungeons downe hast  
feld:

Witnesse, ye heavens, the truth of all that  
I have teld.'

## XXVIII

Whil'st she thus spake, the gods, that gave  
good eare

To her bold words, and marked well her  
grace,

Beeing of stature tall as any there  
Of all the gods, and beautifull of face

As any of the goddesses in place,  
Stood all astonished; like a sort of steeres,

Mongst whom some beast of strange and  
forraine race

Unwares is chaunc't, far straying from his  
peeres:

So did their ghastly gaze bewray their hid-  
den feares.

## XXIX

Till, having pauz'd awhile, Jove thus be-  
spake:

'Will never mortall thoughts cease to as-  
pire,

In this bold sort, to heaven claime to  
make,

And touch celestiall seates with earthly  
mire?

I would have thought that bold Procrustes  
hire,

Or Typhons fall, or proud Ixions paine,  
Or great Prometheus tasting of our ire,

Would have suffiz'd the rest for to re-  
straine,

And warn'd all men, by their example, to  
refraine:

## XXX

'But now this off-seum of that cursed fry  
Dare to renew the like bold enterprize,

And chalenge th' heritage of this our skie;  
Whom what should hinder, but that we

likewise  
Should handle as the rest of her allies,

And thunder-drive to hell?' With that,  
 he shooke  
 His nectar-deawed locks, with which the  
 skyes  
 And all the world beneath for terror quooke,  
 And eft his burning levin-brond in hand he  
 tooke.

## XXXI

But, when he looked on her lovely face,  
 In which faire beames of beauty did ap-  
 peare,  
 That could the greatest wrath soone turne  
 to grace  
 (Such sway doth beauty even in heaven  
 beare)  
 He staide his hand: and having chang'd his  
 cheare,  
 He thus againe in milder wise began:  
 'But ah! if gods should strive with flesh  
 yfere,  
 Then shortly should the progeny of man  
 Be rooted out, if Jove should doe still what  
 he can.

## XXXII

'But thee, faire Titans child, I rather weene,  
 Through some vaine errour, or inducement  
 light,  
 To see that mortall eyes have never seene;  
 Or through ensample of thy sisters might,  
 Bellona, whose great glory thou doost  
 spight,  
 Since thou hast seene her dreadfull power  
 belowe,  
 Mongst wretched men, dismaide with her  
 affright,  
 To bandie crownes, and kingdomes to be-  
 stowe:  
 And sure thy worth no lesse then hers doth  
 seem to showe.

## XXXIII

'But wote thou this, thou hardy Titanesse,  
 That not the worth of any living wight  
 May challenge ought in heavens interesse;  
 Much lesse the title of old Titans right:  
 For we by conquest of our soveraine might,  
 And by eternall doome of Fates decree,  
 Have wonne the empire of the heavens  
 bright;  
 Which to ourselves we hold, and to whom  
 wee  
 Shall worthy deeme partakers of our blisse  
 to bee.

## XXXIV

'Then cease thy idle claime, thou foolish  
 gerle,  
 And seeke by grace and goodnesse to ob-  
 taine  
 That place from which by folly Titan fell;  
 There-to thou maist perhaps, if so thou  
 faine,  
 Have Jove thy gracious lord and sover-  
 aigne.'  
 So having said, she thus to him replide:  
 'Ceasse, Saturnes sonne, to seeke by prof-  
 fers vaine  
 Of idle hopes t' allure mee to thy side,  
 For to betray my right, before I have it  
 tride.

## XXXV

'But thee, O Jove, no equall judge I deeme  
 Of my desert, or of my dewfull right;  
 That in thine owne behalfe maist partiall  
 seeme:  
 But to the highest him, that is behight  
 Father of gods and men by equall might,  
 To weet, the god of Nature, I appeale.'  
 There-at Jove waxed wroth, and in his  
 spright  
 Did inly grudge, yet did it well conceale;  
 And bade Dan Phœbus scribe her appella-  
 tion seale.

## XXXVI

Eftsoones the time and place appointed  
 were,  
 Where all, both heavenly powers and earthly  
 wights,  
 Before great Natures presence should ap-  
 peare,  
 For triall of their titles and best rights:  
 That was, to weet, upon the highest hights  
 Of Arlo-hill (Who knowes not Arlo-hill?)  
 That is the highest head (in all mens sights)  
 Of my old father Mole, whom shepherds  
 quill  
 Renowned hath with hynnes fit for a rurall  
 skill.

## XXXVII

And, were it not ill fitting for this file,  
 To sing of hilles and woods, mongst warres  
 and knights,  
 I would abate the sternenesse of my stile,  
 Mongst these sterne stounds to mingle soft  
 delights;  
 And tell how Arlo through Dianaes spights

(Beeing of old the best and fairest hill  
That was in all this holy-islands hights)  
Was made the most unpleasant and most ill.  
Meane while, O Clio, lend Calliope thy quill.

## XXXVIII

Whylome, when Ireland florished in fame  
Of wealths and goodnesse, far above the  
rest  
Of all that beare the British Islands name,  
The gods then us'd (for pleasure and for  
rest)  
Oft to resort there-to, when seem'd them  
best:  
But none of all there-in more pleasure  
found  
Then Cynthia, that is soveraine queene pro-  
fest  
Of woods and forrests, which therein  
abound,  
Sprinkled with wholsom waters more then  
most on ground.

## XXXIX

But mongst them all, as fittest for her  
game,  
Either for chace of beasts with hound or  
boawe,  
Or for to shroude in shade from Phœbus  
flame,  
Or bathe in fountaines that doe freshly  
flowe,  
Or from high hilles, or from the dales be-  
lowe,  
She chose this Arlo; where shee did resort  
With all her nymphes enranged on a rowe,  
With whom the woody gods did oft con-  
sort:  
For with the nymphes the satyres love to  
play and sport.

## XL

Amongst the which there was a nymph  
that hight  
Molanna, daughter of old Father Mole,  
And sister unto Mulla, faire and bright,  
Unto whose bed false Bregog whylome  
stole,  
That Shepheard Coliu dearely did condole,  
And made her lucklesse loves well knowne  
to be.  
But this Molanna, were she not so shole,  
Were no lesse faire and beautifull then shee:  
Yet as she is, a fairer flood may no man  
see.

## XLI

For, first, she springs out of two marble  
rocks,  
On which a grove of oakes high-mounted  
growes,  
That as a girlond seemes to deck the locks  
Of som faire bride, brought forth with  
pompons showes  
Out of her bowre, that many flowers strowes:  
So, through the flowry dales she tumbling  
downe,  
Through many woods and shady covertes  
flowes  
(That on each side her silver channell  
crowne)  
Till to the plaine she come, whose valleyes  
shee doth drowne.

## XLII

In her sweet streames Diana used oft  
(After hersweatie chace and toilesome play)  
To bathe her selfe; and after, on the soft  
And downy grasse, her dainty limbes to lay  
In covert shade, where none behold her  
may:  
For much she hated sight of living eye.  
Foolish god Faunus, though full many a day  
He saw her clad, yet longed foolishly  
To see her naked mongst her nymphes in  
privy.

## XLIII

No way he found to compasse his desire,  
But to corrupt Molanna, this her maid,  
Her to discover for some secret hire:  
So her with flattering words he first assaid;  
And after, pleasing gifts for her purvaid,  
Queene-apples, and red cherries from the  
tree,  
With which he her allured and betraid,  
To tell what time he might her lady see  
When she her selfe did bathe, that he  
might secret bee.

## XLIV

There-to hee promist, if shee would him  
pleasure  
With this small boone, to quit her with a  
better;  
To weat, that where-as shee had out of  
measure  
Long lov'd the Fanchin, who by nought did  
set her,  
That he would undertake for this to get her  
To be his love. and of him liked well:



Besides all which, he vow'd to be her debter  
 For many moe good turnes then he would  
 tell;  
 The least of which this little pleasure should  
 excell.

## XLV

The simple maid did yield to him anone;  
 And eft him placed where he close might  
 view

That never any saw, save onely one,  
 Who, for his hire to so foole-hardy dew,  
 Was of his hounds devour'd in hunters lew.  
 Tho, as her manner was on sunny day,  
 Diana, with her nymphes about her, drew  
 To this sweet spring; where, doffing her  
 array,

She bath'd her lovely limbes, for Jove a  
 likely pray.

## XLVI

There Faunus saw that pleased much his  
 eye,

And made his hart to tickle in his brest,  
 That, for great joy of some-what he did  
 spy,

He could him not containe in silent rest;  
 But breaking forth in laughter, loud pro-  
 fest

His foolish thought. A foolish Faune in-  
 deed,

That couldst not hold thy selfe so hidden  
 blest,

But wouldest needs thine owne conceit  
 areed!

Babblers unworthy been of so divine a  
 meed.

## XLVII

The goddesse, all abashed with that noise,  
 In haste forth started from the guilty  
 brooke;

And running straight where-as she heard  
 his voice,

Enclos'd the bush about, and there him  
 tooke,

Like darred larke, not daring up to looke  
 On her whose sight before so much he  
 sought.

Thence forth they drew him by the hornes,  
 and shooke

Nigh all to peeces, that they left him  
 nought;

And then into the open light they forth  
 him brought.

## XLVIII

Like as an huswife, that with busie care  
 Thinks of her dairie to make wondrous  
 gaine,

Finding where-as some wicked beast un-  
 ware

That breakes into her dayr' house, there  
 doth draine

Her creaming pannes, and frustrate all her  
 paine,

Hath, in some snare or gin set close behind,  
 Entrapped him, and caught into her traine,  
 Then thinks what punishment were best  
 assign'd,

And thousand deathes deviseth in her venge-  
 full mind:

## XLIX

So did Diana and her maydens all  
 Use silly Faunus, now within their baile:  
 They mocke and scorne him, and him foule  
 misecall;

Some by the nose him pluckt, some by the  
 taile,

And by his goatish beard some did him haile:  
 Yet he (poore soule!) with patience all did  
 beare;

For nought against their wils might coun-  
 tervaile:

Ne ought he said, what ever he did heare;  
 But hanging downe his head, did like a  
 mome appeare.

## L

At length, when they had flouted him their  
 fill,

They gan to cast what penance him to give.  
 Some would have gelt him, but that same  
 would spill

The wood-gods breed, which must for ever  
 live:

Others would through the river him have  
 drive,

And ducked deepe; but that seem'd pen-  
 ance light:

But most agreed, and did this sentence give,  
 Him in deares skin to clad, and in that  
 plight

To hunt him with their hounds, him selfe  
 save how hee might.

## LI

But Cynthia's selfe, more angry then the  
 rest,

Thought not enough to punish him in sport,

And of her shame to make a gamesome  
jest;

But gan examine him in straighter sort,  
Which of her nymphes, or other close con-  
sort,

Him thither brought, and her to him be-  
traid.

He, much affeard, to her confessed short  
That 't was Molanna which her so bewraid.  
Then all attonce their hands upon Molanna  
laid.

## LII

But him (according as they had decreed)  
With a deer-skin they covered, and then  
chast

With all their hounds, that after him did  
speed;

But he, more speedy, from them fled more  
fast

Then any deere: so sore him dread aghast.  
They after follow'd all with shrill out-  
cry,

Shouting as they the heavens would have  
brast:

That all the woods and dales, where he did  
flie,

Did ring againe, and loud reeccho to the  
skie.

## LIII

So they him follow'd till they weary were;  
When, back returning to Molann' againe,  
They, by commaund'ment of Diana, there  
Her whelm'd with stones. Yet Faunus  
(for her paine)

Of her beloved Fanchin did obtaine,  
That her he would receive unto his bed.

So now her waves passe through a pleasant  
plaine,

Till with the Fanchin she her selfe doe wed,  
And (both combin'd) themselves in one faire  
river spred.

## LIV

Nath'lesse, Diana, full of indignation,  
Thence-forth abandond her delicious brooke;  
In whose sweet streame, before that bad  
occasion,

So much delight to bathe her limbes she  
tooke:

Ne onely her, but also quite forsooke  
All those faire forrests about Arlo hid,  
And all that mountaine, which doth over-  
looke

The richest champion that may else be rid,  
And the faire Shure, in which are thousand  
salmons bred.

## LV

Them all, and all that she so deare did  
way,

Thence-forth she left; and parting from the  
place,

There-on an heavy haplesse curse did lay,  
To weet, that wolves, where she was wont  
to space,

Should harbour'd be, and all those woods  
deface,

And thieves should rob and spoile that  
coast around.

Since which, those woods, and all that  
goodly chase,

Doth to this day with wolves and thieves  
abound:

Which too-too true that lands in-dwellers  
since have found.

## CANTO VII

Peeling from Jove to Natur's bar,  
Bold Alteration pleades  
Large evidence: but Nature soone  
Her righteous doome areads.

## I

AH! whither doost thou now, thou greater  
Muse,

Me from these woods and pleasing forrests  
bring?

And my fraile spirit (that dooth oft refuse  
This too high flight, unfit for her weak  
wing)

Lift up aloft, to tell of heavens king  
(Thy soveraine sire) his fortunate successe,  
And victory in bigger noates to sing,  
Which he obtain'd against that Titanesse,  
That him of heavens empire sought to dis-  
possesse?

## II

Yet sith I needs must follow thy behest,  
Doe thou my weaker wit with skill inspire,  
Fit for this turne; and in my feeble brest  
Kindle fresh sparks of that immortall fire  
Which learned minds inflameth with desire  
Of heavenly things: for who but thou  
alone,

That art yborne of heaven and heavenly  
sire,

Can tell things doene in heaven so long  
ygone,  
So farre past memory of man that may be  
knowne ?

## III

Now, at the time that was before agreed,  
The gods assembled all on Arlo hill;  
As well those that are sprung of heavenly  
seed,  
As those that all the other world doe fill,  
And rule both sea and land unto their will:  
Onely th' infernall powers might not ap-  
peare;  
Aswell for horror of their count'naunce ill,  
As for th' unruly fiends which they did  
feare;  
Yet Pluto and Proserpina were present  
there.

## IV

And thither also came all other creatures,  
What-ever life or motion doe retaine,  
According to their sundry kinds of fea-  
tures;  
That Arlo scarsly could them all containe;  
So full they filled every hill and plaine:  
And had not Natures sergeant (that is  
Order)  
Them well disposed by his busie paine,  
And raunged farre abroad in every border,  
They would have caused much confusion  
and disorder.

## V

Then forth issewed (great goddesse) great  
Dame Nature,  
With goodly port and gracious majesty,  
Being far greater and more tall of stature  
Then any of the gods or powers on hie:  
Yet certes by her face and physnomy,  
Whether she man or woman inly were,  
That could not any creature well desery:  
For, with a veile that wimpled every  
where,  
Her head and face was hid, that mote to  
none appeare.

## VI

That, some doe say, was so by skill devized,  
To hide the terror of her uncouth hew  
From mortall eyes, that should be sore  
agrized;  
For that her face did like a lion shew,  
That eye of wight could not indure to view:

But others tell that it so beautious was,  
And round about such beames of splendor  
threw,  
That it the summe a thousand times did  
pass,  
Ne could be seene, but like an image in a  
glass.

## VII

That well may seemen true: for well I  
weene  
That this same day, when she on Arlo sat,  
Her garment was so bright and wondrous  
sheene,  
That my fraile wit cannot devize to what  
It to compare, nor finde like stuffe to that:  
As those three sacred saints, though else  
most wise,  
Yet on Mount Thabor quite their wits for-  
gat,  
Wheu they their glorious Lord in strange  
disguise  
Transfigur'd sawe; his garments so did daze  
their eyes.

## VIII

In a fayre plaieue upon an equall hill  
She placed was in a pavilion;  
Not such as craftes-men by their idle skill  
Are wont for princes states to fashion:  
But th' Earth her self, of her owne motion,  
Out of her fruitfull bosome made to growe  
Most dainty trees, that, shooting up anon,  
Did seeme to bow their bloosming heads  
full lowe,  
For homage unto her, and like a throue did  
shew.

## IX

So hard it is for any living wight  
All her array and vestiments to tell,  
That old Dan Geffrey (in whose gentle  
spright,  
The pure well head of poesie did dwell)  
In his *Foules Parley* durst not with it mel,  
But it transferd to Alane, who he thought  
Had in his *Plaint of Kinde* describ'd it well:  
Which who will read set forth so as it  
ought,  
Go seek he out that Alane where he may  
be sought.

## X

And all the earth far underneath her feete  
Was dight with flowres, that voluntary grew



Ont of the ground, and sent forth odours  
sweet;  
Tenne thousand mores of sundry sent and  
hew,  
That might delight the smell, or please the  
view;  
The which the nymphes from all the brooks  
thereby  
Had gathered, which they at her foot-stoole  
threw;  
That richer seem'd then any tapestry,  
That princes bowres adorne with painted  
imagery.

## XI

And Mole himselfe, to honour her the  
more,  
Did deck himself in freshest faire attire,  
And his high head, that seemeth alwaies  
hore  
With hardned frosts of former winters ire,  
He with an oaken girlond now did tire,  
As if the love of some new nymph late  
scene  
Had in him kindled yonthfull fresh desire,  
And made him change his gray attire to  
greene:  
Ah, gentle Mole! such joyance hath thee  
well beseene.

## XII

Was never so great joyance since the day  
That all the gods whylome assembled were  
On Hæmus hill in their diuine array,  
To celebrate the solemne bridall cheare  
Twixt Pelæus and Dame Thetis pointed  
there;  
Where Phœbus self, that god of poets  
hight,  
They say did sing the sponsall hymne full  
cleere,  
That all the gods were ravisht with de-  
light  
Of his celestiall song, and musicks won-  
drous might.

## XIII

This great grandmother of all creatures  
bred,  
Great Nature, ever yomg yet full of eld,  
Still mooving, yet unmoved from her sted,  
Unscene of any, yet of all beheld,  
'Thus sitting in her throne, as I have teld,  
Before her came Dame Mutabilitie;  
And being lowe before her presence feld,

With meek obaysance and humilitie,  
Thus gan her plaintif plea, with words to  
amplifie:

## XIV

'To thee, O greatest goddesse, onely great,  
An humble suppliant loe! I lowely fly,  
Seeking for right, which I of thee entreat,  
Who right to all dost deale indifferently,  
Daunning all wrong and tortious injurie,  
Which any of thy creatures doe to other  
(Oppressing them with power, unequally)  
Sith of them all thou art the equall mother,  
And knittest each to each, as brother unto  
brother.

## XV

'To thee therefore of this same Jove I  
plaine,  
And of his fellow gods that faine to be,  
That challenge to themselves the whole  
worlds raig;  
Of which the greatest part is due to me,  
And heaven it selfe by heritage in fee:  
For heaven and earth I both alike do  
deeme,  
Sith heaven and earth are both alike to  
thee;  
And gods no more then men thou doest  
esteeme:  
For even the gods to thee, as men to gods,  
do seeme.

## XVI

'Then weigh, O soveraigne goddesse, by  
what right  
These gods do claime the worlds whole  
soverainty,  
And that is onely dew unto thy might  
Arrogate to themselves ambitiously:  
As for the gods owne principality,  
Which Jove usurpes unjustly, that to be  
My heritage, Jove's self cannot deny,  
From my great grandsire Titan unto mee  
Deriv'd by dew descent; as is well knownen  
to thee.

## XVII

'Yet mauger Jove, and all his gods beside,  
I doe possesse the worlds most reginent;  
As, if ye please it into parts divide,  
And every parts inholders to convent,  
Shall to your eyes appeare incontinent.  
And first, the Earth (great mother of us all)  
That only seems unmov'd and permanent,

And unto Mutability not thrall,  
Yet is she chang'd in part, and eeke in  
generall.

## XVIII

'For all that from her springs, and is  
ybredde,  
How-ever fayre it flourish for a time,  
Yet see we soone decay; and, being dead,  
To turne again unto their earthly slime:  
Yet, out of their decay and mortall crime,  
We daily see new creatures to arize,  
And of their winter spring another prime,  
Unlike in forme, and chang'd by strange  
disguise;  
So turne they still about, and change in  
restlesse wise.

## XIX

'As for her tenants, that is, man and beasts,  
The beasts we daily see massacred dy,  
As thralls and vassals unto mens beheasts:  
And men themselves doe change continually,  
From youth to eld, from wealth to poverty,  
From good to bad, from bad to worst of all:  
Ne doe their bodies only flit and fly;  
But eeke their minds (which they immortal  
call)  
Still change and vary thoughts, as new oc-  
casions fall.

## XX

'Ne is the water in more constant case;  
Whether those same on high, or these be-  
lowe.  
Forth' ocean moveth stil from place to place;  
And every river still doth ebbe and flowe:  
Ne any lake, that seems most still and slowe,  
Ne poole so small, that can his smoothnesse  
holde,  
When any winde doth under heaven blowe;  
With which the clouds are also tost and  
roll'd;  
Now like great hills; and streight, like  
sluces, them unfold.

## XXI

'So likewise are all watry living wights  
Still tost and turned with continuall change,  
Never abiding in their stedfast plights.  
The fish, still floting, doe at randon range,  
And never rest, but evermore exchange  
Their dwelling places, as the streames them  
carrie:  
Ne have the watry foules a certaine grange

Wherein to rest, ne in one stead do tarry;  
But flitting still doe flie, and still their  
places vary.

## XXII

'Next is the ayre: which who feeles not  
by sense  
(For of all sense it is the middle meane)  
To flit still? and, with subtile influence  
Of his thin spirit, all creatures to main-  
taine  
In state of life? O weake life! that does  
leane  
On thing so tickle as th' unsteady ayre;  
Which every howre is chang'd, and altdred  
cleane  
With every blast that bloweth fowle or  
faire:  
The faire doth it prolong; the fowle doth  
it impaire.

## XXIII

'Therein the changes infinite beholde,  
Which to her creatures every minute  
chance:  
Now, boyling hot: streight, friezing deadly  
cold:  
Now, faire sun-shine, that makes all skip  
and damnee:  
Streight, bitter storms and balefull coun-  
tenance,  
That makes them all to shiver and to  
shake:  
Rayne, hayle, and snowe do pay them sad  
penance,  
And dreadfull thunder-claps (that make  
them quake)  
With flames and flashing lights that thou-  
sand changes make.

## XXIV

'Last is the fire: which, though it live for  
ever,  
Ne can be quenched quite, yet, every day,  
Wee see his parts, so soone as they do  
sever,  
To lose their heat, and shortly to decay;  
So makes himself his owne consuming  
pray.  
Ne any living creatures doth he breed.  
But all that are of others bredd doth say,  
And with their death his cruell life dooth  
feed;  
Nought leaving, but their barren ashes,  
without seed.

## XXV

'Thus all these fower (the which the  
ground-work bee  
Of all the world, and of all living wights)  
To thousand sorts of change we subject  
see:  
Yet are they chang'd (by other wondrous  
slights)  
Into themselves, and lose their native  
nights:  
The fire to aire, and th' ayre to water  
sheere,  
And water into earth: yet water fights  
With fire, and aire with earth, approaching  
neere:  
Yet all are in one body, and as one ap-  
peare.

## XXVI

'So in them all raignes Mutabilitie;  
How-ever these, that gods themselves do  
call,  
Of them doe claime the rule and sover-  
aignty:  
As Vesta, of the fire æthereall;  
Vulcan, of this, with us so usuall;  
Ops, of the earth; and Juno, of the ayre;  
Neptune, of seas; and nymphes, of rivers  
all:  
For all those rivers to me subject are;  
And all the rest, which they usurp, be all  
my share.

## XXVII

'Which to approven true, as I have told,  
Vouchsafe, O goddesse, to thy presence call  
The rest which doe the world in being  
hold:  
As times and seasons of the yeare that  
fall:  
Of all the which demand in generall,  
Or judge thy selfe, by verdit of thine eye,  
Whether to me they are not subject all.'  
Nature did yeeld thereto; and by-and-by,  
Bade Order call them all before her  
majesty.

## XXVIII

So forth issew'd the seasons of the yeare:  
First, lusty Spring, all dight in leaves of  
flowres  
That freshly budded and new bloosmes did  
beare  
(In which a thousand birds had built their  
bowres.

That sweetly sung, to call forth paramours):  
And in his hand a javelin he did beare,  
And on his head (as fit for warlike stoures)  
A guilt engraven morion he did weare;  
That, as some did him love, so others did  
him feare.

## XXIX

Then came the jolly Sommer, being dight  
In a thin silken cassock coloured greene,  
That was unlyned all, to be more light:  
And on his head a girlond well beseene  
He wore, from which, as he had chauffed  
been,  
The sweat did drop; and in his hand he bore  
A boawe and shaftes, as he in forrest greene  
Had hunted late the libbard or the bore,  
And now would bathe his limbes, with labor  
heated sore.

## XXX

Then came the Autumne, all in yellow clad,  
As though he joyed in his plentious store,  
Laden with fruits that made him laugh, full  
glad  
That he had banisht hunger, which to-fore  
Had by the belly oft him pinched sore.  
Upon his head a wreath, that was enrold  
With eares of corne of every sort, he bore:  
And in his hand a sickle he did holde,  
To reape the ripened fruits the which the  
earth had yold.

## XXXI

Lastly came Winter, cloathed all in frize,  
Chattering his teeth for cold that did him  
chill,  
Whil'st on his hoary beard his breath did  
freese,  
And the dull drops, that from his purpled  
bill  
As from a limbeck did adown distill.  
In his right hand a tipped staffe he held,  
With which his feeble steps he stayed still:  
For he was faint with cold, and weak with  
eld;  
That scarce his loosed limbes he hable was  
to weld.

## XXXII

These, marching softly, thus in order went,  
And after them the monthes all riding  
came:  
First, sturdy March, with brows full sternly  
bent.



And armed strongly, rode upon a ram,  
The same which over Hellespontus swam:  
Yet in his hand a spade he also hent,  
And in a bag all sorts of seeds ysame,  
Which on the earth he strowed as he went,  
And fild her womb with fruitfull hope of  
nourishment.

## XXXIII

Next came fresh Aprill, full of lustyhed,  
And wanton as a kid whose horne new buds:  
Upon a bull he rode, the same which led  
Europa floting through th' Argolick fluds:  
His hornes were gilden all with golden  
studs,  
And garnished with garlonds goodly dight  
Of all the fairest flowres and freshest buds  
Which th' earth brings forth, and wet he  
seem'd in sight  
With waves, through which he waded for  
his loves delight.

## XXXIV

Then came faire May, the fayrest mayd on  
ground,  
Deckt all with dainties of her seasons pryde,  
And throwing flowres out of her lap around:  
Upon two brethrens shoulders she did ride,  
The twinnes of Leda; which on eyther side  
Supported her like to their soveraine queene.  
Lord! how all creatures laught, when her  
they spide,  
And leapt and daunc't as they had ravisht  
beene!  
And Cupid selfe about her fluttred all in  
greene.

## XXXV

And after her came jolly June, arrayd  
All in greene leaves, as he a player were;  
Yet in his time he wrought as well as playd,  
That by his plough-yrons mote right well  
appeare:  
Upon a crab he rode, that him did beare  
With crooked crawling steps an uncouth  
pase,  
And backward yode, as bargemen wont to  
fare  
Bending their force contrary to their face,  
Like that ungracious crew which faines de-  
murest grace.

## XXXVI

Then came hot July boyling like to fire  
That all his garments he had cast away:

Upon a lyon raging yet with ire  
He boldly rode, and made him to obey:  
It was the beast that whylome did forray  
The Nemæan forrest, till th' Amphytrionide  
Him slew, and with his hide did him array:  
Behinde his back a sithe, and by his side  
Under his belt he bore a sickle circling wide.

## XXXVII

The sixt was August, being rich arrayd  
In garment all of gold downe to the ground:  
Yet rode he not, but led a lovely mayd  
Forth by the lilly hand, the which was  
cround  
With eares of corne, and full her hand was  
found:  
That was the righteous virgin which of old  
Liv'd here on earth, and plenty made  
abonnd;  
But, after wrong was lov'd and justice solde,  
She left th' unrighteous world and was to  
heaven extold.

## XXXVIII

Next him September marched eeke on foote;  
Yet was he heavy laden with the spoyle  
Of harvests riches, which he made his boot,  
And him enricht with bounty of the soyle:  
In his one hand, as fit for harvests toyle,  
He held a knife-hook; and in th' other hand  
A paire of waightes, with which he did as-  
soyle  
Both more and lesse, where it in doubt did  
stand,  
And equall gave to each as justice duly  
seam'd.

## XXXIX

Then came October full of merry glee:  
For yet his noule was totty of the must,  
Which he was treading in the wine-fats  
see,  
And of the joyous oyle, whose gentle gust  
Made him so frolick and so full of lust:  
Upon a dreadfull scorpion he did ride,  
The same which by Dianaes doom unjust  
Slew great Orion: and eeke by his side  
He had his ploughing-share and eoulter  
ready tyde.

## XL

Next was November; he full grosse and  
fat,  
As fed with lard, and that right well might  
seeme;

For he had been a fattening hogs of late,  
That yet his browes with sweat did reek  
and steem,  
And yet the season was full sharp and  
breen;  
In planting eke he took no small delight.  
Whereon he rode, not easie was to deeme;  
For it a dreadfull centaure was in sight,  
The seed of Saturne and faire Nais, Chiron  
hight.

## XLI

And after him came next the chill Decem-  
ber:  
Yet he, through merry feasting which he  
made,  
And great bonfires, did not the cold remem-  
ber;  
His Saviours birth his mind so much did  
glad:  
Upon a shaggy-bearded goat he rade,  
The same wherewith Dan Jove in tender  
yeares,  
They say, was nourisht by th' Idæan mayd;  
And in his hand a broad deepe boawle he  
beares,  
Of which he freely drinks an health to all  
his peeres.

## XLII

Then came old January, wrapped well  
In many weeds to keep the cold away;  
Yet did he quake and quiver like to quell,  
And blowe his nayles to warme them if he  
may:  
For they were nunbd with holding all the  
day  
An hatchet keene, with which he felled  
wood,  
And from the trees did lop the needlesse  
spray:  
Upon an huge great earth-pot steane he  
stood,  
From whose wide mouth there flowed forth  
the Romane flood.

## XLIII

And lastly came cold February, sitting  
In an old wagon, for he could not ride;  
Drawne of two fishes for the season fitting,  
Which through the flood before did softly  
slyde  
And swim away: yet had he by his side  
His plough and harnesse fit to till the  
ground,

And toolles to prune the trees, before the  
pride  
Of hasting Prime did make them burgein  
round.  
So past the twelve months forth, and their  
dew places found.

## XLIV

And after these there came the Day and  
Night,  
Riding together both with equall pase,  
Th' one on a palfrey blacke, the other  
white:  
But Night had covered her uncomely face  
With a blacke veile, and held in hand a  
mace,  
On top whereof the moon and stars were  
pight,  
And Sleep and Darknesse round about did  
trace:  
But Day did beare, upon his scepters hight,  
The goodly sun, encompassed all with beames  
bright.

## XLV

Then came the Howres, faire daughters of  
high Jove  
And timely Night, the which were all en-  
dewed  
With wondrous beauty fit to kindle love;  
But they were virgins all, and love es-  
chewed,  
That might forslack the charge to them  
fore-shewed  
By mighty Jove; who did them porters  
make  
Of heavens gate (whence all the gods is-  
sued)  
Which they did dayly watch, and nightly  
wake  
By even turnes, ne ever did their charge  
forsake.

## XLVI

And after all came Life, and lastly Death:  
Death with most grim and griesly visage  
seene,  
Yet is he nought but parting of the breath;  
Ne ought to see, but like a shade to weene,  
Unbodied, unsoul'd, unheard, unseene:  
But Life was like a faire young lusty boy,  
Such as they faine Dan Cupid to have beene,  
Full of delightfull health and lively joy,  
Deckt all with flowres, and wings of gold  
fit to employ.

## XLVII

When these were past, thus gan the Titan-esse:

‘Lo! mighty mother, now be judge, and say

Whether in all thy creatures more or lesse  
Change doth not raign and beare the great-  
est sway:

For who sees not that Time on all doth  
pray?

But times do change and move continually:  
So nothing here long standeth in one stay:  
Wherefore, this lower world who can deny  
But to be subject still to Mutabilitie?’

## XLVIII

Then thus gan Jove: ‘Right true it is, that  
these,

And all things else that under heaven dwell,  
Are chaung’d of Time, who doth them all  
disseise

Of being: but who is it (to me tell)  
That Time himselfe doth move and still  
compell

To keepe his course? Is not that namely  
wee,

Which poure that vertue from our heavenly  
cell

That moves them all, and makes them  
changed be?

So them we gods doe rule, and in them also  
thee.’

## XLIX

To whom thus Mutability: ‘The things  
Which we see not how they are mov’d and  
swayd

Ye may attribute to your selves as kings,  
And say they by your secret powre are  
made:

But what we see not, who shall us per-  
swade?

But were they so, as ye them faine to be,  
Mov’d by your might, and ordred by your  
ayde;

Yet what if I can prove, that even yee  
Your selves are likewise chang’d, and sub-  
ject unto mee?

## L

‘And first, concerning her that is the first,  
Even you, faire Cynthia, whom so much ye  
make

Joves dearest darling; she was bred and  
nurst

On Cynthus hill, whence she her name did  
take:

Then is she mortall borne, how-so ye crake;  
Besides, her face and countenance every  
day

We changed see, and sundry forms partake,  
Now hornd, now round, now bright, now  
brown and gray;

So that *as changefull as the moone* men use  
to say.

## LI

‘Next Mercury, who though he lesse ap-  
peare

To change his hew, and alwayes seeme as  
one,

Yet he his course doth altar every yeare,  
And is of late far out of order gone:

So Venus eeke, that goodly paragone,  
Though faire all night, yet is she darke all  
day;

And Phœbus self, who lightsome is alone,  
Yet is he oft eelipsed by the way,  
And fills the darkned world with terror  
and dismay.

## LII

‘Now Mars, that valiant man, is echanged  
most:

For he some times so far runs out of square,  
That he his way doth seem quite to have  
lost,

And eleane without his usuall sphere to  
fare;

That even these star-gazers stonisht are  
At sight thereof, and damne their lying  
bookes:

So likewise grim Sir Saturne oft doth spare  
His sterne aspect, and calme his crabbed  
lookes:

So many turning eranks these have, so  
many crookes.

## LIII

‘But you, Dan Jove, that only econstant are,  
And king of all the rest, as ye do clame,  
Are you not subject eeke to this misfare?  
Then let me aske you this withouten blame:  
Where were ye borne? Some say in Crete  
by name,

Others in Thebes, and others other-where;  
But wheresoever they comment the same,  
They all consent that ye begotten were  
And borne here in this world, ne other ean  
appeare.



## LIV

'Then are ye mortall borne, and thrall to  
me,  
Unlesse the kingdome of the sky yee make  
Immortall and unchangeable to be:  
Besides, that power and vertue which ye  
spake,  
That ye here worke, doth many changes  
take,  
And your owne natures change: for each  
of you,  
That vertue have, or this or that to make,  
Is cheekt and changed from his nature trew,  
By others opposition or obliquid view.

## LV

'Besides, the sundry motions of your  
spheares,  
So sundry waies and fashions as clerkes  
faine,  
Some in short space, and some in longer  
yeares;  
What is the same but alteration plaine?  
Onely the starrie skie doth still remaine:  
Yet do the starres and signes therein still  
move,  
And even it self is mov'd, as wizards saine.  
But all that moveth doth mutation love:  
Therefore both you and them to me I sub-  
ject prove.

## LVI

'Then since within this wide great uni-  
verse  
Nothing doth firme and permanent appeare,  
But all things tost and turned by trans-  
verse:  
What then should let, but I aloft should  
reare  
My trophee, and from all the triumph  
beare?  
Now judge then (O thou greatest god-  
desse trew!)  
According as thy selfe doest see and heare,  
And unto me addoom that is my dew;  
That is the rule of all, all being rul'd by  
you.'

## LVII

So having ended, silence long enseed;  
Ne Nature to or fro spake for a space,  
But, with firme eyes affixt, the ground still  
viewed.  
Meane while, all creatures, looking in her  
face,

Expecting th' end of this so doubtfull case,  
Did hang in long suspence what would en-  
sew,  
To whether side should fall the soveraigne  
place:  
At length, she, looking up with chearefull  
view,  
The silence brake, and gave her doome in  
speeches few:

## LVIII

'I well consider all that ye have sayd,  
And find that all things stedfastnes doe hate  
And changed be: yet being rightly wayd,  
They are not changed from their first  
estate;  
But by their change their being doe dilate:  
And turning to themselves at length  
again,  
Doe worke their owne perfection so by fate:  
Then over them Change doth not rule and  
raigne;  
But they raigne over Change, and doe  
their states maintaine.

## LIX

'Cease therefore, daughter, further to  
aspire,  
And thee content thus to be rul'd by me:  
For thy decay thou seekst by thy desire:  
But time shall come that all shall changed  
bee,  
And from thenceforth none no more  
change shall see.'  
So was the Titaness put downe and whist,  
And Jove confirm'd in his imperiall see.  
Then was that whole assembly quite dis-  
mist,  
And Natur's selfe did vanish, whither no  
man wist.

## THE VIII. CANTO, UNPERFITE

## I

WHEN I bethinke me on that speech whyl-  
eare  
Of Mutability, and well it way,  
Me seemes, that though she all unworthy  
were  
Of the heav'ns rule, yet, very sooth to say,  
In all things else she beares the greatest  
sway:  
Which makes me loath this state of life so  
tickle,

And love of things so vaine to cast away;  
Whose flowring pride, so fading and so  
fickle,  
Short Time shall soon cut down with his  
consuming sickle.

II

Then gin I thinke on that which Nature  
sayd,  
Of that same time when no more change  
shall be,

But stedfast rest of all things, firmly  
stayd  
Upon the pillours of eternity,  
That is contrayr to Mutabilitie:  
For all that moveth doth in change de-  
light:  
But thence-forth all shall rest eternally  
With Him that is the God of Sabbaoth  
hight:  
O that great Sabbaoth God graunt me that  
Sabaoths sight !

DAPHNAIDA

AN ELEGIE UPON THE DEATH OF THE NOBLE AND VERTUOUS  
DOUGLAS HOWARD, DAUGHTER AND HEIRE OF HENRY  
LORD HOWARD, VISCOUNT BYNDON, AND WIFE  
OF ARTHURE GORGES ESQUIER

DEDICATED TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE LADY HELENA,  
MARQUESS OF NORTHAMPTON

BY ED. SP.

AT LONDON

PRINTED FOR WILLIAM PONSONBY, DWELLING IN PAULES CHURCHYARD AT THE  
SIGNE OF THE BISHOPS HEAD

1591

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND VERTUOUS LADY HELENA MAR-  
QUESSE OF NORTH-HAMPTON

I HAVE the rather presumed humbly to  
offer unto your Honour the dedication of  
this little poëme, for that the noble and ver-  
tuous gentlewoman of whom it is written  
was by match neere alied, and in affection  
greatly devoted unto your Ladiship. The  
occasion why I wrote the same was aswell  
the great good fame which I heard of her  
deceased, as the partienlar goodwill which  
I beare unto her husband Master Arthur  
Gorges, a lover of learning and vertue,  
whose house, as your Ladiship by mariage  
hath honoured, so doe I find the name of  
them by many notable records, to be of great  
antiquitie in this realme, and such as have  
ever borne themselves with honourable rep-  
tation to the world, and unspotted loyal-  
tie to their prince and countrey: besides,

so lineally are they descended from the  
Howards, as that the Lady Anne Howard,  
eldest daughter to John Duke of Norfolke,  
was wife to Sir Edmund, mother to Sir  
Edward, and grandmother to Sir William  
and Sir Thomas Gorges, Knightes. And  
therefore I doe assure my selfe that no  
due honour done to the White Lyon, but  
will be most gratefull to your Ladiship,  
whose husband and children do so neerely  
participate with the blood of that noble  
family. So in all dutie I recomende  
this pamphlet, and the good acceptance  
thereof, to your honourable favour and  
protection. London, this first of Januarie,  
1591.

Your Honours humbly ever,  
Ed. Sp.

[According to the usage of the sixteenth century in England, 'this first of Januarie, 1591,' subscribed to the dedicatory letter of *Daphnaïda*, would read in modern style, 1592; for the civil year did not begin till March 25. The compiler of a calendar might head his list of the months with January, for that was by long tradition the leader of the astronomical year; but a writer of letters would date according to the civil year. Yet it seems most unlikely that Spenser should have been in London in January, 1592. The patent for his pension, one main cause apparently of his long abode in England, had been finally issued in the preceding February; the preface of *Complaints* refers to him as already departed over sea, and since that volume was entered upon the Stationers' Register in December, 1590, it is likely to have been issued not more than a few months later; finally, the dedication of *Colin Clout's Come Home Again* is dated from Kilecolman 'the 27 of December. 1591' — only five days before 'this first of Januarie,' 1592. That particular clash of dates, to be sure, has

been explained by a recent critic on the supposition that *Colin Clout's Come Home Again* celebrates before the fact a merely prospective return to Ireland, that, in other words, it was written in England and dated from Kilecolman only by way of fiction. On the whole, however, one can more easily believe that in dating the dedication of *Daphnaïda* Spenser followed the Continental usage, or that he or the printer blundered, that, in either case, the date is meant for New Year's, 1591, modern style, — especially since the lady whose death the poem records died in August, 1590.

*Daphnaïda* cannot pretend to greatness, yet few of Spenser's poems are more thoroughly characteristic. Conventional in mode, with hardly a note of full imaginative conviction, it is quietly and unfailingly harmonious. Its stanza, in which, by mere transposition of a line, he creates out of the orthodox rhyme royal a form of haunting cadence, almost as beautiful as the stanza of 'October,' would alone raise it high above the perfunctory.]

## DAPHNAÏDA

WHAT ever man he be, whose heavie minde,  
With grieve of mournfull great mishap  
opprest,

Fit matter for his eares increase would finde:  
Let reade the rufull plaint herein exprest  
Of one (I weene) the wofulst man alive,  
Even sad Alcyon, whose empiereed brest  
Sharpe sorrowe did in thousand peeces rive.

But who so else in pleasure findeth sense,  
Or in this wretched life dooth take delight,  
Let him be banisht farre away from hence: 10  
Ne let the Sacred Sisters here be hight,  
Though they of sorrowe heavilie can sing;  
For even their heavie song would breede  
delight:

But here no tunes, save sobs and grones,  
shall ring.

In stead of them and their sweet harmonie,  
Let those three Fatall Sisters, whose sad  
hands

Doo weave the direfull threds of destinie,  
And in their wrath breake off the vitall bands,  
Approach hereto: and let the dreadfull  
queene

Of darkenes deepe come from the Stygian  
strands, 20

And grisly ghosts, to heare this dolefull  
teene.

In gloomie evening, when the wearie sun  
After his dayes long labour drew to rest,  
And sweatie steedes, now having over-run  
The compast skie, gan water in the west,  
I walkt abroad to breath the freshing  
ayre

In open fields, whose flowring pride, opprest  
With early frosts, had lost their beautie  
faire.

There came unto my minde a troublous  
thought,

Which dayly dooth my weaker wit pos-  
sesse, 30

Ne lets it rest, untill it forth have brought  
Her long borne infant, fruit of heavynesse,  
Which she conceived hath through medita-  
tion

Of this worlds vainesse and lifes wretched-  
nesse,

That yet my soule it deeply doth empas-  
sion.

So as I mized on the miserie

In which men live, and I of many most,  
Most miserable man, I did espie

Where towards me a sory wight did cost,  
Clad all in black, that mourning did be-  
wray, 40

And Jaakob staffe in hand devontly crost,  
Like to some pilgrim come from farre  
away.



His carelesse locks, uncombed and unshorne,  
Hong long adowne, and bearde all over-  
growne,

That well he seemd to be sun wight for-  
lorne:

Downe to the earth his heavie eyes were  
throwne

As loathing light; and ever as he went,  
He sighed soft, and inly deepe did grone,  
As if his heart in peeces would have rent.

Approaching nigh, his face I vewed nere, 50  
And by the semblant of his countenance  
Me seemd I had his person seene elsewhere,  
Most like Alecyon seeming at a glaunce;  
Alecyon he, the jollie shepheard swaine,  
That wont full merrilie to pipe and daunce,  
And fill with pleasance every wood and  
plaine.

Yet halfe in doubt because of his disguise,  
I softlie sayd, 'Alecyon!' Therewithall  
He lookt aside as in disdainefull wise,  
Yet stayed not: till I againe did call. 60  
Then turning back, he saide with hollow  
sound,

'Who is it that dooth name me, wofull  
thrall,

The wretchedst man that treades this day  
on ground?'

'One whome like wofulnesse, impressed  
deepe,  
Hath made fit mate thy wretched case to  
heare,  
And given like cause with thee to waile and  
weepe:  
Griefe findes some case by him that like  
does beare.

'Then stay, Alecyon, gentle shepheard, stay,'  
Quoth I, 'till thou have to my trustie care  
Committed what thee dooth so ill apay.' 70

'Cease, foolish man,' saide he halfe wroth-  
fully,

'To seeke to heare that which cannot be  
told:

For the huge anguish, which dooth multiply  
My dying paines, no tongue can well unfold:  
Ne doo I care that any should bemone  
My hard mishap, or any weepe that would,  
But seeke alone to weepe, and dye alone.'

'Then be it so,' quoth I, 'that thou art bent  
To die alone, unpitied, unplained;

Yet ere thou die, it were convenient 80  
To tell the cause which thee theretoo con-  
strained,

Least that the world thee dead accuse of  
guilt,

And say, when thou of none shalt be main-  
tained,

That thou for secret crime thy blood hast  
spilt.'

'Who life dooes loath, and longs to bee  
imbound

From the strong shackles of fraile flesh,'  
quoth he,

'Nought cares at all what they that live on  
ground

Deeme the occasion of his death to bee:  
Rather desires to be forgotten quight,

Than question made of his calamitie; 90  
For harts deep sorrow hates both life and  
light.

'Yet since so much thou seemst to rue my  
griefe,

And carest for one that for himselfe cares  
nought,

(Signe of thy love, though nought for my  
reliefe:

For my reliefe exceedeth living thought,)  
I will to thee this heavie case relate.

Then harken well till it to ende be brought,  
For never didst thou heare more haplesse  
fate.

'Whilome I nsde (as thou right well doest  
know)

My little flocke on westernne downes to  
keepe, 100

Not far from whence Sabrinaes streame  
doth flow,

And flowrie bancks with silver liquor steepe:  
Nought carde I then for worldly change or  
chance,

For all my joy was on my gentle sheepe,  
And to my pype to caroll and to daunce.

'It there befell, as I the fields did range  
Fearelesse and free, a faire young Lionesse,  
White as the native rose before the chaunge  
Which Venus blood did in her leaves im-  
presse,

I spied playing on the grassie playne 110  
Her youthfull sports and kindlie wanton-  
nesse,

That did all other beasts in beawtie staine.

‘ Much was I moved at so goodly sight,  
 Whose like before mine eye had seldome  
   seene,  
 And gan to cast how I her compasse might,  
 And bring to hand, that yet had never beene:  
 So well I wrought with mildnes and with  
   paine,  
 That I her caught disporting on the grene,  
 And brought away fast bound with silver  
   chaine.

‘ And afterwards I handled her so fayre, <sup>120</sup>  
 That though by kind shee stout and salvage  
   were,  
 For being borne an auncient lions haire,  
 And of the race that all wild beastes do feare,  
 Yet I her fram’d and wan so to my bent,  
 That shee became so meeke and milde of  
   cheare  
 As the least lamb in all my flock that went.

‘ For shee in field, where ever I did wend,  
 Would wend with me, and waite by me all  
   day:  
 And all the night that I in watch did spend,  
 If cause requir’d, or els in sleepe, if nay, <sup>130</sup>  
 Shee would all night by mee or watch or  
   sleepe;  
 And evermore when I did sleepe or play,  
 She of my flock would take full warie keepe.

‘ Safe then and safest were my sillie sheepe,  
 Ne fear’d the wolfe, ne fear’d the wildest  
   beast,  
 All were I drown’d in carelesse quiet deepe:  
 My lovelie Lionesse without beheast  
 So carefull was for them and for my good,  
 That when I waked, neither most nor least  
 I found miscaried or in plaine or wood. <sup>140</sup>

‘ Oft did the shepheards, which my hap did  
   heare,  
 And oft their lasses, which my luck envide,  
 Daylie resort to me from farre and neare,  
 To see my Lyonesse, whose praises wide  
 Were spred abroad; and when her worth-  
   nesse  
 Much greater than the rude report they  
   tri’d,  
 They her did praise, and my good fortune  
   blesse.

‘ Long thus I joyed in my happinesse,  
 And well did hope my joy would have no  
   end:

But oh ! fond man ! that in worlds fickle-  
   nesse <sup>150</sup>  
 Reposedst hope, or weenedst her thy frend  
 That glories most in mortall miseries,  
 And daylie doth her changefull counsels  
   bend,  
 To make new matter fit for tragedies !

‘ For whilst I was thus without dread or  
   dout,  
 A cruell Satyre with his murderous dart,  
 Greedie of mischief, ranging all about,  
 Gave her the fatall wound of deadly smart,  
 And reft fro me my sweete companion,  
 And reft fro me my love, my life, my hart:  
 My Lyonesse (ah, woe is mee !) is gon. <sup>160</sup>

‘ Out of the world thus was she reft awaie,  
 Out of the world, unworthie such a spoyle;  
 And borne to heaven, for heaven a fitter pray;  
 Much fitter than the lyon which with toyle  
 Alcides slew, and fixt in firmament:  
 Her now I seek throughout this earthlie  
   soyle,  
 And seeking misse, and missing doe lament.’

Therewith he gan afresh to waile and weepe,  
 That I for pittie of his heavie plight <sup>170</sup>  
 Could not abstaine mine eyes with teares to  
   steepe:

But when I saw the anguish of his spright  
 Some deale alaid, I him bespake againe:  
 ‘ Certes, Alecyon, painfull is thy plight,  
 That it in me breeds almost equall paine.

‘ Yet doth not my dull wit well understand  
 The riddle of thy loved Lionesse;  
 For rare it seemes in reason to be skand,  
 That man, who doth the whole worlds rule  
   possesse,  
 Should to a beast his noble hart embase, <sup>180</sup>  
 And be the vassall of his vassalesse:  
 Therefore more plaine aread this doubtfull  
   case.’

Then sighing sore, ‘ Daphne thou knewest,’  
   quoth he;  
 ‘ She now is dead ’: ne more endured to say,  
 But fell to ground for great extremitie;  
 That I, beholding it, with deepe dismay  
 Was much appald, and lightly him uprear-  
   ing,  
 Revoked life, that would have fled away,  
 All were my self through grieve in deadly  
   dreading.

Then gan I him to comfort all my best, <sup>190</sup>  
 And with milde counsaile strove to mitigate  
 The stormie passiou of his troubled brest:  
 But he thereby was more empassionate;  
 As stubborne steed, that is with curb re-  
 strained,  
 Becomes more fierce and fervent in his gate;  
 And breaking forth at last, thus dearnelic  
 plained.

## I

‘What man henceforth, that breatheth vi-  
 tall ayre,  
 Will honour Heaven, or heavenlie powers  
 adore,  
 Which so unjustlie doe their judgments  
 share <sup>199</sup>  
 Mongst earthly wights, as to afflict so sore  
 The unocent as those which do transgresse,  
 And do not spare the best or fairest more  
 Than worst or fowlest, but doe both op-  
 presse ?

‘If this be right, why did they then create  
 The world so fayre, sith fairenesse is  
 neglected ?  
 Or whie be they themselves immaculate,  
 If purest things be not by them respected ?  
 She faire, shee pure, most faire, most pure  
 she was,  
 Yet was by them as thing impure rejected:  
 Yet shee in purenesse heaven it selfe did pas.

‘In purenesse and in all celestially grace, <sup>211</sup>  
 That men admire in goodlie womankinde,  
 She did excell, and seem’d of angels race,  
 Living on earth like angell new diviude,  
 Adorn’d with wisdom and with chastitie,  
 And all the dowries of a noble mind,  
 Which did her beautie much more beautifie.

‘No age hath bred (since fayre Astræa left  
 The sunfull worlde) more vertue in a wight,  
 And when she parted hence, with her she  
 reft <sup>220</sup>  
 Great hope, and robd her race of bountie  
 quight:  
 Well may the shepheard lasses now lament,  
 For dubble losse by her hath on them light,  
 To loose both her and bounties ornament.

‘Ne let Elisa, royall shepheardesse,  
 The praises of my parted love envy,  
 For she hath praises in all plenteousnesse  
 Powr’d upon her, like showers of Castaly.

By her own shepheard, Colin her owne  
 shepherd, <sup>229</sup>  
 That her with heavenly hymnes doth deifie,  
 Of rusticke muse full hardly to be betterd.

‘She is the rose, the glorie of the day,  
 And mine the primrose in the lowly shade:  
 Mine ? ah, not mine ! amisse I mine did say:  
 Not mine, but His which mine awhile her  
 made:

Mine to be His, with Him to live for ay.  
 O that so faire a flower so soone should fade,  
 And through untimely tempest fall away !

‘She fell away in her first ages spring,  
 Whil’st yet her leafe was greene, and fresh  
 her rinde, <sup>240</sup>  
 And whil’st her braunch faire blossomes  
 forth did bring,

She fell away against all course of kinde:  
 For age to dye is right, but youth is wrong;  
 She fel away like fruit blowne downe with  
 winde:  
 Weepe, shepheard, weepe, to make my un-  
 dersong.

## II

‘What hart so stony hard, but that would  
 weepe,  
 And poure forth fountaines of incessant  
 teares ?  
 What Timon, but would let compassion  
 creepe  
 Into his brest, and pierce his frosen eares ?  
 In stead of teares, whose brackish bitter  
 well <sup>250</sup>  
 I wasted have, my heart blood dropping  
 weares,  
 To thinke to ground how that faire blossome  
 fell.

‘Yet fell she not as one enforst to dye,  
 Ne dyde with dread and grudging discon-  
 tent,  
 But as one toyld with travaile downe doth  
 lye,  
 So lay she downe, as if to sleepe she went,  
 And closde her eyes with carelesse quiet-  
 nesse;  
 The whiles soft death away her spirit hent,  
 And soule assoyld from sinfull fleshlinesse.

‘Yet ere that life her lodging did forsake,  
 She, all resolv’d and ready to remove, <sup>261</sup>  
 Calling to me (ay me !) this wise bespake:



"Alcyon! ah, my first and latest love!  
 Ah! why does my Alcyon weepe and  
 mourne,  
 And grieve my ghost, that ill mote him be-  
 hove,  
 As if to me had chanst some evill tourne?"

"I, since the messenger is come for mee  
 That summons soules unto the bridale feast  
 Of his great Lord, must needes depart from  
 thee,  
 And straight obey his soveraine behest: 270  
 Why should Alcyon then so sore lament  
 That I from miserie shall be releast,  
 And freed from wretched long imprison-  
 ment?"

"Our daies are full of dolor and disease,  
 Our life afflicted with incessant paine,  
 That nought on earth may lessen or appease.  
 Why then should I desire here to remaine?  
 Or why should he that loves me, sorie bee  
 For my deliverance, or at all complaine  
 My good to heare, and toward joyes to  
 see? 280

"I goe, and long desired have to goe,  
 I goe with gladnesse to my wished rest,  
 Whereas no worlds sad care, nor wasting  
 woe,  
 May come their happie quiet to molest,  
 But saints and angels in celestiall thrones  
 Eternally Him praise that hath them blest;  
 There shall I be amongst those blessed ones.

"Yet ere I goe, a pledge I leave with thee  
 Of the late love, the which betwixt us  
 past,  
 My young Ambrosia; in lieu of mee 290  
 Love her: so shall our love for ever last.  
 Thus, deare, adieu! whom I expect ere  
 long."

So having said, away she softly past;  
 Weepe, shepheard, weepe, to make mine  
 undersong.

## III

"So oft as I record those piercing words,  
 Which yet are deepe engraven in my brest,  
 And those last deadly accents, which like  
 swords  
 Did wound my heart and rend my bleeding  
 chest,  
 With those sweet sugred speeches doo com-  
 pare

The which my soule first conquerd and  
 possest,  
 The first beginners of my endlesse care; 300

"And when those pallid cheekes and ashy  
 hew,  
 In which sad Death his pourtraicture had  
 writ,  
 And when those hollow eyes and deadly  
 view,  
 On which the clowde of ghastly night did  
 sit,  
 I match with that sweet smile and chear-  
 full brow,  
 Which all the world subdued unto it;  
 How happie was I then, and wretched now!

"How happie was I, when I saw her leade  
 The shepheards daughters dauncing in a  
 rownd! 310  
 How trimly would she trace and softly  
 tread  
 The tender grasse, with rosie garland  
 crownd!  
 And when she list advance her heavenly  
 voyce,  
 Both Nymphs and Muses nigh she made  
 astownd,  
 And flocks and shepheards caused to re-  
 joyce.

"But now, ye shepheard lasses, who shall  
 lead  
 Your wandring troupes, or sing your vire-  
 layes?  
 Or who shall dight your bowres, sith she is  
 dead  
 That was the lady of your holy dayes?  
 Let now your blisse be turned into bale, 320  
 And into plaints convert your joyous playes,  
 And with the same fill every hill and dale.

"Let bagpipe never more be heard to shrill,  
 That may allure the senses to delight;  
 Ne ever shepheard sound his oaten quill  
 Unto the many, that provoke them might  
 To idle pleasure: but let ghastlinesse  
 And dreary horror dim the chearfull light,  
 To make the inage of true heavinessse.

"Let birds be silent on the naked spray, 330  
 And shady woods resound with dreadfull  
 yells;  
 Let streaming floods their hastie courses  
 stay.

And parching droughth drie up the christall  
wells;  
Let th' earth be barren, and bring foorth  
no flowres,  
And th' ayre be fild with noyse of dolefull  
knells,  
And wandring spirits walke untimely  
howres.

'And Nature, nurse of every living thing,  
Let rest her selfe from her long wearinesse,  
And cease henceforth things kindly forth  
to bring,  
But hideous monsters full of uglinesse; 340  
For she it is that hath me done this wrong;  
No nurse, but stepdame ernell mereillesse.  
Weepe, shepheard, weepe, to make my  
undersong.

## IV

'My litle floeke, whom earst I lov'd so  
well,  
And wont to feede with finest grasse that  
grew,  
Feede ye hencefoorth on bitter astrofell,  
And stinking smallage, and unsaverie rew;  
And when your mawes are with those weeds  
eorruped,  
Be ye the pray of wolves: ne will I rew  
That with your carkasses wild beasts be  
glutted. 350

'Ne worse to you, my sillie sheepe, I pray,  
Ne sorer vengeance wish on yon to fall  
Than to my selfe, for whose confusde  
decay  
To carelesse heavens I doo daylie call:  
But heavens refuse to heare a wretches cry;  
And cruell Death doth scorne to come at  
call,  
Or graunt his boone that most desires to  
dye.

'The good and righteous he away doth take,  
To plague th' unrighteous which alive re-  
maine:  
But the ungodly ones he doth forsake, 360  
By living long to multiplie their paine:  
Els surely death should be no punishment,  
As the great Judge at first did it ordaine,  
But rather riddance from long languish-  
ment.

'Therefore my Daphne they have tane away;  
For worthie of a better place was she:

But me unworthie willed here to stay,  
That with her lacke I might tormented be.  
Sith then they so have ordred, I will pay  
Penance to her according their decree, 370  
And to her ghost doo service day by day.

'For I will walke this wandring pilgrimage,  
Throughout the world from one to other  
end,

And in affliction wast my better age:  
My bread shall be the anguish of my mind,  
My drink the teares which fro mine eyes  
do raine,  
My bed the ground that hardest I may fynd:  
So will I wilfully increase my paine.

'And she, my love that was, my saint that  
is,

When she beholds from her eelestiall  
throne 380

(In which shee joyeth in eternall blis)  
My bitter penance, will my case bemone,  
And pitie me that living thus doo die:  
For heavenly spirits have compassion  
On mortall men, and rue their miserie.

'So when I have with sorrowe satisfide  
Th' importune Fates, which vengeance on  
me seeke,  
And th' heavens with long languor paci-  
fide,

She, for pure pitie of my sufferance meeke,  
Will send for me; for which I daylie long, 390  
And will till then my painfull penance eeke.  
Weep, shepheard, weep, to make my under  
song.

## V

'Hencefoorth I hate what ever Nature  
made,

And in her workmanship no pleasure finde:  
For they be all but vaine, and quickly fade,  
So soone as on them blowes the northern  
winde;

They tarrie not, but flit and fall away,  
Leaving behind them nought but grieve of  
minde,  
And mocking such as thinke they long will  
stay.

'I hate the heaven, because it doth with-  
hold 400

Me from my love, and eke my love from  
me;

I hate the earth, because it is the mold

Of fleshly slime and fraile mortalitie;  
 I hate the fire, because to nought it flies,  
 I hate the ayre, because sighes of it be,  
 I hate the sea, because it teares supplies.

‘I hate the day, because it lendeth light  
 To see all things, and not my love to see;  
 I hate the darknesse and the drery night,  
 Because they breed sad balefulnesse in  
 mee;

I hate all times, because all times doo fly  
 So fast away, and may not stayed bee,  
 But as a speedie post that passeth by.

‘I hate to speake, my voyce is spent with  
 crying:

I hate to heare, lowd plaints have duld  
 mine eares:

I hate to tast, for food withholds my dying:  
 I hate to see, mine eyes are dimd with  
 teares:

I hate to smell, no sweet on earth is left:  
 I hate to feelee, my flesh is numbd with  
 feares:

So all my senses from me are bereft.

‘I hate all men, and shun all woman-  
 kinde;

The one, because as I they wretched are,  
 The other, for because I doo not finde  
 My love with them, that wont to be their  
 starre:

And life I hate, because it will not last,  
 And death I hate, because it life doth  
 marre,

And all I hate, that is to come or past.

‘So all the world, and all in it I hate,  
 Because it changeth ever too and fro,  
 And never standeth in one certaine state,  
 But still unstedfast round about doth goe,  
 Like a mill wheele, in midst of miserie,  
 Driven with streames of wretchednesse and  
 woe,

That dying lives, and living still does dye.

‘So doo I live, so doo I daylie die,  
 And pine away in selfe-consuming paine:  
 Sith she that did my vitall powres sup-  
 plie,

And feeble spirits in their force maintaine,  
 Is fetcht fro me, why seeke I to prolong  
 My wearie daies in dolor and disdaine?  
 Weep, shepheard, weep, to make my under-  
 song.

## VI

‘Why doo I longer live in lifes despight,  
 And doo not dye then in despight of death?  
 Why doo I longer see this loathsome light,  
 And doo in darknesse not abridge my breath,  
 Sith all my sorrow should have end thereby,  
 And cares finde quiet? Is it so uneath  
 To leave this life, or dolorous to dye?

‘To live I finde it deadly dolorous;  
 For life drawes care, and care continuall  
 woe:

Therefore to dye must needes be joyeous,  
 And wishfull thing this sad life to forgoe.  
 But I must stay; I may it not amend;  
 My Daphne hence departing bad me so;  
 She bad me stay, till she for me did send.

‘Yet, whilst I in this wretched vale doo  
 stay,

My wearie feete shall ever wandring be,  
 That still I may be readie on my way,  
 When as her messenger doth come for me:  
 Ne will I rest my feete for feeblenesse,  
 Ne will I rest my limmes for frailtie,  
 Ne will I rest mine eyes for heavinesse.

‘But, as the mother of the gods, that sought  
 For faire Euridyce, her daughter deere,  
 Throghout the world, with wofull heavie  
 thought,

So will I travell whilst I tarrie heere,  
 Ne will I lodge, ne will I ever lin,  
 Ne when as drouping Titan draweth neere  
 To loose his teeme, will I take up my inne.

‘Ne sleepe (the harbenger of wearie  
 wights)

Shall ever lodge upon mine ey-lids more,  
 Ne shall with rest refresh my fainting  
 sprights,  
 Nor failing force to former strength re-  
 store:

But I will wake and sorrow all the night  
 With Philumene, my fortune to deplore,  
 With Philumene, the partner of my plight.

‘And ever as I see the starres to fall,  
 And under ground to goe, to give them  
 light

Which dwell in darknes, I to minde will  
 call

How my faire starre (that shinde on me so  
 bright)

Fell sodainly and faded under ground;



Since whose departure, day is turnd to night,  
And night without a Venus starre is found.

‘But soone as day doth shew his deawie  
face,  
And calls foorth men unto their toylsome  
trade,  
I will withdraw me to some darksome place,  
Or some deepe cave, or solitarie shade;  
There will I sigh and sorrow all day long,  
And the huge burden of my cares unlade.  
Weep, shepheard, weep, to make my under-  
song. 490

## VII

‘Hence foorth mine eyes shall never more  
behold  
Faire thing on earth, ne feed on false de-  
light  
Of ought that framed is of mortall moulde,  
Sith that my fairest flower is faded quight:  
For all I see is vaine and transitorie,  
Ne will be helde in anie stedfast plight,  
But in a moment loose their grace and  
glorie.

‘And ye, fond men, on Fortunes wheele that  
ride,  
Or in ought under heauen repose assurance,  
Be it riches, beautie, or honors pride, 500  
Be sure that they shall have no long endur-  
ance,  
But ere ye be aware will flit away;  
For nought of them is yours, but th’ onely  
usance  
Of a small time, which noue ascertainē may.

‘And ye, true lovers, whom desastrous  
chaunce  
Hath farre exiled from your ladies grace,  
To mourne in sorrow and sad sufferance,  
When ye doo heare me in that desert place  
Lamenting lowde my Daphnes elegie,  
Helpe me to wayle my miserable case, 510  
And when life parts, vouchsafe to close mine  
eye.

‘And ye, more happie lovers, which enjoy  
The presence of your dearest loves delight,  
When ye doo heare my sorrowfull annoy,  
Yet pittie me in your empassiond spright,  
And thinke that such mishap as chaunst to  
me  
May happen unto the most happiest wight;  
For all mens states alike unstedfast be.

‘And ye, my fellow shepheards, which do  
feed  
Your carelesse flocks on hils and open  
plaines, 520  
With better fortune than did me succeed,  
Remember yet my undeserved paines;  
And when ye heare that I am dead or slaine,  
Lament my lot, and tell your fellow swaines  
That sad Alcyon dyde in lifes disdaine.

‘And ye, faire damsels, shepheards dere  
delights,  
That with your loves do their rude hearts  
posseste,  
When as my hearse shall happen to your  
sightes,  
Vouchsafe to deck the same with cyparesse;  
And ever sprinckle brackish teares among,  
In pitie of my undeserv’d distresse, 531  
The which I, wretch, endured have thus long.

‘And ye, poore pilgrims, that with restlesse  
toyle  
Wearie your selves in wandring desert  
wayes,  
Till that you come where ye your voves  
assoyle,  
When passing by ye read these wofull layes  
On my grave written, rue my Daphnes  
wrong,  
And mourne for me that languish out my  
dayes.  
Cease, shepheard, cease, and end thy under-  
song.’

Thus when he ended had his heavie  
plaint, 540  
The heaviest plaint that ever I heard sound,  
His cheekes wext pale, and sprights began  
to faint,  
As if againe he would have fallen to ground;  
Which when I saw, I (stepping to him light)  
Amooved him out of his stonie swound,  
And gan him to recomfort as I might.

But he no waie recomforted would be,  
Nor suffer solace to approach him nie,  
But casting up a sdeinfull eie at me,  
That in his traunce I would not let him  
lie, 550  
Did rend his haire, and beat his blubbred  
face,  
As one disposed wilfullie to die,  
That I sore griev’d to see his wretched case.

Tho when the pang was somewhat overpast,  
And the outrageous passion nigh appeased,  
I him desirde, sith daie was overcast  
And darke night fast approached, to be  
pleased

To turne aside unto my cabinet,  
And staie with me, till he were better eased  
Of that strong stownd which him so sore  
beset.

560

But by no meanes I could him win there-  
to,

Ne longer him intreate with me to staie,  
But without taking leave he fourth did goe  
With staggering pace and dismall lookes  
dismay,

As if that Death he in the face had seene,  
Or hellish hags had met upon the way:  
But what of him became I cannot weene.

## COLIN CLOUDS COME HOME AGAINE

BY ED. SPENCER

LONDON

PRINTED FOR WILLIAM PONSONBIE

1595

TO THE RIGHT WORTHY AND NOBLE KNIGHT SIR WALTER RALEIGH,  
CAPTAIN OF HER MAJESTIES GUARD, LORD WARDEIN OF THE STAN-  
NERIES, AND LIEUTENANT OF THE COUNTIE OF CORNWALL

SIR, that you may see that I am not  
alwaies ydle as yee thinke, though not  
greatly well occupied, nor altogether undu-  
tfull, though not precisely officious, I make  
you present of this simple pastorall, un-  
worthie of your higher conceipt for the  
meanesse of the stile, but agreeing with the  
truth in circumstance and matter. The  
which I humbly beseech you to accept in  
part of payment of the infinite debt in which  
I acknowledge my selfe bounden unto you,

for your singular favours and sundrie good  
turnes shewed to me at my late being in Eng-  
land, and with your good countenance pro-  
tect against the malice of evill mouthes,  
which are alwaies wide open to carpe at  
and misconstrue my simple meaning. I  
pray continually for your happinesse. From  
my house of Kilcolman, the 27 of De-  
cember, 1591.

Yours ever humbly,  
Ed. Sp.

[*Colin Clout's Come Home Again* is the record  
of the poet's expedition to England with Ra-  
leigh in 1589 and of what he found there at  
court. It was obviously written not long after  
his return to Kilcolman and sent to his friend  
as soon as done. About four years later, prob-  
ably by way of revision for the press, he made  
changes inspired by intervening events.

In a poem of such content, it was natural  
that he should adopt his old incognito of the  
*Shepherd's Calendar* and appear as Colin Clout.  
In that character, he would naturally need his  
old friend and interlocutor, Hobbinol, to start  
the dialogue, and when he came to the theme  
of court love-making, he could hardly fail to  
sing a palinode upon his old mistress Rosalind.  
They were set personages of the fiction. Yet

*Colin Clout's Come Home Again* owes little  
to the *Calendar*; for its art is essentially more  
direct. In the earlier poem whatever facts of  
personal experience and opinion are to be dis-  
cerned we see dimly and ambiguously through  
a kind of luminous fog: love-story and satire  
are altogether baffling. In the later, the story  
is almost as clear as a chronicle, the satire al-  
most as direct and vivid as that of 'Mother  
Hubberd's Tale.' Its pastoralism, indeed, is  
more a point of view than a set disguise, or,  
at least, the mask is worn lightly and removed  
at will. From the allegorical to the literal the  
style winds to and fro flexibly, according as  
the poet's memories take form. It is free, not  
run in moulds. Beside it the beauties of the  
*Calendar* seem almost academic.]

COLIN CLOUDS COME HOME  
AGAINE

THE shepheards boy (best knowen by that name)

That after Tityrus first sung his lay,  
Laies of sweet love, without rebuke or blame,

Sate (as his custome was) upon a day,  
Charming his oaten pipe unto his peres,  
The shepheard swaines that did about him play:

Who all the while, with greedie listfull eares,

Did stand astonisht at his curious skill,  
Like hartlesse deare, dismayd with thunders sound.

At last when as he piped had his fill, 10  
He rested him: and sitting then around,  
One of those groomes (a jolly groome was he,

As ever piped on an oaten reed,  
And lov'd this shepheard dearest in degree,  
Hight Hobbinol) gan thus to him ared.

'Colm, my lief, my life, how great a losse

Had all the shepheards nation by thy lacke !  
And I, poore swaine, of many, greatest crosse:

That, sith thy Muse first since thy turning backe

Was heard to sound as she was wont on hye, 20

Hast made us all so blessed and so blythe.  
Whilist thou wast hence, all dead in dole did lie:

The woods were heard to waile full many a sythe,

And all their birds with silence to com-  
plaine:

The fields with faded flowers did seem to mourne,

And all their flocks from feeding to re-  
fraine:

The running waters wept for thy returne,  
And all their fish with languour did lament:  
But now both woods and fields and floods revive,

Sith thou art come, their cause of meri-  
ment, 30

That us, late dead, hast made againe alive.  
But were it not too painfull to repeat  
The passed fortunes, which to thee befell  
In thy late voyage, we thee would entreat,  
Now at thy leisure them to us to tell.'

To whom the shepheard gently answered thus:

'Hobbin, thou temptest me to that I covet:  
For of good passed newly to discus,

By dubble usurie doth twise renew it.  
And since I saw that Angels blessed eie, 40  
Her worlds bright sun, her heavens fairest light,

My mind, full of my thoughts satietie,  
Doth feed on sweet contentment of that sight:

Since that same day in nought I take delight,

Ne feeling have in any earthly pleasure,  
But in remembrance of that glorious bright,  
My lifes sole blisse, my hearts eternall treasure.

Wake then, my pipe ! my sleepeie Muse, awake !

Till I have told her praises lasting long:  
Hobbin desires, thou maist it not forsake. 50  
Harke then, ye jollyshepheards, to my song.'

With that they all gan throng about him neare,

With hungrie eares to heare his harmonie:  
The whiles their flocks, devoyd of dangers feare,

Did round about them feed at libertie.

'One day,' quoth he, 'I sat (as was my trade)

Undr the foote of Mole, that mountaine hore,

Keeping my sheepe amongst the cooly shade  
Of the greene alders by the Mullaes shore.  
There a straunge shepheard chaunst to find me out, 60

Whether allured with my pipes delight,  
Whose pleasing sound yshrilled far about,  
Or thither led by chaunce, I know not right:  
Whom when I asked from what place he came,

And how he hight, himselfe he did ycleepe  
The Shepheard of the Ocean by name,  
And said he came far from the main-sea deepe.

He, sitting me beside in that same shade,  
Provoked me to plaie some pleasant fit,  
And when he heard the musicke which I made, 70

He found himselfe full greatly pleasd at it:  
Yet æmuling my pipe, he tooke in hond  
My pipe, before that æmuled of many,  
And plaid theron; (for well that skill he cond)

Himselfe as skilfull in that art as any



He pip'd, I sung, and when he sung, I piped,  
By chaunge of turnes, each making other  
mery,

Neither envying other, nor envied,  
So piped we, untill we both were weary.'

There interrupting him, a bonie swaine, <sup>80</sup>  
That Cuddy hight, him thus atweene be-  
spake:

'And should it not thy readie course re-  
straine,

I would request thee, Colin, for my sake,  
To tell what thou didst sing, when he did  
plaie:

For well I weene it worth recounting was,  
Whether it were some hymne, or morall  
laie,

Or carol made to praise thy loved lasse.'

'Nor of my love, nor of my lasse,' quoth  
he,

'I then did sing, as then occasion fell:

For love had me forlorne, forlorne of me, <sup>90</sup>  
That made me in that desert chose to dwell.

But of my river Bregogs love I soong,  
Which to the shiny Mulla he did beare,  
And yet doth beare, and ever will, so long  
As water doth within his bancks appeare.'

'Of fellowship,' said then that bony boy,  
'Record to us that lovely lay againe:

The staie whereof shall nought these eares  
annoy,

Who all that Colin makes do covet faine.'

'Heare then,' quoth he, 'the tenor of my  
tale, <sup>100</sup>

In sort as I it to that shepheard told:

No leasing new, nor grandams fable stale,  
But auncient truth confirm'd with credence  
old.

'Old Father Mole, (Mole hight that moun-  
tain gray

That walls the northside of Armulla dale)  
He had a daughter fresh as floure of May,  
Which gave that name unto that pleasant  
vale;

Mulla, the daughter of old Mole, so hight  
The nimph, which of that water course has  
charge,

That, springing out of Mole, doth run downe  
right <sup>110</sup>

To Buttevant, where spreading forth at  
large,

It giveth name unto that auncient cattie,  
Which Kilnemullah cleped is of old:

Whose ragged ruines breed great ruth and  
pittie

To travailers which it from far behold.

Full faine she lov'd, and was belov'd full  
faine

Of her owne brother river, Bregog hight,  
So hight because of this deceitfull traine  
Which he with Mulla wrought to win de-  
light. <sup>119</sup>

But her old sire, more carefull of her good,  
And meaning her much better to preferre,  
Did thinke to match her with the neighbour  
flood,

Which Allo hight, Broadwater called farre:  
And wrought so well with his continuall  
paine,

That he that river for his daughter wonne:  
The dowre agreed, the day assigned plaine,  
The place appointed where it should be  
doone.

Nath'lesse the nymph her former liking  
held;

For love will not be drawne, but must be  
ledde;

And Bregog did so well her fancie weld, <sup>130</sup>  
That her good will he got her first to wedde.

But, for her father, sitting still on hie,  
Did warily still watch which way she went,  
And eke from far observ'd, with jealous eie,  
Which way his course the wanton Bregog  
bent,

Him to deceive, for all his watchfull ward,  
The wily lover did devise this slight:

First into many parts his streame he shar'd,  
That, whilst the one was watcht, the other  
might

Passe unespide to meete her by the way; <sup>140</sup>  
And then besides, those little streames so  
broken

He under ground so closely did convay,  
That of their passage doth appeare no token,  
Till they into the Mullaes water slide.

So secretly did he his love enjoy:

Yet not so secret, but it was descride,  
And told her father by a shepherds boy.

Who, wondrous wroth for that so foule de-  
spight,

In great avenge did roll downe from his  
hill

Huge mightie stones, the which encomber  
might <sup>150</sup>

His passage, and his water-courses spill.

So of a river, which he was of old,

He none was made, but scattred all to  
nought,

And, lost among those rocks into him rold,  
Did lose his name: so deare his love he  
bought.'

Which having said, him Thestylis bespake:  
 'Now by my life this was a mery lay,  
 Worthie of Colin selfe, that did it make.  
 But read now eke, of friendship I thee pray,  
 What dittie did that other shepheard sing?  
 For I do covet most the same to heare, <sup>161</sup>  
 As men use most to covet forreine thing.'  
 'That shall I eke,' quoth he, 'to you  
 declare.

His song was all a lamentable lay,  
 Of great unkindnesse, and of usage hard,  
 Of Cynthia, the Ladie of the Sea,  
 Which from her presence faultlesse him  
 debar'd.

And ever and anon, with singulfs rife,  
 He cryed out, to make his undersong:  
 "Ah! my loves queene, and goddesse of  
 my life, <sup>170</sup>  
 Who shall me pittie, when thou doest me  
 wrong?"

Then gan a gentle bonylasse to speake,  
 That Marin hight: 'Right well he sure did  
 plaine,  
 That could great Cynthiaes sore displeasure  
 breake,

And move to take him to her grace againe.  
 But tell on further, Colin, as befell  
 Twixt him and thee, that thee did hence  
 dissuade.'

'When thus our pipes we both had wea-  
 ried well,'  
 Quoth he, 'and each an end of singing  
 made,

He gan to cast great lyking to my lore, <sup>180</sup>  
 And great dislyking to my lucklesse lot,  
 That banisht had my selfe, like wight  
 forlore,

Into that waste, where I was quite forgot.  
 The which to leave, thenceforth he counsell'd  
 mee,

Unmeet for man in whom was ought regard-  
 full,

And wend with him, his Cynthia to see,  
 Whose grace was great, and bounty most  
 rewardfull:

Besides her peerlesse skill in making well,  
 And all the ornaments of wondrous wit,  
 Such as all womankynd did far excell, <sup>190</sup>  
 Such as the world admyr'd and praised it:  
 So what with hope of good, and hate of ill,  
 He me perswaded forth with him to fare;  
 Nought tooke I with me, but mine oaten  
 quill:

Small needments else need shepheard to  
 prepare.

So to the sea we came; the sea? that is  
 A world of waters heaped up on hie,  
 Rolling like mountaines in wide wilderness,  
 Horrible, hideous, roaring with boarse crie.'

'And is the sea,' quoth Coridon, 'so fear-  
 full?' <sup>200</sup>

'Fearful much more,' quoth he, 'then  
 hart can fear:

Thousand wyld beasts with deep mouthes  
 gaping direfull

Therin stil wait poore passengers to teare.  
 Who life doth loath, and longs death to  
 behold,

Before he die, alreadie dead with feare,  
 And yet would live with heart halfe stonie  
 cold,

Let him to sea, and he shall see it there.  
 And yet as ghastly dreadfull as it seemes,  
 Bold men, presuming life for gaine to sell,  
 Dare tempt that gulf, and in those wandring  
 stremes <sup>210</sup>

Seek waies unknowne, waies leading down  
 to hell.

For as we stood there waiting on the strond,  
 Behold! an huge great vessell to us came,  
 Dauncing upon the waters back to lond,  
 As if it scornd the daunger of the same;  
 Yet was it but a wooden frame and fraile,  
 Glewed together with some subtile matter,  
 Yet had it armes and wings, and head and  
 taile,

And life to move it selfe upon the water.  
 Strange thing, how bold and swift the mon-  
 ster was, <sup>220</sup>

That neither car'd for wynd, nor haile, nor  
 raine,

Nor swelling waves, but thorough them did  
 passe

So proudly that she made them roare againe!  
 The same aboard us gently did receave,  
 And without harme us farre away did beare,  
 So farre that land, our mother, us did leave,  
 And nought but sea and heaven to us ap-  
 peare.

Then hartlesse quite and full of inward  
 feare,

That shepheard I besought to me to tell,  
 Under what skie, or in what world we  
 were, <sup>230</sup>

In which I saw no living people dwell.  
 Who me recomforting all that he might,  
 Told me that that same was the regiment  
 Of a great shepheardesse, that Cynthia  
 hight,

His liege, his ladie, and his lifes regent.

"If then," quoth I, "a shepheardesse she  
 bee,  
 Where be the flockes and heards, which she  
 doth keep?  
 And where may I the hills and pastures  
 see,  
 On which she useth for to feed her sheepe?"  
 "These be the hills," quoth he, "the surges  
 hie, 240  
 On which faire Cynthia her heards doth  
 feed:  
 Her heards be thousand fishes, with their  
 frie,  
 Which in the bosome of the billowes breed.  
 Of them the shepherd which hath charge  
 in chief  
 Is Triton blowing loud his wreathed horne:  
 At sound whereof, they all for their relief  
 Wend too and fro at evening and at morne.  
 And Proteus eke with him does drive his  
 heard  
 Of stinking seales and porepiscs together,  
 With hoary head and deawy dropping  
 beard, 250  
 Compelling them which way he list, and  
 whether.  
 And I among the rest, of many least,  
 Have in the ocean charge to me assignd:  
 Where I will live or die at her behest,  
 And serve and honour her with faithfull  
 mind.  
 Besides, an hundred nymphs, all heavenly  
 borne,  
 And of immortall race, doo still attend  
 To wash faire Cynthiaes sheep, when they  
 be shorne,  
 And fold them up, when they have made  
 an end.  
 Those be the shepherds which my Cynthia  
 serve 260  
 At sea, beside a thousand moe at land:  
 For land and sea my Cynthia doth deserve  
 To have in her commandement at hand."  
 Thereat I wondred much, till, wondring  
 more  
 And more, at length we land far off de-  
 seryde:  
 Which sight much gladed me; for much  
 afore  
 I feard least land we never should have  
 eyde:  
 Thereto our ship her course directly bent,  
 As if the way she perfectly had knowne.  
 We Lunday passe; by that same name is  
 ment 270

An island which the first to west was  
 showne.  
 From thence another world of land we kend,  
 Floting amid the sea in jeopardie,  
 And round about with mightie white rocks  
 hemd,  
 Against the seas encroching crueltie.  
 Those same, the shepherd told me, were  
 the fields  
 In which Dame Cynthia her landheard fed,  
 Faire goodly fields, then which Armulla  
 yields  
 None fairer, nor more fruitfull to be red.  
 The first to which we nigh approached was 280  
 An high headland thrust far into the sea,  
 Like to an horne, whereof the name it has,  
 Yet seemed to be a goodly pleasant lea:  
 There did a loftie mount at first us greet,  
 Which did a stately heape of stones upreare,  
 That seemd amid the surges for to fleet,  
 Much greater then that frame which us did  
 beare:  
 There did our ship her fruitfull wombe un-  
 lade,  
 And put us all ashore on Cynthias land.'  
 'What land is that thou meanst,' then  
 Cuddy sayd, 290  
 'And is there other, then whereon we  
 stand?'  
 'Ah! Cuddy,' then quoth Colin, 'thous a  
 fon,  
 That hast not seene least part of Natures  
 worke:  
 Much more there is mukend then thou doest  
 kon,  
 And much more that does from mens know-  
 ledge lurke.  
 For that same land much larger is then this,  
 And other men and beasts and birds doth  
 feed:  
 There fruitfull corne, faire trees, fresh herb-  
 age is,  
 And all things else that living creatures  
 need.  
 Besides most goodly rivers there appeare, 300  
 No whit inferiour to thy Funchins praise,  
 Or unto Allo or to Mulla cleare:  
 Nought hast thou, foolish boy, seene in thy  
 daies.'  
 'But if that land be there,' quoth he, 'as  
 here,  
 And is theyr heaven likewise there all one?  
 And if like heaven, be heavenly graces there,  
 Like as in this same world where we do  
 wone?'



'Both heaven and heavenly graces do  
 much more,'  
 Quoth he, 'abound in that same land then  
 this.  
 For there all happie peace and plenteous  
 store 310  
 Conspire in one to make contented blisse:  
 No wayling there nor wretchednesse is  
 heard,  
 No bloodie issues nor no leprosie,  
 No griesly famine, nor no raging sward,  
 No nightly bodrags, nor no hue and cries:  
 The shepheards there abroad may safely lie,  
 On hills and downes, withouten dread or  
 daunger:  
 No ravenous wolves the good mans hope  
 destroy,  
 Nor outlawes fell affray the forest raunger.  
 There learned arts do flourish in great  
 honor, 320  
 And poets wiis are had in peerlesse price:  
 Religion hath lay powre to rest upon her,  
 Advancing vertue and suppressing vice.  
 For end, all good, all grace there freely  
 growes,  
 Had people grace it gratefully to use:  
 For God his gifts there plenteously bestowes,  
 But gracelesse men them greatly do abuse.'  
 'But say on further,' then said Corylas,  
 'The rest of thine adventures, that betyded.'  
 'Foorth on our voyage we by land did  
 passe,' 330  
 Quoth he, 'as that same shepherd still us  
 guyled,  
 Untill that we to Cynthiaes presence came:  
 Whose glorie, greater then my simple  
 thought,  
 I found much greater then the former fame;  
 Such greatnes I cannot compare to ought:  
 But if I her like ought on earth might read,  
 I would her lyken to a crowne of lillies,  
 Upon a virgin brydes adorned head,  
 With roses dight and goolds and daffa-  
 dillies;  
 Or like the circlet of a turtle true, 340  
 In which all colours of the rainbow bee;  
 Or like faire Phebes garland shining new,  
 In which all pure perfection one may see.  
 But vaine it is to thinke, by paragone  
 Of earthly things, to judge of things divine:  
 Her power, her mercy, and her wisdom, none  
 Can deeme, but who the Godhead can define.  
 Why then do I, base shepherd bold and  
 blind,

Presume the things so sacred to prophane?  
 More fit it is t'adore, with humble mind, 350  
 The image of the heavens in shape humane.'

With that Alexis broke his tale asunder,  
 Saying: 'By wondring at thy Cynthiaes  
 praise,

Colin, thy selfe thou mak'st us more to  
 wonder,

And, her upraising, doest thy selfe upraise.  
 But let us heare what grace she shewed thee,  
 And how that shepherd strange thy cause  
 advanced.'

'The Shepherd of the Ocean,' quoth he,  
 'Unto that Goddesse grace me first enhanced,  
 And to mine oaten pipe enclin'd her eare, 360  
 That she thenceforth therein gan take de-  
 light,

And it desir'd at timely houres to heare,  
 All were my notes but rude and roughly  
 dight;

For not by measure of her owne great  
 mynd

And wondrous worth she mott my simple  
 song,

But joyd that country shepherd ought  
 could fynd

Worth harkening to, emongst the learned  
 throng.'

'Why,' said Alexis then, 'what needeth  
 shee,

That is so great a shepheardesse her selfe  
 And hath so many shepheards in her fee, 370

To heare thee sing, a simple silly elfe?  
 Or be the shepheards which do serve her

laesie,

That they list not their mery pipes applie?  
 Or be their pipes untunable and craesie,

That they cannot her honour worthylye?'

'Ah! nay,' said Colin, 'neither so, nor so:

For better shepheards be not under skie,

Nor better hable, when they list to blow

Their pipes aloud, her name to glorifie.

There is good Harpalus, now woxen aged 380

In faithfull service of faire Cynthia:

And there is Corydon, though meanly

waged,

Yet habtest wit of most I know this day.

And there is sad Aleyon, bent to mourne,

Though fit to frame an everlasting dittie,

Whose gentle spright for Daphnes death

doth tourn

Sweet layes of love to endlesse plaints of

pittie.

Ah! pensive boy, pursue that brave con-  
 ceipt,

In thy sweet *Eglantine of Meriflure*,  
Lift up thy notes unto their wonted  
height, <sup>390</sup>  
That may thy Muse and mates to mirth  
allure.

There eke is Palin, worthie of great praise,  
Albe he envie at my rustick quill:  
And there is pleasing Alcon, could he raise  
His tunes from laies to matter of more skill.  
And there is old Palemon, free from spight,  
Whose carefull pipe may make the hearer  
rew:

Yet he himselfe may rewed be more right,  
That sung so long untill quite hoarse he  
grew.

And there is Alabaster, throughly taught <sup>400</sup>  
In all this skill, though knowen yet to few,  
Yet, were he knowne to Cynthia as he  
ought,

His *Eliseis* would be redde anew.

Who lives that can match that heroick song,  
Which he hath of that mightie princesse  
made?

O dreaded Dread, do not thy selfe that  
wrong,

To let thy fame lie so in hidden shade:

But call it forth, O call him forth to thee,  
To end thy glorie which he hath begun:  
That when he finisht hath as it should be, <sup>410</sup>  
No braver poeme can be under sun.

Nor Po nor Tyburns swans so much re-  
nowned,

Nor all the brood of Greece so highly  
praised,

Can match that Muse when it with bayes is  
crowned,

And to the pitch of her perfection raised.

And there is a new shepherd late up sprong,

The which doth all afore him far surpasse:

Appearing well in that well tuned song

Which late he sung unto a scornfull lasse.

Yet doth his trembling Muse but lowly  
flie, <sup>420</sup>

As daring not too rashly mount on hight,

And doth her tender plumes as yet but trie

In loves soft laies and looser thoughts de-  
light.

Then rouze thy feathers quickly, Daniell,

And to what course thou please thy selfe  
advance:

But most, me seemes, thy accent will excell

In tragick plaints and passionate mischance.

And there that Shepherd of the Ocean is,

That spends his wit in loves consuming  
smart:

Full sweetly tempred is that Muse of his, <sup>430</sup>  
That can empierce a princes mightie hart.  
There also is (ah! no, he is not now)

But since I said he is, he quite is gone:

Amyntas quite is gone and lies full low,

Having his Amaryllis left to mone.

Helpe, O ye shepheards, helpe ye all in this,

Helpe Amaryllis this her losse to mourne:

Her losse is yours, your losse Amyntas is,

Amyntas, floure of shepheards pride for-  
lorne.

He, whilst he lived, was the noblest swaine

That ever piped in an oaten quill: <sup>441</sup>

Both did he other which could pipe main-  
taine,

And eke could pipe himselfe with passing  
skill.

And there, though last not least, is Aetion;

A gentler shepherd may nowhere be found;

Whose Muse, full of high thoughts inven-  
tion,

Doth like himselfe heroically sound.

All these, and many others mo, remaine,

Now after Astrofell is dead and gone:

But while as Astrofell did live and raine, <sup>450</sup>

Amongst all these was none his paragone.

All these do florish in their sundry kynd,

And do their Cynthia immortall make:

Yet found I lyking in her royall mynd,

Not for my skill, but for that shepheards  
sake.'

'Then spake a lovely lasse, hight Lucida:

'Shepherd, enough of shepheards thou hast  
told,

Which favour thee and honour Cynthlia:

But of so many nymphs which she doth hold

In her retinew, thou hast nothing sayd; <sup>460</sup>

That seems, with none of them thou favor  
foundest,

Or art ingratefull to each gentle mayd,

That none of all their due deserts resound-  
est.'

'Ah! far be it,' quoth Colin Clout, 'fro  
me,

That I of gentle mayds should ill deserve:

For that my selfe I do professe to be

Vassall to one, whom all my dayes I serve;

The beame of beautie sparkled from above,

The floure of vertue and pure chastitie, <sup>469</sup>

The blossome of sweet joy and perfect love,

The pearle of peerlesse grace and modestie:

To her my thoughts I daily dedicate,

To her my heart I nightly martyrize:

To her my love I lowly do prostrate,

To her my life I wholly sacrifice:

My thought, my heart, my love, my life is  
shee,

And I hers ever onely, ever one:

One ever I all vowed hers to bee,

One ever I, and others never none.'

Then thus Melissa said: 'Thrise happie  
mayd, 480

Whom thou doest so enforce to deifie,  
That woods, and hills, and valleyes thou  
hast made

Her name to echo unto heaven hie.

But say, who else vouchsafed thee of grace?' 490

'They all,' quoth he, 'me graced goodly  
well,

That all I praise, but in the highest place,

Urania, sister unto Astrofell,

In whose brave mynd, as in a golden cofer,

All heavenly gifts and riches locked are;

More rich then pearles of Ynde, or gold of

Opher, 490

And in her sex more wonderfull and rare.

Ne lesse praise worthie I Theana read,

Whose goodly beames, though they be over  
dight

With mourning stole of carefull wydowhead,

Yet through that darksome vale do glister  
bright.

She is the well of bountie and brave mynd,

Excelling most in glorie and great light:

She is the ornament of womankind,

And courts chief garlond with all vertues  
dight.

Therefore great Cynthia her in chiefest  
grace 500

Doth hold, and next unto her selfe advance,

Well worthie of so honourable place,

For her great worth and noble governance.

Ne lesse praise worthie is her sister deare,

Faire Marian, the Muses onely darling:

Whose beautie shyneth as the morning  
cleare,

With silver dew upon the roses pearling.

Ne lesse praise worthie is Mansilia,

Best knowne by bearing up great Cynthiaes  
traine:

That same is she to whom *Daphnaida* 510

Upon her neeces death I did complaine.

She is the paterne of true womanhead,

And onely mirrhör of feminitie:

Worthie next after Cynthia to tread,

As she is next her in nobilitie.

Ne lesse praise worthie Galathea seemes,

Then best of all that honourable crew,

Faire Galathea, with bright shining beames

Inflaming feeble eyes that her do view.

She there then waited upon Cynthia, 520

Yet there is not her won, but here with us

About the borders of our rich Coshma,

Now made of Maa the nymph delitious.

Ne lesse praisworthie faire Neæra is,

Neæra ours, not theirs, though there she be,

For of the famous Shiure the nymph she is,

For high desert advaunst to that degree.

She is the blosome of grace and curtesie,

Adorned with all honourable parts:

She is the braunch of true nobilitie, 530

Belov'd of high and low with faithfull  
harts.

Ne lesse praisworthie Stella do I read,

Though nought my praises of her needed  
arre,

Whom verse of noblest shepheard lately  
dead

Hath prais'd and rais'd above each other  
starre.

Ne lesse praisworthie are the sisters three,

The honor of the noble familie

Of which I meanest boast my selfe to be,

And most that unto them I am so nie:

Phyllis, Charillis, and sweet Amaryllis: 540

Phyllis the faire is eldest of the three;

The next to her is bountifull Charillis;

But th' youngest is the highest in degree.

Phyllis, the floure of rare perfection,

Faire spreading forth her leaves with fresh  
delight,

That, with their beauties amorous reflexion,

Bereave of sence each rash beholders sight.

But sweet Charillis is the paragone

Of peerlesse price, and ornament of praise,

Admyr'd of all, yet envied of none, 550

Through the myld temperance of her goodly  
raies.

Thrise happie do I hold thee, noble swaine,

The which art of so rich a spoile posset,

And it embracing deare without disdaine,

Hast sole possession in so chaste a brest.

Of all the shepheards daughters which there  
bee,

And yet there be the fairest under skie,

Or that elsewhere I ever yet did see,

A fairer nymph yet never saw mine eie:

She is the pride and primrose of the rest, 560

Made by the Maker selfe to be admired,

And like a goodly beaçon high addrest,

That is with sparks of heavenlie beautie  
fired.

But Amaryllis, whether fortunate,

Or else unfortunate, may I aread?

That freed is from Cupids yoke by fate,



Since which she doth new bands adventure  
dread.

Shepherd, what ever thou hast heard to be  
In this or that prayd diversly apart, <sup>569</sup>  
In her thou maist them all assembled see,  
And seald up in the threasure of her hart.  
Ne thee lesse worthie, gentle Flavia,  
For thy chaste life and vertue I esteeme:  
Ne thee lesse worthie, curteous Candida,  
For thy true love and loyaltie I deeme.  
Besides yet many mo that Cynthia serve,  
Right noble nymphs, and high to be com-  
mended:

But if I all should praise as they deserve,  
This sun would faile me ere I halfe had  
ended.

Therefore in closure of a thankfull mynd <sup>580</sup>  
I deeme it best to hold eternally  
Their bounteous deeds and noble favours  
shrynd,

Then by discourse them to indignifie.'

So having said, Aglaura him bespake:  
'Colin, well worthie were those goodly fa-  
vours

Bestowd on thee, that so of them doest  
make,

And them requitest with thy thankfull la-  
bours.

But of great Cynthiaes goodnesse and high  
grace

Finish the storie which thou hast begunne.'

'More eath,' quoth he, 'it is in such a  
case <sup>590</sup>

How to begin, then know how to have  
donne.

For everie gift and everie goodly meed,  
Which she on me bestowd, demaunds a  
day;

And everie day in which she did a deed  
Demaunds a yeare it duly to display.

Her words were like a streame of honny  
fleeting,

The which doth softly trickle from the hive,  
Hable to melt the hearers heart unweeting,  
And eke to make the dead againe alive.

Her deeds were like great clusters of ripe  
grapes, <sup>600</sup>

Which load the braunches of the fruitfull  
vine,

Offering to fall into each mouth that gapes,  
And fill the same with store of timely wine.  
Her lookes were like beames of the morn-  
ing sun,

Forth looking through the windowes of the  
east,

When first the fleecie cattell have begun  
Upon the perled grasse to make their feast.  
Her thoughts are like the fume of franek-  
incence,

Which from a golden censer forth doth rise,  
And throwing forth sweet odours mounts  
fro thence <sup>610</sup>

In rolling globes up to the vaulted skies.  
There she beholds, with high aspiring  
thought,

The cradle of her owne creation,  
Emongst the seats of angels heavenly  
wrought,

Much like an angell in all forme and fash-  
ion.'

'Colin,' said Cuddy then, 'thou hast forgot  
Thy selfe, me seemes, too much, to mount  
so hie:

Such loftie flight base shepherd seemeth  
not,

From flocks and fields to angels and to skie.'

'True,' answered he, 'but her great ex-  
cellence <sup>620</sup>

Lifts me above the measure of my might:  
That, being fild with furious insolence,

I feele my selfe like one yrap in spright.  
For when I thinke of her, as oft I ought,

Then want I words to speake it fitly forth:  
And when I speake of her what I have  
thought,

I cannot thinke according to her worth.  
Yet will I thinke of her, yet will I speake,

So long as life my limbs doth hold together,  
And when as death these vitall bands shall  
breake, <sup>630</sup>

Her name recorded I will leave for ever.  
Her name in every tree I will endosse,

That, as the trees do grow, her name may  
grow:

And in the ground each where will it en-  
grosse,

And fill with stones, that all men may it  
know.

The speaking woods and murmuring waters  
fall,

Her name Ile teach in knowen termes to  
frame:

And eke my lambs, when for their dams  
they call,

Ile teach to call for Cynthia by name.  
And long while after I am dead and rotten,

Amongst the shepherds daughters dancing  
rownd, <sup>640</sup>

My layes made of her shall not be forgot-  
ten.

But sung by them with flowry gyrlonds  
crown'd.

And ye, who so ye be, that shall survive,  
When as ye heare her memory renewed,  
Be witnesse of her bountie here alive,  
Which she to Colin her poore shepheard  
shewed.'

Much was the whole assembly of those  
heard

Moov'd at his speech, so feelingly he spake,  
And stood awhile astonisht at his words,<sup>650</sup>  
Till Thestylis at last their silence brake,  
Saying: 'Why, Colin, since thou foundst  
such grace

With Cynthia and all her noble crew,  
Why didst thou ever leave that happie  
place,

In which such wealth might unto thee ac-  
crew;

And back returndst to this barrein soyle,  
Where cold and care and penury do dwell,  
Here to keep sheepe, with hunger and with  
toyle?

Most wretched he, that is and cannot tell.'

'Happie indeed,' said Colin, 'I him hold,  
That may that blessed presence still en-  
joy,'<sup>661</sup>

Of fortune and of envy uncomptrold,  
Which still are wont most happie states t'  
annoy:

But I, by that which little while I proved,  
Some part of those enormities did see,  
The which in court continually hooved,  
And followd those which happie seemd to  
bee.

Therefore I, silly man, whose former dayes  
Had in rude fields bene altogether spent,  
Durst not adventure such unknown  
wayes,'<sup>670</sup>

Nor trust the guile of Fortunes blandish-  
ment,

But rather chose back to my sheep to  
tourne,

Whose ntmost hardnesse I before had  
tryde,

Then, having learnd repentance late, to  
mourne

Emongst those wretches which I there de-  
seryde.'

'Shepheard,' said Thestylis, 'it seemes of  
spight

Thou speakest thus gainst their felicitie,  
Which thou enviest, rather then of right  
That ought in them blameworthie thou  
doest spie.'

'Cause have I none,' quoth he, 'of can-  
cred will'<sup>680</sup>

To quite them ill, that me demeand so  
well:

But selfe-regard of private good or ill  
Moves me of each, so as I found, to tell,  
And eke to warne yong shepheards wan-  
dring wit,

Which, through report of that lives painted  
blisse,

Abandon quiet home, to seeke for it,  
And leave their lambes to losse, misled  
amisse.

For, sooth to say, it is no sort of life  
For shepheard fit to lead in that same place,  
Where each one seeks with inalice and with  
strife,'<sup>690</sup>

To thrust downe other into foule disgrace,  
Himselfe to raise; and he doth soonest rise  
That best can handle his deceitfull wit  
In subtil shifts, and finest sleights devise,  
Either by slaundring his well deemed name,  
Through leasings lewd and fained forgerie,  
Or else by breeding him some blot of blame,  
By creeping close into his scerecie;

To which him needs a guilefull hollow hart,  
Masked with faire dissembling curtesie,<sup>700</sup>  
A filed tounge furnisht with tearmes of art,  
No art of schoole, but courtiers schoolery.  
For arts of schoole have there small coun-  
tenance,

Counted bnt toyes to busie ydle braines,  
And there professours find small mainten-  
ance,

But to be instruments of others gaines.  
Ne is there place for any gentle wit,  
Unlesse to please, it selfe it can applie:  
But shouldred is, or out of doore quite shit,  
As base, or blunt, unmeet for melodie.<sup>710</sup>  
For each mans worth is measured by his  
weed,

As harts by hornes, or asses by their eares:  
Yet asses heen not all whose eares exceed,  
Nor yet all harts, that hornes the highest  
beares.

For highest lookes have not the highest  
mynd,

Nor haughtie words most full of highest  
thoughts:

But are like bladders blownen up with wynd,  
That being prikt do vanish into noughts.

Even such is all their vaunted vanitie,  
Nought else but smoke, that fummeth soone  
away;

Such is their glorie that in simple eie<sup>720</sup>

Seeme greatest, when their garments are  
most gay.

So they themselves for praise of fooles do  
sell,

And all their wealth for painting on a wall;  
With price whereof they buy a golden bell,  
And purchase highest rowines in bowre and  
hall:

Whiles single Truth and simple Honestie  
Do wander up and downe despys'd of all;  
Their plaine attire such glorious gallantry  
Disdaines so much, that none them in doth  
call.' 730

'Ah! Colin,' then said Hobbinol, 'the  
blame

Which thou imputest is too generall,  
As if not any gentle wit of name,  
Nor honest mynd might there be found at  
all.

For well I wot, sith I my selfe was there,  
To wait on Lobbin (Lobbin well thou knew-  
est)

Full many worthie ones then waiting were,  
As ever else in princes court thou vewest.  
Of which among you many yet remaine, 739  
Whose names I cannot readily now ghesse:  
Those that poore sutors papers do retaine,  
And those that skill of medicine professe,  
And those that do to Cynthia expound  
The ledde of straunge languages in charge:  
For Cynthia doth in sciences abound,  
And gives to their professors stipends large.  
Therefore unjustly thou doest wyte them  
all,

For that which thou mislikedst in a few.'

'Blame is,' quoth he, 'more blamelesse  
generall,

Then that which private errours doth pur-  
sew: 750

For well I wot, that there amongst them  
bee

Full many persons of right worthie parts,  
Both for report of spotlesse honestie,  
And for profession of all learned arts,  
Whose praise hereby no whit impaired is,  
Though blame do light on those that faultie  
bee;

For all the rest do most-what far amis,  
And yet their owne misfaring will not see:  
For either they be puffed up with pride,  
Or fraught with envie that their galls do  
swell, 760

Or they their dayes to ydlenesse divide,  
Or drowned lie in pleasures wastefull  
well,

In which like moldwarps nousing still  
they lurke,

Unmyndfull of chiefe parts of manlinesse,  
And do themselves, for want of other  
worke,

Vaine votaries of laesie Love professe,  
Whose service high so basely they ensue,  
That Cupid selfe of them ashamed is,  
And mustring all his men in Venus vew,  
Denies them quite for servitors of his.' 770

'And is Love then,' said Corylas, 'once  
knowne

In court, and his sweet lore professed  
there?

I weened sure he was our god alone,  
And only woond in fields and forests here.'

'Not so,' quoth he, 'love most abound-  
eth there.

For all the walls and windows there are  
writ

All full of love, and love, and love my  
deare,

And all their talke and studie is of it.

Ne any there doth brave or valiant seeme,  
Unlesse that some gay mistresse badge he  
beares: 780

Ne any one himselfe doth ought esteeme,  
Unlesse he swim in love up to the eares.  
But they of Love and of his sacred lere,  
(As it should be) all otherwise devise,  
Then we poore shepheards are accustomed  
here,

And him do sue and serve all otherwise.

For with lewd speeches, and licentious  
deeds,

His mightie mysteries they do prophane,

And use his ydle name to other needs,

But as a complement for courting vaine. 790

So him they do not serve as they professe,  
But make him serve to them for sordid  
uses:

Ah! my dread lord, that doest liege hearts  
possesse,

Avenge thy selfe on them for their abuses!  
But we poore shepheards, whether rightly  
so,

Or through our rudenesse into errour led,  
Do make religion how we rashly go

To serve that god, that is so greatly dred;  
For him the greatest of the gods we deeme,  
Borne without syre or couples of one  
kynd, 800

For Venus selfe doth soly couples seeme,  
Both male and female through commixture  
joynd.



So pure and spotlesse Cupid forth she  
brought,  
And in the Gardens of Adonis nurst:  
Where growing he his owne perfection  
wrought,

And shortly was of all the gods the first.  
Then got he bow and shafts of gold and lead,  
In which so fell and puissant he grew,  
That Jove himselve his powre began to  
dread,

And taking up to heaven, him godded  
new. 810

From thence he shootes his arrowes every  
where

Into the world, at randon as he will,  
On us fraile men, his wretched vassals here,  
Like as himselve us pleaseth save or spill.

So we him worship, so we him adore  
With humble hearts to heaven uplifted hie,  
That to true loves he may us evermore  
Preferre, and of their grace us dignifie:  
Ne is there shepheard, ne yet shepheards  
swaine,

What ever feeds in forest or in field, 820  
That dare with evil deed or leasing vaine  
Blaspheime his powre, or termes unworthie  
yield.'

'Shepheard, it seemes that some celestiall  
rage  
Of love,' quoth Cuddy, 'is breath'd into thy  
brest,

That powreth forth these oracles so sage  
Of that high powre, wherewith thou art  
possest.

But never wist I till this present day,  
Albe of Love I alwayes humbly deemed,  
That he was such an one as thou doest say,  
And so religiously to be esteemed. 830

Well may it seeme, by this thy deep insight,  
That of that god the priest thou shouldst  
bee:

So well thou wot'st the mysterie of his  
might,

As if his godhead thou didst present see.'

'Of Loves perfection perfectly to speake,  
Or of his nature rightly to define,  
Indeed,' said Colin, 'passeth reasons reach,  
And needs his priest t' expresse his powre  
divine.

For long before the world he was ybore,  
And bred above in Venus bosome deare: 840  
For by his powre the world was made of  
yore,

And all that therein wondrous doth ap-  
peare.

For how should else things so far from  
attone,

And so great enemies as of them bee,  
Be ever drawne together into one,  
And taught in such accordance to agree?  
Through him the cold began to covet heat,  
And water fire; the light to mount on hie,  
And th' heavie downe to peize; the hungry  
t' eat,

And voydnesse to seeke full satietie. 850  
So, being former foes, they wexed friends,  
And gan by litle learne to love each other:  
So being knit, they brought forth other  
kynds

Out of the fruitfull wombe of their great  
mother.

Then first gan heaven out of darknesse  
dread

For to appeare, and brought forth chear-  
full day:

Next gan the earth to shew her naked  
head,

Out of deep waters which her drownd  
alway.

And shortly after, everie living wight  
Crept forth like wormes out of her slimie  
nature, 860

Soone as on them the suns life giving light  
Had powred kindly heat and formall fea-  
ture:

Thenceforth they gan each one his like to  
love,

And like himselve desire for to beget:  
The lyon chose his mate, the turtle dove  
Her deare, the dolphin his owne dolphinet;  
But man, that had the sparke of reasons  
might,

More then the rest to rule his passion,  
Chose for his love the fairest in his sight,  
Like as himselve was fairest by creation.

For beautie is the bayt which with de-  
light 871

Doth man allure for to enlarge his kynd,  
Beautie, the burning lamp of heavens light,  
Darting her beames into each feeble mynd:  
Against whose powre, nor god nor man can  
fynd

Defence, ne ward the daunger of the wound,  
But, being hurt, seeke to be medicynd  
Of her that first did stir that mortall  
stownd.

Then do they cry and call to Love apace,  
With praiers lowd importuning the skie, 880  
Whence he them heares, and when he list  
shew grace,

Does graunt them grace that otherwise  
would die.

So Love is lord of all the world by right,  
And rules the creatures by his powrfull saw;  
All being made the vassalls of his might,  
Through secret sence which therto doth  
them draw.

Thus ought all lovers of their lord to  
deeme,

And with chaste heart to honor him alway:  
But who so else doth otherwise esteeme,  
Are outlawes, and his lore do disobay. <sup>890</sup>  
For their desire is base, and doth not merit  
The name of love, but of disloyall lust:  
Ne mongst true lovers they shall place  
inherit,

But as exuls out of his court be thrust.'

So having said, Melissa spake at will:  
'Colin, thou now full deeply hast divynd  
Of love and beautie, and with wondrous  
skill

Hast Cupid selfe depainted in his kynd.  
To thee are all true lovers greatly bound,  
That doest their cause so mightily de-  
fend: <sup>900</sup>

But most, all wemen are thy debtors found,  
That doest their bountie still so much  
commend.'

'That ill,' said Hobbinol, 'they him  
requite,

For having loved ever one most deare:  
He is repayd with scorne and foule de-  
spite,

That yrkes each gentle heart which it doth  
heare.'

'Indeed,' said Lucid, 'I have often heard  
Faire Rosalind of divers fowly blamed,  
For being to that swaine too cruell hard,  
That her bright glorie else hath much  
defamed. <sup>910</sup>

But who can tell what cause had that faire  
mayd

To use him so that used her so well?  
Or who with blame can justly her upbrayd,  
For loving not? for who can love com-  
pell?

And sooth to say, it is foolhardie thing,  
Rashly to wyten creatures so divine,  
For demigods they be, and first did spring  
From heaven, though graft in frailnesse  
feminine.

And well I wote that oft I heard it spoken,  
How one that fairest Helene did revile, <sup>920</sup>  
Through judgement of the gods, to been  
ywroken,

Lost both his eyes, and so remaynd long  
while,

Till he recanted had his wicked rimes,  
And made amends to her with treble praise:  
Beware therefore, ye groomes, I read be-  
times,

How rashly blame of Rosalind ye raise.'

'Ah! shepheards,' then said Colin, 'ye  
ne weet

How great a guilt upon your heads ye  
draw,

To make so bold a doome, with words un-  
meet,

Of thing celestiall which ye never saw. <sup>930</sup>

For she is not like as the other crew  
Of shepheards daughters which emongst  
you bee,

But of divine regard and heavenly hew,  
Excelling all that ever ye did see.

Not then to her, that scorned thing so  
base,

But to my selfe the blame, that lookt so  
hie:

So hie her thoughts as she her selfe have  
place,

And loath each lowly thing with loftie  
eie.

Yet so much grace let her vouchsafe to  
grant

To simple swaine, sith her I may not love,  
Yet that I may her honour paravant, <sup>941</sup>  
And praise her worth, though far my wit  
above.

Such grace shall be some guerdon for the  
griefe

And long affliction which I have endured:  
Such grace sometimes shall give me some  
reliefe,

And ease of paine which cannot be re-  
cured.

And ye, my fellow shepheards, which do  
see

And heare the languours of my too long  
dying,

Unto the world for ever witnesse bee,  
That hers I die, nought to the world deny-  
ing <sup>950</sup>

This simple trophe of her great conquest.'

So having ended, he from ground did  
rise,

And after him uprose eke all the rest:  
All loth to part, but that the glooming  
skies

Warnd them to draw their bleating flocks  
to rest.

# ASTROPHEL

A PASTORALL ELEGIE UPON THE DEATH OF THE MOST NOBLE AND VALOROUS KNIGHT, SIR PHILIP SIDNEY

DEDICATED

TO THE MOST BEAUTIFULL AND VERTUOUS LADIE, THE COUNTESSE OF ESSEX

[*Astrophel* and the collection of obituary poems to which it serves as a kind of prologue were published in the same volume with *Colin Clout's Come Home Again*, in 1595. The dedication was to Sidney's widow, who in the spring of 1590 had become, by remarriage, the Countess of Essex. Sidney's sister, the Countess of Pembroke, presumably furnished that 'dolefull lay' which is set down to 'his sister that Clorinda hight.' The authors of the other poems, though undeclared, can, all but one, be traced by contemporary evidence—which need not be retailed here.

In 1595 most, if not all, of this poetry had been extant for several years: some of it had already seen print. The verses by the Countess of Pembroke would seem to be those referred to in 'The Ruins of Time,' which is of 1590:—

'who can better sing  
Than thine owne sister, peerles ladie bright,  
Which to thee sings with deep harts sorrowing,  
Sorrowing tempered with deare delight?'

The last line fits the lament of Clorinda exactly. Bryskett's poem, 'The Mourning Muse of Thestylis,' had been entered upon the Stationers' Register in August, 1587, and had perhaps in due course been published, though no copy of the issue has survived. Matthew Roydon's 'Elegy' and the two 'Epitaphs' had appeared in *The Phoenix Nest* of 1593, and are heard of earlier, Roydon's poem in 1589, Raleigh's in 1591. All the poems, except *Astro-*

*phel* itself, may very well date from the twelve-month following Sidney's death in October, 1586.

Concerning *Astrophel* the only evidence is that of the dedication to 'The Ruins of Time.' 'Sithens my late cumming into England,' writes Spenser, 'some frends of mine, . . . knowing with howe straight bandes of duetie I was tied to him [i. e. Sidney] . . . have sought to revive them by upbraiding me, for that I have not shewed anie thankfull remembrance towards him or any of them [i. e. the Dudleys], but suffer their names to sleep in silence and forgetfulnesse. Whome chieffie to satisfie, or els to avoide that fowle blot of unthankefulnesse, I have conceived this small poeme.' At the time of writing thus, in 1590, Spenser cannot have already composed *Astrophel*. Yet he probably did compose it before his return to Ireland, for, once back there, he would be far removed from occasions to commemorate Sidney. What the occasion of this volume was we cannot know. Quite possibly he had little to do with originating the anthology or with dedicating it to the Countess of Essex: his part may have been only to supply a general prologue. One may note that for this he contented himself with the stanza-form of the Countess of Pembroke's elegy, a form which he had used in the *Calendar* and in such probably youthful work as 'The Tears of the Muses,' but which by 1590 his taste must surely have outgrown.]

## ASTROPHEL

SHEPHEARDS, that wont on pipes of oaten  
reed  
Oft times to plaine your loves concealed  
smart,  
And with your piteous layes have learnd  
to breed  
Compassion in a countrey lasses hart,  
Hearken, ye gentle shepherds, to my  
song,  
And place my dolefull plaint your plaints  
emong.

To you alone I sing this mournfull verse,  
The mournfulst verse that ever man heard  
tell;

To you, whose softened hearts it may em-  
pierce

With dolours dart for death of *Astrophel*:  
To you I sing, and to none other wight,  
For well I wot my rymes bene rudely  
dight.

Yet as they been, if any nycer wit  
Shall hap to heare, or covet them to  
read,



Thinke he, that such are for such ones most  
fit,  
Made not to please the living but the dead.  
And if in him found pity ever place,  
Let him be moov'd to pity such a case.

A GENTLE shepherd borne in Arcady,  
Of gentlest race that ever shepherd bore,  
About the grassie bancks of Hæmony  
Did keepe his sheep, his litle stock and store.  
Full carefully he kept them day and night,  
In fairest fields; and Astrophel he hight.

Young Astrophel, the pride of shepherds  
praise,  
Young Astrophel, the rusticke lasses love,  
Far passing all the pastors of his daies,  
In all that seemly shepherd might be-  
hove: 10  
In one thing onely fayling of the best,  
That he was not so happie as the rest.

For from the time that first the nymph,  
his mother,  
Him forth did bring, and taught her lambs  
to feed,  
A sclender swaine, excelling far each other  
In comely shape, like her that did him breed,  
He grew up fast in goodnesse and in grace,  
And doubly faire wox both in mynd and  
face.

Which daily more and more he did aug-  
ment,  
With gentle usage and demeanure myld, 20  
That all mens hearts with secret ravishment  
He stole away, and weetingly beguyld.  
Ne Spight it selfe, that all good things doth  
spill,  
Found ought in him that she could say was  
ill.

His sports were faire, his joyance innocent,  
Sweet without sowre, and honny without  
gall,  
And he himselfe seemd made for meriment,  
Merily masking both in bowre and hall:  
There was no pleasure nor delightfull play,  
When Astrophel so ever was away. 30

For he could pipe, and daunce, and caroll  
sweet,  
Emongst the shepherds in their shearing  
feast;

As somers larke that with her song doth  
greet  
The dawning day forth comming from the  
East.  
And layes of love he also could compose:  
Thrise happie she whom he to praise did  
chose.

Full many maydens often did him woo  
Them to vouchsafe emongst his rimes to  
name,  
Or make for them, as he was wont to doo  
For her that did his heart with love in-  
flame.  
For which they promised to dight for 40  
him  
Gay chapelets of flowers and gyrlonds trim.

And many a nymph both of the wood and  
brooke,  
Soone as his oaten pipe began to shrill,  
Both christall wells and shadie groves for-  
sooke,  
To heare the charmes of his enchanting  
skill;  
And brought him presents, flowers if it were  
prime,  
Or mellow fruit if it were harvest time.

But he for none of them did care a whit,  
(Yet wood gods for them often sighed  
sore,) 50  
Ne for their gifts, unworthie of his wit,  
Yet not unworthie of the countries store.  
For one alone he cared, for one he sight,  
His lifes desire, and his deare loves de-  
light.

Stella the faire, the fairest star in skie,  
As faire as Venus or the fairest faire,  
(A fairer star saw never living eie,)  
Shot her sharp pointed beames through  
purest aire.

Her he did love, her he alone did honor,  
His thoughts, his rimes, his songs were all  
upon her. 60

To her he vowd the service of his daies,  
On her he spent the riches of his wit:  
For her he made hymnes of immortall  
praise,  
Of onely her he sung, he thought, he writ.  
Her, and but her, of love he worthie  
deemed;  
For all the rest but litle he esteemed.

Ne her with ydle words alone he wowed,  
 And verses vaine, (yet verses are not vaine)  
 But with brave deeds, to her sole service  
     vowed,  
 And bold atchievements, her did enter-  
     taine. 70  
 For both in deeds and words he nourted  
     was,  
 Both wise and hardie (too hardie, alas !)

In wrestling nimble, and in renning swift,  
 In shooting steddie, and in swimming  
     strong:  
 Well made to strike, to throw, to leape, to  
     lift,  
 And all the sports that shepherds are  
     emong:  
 In every one he vanquisht every one,  
 He vanquisht all, and vanquisht was of  
     none.

Besides, in hunting such felicitie,  
 Or rather infelicitie, he found, 80  
 That every field and forest far away  
 He sought, where salvage beasts do most  
     abound.  
 No beast so salvage, but he could it kill;  
 No chace so hard, but he therein had skill.

Such skill, matcht with such courage as he  
     had,  
 Did prick him foorth with proud desire of  
     praise,  
 To seek abroad, of daunger nought y'drad,  
 His mistresse name, and his owne fame, to  
     raise.  
 What need perill to be sought abroad,  
 Since round about us it doth make abroad ? 90

It fortun'd, as he that perilous game  
 In forreine soyle pursued far away,  
 Into a forest wide and waste he came,  
 Where store he heard to be of salvage pray.  
 So wide a forest and so waste as this,  
 Nor famous Ardeyn, nor fowle Arlo, is.

There his welwoven toyles and subtil traines  
 He laid the brutish nation to enwrap:  
 So well he wrought with practise and with  
     paines,  
 That he of them great troupes did soone  
     entrap. 100  
 Full happie man (misweening much) was  
     hee,  
 So rich a spoile within his power to see.

Eftsoones, all heedlesse of his dearest hale,  
 Full greedily into the heard he thrust,  
 To slaughter them, and worke their finall  
     bale,  
 Least that his toyle should of their troupes  
     be burst.  
 Wide wounds emongst them many one he  
     made,  
 Now with his sharp borespear, now with his  
     blade.

His care was all how he them all might  
     kill,  
 That none might scape (so partiall unto  
     none): 110  
 Ill mynd, so much to mynd anothers ill,  
 As to become unmyndfull of his owne:  
 But pardon that unto the cruell skies,  
 That from himselfe to them withdrew his  
     eies.

So as he rag'd emongst that beastly rout,  
 A cruell beast of most accursed brood  
 Upon him turnd (despeyre makes cowards  
     stout)  
 And, with fell tooth accustomed to blood,  
 Launched his thigh with so mischievous  
     might,  
 That it both bone and muscles ryved  
     quight. 120

So deadly was the dint and deep the wound,  
 And so huge streames of blood thereout did  
     flow,  
 That he endured not the direfull stound,  
 But on the cold deare earth himselfe did  
     throw.  
 The whiles the captive heard his nets did  
     rend,  
 And having none to let, to wood did wend.

Ah ! where were ye this while, his shepherd  
     peares,  
 To whom alive was nought so deare as hee ?  
 And ye, faire mayds, the matches of his  
     yeares,  
 Which in his grace did boast you most to  
     bee ? 130  
 Ah ! where were ye, when he of you had  
     need,  
 To stop his wound, that wondrously did  
     bleed ?

Ah, wretched boy, the shape of dreryhead,  
 And sad ensample of mans suddein end !

Full litle faileth but thou shalt be dead,  
 Unpitied, unplaynd, of foe or frend;  
 Whilest none is nigh, thine eylids up to  
 close,  
 And kisse thy lips like faded leaves of rose.

A sort of shepheards, sewing of the chace,  
 As they the forest raunged on a day, <sup>140</sup>  
 By fate or fortune came unto the place,  
 Where as the lucklesse boy yet bleeding lay;  
 Yet bleeding lay, and yet would still have  
 bled,  
 Had not good hap those shepheards thether  
 led.

They stopt his wound (too late to stop it  
 was)  
 And in their armes then softly did him  
 reare:  
 'Tho (as he wild) unto his loved lasse,  
 His dearest love, him dolefully did beare.  
 The dolefulst beare that ever man did see  
 Was Astrophel, but dearest unto mee. <sup>150</sup>

She, when she saw her love in such a plight,  
 With erudled blood and filthie gore de-  
 formed,  
 That wont to be with flowers and gyrlonds  
 dight,  
 And her deare favours dearly well adorned,  
 Her face, the fairest face that eye mote see,  
 She likewise did deforme like him to bee.

Her yellow locks, that shone so bright and  
 long,  
 As sunny beames in fairest somers day,  
 She fiersly tore, and with outrageous wrong  
 From her red cheeks the roses rent away, <sup>160</sup>  
 And her faire brest, the treasury of joy,  
 She spoyld thereof, and filled with annoy.

His palled face, impictured with death,  
 She bathed oft with teares and dried oft:  
 And with sweet kisses suckt the wasting  
 breath  
 Out of his lips like lillies pale and soft:  
 And oft she cald to him, who answerd  
 nought,  
 But onely by his lookes did tell his thought.

The rest of her impatient regret,  
 And piteous mone the which she for him  
 made, <sup>170</sup>  
 No toong can tell, nor any forth can set,  
 But he whose heart like sorrow did invade.

At last when paine his vitall powres had  
 spent,  
 His wasted life her weary lodge forwent.

Which when she saw, she staid not a whit,  
 But after him did make untimely haste:  
 Forthwith her ghost out of her corps did  
 flit,  
 And followed her make like turtle chaste;  
 To prove that death their hearts cannot  
 divide,  
 Which living were in love so firmly tide.

The gods, which all things see, this same  
 beheld, <sup>181</sup>  
 And pitying this paire of lovers trew,  
 Transformed them, there lying on the field,  
 Into one flowre that is both red and blew:  
 It first growes red, and then to blew doth  
 fade,  
 Like Astrophel, which thereinto was made.

And in the midst thereof a star appeares,  
 As fairly formd as any star in skyes,  
 Resembling Stella in her freshest yeares,  
 Forth darting beames of beautie from her  
 eyes; <sup>190</sup>  
 And all the day it standeth full of dew,  
 Which is the teares that from her eyes did  
 flow.

That hearbe, of some, Starlight is cald by  
 name,  
 Of others Penthia, though not so well:  
 But thou, where ever thou doest finde the  
 same,  
 From this day forth do call it Astrophel:  
 And when so ever thou it up doest take,  
 Do pluek it softly for that shepheards  
 sake.

Hereof when tydings far abroad did passe,  
 The shepheards all which loved him full  
 deare, <sup>200</sup>  
 And sure full deare of all he loved was,  
 Did thether flock to see what they did  
 heare.  
 And when that pitteous spectacle they  
 vewed,  
 The same with bitter teares they all be-  
 dewed.

And every one did make exceeding mone,  
 With inward anguish and great grieve op-  
 prest:



And every one did weep and waile and  
mone,  
And meanes deviz'd to shew his sorrow  
best:  
That from that houre since first on grassie  
greene  
Shepheards kept sheep, was not like  
mourning seen. 210

But first his sister, that Clorinda hight,  
The gentlest shepherdesse that lives this  
day,  
And most resembling both in shape and  
spright  
Her brother deare, began this dolefull lay.  
Which, least I marre the sweetnesse of  
the vearse,  
In sort as she it sung I will rehearse.

[Verses presumably by the Countess of  
Pembroke.]

AY me ! to whom shall I my case complaine,  
That may compassion my impatient grieve ?  
Or where shall I unfold my inward paine,  
That my enriven heart may find reliefe ?  
Shall I unto the heavenly powres it show ?  
Or unto earthly men that dwell below ?

To heavens ? Ah ! they, alas ! the authors  
were,  
And workers of my unremedied wo:  
For they foresce what to us happens here,  
And they foresaw, yet suffred this be so. 10  
From them comes good, from them comes  
also ill;  
That which they made, who can them warne  
to spill ?

To men ? Ah ! they, alas ! like wretched  
bee,  
And subject to the heavens ordinance:  
Bound to abide what ever they decree,  
Their best redresse is their best suffer-  
ance.  
How then can they, like wretched, comfort  
mee,  
The which no lesse need comforted to bee ?

Then to my selfe will I my sorrow mourne,  
Sith none alive like sorrowfull remains: 20  
And to my selfe my plaints shall back re-  
tourne,  
To pay their usury with doubled paines.

The woods, the hills, the rivers shall resound  
The mournfull accent of my sorrowes  
ground.

Woods, hills, and rivers now are desolate,  
Sith he is gone the which them all did grace:  
And all the fields do waile their widow state,  
Sith death their fairest flowre did late deface.  
The fairest flowre in field that ever grew  
Was Astrophel; that was, we all may rew. 30

What cruell hand of cursed foe unknowne  
Hath crompt the stalke which bore so faire a  
flowre ?

Untimely crompt, before it well were growne,  
And cleane defaced in untimely howre.  
Great losse to all that ever him did see,  
Great losse to all, but greatest losse to mee !

Breake now your gyrlonds, O ye shepheards  
lasses,  
Sith the faire flowre which them adornd is  
gon:

The flowre which them adornd is gone to  
ashes;  
Never againe let lasse put gyrlond on. 40  
In stead of gyrlond, weare sad cypres now,  
And bitter elder, broken from the bowe.

Ne ever sing the love-layes which he made;  
Who ever made such layes of love as hee ?  
Ne ever read the riddles which he sayd  
Unto your selves, to make you mery glee.  
Your mery glee is now laid all abed,  
Your mery maker now, alasse ! is dead.

Death, the devourer of all worlds delight,  
Hath robbed you and reft fro me my joy: 50  
Both you and me and all the world he quight  
Hath robd of joyance, and left sad annoy.  
Joy of the world and shepheards pride was  
hee:  
Shepheards, hope never like againe to see.

Oh Death ! that hast us of such riches reft,  
Tell us at least, what hast thou with it done ?  
What is become of him whose flowre here  
left  
Is but the shadow of his likenesse gone ?  
Scarse like the shadow of that which he was,  
Nought like, but that he like a shade did  
pas. 60

But that immortall spirit, which was deckt  
With all the dowries of celestiall grace,

By sovaine choyce from th' heavenly quires  
select,  
And lineally deriv'd from angels race,  
O ! what is now of it become, ahead.  
Ay me ! can so divine a thing be dead ?

Ah, no ! it is not dead, ne can it die,  
But lives for aie in blisfull Paradise:  
Where like a new-borne babe it soft doth  
lie,  
In bed of lillies wrapt in tender wise, 70  
And compast all about with roses sweet,  
And daintie violets from head to feet.

There thousand birds, all of celestiall brood,  
To him do sweetly caroll day and night;  
And with straunge notes, of him well under-  
stood,  
Lull him a sleep in angelick delight;  
Whilest in sweet dreame to him presented  
bee  
Immortall beauties, which no eye may see.

But he them sees, and takes exceeding  
pleasure  
Of their divine aspects, appearing plaine, 80  
And kindling love in him above all measure,  
Sweet love, still joyous, never feeling paine.  
For what so goodly forme he there doth see,  
He may enjoy from jealous rancor free.

There liveth he in everlasting blis,  
Sweet spirit, never fearing more to die:  
Ne dreading harme from any foes of his,  
Ne fearing salvage beasts more crueltie.  
Whilest we here, wretches, waile his private  
lack,  
And with vaine vowes do often call him  
back. 90

But live thou there, still happie, happie  
spirit,  
And give us leave thee here thus to la-  
ment:  
Not thee that doest thy heavens joy inherit,  
But our owne selves that here in dole are  
drent.  
Thus do we weep and waile, and wear our  
eies,  
Mourning in others our owne miseries.

WHICH when she ended had, another  
swaine,  
Of gentle wit and daintie sweet device,

Whom Astrophel full deare did enter-  
taine,  
Whilest here he liv'd, and held in passing  
price, 220  
Hight Thestylis, began his mournfull  
tourne,  
And made the Muses in his song to mourne.

And after him full many other moe,  
As everie one in order lov'd him best,  
Gan dight themselves t' expresse their in-  
ward woe,  
With dolefull layes unto the time addrest.  
The which I here in order will rehearse,  
As fittest flowres to deck his mournfull  
hearse.

### THE MOURNING MUZE OF THESTYLIS

[By Lodowick Bryskett.]

COME forth, ye Nymphes, come forth, for-  
sake your watry bowres,  
Forsake your mossy caves, and help me to  
lament:  
Help me to tune my dolefull notes to gur-  
gling sound  
Of Liffies tumbling streames: come, let  
salt teares of ours  
Mix with his waters fresh. O come, let  
one consent  
Joyne us to mourne with wailfull plaints  
the deadly wound  
Which fatall clap hath made; decreed by  
higher powres;  
The dreery day in which they have from  
us yrent  
The noblest plant that might from East to  
West be found.  
Mourne, mourn great Philips fall, mourn  
we his wofull end, 10  
Whom spitefull Death hath pluct untimely  
from the tree,  
Whiles yet his yeares in flowre did promise  
worthie frute.  
Ah ! dreadful Mars, why didst thou not  
thy knight defend ?  
What wrathfull mood, what fault of ours  
hath moved thee  
Of such a shining light to leave us desti-  
tute ?  
Thou with benigne aspect sometime didst  
us behold,

Thou hast in Britons valour tane delight  
 of old,  
 And with thy presence oft vouchsaft to  
 attribute  
 Fame and renowme to us for glorious mar-  
 tiall deeds.  
 But now thy ireful beemes have chill'd our  
 harts with cold; <sup>20</sup>  
 Thou hast estrang'd thy self, and deignest  
 not our land:  
 Farre off to others now thy favour honour  
 breeds,  
 And high disdain doth cause thee shun  
 our clime (I feare.)  
 For hadst thou not bene wroth, or that  
 time neare at hand,  
 Thou wouldst have heard the cry that wo-  
 ful England made;  
 Eke Zeland's piteous plaints and Hollands  
 toren heare  
 Would haply have appeas'd thy divine an-  
 gry mynd.  
 Thou shouldst have seen the trees refuse  
 to yeeld their shade,  
 And wailing to let fall the honor of their  
 head,  
 And birds in mournfull tunes lamenting in  
 their kinde. <sup>30</sup>  
 Up from his tombe the mightie Corineus rose,  
 Who cursing oft the Fates that this mishap  
 had bred,  
 His hoary locks he tare, calling the heavens  
 unkinde.  
 The Thames was heard to roare, the Reyne  
 and eke the Mose,  
 The Schald, the Danow selfe this great  
 mischance did rue,  
 With torment and with grief; their foun-  
 tains pure and cleere  
 Were troubled, and with swelling flouds  
 declar'd their woes.  
 The Muses comfortles, the Nymphs with  
 paled hue,  
 The silvan gods likewise came running farre  
 and neere,  
 And all with teares bedewd, and eyes cast  
 up on hie, <sup>40</sup>  
 'O help, O help, ye gods!' they ghastly  
 gan to crie.  
 'O chaunge the cruell fate of this so rare  
 a wight,  
 And graunt that natures course may meas-  
 ure out his age!'  
 The beasts their foode forsooke, and trem-  
 bling fearfully,

Each sought his cave or den, this cry did  
 them so fright.  
 Out from amid the waves, by storme then  
 stirr'd to rage,  
 This crie did cause to rise th' old father  
 Ocean hoare,  
 Who, grave with eld, and full of majestie  
 in sight,  
 Spake in this wise: 'Refrain,' quoth he,  
 'your teares and plaints,  
 Cease these your idle words, make vaine  
 requests no more. <sup>50</sup>  
 No humble speech nor mone may move the  
 fixed stint  
 Of destinie or death: such is his will that  
 paints  
 The earth with colours fresh, the darkest  
 skies with store  
 Of starry lights: and though your teares  
 a hart of flint  
 Might tender make, yet nought herein they  
 will prevaile.'  
 Whiles thus he said, the noble knight,  
 who gan to feele  
 His vitall force to faint, and Death with  
 cruell dint  
 Of direfull dart his mortall bodie to assaile,  
 With eyes lift up to heav'n, and courage  
 franke as steele,  
 With cheerfull face, where valour lively  
 was exprest, <sup>60</sup>  
 But humble mynd, he said: 'O Lord, if  
 ought this fraile  
 And earthly carcasce have thy service  
 sought t' advaunce;  
 If my desire have bene still to relieve th'  
 opprest;  
 If, justice to maintaine, that valour I have  
 spent  
 Which thou me gav'st; or if henceforth I  
 might advaunce  
 Thy name, thy truth, then spare me (Lord)  
 if thou think best;  
 Forbeare these unripe yeares. But if thy  
 will be bent,  
 If that prefixed time be come which thou  
 hast set,  
 Through pure and fervent faith, I hope now  
 to be plast  
 In th' everlasting blis which with thy pre-  
 cious blood <sup>70</sup>  
 Thou purchase didst for us.' With that a  
 sigh he fet,  
 And straight a cloudie mist his senses  
 overcast,



His lips waxt pale and wan, like damaske  
 roses bud  
 Cast from the stalke, or like in field to  
 purple flowre,  
 Which languisheth being shred by eulter  
 as it past.  
 A trembling chilly cold ran throgh their  
 veines, which were  
 With eies brimfull of teares to see his  
 fatall howre;  
 Whose blustering sighes at first their sor-  
 row did declare;  
 Next, murmuring ensude; at last they not  
 forbearc  
 Plaine outcries, all against the heav'ns that  
 enviously 80  
 Depriv'd us of a spright so perfect and so  
 rare.  
 The sun his lightsom beames did shrowd,  
 and hide his face  
 For grieve, whereby the earth feared night  
 eternally:  
 The mountaines eachwhere shooke, the  
 rivers turn'd their streames,  
 And th' aire gan winterlike to rage and  
 fret apace:  
 And grisly ghosts by night were seene, and  
 fierie gleames  
 Amid the clouds, with claps of thunder,  
 that did seeme  
 To rent the skies, and made both man and  
 beast afeard.  
 The birds of ill presage this lucklesse  
 chance foretold,  
 By dernfull noise, and dogs with howling  
 made man deeme 90  
 Some mischief was at hand: for such they  
 do esteeme  
 As tokens of mishap, and so have done of old.  
 Ah! that thou hadst but heard his lovely  
 Stella plaine  
 Her greevous losse, or seene her heavie  
 mourning cheere,  
 While she, with woe opprest, her sorrowes  
 did unfold.  
 Her haire hung lose neglect, about her  
 shoulders twaine,  
 And from those two bright starres, to him  
 sometime so deere,  
 Her heart sent drops of pearle, which fell  
 in foyson downe  
 Twixt lilly and the rose. She wroong her  
 hands with paine,  
 And piteously gan say: 'My true and  
 faithfull pheere, 100

Alas, and woe is me! why should my for-  
 tune frowne  
 On me thus frowardly, to rob me of my  
 joy?  
 What cruell envious hand hath taken thee  
 away,  
 And with thee my content, my comfort,  
 and my stay?  
 Thou onelic wast the ease of trouble and  
 annoy,  
 When they did me assaile, in thee my  
 hopes did rest.  
 Alas! what now is left but grief, that  
 night and day  
 Afflicts this wofull life, and with continuall  
 rage  
 Torments ten thousand waies my miser-  
 able brest?  
 O greedic envious heav'n, what needed  
 thee to have 110  
 Enricht with such a jewell this unhappie age,  
 To take it back againe so soone? Alas!  
 when shall  
 Mine eies see ought that may content  
 them, since thy grave  
 My onely treasure hides, the joyes of my  
 poore hart?  
 As here with thee on earth I liv'd, even so  
 equall  
 Methinkes it were with thee in heav'n I did  
 abide:  
 And as our troubles all we here on earth  
 did part,  
 So reason would that there of thy most  
 happie state  
 I had my share. Alas! if thou my trustie  
 guide  
 Were wont to be, how canst thou leave me  
 thus alone 120  
 In darknesse and astray, weake, wearie,  
 desolate,  
 Plung'd in a world of woe, refusing for to  
 take  
 Me with thee to the place of rest where  
 thou art gone?  
 This said, she held her peace, for sorrow  
 tide her tong;  
 And instead of more words, seemd that her  
 eies a lake  
 Of teares had bene, they flow'd so plen-  
 teously therefro:  
 And with her sobs and sighs th' aire round  
 about her roong.  
 If Venus, when she waild her deare  
 Adonis slaine,

Ought moov'd in thy fiers hart compassion  
 of her woe,  
 His noble sisters plaints, her sighes and  
 teares emong, <sup>130</sup>  
 Would sure have made thee milde, and  
 inly rue her paine.  
 Aurora halfe so faire her selfe did never show,  
 When from old Tithons bed shee weeping  
 did arise.  
 The blinded archer-boy, like larke in showre  
 of raine,  
 Sat bathing of his wings, and glad the time  
 did spend  
 Under those cristall drops which fell from  
 her faire eies,  
 And at their brightest beames him proynd  
 in lovely wise.  
 Yet sorie for her grief, which he could not  
 amend,  
 The gentle boy gan wipe her eies, and  
 clear those lights,  
 Those lights through which his glory and  
 his conquests shine. <sup>140</sup>  
 The Graces tuckt her hair, which hung like  
 threds of gold,  
 Along her yvoric brest, the treasure of de-  
 lights.  
 All things with her to weep, it seemed, did  
 encline,  
 The trees, the hills, the dales, the caves,  
 the stones so cold.  
 The aire did help them mourne, with dark  
 clouds, raine, and mist,  
 Forbearing many a day to cleare it selfe  
 againe;  
 Which made them eftsoones feare the daies  
 of Pirrha shold  
 Of creatures spoile the earth, their fatall  
 threds untwist.  
 For Phœbus gladstone raies were wished  
 for in vaine,  
 And with her quivering light Latonas  
 daughter faire, <sup>150</sup>  
 And Charles-waine eke refus'd to be the  
 shipmans guide.  
 On Neptune warre was made by Acolus  
 and his traine,  
 Who, letting loose the winds, tost and tor-  
 mented th' aire,  
 So that on ev'ry coast men shipwrack did  
 abide,  
 Or else were swallowed up in open sea with  
 waves,  
 And such as came to shoare were beaten  
 with despaire.

The Medwaies silver streames, that wont so  
 still to slide,  
 Were troubled now and wrothe: whose  
 hidden hollow caves  
 Along his banks, with fog then shrowded  
 from mans eye,  
 Ay 'Phillip!' did resownd, aie 'Phillip!'  
 they did crie. <sup>160</sup>  
 His nimphs were seen no more (thogh  
 custom stil it craves)  
 With haire spred to the wynd themselves  
 to bath or sport,  
 Or with the hooke or net, barefooted wan-  
 tonly,  
 The pleasant daintie fish to entangle or  
 deceive.  
 The shepheards left their wonted places of  
 resort;  
 Their bagpipes now were still; their loving  
 mery layes  
 Were quite forgot; and now their flocks  
 men might pereceive  
 To wander and to straine, all carelesly  
 neglect:  
 And in the stead of mirth and pleasure,  
 nights and dayes  
 Nought els was to be heard, but woes,  
 complaints, and mone. <sup>170</sup>  
 But thou (O blessed soule) doest haply  
 not respect  
 These teares we shead, though full of loving  
 pure affect,  
 Having affixt thine eyes on that most glo-  
 rious throne,  
 Where full of majestie the High Creator  
 reignes:  
 In whose bright shining face thy joyes are  
 all complete;  
 Whose love kindles thy spright; where,  
 happie alwaies one,  
 Thou liv'st in blis that earthly passion never  
 staines;  
 Where from the purest spring the sacred  
 nectar sweete  
 Is thy continuall drinke; where thou doest  
 gather now  
 Of well emploied life th' inestimable gaines.  
 There Venus on thee smiles, Apollo gives  
 thee place, <sup>181</sup>  
 And Mars in reverent wise doth to thy  
 vertue bow,  
 And decks his fiery sphere, to do thee hon-  
 our most.  
 In highest part whereof, thy valour for to  
 grace,

A chaire of gold he settis to thee, and there  
doth tell  
Thy noble acts arew, whereby even they  
that boast  
Themselves of auncient fame, as Pirrhus,  
Hanniball,  
Scipio, and Cæsar, with the rest that did  
excell  
In martiall prowesse, high thy glorie do  
admire.  
All haile, therefore, O worthie Phillip  
immortall, <sup>190</sup>  
The flowre of Sydneys race, the honour of  
thy name!  
Whose worthe praise to sing my Muses  
not aspire,  
But sorrowfull and sad these teares to thee  
let fall,  
Yet wish their verses might so farre and  
wide thy fame  
Extend, that envies rage, nor time, might  
end the same.

A PASTORALL AEGLOGUE UPON  
THE DEATH OF SIR PHILLIP  
SIDNEY, KNIGHT, &c.

[By Lodowick Bryskett.]

LYCON. COLIN.

COLIN, well fits thy sad cheare this sad  
stownd,  
This wofull stownd, wherein all things  
complane  
This great mishap, this greevous losse of  
owres.  
Hear'st thou the Crown? how with hollow  
sownd  
He slides away, and murmuring doth plaine,  
And seemes to say unto the fading flowres  
Along his bankes, unto the bared trees,  
'Phyllisides is dead'? Up, jolly swaine,  
Thou that with skill canst tune a dolefull  
lay,  
Help him to mourn. My hart with grief  
doth freese, <sup>10</sup>  
Hoarse is my voice with crying, else a part  
Sure would I beare, though rude: but as I  
may,  
With sobs and sighes I second will thy  
song,  
And so expresse the sorrowes of my hart.  
*Colin.* Ah, Lycon, Lycon! what need  
skill, to teach

A grieved mynd powre forth his plaints?  
How long  
Hath the pore turtle gon to schoo! (ween-  
est thou)  
To learne to mourne her lost make? No,  
no, each  
Creature by nature can tell how to waile.  
Seest not these flocks, how sad they wan-  
der now? <sup>20</sup>  
Seemeth their leaders bell their bleating  
tunes  
In dolefull sound. Like him, not one doth  
faile  
With hanging head to shew a heavie  
cheare.  
What bird (I pray thee) hast thou seen,  
that prunes  
Himselfe of late? Did any cheerfull note  
Come to thine eares, or gladsome sight ap-  
peare  
Unto thine eies, since that same fatall  
howre?  
Hath not the aire put on his mourning  
coat,  
And testified his grief with flowing teares?  
Sith, then, it seemeth each thing, to his  
powre, <sup>30</sup>  
Doth us invite to make a sad consort,  
Come, let us joyne our mournfull song  
with theirs.  
Griefe will endite, and sorrow will enforce  
Thy voice, and Eccho will our words re-  
port.  
*Lycon.* Though my rude rymes ill with  
thy verses frame,  
That others farre excell, yet will I force  
My selfe to answer thee the best I can,  
And honor my base words with his high  
name.  
But if my plaints annoy thee where thou  
sit  
In secret shade or cave, vouchsafe (O Pan)  
To pardon me, and here this hard con-  
straint <sup>41</sup>  
With patience while I sing, and pittie it.  
And eke ye rural Muses, that do dwell  
In these wilde woods, if ever piteous plaint  
We did endite, or taught a wofull minde  
With words of pure affect his griefe to tell,  
Instruct me now. Now, Colin, then goe on,  
And I will follow thee, though farre be-  
hinde.  
*Colin.* Phyllisides is dead. O harmfull  
death,  
O deadly harme! Unhappie Albion, <sup>50</sup>



When shalt thou see among thy shepheards  
 all,  
 Any so sage, so perfect? Whom uneath  
 Envie could touch for vertuous life and  
 skill;  
 Curteous, valiant, and liberall.  
 Behold the sacred Pales, where with haire  
 Untrust she sitts, in shade of yonder hill,  
 And her faire face bent sadly downe, doth  
 send  
 A floud of teares to bathe the earth; and  
 there  
 Doth call the heav'ns despightfull, envious,  
 Cruell his fate, that made so short an  
 end 60  
 Of that same life, well worthie to have  
 bene  
 Prolongd with many yeares, happie and  
 famous.  
 The Nymphs and Oreades her round about  
 Do sit lamenting on the grassie grene,  
 And with shrill cries, beating their whitest  
 breasts,  
 Accuse the direfull dart that Death sent  
 out  
 To give the fatall stroke. The starres they  
 blame,  
 That deafe or carelesse seeme at their re-  
 quest.  
 The pleasant shade of stately groves they  
 shun;  
 They leave their cristall springs, where  
 they wont frame 70  
 Sweet bowres of myrtel twigs and lawrel  
 faire,  
 To sport themselves free from the scorch-  
 ing sun.  
 And now the hollow caves, where horror  
 darke  
 Doth dwell, whence banisht is the gladsome  
 aire,  
 They seeke; and there in mourning spend  
 their time  
 With wailfull tunes, whiles wolves do howle  
 and barke,  
 And seem to beare a bourdon to their  
 plaint.  
*Lycón.* Phillisides is dead. O dolefull  
 ryme!  
 Why should my toong expresse thee? Who  
 is left  
 Now to nphold thy hopes, when they do  
 faint, 80  
*Lycón* unfortunate? What spitefull fate,  
 What lucklesse destinie, hath thee bereft

Of thy chief comfort, of thy onely stay?  
 Where is become thy wonted happie state,  
 (Alas!) wherein through many a hill and  
 dale,  
 Through pleasant woods, and many an un-  
 knowne way,  
 Along the bankes of many silver streames,  
 Thou with him yodest, and with him didst  
 scale  
 The craggie rocks of th' Alpes and Appen-  
 ine,  
 Still with the Muses sporting, while those  
 beames 90  
 Of vertue kindled in his noble brest,  
 Which after did so gloriously forth shine?  
 But (woe is me!) they now yquenched are  
 All suddeinly, and death hath them op-  
 prest.  
 Loe Father Neptune, with sad countenance,  
 How he sitts mourning on the strond now  
 bare,  
 Yonder, where th' Ocean with his rolling  
 waves  
 The white feete washeth (wailing this mis-  
 chance)  
 Of Dover cliffes. His sacred skirt about  
 The sea-gods all are set; from their moist  
 caves 100  
 All for his comfort gathered there they be.  
 The Thamis rich, the Humber rough and  
 stout,  
 The fruitfull Severne with the rest are  
 come  
 To helpe their lord to mourne, and eke to  
 see  
 The dolefull sight, and sad pomp funerall  
 Of the dead corps passing through his  
 kingdome.  
 And all their heads, with cypres gyrlonds  
 crown'd,  
 With wofull shrikes salute him, great and  
 small.  
 Eke wailfull Eccho, forgetting her deare  
 Narcissus, their last accents doth resownd.  
*Colin.* Phillisides is dead. O lucklesse  
 age, 111  
 O widow world! O brookes and fountains  
 cleere,  
 O hills, O dales, O woods, that oft have  
 rong  
 With his sweet caroling, which could as-  
 swage  
 The fiercest wrath of tygre or of beare;  
 Ye Silvans, Fawnes, and Satyres, that  
 emong

These thickets oft have daunst after his pipe;  
Ye Nymphs and Nayades with golden  
heare,

That oft have left your purest cristall  
springs

To harken to his layes, that couldn wipe  
Away all griefe and sorrow from your  
harts:

Alas! who now is left that like him sings?  
When shall you heare againe like har-  
monie?

So sweet a sound who to you now im-  
parts?

Loe where engraved by his hand yet lives  
The name of Stella, in yonder bay tree.

Happie name, happie tree! faire may you  
grow,

And spred your sacred branch, which honor  
gives

To famous emperours, and poets crowne.  
Unhappie flock, that wander scattred now,  
What marvell if through grief ye woxen  
leane,

Forsake your food, and hang your heads  
adowne?

For such a shepherd never shall you  
guide,

Whose parting hath of weale bereft you  
cleane.

*Lycon.* Phillisides is dead. O happie  
sprite,

That now in heav'n with blessed soules  
doest bide,

Looke down a while from where thou sitst  
above,

And see how busie shepherds be to endite  
Sad songs of grief, their sorrowes to de-  
clare,

And gratefull memory of their kynd love.  
Behold my selfe with Colin, gentle swaine,

(Whose lerned muse thou cherisht most  
whyleare)

Where we, thy name recording, seeke to  
ease

The inward torment and tormenting paine,  
That thy departure to us both hath bred;  
Ne can each others sorrow yet appease.

Behold the fountains now left desolate,  
And withered grasse with cypres boughes  
bespred;

Behold these floures which on thy grave  
we strew;

Which, faded, shew the givers faded state,  
(Though eke they shew their fervent zeale  
and pure)

Whose onely comfort on thy welfare grew.  
Whose praiers importune shall the heav'ns  
for ay,

That to thy ashes rest they may assure;  
That learnedst shepherds honor may thy  
name

With yearly praises, and the Nymphs al-  
way

Thy tomb may deck with fresh and sweet-  
est flowres;

And that for ever may endure thy fame.

*Colin.* The sun (lo!) hastned hath his  
face to steep

In western waves; and th' aire with stormy  
showres

Warnes us to drive homewards our silly  
sheep.

Lycon, lett's rise, and take of them good  
keep.

*Virtute summa: cætera fortuna.*

L. B.

## AN ELEGIE, OR FRIENDS PAS- SION, FOR HIS ASTROPHILL

WRITTEN UPON THE DEATH OF THE  
RIGHT HONOURABLE SIR PHILLIP SID-  
NEY, KNIGHT, LORD GOVERNOUR OF  
FLUSHING

[By Matthew Roydon.]

As then, no winde at all there blew,  
No swelling cloude accloid the aire;  
The skie, like glasse of watchet hew,  
Reflected Phœbus golden haire;

The garnisht tree no pendant stird,  
No voice was heard of anie bird.

There might you see the burly beare,  
The lion king, the elephant;  
The maiden unicorne was there,  
So was Acteons horned plant,

And what of wilde or tame are found  
Were coucht in order on the ground.

Alcides speckled poplar tree,  
The palme that monarchs do obtaine,  
With love juice staind, the mulberie,  
The fruit that dewes the poets braine,  
And Phillis philbert there away,  
Comparede with mirtle and the bay,

The tree that coffins doth adorne,  
 With stately height threatening the skie, 20  
 And for the bed of love forlorne,  
 The blacke and dolefull ebonie,  
 All in a circle compast were,  
 Like to an amphitheater.

Upon the branches of those trees  
 The airie wiuged people sat,  
 Distinguished in od degrees,  
 One sort is this, another that.  
 Here Philomell, that knowes full well  
 What force and wit in love doth dwell. 30

The skiebred egle, roiall bird,  
 Percht there upon an oke above;  
 The turtle by him never stird,  
 Example of immortall love;  
 The swan that sings about to dy,  
 Leaving Meander, stood thereby.

And that which was of woonder most,  
 The phoenix left sweet Arabie,  
 And on a cædar in this coast  
 Built up her tombe of spicerie, 40  
 As I conjecture by the same,  
 Preperde to take her dying flame.

In midst and center of this plot,  
 I saw one groveling on the grasse:  
 A man or stone, I knew not that:  
 No stone; of man the figure was,  
 And yet I could not count him one,  
 More than the image made of stone.

At length I might perceive him reare  
 His bodie on his elbow end: 50  
 Earthly and pale with gastly cheare,  
 Upon his knees he upward tend,  
 Seeming like one in uncouth stound,  
 To be ascending out the ground.

A grievous sigh forthwith he throwes,  
 As might have torne the vitall strings;  
 Then down his cheeks the teares so flows,  
 As doth the streame of many springs.  
 So thunder rends the cloud in twaine,  
 And makes a passage for the raine. 60

Incontinent, with trembling sound  
 He wofully gan to complaine;  
 Such were the accents as might wound,  
 And teare a diamond roeke in twaine:  
 After his throbs did somewhat stay,  
 Thus heavily he gan to say.

'O sunne,' said he, seeing the sunne,  
 'On wretched me why dost thou shine?  
 My star is false, my comfort done,  
 Out is the apple of my eie: 70  
 Shine upon those possesse delight,  
 And let me live in endlesse night.

'O griefe that liest upon my soule,  
 As heave as a mount of lead,  
 The remnant of my life controll,  
 Consort me quickly with the dead;  
 Halfe of this hart, this sprite, and will,  
 Di'de in the brest of Astrophill.

'And you, compassionate of my wo,  
 Gentle birds, beasts, and shadie trees, 80  
 I am assurde ye long to kno  
 What be the sorrowes me agreev's;  
 Listen ye then to that insu'th,  
 And heare a tale of teares and ruthe.

'You knew—who knew not?—Astrophill:  
 (That I should live to say I knew,  
 And have not in possession still!)  
 Things knowne permit me to renew;  
 Of him yon know his merit such,  
 I cannot say, you heare, too much. 90

'Within these woods of Arcadie  
 He chiefe delight and pleasure tooke,  
 And on the mountaine Parthenie,  
 Upon the chrystall liquid brooke,  
 The Muses met him ev'ry day,  
 That taught him sing, to write, and  
 say.

'When he descended downe the mount,  
 His personage seemed most divine,  
 A thousand graces one might count  
 Upon his lovely cheerfull eie, 100  
 To heare him speake and sweetly smile,  
 Yon were in Paradise the while.

'A sweet attractive kinde of grace,  
 A full assurance given by lookes,  
 Continual comfort in a face,  
 The lineaments of Gospell bookes;  
 I trow that countenance cannot lie,  
 Whose thoughts are legible in the eie.

'Was never eie, did see that face,  
 Was never eare, did heare that tong, 110  
 Was never minde, did minde his grace,  
 That ever thought the travell long,



But eies, and eares, and ev'ry thought,  
Were with his sweete perfections  
caught.

'O God, that such a worthy man,  
In whom so rare desarts did raigne,  
Desired thus, must leave us than,  
And we to wish for him in vaine !  
O could the stars that bred that wit  
In force no longer fixed sit ? 120

'Then being fild with learned dew,  
The Muses willed him to love;  
That instrument can aptly shew  
How finely our conceits will move:  
As Bacchus opes dissembled harts,  
So Love sets out our better parts.

'Stella, a nymph within this wood,  
Most rare and rich of heavenly blis,  
The highest in his fancie stood,  
And she could well demerite this: 130  
Tis likely they acquainted soone;  
He was a sun, and she a moone.

'Our Astrophill did Stella love;  
O Stella, vaunt of Astrophill,  
Albeit thy graces gods may move,  
Where wilt thou finde an Astrophill ?  
The rose and lillie have their prime,  
And so hath beautie but a time.

'Although thy beautie do exceed,  
In common sight of ev'ry eie, 140  
Yet in his poesies when we reede,  
It is apparant more thereby:  
He that hath love and judgement too  
Sees more than any other doo.

'Then Astrophill hath honord thee;  
For when thy bodie is extinct,  
Thy graces shall eternall be,  
And live by vertue of his inke;  
For by his verses he doth give  
To short livde beautie aye to live. 150

'Above all others this is hee,  
Which erst approved in his song  
That love and honor might agree,  
And that pure love will do no wrong.  
Sweet saints ! it is no sinne nor blame,  
To love a man of vertuous name.

'Did never love so sweetly breath  
In any mortall brest before;

Did never Muse inspire beneath  
A poets braine with finer store: 160  
He wrote of love with high conceit,  
And beautie reard above her height.

'Then Pallas afterward attyrde  
Our Astrophill with her device,  
Whom in his armor heaven admyrde,  
As of the nation of the skies;  
He sparkled in his armes afarrs,  
As he were dight with fierie starrs.

'The blaze whereof when Mars beheld,  
(An envious eie doth see afar) 170  
"Such majestie," quoth he, "is seeld,  
Such majestie my mart may mar;  
Perhaps this may a suter be,  
To set Mars by his deitie."

'In this surmize he made with speede  
An iron cane, wherein he put  
The thunder that in cloudes do breede;  
The flame and bolt together shut  
With privie force burst out againe,  
And so our Astrophill was slaine.' 180

His word, 'was slaine,' straightway did  
move,  
And Natures inward life strings twitch:  
The skie immediately above  
Was dimd with hideous clouds of pitch,  
The wrastling winds from out the ground  
Fild all the aire with ratling sound.

The bending trees exprest a grone,  
And sigh'd the sorrow of his fall,  
The forrest beasts made ruthfull mone,  
The birds did tune their mourning call, 190  
And Philomell for Astrophill  
Unto her notes annex a phill.

The turtle dove with tunes of ruthe  
Shewd feeling passion of his death;  
Me thought she said, 'I tell thee truthe,  
Was never he that drew in breath  
Unto his love more trustie found,  
Than he for whom our griefs abound.'

The swan, that was in presence heere,  
Began his funerall dirge to sing: 200  
'Good things,' quoth he, 'may scarce ap-  
peare,

But passe away with speedie wing:  
This mortall life as death is tride,  
And death gives life,'— and so he di'de.

The generall sorrow that was made  
 Among the creatures of Kinde  
 Fired the phoenix where she laide,  
 Her ashes flying with the winde,  
 So as I might with reason see,  
 That such a phoenix nere should bee. 210

Haply the cinders, driven about,  
 May breede an offspring neere that kinde,  
 But hardly a peere to that, I doubt;  
 It cannot sinke into my minde,  
 That under branches ere can bee  
 Of worth and value as the tree.

The egle markt with pearcing sight  
 The mournfull habite of the place,  
 And parted thence with mounting flight,  
 To signifie to Jove the case, 220  
 What sorrow Nature doth sustaine  
 For Astrophill by envie slaine.

And while I followed with mine eie  
 The flight the egle upward tooke,  
 All things did vanish by and by,  
 And disappeared from my looke;  
 The trees, beasts, birds, and grove was  
 gone,  
 So was the friend that made this mone.

This spectacle had firmly wrought  
 A deepe compassion in my spright; 230  
 My molting hart issude, me thought,  
 In streames forth at mine eies aright:  
 And here my pen is forst to shrinke,  
 My teares discollors so mine inke.

AN EPITAPH UPON THE RIGHT  
 HONOURABLE SIR PHILLIP  
 SIDNEY, KNIGHT: LORD GOV-  
 ERNOR OF FLUSHING

[By Sir Walter Raleigh.]

To praise thy life, or waile thy worthie  
 death,  
 And want thy wit, thy wit high, pure, di-  
 vine,  
 Is far beyond the powre of mortall line,  
 Nor any one hath worth that draweth  
 breath.

Yet rich in zeale, though poore in learnings  
 lore,  
 And friendly care obscurde in secret brest,

And love that envie in thy life suppress,  
 Thy deere life done, and death, hath doubled  
 more.

And I, that in thy time and living state  
 Did onely praise thy vertues in my  
 thought, 10  
 As one that seeld the rising sun hath  
 sought,  
 With words and teares now waile thy time-  
 lesse fate.

Drawne was thy race aright from princely  
 line,  
 Nor lesse than such, (by gifts that Nature  
 gave,  
 The common mother that all creatures  
 have,)  
 Doth vertue shew, and princely linage  
 shine.

A king gave thee thy name; a kingly  
 minde,  
 That God thee gave, who found it now too  
 deere  
 For this base world, and hath resumde it  
 neere,  
 To sit in skies, and sort with powres di-  
 vine. 20

Kent thy birth daies, and Oxford held thy  
 youth;  
 The heavens made hast, and staid nor  
 yeers nor time;  
 The fruits of age grew ripe in thy first  
 prime,  
 Thy will, thy words; thy words the seales  
 of truth.

Great gifts and wisdom rare imployd thee  
 thence,  
 To treat from kings with those more great  
 than kings,  
 Such hope men had to lay the highest  
 things  
 On thy wise youth, to be transported  
 hence.

Whence to sharpe wars sweet honor did  
 thee call,  
 Thy countries love, religion, and thy  
 friends: 30  
 Of worthy men the marks, the lives, and  
 ends,  
 And her defence, for whom we labor all.

There didst thou vanquish shame and tedious age,  
 Griefe, sorrow, sicknes, and base Fortunes might:  
 Thy rising day saw never wofull night,  
 But past with praise from of this worldly stage.

Back to the campe by thee that day was brought,  
 First thine owne death, and after thy long fame;  
 Teares to the soldiers, the proud Castilians shame;  
 Vertue exprest, and honor truly taught. 40  
 What hath he lost, that such great grace hath woon?  
 Yoong yeeres for endles yeeres, and hope unsure  
 Of Fortunes gifts for wealth that still shall dure:  
 Oh happie race with so great praises run!

England doth hold thy lims, that bred the same;  
 Flaunders thy valure, where it last was tried;  
 The campe thy sorrow, where thy bodie died;  
 Thy friends, thy want; the world, thy vertues fame.

Nations thy wit, our mindes lay up thy love;  
 Letters thy learning; thy losse, yeeres long to come; 50  
 In worthy harts sorrow hath made thy tombe;  
 Thy soule and spright enrich the heavens above.

Thy liberall hart imbalmd in gratefull teares,  
 Yoong sighs, sweet sighes, sage sighes, bewaile thy fall:  
 Envie her sting, and Spite hath left her gall;  
 Malice her selfe a mourning garment weares.

That day their Hanniball died, our Scipio fell,  
 Scipio, Cicero, and Petrarch of our time.

Whose vertues, wounded by my worthlesse rime,  
 Let angels speake, and heaven thy praises tell. 60

### ANOTHER OF THE SAME

[Ascribed by Charles Lamb, 'from internal testimony,' to Fulke Greville, Lord Brooke.]

SILENCE augmenteth grief, writing encreaseth rage;  
 Stald are my thoughts, which lov'd, and lost, the wonder of our age;  
 Yet quickned now with fire, though dead with frost ere now,  
 Enrag'de I write, I know not what: dead, quick, I know not how.

Hard harted mindes relent, and Rigors teares abound,  
 And Envie strangely rues his end, in whom no fault she found;  
 Knowledge her light hath lost, Valor hath slaine her knight,  
 Sidney is dead, dead is my friend, dead is the worlds delight.

Place pensive wailes his fall, whose presence was her pride;  
 Time crieth out, 'My ebbe is come: his life was my spring tide;' 10  
 Fame mournes in that she lost the ground of her reports;  
 Ech living wight laments his lacke, and all in sundry sorts.

He was (wo worth that word!) to ech well thinking minde,  
 A spotlesse friend, a matchles man, whose vertue ever shinde,  
 Declaring in his thoughts, his life, and that he writ,  
 Highest conceits, longest foresights, and deepest works of wit.

He, onely like himselfe, was second unto none,  
 Whose deth (though life) we rue, and wroug, and al in vaiu do mone;  
 Their losse, not him, waile they that fill the world with cries;  
 Death slue not him, but he made death his ladder to the skies. 20



Now sinke of sorrow I, who live, the more  
 the wrong,  
 Who wishing death, whom Deth denies,  
 whose thred is al to long,  
 Who tied to wretched life, who lookes for  
 no reliefe,  
 Must spend my ever dying daies in never  
 ending griebe.

Harts ease and onely I like parallels run  
 on,  
 Whose equall length keep equall bredth,  
 and never meet in one;  
 Yet for not wronging him, my thoughts, my  
 sorrowes cell,  
 Shall not run out, though leake they will,  
 for liking him so well.

Farewell to you, my hopes, my wonted  
 waking dreames,  
 Farewell, sometimes enjoyed joy, eclipsed  
 are thy beames, 30

Farewell selfe pleasing thoughts, which  
 quietnes brings foorth,  
 And farewel friendships sacred league,  
 uniting minds of woorth.

And farewell mery hart, the gift of guilt-  
 lesse mindes,  
 And all sports which, for lives restore,  
 varietie assignes;  
 Let all that sweete is voyd; in me no mirth  
 may dwell;  
 Phillip, the cause of all this woe, my lives  
 content, farewell!

Now Rime, the sonne of Rage, which art  
 no kin to Skill,  
 And endles Griefe, which deads my life,  
 yet knowes not how to kill,  
 Go seeke that haples tombe; which if ye  
 hap to finde,  
 Salute the stones that keep the lims that  
 held so good a minde. 40

FINIS

LONDON

PRINTED BY T. C. FOR WILLIAM PONSONBIE

1595

# AMORETTI AND EPITHALAMION

WRITTEN NOT LONG SINCE BY EDMUNDE SPENSER

PRINTED FOR WILLIAM PONSONBY, 1595

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFULL SIR ROBERT NEEDHAM, KNIGHT

SIR, to gratulate your safe return from Ireland, I had nothing so readie, nor thought any thing so meete, as these sweete conceited sonets, the deede of that wel-deserving gentleman, Maister Edmond Spenser: whose name sufficiently warranting the worthinesse of the work, I do more confidently presume to publish it in his absence, under your name, to whom (in my poore opinion) the patronage therof doth in some respects properly appertaine. For, besides your judgement and delighte in

learned poesie, this gentle Muse, for her former perfection long wished for in Eng-lande, nowe at length crossing the seas in your happy companye, (though to your selfe unknowne) seemeth to make choyse of you, as meetest to give her deserved countenance, after her retourne: entertaine her, then, (right worshipfull) in sorte best be-seeming your gentle minde, and her merite, and take in worth my good will herein, who seeke no more, but to shew my selfe yours in all dutifull affection.

W. P.

[The *Amoretti* and *Epithalamion* were entered upon the Stationers' Register, November 19, 1594, and published in 1595, perhaps somewhat earlier than *Colin Clout's Come Home Again* and *Astrophel*. The date of their composition is fixed, almost beyond dispute, by the inscription on the title page, 'written not long since;' for, according to line 267 of the *Epithalamion*, Spenser's wedding day was June 11, which the 'not long since' marks for 1594, and there being no reason to suppose any considerable gap between the *Epithalamion* and the *Amoretti*, sonnet lxvii of the latter must refer to the previous New Year's, sonnet iv to New Year's, 1593. All minor indications of time confirm this hypothetical chronology.

The record of the courtship, indeed, is singularly convincing, altogether different from the unrealities of most of the sonneteering of that day. In *Delia*, in *Idea*, in *Diana*, one may read for pages at a stretch with the sensation of being on a treeless plain: the ladies celebrated are as vague as pantheism; there is not a hint at real human relations in a life of every-day affairs. In the *Amoretti*, on the other hand, we are constantly within sight of fact, however trivial. The poet, accustomed, it seems, to easy conquests, makes definite advances too soon, and is ignominiously beaten back; he is chidden by a friend for not pushing on more vigorously with his *Faery Queen*, and pleads the distractions of his suit; at the close of a visit, when he should be departing,

there comes up a violent storm of rain, and he knows not whether to stay or go, or he walks with his mistress upon the beach and writes her name in the sand, whereupon the waves wash it out. Behind the graceful banalities of fancy, the imitations of previous imitators of Petrarch, almost inevitable in an Elizabethan sonnet sequence, one may read the history of a genuine courtship as clearly as in a set of old letters. The suitor is a man of forty years; in the eyes of the world, apparently, not a brilliant match, for when the lady finally accepts him, friends accuse her of a *mésalliance*: she is slow to be won (the courtship is of more than a year), yields finally with some misgivings, retains her maidenly aloofness after betrothal. 'His heroine,' writes the most recent of the critics, 'is the wayward mistress, the "sweet warrior" of every sixteenth century sonneteer. But difference of view is inevitable as to whether she owe most to Petrarch's *dolce guerrera*, or to De Baif's *belle ennemie*, or to Desportes' *douce adversaire*.' Such 'difference of view' is surely needless. Whatever fancies the poet may have borrowed, he has not borrowed the temperament of his mistress: it may please him to mention little except her pride; but her pride is clearly her own. We read it in a dozen characteristic touches,—in her fear to lose her maidenly independence (lxv), in the 'too constant stiffnesse' which denies him the perquisites of an accepted lover (lxxxiii), in her flare of anger at the tale of a busybody (lxxxv). It is, moreover, matter

of general note, excites resentment (v). She goes about with her head proudly erect and her eyes as proudly (though the poet chooses to call that 'humblesse') fixed upon the ground (xiii). In all these traits as the poet sets them down, there may indeed be fanciful exaggeration, and in the great marriage song it may please him to ignore them, but to deny their essential truth is surely to read the sonnets too sceptically. Even a Petrarchist may draw from the life, and Spenser, to an unpreoccupied eye, would seem to have done just that.

One can hardly leave the *Amoretti* without mention of the rhyme-scheme. In this the disconnected quatrains of the common Elizabethan, or Shakespearean, type of sonnet are linked after the manner of Marot, like the quatrains of 'April' and 'November.' Attempt has been made to prove that Spenser took this sonnet-form direct from a contemporary Scottish poet, Alexander Montgomery, who made use of it some years the earlier; but the argument is hardly convincing. For, given the common Elizabethan type, any two poets familiar with the linked quatrains of

Marot, as both Montgomery and Spenser unquestionably were, might evolve the same variant form quite independently. Their invention has not survived in the practice of later poets; perhaps because, though nearly as exacting as the regular Italian type, it is less finely proportioned, less stately.

Concerning the *Epithalamion* and its exquisite emotional tone, full and serene, a critic may best be silent. As to the four small poems, commonly entitled 'epigrams,' which divide it from the *Amoretti*, they are casual experiments in a vein then very much worked in France, imitations of that late and minor Greek poetry which clusters in and about the Anthology. The second and third have parallels in Marot (*Epigrammes* lxiv and ciii); the fourth is one of the most popular fancies of the time, derived from a poem of the pseudo-Anacreon group, and translated or imitated by no less than eight contemporary Frenchmen, Ronsard (*Odes*, IV, 14) at their head. To an epigram of Philodemus (*Anthologia Palatina*, V, 123) we owe the twenty-first strophe of the *Epithalamion* itself.]

#### G. W. SENIOR, TO THE AUTHOR

DARKE is the day, when Phœbus face is  
shrowded,  
And weaker sights may wander soone  
astray:

But when they see his glorious raies un-  
clouded,

With stedly steps they keepe the perfect  
way:

So while this Muse in forraine landes doth  
stay,

Invention weepes, and pens are cast aside,  
The time, like night, depriv'd of chearefull  
day,

And few do write, but ah! too soone may  
slide.

Then, hie thee home, that art our perfect  
guide,

And with thy wit illustrate Englands fame,  
Dawnting thereby our neighboures aun-  
cient pride,

That do for poesie challendge cheefest name.  
So we that live, and ages that succeede,  
With great applause thy learned works  
shall reede.

Ah! Colin, whether on the lowly plaine,  
Pypping to shepherds thy sweete rounde-  
laies,

Or whether singing, in some lofty vaine,  
Heroick deedes of past or present daies,  
Or whether in thy lovely mistress praise  
Thou list to exercise thy learned quill,  
Thy Muse hath got such grace, and power  
to please,

With rare invention, bewtified by skill,  
As who therein can ever joy their fill?  
O therefore let that happy Muse proceede  
To clime the height of Vertues sacred hill,  
Where endles honor shall be made thy  
meede:

Because no malice of succeeding daies  
Can rase those records of thy lasting praise.  
G. W. I.

#### I

HAPPY ye leaves! whenas those lilly hands,  
Which hold my life in their dead doing  
might,

Shall handle you, and hold in loves soft  
bands,

Lyke captives trembling at the victors sight.  
And happy lines! on which, with starry  
light,

Those lamping eyes will deigne sometimes  
to look,

And reade the sorrowes of my dying spright,  
Written with teares in harts close bleeding  
book.



And happy rymes! bath'd in the sacred  
brooke

Of Helicon, whence she derived is,  
When ye behold that angels blessed looke,  
My soules long lacked foode, my heavens  
blis.

Leaves, lines, and rymes, seeke her to please  
alone,

Whom if ye please, I care for other none.

## II

Unquiet thought, whom at the first I bred  
Of th' inward bale of my love pined hart,  
And sithens have with sighes and sorrowes  
fed,

Till greater then my wombe thou woxen  
art:

Breake forth at length out of the inner  
part,

In which thou lurkest lyke to vipers brood,  
And seeke some succour, both to ease my  
smart

And also to sustayne thy selfe with food.  
But if in presence of that fayrest proud  
Thou chance to come, fall lowly at her  
feet;

And with meeke humblesse and afflicted  
mood

Pardon for thee, and grace for me intreat.  
Which if she graunt, then live, and my love  
cherish,

If not, die soone, and I with thee will perish.

## III

The soverayne beauty which I doo ad-  
myre,

Witnesse the world how worthy to be  
prayzed;

The light wherof hath kindled heavenly  
fyre

In my fraile spirit, by her from basenesse  
raysed:

That being now with her huge brightnesse  
dazed,

Base thing I can no more endure to view;  
But looking still on her, I stand amazed

At wondrous sight of so celestially hew.  
So when my toung would speak her praises  
dew,

It stopped is with thoughts astonishment;  
And when my pen would write her titles  
true,

It ravisht is with fancies wonderment.  
Yet in my hart I then both speake and write

The wonder that my wit cannot endite.

## IV

New Yeaere, forth looking out of Janus  
gate,

Doth seeme to promise hope of new delight,  
And bidding th' old adieu, his passed date  
Bids all old thoughts to die in dumpish  
spright;

And calling forth out of sad Winters night  
Fresh Love, that long hath slept in cheer-  
lesse bower,

Wils him awake, and soone about him dight  
His wanton wings and darts of deadly  
power.

For lusty Spring now in his timely howre  
Is ready to come forth, him to receive;  
And warnes the Earth, with divers colord  
flowre

To decke hir selfe, and her faire mantle  
weave.

Then you, faire flowre, in whom fresh youth  
doth raine,

Prepare your selfe new love to entertaine.

## V

Rudely thou wrongest my deare harts  
desire,

In finding fault with her too portly pride:  
The thing which I doo most in her admire  
Is of the world unworthy most envide.

For in those lofty lookes is close implide  
Scorn of base things, and sdeigne of foule  
dishonor;

Thretning rash eies which gaze on her so  
wide,

That loosely they ne dare to looke upon  
her.

Such pride is praise, such portlinesse is  
honor,

That boldned innocence beares in hir eies,  
And her faire countenance, like a goodly  
banner,

Spreds in defiance of all enemies.  
Was never in this world ought worthy tride,

Without some spark of such self-pleasing  
pride.

## VI

Be nought dismayd that her unmoved mind  
Doth still persist in her rebellious pride:

Such love, not lyke to lusts of baser kynd,  
The harder wonne, the firmer will abide.

The durefull oake, whose sap is not yet  
dride,

Is long ere it conceive the kindling fyre:  
But when it once doth burne, it doth divide

Great heat, and makes his flames to heaven  
aspire.

So hard it is to kindle new desire  
In gentle brest, that shall endure for ever:  
Deepe is the wound that dints the parts  
entire

With chast affects, that naught but death  
can sever.

Then thinke not long in taking litle paine  
To knit the knot that ever shall remaine.

## VII

Fayre eyes, the myrrour of my mazed hart,  
What wondrous vertue is contaynd in you,  
The which both lyfe and death forth from  
you dart

Into the object of your mighty view ?  
For when ye mildly looke with lovely hew,  
Then is my soule with life and love in-  
spired:

But when ye lowre, or looke on me askew,  
Then doe I die, as one with lightning fyred.  
But since that lyfe is more then death  
desyred,

Looke ever lovely, as becomes you best,  
That your bright beams, of my weak eies  
admyred,

May kindle living fire within my brest.  
Such life should be the honor of your light,  
Such death the sad ensample of your might.

## VIII

More then most faire, full of the living  
fire

Kindled above unto the Maker neere:  
No eies, but joyes, in which al powers con-  
spire,

That to the world naught else be counted  
deare:

Thugh your bright beams doth not the  
blinded guest

Shoot out his darts to base affections wound;  
But angels come, to lead fraile mindes to  
rest

In chast desires, on heavenly beauty bound.  
You frame my thoughts, and fashion me  
within,

You stop my tounge, and teach my hart to  
speake,

You calme the storme that passion did begin,  
Strong thugh your cause, but by your ver-  
tue weak.

Dark is the world where your light shined  
never;

Well is he borne that may behold you ever.

## IX

Long-while I sought to what I might com-  
pare

Those powrefull eies which lighten my  
dark spright;

Yet find I nought on earth to which I dare  
Resemble th' ymage of their goodly light.

Not to the sun; for they doo shine by night:  
Nor to the moone; for they are changed  
never:

Nor to the starres; for they have purer  
sight:

Nor to the fire; for they consume not ever:  
Nor to the lightning; for they still persever:

Nor to the diamond; for they are more  
tender:

Nor unto christall; for nought may them  
sever:

Nor unto glasse; such basenesse mought  
offend her.

Then to the Maker selfe they likest be,  
Whose light doth lighten all that here we  
see.

## X

Unrighteous Lord of Love, what law is this,  
That me thou makest thus tormented be,  
The whiles she lordeth in licentious blisse  
Of her freewill, scorning both thee and me ?  
See how the tyrannesse doth joy to see  
The huge massacres which her eyes do  
make,

And humbled harts brings captive unto  
thee,

That thou of them mayst mightie ven-  
geance take !

But her proud hart doe thou a little shake,  
And that high look, with which she doth  
comptroll

All this worlds pride, bow to a baser make,  
And al her faults in thy black booke enroll:  
That I may laugh at her in equall sort  
As she doth laugh at me, and makes my  
pain her sport.

## XI

Dayly when I do seeke and sew for peace,  
And hostages doe offer for my truth,  
She, cruell warriour, doth her selfe ad-  
dresse

To battell, and the weary war renew'th:  
Ne wilbe moov'd with reason or with rewth,  
To graunt small respit to my restlesse toile;  
But greedily her fell intent poursewth,  
Of my poore life to make unpitteid spoile.

Yet my poore life, all sorrowes to assoyle,  
 I would her yield, her wrath to pacify:  
 But then she seekes, with torment and tur-  
   moyle,  
 To force me live, and will not let me dy.  
 All paine hath end, and every war hath  
   peace;  
 But mine no price nor prayer may surcease.

## XII

One day I sought with her hart-thrilling eies  
 To make a truce, and termes to entertaime,  
 All fearlesse then of so false eniuiies,  
 Which sought me to entrap in treasons  
   traine.

So as I then disarmed did remaine,  
 A wicked ambush, which lay hidden long  
 In the close covert of her guilefull eyen,  
 Thence breaking forth, did thicke about me  
   throng.

Too feeble I t'abide the brunt so strong,  
 Was forst to yeeld my selfe into their  
   hands:

Who me captiving streight with rigorous  
   wrong,

Have ever since me kept in cruell bands.  
 So, ladie, now to you I doo complaine,  
 Against your eies that justice I may gaine.

## XIII

In that proud port which her so goodly  
   graceth,

Whiles her faire face she reares up to the  
   skie,

And to the ground her eie lids low embaseth,  
 Most goodly temperature ye may descry:  
 Myld humblesse mixt with awfull majesty.  
 For looking on the earth, whence she was  
   borne,

Her minde remembreth her mortalitie:  
 What so is fayrest shall to earth returne.  
 But that same lofty countenance seemes to  
   scorne

Base thing, and thinke how she to heaven  
   may clime,

Treading downe earth as lothsome and for-  
   lorne,

That hinders heavenly thoughts with drossy  
   slime.

Yet lowly still vouchsafe to looke on me;  
 Such lowlinesse shall make you lofty be.

## XIV

Retourne agayne, my forces late dismayd,  
 Unto the siege by you abandon'd quite.

Great shame it is to leave, like one afayd,  
 So fayre a peece for one repulse so light.  
 Gaynst such strong castles needeth greater  
   might

Then those small forts which ye were wont  
   belay:

Such haughty mynds, enur'd to hardy fight,  
 Disdayne to yield unto the first assay.

Bring therefore all the forces that ye may,  
 And lay incessant battery to her heart;  
 Playnts, prayers, vows, ruth, sorrow, and  
   dismay;

Those engins can the proudest love convert.  
 And if those fayle, fall down and dy before  
   her;

So dying live, and living do adore her.

## XV

Ye tradefull merchants, that with weary  
   toyle

Do seeke most pretious things to make your  
   gain,

And both the Indias of their treasures  
   spoil,

What needeth you to seeke so farre in  
   vaine?

For loe! my love doth in her selfe containe  
 All this worlds riches that may farre be  
   found:

If saphyres, loe! her eies be saphyres  
   plaine;

If rubies, loe! hir lips be rubies sound;

If pearles, hir teeth be pearles both pure  
   and round;

If yvorie, her forehead yvory weene;

If gold, her locks are finest gold on ground;

If silver, her faire hands are silver sheene:

But that which fairest is but few behold,

Her mind, adorn'd with vertues manifold.

## XVI

One day as I unwarily did gaze

On those fayre eyes, my loves immortall  
   light,

The whiles my stonisht hart stood in amaze,  
 Through sweet illusion of her lookes de-  
   light,

I mote perceive how, in her glauncing sight,  
 Legions of loves with little wings did fly,  
 Darting their deadly arrowes, fyry bright,  
 At every rash beholder passing by.

One of those archers closely I did spy,

Ayming his arrow at my very hart:

When suddenly, with twincle of her eye,

The damzell broke his misintended dart.



Had she not so doon, sure I had bene  
slayne;  
Yet as it was, I hardly scap't with paine.

## XVII

The glorious pourtraict of that angels face,  
Made to amaze weake mens confused skil,  
And this worlds worthlesse glory to em-  
base,  
What pen, what pencill, can expresse her  
fill?  
For though he colours could devise at will,  
And eke his learned haud at pleasure guide,  
Least, trembling, it his workmanship should  
spill,  
Yet many wondrous things there are be-  
side.  
The sweet eye-glaunces, that like arrowes  
glide,  
The charming smiles, that rob sence from  
the hart,  
The lovely pleasance, and the lofty pride,  
Cannot expressed be by any art.  
A greater craftsmans hand thereto doth  
neede,  
That can expresse the life of things indeed.

## XVIII

The rolling wheele, that runneth often  
round,  
The hardest steele in tract of time doth  
teare:  
And drizzling drops, that often doe redound,  
The firmest flint doth in continuance weare:  
Yet cannot I, with many a dropping teare  
And long intreaty, soften her hard hart,  
That she will once vouchsafe my plaint to  
heare,  
Or looke with pittie on my payneful smart.  
But when I pleade, she bids me play my  
part,  
And when I weep, she sayes teares are but  
water,  
And when I sigh, she sayes I know the art,  
And when I waile, she turnes hir selfe to  
laughter.  
So do I weepe, and wayle, and pleade in  
vaine,  
Whiles she as steele and flint doth still  
remayne.

## XIX

The merry cuckow, messenger of Spring,  
His trumpet shrill hath thrise already  
sounded,

That warnes al lovers wayt upon their king,  
Who now is conning forth with girland  
crowned.

With noyse whereof the quyre of byrds re-  
sounded

Their anthemes sweet, devized of Loves  
praise,

That all the woods theyr ecchoes back re-  
bounded,

As if they knew the meaning of their layes.  
But mongst them all which did Loves honour  
rayse,

No word was heard of her that most it  
ought,

But she his precept proudly disobayes,  
And doth his ydle message set at nought.  
Therefore, O Love, unlesse she turne to thee  
Ere cuckow end, let her a rebell be.

## XX

In vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace,  
And doe myne humbled hart before her  
poure:

The whiles her foot she in my necke doth  
place,

And tread my life downe in the lowly floure.  
And yet the lyon, that is lord of power,  
And reigneth over every beast in field,  
In his most pride disdeigneth to deuoure  
The silly lambe that to his might doth yield.  
But she, more cruell and more salvage  
wyld,

Than either lyon or the lyonesse,  
Shames not to be with guiltlesse bloud de-  
fylde,

But taketh glory in her cruelnesse.  
Fayrer then fayrest, let none ever say  
That ye were blooded in a yeelded pray.

## XXI

Was it the worke of Nature or of Art,  
Which tempred so the feature of her face,  
That pride and meeknesse, mixt by equal  
part,

Doc both appeare t'adorne her beauties  
grace?

For with mild pleasance, which doth pride  
displace,

She to her love doth lookers eyes allure;  
And with sterne countenance back again  
doth chace

Their looser looks that stir up lustes im-  
pure.

With such strange termes her eyes she doth  
inure,

That with one looke she doth my life dis-  
may,  
And with another doth it streight recure:  
Her smile me drawes, her frowne me  
drives away.  
Thus doth she traine and teach me with her  
lookes:  
Such art of eyes I never read in bookes.

## XXII

This holy season, fit to fast and pray,  
Men to devotion ought to be inclynd:  
Therefore, I lykewise, on so holy day,  
For my sweet saynt some service fit will  
find.

Her temple fayre is built within my mind,  
In which her glorious ymage placed is,  
On which my thoughts doo day and night  
attend,  
Lyke sacred priests that never thinke  
amissee.

There I to her, as th' author of my blisse,  
Will builde an altar to appease her yre;  
And on the same my hart will sacrificise,  
Burning in flames of pure and chast desyre:  
The which vouchsafe, O goddesse, to accept,  
Amongst thy dearest reliicks to be kept.

## XXIII

Penelope, for her Uliesses sake,  
Deviz'd a web her woers to deceave,  
In which the worke that she all day did  
make,

The same at night she did againe unreave.  
Such subtile craft my damzell doth con-  
ceave,

Th' importune suit of my desire to shonne:  
For all that I in many dayes doo weave  
In one short houre I find by her undonne.  
So when I thinke to end that I begonne,  
I must begin and never bring to end:  
For with one looke she spils that long I  
sponne,

And with one word my whole years work  
doth rend.

Such labour like the spyders web I fynd,  
Whose fruitlesse worke is broken with least  
wynd.

## XXIV

When I behold that beauties wonderment,  
And rare perfection of each goodly part,  
Of Natures skill the onely complement,  
I honor and admire the Makers art.  
But when I feele the bitter balefull smart

Which her fayre eyes unwares doe worke  
in mee,

That death out of theyr shiny beames doe  
dart,

I thinke that I a new Pandora see;  
Whom all the gods in councell did agree,  
Into this sinfull world from heaven to send,  
That she to wicked men a scourge should  
bee,

For all their faults with which they did of-  
fend.

But since ye are my scourge, I will intreat  
That for my faults ye will me gently beat.

## XXV

How long shall this lyke dying lyfe endure,  
And know no end of her owne myserie,  
But wast and weare away in termes unsure,  
Twixt feare and hope depending doubtfully?  
Yet better were attonce to let me die,  
And shew the last ensample of your pride,  
Then to torment me thus with cruelty,  
To prove your powre, which I too wel have  
tride.

But yet if in your hardned brest ye hide  
A close intent at last to shew me grace,  
Then all the woes and wrecks which I abide  
As meanes of blisse I gladly wil embrace,  
And wish that more and greater they might  
bee,

That greater meede at last may turne to  
mee.

## XXVI

Sweet is the rose, but growes upon a brere;  
Sweet is the junipere, but sharpe his bough;  
Sweet is the eglantine, but pricketh nere;  
Sweet is the firbloom, but his braunches  
rough;

Sweet is the cypresse, but his rynd is tough;  
Sweet is the nut, but bitter is his pill;  
Sweet is the broome-flowre, but yet sowre  
enough;

And sweet is moly, but his root is ill.  
So every sweet with soure is tempred still,  
That maketh it be coveted the more:  
For easie things, that may be got at will,  
Most sorts of men doe set but little store.  
Why then should I accoumt of little paine,  
That endlesse pleasure shall unto me gaine?

## XXVII

Faire proud! now tell me, why should  
faire be proud,  
Sith all worlds glorie is but drosse uncleane,

And in the shade of death it selfe shall  
shroud,

How ever now thereof ye little weene?  
That goodly idoll, now so gay beseene,  
Shall doffe her fleshs borowd fayre attyre,  
And be forgot as it had never beene,  
That many now much worship and admire.  
Ne any then shall after it inquire,  
Ne any mention shall thereof remaine,  
But what this verse, that never shall expyre,  
Shall to you purchas with her thankles paine.  
Faïre, be no lenger proud of that shall per-  
ish,

But that which shall you make immortall  
cherish.

## XXVIII

The laurel leafe which you this day doe  
weare

Gives me great hope of your relenting  
mynd:

For since it is the badg which I doe beare,  
Ye, bearing it, doe seeme to me inclin.  
The powre thereof, which ofte in me I find,  
Let it lykewise your gentle brest inspire  
With sweet infusion, and put you in mind  
Of that proud mayd whom now those leaves  
attyre.

Proud Daphne, scorning Phæbus lovely  
fyre,

On the Thessalian shore from him did flie:  
For which the gods, in their revengefull  
yre,

Did her transforme into a laurell tree.  
Then fly no more, fayre love, from Phebus  
chace,

But in your brest his leafe and love embrace.

## XXIX

See how the stubborne damzell doth deprave  
My simple meaning with disdaynfull scorne,  
And by the bay which I unto her gave  
Accoumpts my self her captive quite for-  
lorne.

The bay (quoth she) is of the victours borne,  
Yielded them by the vanquisht as theyr  
meeds,

And they therewith doe poetes heads adorne,  
To sing the glory of their famous deedes.  
But sith she will the conquest challeng  
needs,

Let her accept me as her faithfull thrall,  
That her great triumph, which my skill  
exceeds,

I may in trump of fame blaze over all.

Then would I decke her head with glorious  
bayes,

And fill the world with her victorious  
praysse.

## XXX

My love is lyke to yse, and I to fyre;  
How comes it then that this her cold so  
great

Is not dissolv'd through my so hot desyre,  
But harder growes the more I her intreat?  
Or how comes it that my exceeding heat  
Is not delayd by her hart frosen cold,  
But that I burne much more in boyling  
sweat,

And feele my flames augmented manifold?  
What more miraculous thing may be told,  
That fire, which all things melts, should  
harden yse,

And yse, which is congeald with sencelesse  
cold,

Should kindle fyre by wonderful devyse?  
Such is the powre of love in gentle mind,  
That it can alter all the course of kynd.

## XXXI

Ah! why hath Nature to so hard a hart  
Given so goodly giftes of beauties grace,  
Whose pryde depraves each other better  
part,

And all those pretious ornaments deface?  
Sith to all other beastes of bloody race  
A dreadfull countenaunce she given hath,  
That with theyr terrour al the rest may chace,  
And warne to shun the daunger of theyr  
wrath.

But my proud one doth worke the greater  
scath,

Through sweet allurement of her lovely  
hew,

That she the better may in bloody bath  
Of such poore thralls her cruell hands  
embrew.

But did she know how ill these two accord,  
Such cruelty she would have soone abhord.

## XXXII

The paynefull smith with force of fervent  
heat

The hardest yron soone doth mollify;  
That with his heavy sledge he can it beat,  
And fashion to what he it list apply.

Yet cannot all these flames in which I fry  
Her hart, more harde then yron, soft a whit;  
Ne all the playnts and prayers with which I



Doe beat on th' andvyle of her stubberne  
wit:

But still, the more she fervent sees my fit,  
The more she frieseth in her wilfull pryde;  
And harder growes, the harder she is smit,  
With all the playnts which to her be ap-  
plyde.

What then remains but I to ashes burne,  
And she to stones at length all frozen turne ?

## XXXIII

Great wrong I doe, I can it not deny,  
To that most sacred empresse, my dear  
dred,

Not finishing her Queene of Faëry,  
That mote enlarge her living prayses, dead.  
But Lodwick, this of grace to me aread:  
Do ye not thinck th' accomplishment of it  
Sufficient worke for one mans simple head,  
All were it, as the rest, but rudely writ ?  
How then should I, without another wit,  
Thinck ever to endure so tædious toyle,  
Sins that this one is tost with troublous fit  
Of a proud love, that doth my spirite spoyle ?  
Cease then, till she vouchsafe to grawnt me  
rest,  
Or lend you me another living brest.

## XXXIV

Lyke as a ship, that through the ocean wyde  
By conduct of some star doth make her  
way,

Whenas a storme hath dimd her trusty  
guyde,

Out of her course doth wander far astray;  
So I, whose star, that wont with her bright  
ray

Me to direct, with cloudes is overcast,  
Doe wander now in darknesse and dismay,  
Through hidden perils round about me plast.  
Yet hope I well, that when this storme is  
past,

My Helice, the lodestar of my lyfe,  
Will shine again, and looke on me at last,  
With lovely light to cleare my cloudy grief.  
Till then I wander carefull comfortlesse,  
In secret sorrow and sad pensivenesse.

## XXXV

My hungry eyes, through greedy covetize  
Still to behold the object of their paine,  
With no contentment can themselves suffice,  
But having pine, and having not complaine.  
For lacking it, they cannot lyfe sustayne,  
And having it, they gaze on it the more:

In their amazement lyke Narcissus vaine,  
Whose eyes him starv'd: so plenty makes  
me poore.

Yet are mine eyes so filled with the store  
Of that faire sight, that nothing else they  
brooke,

But lothe the things which they did like  
before,

And can no more endure on them to looke.  
All this worlds glory seemeth vayne to  
me,

And all their showes but shadowes, saving  
she.

## XXXVI

Tell me, when shall these wearie woes have  
end,

Or shall their ruthlesse torment never cease,  
But al my dayes in pining languor spend,  
Without hope of aswagement or release ?

Is there no meanes for me to purchase peace,  
Or make agreement with her thrilling eyes:  
But that their cruelty doth still increace,  
And dayly more augment my miseryes ?

But when ye have shewed all extremities,  
Then thinke how litle glory ye have gayned  
By slaying him, whose lyfe though ye de-  
spyse,

Mote have your life in honour long main-  
tayned.

But by his death, which some perhaps will  
mone,

Ye shall condemued be of many a one.

## XXXVII

What guyle is this, that those her golden  
tresses

She doth attyre under a net of gold,  
And with sly skill so cunningly them dresses,  
That which is gold or heare may scarce be  
told ?

Is it that mens frayle eyes, which gaze too  
bold,

She may entangle in that golden snare,  
And being caught, may craftily enfold  
Theyr weaker harts, which are not wel  
aware ?

Take heed therefore, myne eyes, how ye  
doe stare

Henceforth too rashly on that guilefull  
net,

In which if ever ye entrapped are,  
Out of her bands ye by no meanes shall get.  
Fondnesse it were for any, being free,  
To covet fetters, though they golden bee.

## XXXVIII

Arion, when, through tempests cruel  
wracke,  
He forth was thrown into the greedy seas,  
Through the sweet musick which his harp  
did make

Allur'd a dolphin him from death to ease.  
But my rude musick, which was wont to  
please

Some dainty eares, cannot, with any skill,  
The dreadfull tempest of her wrath appease,  
Nor move the dolphin from her stubborne  
will;

But in her pride she dooth persever still,  
All carelesse how my life for her decayse:  
Yet with one word she can it save or spill.  
To spill were pittie, but to save were prayse.  
Chose rather to be prayd for dooing good,  
Then to be blam'd for spilling guiltlesse  
blood.

## XXXIX

Sweet smile, the daughter of the Queene  
of Love,

Expressing all thy mothers powrefull art,  
With which she wents to temper angry  
Jove,

When all the gods he threats with thun-  
dring dart:

Sweet is thy vertue, as thy selfe sweet art.  
For when on me thou shinedst late in  
sadsnesse,

A melting pleasance ran through every  
part,

And me revived with hart robbing glad-  
nesse:

Whylest rapt with joy resembling heavenly  
madnes,

My soule was ravisht quite, as in a traunce,  
And feeling thence no more her sorowes  
sadsnesse,

Fed on the fulnesse of that chearefull  
glauce.

More sweet than nectar, or ambrosiall meat,  
Seem'd every bit which thenceforth I did  
cat.

## XL

Mark when she smiles with amiable cheare,  
And tell me whereto can ye lyken it;  
When on each eyelid sweetly doe appeare  
An hundred Graces as in shade to sit.  
Lykest it seemeth, in my simple wit,  
Unto the fayre sunshine in somers day,  
That, when a dreadfull storme away is flit,

Through the broad world doth spread his  
goodly ray:

At sight whereof, each bird that sits on spray,  
And every beast that to his den was fled,  
Comes forth afresh out of their late dis-  
may,

And to the light lift up theyr drouping hed.  
So my storme beaten hart likewise is  
cheared

With that sunshine, when cloudy looks are  
cleared.

## XLI

Is it her nature, or is it her will,  
To be so cruell to an humbled foe ?  
If nature, then she may it mend with skill,  
If will, then she at will may will forgoe.  
But if her nature and her wil be so,  
That she will plague the man that loves  
her most,

And take delight t'encrease a wretches  
woe,

Then all her natures goodly gifts are lost;  
And that same glorious beauties ydle boast  
Is but a bayt such wretches to beguile,  
As, being long in her loves tempest tost,  
She meanes at last to make her piteous  
spoyle.

O fayrest fayre, let never it be named,  
That so fayre beauty was so fowly shamed.

## XLII

The love which me so cruelly tormenteth  
So pleasing is in my extreamest paine,  
That all the more my sorrow it augmenteth,  
The more I love and doe embrace my bane.  
Ne doe I wish (for wishing were but vaine)  
To be acquit fro my continuall smart,

But joy, her thrall for ever to remayne,  
And yield forpledge my poore captived hart;  
The which, that it from her may never  
start,

Let her, yf please her, bynd with adamant  
chayne,

And from all wandering loves, which mote  
pervart

His safe assurance, strongly it restrayne.  
Onely let her abstaine from cruelty,  
And doe me not before my time to dy.

## XLIII

Shall I then silent be, or shall I speake ?  
And if I speake, her wrath renew I shall:  
And if I silent be, my hart will breake,  
Or choked be with overflowing gall.

What tyranny is this, both my hart to  
thrall,  
And eke my tounge with proud restraint to  
tie;  
That nether I may speake nor thinke at all,  
But like a stupid stock in silence die !  
Yet I my hart with silence secretly  
Will teach to speak, and my just cause to  
plead,  
And eke mine eies, with meek humility,  
Love-learned letters to her eyes to read:  
Which her deep wit, that true harts thought  
can spel,  
Wil soone conceive, and learne to construe  
well.

## XLIV

When those renoumed noble peres of Greece  
Through stubborn pride amongst themselves  
did jar,  
Forgetfull of the famous golden fleece,  
Then Orpheus with his harp theyr strife did  
bar.  
But this continuall cruell civill warre,  
The which my selfe against my selfe doe  
make,  
Whilest my weak powres of passions war-  
reid arre,  
No skill can stint, nor reason can aslake.  
But when in hand my tunelesse harp I take,  
Then doe I more augment my foes despight,  
And grieve renew, and passions doe awake  
To battaile, fresh against my selfe to fight.  
Moungst whome the more I seeke to settle  
peace,  
The more I fynd their malice to increace.

## XLV

Leave, lady, in your glasse of christall  
clene  
Your goodly selfe for evermore to vew,  
And in my selfe, my inward selfe I meane,  
Most lively lyke behold your semblant  
trew.  
Within my hart, though hardly it can shew  
Thing so divine to vew of earthly eye,  
The fayre idea of your celestially hew  
And every part remaines immortally:  
And were it not that through your cruelty  
With sorrow dimmed and deformd it were,  
The goodly ymage of your visnomy  
Clearer then christall would therein appere.  
But if your selfe in me ye playne will see,  
Remove the cause by which your fayre  
beames darkned be.

## XLVI

When my abodes prefixed time is spent,  
My cruell fayre streight bids me wend my  
way:  
But then from heaven most hideous stormes  
are sent,  
As willing me against her will to stay.  
Whom then shall I, or heaven or her, obey ?  
The heavens know best what is the best for  
me:  
But as she will, whose will my life doth  
sway,  
My lower heaven, so it perforce must bee.  
But ye high hevens, that all this sorowe  
see,  
Sith all your tempests cannot hold me backe,  
Aswage your stormes, or else both you and  
she  
Will both together me too sorely wrack.  
Enough it is for one man to sustaine  
The stormes which she alone on me doth  
raine.

## XLVII

Trust not the treason of those smyling  
lookes,  
Untill ye have theyr guylefull traynes well  
tryde:  
For they are lyke but unto golden hookes,  
That from the foolish fish theyr bayts do  
hyde:  
So she with flattring smyles weake harts  
doth guyle  
Unto her love, and tempte to theyr decay;  
Whome being caught, she kills with cruell  
pryde,  
And feeds at pleasure on the wretched pray.  
Yet even whylst her bloody hands them  
slay,  
Her eyes looke lovely, and upon them  
smyle,  
That they take pleasure in her cruell play.  
And, dying, doe them selves of payne be-  
guyle.  
O mighty charm ! which makes men love  
theyr bane,  
And thinck they dy with pleasure, live with  
payne.

## XLVIII

Innocent paper, whom too cruell hand  
Did make the matter to avenge her yre,  
And ere she could thy cause wel under-  
stand,  
Did sacrificize unto the greedy fyre:



Well worthy thou to have found better  
hyre  
Then so bad end, for hereticks ordayned:  
Yet heresy nor treason didst conspire,  
But plead thy maisters cause, unjustly  
payned:  
Whom she, all carelesse of his grieve, con-  
strayned  
To utter forth the anguish of his hart:  
And would not heare, when he to her com-  
playned  
The piteous passion of his dying smart.  
Yet live for ever, though against her will,  
And speake her good, though she requite it  
ill.

## XLIX

Fayre cruell, why are ye so fierce and  
cruell?  
Is it because your eyes have powre to kill?  
Then know, that mercy is the Mighties  
jewell,  
And greater glory thinke to save then spill.  
But if it be your pleasure and proud will  
To shew the powre of your imperious eyes,  
Then not on him that never thought you ill,  
But bend your force against your enemyes.  
Let them feelee th' utmost of your cruelties,  
And kill with looks, as cockatrices doo:  
But him that at your footstoole humbled  
lies,  
With mercifull regard, give mercy too.  
Such mercy shal you make admyred to be;  
So shall you live by giving life to me.

## L

Long languishing in double malady,  
Of my harts wound and of my bodies greife,  
There came to me a leach, that would apply  
Fit medicines for my bodies best reliefe.  
Wayne man! (quod I) that hast but little  
prieve  
In deep discovery of the myndes disease,  
Is not the hart of all the body chiefe,  
And rules the members as it selfe doth  
please?  
Then with some cordialls seeke first to ap-  
pease  
The inward languour of my wounded hart,  
And then my body shall have shortly ease:  
But such sweet cordialls passe physitions art.  
Then, my lyfes leach, doe you your skill re-  
veale,  
And with one salve both hart and body  
heale.

## LI

Doe I not see that fayrest ymages  
Of hardest marble are of purpose made,  
For that they should endure through many  
ages,  
Ne let theyr famous moniments to fade?  
Why then doe I, untrainde in lovers trade,  
Her hardnes blame, which I should more  
commend?  
Sith never ought was excellent assayde,  
Which was not hard t' atchive and bring to  
end:  
Ne ought so hard, but he that would attend  
Mote soften it and to his will allure:  
So doe I hope her stubborne hart to bend,  
And that it then more stedfast will en-  
dure.  
Onely my paines wil be the more to get her:  
But having her, my joy wil be the greater.

## LII

So oft as homeward I from her depart,  
I go lyke one that, having lost the field,  
Is prisoner led away with heavy hart,  
Despoyle of warlike armes and knowen  
shield.  
So doe I now my selfe a prisoner yeeld  
To sorrow and to solitary paine:  
From presence of my dearest deare exylde,  
Longwhile alone in languor to remaine.  
There let no thought of joy, or pleasure  
vaine,  
Dare to approach, that may my solace breed;  
But sudden dumps, and dreary sad disdayne  
Of all worlds gladnesse, more my torment  
feed.  
So I her absens will my penance make,  
That of her presens I my meed may take.

## LIII

The panther, knowing that his spotted hyde  
Doth please all beasts, but that his looks  
them fray,  
Within a bush his dreadfull head doth hide,  
To let them gaze, whylest he on them may  
pray.  
Right so my cruell fayre with me doth  
play:  
For with the goodly semblant of her hew  
She doth allure me to mine owne decay,  
And then no mercy will unto me shew.  
Great shame it is, thing so divine in view,  
Made for to be the worlds most ornament,  
To make the bayte her gazers to embrew:  
Good shames to be to ill an instrument:

But mercy doth with beautie best agree,  
As in theyr Maker ye them best may see.

## LIV

Of this worlds theatre in which we stay,  
My love, lyke the spectator, ydly sits,  
Beholding me, that all the pageants play,  
Disguysing diversly my troubled wits.  
Sometimes I joy, when glad occasion fits,  
And mask in myrth lyke to a comedy:  
Soone after, when my joy to sorrow flits,  
I waile, and make my woes a tragedy.  
Yet she, beholding me with constant eye,  
Delights not in my merth, nor rues my  
sinart:  
But when I laugh, she mocks, and when I  
cry,  
She laughes, and hardens evermore her hart.  
What then can move her? If nor merth  
nor none,  
She is no woman, but a sencelesse stone.

## LV

So oft as I her beauty doe behold,  
And therewith doe her cruelty compare,  
I marvaile of what substance was the mould  
The which her made attonce so cruell faire.  
Not earth; for her high thoghts more  
heavenly are:  
Not water; for her love doth burne like  
fyre:  
Not ayre; for she is not so light or rare:  
Not fyre; for she doth friese with faint  
desire.  
Then needs another element inquire,  
Whereof she mote be made; that is the  
skye.  
For to the heaven her haughty looks aspire,  
And eke her mind is pure immortall hye.  
Then sith to heaven ye lykened are the best,  
Be lyke in mercy as in all the rest.

## LVI

Fayre ye be sure, but cruell and unkind,  
As is a tygre, that with greedinesse  
Hunts after bloud, when he by chance doth  
find  
A feeble beast, doth felly him oppresse.  
Fayre be ye sure, but proud and pittlesse,  
As is a storme, that all things doth pros-  
trate,  
Finding a tree alone all comfortlesse,  
Beats on it strongly, it to ruinate.  
Fayre be ye sure, but hard and obstinate,  
As is a rocke amidst the raging floods.

Gaynst which a ship, of succour desolate,  
Doth suffer wreck both of her selfe and  
goods.

That ship, that tree, and that same beast  
am I,  
Whom ye doe wreck, doe ruine, and de-  
stroy.

## LVII

Sweet warriour, when shall I have peace  
with you?  
High time it is this warre now ended were:  
Which I no lenger can endure to sue,  
Ne your incessant battry more to beare.  
So weake my powres, so sore my wounds  
appeare,  
That wonder is how I should live a jot,  
Seeing my hart through launched every  
where  
With thousand arrowes which your eies  
have shot:  
Yet shoot ye sharply still, and spare me  
not,  
But glory thinke to make these cruel  
stoures.  
Ye cruell one! what glory can be got,  
In slaying him that would live gladly  
yours?  
Make peace therefore, and graunt me timely  
grace,  
That al my wounds wil heale in little space.

## LVIII

*By her that is most assured to her selfe*  
Weake is th' assurance that weake flesh re-  
poseth  
In her owne powre, and scorneth others  
ayde;  
That soonest fals, when as she most sup-  
poseth  
Her selfe assurd, and is of nought affrayd.  
All flesh is frayle, and all her strength un-  
stayd,  
Like a vaine bubble blowen up with ayre:  
Devouring tyme and changeful chance have  
prayd  
Her glories pride, that none may it repayre.  
Ne none so rich or wise, so strong or fayre,  
But fayleth, trusting on his owne assurance:  
And he that standeth on the hyghest stayre  
Fals lowest: for on earth nought hath en-  
duraunce.  
Why then doe ye, proud fayre, misdeeme  
so farre,  
That to your selfe ye most assured arre?

## LIX

Thrise happie she that is so well assured  
 Unto her selfe, and settled so in hart,  
 That nether will for better be allured,  
 Ne feard with worse to any chauce to  
 start:

But, like a steddy ship, doth strongly part  
 The raging waves, and keepes her course  
 aright,

Ne ought for tempest doth from it depart,  
 Ne ought for fayrer weathers false delight.  
 Such selfe assurance need not feare the  
 spight

Of grudging foes, ne favour seek of friends:  
 But in the stay of her owne stedfast might,  
 Nether to one her selfe nor other bends.  
 Most happy she that most assured doth  
 rest;

But he most happy who such one loves best.

## LX

They that in course of heavenly spheares  
 are skild

To every planet point his sundry yeare,  
 In which her circles voyage is fulfild:  
 As Mars in three score yeares doth run his  
 spheare.

So since the winged god his planet cleare  
 Began in me to move, one yeare is spent:  
 The which doth longer unto me appeare,  
 Then al those fourty which my life outwent.  
 Then, by that count which lovers books in-  
 vent,

The spheare of Cupid fourty yeares con-  
 taines:

Which I have wasted in long languishment,  
 That seemd the longer for my greater  
 paines.

But let my loves fayre planet short her  
 wayes

This yeare ensuing, or else short my dayes.

## LXI

The glorious image of the Makers beautie,  
 My soverayne saynt, the idoll of my thought,  
 Dare not henceforth, above the bounds of  
 dewtie,

T' accuse of pride, or rashly blame for  
 ought.

For being, as she is, divinely wrought,  
 And of the brood of angels hevenly borne,  
 And with the crew of blessed saynts up-  
 brought,

Each of which did her with theyr guifts  
 adorne,

The bud of joy, the blossome of the morne,  
 The beame of light, whom mortal eyes  
 admyre,

What reason is it then but she should scorne  
 Base things, that to her love too bold aspire?  
 Such heavenly formes ought rather wor-  
 shipt be,

Then dare be lov'd by men of meane degree.

## LXII

The weary yeare his race now having run,  
 The new begins his compass course anew:  
 With shew of morning mylde he hath begun,  
 Betokening peace and plenty to ensew.

So let us, which this chaunge of weather  
 vew,

Chaunge eeke our mynds, and former lives  
 amend;

The old yeares sinnes forepast let us eschew,  
 And fly the faults with which we did offend.  
 Then shall the new yeares joy forth freshly  
 send

Into the glooming world his gladsome ray:  
 And all these stormes, which now his beauty  
 blend,

Shall turne to caulmes, and tymely cleare  
 away.

So likewise, love, cheare you your heavy  
 spright,

And chaunge old yeares annoy to new de-  
 light.

## LXIII

After long stormes and tempests sad assay,  
 Which hardly I endured heretofore,  
 In dread of death, and daungerous dismay,  
 With which my silly barke was tossed sore,  
 I doe at length descry the happy shore,  
 In which I hope ere long for to arryve:  
 Fayre soyle it seemes from far, and fraught  
 with store

Of all that deare and daynty is alyve.  
 Most happy he that can at last atchyve  
 The joyous safety of so sweet a rest;  
 Whose least delight sufficeth to deprive  
 Remembrance of all paines which him op-  
 prest.

All paines are nothing in respect of this,  
 All sorrowes short that gaine eternall blisse.

## LXIV

Comming to kisse her lyps, (such grace I  
 found)

Me seemd I smelt a gardin of sweet  
 flowres,



That dainty odours from them threw  
 around,  
 For damzels fit to decke their lovers bowres.  
 Her lips did smell lyke unto gillyflowers;  
 Her ruddy cheekes lyke unto roses red;  
 Her snowy browes lyke budded bellamoures;  
 Her lovely eyes lyke pincks but newly  
 spread;  
 Her goodly bosome lyke a strawberry bed;  
 Her neck lyke to a bounch of cullambynes;  
 Her brest lyke lillyes, ere they leaves be  
 shed;  
 Her nipples lyke yong blossomd jessemynes.  
 Such fragrant flowres doe give most odor-  
 ous smell,  
 But her sweet odour did them all excell.

## LXV

The doubt which ye misdeeme, fayre love,  
 is vaine,  
 That fondly feare to loose your liberty,  
 When loosing one, two liberties ye gayne,  
 And make him bond that bondage earst dyd  
 fly.  
 Sweet be the bands the which true love doth  
 tye,  
 Without constraynt or dread of any ill:  
 The gentle birde feeles no captivity  
 Within her cage, but singes and feeds her  
 fill.  
 There Pride dare not approch, nor Discord  
 spill  
 The league twixt them that loyal love hath  
 bound:  
 But simple Truth and mutuall Good Will  
 Seekes with sweet peace to salve each  
 others wound:  
 There Fayth doth fearlesse dwell in brasen  
 towre,  
 And spotlesse Pleasure builds her sacred  
 bowre.

## LXVI

To all those happy blessings which ye have,  
 With plenteous hand by heaven upon you  
 thrown,  
 This one disparagement they to you gave,  
 That ye your love lent to so meane a one.  
 Yee, whose high worths surpassing paragon  
 Could not on earth have found one fit for  
 mate,  
 Ne but in heaven matchable to none,  
 Why did ye stoup unto so lowly state?  
 But ye thereby much greater glory gate,  
 Then had ye sorted with a princes pere:

For now your light doth more it selfe dilate,  
 And in my darknesse greater doth appeare.  
 Yet since your light hath once enlumind me,  
 With my reflex yours shall encreased be.

## LXVII

Lyke as a huntsman, after weary chace,  
 Seeing the game from him escapt away,  
 Sits downe to rest him in some shady place,  
 With panting hounds beguiled of their pray:  
 So, after long pursuit and vaine assay,  
 When I all weary had the chace forsooke,  
 The gentle deare returnd the selfe-same  
 way,  
 Thinking to quench her thirst at the next  
 brooke.  
 There she, beholding me with mylder looke,  
 Sought not to fly, but fearlesse still did  
 bide:  
 Till I in hand her yet halfe trembling tooke,  
 And with her owne goodwill hir fyrmely  
 tyde.  
 Strange thing, me seemd, to see a beast  
 so wyld,  
 So goodly wonne, with her owne will beguyld.

## LXVIII

Most glorious Lord of lyfe, that on this  
 day  
 Didst make thy triumph over death and sin,  
 And having harrowd hell, didst bring away  
 Captivity thence captive, us to win:  
 This joyous day, deare Lord, with joy begin,  
 And grant that we, for whom thou diddest  
 dye,  
 Being with thy deare blood clene washt  
 from sin,  
 May live for ever in felicity:  
 And that thy love we weighing worthily,  
 May likewise love thee for the same againe;  
 And for thy sake, that all lyke deare didst  
 buy,  
 With love may one another entertayne.  
 So let us love, deare love, lyke as we ought:  
 Love is the lesson which the Lord us taught.

## LXIX

The famous warriors of the anticke world  
 Used trophees to erect in stately wize,  
 In which they would the records have enroll  
 Of theyr great deeds and valarous emprise.  
 What trophée then shall I most fit devise,  
 In which I may record the memory  
 Of my loves conquest, peerelesse beauties  
 prise,

Adorn'd with honour, love, and chastity ?  
 Even this verse, vovd to eternity,  
 Shall be thereof immortall monument,  
 And tell her prayse to all posterity,  
 That may admire such worlds rare wonder-  
 ment;  
 The happy purchase of my glorious spoile,  
 Gotten at last with labour and long toyle.

## LXX

Fresh Spring, the herald of loves mighty  
 king,  
 In whose cote-armour richly are displayd  
 All sorts of flowers the which on earth do  
 spring,  
 In goodly colours gloriously arrayd,  
 Goe to my love, where she is carelesse layd,  
 Yet in her winters bowre, not well awake;  
 Tell her the joyous time wil not be staid,  
 Unlesse she doe him by the forelock take:  
 Bid her therefore her selfe soone ready  
 make,  
 To wayt on Love amongst his lovely crew,  
 Where every one that misseth then her make  
 Shall be by him amearst with penance dew.  
 Make hast therefore, sweet love, whilst it  
 is prime;  
 For none can call againe the passed time.

## LXXI

I joy to see how, in your drawn work,  
 Your selfe unto the bee ye doe compare,  
 And me unto the spyder, that doth lurke  
 In close awayt to catch her unaware.  
 Right so your selfe were caught in cunning  
 snare  
 Of a deare foe, and thralld to his love:  
 In whose streight bands ye now captived are  
 So firmly, that ye never may remove.  
 But as your worke is woven all about  
 With woodbynd flowers and fragrant eglan-  
 tine,  
 So sweet your prison you in time shall  
 prove,  
 With many deare delights bedecked fyne:  
 And all thensforth eternall peace shall see  
 Betweene the spyder and the gentle bee.

## LXXII

Oft when my spirit doth spred her bolder  
 winges,  
 In mind to mount up to the purest sky,  
 It down is weighd with thought of earthly  
 things,  
 And clogd with burden of mortality:

Where, when that soverayne beauty it doth  
 spy,  
 Resembling heavens glory in her light,  
 Drawne with sweet pleasures bayt, it back  
 doth fly,  
 And unto heaven forgets her former flight.  
 There my fraile fancy, fed with full delight,  
 Doth bath in blisse, and mantleth most at  
 ease;  
 Ne thinks of other heaven, but how it might  
 Her harts desire with most contentment  
 please.

Hart need not wish none other happinesse,  
 But here on earth to have such hevens blisse.

## LXXIII

Being my selfe captived here in care,  
 My hart, whom none with servile bands can  
 tye,  
 But the fayre tresses of your golden hayre,  
 Breaking his prison, forth to you doth fly.  
 Like as a byrd, that in ones hand doth spy  
 Desired food, to it doth make his flight,  
 Even so my hart, that wont on your fayre  
 eye  
 To feed his fill, flies backe unto your sight.  
 Doe you him take, and in your bosome  
 bright  
 Gently encage, that he may be your thrall:  
 Perhaps he there may learne, with rare de-  
 light,  
 To sing your name and prayses over all,  
 That it hereafter may you not repent,  
 Him lodging in your bosome to have lent.

## LXXIV

Most happy letters! fram'd by skilfull  
 trade,  
 With which that happy name was first de-  
 synd,  
 The which three times thrise happy hath me  
 made,  
 With guifts of body, fortune, and of mind.  
 The first my being to me gave by kind,  
 From mothers womb deriv'd by dew de-  
 scent:  
 The second is my soveraigne Queene most  
 kind,  
 That honour and large riches to me lent:  
 The third, my love, my lives last ornament,  
 By whom my spirit out of dust was rayseed,  
 To speake her prayse and glory excellent,  
 Of all alive most worthy to be prayseed.  
 Ye three Elizabeths, for ever live,  
 That three such graces did unto me give.

## LXXV

One day I wrote her name upon the strand,  
But came the waves and washed it away:  
Agayne I wrote it with a second hand,  
But came the tyde, and made my paynes  
his pray.

Wayne man, sayd she, that doest in vaine  
assay

A mortall thing so to immortalize !  
For I my selve shall lyke to this decay,  
And cek my name bee wyped out lykewize.  
Not so (quod I) let baser things devize  
To dy in dust, but you shall live by fame:  
My verse your vertues rare shall eternize,  
And in the hevens wryte your glorious  
name;

Where, whenas death shall all the world  
subdew,

Our love shall live, and later life renew.

## LXXVI

Fayre bosome, fraught with vertues richest  
tresure,

The neast of love, the lodging of delight,  
The bowre of blisse, the paradise of plea-  
sure,

The sacred harbour of that heavenly spright;  
How was I ravisht with your lovely sight,  
And my frayle thoughts too rashly led  
astray !

Whiles diving deepe through amorous in-  
sight,

On the sweet spoyle of beautie they did  
pray,

And twixt her paps, like early fruit in May,  
Whose harvest seemd to hasten now apace,  
They loosely did theyr wanton winges dis-  
play,

And there to rest themselves did boldly  
place.

Sweet thoughts, I envy your so happy  
rest,

Which oft I wisht, yet never was so blest.

## LXXVII

Was it a dreame, or did I see it playne ?

A goodly table of pure yvory,

All spred with juncats fit to entertayne

The greatest prince with pompous roialty:

Mongst which, there in a silver dish did ly

Twoo golden apples of unvaled price,

Far passing those which Hercules came by,

Or those which Atalanta did entice;

Exceeding sweet, yet voyd of sinfull vice;

That many sought, yet none could ever taste;

Sweet fruit of pleasure, brought from Para-  
dice

By Love himselfe, and in his garden plaste.  
Her brest that table was, so richly spredd;  
My thoughts the guests, which would there-  
on have fedd.

## LXXVIII

Lackying my love, I go from place to place,  
Lyke a young fawne that late hath lost the  
hynd,

And seeke each where, where last I sawe  
her face,

Whose ymage yet I carry fresh in myud.

I seeke the fields with her late footing synd,  
I seeke her bowre with her late presence

deckt,

Yet nor in field nor bowre I her can fynd;

Yet field and bowre are full of her aspect.

But when myne eyes I therunto direct,

They ydly back retorne to me agayne,

And when I hope to see theyr trew object,

I fynd my selfe but fed with fancies vayne.

Ceasse then, myne eyes, to seeke her selfe  
to see,

And let my thoughts behold her selfe in  
mee.

## LXXIX

Men call you fayre, and you doe credit it,

For that your selfe ye dayly such doe see:

But the trew fayre, that is the gentle wit

And vertuous mind, is much more prayd  
of me.

For all the rest, how ever fayre it be,

Shall turne to nought and loose that glori-  
ous hew:

But onely that is permanent, and free

From frayle corruption, that doth flesh  
ensew.

That is true beautie: that doth argue you

To be divine, and borne of heavenly seed,

Deriv'd from that fayre Spirit from whom  
al true

And perfect beauty did at first proceed.

He onely fayre, and what he fayre hath  
made;

All other fayre, lyke flowres, untymely  
fade.

## LXXX

After so lough a race as I have run

Through Faery Land, which those six books  
compile,

Give leave to rest me, being halfe fordonne,



And gather to my selfe new breath awhile.  
Then, as a steed refreshed after toyle,  
Out of my prison I will breake anew:  
And stoutly will that second worke assoyle,  
With strong endeavour and attention dew.  
Till then give leave to me, in pleasant mew  
To sport my muse, and sing my loves sweet  
praise:

The contemplation of whose heavenly hew  
My spirit to an higher pitch will rayse.  
But let her prayes yet be low and meane,  
Fit for the handmayd of the Faery Queene.

## LXXXI

Fayre is my love, when her fayre golden  
heares

With the loose wynd ye waving chance to  
marke:

Fayre, when the rose in her red checkes ap-  
peares,

Or in her eyes the fyre of love does sparke:  
Fayre, when her brest, lyke a rich laden  
barke

With pretious merchandize, she forth doth  
lay:

Fayre, when that cloud of pryde, which oft  
doth dark

Her goodly light, with smiles she drives  
away.

But fayrest she, when so she doth display  
The gate with pearles and rubyes richly  
dight,

Throgh which her words so wise do make  
their way,

To beare the message of her gentle spright.  
The rest be works of Natures wonderment,  
But this the worke of harts astonishment.

## LXXXII

Joy of my life, full oft for loving you  
I blesse my lot, that was so lucky placed:  
But then the more your owne mishap I rew,  
That are so much by so meane love embased.  
For had the equall hevns so much you  
graced

In this as in the rest, ye mote invent  
Som hevenly wit, whose verse could have en-  
chased

Your glorious name in golden moniment.  
But since ye deignd so goodly to relent  
To me your thrall, in whom is little worth,  
That little that I am shall all be spent  
In setting your immortall prayes forth:  
Whose lofty argument, uplifting me,  
Shall lift you up unto an high degree.

## LXXXIII

Let not one sparke of filthy lustfull fyre  
Breake out, that may her sacred peace  
molest;

Ne one light glance of sensuall desyre  
Attempt to work her gentle mindes unrest:  
But pure affections bred in spotlesse brest,  
And modest thoughts breathd from wel  
tempred sprites,

Goe visit her in her chaste bowre of rest,  
Accompanyde with angelick delightes.

There fill your selfe with those most joyous  
sights,

The which my selfe could never yet attayne:  
But speake no word to her of these sad  
plights,

Which her too constant stiffenesse doth con-  
strayn.

Onely behold her rare perfection,  
And blesse your fortunes fayre election.

## LXXXIV

The world, that cannot deeme of worthy  
things,

When I doe praise her, say I doe but flatter:  
So does the cuckow, when the mavis sings,  
Begin his witlesse note apace to clatter.

But they that skill not of so heavenly mat-  
ter,

All that they know not, envy or admyre:  
Rather then envy, let them wonder at her,  
But not to deeme of her desert aspyre.

Deepe in the closet of my parts entyre,  
Her worth is written with a golden quill:  
That me with heavenly fury doth inspire,  
And my glad mouth with her sweet prayes  
fill:

Which when as Fame in her shrill trump  
shal thunder,

Let the world chose to envy or to wonder.

## LXXXV

Venemous tounge, tipt with vile adders sting,  
Of that selfe kynd with which the Furies  
fell

Theyr snaky heads doe combe, from which  
a spring

Of poysoned words and spitefull speeches  
well,

Let all the plagues and horrid paines of  
hell

Upon thee fall for thine accursed hyre,  
That with false forged lyes, which thou didst  
tel,

In my true love did stirre up coles of yre;

The sparkes whereof let kindle thine own  
 fyre,  
 And catching hold on thine own wicked hed,  
 Consume thee quite, that didst with guile  
 conspire  
 In my sweet peace such breaches to have  
 bred.  
 Shame be thy meed, and mischief thy re-  
 ward,  
 Due to thy selfe, that it for me prepard.

## LXXXVI

Since I did leave the presence of my love,  
 Many long weary dayes I have outworne,  
 And many nights, that slowly seemd to move  
 Theyr sad protract from evening untill  
 morne.

For when as day the heaven doth adorne,  
 I wish that night the noyous day would end:  
 And when as night hath us of light forlorne,  
 I wish that day would shortly reascend.  
 Thus I the time with expectation spend,  
 And faine my grieve with chaunges to be-  
 guile,

That further seemes his terme still to extend,  
 I maketh every minute seem a myle.  
 So sorrow still doth seeme too long to last;  
 But joyous houres doo fly away too fast.

## LXXXVII

Since I have lackt the comfort of that light,  
 The which was wont to lead my thoughts  
 astray,

I wander as in darknesse of the night,  
 Affrayd of every dangers least dismay.  
 Ne ought I see, though in the clearest day,  
 When others gaze upon theyr shadowes  
 vayne,

But th' onely image of that heavenly ray,  
 Whereof some glance doth in mine eie re-  
 mayne.

Of which beholding the idæa playne,  
 Through contemplation of my purest part,  
 With light thereof I doe my selfe sustayne,  
 And thereon feed my love-affamisht hart.  
 But with such brightnesse whylest I fill my  
 mind,

I starve my body, and mine eyes doe blynd.

## LXXXVIII

Lyke as the culver on the bared bough  
 Sits mourning for the absence of her mate,  
 And in her songs sends many a wishfull vow  
 For his returne, that seemes to linger late:  
 So I alone, now left disconsolate,

Mourne to my selfe the absence of my love,  
 And wandring here and there all desolate,  
 Seek with my playnts to match that mourn-  
 ful dove:

Ne joy of ought that under heaven doth  
 hove

Can comfort me, but her owne joyous sight,  
 Whose sweet aspect both god and man can  
 move,

In her unspotted pleasauns to delight.  
 Dark is my day, whyles her fayre light I  
 mis,

And dead my life that wants such lively blis.

## I

In youth, before I waxed old,  
 The blynd boy, Venus baby,  
 For want of cunning made me bold,  
 In bitter hyve to grope for honny:  
 But when he saw me stung and cry,  
 He tooke his wings and away did fly.

## II

As Diane hunted on a day,  
 She chaunst to come where Cupid lay,

His quiver by his head:  
 One of his shafts she stole away,  
 And one of hers did close convey

Into the others stead:  
 With that Love wounded my loves hart,  
 But Diane beasts with Cupids dart.

## III

I SAW, in secret to my dame  
 How little Cupid humbly came,  
 And sayd to her 'All hayle, my mother!'  
 But when he saw me laugh, for shame  
 His face with bashfull blood did flame,  
 Not knowing Venus from the other.  
 'Then, never blush, Cupid,' quoth I,  
 'For many have err'd in this beauty.'

## IV

UPON a day, as Love lay sweetly slumbring,  
 All in his mothers lap,

A gentle bee, with his loud trumpet  
 murm'ring,

About him flew by hap.  
 Whereof when he was wakened with the  
 noyse,

And saw the beast so small:  
 'Whats this,' quoth he, 'that gives so great  
 a voyce,

That wakens men withall?'

In angry wize he flyes about,  
And threatens all with corage stout. 10

To whom his mother closely smiling sayd,  
Twixt earnest and twixt game:  
'See, thou thy selfe likewise art lyttle made,  
If thou regard the same.  
And yet thou suffrest neyther gods in  
sky,  
Nor men in earth to rest;  
But when thou art disposed cruelly,  
Theyr sleepe thou doost molest.  
Then eyther change thy cruelty,  
Or give lyke leave unto the fly.' 20

Nathlesse, the cruell boy, not so content,  
Would needs the fly pursue,  
And in his hand, with heedlesse hardiment,  
Him caught for to subdue.  
But when on it he hasty hand did lay,  
The bee him stung therefore:  
'Now out, alasse,' he cryde, 'and welaway!  
I wounded am full sore:  
The fly, that I so much did scorne,  
Hath hurt me with his little horne.' 30

Unto his mother straight he weeping came,  
And of his grieve complayned:  
Who could not chose but laugh at his fond  
game,  
Though sad to see him pained.  
'Think now,' quod she, 'my sonne, how  
great the smart  
Of those whom thou dost wound:  
Full many thou hast pricked to the hart,  
That pitty never found:  
Therefore, henceforth some pitty take,  
When thou doest spoyle of lovers  
make.' 40

She tooke him streight full pitiously lament-  
ing,  
And wrapt him in her smock:  
She wrapt him softly, all the while repent-  
ing  
That he the fly did mock.  
She drest his wound, and it embaulmed wel  
With salve of soveraigne might:  
And then she bath'd him in a dainty well,  
The well of deare delight.  
Who would not oft be stung as this,  
To be so bath'd in Venus blis? 50

The wanton boy was shortly wel recured  
Of that his malady:

But he, soone after, fresh againe enured  
His former cruelty.  
And since that time he wounded hath my  
selfe  
With his sharpe dart of love:  
And now forgets the cruell carelesse elfe  
His mothers heast to prove.  
So now I languish, till he please  
My pining anguish to appease. 60

## EPITHALAMION

YE learned sisters, which have oftentimes  
Beene to me ayding, others to adorne,  
Whom ye thought worthy of your gracefull  
rymes,  
That even the greatest did not greatly  
scorne  
To heare theyr names sung in your simple  
layes,  
But joyed in theyr praise;  
And when ye list your owne mishaps to  
mournue,  
Which death, or love, or fortunes wreck did  
rayse,  
Your string could soone to sadder tenor  
turne,  
And teach the woods and waters to lament  
Your dolefull dreriment: 11  
Now lay those sorrowfull complaints aside,  
And having all your heads with girland  
crownd,  
Helpe me mine owne loves prayses to re-  
sound;  
Ne let the same of any be envie:  
So Orpheus did for his owne bride:  
So I unto my selfe alone will sing;  
The woods shall to me answer, and my  
eccho ring.

Early, before the worlds light giving lampe  
His golden beame upon the hils doth spred,  
Having disperst the nights unchearefull  
dampe, 21  
Doe ye awake, and, with fresh lustyhed,  
Go to the bowre of my beloved love,  
My truest turtle dove:  
Bid her awake; for Hymen is awake,  
And long since ready forth his maske to  
move,  
With his bright tead that flames with many  
a flake,  
And many a bachelor to waite on him,  
In theyr fresh garments trim.



Bid her awake therefore, and soone her  
dight, 30  
For lo! the wished day is come at last,  
That shall, for al the paynes and sorrowes  
past,  
Pay to her usury of long delight:  
And whylest she doth her dight,  
Doe ye to her of joy and solace sing,  
That all the woods may answer, and your  
eccho ring.

Bring with you all the nymphes that you  
can heare,  
Both of the rivers and the forrests greene,  
And of the sea that neighbours to her neare,  
Al with gay girlands goodly wel beseene. 40  
And let them also with them bring in hand  
Another gay girland,  
For my fayre love, of lillyes and of roses,  
Bound truelove wize with a blew silke  
riband.  
And let them make great store of bridale  
poses,  
And let them eeke bring store of other  
flowers,  
To deck the bridale bowers.  
And let the ground whereas her foot shall  
tread,  
For feare the stones her tender foot should  
wrong,  
Be strewed with fragrant flowers all along,  
And diaped lyke the discolored mead. 51  
Which done, doc at her chamber dore awayt,  
For she will waken strayt;  
The whiles doe ye this song unto her sing,  
The woods shall to you answer, and your  
eccho ring.

Ye nymphes of Mulla, which with carefull  
heed  
The silver scaly trouts doe tend full well,  
And greedy pikes which use therein to feed,  
(Those troutsand pikes all others doo excell)  
And ye likewise which keepe the rushy lake,  
Where none doo fishes take, 61  
Bynd up the locks the which hang scatterd  
light,  
And in his waters, which your mirror make,  
Behold your faces as the christall bright,  
That when you come whereas my love doth  
lie,  
No blemish she may spie.  
And eke ye lightfoot mayds which keepe the  
dere  
That on the hoary mountayne use to towre,

And the wylde wolves, which seeke them  
to deuoure,  
With your steele darts doo chace from  
comming neer, 70  
Be also present heere,  
To helpe to decke her, and to help to sing,  
That all the woods may answer, and your  
eccho ring.

Wake now, my love, awake! for it is time:  
The rosy Morne long since left Tithones bed,  
All ready to her silver coche to clyme,  
And Phoebus gins to shew his glorious hed.  
Hark how the cheerefull birds do chaunt  
theyr laies,  
And carroll of loves praise!  
The merry larke hir mattins sings aloft, 80  
The thrush replyes, the mavis descant  
playes,  
The ouzell shrills, the ruddock warbles soft,  
So goodly all agree, with sweet consent,  
To this dayes merriment.  
Ah! my deere love, why doe ye sleepe thus  
long,  
When meeter were that ye should now  
awake,  
T'awayt the comming of your joyous make,  
And hearken to the birds love-learned song,  
The deawy leaves among?  
For they of joy and pleasance to you sing,  
That all the woods them answer, and theyr  
eccho ring. 91

My love is now awake out of her dreame,  
And her fayre eyes, like stars that dimmed  
were  
With darksome cloud, now shew theyr good-  
ly beams  
More bright then Hesperus his head doth  
rere.  
Come now, ye damzels, daughters of delight,  
Helpe quickly her to dight.  
But first come ye, fayre Houres, which  
were begot,  
In Joves sweet paradise, of Day and Night,  
Which doe the seasons of the year allot, 100  
And al that ever in this world is fayre  
Do make and still repayre.  
And ye three handmayds of the Cyprian  
Queene,  
The which doe still adorne her beauties  
pride,  
Helpe to adorne my beautifullest bride:  
And as ye her array, still throw betweene  
Some graces to be seene:

And as ye use to Venus, to her sing,  
The whiles the woods shal answer, and your  
eccho ring.

Now is my love all ready forth to come: <sup>110</sup>  
Let all the virgins therefore well awayt,  
And ye fresh boyes, that tend upon her  
groome,  
Prepare your selves, for he is comming  
strayt.

Set all your things in seemely good aray,  
Fit for so joyfull day,  
The joyfult day that ever sunne did see.  
Faire Sun, shew forth thy favourable ray,  
And let thy lifull heat not fervent be,  
For feare of burning her sunshyny face,  
Her beauty to disgrace. <sup>120</sup>  
O fayrest Phœbus, father of the Muse,  
If ever I did honour thee aright,  
Or sing the thing that mote thy mind delight,  
Doe not thy servants simple boone refuse,  
But let this day, let this one day be myne,  
Let all the rest be thine.  
Then I thy soverayne prayses loud wil sing,  
That all the woods shal answer, and theyr  
eccho ring.

Harke how the minstrels gin to shrill aloud  
Their merry musick that resounds from far,  
The pipe, the tabor, and the trembling crond,  
That well agree withouten breach or jar. <sup>132</sup>  
But most of all the damzels doe delite,  
When they their tymbrels smyte,  
And thereunto doe daunce and carrol sweet,  
That all the sences they doe ravish quite,  
The whyles the boyes run up and downe the  
street,  
Crying aloud with strong confused noyce,  
As if it were one voyce.  
'Hymen, Iō Hymen, Hymen,' they do shout,  
That even to the heavens theyr shouting  
shrill <sup>141</sup>  
Doth reach, and all the firmament doth fill;  
To which the people, standing all about,  
As in approvance doe thereto applaud,  
And loud advaunce her laud,  
And evermore they 'Hymen, Hymen' sing,  
That al the woods them answer, and theyr  
eccho ring.

Loe! where she comes along with portly  
pace,  
Lyke Phœbe, from her chamber of the east,  
Arysing forth to run her mighty race, <sup>150</sup>  
Clad all in white, that seemes a virgin best.

So well it her beseemes, that ye would weene  
Some angell she had beene.  
Her long loose yellow locks lyke golden  
wyre,  
Sprinckled with perle, and perling flowres  
atweene,  
Doe lyke a golden mautle her attyre,  
And being crowned with a girland greene,  
Seeme lyke some mayden queene.  
Her modest eyes, abashed to behold  
So many gazers as on her do stare, <sup>160</sup>  
Upon the lowly ground affixed are;  
Ne dare lift up her countenance too bold,  
But blush to heare her prayses sung so loud,  
So farre from being proud.  
Nathlesse doe ye still loud her prayses sing,  
That all the woods may answer, and your  
eccho ring.

Tell me, ye merchants daughters, did ye see  
So fayre a creature in your towne before,  
So sweet, so lovely, and so mild as she,  
Adorn'd with beautyes grace and vertues  
store? <sup>170</sup>  
Her goodly eyes lyke saphyres shining  
bright,  
Her forehead yvory white,  
Her cheekes lyke apples which the sun hath  
rudded,  
Her lips lyke cherries charming men to  
byte,  
Her brest like to a bowle of creame uncrud-  
ded,  
Her paps lyke lyllyes budded,  
Her snowie necke lyke to a marble towre,  
And all her body like a pallace fayre,  
Ascending uppe, with many a stately stayre,  
To honors seat and chastities sweet bowre.  
Why stand ye still, ye virgins, in amaze, <sup>181</sup>  
Upon her so to gaze,  
Whiles ye forget your former lay to sing,  
To which the woods did answer, and your  
eccho ring?

But if ye saw that which no eyes can see,  
The inward beauty of her lively spright,  
Garnisht with heavenly guifts of high de-  
gree,  
Much more then would ye wonder at that  
sight,  
And stand astonisht lyke to those which  
red  
Medusaes mazeful hed. <sup>190</sup>  
There dwels sweet Love, and constant Chas-  
tity,

Unspotted Fayth, and comely Womanhood,  
 Regard of Honour, and mild Modesty;  
 There Vertue raynes as queene in royal  
 throne,

And giveth lawes alone,  
 The which the base affections doe obay,  
 And yeeld theyr services unto her will;  
 Ne thought of thing uncomely ever may  
 Thereto approach to tempt her mind to ill.  
 Had ye once seene these her celestial threa-  
 sures, 200

And unrevealed pleasures,  
 Then would ye wonder, and her prayses sing,  
 That al the woods should answer, and your  
 echo ring.

Open the temple gates unto my love,  
 Open them wide that she may enter in,  
 And all the postes adorne as doth behove,  
 And all the pillours deck with girlands trim,  
 For to receyve this saynt with honour dew,  
 That commeth in to you. 209

With trembling steps and humble reverence,  
 She commeth in before th' Almightyes vew:  
 Of her, ye virgins, learne obedience,  
 When so ye come into those holy places,  
 To humble your proud faces.  
 Bring her up to th' high altar, that she may  
 The sacred ceremonies there partake,  
 The which do endlesse matrimony make;  
 And let the roring organs loudly play  
 The praises of the Lord in lively notes,  
 The whiles with hollow throates 220  
 The choristers the joyous antheme sing,  
 That al the woods may answeare, and their  
 eccho ring.

Behold, whiles she before the altar stands,  
 Hearing the holy priest that to her speakes,  
 And blesseth her with his two happy hands,  
 How the red roses flush up in her cheekes,  
 And the pure snow with goodly vermill  
 stayne,

Like crimsin dyde in grayne:  
 That even th' angels, which continually  
 About the sacred altare doe remaine, 230  
 Forget their service and about her fly,  
 Ofte peeping in her face, that seemes more  
 fayre,

The more they on it stare.  
 But her sad eyes, still fastened on the  
 ground,

Are governed with goodly modesty,  
 That suffers not one looke to glaunce awry,  
 Which may let in a little thought unsound.

Why blush ye, love, to give to me your hand,  
 The pledge of all our band?  
 Sing, ye sweet angels, Alleluya sing, 240  
 That all the woods may answeare, and your  
 eccho ring.

Now al is done; bring home the bride againe,  
 Bring home the triumph of our victory,  
 Bring home with you the glory of her gaine,  
 With joyance bring her and with jollity.  
 Never had man more joyfull day then this,  
 Whom heaven would heape with blis.  
 Make feast therefore now all this live long  
 day;

This day for ever to me holy is;  
 Poure out the wine without restraint or stay,  
 Poure not by cups, but by the belly full, 251  
 Poure out to all that wull,  
 And sprinkle all the postes and wals with  
 wine,  
 That they may sweat, and drunken be with-  
 all.

Crowne ye God Bacchus with a coronall,  
 And Hymen also crowne with wreathes of  
 vine;

And let the Graces daunce unto the rest,  
 For they can doo it best:  
 The whiles the maydens doe theyr carroll  
 sing,  
 To which the woods shal answer, and theyr  
 eccho ring. 260

Ring ye the bells, ye yong men of the towne,  
 And leave your wonted labors for this day:  
 This day is holy; doe ye write it downe,  
 That ye for ever it remember may.  
 This day the sunne is in his chiefest hight,  
 With Barnaby the bright,  
 From whence declining daily by degrees,  
 He somewhat loseth of his heat and light,  
 When once the Crab behind his back he sees.  
 But for this time it ill ordained was, 270  
 To chose the longest day in all the yeare,  
 And shortest night, when longest fitter  
 weare:

Yet never day so long, but late would passe.  
 Ring ye the bells, to make it weare away,  
 And bonefiers make all day,  
 And daunce about them, and about them  
 sing:

That all the woods may answer, and your  
 eccho ring.

Ah! when will this long weary day have end,  
 And lende me leave to come unto my love?



How slowly do the houres theyr numbers  
spend! 280

How slowly does sad Time his feathers  
move!

Hast thee, O fayrest planet, to thy home  
Within the westerne fome:

Thy tyred steedes long since have need of  
rest.

Long though it be, at last I see it gloome,  
And the bright evening star with golden  
creast

Appeare out of the east.

Fayre childe of beauty, glorious lampe of  
love,

That all the host of heaven in rankes deost  
lead,

And guydest lovers through the nightes  
dread, 290

How chearefully thou lookest from above,  
And seemst to laugh atweene thy twin-  
kling light,

As joying in the sight

Of these glad many, which for joy doe sing,  
That all the woods them answer, and their  
echo ring!

Now cease, ye damsels, your delights fore-  
past;

Enough is it that all the day was youres:

Now day is doen, and night is nighing fast:

Now bring the bryde into the brydall  
boures.

The night is come, now soone her disaray, 300  
And in her bed her lay;

Lay her in lillies and in violets,

And silken courtains over her display,

And odour'd sheetes, and Arras coverlets.

Behold how goodly my faire love does ly,  
In proud humility!

Like unto Maia, when as Jove her tooke

In Tempe, lying on the flowry gras,

Twixt sleepe and wake, after she weary was  
With bathing in the Acidalian brooke. 310

Now it is night, ye damsels may be gon,

And leave my love alone,

And leave likewise your former lay to sing:

The woods no more shal answere, nor your  
echo ring.

Now welcome, night! thou night so long  
expected,

That long daies labour doest at last defray,

And all my cares, which cruell Love col-  
lected,

Hast sumd in one, and cancelled for aye:

Spread thy broad wing over my love and me,  
That no man may us see, 320

And in thy sable mantle us enwrap,

From feare of perrill and foule horror free.

Let no false treason seeke us to entrap,

Nor any dread disquiet once annoy

The safety of our joy:

But let the night be calme and quiet some,

Without tempestuous stormes or sad afay:

Lyke as when Jove with fayre Almena lay,

When he begot the great Tirynthian groome:

Or lyke as when he with thy selfe did lie,

And begot Majesty. 331

And let the mayds and yongmen cease to  
sing:

Ne let the woods them answer, nor theyr  
eccho ring.

Let no lamenting cryes, nor dolefull teares,  
Be heard all night within, nor yet without:

Ne let false whispers, breeding hidden  
feares,

Breake gentle sleepe with misconceived  
dout.

Let no deluding dreames, nor dreadful  
sights,

Make sudden sad affrights;

Ne let house-fyres, nor lightnings helplesse  
harmes, 340

Ne let the Pouke, nor other evill sprights,

Ne let mischivous witches with theyr  
charmes,

Ne let hob goblins, names whose sense we  
see not,

Fray us with things that be not.

Let not the shrieck oule, nor the storke be  
heard,

Nor the night raven that still deadly yels,

Nor damned ghosts cald up with mighty  
spels,

Nor griesly vultures make us once affeard:

Ne let th' unpleasant quyre of frogs still  
croking

Make us to wish theyr choking. 350

Let none of these theyr drery accents sing;

Ne let the woods them answer, nor theyr  
eccho ring.

But let stil Silence trew night watches  
keepe,

That sacred Peace may in assurance rayne,

And tymely Sleep, when it is tyme to  
sleepe,

May poure his limbs forth on your pleasant  
playne,

The whiles an hundred little winged loves,  
Like divers feathered doves,  
Shall fly and flutter round about our bed,  
And in the secret darke, that none reproves,  
Their prety stealthes shall worke, and  
    snares shal spread 361

To filch away sweet snatches of delight,  
Conceald through covert night.  
Ye sonnes of Venus, play your sports at will:  
For greedy Pleasure, carelesse of your toyes,  
Thinks more upon her paradise of joyes,  
Then what ye do, albe it good or ill.  
All night therefore attend your merry play,  
For it will soone be day:  
Now none doth hinder you, that say or sing,  
Ne will the woods now answer, nor your  
    eccho ring. 371

Who is the same which at my window  
    peepes ?  
Or whose is that faire face that shines so  
    bright ?  
Is it not Cinthia, she that never sleepes,  
But walkes about high heaven al the night ?  
O fayrest goddesse, do thou not envy  
My love with me to spy:  
For thou likewise didst love, though now  
    unthought,  
And for a fleece of woll, which privily  
The Latmian shephard once unto thee  
    brought, 380  
His pleasures with thee wrought.  
Therefore to us be favorable now;  
And sith of wemens labours thou hast  
    charge,  
And generation goodly dost enlarge,  
Encline thy will t' effect our wishfull vow,  
And the chaste wombe informe with timely  
    seed,  
That may our comfort breed:  
Till which we cease our hopefull hap to sing,  
Ne let the woods us answeare, nor our eccho  
    ring.

And thou, great Juno, which with awful  
    might 390  
The lawes of wedlock still dost patronize,  
And the religion of the faith first plight  
With sacred rites hast taught to solemnize,  
And eeke for comfort often called art

Of women in their smart,  
Eternally bind thou this lovely band,  
And all thy blessings unto us impart.  
And thou, glad Genius, in whose gentle hand  
The bridale bowre and geniall bed remaine,  
Without blemish or staine, 400  
And the sweet pleasures of theyr loves  
    delight

With secret ayde doest succour and supply,  
Till they bring forth the fruitfull progeny,  
Send us the timely fruit of this same night.  
And thou, fayre Hebe, and thou, Hymen  
    free,  
Grant that it may so be.  
Til which we cease your further prayse to  
    sing,  
Ne any woods shal answer, nor your eccho  
    ring.

And ye high heavens, the temple of the  
    gods, 409  
In which a thousand torches flaming bright  
Doe burne, that to us wretched earthly clods  
In dreadful darknesse lend desired light,  
And all ye powers which in the same re-  
    mayne,  
More then we men can fayne,  
Poure out your blessing on us plentiously,  
And happy influence upon us raine,  
That we may raise a large posterity,  
Which from the earth, which they may  
    long possesse  
With lasting happinesse, 419  
Up to your haughty pallaces may mount,  
And for the guerdon of theyr glorious merit,  
May heavenly tabernacles there inherit,  
Of blessed saints for to increase the count.  
So let us rest, sweet love, in hope of this,  
And cease till then our tymely joyes to sing:  
The woods no more us answer, nor our eccho  
    ring.

Song, made in lieu of many ornaments  
With which my love should duly have bene  
    dect,  
Which cutting off through hasty accidents,  
Ye would not stay your dew time to expect,  
But promist both to recompens, 431  
Be unto her a goodly ornament,  
And for short time an endlesse monument.

FINIS

IMPRINTED BY P. S. FOR WILLIAM PONSONBY

# FOWRE HYMNES

MADE BY  
EDM. SPENSER

LONDON  
PRINTED FOR WILLIAM PONSONBY  
1596

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND MOST VERTUOUS LADIES, THE LADIE  
MARGARET COUNTESSE OF CUMBERLAND, AND THE LADIE MARIE  
COUNTESSE OF WARWICKE

HAVING, in the greener times of my youth, composed these former two hymnes in the praise of love and beautie, and finding that the same too much pleased those of like age and disposition, which, being too vehemently caried with that kind of affection, do rather sucke out poyson to their strong passion, then hony to their honest delight, I was moved by the one of you two most excellent Ladies, to call in the same. But being unable so to doe, by reason that many copies thereof were formerly scattered abroad, I resolved at least to amend, and by way of retractation to reforme them, making in stead of those two hymnes of earthly or naturall love and beautie, two others of heavenly and celestially. The which I doe

dedicate joyntly unto you two honorable sisters, as to the most excellent and rare ornaments of all true love and beautie, both in the one and the other kinde, humbly beseeching you to vouchsafe the patronage of them, and to accept this my humble service, in lieu of the great graces and honourable favours which ye dayly shew unto me, untill such time as I may by better meanes yeeld you some more notable testimonie of my thankfull mind and dutifull devotion.

And even so I pray for your happinesse.  
Greenwich, this first of September, 1596.

Your Honors most bounden ever  
in all humble service,  
Ed. Sp.

[The noblewomen to whom this volume is dedicated were sisters, of the great Russell family. The Lady Margaret was that Countess of Cumberland to whom Daniel, a few years later, addressed the most noble of his poems. The Countess of Warwick (whose name was Anne, not Mary) was the widow of Leicester's brother, 'the good earl,' and, as such, had found mention in 'The Ruins of Time.'

The words of the dedication have been variously interpreted. The first pair of hymns, composed, we read, 'in the greener times of my youth,' (by which we are to understand, probably, the period of the *Calendar* and of 'Mother Hubbard's Tale') having 'too much pleased those of like age and disposition,' were apparently, in 1596, still popular: but one of the noble sisters, disapproving of them, would have them 'called in;' whereupon, 'being unable so to doe,' the poet 'resolved at least to amend and

by way of retractation to reforme them, making, in stead of those two hymns of earthly or naturall love and beautie, two others of heavenly and celestially.' The difficulty is in the final clauses. Did the poet, besides composing the two later hymns, also reduce the earlier to inoffensiveness? or did he let these stand as originally written, and atone for them merely by composing their substitutes? At first, it would seem as if the second interpretation, though more in accord with the words of the letter, were impossible. For in the earlier hymns, as they are printed, there could surely be nothing to shock the most extravagant of prudes: besides, if the lady objected to them in their early form, why should the poet publish them in that form? Yet if, on the other hand, these hymns, as they are printed, be the result of expurgation, one does not see what the poet can have expurgated. Both are organically Pla-



tonic: there would seem to be no place in them, at any point, for matter even faintly licentious. Perhaps, however, it has been assumed too readily that the fault of these early hymns was of that kind. Dr. Grosart thinks that the sister who protested was the Countess of Warwick, for she is known to have inclined to Puritanism. If it was she, her protest may very well have been, not against immodesty, but against the very subject matter of these hymns, 'earthly or naturall love and beautie.' She may have reprobated them for sinful vanities, just as her nephew, Sidney, being on his death-bed, reprobated his own *Arcadia* and gave earnest orders for its destruction. In atonement for such a fault, Spenser might well issue the early hymns as they had been written, and let their vanity be foil to the earnestness of the later, composed to replace them. His repentance would then be that of the December eclogue:—

'I, that whilome wont to frame my pype  
Unto the shifting of the shepheards foote,  
Sike follies nowe have gathered as too ripe,  
And cast hem out as rotten and unsoote.  
The loser lasse [Rosalind] I cast to please nomore:  
One if I please [i. e. God], enough is me therefore.'

#### AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOVE

LOVE, that long since hast to thy mighty  
powre  
Perforce subdude my poore captived hart,  
And raging now therein with restlesse  
stowre,  
Doest tyrannize in everie weaker part,  
Faine would I seeke to ease my bitter smart  
By any service I might do to thee,  
Or ought that else might to thee pleasing  
bee.

And nowt' asswage the force of this new  
flame,  
And make thee more propitious in my need,  
I meane to sing the praises of thy name, 10  
And thy victorious conquests to areed;  
By which thou madest many harts to bleed  
Of mighty victors, with wyde wounds em-  
brewed,  
And by thy cruell darts to thee subdewed.

Onely I feare my wits, enfeebled late  
Through the sharpe sorrowes which thou  
hast me bred,  
Should faint, and words should faile me to  
relate  
The wondrous triumphs of thy great god-  
hed.

The later repentance certainly need not be taken as at all more serious than the earlier, need not be read as an example of 'the sensitive purity of the poet's nature.' In composing his first two hymns he had aimed to embody in verse some of those Neo-Platonic doctrines which were then so popular in Italy, best known to Englishmen, perhaps, in the fourth book of Castiglione's *Courtier*. His success had been the more brilliant in that he was first in England to occupy the field. Later, when the Countess of Warwick would have persuaded him that such vanities were unworthy of a 'sage and serious' poet, one can understand how he might acquiesce, and, without very real contrition for these youthful hymns, gratify her by others more in consonance with her convictions. For the Neo-Platonic modes of thought were as applicable to Christian doctrine as to theories of 'earthly or naturall love and beautie,' and a poet might be sincere in both uses, since neither would be understood literally and since both embodied the spirit of his most serious thought.]

But, if thou wouldst vouchsafe to over-  
spread

Me with the shadow of thy gentle wing, 20  
I should enabled be thy actes to sing.

Come then, O come, thou mightie God of  
Love,

Out of thy silver bowres and secret blisse,  
Where thou doest sit in Venus lap above,  
Bathing thy wings in her ambrosiall kisse,  
That sweeter farre then any nectar is;  
Come softly, and my feeble breast in-  
spire

With gentle furie, kindled of thy fire.

And ye, sweet Muses, which have often  
proved

The piercing points of his avengefull darts,  
And ye, faire nimphs, which oftentimes  
have loved 31

The cruell worker of your kindly smart,  
Prepare your selves, and open wide your  
harts,

For to receive the triumph of your glorie,  
That made you merie oft, when ye were  
sorie.

And ye, faire blossomes of youths wanton  
breed,

Which in the conquests of your beautie  
bost,

Wherewith your lovers feeble eyes you feed,  
 But sterve their harts, that needeth nour-  
   ture most,  
 Prepare your selves to march amongst his  
   host, 40  
 And all the way this sacred hymne do sing,  
 Made in the honor of your soveraigne king.

GREAT God of might, that reignest in the  
   mynd,  
 And all the bodie to thy best doest frame,  
 Victor of gods, subduer of mankynd,  
 That doest the lions and fell tigers tame,  
 Making their cruell rage thy scornfull  
   game,  
 And in their roring taking great delight,  
 Who can expresse the glorie of thy might ?

Or who alive can perfectly declare 50  
 The wondrous cradle of thine infancie,  
 When thy great mother Venus first thee  
   bare,  
 Begot of Plentie and of Penurie,  
 Though elder then thine owne nativitie;  
 And yet a chyld, renewing still thy yeares,  
 And yet the eldest of the heavenly peares ?

For ere this worlds still moving mightie  
   masse  
 Out of great Chaos ugly prison crept,  
 In which his goodly face long hidden was  
 From heavens view, and in deepe darknesse  
   kept, 60  
 Love, that had now long time securely slept  
 In Venus lap, unarmed then and naked,  
 Gan reare his head, by Clotho being waked.

And taking to him wings of his owne heate,  
 Kindled at first from heavens life-giving  
   fyre,  
 He gan to move out of his idle seate,  
 Weakely at first, but after with desyre  
 Lifted aloft, he gan to mount up hyre,  
 And like fresh eagle, make his hardie flight  
 Through all that great wide wast, yet want-  
   ing light. 70

Yet wanting light to guide his wandring  
   way,  
 His owne faire mother, for all creatures sake,  
 Did lend him light from her owne goodly  
   ray:  
 Then through the world his way he gan to  
   take,  
 The world, that was not till he did it make,

Whose sundrie parts he from them selves  
   did sever,  
 The which before had lyen confused ever.

The earth, the ayre, the water, and the fyre,  
 Then gan to raunge them selves in huge  
   array,  
 And with contrary forces to conspyre 80  
 Each against other, by all meanes they may,  
 Threatning their owne confusion and decay:  
 Ayre hated earth, and water hated fyre,  
 Till Love relented their rebellious yre.

He then them tooke, and tempering goodly  
   well  
 Their contrary dislikes with loved meanes,  
 Did place them all in order, and compell  
 To keepe them selves within their sundrie  
   raines,  
 Together linkt with adamantine chaines;  
 Yet so as that in every living wight 90  
 They mixe themselves, and shew their  
   kindly might.

So ever since they firmly have remained,  
 And duly well observed his behest;  
 Through which now all these things that are  
   contained  
 Within this goodly cope, both most and  
   least,  
 Their being have, and dayly are increast  
 Through secret sparks of his infused fyre,  
 Which in the barraine cold he doth inspyre.

Thereby they all do live, and moved are  
 To multiply the likenesse of their kynd, 100  
 Whilest they seeke onely, without further  
   care,  
 To quench the flame which they in burning  
   fynd:  
 But man, that breathes a more immortall  
   mynd,  
 Not for lusts sake, but for eternitie,  
 Seekes to enlarge his lasting progenie.

For having yet in his deducted spright  
 Some sparks remaining of that heavenly  
   fyre,  
 He is enlumind with that goodly light,  
 Unto like goodly semblant to aspyre:  
 Therefore in choice of love, he doth desyre  
 That seemes on earth most heavenly, to  
   embrace; 110  
 That same is Beautie, borne of heavenly  
   race.

For sure, of all that in this mortall frame  
 Contained is, nought more divine doth seeme,  
 Or that resembleth more th' immortall  
 flame  
 Of heavenly light, then Beauties glorious  
 beame.  
 What wonder then, if with such rage  
 extreme  
 Fraile men, whose eyes seek heavenly things  
 to see,  
 At sight thereof so much enravisht bee ?

Which well perceiving, that imperious boy  
 Doth therwith tip his sharp empoisoned  
 darts;  
 Which, glancing through the eyes with coun-  
 tenance coy,  
 Rest not till they have pierst the trembling  
 harts,  
 And kindled flame in all their inner parts,  
 Which suckes the blood, and drinketh up  
 the lyfe  
 Of carefull wretches with consuming grieve.

Thenceforth they playue, and make ful pit-  
 eous mone  
 Unto the author of their balefull bane;  
 The daies they waste, the nights they grieve  
 and grone,  
 Their lives they loath, and heavens light  
 disdaine;  
 No light but that whose lampe doth yet  
 remaine  
 Fresh burning in the image of their eye,  
 They deigne to see, and seeing it still dye.

The whylst thou, tyrant Love, doest laugh  
 and scorne  
 At their complaints, making their paine thy  
 play;  
 Whylest they lye languishing like thralls  
 forlorne,  
 The whyles thou doest triumph in their  
 decay,  
 And otherwhyles, their dying to delay,  
 Thou doest enmarble the proud hart of her,  
 Whose love before their life they doe pre-  
 fer.  
 140

So hast thou often done (ay me the more !)  
 To me thy vassall, whose yet bleeding hart  
 With thousand wounds thou mangled hast  
 so sore  
 That whole remaines scarce any little part;  
 Yet to augment the anguish of my smart,

Thou hast enfrosen her disdainefull brest,  
 That no one drop of pitie there doth rest.

Why then do I this honor unto thee,  
 Thus to ennoble thy victorious name,  
 Since thou doest shew no favour unto mee,  
 Ne once move ruth in that rebellious dame,  
 Somewhat to slacke the rigour of my flame?  
 Certes small glory doest thou winne hereby,  
 To let her live thus free, and me to dy.

But if thou be indeede, as men thee call,  
 The worlds great parent, the most kind  
 preserver  
 Of living wights, the soveraine lord of all,  
 How falles it then that with thy furious  
 fervour  
 Thou doest afflict as well the not deserver,  
 As him that doeth thy lovely heasts de-  
 spize,  
 And on thy subjects most doest tyrannize ?  
 149

Yet herein eke thy glory seemeth more,  
 By so hard handling those which best thee  
 serve,  
 That ere thou doest them unto grace restore,  
 Thou mayest well trie if they will ever  
 swerve,  
 And mayest them make it better to deserve,  
 And having got it, may it more esteeme;  
 For things hard gotten men more dearly  
 deeme.  
 160

So bard those heavenly beauties be enfyred,  
 As things divine least passions doe impresse,  
 The more of stedfast myndes to be admyred,  
 The more they stayed be on stedfastnesse:  
 But baseborne myndes such lamps regard  
 the lesse,  
 Which at first blowing take not hastie fyre;  
 Such fancies feeble no love, but loose desyre.

For Love is lord of truth and loialtie,  
 Lifting himselfe out of the lowly dust  
 On golden plumes up to the purest skie,  
 Above the reach of loathly sinfull lust,  
 Whose base affect, through cowardly dis-  
 trust  
 Of his weake wings, dare not to heaven fly,  
 But like a moldwarpe in the earth doth ly.  
 180

His dunghill thoughts, which do themselves  
 enure  
 To dirtie drosse, no higher dare aspyre,  
 Ne can his feeble earthly eyes endure



The flaming light of that celestiaall fyre,  
Which kindleth love in generous desyre,  
And makes him mount above the native  
might  
Of heavie earth, up to the heavens hight.

Such is the powre of that sweet passion, <sup>190</sup>  
That it all sordid basenesse doth expell,  
And the refyned mynd doth newly fashion  
Unto a fairer forme, which now doth dwell  
In his high thought, that would it selfe ex-  
cell;  
Which he beholding still with constant  
sight,  
Admires the mirrour of so heavenly light.

Whose image printing in his deepest wit,  
He thereon feeds his hungrie fantasy,  
Still full, yet never satisfyde with it;  
Like Tantale, that in store doth sterved ly,  
So doth he pine in most satiety; <sup>201</sup>  
For nought may quench his infinite desyre,  
Once kindled through that first conceived  
fyre.

Thereon his mynd affixed wholly is,  
Ne thinks on ought, but how it to attaine;  
His care, his joy, his hope is all on this,  
That seemes in it all blisses to containe,  
In sight whereof all other blisse seemes  
vaine.

Thrise happie man, might he the same  
possesse,  
He faines himselfe, and doth his fortune  
blesse. <sup>210</sup>

And though he do not win his wish to end,  
Yet thus farre happie he him selfe doth  
weene,

That heavens such happie grace did to him  
lend,

As thing on earth so heavenly to have seene,  
His harts enshrined saint, his heavens  
queene,  
Fairer then fairest, in his fayning eye,  
Whose sole aspect he counts felicitye.

Then forth he casts in his unquiet thought,  
What he may do, her favour to obtaine;  
What brave exploit, what perill hardly  
wrought, <sup>220</sup>

What puissant conquest, what adventurous  
paine,

May please her best, and grace unto him  
gaine:

He dreads no danger, nor misfortune feares;  
His faith, his fortune, in his breast he beares.

Thou art his god, thou art his mightie guyde,  
Thou, being blind, letst him not see his  
feares,

But cariest him to that which he hath eyde,  
Through seas, through flames, through thou-  
sand swords and speares:

Ne ought so strong that may his force with-  
stand,

With which thou arimest his resistlesse hand.

Witnesse Leander in the Euxine waves, <sup>231</sup>  
And stout Æneas in the Trojane fyre,  
Achilles preassing through the Phrygian  
glaives,

And Orpheus daring to provoke the yre  
Of damned fiends, to get his love retyre.  
For both through heaven and hell thou  
makest way,

To win them worship which to thee obay.

And if by all these perils and these paynes  
He may but purchase lyking in her eye,  
What heavens of joy then to himselfe he  
faynes! <sup>240</sup>

Eftsoones he wypes quite out of memory  
What ever ill before he did aby;  
Had it bene death, yet would he die againe,  
To live thus happie as her grace to gaine.

Yet when he hath found favour to his will,  
He nathemore can so contented rest,  
But forceth further on, and striveth still  
T' approach more neare, till in her inmost  
brest

He may embosomd bee, and loved best;  
And yet not best, but to be lov'd alone; <sup>250</sup>  
For love can not endure a paragone.

The feare whereof, O how doth it torment  
His troubled mynd with more then hellish  
paine!

And to his fayning fansie represent  
Sights never seene, and thousand shadowes  
vaine,

To breake his sleepe and waste his ydle  
braine;

Thou that hast never lov'd canst not beleieve  
Least part of th' evils which poore lovers  
grieve.

The gnawing envie, the hart-fretting feare,  
The vaine surmizes, the distrustfull showes,



That now it wasted is with woes extreame,  
It may so please that she at length will  
streame

Some dew of grace into my withered hart,  
After long sorrow and consuming smart.

WHAT time this worlds great workmaister  
did cast

To make al things such as we now behold, <sup>30</sup>  
It seemes that he before his eyes had plast  
A goodly paterne, to whose perfect mould  
He fashiond them as comely as he could,  
That now so faire and seemely they ap-  
peare

As nought may be amended any wheare.

That wondrous paterne, wheresoere it bee,  
Whether in earth layd up in secret store,  
Or else in heaven, that no man may it see  
With sinfull eyes, for feare it to deflore,  
Is perfect Beautie, which all men adore; <sup>40</sup>  
Whose face and feature doth so much excell  
All mortall sence, that none the same may  
tell.

Thereof as every earthly thing partakes  
Or more or lesse, by influence divine,  
So it more faire accordingly it makes,  
And the grosse matter of this earthly myne,  
Which clotheth it, thereafter doth refyne,  
Doing away the drosse which dims the  
light

Of that faire beame which therein is em-  
pight.

For through infusion of celestiall powre <sup>50</sup>  
The duller earth it quickneth with delight,  
And life-full spirits privily doth powre  
Through all the parts, that to the lookers  
sight

They seeme to please. That is thy soveraine  
might,

O Cyprian queene, which, flowing from the  
beame

Of thy bright starre, thou into them doest  
streame.

That is the thing which giveth pleasant  
grace

To all things faire, that kindleth lively  
fyre,

Light of thy lampe, which, shyning in the  
face, <sup>59</sup>

Thence to the soule darts amorous desyre,  
And robs the harts of those which it admyre;

Therewith thou pointest thy sons poysned  
arrow,  
That wounds the life, and wastes the inmost  
marrow.

How vainely then doe ydle wits invent  
That Beautie is nought else but mixture  
made

Of colours faire, and goodly temp'rament  
Of pure complexions, that shall quickly  
fade

And passe away, like to a sommers shade,  
Or that it is but comely composition  
Of parts well measurd, with meet dispo-  
sition ! <sup>70</sup>

Hath white and red in it such wondrous  
powre,

That it can pierce through th' eyes unto the  
hart,

And therein stirre such rage and restlesse  
stowre,

As nought but death can stint his dolours  
smart ?

Or can proportion of the outward part  
Move such affection in the inward mynd,  
That it can rob both sense, and reason  
blynd ?

Why doe not then the blossomes of the field,  
Which are arayd with much more orient  
hew, <sup>79</sup>

And to the sense most daintie odours yield,  
Worke like impression in the lookers vew ?  
Or why doe not faire pictures like powre  
shew,

In which oftimes we Nature see of Art  
Exceld, in perfect limming every part ?

But ah ! beleeve me, there is more then so,  
That workes such wonders in the minds of  
men.

I, that have often prov'd, too well it know;  
And who so list the like assayes to ken  
Shall find by tryall, and confesse it then, &  
That Beautie is not, as fond men misdeeme,  
An outward shew of things that onely seeme.

For that same goodly hew of white and red,  
With which the cheekes are sprinkled, shall  
decay,

And those sweete rosy leaves, so fairely  
spred

Upon the lips, shall fade and fall away  
To that they were, even to corrupted clay.



That golden wyre, those sparekling stars so  
bright  
Shall turne to dust, and loose their goodly  
light.

But that faire lampe, from whose celestiall  
ray  
That light proceedes which kindleth lovers  
fire, 100  
Shall never be extinguisht nor decay;  
But when the vitall spirits doe expyre,  
Unto her native planet shall retyre;  
For it is heavcnly borne, and can not die,  
Being a parcell of the purest skie.

For when the soule, the which derived was,  
At first, out of that great immortall Spright,  
By whom all live to love, whilome did pas  
Downe from the top of purest heavens light,  
To be embodied here, it then tooke light 110  
And lively spirits from that fayrest starre,  
Which lights the world forth from his fire  
carre.

Which powre retayning still, or more or  
lesse,  
When she in fleshly seede is eft enraccd,  
Through every part she doth the same im-  
presse,  
According as the heavens have her graced,  
And frames her house, in which she will be  
placed,  
Fit for her selfe, adorning it with spoyle  
Of th' heavenly riches which she robd ere-  
while.

Thereof it comes that these faire soules,  
which have 120  
The most resemblance of that heavenly  
light,  
Frame to themselves most beautifull and  
brave  
Their fleshly bowre, most fit for their de-  
light,  
And the grosse matter by a soveraine might  
Tempers so trim, that it may well be seene  
A pallace fit for such a virgin queene.

So every spirit, as it is most pure,  
And hath in it the more of heavenly light,  
So it the fairer bodie doth procure  
To habit in, and it more fairely dight 130  
With chearefull grace and amiable sight.  
For of the soule the bodie forme doth take:  
For soule is forme, and doth the bodie make.

Therefore, where ever that thou doest be-  
hold  
A comely corpse, with beautie faire en-  
dewed,  
Know this for certaine, that the same doth  
hold  
A beauteous soule, with faire conditions  
thewed,  
Fit to receive the seede of vertue strewed.  
For all that faire is, is by nature good; 135  
That is a signe to know the gentle blood.

Yet oft it falles that many a gentle mynde  
Dwels in deformed tabernacle drownd,  
Either by chauce, against the course of  
kynd,  
Or through unaptnesse in the substance  
fownd,  
Which it assumed of some stubbornne  
grownd,  
That will not yield unto her formes direc-  
tion,  
But is deform'd with some foule imper-  
fection.

And oft it falles (ay me, the more to rew !)  
That goodly Beautie, albe heavenly borne,  
Is foule abusd, and that celestiall hew, 150  
Which doth the world with her delight  
adorne,  
Made but the bait of sinne, and sinners  
scorene;  
Whilest every one doth seeke and sew to  
have it,  
But every one doth seeke but to deprave it.

Yet nathemore is that faire Beauties blame,  
But theirs that do abuse it unto ill:  
Nothing so good, but that through guilty  
shame  
May be corrupt, and wrested unto will.  
Nathelesse the soule is faire and beauteous  
still,  
How ever fleshes fault it filthy make: 160  
For things immortall no corruption take.

But ye, faire dames, the worlds deare orna-  
ments,  
And lively images of heavens light,  
Let not your beames with such disparage-  
ments  
Be dimd, and your bright glorie darkned  
quight,  
But mindfull still of your first countries  
sight,

Doe still preserve your first informed  
grace,  
Whose shadow yet shynes in your beauteous  
face.

Loath that foule blot, that hellish fierbrand,  
Disloiall lust, faire Beauties foulest blame,  
That base affections, which your eares  
would bland,

Commend to you by loves abused name;  
But is indeede the bondslave of defame;  
Which will the garland of your glorie marre,  
And quench the light of your bright shyning  
starre.

But gentle love, that loiall is and trew,  
Will more illumine your resplendent ray,  
And adde more brightnesse to your goodly  
hew,

From light of his pure fire, which, by like  
way

Kindled of yours, your likenesse doth dis-  
play,

Like as two mirrours, by opposd reflexion,  
Doe both expresse the faces first impression.

Therefore, to make your beautie more ap-  
peare,

It you behoves to love, and forth to lay  
That heavenly riches which in you ye beare,  
That men the more admyre their fountaine  
may;

For else what booteth that celestiall ray,  
If it in darknesse be enshrined ever,  
That it of loving eyes be vewed never?

But in your choice of loves, this well advize,  
That likest to your selves ye them select,  
The which your forms first sourse may sym-  
pathize,

And with like beauties parts be inly deckt:  
For if you loosely love without respect,  
It is no love, but a discordant warre,  
Whose unlike parts amongst themselves do  
jarre.

For love is a celestiall harmonie  
Of likely harts composd of starres concent,  
Which joyne together in sweete sympathie,  
To worke ech others joy and true content,  
Which they have harbourd since their first  
descent

Out of their heavenly bowres, where they  
did see

And know ech other here belov'd to bee.

Then wrong it were that any other twaine  
Should in loves gentle band combynd bee,  
But those whom Heaven did at first ordaine,  
And made out of one mould the more t'  
agree:

For all that like the beautie which they see  
Streight do not love: for love is not so light,  
As streight to burne at first beholders sight.

But they which love indeede looke otherwise,  
With pure regard and spotlesse true intent,  
Drawing out of the object of their eyes  
A more refyned forme, which they present  
Unto their mind, voide of all blemishment;  
Which it reducing to her first perfection,  
Beholdeth free from fleshs frayle infection.

And then conforming it unto the light,  
Which in it selfe it hath remaining still,  
Of that first sunne, yet sparekling in his sight,  
Thereof he fashions in his higher skill  
An heavenly beautie to his fancies will,  
And it embracing in his mind entyre,  
The mirrour of his owne thought doth ad-  
myre.

Which seeing now so inly faire to be,  
As outward it appeareth to the eye,  
And with his spirits proportion to agree,  
He thereon fixeth all his fantasie,  
And fully setteth his felicitie,  
Counting it fairer then it is indeede,  
And yet indeede her fairenesse doth ex-  
ceede.

For lovers eyes more sharply sighted bee  
Then other mens, and in deare loves delight  
See more then any other eyes can see,  
Through mutuall receipt of beames bright,  
Which carrie privie message to the spright,  
And to their eyes that inmost faire display,  
As plaine as light discovers dawning day.

Therein they see, through amorous eye-  
glances,

Armies of Loves still flying too and fro,  
Which dart at them their little fierie launces:  
Whom having wounded, backe againe they go,  
Carrying compassion to their lovely foe;  
Who, seeing her faire eyes so sharpe effect,  
Cures all their sorrowes with one sweete  
aspect.

In which how many wonders doe they reede  
To their concept, that others never see!

Now of her smiles, with which their soules  
they feede,  
Like gods with nectar in their bankets free,  
Now of her lookes, which like to cordials  
bee; <sup>250</sup>  
But when her words embassade forth she  
sends,  
Lord, how sweete musicke that unto them  
lends !

Sometimes upon her forehead they behold  
A thousand graces masking in delight;  
Sometimes within her eye-lids they unfold  
Ten thousand sweet belgards, which to their  
sight  
Doe seeme like twineckling starres in frostie  
night;  
But on her lips, like rosy buds in May,  
So many millions of chaste pleasures play.

All those, O Cytherea, and thousands more  
Thy handmaides be, which do on thee at-  
tend, <sup>261</sup>  
To decke thy beautie with their dainties  
store,  
That may it more to mortall eyes commend,  
And make it more admyr'd of foe and frend;  
That in mens harts thou mayst thy throne  
enstall,  
And spread thy lovely kingdome over all.

Then Iö, triumph! O great Beauties Queene,  
Advance the banner of thy conquest hie,  
That all this world, the which thy vassals  
beene,  
May draw to thee, and with dew fealtie <sup>270</sup>  
Adore the powre of thy great majestie,  
Singing this hymne in honour of thy name,  
Compyld by me, which thy poore liegeman  
am.

In lieu whereof graunt, O great souveraine,  
That she, whose conquering beautie doth  
captive  
My trembling hart in her eternall chaine,  
One drop of grace at length will to me give,  
That I her bounden thrall by her may live,  
And this same life, which first fro me she  
reaved,  
May owe to her, of whom I it received. <sup>280</sup>

And you, faire Venus dearling, my deare  
dread,  
Fresh flowre of grace, great goddesse of my  
life,

When your faire eyes these fearefull lines  
shal read,  
Deigne to let fall one drop of dew reliefe,  
That may recure my harts long pynning  
griefe,  
And shew what wondrous powre your beauty  
hath,  
That can restore a damned wight from death.

### AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE

Love, lift me up upon thy golden wings,  
From this base world unto thy heavens  
hight,  
Where I may see those admirable things  
Which there thou workest by thy souveraine  
might,  
Farre above feeble reach of earthly sight,  
That I thereof an heavenly hymne may sing  
Unto the God of Love, high heavens king.

Many lewd layes (ah, woe is me the more !) <sup>1</sup>  
In praise of that mad fit which fooles call  
love, <sup>9</sup>  
I have in th' heat of youth made heretofore,  
That in light wits did loose affection move.  
But all those follies now I do reprove,  
And turned have the tenor of my string,  
The heavenly prayses of true love to sing.

And ye that wont with greedy vaine desire  
To reade my fault, and wondring at my  
flame,  
To warme your selves at my wide sparckling  
fire,  
Sith now that heat is quenched, quench my  
blame,  
And in her ashes shrowd my dying shame:  
For who my passed follies now pursewes, <sup>20</sup>  
Beginnes his owne, and my old fault re-  
newes.

BEFORE this worlds great frame, in which  
all things  
Are now containd, found any being place,  
Ere flitting Time could wag his eyas wings  
About that rightie bound, which doth em-  
brace  
The rolling spheres, and parts their houres  
by space,  
That high eternall Powre, which now doth  
move  
In all these things, mov'd in it selfe by love



It lov'd it selfe, because it selfe was faire;  
 (For faire is lov'd;) and of it selfe begot <sup>30</sup>  
 Like to it selfe his eldest Sonne and Heire,  
 Eternall, pure, and voide of sinfull blot,  
 The firstling of his joy, in whom no jot  
 Of loves dislike or pride was to be found,  
 Whom he therefore with equall honour  
 crown'd.

With him he raignd, before all time pre-  
 scribed,  
 In endlesse glorie and immortall might,  
 Together with that third from them derived,  
 Most wise, most holy, most almightie  
 Spright,  
 Whose kingdomes throne no thought of  
 earthly wight <sup>40</sup>  
 Can comprehend, much lesse my trembling  
 verse  
 With equall words can hope it to rehearse.

Yet, O most blessed Spirit, pure lampe of  
 light,  
 Eternall spring of grace and wisdomes trew,  
 Vouchsafe to shed into my barren spright  
 Some little drop of thy celestiall dew,  
 That may my rymes with sweet infuse em-  
 brew,  
 And give me words equall unto my thought,  
 To tell the marveiles by thy mercie wrought.

Yet being pregnant still with powrefull  
 grace, <sup>50</sup>  
 And full of fruitfull love, that loves to get  
 Things like himselfe, and to enlarge his  
 race,  
 His second brood, though not in powre so  
 great,  
 Yet full of beautie, next he did beget,  
 An infinite increase of angels bright,  
 All glistring glorious in their Makers light.

To them the heavens illimitable hight  
 (Not this round heaven, which we from  
 hence behold,  
 Adorn'd with thousand lamps of burning  
 light,  
 And with ten thousand gemmes of shyning  
 gold) <sup>60</sup>  
 He gave as their inheritance to hold,  
 That they might serve him in eternall blis,  
 And be partakers of those joyes of his.

There they in their trinall triplicities  
 About him wait, and on his will depend,

Either with nimble wings to cut the skies,  
 When he them on his messages doth send,  
 Or on his owne dread presence to attend,  
 Where they behold the glorie of his light,  
 And caroll hymnes of love both day and  
 night. <sup>70</sup>

Both day and night is unto them all one,  
 For he his beames doth still to them extend,  
 That darknesse there appeareth never none;  
 Ne hath their day, ne hath their blisse an  
 end,  
 But there their termelesse time in pleasure  
 spend;  
 Ne ever should their happinesse decay,  
 Had not they dar'd their Lord to disobay.

But pride, impatient of long resting peace,  
 Did puffe them up with greedy bold ambition,  
 That they gan cast their state how to in-  
 crease <sup>80</sup>  
 Above the fortune of their first condition,  
 And sit in Gods owne seat without com-  
 mission:  
 The brightest angell, even the Child of  
 Light,  
 Drew millions more against their God to  
 fight.

Th' Almighty, seeing their so bold assay,  
 Kindled the flame of his consuming yre,  
 And with his onely breath them blew away  
 From heavens hight, to which they did  
 aspyre,  
 To deepest hell, and lake of damned fyre;  
 Where they in darknesse and dread horror  
 dwell, <sup>90</sup>  
 Hating the happie light from which they  
 fell.

So that next off-spring of the Makers love,  
 Next to himselfe in glorious degree,  
 Degendering to hate, fell from above  
 Through pride; (for pride and love may ill  
 agree)  
 And now of sinne to all ensample bee:  
 How then can sinfull flesh it selfe assure,  
 Sith purest angels fell to be impure?

But that Eternall Fount of love and grace,  
 Still flowing forth his goodnesse unto all,  
 Now seeing left a waste and emptie place  
 In his wyde pallace, through those angels  
 fall, <sup>102</sup>  
 Cast to supply the same, and to enstall

A new unknown colony therein,  
Whose root from earths base groundworke  
shold begin.

Therefore of clay, base, vile, and next to  
nought,  
Yet form'd by wondrous skill, and by his  
might,  
According to an heavenly patterne wrought,  
Which he had fashiond in his wise fore-  
sight,  
He man did make, and breathd a living  
spright <sup>110</sup>  
Into his face most beautifull and fayre,  
Endewd with wisdomes riches, heavenly,  
rare.

Such he him made, that he resemble might  
Himselfe, as mortall thing immortall could;  
Him to be lord of every living wight  
He made by love out of his owne like mould,  
In whom he might his mightie selfe be-  
hould:

For love doth love the thing belov'd to see,  
That like it selfe in lovely shape may bee.

But man, forgetfull of his Makers grace, <sup>120</sup>  
No lesse then angels, whom he did ensew,  
Fell from the hope of promist heavenly  
place,

Into the mouth of death, to sinners dew,  
And all his off-spring into thralldome  
threw:

Where they for ever should in bonds re-  
maine  
Of never dead, yet ever dying paine.

Till that great Lord of Love, which him at  
first

Made of meere love, and after liked well,  
Seeing him lie like creature long accurst  
In that deepe horror of despeyred hell, <sup>130</sup>  
Him, wretch, in doole would let no lenger  
dwell,

But cast out of that bondage to redeeme,  
And pay the price, all were his debt extreeme.

Out of the bosome of eternall blisse,  
In which he reigned with his glorious Syre,  
He downe descended, like a most demisse  
And abject thrall, in fleshes fraile attyre,  
That he for him might pay sinnes deadly  
hyre,

And him restore unto that happie state <sup>139</sup>  
In which he stood before his haplesse fate.

In flesh at first the guilt committed was,  
Therefore in flesh it must be satisfyde:  
Nor spirit, nor angell, though they man  
surpas,

Could make amends to God for mans mis-  
gyde,

But onely man himselfe, who selfe did slyde.  
So, taking flesh of sacred virgins wombe,  
For mans deare sake he did a man become.

And that most blessed bodie, which was  
borne

Without all blemish or reprochfull blame,  
He freely gave to be both rent and torne <sup>150</sup>  
Of cruell hands, who with despyghtfull  
shame

Revyling him, that them most vile became,  
At length him nayled on a gallow tree,  
And slew the just by most unjust decree.

O huge and most unspeakeable impression  
Of loves deepe wound, that pierst the piteous  
hart

Of that deare Lord with so entyre affection,  
And sharply launching every inner part,  
Dolours of death into his soule did dart;  
Doing him die, that never it deserved, <sup>160</sup>  
To free his foes, that from his heast had  
swerved!

What hart can feelee least touch of so sore  
launch,

Or thought can think the depth of so deare  
wound,

Whose bleeding sourse their streames yet  
never staunch,

But stil do flow, and freshly still redound,  
To heale the sores of sinfull soules unsound,  
And cense the guilt of that infected cryme,  
Which was enrooted in all fleshly slyme?

O blessed Well of Love! O Floure of Grace!  
O glorious Morning Starre! O Lampe of  
Light! <sup>170</sup>

Most lively image of thy Fathers face,  
Eternall King of Glorie, Lord of Might,  
Meeke Lambe of God, before all worlds  
behight,

How can we thee requite for all this good?  
Or what can prize that thy most precious  
blood?

Yet nought thou ask'st in lieu of all this  
love,

But love of us, for guerdon of thy paine.

Ay me ! what can us lesse then that behove ?  
 Had he required life of us againe,  
 Had it beene wrong to aske his owne with  
 gaine ? 180

He gave us life, he it restored lost;  
 Then life were least, that us so litle cost.

But he our life hath left unto us free,  
 Free that was thrall, and blessed that was  
 band;

Ne ought demaunds, but that we loving bee,  
 As he himselfe hath lov'd us afore hand,  
 And bound therto with an eternall band,  
 Him first to love, that us so dearely bought,  
 And next, our brethren, to his image  
 wrought.

Him first to love, great right and reason is,  
 Who first to us our life and being gave; 191  
 And after, when we fared had amisse,  
 Us wretches from the second death did save;  
 And last, the food of life, which now we  
 have,

Even himselfe in his deare sacrament,  
 To feede our hungry soules, unto us lent.

Then next, to love our brethren, that were  
 made  
 Of that selfe mould and that selfe Makers  
 hand

That we, and to the same againe shall fade,  
 Where they shall have like heritage of land,  
 How ever here on higher steps we stand;  
 Which also were with selfe same price re-  
 deemed 202

That we, how ever of us light esteemed.

And were they not, yet since that loving  
 Lord

Commaunded us to love them for his sake,  
 Even for his sake, and for his sacred word,  
 Which in his last bequest he to us spake,  
 We should them love, and with their needs  
 partake;

Knowing that whatsoere to them we give,  
 We give to him, by whom we all doe live.

Such mercy he by his most holy reede 211  
 Unto us taught, and to approve it trew,  
 Ensampled it by his most righteous deede,  
 Shewing us mercie, miserable crew !

That we the like should to the wretches  
 shew,

And love our brethren; thereby to approve  
 How much himselfe, that loved us, we love.

Then rouze thy selfe, O Earth, out of thy  
 soyle,

In which thou wallowest like to filthy swyne,  
 And doest thy mynd in durty pleasures  
 moyle, 220

Unmindfull of that dearest Lord of thyne;  
 Lift up to him thy heaveie clouded eyne,  
 That thou his soveraine bountie mayst be-  
 hold,

And read through love his mercies manifold.

Beginne from first, where he encradled was  
 In simple cratch, wrapt in a wad of hay,  
 Betweene the toylefull oxe and humble asse,  
 And in what rags, and in how base aray,  
 The glory of our heavenly riches lay,  
 When him the silly shepherds came to see,  
 Whom greatest princes sought on lowest  
 knee. 231

From thence reade on the storie of his life,  
 His humble carriage, his unfaulty wayes,  
 His cancred foes, his fights, his toyle, his  
 strife,

His paines, his povertie, his sharpe assayes  
 Through which he past his miserable dayes,  
 Offending none, and doing good to all,  
 Yet being malist both of great and small.

And looke at last, how of most wretched  
 wights

He taken was, betrayd, and false accused;  
 How with most scornfull taunts, and fell  
 despights, 241

He was revyld, disgrast, and foule abused,  
 How scourgd, how crownd, how buffeted,  
 how brused;

And lastly, how twixt robbers crucifyde,  
 With bitter wounds through hands, through  
 feet, and syde.

Then let thy flinty hart, that feeles no paine,  
 Empierced be with pittifull remorse,  
 And let thy bowels bleede in every vaine,  
 At sight of his most sacred heavenly corse,  
 So torne and mangled with malicious forse,  
 And let thy soule, whose sins his sorrows  
 wrought, 251  
 Melt into teares, and grone in grieved  
 thought.

With sence whereof whilest so thy softened  
 spirit

Is inly toucht, and humbled with meeke  
 zeale.



Through meditation of his endlesse merit,  
Lift up thy mind to th' author of thy weale,  
And to his soveraine mercie doe appeale;  
Learne him to love, that loved thee so  
deare,  
And in thy brest his blessed image beare.

With all thy hart, with all thy soule and  
mind, 260  
Thou must him love, and his beheasts em-  
brace;  
All other loves, with which the world doth  
blind  
Weake fancies, and stirre up affections  
base,  
Thou must renounce, and utterly displace,  
And give thy selfe unto him full and free,  
That full and freely gave himselfe to  
thee.

Then shalt thou feele thy spirit so possest,  
And ravisht with devouring great desire  
Of his deare selfe, that shall thy feeble  
brest  
Inflame with love, and set thee all on fire 270  
With burning zeale, through every part  
entire,  
That in no earthly thing thou shalt de-  
light,  
But in his sweet and aniable sight.

Thenceforth all worlds desire will in thee  
dye,  
And all earthes glorie, on which men do  
gaze,  
Seeme durt and drosse in thy pure sighted  
eye,  
Compar'd to that celestiall beauties blaze,  
Whose glorious beames all fleshly sense  
doth daze

With admiration of their passing light,  
Blinding the eyes and lumining the spright.

Then shall thy ravisht soule inspired bee 281  
With heavenly thoughts, farre above hu-  
mane skil,  
And thy bright radiant eyes shall plainly  
see

Th' idee of his pure glorie present still  
Before thy face, that all thy spirits shall  
fill

With sweete enragement of celestiall  
love,  
Kindled through sight of those faire things  
above.

## AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE

RAPT with the rage of mine own ravisht  
thought,  
Through contemplation of those goodly  
sights,  
And glorious images in heaven wrought,  
Whose wondrous beauty, breathing sweet  
delights,  
Do kindle love in high conceived sprights,  
I faine to tell the things that I behold,  
But feele my wits to faile, and tongue to  
fold.

Vouchsafe then, O Thou most Almightye  
Spright,  
From whom all guifts of wit and knowledge  
flow,  
To shed into my breast some sparkling light  
Of thine eternall truth, that I may show  
Some litle beames to mortall eyes below  
Of that immortal Beautie, there with  
Thee,  
Which in my weake distraughted mynd I  
see.

That with the glorie of so goodly sight,  
The hearts of men, which fondly here ad-  
myre  
Faire seeming shewes, and feed on vaine  
delight,  
Transported with celestiall desyre  
Of those faire formes, may lift themselves  
up hyer,  
And learne to love with zealous humble  
dewty 290  
Th' Eternall Fountaine of that heavenly  
Beauty.

Beginning then below, with th' easie vew  
Of this base world, subject to fleshly eye,  
From thence to mount aloft by order dew  
To contemplation of th' immortal sky,  
Of the soare faulcon so I learne to fly,  
That flags awhile her fluttering wings be-  
neath,  
Till she her selfe for stronger flight can  
breath.

Then looke, who list thy gazefull eyes to  
feed  
With sight of that is faire, looke on the  
frame 30  
Of this wyde universe, and therein reed

The endlesse kinds of creatures, which by  
name  
Thou canst not count, much lesse their na-  
tures aime:  
All which are made with wondrous wise  
respect,  
And all with admirable beautie deckt.

First th' earth, on adamantine pillars  
founded,  
Amid the sea, engirt with brasen bands;  
Then th' aire, still flitting, but yet firmly  
bounded  
On everie side with pyles of flaming brands,  
Never consum'd, nor quencht with mortall  
hands;  
And last, that mightie shining christall wall,  
Wherewith he hath encompassed this All.

By view whereof, it plainly may appeare,  
That still as every thing doth upward  
tend,  
And further is from earth, so still more  
cleare  
And faire it growes, till to his perfect end  
Of purest Beautie it at last ascend:  
Ayre more then water, fire much more then  
ayre,  
And heaven then fire appeares more pure  
and fayre.

Looke thou no further, but affixe thine eye  
On that bright shynie round still moving  
masse,  
The house of blessed gods, which men call  
skye,  
All sowd with glistring stars more thicke  
then grasse,  
Whereof each other doth in brightnesse  
passe;  
But those two most, which, ruling night  
and day,  
As king and queene, the heavens empire  
sway.

And tell me then, what hast thou ever seene  
That to their beautie may compared bee?  
Or can the sight that is most sharpe and  
keene  
Endure their captains flaming head to see?  
How much lesse those, much higher in de-  
gree,  
And so much fairer, and much more then  
these,  
As these are fairer then the land and seas?

For farre above these heavens which here  
we see,  
Be others farre exceeding these in light,  
Not bounded, not corrupt, as these same bee,  
But infinite in largenesse and in hight,  
Unmoving, uncorrupt, and spotlesse bright,  
That need no sunne t' illuminate their  
spheres,  
But their owne native light farre passing  
theirs.

And as these heavens still by degrees arize,  
Untill they come to their first movers bound,  
That in his mightie compasse doth comprize  
And carrie all the rest with him around,  
So those likewise doe by degrees redound,  
And rise more faire, till they at last arive  
To the most faire, whereto they all do strive.

Faire is the heaven where happy soules have  
place,  
In full enjoyment of felicitie,  
Whence they doe still behold the glorious  
face  
Of the Divine Eternall Majestie;  
More faire is that where those Idees on hie  
Enraunged be, which Plato so admyred,  
And pure Intelligences from God inspyred.

Yet fairer is that heaven in which doe raine  
The soveraine Powres and mightie Poten-  
tates,  
Which in their high protections doe containe  
All mortall princes and imperiall states;  
And fayrer yet whereas the royall Seates  
And heavenly Dominations are set,  
From whom all earthly governance is fet.

Yet farre more faire be those bright Cher-  
ubins,  
Which all with golden wings are overdight,  
And those eternall burning Seraphins,  
Which from their faces dart out fierie light;  
Yet fairer then they both, and much more  
bright,  
Be th' Angels and Archangels, which attend  
On Gods owne person, without rest or end.

These thus in faire each other farre excelling,  
As to the Highest they approach more  
neare,  
Yet is that Highest farre beyond all telling,  
Fairer then all the rest which there appeare,  
Though all their beauties joynd together  
were:

How then can mortall tongue hope to expresse  
The image of such endlesse perfectnesse ?

Cease then, my tongue, and lend unto my mynd  
Leave to bethinke how great that Beautie is,  
Whose utmost parts so beautifull I fynd;  
How much more those essentiall parts of His,  
His truth, his love, his wisdom, and his blis, <sup>110</sup>  
His grace, his doome, his mercy, and his might,  
By which he lends us of himselfe a sight !

Those unto all he daily doth display,  
And shew himselfe in th' image of his grace,  
As in a looking glasse, through which he may  
Be seene of all his creatures vile and base,  
That are unable else to see his face,  
His glorious face, which glistereth else so bright,  
That th' angels selves can not endure his sight.

But we fraile wights, whose sight cannot sustaine <sup>120</sup>  
The suns bright beames, when he on us doth shyne,  
But that their points rebutted backe againe  
Are duld, how can we see with feeble eyne  
The glory of that Majestie Divine,  
In sight of whom both sun and moone are darke,  
Compared to his least resplendent sparke ?

The meanes, therefore, which unto us is lent,  
Him to behold, is on his workes to looke,  
Which he hath made in beauty excellent,  
And in the same, as in a brasen booke, <sup>130</sup>  
To reade enregistred in every nooke  
His goodnesse, which his beautie doth declare,  
For all thats good is beautifull and faire.

Thence gathering plumes of perfect speculation,  
To impe the wings of thy high flying mynd,  
Mount up aloft, through heavenly contemplation,  
From this darke world, whose damps the soule do blynd,  
And like the native brood of eagles kynd,

On that bright Sunne of Glorie fixe thine eyes,  
Clear'd from grosse mists of fraile infirmities. <sup>140</sup>

Humbled with feare and awfull reverence,  
Before the footestoole of his Majestie,  
Throw thy selfe downe with trembling innocence,  
Ne dare looke up with corruptible eye  
On the dred face of that great Deity,  
For feare lest, if he chaunce to looke on thee,  
Thou turne to nought, and quite confounded be.

But lowly fall before his mercie seate,  
Close covered with the Lambes integrity  
From the just wrath of his avengfull threate <sup>150</sup>  
That sits upon the righteous throne on hy:  
His throne is built upon Eternity,  
More firme and durable then steele or brasse  
Or the hard diamond, which them both doth passe.

His scepter is the rod of Righteousnesse,  
With which he bruseth all his foes to dust,  
And the great Dragon strongly doth re-  
presse,  
Under the rigour of his judgement just;  
His seate is Truth, to which the faithfull trust;  
From whence proceed her beames so pure  
and bright, <sup>160</sup>  
That all about him sheddeth glorious light.

Light farre exceeding that bright blazing sparke,  
Which darted is from Titans flaming head,  
That with his beames enlumineth the darke  
And dampish air, wherby al things are red:  
Whose nature yet so much is marvelled  
Of mortall wits, that it doth much amaze  
The greatest wisards which thereon do gaze.

But that immortall light which there doth shine  
Is many thousand times more bright, more cleare, <sup>170</sup>  
More excellent, more glorious, more divine;  
Through which to God all mortall actions here,  
And even the thoughts of men, do plaine  
appeare:



For from th' Eternall Truth it doth proceed,  
Through heavenly vertue, which her beames  
doe breed.

With the great glorie of that wondrous light  
His throne is all encompassed around,  
And hid in his owne brightnesse from the  
sight

Of all that looke thereou with eyes unsound:  
And underneath his feet are to be found <sup>180</sup>  
Thunder, and lightning, and tempestuous  
fyre,

The instruments of his avenging yre.

There in his bosome Sapience doth sit,  
The soveraine dearling of the Deity,  
Clad like a queene in royall robes, most fit  
For so great powre and peerelesse majesty,  
And all with gemmes and jewels gorgeously  
Adorn'd, that brighter then the starres ap-  
peare,  
And make her native brightnes seem more  
cleare.

And on her head a crowne of purest gold  
Is set, in signe of highest sovereignty; <sup>191</sup>  
And in her hand a scepter she doth hold,  
With which she rules the house of God on  
hy,  
And menageth the ever-moving sky,  
And in the same these lower creatures all,  
Subjected to her powre imperiall.

Both heaven and earth obey unto her will,  
And all the creatures which they both con-  
taine:

For of her fulnesse, which the world doth  
fill,

They all partake, and do in state remaine,  
As their great Maker did at first ordaine, <sup>201</sup>  
Through observation of her high behest,  
By which they first were made, and still  
increast.

The fairenesse of her face no tongue can  
tell;

For she the daughters of all wemens race,  
And angels eke, in beautie doth excell,  
Sparkled on her from Gods owne glorious  
face,

And more increast by her owne goodly  
grace,

That it doth farre exceed all humane  
thought,

Ne can on earth compared be to ought. <sup>210</sup>

Ne could that painter (had he lived yet)  
Which pictured Venus with so curious quill  
That all posteritie admyred it,  
Have purtrayd this, for all his maistring  
skill;

Ne she her selfe, had she remained still,  
And were as faire as fabling wits do fayne,  
Could once come neare this Beauty sover-  
ayne.

But had those wits, the wonders of their  
dayes,

Or that sweete Teian poet which did spend  
His plenteous vaine in setting forth her  
praise, <sup>220</sup>

Seene but a glims of this which I pretend,  
How wondrously would he her face com-  
mend,

Above that idole of his fayning thought,  
That all the world shold with his rimes be  
fraught!

How then dare I, the novice of his art,  
Presume to picture so divine a wight,  
Or hope t' expresse her least perfections  
part,

Whose beautie filles the heavens with her  
light,

And darkes the earth with shadow of her  
sight?

Ah! gentle Muse, thou art too weake and  
faint, <sup>230</sup>

The pourtraict of so heavenly hew to paint.

Let angels, which her goodly face behold  
And see at will, her soveraigne praises  
sing,

And those most sacred mysteries unfold  
Of that faire love of mightie Heavens King.  
Enough is me t' admyre so heavenly thing,  
And being thus with her huge love possest,  
In th' only wonder of her selfe to rest.

But who so may, thrise happie man him hold  
Of all on earth, whom God so much doth  
grace, <sup>240</sup>

And lets his owne Beloved to behold:  
For in the view of her celestiall face  
All joy, all blisse, all happinesse have place,  
Ne ought on earth can want unto the wight  
Who of her selfe can win the wishfull sight.

For she out of her secret treasury  
Plentie of riches forth on him will powre,  
Even heavenly riches, which there hidden ly

Within the closet of her chastest bowre, <sup>249</sup>  
 Th' eternall portion of her precious dowre,  
 Which Mighty God hath given to her free,  
 And to all those which thereof worthy  
 bee.

None thereof worthy be, but those whom  
 shee  
 Vouchsafeth to her presence to receave,  
 And letteth them her lovely face to see,  
 Wherof such wondrous pleasures they conceave,  
 And sweete contentment, that it doth be-  
 reave  
 Their soule of sense, through infinite  
 delight,  
 And them transport from flesh into the  
 spright.

In which they see such admirable things,  
 As carries them into an extasy, <sup>261</sup>  
 And heare such heavenly notes, and carol-  
 ings  
 Of Gods high praise, that filles the brasen  
 sky,  
 And feele such joy and pleasure inwardly,  
 That maketh them all worldly cares for-  
 get,  
 And onely thinke on that before them  
 set.

Ne from thenceforth doth any fleshly sense,  
 Or idle thought of earthly things remaine;  
 But all that earst seemd sweet seemes now  
 offense,  
 And all that pleased earst now seemes to  
 paine: <sup>270</sup>  
 Their joy, their comfort, their desire, their  
 gaine,  
 Is fixed all on that which now they see;  
 All other sights but fayned shadowes bee.

And that faire lampe, which useth to  
 enflame  
 The hearts of men with selfe consuming  
 fyre,

Thenceforth seemes fowle, and full of sin-  
 full blame;  
 And all that pompe, to which proud minds  
 aspyre  
 By name of honor, and so much desyre,  
 Seemes to them basenesse, and all riches  
 drosse, <sup>279</sup>  
 And all mirth sadnesse, and all lucre losse.

So full their eyes are of that glorious sight,  
 And senses fraught with such satietie,  
 That in nought else on earth they can  
 delight,  
 But in th' aspect of that felicitie,  
 Which they have written in their inward  
 ey;  
 On which they feed, and in their fastened  
 mynd  
 All happie joy and full contentment fynd.

Ah! then, my hungry soule, which long hast  
 fed  
 On idle fancies of thy foolish thought,  
 And, with false Beauties flattring bait  
 misled, <sup>290</sup>  
 Hast after vaine deceitfull shadowes  
 sought,  
 Which all are fled, and now have left thee  
 nought  
 But late repentance, through thy follies  
 prief;  
 Ah! ceasse to gaze on matter of thy grief.

And looke at last up to that Sovereaine  
 Light,  
 From whose pure beams al perfect Beauty  
 springs,  
 That kindleth love in every godly spright,  
 Even the love of God, which loathing  
 brings  
 Of this vile world and these gay seeming  
 things;  
 With whose sweete pleasures being so  
 possest, <sup>300</sup>  
 Thy straying thoughts henceforth for ever  
 rest.

PROTHALAMION  
OR  
A SPOUSALL VERSE MADE BY  
EDM. SPENSER

IN HONOUR OF THE DOUBLE MARIAGE OF THE TWO HONORABLE & VERTUOUS  
LADIES, THE LADIE ELIZABETH AND THE LADIE KATHERINE SOMERSET,  
DAUGHTERS TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE OF WORCES-  
TER AND ESPOUSED TO THE TWO WORTHIE GENTLEMEN  
MASTER HENRY GILFORD, AND MASTER WILLIAM  
PETER, ESQUYERS

AT LONDON  
PRINTED FOR WILLIAM PONSONBY  
1596

[The event celebrated in the *Prothalamion* must have occurred some time after the return of Essex from Cadiz in mid-August, 1596. It would seem to have been a ceremonial visit of the two prospective brides to Essex House, not long before their wedding. They evidently proceeded in barges by the river, probably upstream with the tide from the court at Greenwich, accompanied in the latter part of their route by swarms of those smaller craft which then thronged the main highway of London.

In this poem Spenser has refined upon the stanza-form which he invented for the *Epithalamion*. He has brought it to virtual uniformity of structure by discarding most of those small diversities of detail between strophe and strophe which, in the earlier poem, mark his first invention. To the late Professor Palgrave this revised form seemed the more delightfully and

delicately cadenced. There will probably be those, however, for whom the frank irregularities of the first ode, more felt than distinctly observed, will have the greater charm, will seem not unlike those irregularities that enrich, without disturbing, the orderliness of certain great mediæval façades.

Unlike the stanza of the *Faery Queen*, these strophes have not found imitators, perhaps because few later poets have united fecundity and elaborateness of art so perfectly as Spenser. One may detect their influence upon *Lycidas*, but hardly more at large. Other poets of the time contented themselves with shorter or easier forms; and then came the bastard Pindaric ode, which for over a hundred years remained the type specially appropriated to larger lyric themes. In the later 'revivals' they were passed by.]

CALME was the day, and through the trem-  
bling ayre  
Sweete breathing Zephyrus did softly  
play,  
A gentle spirit, that lightly did delay  
Hot Titans beames, which then did glyster  
fayre:  
When I, whom sullein care,  
Through discontent of my long fruitlesse  
stay  
In princes court, and expectation vayne  
Of idle hopes, which still doe fly away,

Like empty shaddowes, did afflict my  
brayne,  
Walkt forth to ease my payne  
Along the shoare of silver streaming  
Themmes;  
Whose ruttie bancke, the which his river  
hemmes,  
Was paynted all with variable flowers,  
And all the meades adorn'd with daintie  
gemmes,  
Fit to decke maydens bowres,  
And crowne their paramours,



Against the brydale day, which is not  
long:

Sweete Themmes, runne softly, till I  
end my song.

There, in a meadow, by the rivers side,  
A flocke of nymphes I chaunced to espy, 20  
All lovely daughters of the flood thereby,  
With goodly greenish locks all loose untyde,  
As each had bene a bryde:

And each one had a little wicker basket,  
Made of fine twigs entrayled curiously,  
In which they gathered flowers to fill their  
flasket;

And with fine fingers cropt full feateously  
The tender stalkes on hye.

Of every sort, which in that meadow grew,  
They gathered some; the violet pallid blew,  
The little dazie, that at evening closes, 31  
The virgin lillie, and the primrose trew,

With store of vermeil roses,  
To decke their bridegromes posies

Against the brydale day, which was not  
long:

Sweete Themmes, runne softly, till I  
end my song.

With that I saw two swannes of goodly  
hewe

Come softly swimming downe along the  
lee;

Two fairer birds I yet did never see:

The snow which doth the top of Pindus  
strew 40

Did never whiter shew,

Nor Jove himselve, when he a swan would  
be

For love of Leda, whiter did appear:

Yet Leda was, they say, as white as he,

Yet not so white as these, nor nothing neare:

So purely white they were,

That even the gentle streame, the which  
them bare,

Seem'd foule to them, and bad his billowes  
spare

To wet their silken feathers, least they  
might

Soyle their fayre plumes with water not so  
fayre, 50

And marre their beauties bright,

That shone as heavens light,

Against their brydale day, which was not  
long:

Sweete Themmes, runne softly, till I end  
my song.

Eftsoones the nymphes, which now had  
flowers their fill,

Ran all in haste to see that silver brood,  
As they came floating on the christal flood;  
Whom when they sawe, they stood amazed  
still,

Their wondring eyes to fill.

Them seem'd they never saw a sight so  
fayre, 60

Of fowles so lovely, that they sure did  
deeme

Them heavenly borne, or to be that same  
payre

Which through the skie draw Venus silver  
teeme;

For sure they did not seeme

To be begot of any earthly seede,

But rather angels or of angels breede:

Yet were they bred of Somers-heat, they  
say,

In sweetest season, when each flower and  
weede

The earth did fresh aray;

So fresh they seem'd as day, 70

Even as their brydale day, which was not  
long:

Sweete Themmes, runne softly, till I end  
my song.

Then forth they all out of their baskets  
drew

Great store of flowers, the honour of the  
field,

That to the sense did fragrant odours yeild,  
All which upon those goodly birds they  
threw,

And all the waves did strew,

That like old Peneus waters they did  
seeme,

When downe along by pleasant Tempes  
shore,

Scattred with flowres, through Thessaly  
they streeme, 80

That they appeare, through lillies plenteous  
store,

Like a brydes chamber flore.

Two of those nymphes, meane while, two  
garlands bound

Of freshest flowres which in that mead  
they found,

The which presenting all in trim array,  
Their snowie forcheads therewithall they  
crownd,

Whil'st one did sing this lay,

Prepar'd against that day,

Against their brydale day, which was not  
long:

Sweete Themmes, runne softly, till I end  
my song. 90

'Ye gentle birdes, the worlds faire orna-  
ment,  
And heavens glorie, whom this happie  
hower  
Doth leade unto your lovers blissfull bower,  
Joy may you have and gentle hearts con-  
tent

Of your loves couplement:  
And let faire Venus, that is Queene of  
Love,  
With her heart-quelling sonne upon you  
smile,  
Whose smile, they say, hath vertue to  
remove

All loves dislike, and friendships faultie  
guile

For ever to assoile. 100

Let endlesse peace your steadfast hearts  
accord,

And blessed plentie wait upon your bord;  
And let your bed with pleasures chast  
abound,

That fruitfull issue may to you afford,  
Which may your foes confound,

And make your joyes redound,  
Upon your brydale day, which is not long:

Sweete Themmes, run softlie, till I end  
my song.'

So ended she; and all the rest around  
To her redoubled that her undersong, 110  
Which said, their bridale daye should not  
be long.

And gentle Eccho from the neighbour  
ground

Their accents did resound.

So forth those joyous birdes did passe along,  
Adowne the lee, that to them murmurde  
low,

As he would speake, but that he lackt a tong,  
Yeat did by signes his glad affection show,  
Making his streame run slow.

And all the foule which in his flood did  
dwell

Gan flock about these twaine, that did ex-  
cell 120

The rest so far as Cynthia doth shend  
The lesser starres. So they, enranged well,  
Did on those two attend,  
And their best service lend,

Against their wedding day, which was not  
long:

Sweete Themmes, run softly, till I end  
my song.

At length they all to mery London came,  
To mery London, my most kyndly nurse,  
That to me gave this lifes first native sourse;  
Though from another place I take my name,  
An house of auncient fame. 131

There when they came, whereas those  
bricky towres,

The which on Themmes brode aged backe  
doe ryde,

Where now the studious lawyers have their  
bowers,

There whylome wont the Templer Knights  
to hyde,

Till they decayd through pride:

Next whereunto there standes a stately  
place,

Where oft I gayned giftes and goodly grace  
Of that great lord which therein wont to  
dwell,

Whose want too well now feeles my  
freendles case: 140

But ah! here fits not well

Olde woes, but joyes to tell,

Against the bridale daye, which is not long:

Sweete Themmes, runne softly, till I end  
my song.

Yet therein now doth lodge a noble peer,  
Great Englands glory and the worlds wide  
wonder,

Whose dreadfull name late through all  
Spaine did thunder,

And Hercules two pillors standing neere  
Did make to quake and feare.

Faire branch of honor, flower of cheval-  
rie, 150

That fillest England with thy triumphes  
fame,

Joy have thou of thy noble victorie,  
And endlesse happinesse of thine owne  
name

That promiseth the same:

That through thy prowesse and victorious  
armes

Thy country may be freed from forraine  
harmes;

And great Elisaes glorious name may ring  
Through al the world, fil'd with thy wide  
alarmes,

Which some brave Muse may sing

To ages following, 160  
Upon the brydale day, which is not long:  
Sweete Themmes, runne softly, till I end  
my song.

From those high towers this noble lord  
issuing,  
Like radiant Hesper when his golden hayre  
In th' ocean billowes he hath bathed fayre,  
Descended to the rivers open vewing,  
With a great traine ensuing.  
Above the rest were goodly to bee seene  
Two gentle knights of lovely face and  
feature,  
Beseeing well the bower of anie queene, 170

With gifts of wit and ornaments of nature,  
Fit for so goodly stature:  
That like the twins of Jove they seem'd in  
sight,  
Which decke the bauldricke of the heavens  
bright.  
They two, forth pacing to the rivers side,  
Received those two faire brides, their  
loves delight,  
Which, at th' appointed tyde,  
Each one did make his bryde,  
Against their brydale day, which is not  
long:  
Sweete Themmes, runne softly, till I end  
my song. 180

FINIS

## COMMENDATORY SONNETS

[The first of these sonnets was probably no more than a friendly address, not meant for publication. The others were contributed, by way of compliment, to various books of the time.]

I. Appended by Harvey to 'Foure Letters, and certaine Sonnets, especially touching Robert Greene, and other parties by him abused, etc.' 1592.

II. The first of four sonnets prefixed to 'Nennio, or A Treatise of Nobility, etc. Written in Italian by that famous Doctor and worthy Knight, Sir John Baptista Nenna of

Bari. Done into English by William Jones, Gent.' 1595.

III. The first of three sonnets prefixed to the 'Historie of George Castriot, surnamed Scanderbeg, King of Albanie: Containing his famous actes, etc. Newly translated out of French into English by Z. I. Gentleman.' 1596.

IV. The first of three sonnets and a *huitain* prefixed to 'The Commonwealth and Government of Venice. Written by the Cardinall Gaspar Contareno, and translated out of Italian into English by Lewes Lewkenor, Esquire.' 1599.]

## I

*To the right worshipfull, my singular good frend,  
Master Gabriell Harvey, Doctor of the Lawes.*

HARVEY, the happy above happiest men  
I read: that, sitting like a looker-on  
Of this worldes stage, doest note with  
critique pen

The sharpe dislikes of each condition:  
And, as one carelesse of suspition,  
Ne fawnest for the favour of the great;  
Ne fearest foolish reprehension  
Of faulty men, which daunger to thee  
threat;

But freely doest of what thee list en-  
treat,

Like a great lord of peerelesse liberty;  
Lifting the good up to high Honours  
seat,

And the evill damning evermore to dy.

For life and death is in thy doomeful  
writing:

So thy renowme lives ever by endighting.

Dublin, this xvij. of July, 1586.

Your devoted friend, during life,  
EDMUND SPENCER.

## II

WHO so wil seeke by right deserts t'attaine  
Unto the type of true nobility,  
And not by painted shewes, and titles vaine  
Derived farre from famous auncestrie,  
Behold them both in their right visnomy  
Here truly pourtray'd as they ought to be,  
And striving both for termes of dignitie,  
To be advanced highest in degree.  
And when thou doost with equall insight  
see



The ods twixt both, of both then deem  
 aright,  
 And chuse the better of them both to thee:  
 But thauks to him that it deserves behight;  
 To Nenna first, that first this worke  
 created,  
 And next to Jones, that truely it trans-  
 lated.

ED. SPENSER.

III

*Upon the Historie of George Castriot, alias  
 Scanderbeg, King of the Epirots, translated  
 into English.*

WHEREFORE doth vaine Antiquitie so vaunt  
 Her ancient monuments of mightie peeres,  
 And old herôes, which their world did  
 daunt  
 With their great deedes, and fild their  
 childrens eares?  
 Who, rapt with wonder of their famous  
 praise,  
 Admire their statues, their colossoes great,  
 Their rich triumphall areks which they did  
 raise,  
 Their huge pyramids, which do heaven  
 threat.  
 Lo! one, whom later age hath brought to  
 light,  
 Matchable to the greatest of those great:

Great both by name, and great in power  
 and might,  
 And meriting a meere triumphant seate.  
 The scourge of Turkes, and plague of  
 infidels,  
 Thy acts, O Scanderbeg, this volume tels.  
 EDM. SPENSER.

IV

THE antique Babel, empresse of the East,  
 Upreard her buildinges to the threatned  
 skie:  
 And second Babel, tyrant of the West,  
 Her ayry towers upraised much more high.  
 But, with the weight of their own surque-  
 dry,  
 They both are fallen, that all the earth did  
 feare,  
 And buried now in their own ashes ly;  
 Yet shewing by their heapes how great  
 they were.  
 But in their place doth now a third appeare,  
 Fayre Venice, flower of the last worlds  
 delight;  
 And next to them in beauty draweth neare,  
 But farre exceeds in policie of right.  
 Yet not so fayre her buildinges to behold  
 As Lewkenors stile, that hath her beau-  
 tie told.

EDM. SPENCER.

## APPENDIX

### I

#### VERSES FROM THE *THEATRE* OF 1569

[It is only within the last decade that the history of Van der Noot's *Theatre* has been known in full. Since the accounts of it in the various standard biographies of Spenser, therefore, are more or less misleading, it may be given here in some detail. The facts are set forth at length in a Flemish monograph, published at Antwerp in 1899, 'Leven en Werken van Jonker Jan Van der Noot, door Aug. Vermeulen.' The author of this excellent study is not, however, to be held responsible for all the conclusions that are set down here.

In 1569 there was published in London a small book with a big title, which ran: 'A Theatre, wherein be represented as wel the miseries and calamities that follow the voluptuous worldlings as also the greates joyes and plesures which the faithfull do enjoy. An argument both profitable and delectable to all that sincerely love the Word of God. Devised by S. John vander Noodt.' The dedication bore the date of May 25. Its author was a Flemish refugee, — a wealthy patrician of Antwerp, who, becoming disastrously prominent among the Calvinists of his native city, had in 1567 fled from the Spanish authorities into England. There, in 1568, he had composed a bitter pamphlet against Rome, which he had put forth, first in Flemish, and then, toward the close of that year, in what was to all the more cultivated of his compatriots a second mother tongue, French. Some seven months later, desirous probably of securing the widest possible audience, he arranged for the translation of his book from French into English, a tongue of which he had no literary control. The title given above is that of this third edition.

The kernel of the book was poetry: first, a translation by Clément Marot of one of Petrarch's *canzoni* ('Standomi un giorno solo alla finestra') under the title of 'Des Visions de Pétrarque'; second, the *Songe* of Joachim Du Bellay, with the omission of sonnets vi, viii, xiii, and xiv; third, four sonnets of his own composition (for he was a poet of distinguished abilities) the matter of which was drawn from the Apocalypse. For the first edition of his book he had translated the French of Marot and Du Bellay into Flemish; for the second, he had, of course, let the French stand. Of his own sonnets he had made two versions, one Flemish and one French. Then there was a long prose commentary upon these various 'visions,' likewise of his own composition in the two tongues.

In the 1569 volume this commentary is given as 'translated out of French into Englishe by Theodore Roest.' In that part of it which refers to the visions of Petrarch we read, 'I [by implication, Roest] have out of the Brabants speache turned them into the Englishe tongue;' in that part which refers to the visions of Du Bellay, 'I have translated them out of Dutch into English:' concerning the translation of the Apocalypse sonnets, we are left to make our own inferences. Comparison of texts, however, shows clearly that the translator of all this poetry, rendered it, as the prose was rendered, direct from the French: what is said about 'the Brabants speache' and 'Dutch' is pure mystification. Furthermore, if these translations from Du Bellay and Petrarch be compared with 'The Visions of Bellay' (p. 125) and 'The Visions of Petrarch, formerly translated' (p. 128), which were published under Spenser's name in 1591, it becomes clear that the latter are not independent renderings of the same French originals, but a mere literary recast of the English verses of 1569. The irregular stanzas of the Petrarch series are reduced to formal sonnets, and so are the blank verse poems of the Bellay series. Such changes as have been made are purely with a view to this transformation. Since it is improbable that even in youth Spenser should thus carefully have made over the work of another man, a mere translator, and that, having done so, his recast should have survived to be published years later in his name, the inference seems to be clear that the verses in the *Theatre* of 1569 are his.

By way of counter-argument, it has been pointed out that, whereas the translation of 1569 is sound and accurate, the acknowledged work of Spenser in this field ('The Ruins of Rome' and the four sonnets that were omitted in the *Theatre*, but rendered in the later 'Visions of Bellay') is very loose, and reveals at times exceedingly imperfect acquaintance with French, acquaintance so imperfect that he cannot be thought capable of the excellent versions in the *Theatre*. To argue thus, however, is to forget, among other things, the conditions under which, in 1569, he may be presumed to have done his work. For the prose of the *Theatre*, Van der Noot had found a capable translator in Roest; but, he being apparently no versifier, it was necessary to find some one else for the poetry. If this assistant knew French well, so much the better; if he did not, he could be helped by his

chief; in any case, his work would be supervised, to secure accuracy. What was chiefly necessary was that he should be able to turn good English verse. For this 'job' whoever had charge of the book employed Spenser, then no more than a bright schoolboy, about to go

up to the university. He was in no way a principal in the main undertaking; when the volume came out, therefore, it nowhere gave his name. He had done his work and received his pay: there was no need to acknowledge his services.]

## EPIGRAMS

## I

BEING one day at my window all alone,  
So many strange things hapned me to see,  
As much it grieveth me to thinke thereon.  
At my right hande, a hinde appearede to me,  
So faire as mought the greatest god delite:  
Two egre dogs dyd hir pursue in chace,  
Of whiche the one was black, the other white.  
With deadly force, so in their cruell race  
They pinchte the haunches of this gentle beast,  
That at the last, and in shorte time, I spied,  
Under a rocke, where she (alas!) opprest,  
Fell to the grounde, and there untimely dide.  
Cruell death vanquishing so noble beautie  
Oft makes me waile so harde a destinie.

## II

AFTER at sea a tall ship dyd appere,  
Made all of heben and white ivorie;  
The sailes of golde, of silke the tackle were.  
Milde was the winde, calme seemed the sea to  
be:  
The skie eche where did shew full bright and  
faire.  
With riche treasures this gay ship freighted  
was.  
But sodaine storme did so turmoyle the aire,  
And tumbled up the sea, that she, alas!  
Strake on a rocke that under water lay.  
O great misfortune! O great grieve! I say,  
Thus in one moment to see lost and drownde  
So great riches, as lyke can not be founde.

## III

THEN heavenly branches did I see arise,  
Out of a fresh and lusty laurell tree  
Amidde the yong grene wood. Of Paradise  
Some noble plant I thought my selfe to see,  
Suche store of birdes therein yshrouded were,  
Chaunting in shade their sundry melodie.  
My sprites were ravisht with these pleasures  
there.

While on this laurell fixed was mine eye,  
The skie gan every where to overcast,  
And darkned was the welkin all aboute;  
When sodaine flash of heavens fire outbrast,  
And rent this royall tree quite by the roote.  
Which makes me much and ever to complaine,  
For no such shadow shal be had againe.

## IV

WITHIN this wood, out of the rocke did rise  
A spring of water mildely romblyng downe,  
Whereto approched not in any wise  
The homely shepherde, nor the ruder clowne,  
But many Muses, and the Nymphes withall,  
That sweetely in accorde did tune their voice

Unto the gentle sounding of the waters fall:  
The sight wherof dyd make my heart re-  
joyce.

But while I toke herein my chiefe delight,  
I sawe (alas!) the gaping earth devoure  
The spring, the place, and all cleane out of sight.  
Whiche yet agreves my heart even to this houre.

## V

I SAW a phoenix in the wood alone,  
With purple wings and crest of golden hew;  
Straunge birde he was; wherby I thought anone,  
That of some heavenly wight I had the vew:  
Untill he came unto the broken tree  
And to the spring that late devoured was.  
What say I more? Eche thing at length we  
see

Doth passe away: the phoenix there, alas!  
Spying the tree destroyde, the water dride,  
Himselfe smote with his beake, as in dis-  
daine,  
And so forthwith in great despite he dide.  
For pitie and love my heart yet burnes in paine.

## VI

AT last, so faire a ladie did I spie,  
That in thinking on hir I burne and quake.  
On herbes and floures she walked pensively,  
Milde, but yet love she proudly did forsake.  
White seemed hir robes, yet woven so they  
were,

As snowe and golde together had bene wrought.  
Above the waste a darke cloude shrouded  
hir,

A stinging serpent by the heele hir caught;  
Wherewith she languisht as the gathered floure;  
And well assurde she mounted up to joy.  
Alas! in earth so nothing doth endure,  
But bitter grieve, that dothe our hearts anoy.

## VII

MY song, thus now in thy conclusions,  
Say boldly that these same six visions  
Do yelde unto thy lorde a sweete request,  
Ere it be long within the earth to rest.

## SONETS

## I

It was the time when rest, the gift of gods,  
Sweetely sliding into the eyes of men,  
Doth drowne in the forgetfulnesse of slepe  
The carefull travailes of the painefull day:  
Then did a ghost appeare before mine eyes  
On that great rivers banke that runnes by  
Rome,  
And calling me then by my propre name,  
He bade me upwarde unto heaven looke.  
He cride to me, and 'Loe! (quod he) beholde



What under this great temple is containde,  
 Loe! all is nought but flying vanitie.  
 So I, knowing the worldes unstedfastnesse,  
 Sith onely God surmountes the force of tyme,  
 In God alone do stay my confidence.

## II

On hill, a frame an hundred cubites hie  
 I sawe, an hundred pillers eke about,  
 All of fine diamant decking the front,  
 And fashiond were they all in Dorike wise.  
 Of bricke, ne yet of marble was the wall,  
 But shining christall, which from top to base  
 Out of deepe vaute threw forth a thousand rayes  
 Upon an hundred steps of purest golde.  
 Golde was the parget: and the sielyng eke  
 Did shine all scaly with fine golden plates.  
 The floor was jaspis, and of emeraude.  
 O worldes vaineesse! A sodein earthquake,  
 loe!  
 Shaking the hill even from the bottome deepe,  
 Threwe downe this building to the lowest stone.

## III

THEN did appeare to me a sharped spire  
 Of diamant, ten feete eche way in square,  
 Justly proportionde up unto his height,  
 So hie as mought an archer reache with sight.  
 Upon the top therof was set a pot  
 Made of the metall that we honour most.  
 And in this golden vessell couched were  
 The ashes of a mightie emperour.  
 Upon foure corners of the base there lay,  
 To beare the frame, foure great lions of golde:  
 A worthie tombe for such a worthie corps.  
 Alas! nought in this worlde but grieve endures.  
 A sodaine tempest from the heaven, I saw,  
 With flashe stroke downe this noble monument.

## IV

I SAW raisde up on pillars of ivorie,  
 Whereof the bases were of richest golde,  
 The chapters alabaster, christall frises,  
 The double front of a triumphall arke.  
 On eche side portraide was a victorie,  
 With golden wings in habite of a nymph,  
 And set on hie upon triumphing chaire  
 The auncient glorie of the Romane lordes.  
 The worke did shewe it selfe not wrought by  
 man,  
 But rather made by his owne skilfull hande  
 That forgeth thunder darts for Jove his sire.  
 Let me no more see faire thing under heaven,  
 Sith I have seene so faire a thing as this,  
 With sodaine falling broken all to dust.

## V

THEN I behelde the faire Dodonian tree,  
 Upon seven hilles throw forth his gladsome  
 shade,  
 And conquerers bedecked with his leaves  
 Along the bankes of the Italian streame.  
 There many auncient trophees were erect,  
 Many a spoile, and many goodly signes,  
 To shewe the greatnesse of the stately race,  
 That erst descended from the Trojan bloud.  
 Ravisht I was to see so rare a thing,

When barbarous villaines, in disordred heape,  
 Outraged the honour of these noble bowes.  
 I hearde the tronke to grone under the wedge.  
 And since I saw the roote in hie disdaine  
 Sende forth againe a twinne of forked trees.

## VI

I SAW the birde that dares beholde the sunne,  
 With feeble flight venture to mount to heaven:  
 By more and more she gan to trust hir wings;  
 Still folowing th' example of hir damme.  
 I saw hir rise, and with a larger flight  
 Surmount the toppes even of the hiest hilles,  
 And pierce the cloudes, and with hir wings to  
 reache  
 The place where is the temple of the gods.  
 There was she lost, and sodenly I saw  
 Where tombling through the aire in lompe of  
 fire,  
 All flaming downe she fell upon the plaine.  
 I saw hir bodie turned all to dust,  
 And saw the foule that shunnes the cherefull  
 light  
 Out of hir ashes as a worme arise.

## VII

THEN all astonned with this nightly ghost,  
 I saw an hideous body big and strong:  
 Long was his beard, and side did hang his hair,  
 A grisly forehed and Saturnelike face.  
 Leaning against the belly of a pot,  
 He shed a water, whose outgushing streame  
 Ran flowing all along the creekie shoare  
 Where once the Troyan duke with Turnus  
 fought.  
 And at his feete a bitch wolfe did give sucke  
 To two yong babes. In his right hand he bare  
 The tree of peace, in left the conquering palme,  
 His head was garnisht with the laurel bow.  
 Then sodenly the palme and olive fell,  
 And faire greene laurel witherd up and dide.

## VIII

HARD by a rivers side, a wailing nimphe,  
 Folding hir armes with thousand sighs to  
 heaven,  
 Did tune hir plaint to falling rivers sound,  
 Renting hir faire visage and golden haire.  
 'Where is (quod she) this whilome honored  
 face?  
 Where is thy glory and the auncient praise,  
 Where all worldes hap was reposed,  
 When erst of gods and man I worshipt was?  
 Alas! suffisde it not that civile bate  
 Made me the spoile and bootie of the world,  
 But this new Hydra, mete to be assailde  
 Even by an hundred such as Hercules,  
 With seven springing heds of monstrous crimes,  
 So many Neroes and Caligulaes  
 Must still bring forth to rule this croked shore?'

## IX

UPON a hill I saw a kindled flame,  
 Mounting like waves with triple point to heaven,  
 Which of incense of precious cedar tree  
 With balmelike odor did perfume the aire.  
 A bird all white, well fetherd on hir winges,

Hereout did flie up to the throne of gods,  
And singing with most pleasant melodie  
She climbed up to heaven in the smoke.  
Of this faire fire the faire dispersed rayes  
Threw forth abrode a thousand shining leames;  
When sodain dropping of a golden shoure  
Gan quench the glystering flame. O grevous  
change!

That which erstwhile so pleasaunt scent did  
yelde

Of sulphure now did breathe corrupted smel.

## X

I SAW a fresh spring rise out of a rocke,  
Clere as christall against the sunny beames,  
The bottome yellow like the shining land,  
That golden Pactol drives upon the plaine.  
It seemed that arte and nature strived to joyne  
There in one place all pleasures of the eye.  
There was to heare a noise alluring slepe  
Of many accordes more swete than mermaids  
song.

The seates and benches shone as ivorie;  
An hundred nymphes sate side by side about;  
When from nie hilles a naked rout of faunes  
With hideous cry assembled on the place,  
Which with their feete uncleane the water  
fouled,  
Threw down the seats, and drove the nimphs to  
flight.

## XI

At length, even at the time when Morpheus  
Most truly doth appeare unto our eyes,  
Wearie to see th' inconstance of the heavens,  
I saw the great Typhæus sister come.  
Hir head full bravely with a morian armed,  
In majestie she seemde to matche the gods.  
And on the shore, harde by a violent streame,  
She raise a trophee over all the worlde.  
An hundred vanquisht kings gronde at hir feete,  
Their armes in shamefull wise bounde at their  
backes.

While I was with so dreadfull sight afrayde,  
I saw the heavens warre against hir tho;  
And seing hir stricken fall with clap of thunder,  
With so great noyse I start in sodaine wonder.

## I

I SAW an ugly beast come from the sea,  
That seven heads, ten crownes, ten hornes did  
beare,

Having theron the vile blaspheming name.  
The cruell leopard she resembled much:  
Feete of a beare, a lions throte she had.  
The mightie Dragon gave to hir his power.  
One of hir heads yet there I did espie,  
Still freshly bleeding of a grievous wounde.  
One cride aloude. 'What one is like (quod he)  
'This honoured Dragon, or may him withstande?'  
And then came from the sea a savage beast,  
With Dragons speche, and shewde his force by  
fire,

With wondrous signes to make all wights adore  
The beast, in setting of hir image up.

## II

I SAW a woman sitting on a beast  
Before mine eyes, of orange colour hew:  
Horroure and dreadfull name of blasphemie  
Filde hir with pride. And seven heads I saw;  
Ten hornes also the stately beast did beare.  
She seemde with glorie of the scarlet faire,  
And with fine perle and golde puffed up in heart.  
The wine of hooredome in a cup she bare.  
The name of myserie writ in hir face;  
The blood of martyrs dere were hir delite.  
Most fierce and fell this woman seemde to me.  
An angell then descending downe from Heaven  
With thondring voice cride out aloude, and  
sayd,  
'Now for a truth great Babylon is fallen.'

## III

THEN might I see upon a white horse set  
The faithfull man with flaming countenance:  
His head did shine with crownes set therupon;  
The Worde of God made him a noble name.  
His precious robe I saw embrued with blood.  
Then saw I from the heaven on horses white,  
A puissant armie come the selfe same way.  
Then cried a shining angell, as me thought,  
That birdes from aire descending downe on  
earth  
Should warre upon the kings, and eate their  
flesh.

Then did I see the beast and kings also  
Joinyng their force to slea the faithfull man.  
But this fierce hatefull beast and all hir traine  
Is pitillesse throwne downe in pit of fire.

## IV

I SAW new Earth, new Heaven, sayde Saint  
John.

And loe! the sea (quod he) is now no more.  
The holy citie of the Lorde from hye  
Descendeth, garnisht as a loved spouse.  
A voice then sayde, 'Beholde the bright abode  
Of God and men. For he shall be their God,  
And all their teares he shall wipe cleane away.'  
Hir brightnesse greater was than can be founde.  
Square was this citie, and twelve gates it had.  
Eche gate was of an orient perfect pearle,  
The houses golde, the pavement precious stone.  
A lively streame, more cleere than christall is,  
Ranne through the mid, sprong from trium-  
phant seat.

There growes lifes fruite unto the Churches  
good.

## II

### THE ORIGINAL CONCLUSION TO BOOK III OF THE FAERY QUEEN

[The following stanzas are the original conclusion to Book III of the *Faery Queen*, as published in 1590. When Spenser came to push on with his tale, he decided that, for the sake of continuity, the reunion of Scudamour and Amoret had better be postponed. He therefore substituted the three stanzas that now conclude the book, and laid his first ending by, with the



purpose, probably, of using it when the lovers should at last be brought together. This event falls at the close of canto ix of Book IV. There there is both room and need for some account of the meeting. It is more than likely that the poet meant to fit his stanzas to this new context, but, with typical carelessness, in the end left the gap unfilled.]

## XLIII

At last she came unto the place, where late  
She left Sir Scudamour in great distresse,  
Twixt dolour and despight halfe desperate  
Of his loves succour, of his owne redresse,  
And of the hardie Britomarts successe:  
There on the cold earth him now thrown she  
found,  
In wilfull anguish, and dead heavinesse,  
And to him cold; whose voices known sound  
Soone as he heard, himself he reared light from  
ground.

## XLIV

There did he see, that most on earth him joyd,  
His dearest love, the comfort of his dayes,  
Whose too long absence him had sore annoyd,  
And wearied his life with dull delays:  
Straight he upstart from the loathed layes,  
And to her ran with hasty egernesse,  
Like as a deare, that greedily embayes  
In the coole soile, after long thirstinesse,  
Which he in chace endured hath, now nigh  
breathlesse.

## XLV

Lightly he clipt her twixt his armes twaine,  
And streightly did embrace her body bright,  
Her body, late the prison of sad paine,  
Now the sweet lodge of love and deare delight:  
But she, faire lady, overcommen quight  
Of huge affection, did in pleasure melt,  
And in sweete ravishment poud out her spright:  
No word they spake, nor earthly thing they felt,  
But like two senceless stocks in long embrace-  
ment dwelt.

## XLVI

Had ye them seeue, ye would have surely  
thought,  
That they had bene that faire hermaphrodite,  
Which that rich Romane of white marble  
wrought,  
And in his costly bath causd to bee site:  
So seemd those two, as growne together quite,  
That Britomart, halfe envying their blesse,  
Was much empassiond in her gentle sprite,  
And to her selfe oft wisht like happinesse:  
In vaine she wisht, that fate n'ould let her yet  
possesse.

## XLVII

Thus doe those lovers with sweet countervayle  
Each other of loves bitter fruit despoile.  
But now my tyme begins to faint and fayle,  
All woxen weary of their journall toyle:  
Therefore I will their sweatie yokes assoyle,  
At this same furrowes end, till a new day:

And ye, faire swayns, after your long turmoyle,  
Now cease your worke, and at your pleasure  
play:  
Now cease your worke; tomorrow is an holy  
day.

## III

## LETTERS FROM SPENSER TO GABRIEL HARVEY

[The following letters were printed in 1580, with others from Harvey to Spenser, in two independent volumes, each bearing the imprint of Bynneman. (1) 'Three proper and wittie familiar Letters: lately passed betwene two Unversitie men: touching the earthquake in Aprill last, and our English reformed versifying.' (2) 'Two other very commendable Letters, of these same mens writing: both touching the foresaid artificiall versifying, and certain other particulars. More lately delivered unto the Printer.' The first of Spenser's letters appeared in the later volume; the second, together with the letter of Harvey from which an extract is here given, in the earlier.]

*To the Worshipfull his very singular good friend,  
Maister G. H., Fellow of Trinitie Hall in Cambridge.*

GOOD MASTER G.: I perceive by your most courteous and frendly letters your good will to be no lesse in deed than I alwayes esteemed. In recompence wherof, think, I beseech you, that I wil spare neither speech, nor wryting, nor aught else, whensoever and wheresoever occasion shal be offred me: yea, I will not stay till it be offred, but will seeke it, in al that possibly I may. And that you may perceive how much your counsel in al things prevaileth to with me, and how altogether I am ruled and over-ruled thereby, I am now determined to alter mine owne former purpose, and to subscribe to your advizement: being notwithstanding resolved stil to abide your farther resolution. My principal doubts are these. First, I was minded for a while to have intermitted the uttering of my writings; leaste by over-much cloying their noble eares, I should gather a contempt of my self, or else seeme rather for to gaine and commoditie to doe it, for some sweetness that I have already tasted. Then also me seemeth the work too base for his excellent lordship, being made in honour of a private personage unknowne, which of some yl-willers might be upbraided, not to be so worthie as you knowe she is; or the matter not so weightie that it should be offred to so weightie a personage; or the like. The selfe former title stil liketh me well ynough, and your fine addition no lesse. If these and the like doubtles maye be of importaunce in your seeming, to frustrate any parte of your advice, I beseeche you without the leaste selfe love of your own purpose, councell me for the beste: and the rather doe it faithfullly and carefully, for that, in all things, I attribute so muche to your judgement



that I am evermore content to adnihilate mine owne determinations, in respecte thereof. And indeede, for your selfe to, it sitteth with you 40 now to call your wits and senses together (which are alwaies at call) when occasion is so fairely offered of estimation and preferment. For, whiles the yron is hote, it is good striking, and minds of nobles varie, as their estates. *Verum ne quid durius.*

I pray you bethinke you well hereof, good Maister G., and forthwith write me those two or three special points and caveats for the nonce, *De quibus in superioribus illis mellitissimis 50 longissimisque litteris tuis.* Your desire to heare of my late beeing with hir Majestie muste dye in it selfe. As for the two worthy gentlemen, Master Sidney and Master Dyer, they have me, I thanke them, in some use of familiarity: of whom and to whome what speache passeth for youre credite and estimation I leave your selfe to conceive, having alwayes so well conceived of my unfained affection and zeale towards you. And nowe they have 60 proclaimed in their ἀρειωπάγῳ a generall surceasing and silence of balde rymers, and also of the verie beste to: in steade whereof, they have, by authoritie of their whole senate, prescribed certaine lawes and rules of quantities of English sillables for English verse: having had thereof already great practise and drawen mee to their faction. Newe bookes I heare of none, but only of one, that writing a certaine booke called *The Schoole of Abuse*, and dedicating it to Maister 70 Sidney, was for hys labor scorned: if at leaste it be in the goodnesse of that nature to scorne. Suche follie is it, not to regarde aforehande the inclination and qualitie of him to whome wee dedicate oure bookes. Suche mighte I happily incurre, entituling *My Slomber*, and the other pamphlets, unto his honor. I meant them rather to Maister Dyer. But I am, of late, more in love wyth my Englishe versifying than with ryming: whyche I should have done long since, if I would then have followed your coun- 81 cell. *Sed te solum jam tum suspicabar cum Aschamo sapere: nunc aulam video egregios alere poetas Anglicos.* Maister E. K. hartily desireth to be commended unto your worshippes: of whome what accompte he maketh, youre selfe shall hereafter perceive by hys paynefull and dutifull verses of your selfe.

Thus muche was written at Westminster yesternight: but comming this morning, beeyng the sixteenth of October, to Mystresse Kerkess, to have it delivered to the carrier, I re- 92 ceyved youre letter, sente me the laste weeke: whereby I perceive you otherwhiles continue your old exercise of versifying in English: whych glorie I had now thought should have bene onely ours heere at London and the court.

Truste me, your verses I like passingly well, and envye your hidden paines in this kinde, or rather maligne and grudge at your selfe, that would not once imparte so muche to me. But once or twice, you make a breache in Mais- 103 ter Drants rules: *quod tamen condonabimus*

*tanto poetæ, tuæque ipsius maximæ in his rebus auctoritati.* You shall see, when we meete in London, (whiche when it shall be, certifie us,) howe fast I have followed after you in that course: beware, leaste in time I overtake you. *Veruntamen te solum sequar, (ut sæpenumero sum professor,) nunquam sane assequar, dum vivam.* And nowe requite I you with the like, not with the verie beste, but with the 113 verie shortest, namely with a few *Iambickes*. I dare warrant, they be precisely perfect for the feete (as you can easily judge) and varie not one inch from the rule. I will imparte yours to Maister Sidney and Maister Dyer, at my nexte going to the courte. I praye you, keepe mine close to your selfe, or your verie entire friends, Maister Preston, Maister Still, and the reste. 121

*Iambicum Trimeterum.*

Unhappie Verse, the wisesse of my unhappie state,

Make thy selfe fluttering wings of thy fast flying

Thought, and fly forth unto my love, wheresoever she be:

Whether lying reastlesse in heavy bedde, or else

Sitting so cheerelesse at the cheerfull boorde, or else

Playing alone carelesse on hir heavenlie virginals.

If in bed, tell hir, that my eyes can take no reste:

If at boorde, tell hir, that my mouth can eate no meate:

If at hir virginals, tel hir, I can heare no mirth. 130

Asked why? say: Waking love suffereth no sleepe:

Say, that raging love dothe appall the weake stomacke:

Say, that lamenting love marreth the muscall.

Tell hir, that hir pleasures were wonte to lull me asleepe:

Tell hir, that hir beautie was wonte to feede mine eyes:

Tell hir, that hir sweete tongue was wonte to make me mirth.

Nowe doe I nightly waste, wanting my kindly reste:

Nowe doe I dayly starve, wanting my lively foode:

Nowe doe I alwayes dye, wanting thy timely mirth.

And if I waste, who will bewaile my heavy chauce? 140

And if I starve, who will record my cursed end?

And if I dye, who will saye: *This was Immerito?*

I thought once agayne here to have made an ende, with a heartie *Vale*, of the best fashion: but loe! an ylfavoured myschaunce. My last farewell, whereof I made great accompt, and much marvelled you shoulde make no mention thereof, I am nowe tolde, (in the Divel's name,) was thorough one mans negligence quite forgotten, but shoulde nowe undoubtedly have 150 beene sent, whether I hadde come or no. Seing it can now be no otherwise, I pray you take all together, wyth all their faultes: and nowe I hope you will vouchsafe mee an answeare of the largest size, or else I tell you true, you shall bee verie deepe in my debte: notwythstandyng thys other sweete, but shorte letter, and fine, but fewe verses. But I woulde rather I might yet see youre owne good selfe, and receive a reciprocall farewell from your owne sweete 160 mouth.

*Ad ornatissimum virum, multis jamdiu nominibus clarissimum, G. H., Immerito sui, mox in Gallias navigaturi, Εὐρυχεῖν.*

Sic malus egregium, sic non inimicus amicum, Sicque novus veterem jubet ipse poëta poëtam Salvere, ac cælo post secula multa secundo, Jam reducem, cælo mage quam nunc ipse secundo,

Utier. Ecce deus, (modo sit deus ille, renixum Qui vocet in seclus, et juratos perdat amores) Ecce deus mihi clara dedit modo signa marinus, Et sua veligero lenis parat æquora ligno, Mox sulcanda; suas etiam pater Æolus iras 170 Ponit, et ingentes animos Aquilonis — Cuncta vijs sic apta meis: ego solus ineptus. Nam mihi nescio quo mens saucia vulnere, dudum

Fluctuat ancipiti pelago, dum navita proram Invalidam validus rapit huc Amor, et rapit illuc. Consilijs Ratio melioribus usa, decusque Immortale levi diffessa Cupidinis arcu. Angimur hoc dubio, et portu vexamur in ipso. Magne pharetrati nunc tu contemptor Amoris, (Id tibi Dij nomen precor haud impune remittant) 180

Hos nodos exsolve, et eris mihi magnus Apollo. Spiritus ad summos, scio, te generosus honores Extimulat, majusque docet spirare poëtam. Quam levis est Amor, et tamen haud levis est Amor omnis.

Ergo nihil laudi reputas æquale perenni, Præque sacrosancta splendoris imagine tanti, Cætera, quæ vecors, uti numina, vulgus adorat, Prædia, amicitias, urbana peculia, nummos, Quæque placent oculis, formas, spectacula, amores,

Conculcare soles, ut humum, et ludibria sensus. Digna meo certe Harvejo sententia, digna 191 Oratore amplo, et generoso pectore, quam non Stoica formidet veterum sapientia vinculis Sancire æternis: sapor haud tamen omnibus idem.

Dicitur effæti proles facunda Laërtaë, Quamlibet ignoti jactata per æquora cæli, Inque procelloso longum exsul gurgite ponto, Præ tamen amplexu lachrymosæ conjugis, ortus

Cælestes, Divûmque thoros sprevisse beatos. Tantum amor, et mulier, vel amore potentior.

Illum

200

Tu tamen illudis: tua magnificentia tanta est: Præque subumbrata spleudoris imagine tanti, Præque illo meritis famosis nomine parto, Cætera, quæ vecors, uti numina, vulgus adorat, Prædia, amicitias, armenta, peculia, nummos, Quæque placent oculis, formas, spectacula, amores,

Quæque placent ori, quæque auribus, omnia temnis.

Næ tu grande sapis! sapor at sapientia non est: Omnis et in parvis bene qui scit desipuisse, Sæpe supercilijs palmam sapientibus aufert. 210 Ludit Aristippum modo tetrica turba sophorum, Mitia purpureo moderantem verba tyranno: Ludit Aristippus dictamina vana sophorum, Quos levis emensi male torquet culicis umbra: Et quisquis placuisse studet heroibus altis, Desipuisse studet; sic gratia crescit inepitis. Denique laurigeris quisquis sua tempora vittis Insignire volet, populoque placere faventi, Desipere insanus discit, turpemque pudendæ Stultitiæ laudem querit. Pater Ennius unus Dictus in innumeris sapiens: laudatur at ipse Carmina vesano fudisse liquentia vino. 222

Nec tu, pace tua, nostri Cato Maxime sæcli, Nomen honorati sacrum mereare poëtæ, Quantumvis illustre canas, et nobile carmen, Ni stultire velis, sic stultorum omnia plena. Tuta sed in medio superest via gurgite, nam qui Nec reliquis nimium vult desipuisse videri, Nec sapuisse nimis, sapientem dixeris unum: Hinc te merserit unda, illinc combusserit ignis. Nec tu delicias nimis aspernare fluentes, 231 Nec sero dominam venientem in vota, nec aurum,

Si sapis, oblatum, (Curijs ea, Fabricijsque Linque viris miseris miseranda sophismata: quondam

Grande sui decus ij, nostri sed dedecus ævi:) Nec sectare nimis. Res ntraque crimine plena. Hoc bene qui callet, (si quis tamen hoc bene callet)

Scribe, vel invito sapientem hunc Socrate solum. Vis facit una pios: justos facit altera: et altera Egregie cordata ac fortia pectora: verum 240 Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit utile dulci. Dij mihi dulces diu dederant: verum utile nunquam:

Utile nunc etiam, O utinam quoque dulces dissent.

Dij mihi, (quippe Dijs æquivalia maxima parvis,)

Ni nimis invadeant mortalibus esse beatiss, Dulce simul tribuisse queant, simul utile: tanta Sed fortuna tua est: pariter quæque utile, quæque

Dulce dat ad placitum: sævo nos sydere nati Quæsitum imus eam per inhospita Caucasa longe, 249

Perque Pyrenæos montes, Babilonaque turpem. Quod si quæsitum nec ibi invenerimus, ingens Æquor inexhaustis permensi erroribus, ultra Fluctibus in medijs socij quæremus Vlyssis. Passibus inde deam fessis comitabimur ægram,



Nobile cui furtum quærenti defuit orbis.  
Namque sinu pudet in patrio, tenebrisque puden-  
dis,

Non nimis iugenio juvenem infœlice virentes  
Officijs frustra deperdere vilibus annos,  
Frugibus et vacuas speratis cernere spicas.  
Ibimus ergo statim, (quis eunti fausta precetur?)  
Et pede clivosas fesso calcabimus Alpes. 261  
Quis dabit litterea, conditas rore Britanno,  
Quis tibi litterulas? quis carmen amore petul-  
cum?

Musa sub Oebalij desueta cacumine montis,  
Flebit iuxhausto tam longa silentia planetu,  
Lugebitque sacrum lacrymis Heliconæ tacen-  
tem.

Harveiusque bonus, (charus licet omnibus idem,  
Idque suo merito, prope suavior omnibus unus)  
Angelus et Gabriel, (quamvis comitatus amicis  
Innumeris, geniûmque choro stipatus amœno)  
Immerito tamen unum absentem sæpe requirit,  
Optabitque, Utinam meus hic *Edmundus* ades-  
set, 272

Qui nova scripsisset, nec amores conticuisset,  
Ipse suos, et sæpe animo verbisque benignis  
Fausta precaretur: Deus illum aliquando redu-  
cat. &c.

Plura vellem per Charites, sed non licet per  
Musas.

Vale, Vale plurimum, Mi amabilissime Har-  
veie, meo cordi, meorum omnium longe charis-  
sime.

I was minded also to have sent you some Eng-  
lish verses, or rymes, for a farewell; but, by 282  
my troth, I have no spare time in the world to  
thinke on such toyes, that, you knowe, will de-  
maund a freer head than mine is presently. I  
beseeche you by all your curtesies and graces,  
let me be answered ere I goe; which will be (I  
hope, I feare, I thinke) the next weeke, if I can  
be dispatched of my Lorde. I goe thither, as  
sent by him, and maintained most what of 290  
him: and there am to employ my time, my body,  
my minde, to his Honours service. Thus, with  
many superhartie commendations and recom-  
mendations to your selfe, and all my friendes  
with you, I ende my last farewell, not thinking  
any more to write unto you before I goe; and  
withall committing to your faithfull credence  
the eternall memorie of our everlasting friend-  
ship, the inviolable memorie of our unspotted  
friendshippe, the sacred memorie of our 300  
vowed friendship: which I beseech you continue  
with usuall writings, as you may, and of all things  
let me heare some newes from you: as gentle  
Master Sidney, I thanke his good worship, hath  
required of me, and so promised to doe againe.  
*Qui monet, ut facias, quod jam facis*, you knowe  
the rest. You may alwayes send them most  
safely to me by Mistresse Kerke, and by none  
other. So once againe, and yet once more,  
farewell most hartily, mine owne good Mas- 310  
ter H., and love me, as I love you, and thinke  
upon poore *Immerito*, as he thinketh upon you.

Leycester House, this 5 [16?] of October,  
1579.

*Per mare, per terras,  
Vivus mortuusque,  
Tuus Immerito.*

*To my long approved and singular good frende,  
Master G. H.*

GOOD MASTER H.: I doubt not but you have  
some great important matter in hande, which  
al this while restraineth your penne, and wonted  
readinesse in provoking me unto that wherein  
your selfe nowe faulte. If there bee any such  
thing in hatching, I pray you hartily, lette us  
knowe, before al the worlde see it. But if  
happly you dwell altogether in Justinians courte,  
and give your selfe to be devoured of secreate  
studies, as of all likelyhood you doe, yet at 10  
least imparte some your olde or newe, Latine or  
Englishe, eloquent and gallant poesies to us, from  
whose eyes, you saye, you keepe in a manner  
nothing hidden. Little newes is here stirred:  
but that olde greate matter still depending.  
His Honoure never better. I thinke the earth-  
quake was also there wyth you (which I would  
gladly learne) as it was here with us; over-  
throwing divers old buildings and peeces of  
churches. Sure verie straunge to be hearde 20  
of in these countries, and yet I heare some saye (I  
knowe not howe truely) that they have knowne  
the like before in their dayes. *Sed quid vobis  
videtur magnis philosophis?* I like your late  
Englishe hexameters so exceedingly well, that  
I also enure my penne sometime in that kinde:  
whyche I fynd, indeede, as I have heard you  
often defende in worde, neither so harde, nor so  
harshe, that it will easily and fairely yelde it  
selfe to oure moother tongue. For the onely 30  
or chieffest hardnesse, which seemeth, is in the  
accente: whyche sometime gapeth, and as it were  
yawneth ilfavouredly, comming shorte of that  
it should, and sometime exceeding the measure  
of the number: as in *carpenter*, the middle sil-  
lable being used shorte in speache, when it  
shall be read long in verse, seemeth like a lame  
gosling, that draweth one legge after hir: and  
*heaven*, beeing used shorte as one syllable, when  
it is in verse, stretched out with a *diastole*, 40  
is like a lame dogge that holdes up one legge.  
But it is to be wonne with custome, and rough  
words must be subdued with use. For why, a  
Gods name, may not we, as else the Greekes,  
have the kingdome of oure owne language,  
and measure our accenttes by the sounde, reserv-  
ing the quantitie to the verse? Loe! here I let  
you see my olde use of toying in rymes, turned  
into your artificial straightnesse of verse by  
this *tetrasticon*. I beseech you tell me your 50  
fancie, without parcialitie.

See yee the blindefoulded pretie god, that feath-  
ered archer,  
Of lovers miseries which maketh his bloodie  
game?

Wote ye why his moother with a veale hath  
covered his face?

Trust me, least he my loove happily chaunce  
to beholde.



Seeme they comparable to those two which I translated you *ex tempore* in bed, the last time we lay together in Westminster?

That which I eate, did I joy, and that which I greedily gorged :

As for those many goodly matters leaft I for others. 60

I would hartily wish, you would either send me the rules and precepts of arte which you observe in quantities, or else followe mine, that Master Philip Sidney gave me, being the very same which Master Drant devised, but enlarged with Master Sidneys own judgement, and augmented with my observations, that we might both accorde and agree in one: leaste we overthrowe one an other, and be overthrowen of the rest. Truste me, you will hardly beleewe what 70 greate good liking and estimation Maister Dyer had of your *Satyricall Verses*, and I, since the viewe thereof, having before of my selfe had speciall liking of Englishe versifying, am even nowe aboute to give you some token, what and howe well therein I am able to doe: for, to tell you trueth, I minde shortely, at convenient leysure, to sette forth a booke in this kinde, whyche I entitle *Epithalamion Thamesis*, whyche booke I dare undertake wil be very 80 profitable for the knowledge, and rare for the invention and manner of handling. For in setting forth the marriage of the Thames, I shewe his first beginning, and offspring, and all the country that he passeth thorough, and also describe all the rivers throughout Englande, whyche came to this wedding, and their righte names, and right passage, &c. A worke, beleewe me, of much labour: wherein, notwithstanding, Master Holinshed hath muche furthered and 90 advantaged me, who therein hath bestowed singular paines, in searching oute their firste heades and sources, and also in tracing and dogging oute all their course, til they fall into the sea.

*O Tite, siquid ego.  
Ecquid erit pretij?*

But of that more hereafter. Nowe, my *Dreames* and *Dying Pellicane* being fully finished (as I partelye signified in my laste letters) and presentlye to bee imprinted, I wil in hande forthwith with my *Faery Queene*, whyche I praye you hartily send me with al expedition, and your frendly letters, and long expected judgement wythall, whyche let not be shorte, but in all pointes suche as you ordinarilye use and I extraordinarily desire. *Multum vale. Westminster. Quarto Nonas Aprilis, 1580. Sed, amabo te, meum Corculum tibi se ex animo commendat plurimum: jamdiu mirata, te nihil 110 ad literas suas responsi dedisse. Vide, quæso, ne id tibi capitale sit: mihi certe quidem erit, sequetibi hercle impune, ut opinor. Iterum vale, et quam volēs sæpe.*

Yours alwayes to commaunde,  
IMMERITO.

### Postscripte.

I take best my *Dreames* shoulde come forth alone, being grown by meanes of the Glosse (running continually in maner of a paraphrase) full as great as my *Calendar*. Therin besome 120 things excellently, and many things wittily, discoursed of E. K. and the pictures so singularly set forth and purtrayed, as if Michael Angelo were there, he could (I think) nor amende the beste, nor reprehende the worst. I knowe you woulde lyke them passing wel. Of my *Stemmata Dudleiana*, and especially of the sundry apostrophes therein, addressed you knowe to whome, muste more advisement be had, 129 than so lightly to sende them abroad: howbeit, trust me (though I doe never very well,) yet in my owne fancie, I never dyd better: *Veruntamen te sequor solum: nunquam vero assequar.*

### Extract from Harvey's Reply.

But ever and ever, me thinkes your great Catoes *Ecquid erit pretij*, and our little Catoes *Res age quæ prosunt*, make suche a buzzing and ringing in my head, that I have little joy to animate and encourage either you or him [his small brother] to goe forward, unlesse ye might make account of some certaine ordinarie wages, or at the leastwise have your meate and drinke for your dayes workes. As for my selfe, howsoever I have toyed and trifled heretofore, I 10 am now taught, and I trust I shall shortly learne (no remedie, I must of meere necessitie give you over in the playne field) to employ my travayle and tyme wholly or chiefly on those studies and practizes that carrie, as they saye, meate in their mouth, having evermore their eye upon the title *De pane lucrando*, and their hand upon their halfpenny. For, I pray now, what saith Master Cuddie, *alias* you know who, in the tenth Æglogue of the foresaid famons new *Cal- 20 ender*?

Piers, I have piped earst so long with payne,  
That all myne oten reedes been rent and wore,  
And my poore Muse hath spent her spared store,

Yet little good hath got, and much lesse gayne.  
Such pleasaunce makes the grashopper so poore,  
And ligge so layde, when winter doth her strayne.

The dapper ditties, that I woont devise,  
To feede youtthes fancie, and the flocking fry,  
Delighten much: what I the bett forthy? 30  
They han the pleasure, I a selender prize.  
I beate the bushe, the birdes to them doe flye,  
What good thereof to Cuddy cau arise?

But Master Collin Cloute is not every body, and albeit his olde companions, Master Cuddy and Master Hobbinoll, be as little beholding to their Mistresse Poetrie, as ever you wist, yet he peradventure, by the meanes of hir speciall favour, and some personall priviledge, may happely

live by *Dying Pellicanes*, and purchase great 40  
landes and lordshippes with the money, which  
his *Calendar* and *Dreames* have, and will af-  
fourde him. *Extra jocum*, I like your *Dreames*  
passingly well: and the rather, because they  
savour of that singular extraordinarie veine and  
invention, whiche I ever fancied moste, and in  
a manner admired onelye in Lucian, Petrarche,  
Aretine, Pasquill, and all the most delicate and  
fine conceited Grecians and Italians: (for the  
Romanes to speake of are but verye ciphers in so  
this kinde:) whose chieftest endeavour and drifte  
was, to have nothing vulgare, but, in some re-  
specte or other, and especially in lively hyper-  
bolicall amplifications, rare, quaint, and odde in  
every pointe, and, as a man woulde saye, a de-  
gree or two, at the leaste, above the reache and  
compasse of a common schollers capacitie. In  
whiche respecte notwithstanding, as well for  
the singularitie of the manner as the divinitie  
of the matter, I hearde once a divine preferre 60  
Saint Johns Revelation before al the veriest  
metaphysicall visions and jollyest conceited  
dreames or extasies that ever were devised by  
one or other, howe admirable or superexcellent  
soever they seemed otherwise to the worlde.  
And truely I am so confirmed in this opinion,  
that when I bethinke me of the verie notablist  
and moste wonderful propheticall or poeticall  
vision that ever I read, or hearde, me seemeth  
the proportion is so unequall, that there hardly  
appeareth anye semblaunce of comparison: no 71  
more in a manner (specially for poets) than doth  
betweene the incomprehensible wisdom of  
God and the sensible wit of man. But what need-  
eth this digression betweene you and me? I dare  
saye you wyll holde your selfe reasonably wel  
satisfied, if youre *Dreames* be but as well es-  
teemed of in Englande as Petrarches *Visions*  
be in Italy: whiche, I assure you, is the very 79

worst I wish you. But see how I have the arte  
memorative at commaundement. In good faith,  
I had once again nigh forgotten your *Faerie*  
*Queene*: howbeit, by good chaunce, I have nowe  
sent hir home at the laste, neither in better nor  
worse case than I founde hir. And must you  
of necessitie have my judgement of hir in deede?  
To be plaine, I am voyde of al judgement, if your  
*Nine Comædies*, wherunto, in imitation of He-  
rodotus, you give the names of the nine Muses,  
(and in one mans fansie not unworthily), 90  
come not neerer Ariostoes comædies, eyther for  
the finenesse of plausible elocution, or the rare-  
nesse of poetical invention, than that *Elvish*  
*Queene* doth to his *Orlando Furioso*, which, not-  
withstanding, you wil needes seeme to emulate,  
and hope to overgo, as you flatly professed your  
self in one of your last letters. Besides that  
you know, it hath bene the usual practise  
of the most exquisite and odde wittes in all na-  
tions, and specially in Italie, rather to shewe 100  
and advaunce themselves that way, than any  
other: as namely, those three notorious dys-  
coursing heads, Bibiena, Machiavel, and Are-  
tine did, (to let Bembo and Ariosto passe,) with  
the great admiration and wonderment of the  
whole countrey: being, in deede, reputed match-  
able in all points, both for conceyt of witte, and  
eloquent deecyphering of matters, either with  
Aristophanes and Menander in Greek, or with  
Plautus and Terence in Latin, or with any 110  
other in any other tong. But I wil not stand  
greatly with you in your owne matters. If so be  
the Faerye Queene be fairer in your eie than the  
Nine Muses, and Hobgoblin runne away with  
the garland from Apollo, marke what I saye:  
and yet I will not say that I thought, but there  
an end for this once, and fare you well, till God  
or some good aungell putte you in a better  
minde.

## A LIST OF REJECTED READINGS

For the various publications of Spenser the following texts have been adopted as standard:—

*The Shepheardes Calender*, 1579.

*Complaints*, 1591.

*The Faerie Queene*, I–III, 1596 (but with the spelling of 1590).

*The Faerie Queene*, IV–VI, 1596.

*The Faerie Queene*, VII (Cantos on Mutability), 1609.

*Daphnaïda*, 1591.

*Colin Clouts Come Home Again and Astrophel*, 1595.

*Amoretti and Epithalamion*, 1595.

*Four Hymnes*, 1596.

*Prothalamion*, 1596.

*Van der Noot's Theatre*, 1569.

*Letters*, 1580.

Whenever a reading given by these texts has been departed from, it is recorded in the following list, together with the substitute adopted. Other variants are ignored, except for incidental purposes; as are evident misprints (unless these have some glimmering of sense or the support of another editor) and (except occasionally) changes in punctuation. In each case, the first reading given is that which has been adopted, the second is that which has been rejected.

It should be remembered that different copies of the same edition not infrequently give different readings. It may well be, therefore, that the present list will be found to conflict here and there with others more authoritative. Such differences will hardly be of importance, except for bibliographical controversy.

### THE SHEPHEARDES CALENDER

[Quartos of 1581 & 1586 not collated.]

PAGE

6 *Epistle* 157. *it* (1591, 1597). Omitted 1579.

7 235. *sc.* Substituted here and elsewhere for obsolete *s.* of old editions.

8 *Generall Argument* 13. *more shepherds then* (1597): 1579 = *most shepheards and*.

8 42. *containe* (1597): 1579 = *conceive*.

8 96. *Abib.* Old editions = *Abil*.

16 *March* 4. *nigheth* (1611): 1579, 1591, 1597 = *nighest*.

25 *Maye* 150. *saye* (1597): 1579 = *sayd*.

34 *Julye* 230. *bett* (v. *Glosse* 162). Old editions = *better*.

34 *Emblems. Thomalins.* Old editions = *Palinodes*.

34 *Glosse* 38. *a Dane.* Old editions = *the Dane*, by confusion with next line.

37 *August* 84. *thy* (1597): 1579 = *my*.

37 104. *curelesse.* Collier's emendation for *carelesse* of old editions.

41 *September* 145. *yeed.* 1579, 1591, 1597 = *yeeld*; 1611 = *yead*.

43 *Glosse* 59. The dates are omitted in old editions; 1579 leaves a space for them.

45 *October* 79. *thy* (1591, 1597): 1579 = *the*.

45 97. *Cud.* (1591, 1597). In 1579 there is no indication of change in speaker.

46 *October Glosse* 68. *Arcadian.* 1579 = *Arabian*; 1591, 1597, 1611 = *Arabian*.

49 *November* 98. *heame* (v. *Glosse* 58). 1579 = *heme*.

52 *November Glosse* 89. *signe* (1591, 1597). Omitted in 1579.

53 *December* 29. *recked* (1611): 1579 = *wreaked*.

53 43. *derring doe* (v. *Glosse* 13). 1579 = *derring to*.

55 *Emblem. Vivitur, etc.* Not in any of the

PAGE

early editions. First given by Hughes (1715).

55 *Glosse* 51. Reading of 1591, 1597. 1579 inserts *as before Theocritus*.

56 113. *edax.* Omitted in old editions.

### COMPLAINTS

67 *Ruines of Time* 551. *which* (1611): 1591 = *with*.

69 675. *worldes.* Old editions = *worlds*. Cf. *Mother Hubberds Tale* 87, *Epithalamion* 290.

78 *Tears of the Muses* 600. *living* (1611): 1591 = *loving*.

85 *Virgils Gnat* 406. *fluttering* (1611): 1591 = *flattering*, which is contradicted by *folie them upbraydes*.

86 511. *Rhætean* (1611): 1591 = *Rhetæan*. The Latin is 'Rhætei litoris ora.'

87 575. *billowes.* Old editions = *billowe*, but the next line gives *them*.

91 *Mother Hubberds Tale* 87. *worldes* (1611): 1591 = *worlds*. Cf. *Ruines of Time* 675, *Epithalamion* 290.

94 308. *winges.* Old editions = *wings*. Cf. l. 87.

98 648. *at all.* 1591 drops *at*.

103 1025. *lord.* Old editions = *lords*.

108 *Ruines of Rome* iv, 6. *The old giants.* 1591 = *Th'oldgiants*; 1611 = *The giants old*. In Spenser's text, *the* is often, before a vowel, contracted to *th'*, when the metre unmistakably demands the full form. Cf. F. Q. Bk. V, c. iii, st. 11.

111 xv, 14. *To have become.* 1591 = *To become*; 1611 (in attempted emendation of metre) *Now to become*. The French 'N'estre plus rien' suggests the reading adopted.



## PAGE

- 111 xviii, 5. *ornaments*. Old editions = *ornament*. The French has 'ornements.'  
 114 xxx, 8. *stackes* (1611): 1591 = *stalkes*.  
 118 *Muipotmos* 196. *Dull* (1611). Not in 1591.  
 121 370. *framde craftilie* (1611): 1591 = *did slily frame*.  
 124 *Visions of the Worlds Vanitie* viii, 12. *native* (1611): 1591 = *natures*.  
 125 *The Visions of Bellay* ii, 8. *On*. 1591 & 1611 = *One*.  
 125 iv, 1. *pillours*. 1591 & 1611 = *pillowes*. 1596 = *pillers*.  
 128 *The Visions of Petrarch* iii, 1. *Then* (1569): 1591 = *The*. The French original begins *Après*.  
 129 vii, 1. *behold*. 1591, 1611 = *beheld*.

## THE FAERIE QUEENE

- 136 *A Letter of the Authors*. Together with the Commendatory Verses and the Dedicatory Sonnets, this letter is placed, in 1590, at the close of the volume, for the reason that it was written while the work was in press, as the date 'January, 1589' (modern style 1590) denotes. In 1596, when the enlarged poem appeared in two volumes, the letter and the verses were left where they had been, at the close of the first. It has seemed better to follow modern usage by placing them at the outset.  
 137 162. *vi. Ephes*. Old editions = *v. Ephes*.  
 145 Bk. I, c. i, st. 4, l. 5 f. For the colon after *throw* the early editions give a comma, and for the comma after *mournd* a colon. The interchange adopted makes better sense. For the use of a colon between strictly correlative clauses, see c. iv, st. 16, where the early editions give one after *call* (l. 5).  
 148 st. 28. *passed* (1590): 1596 = *passeth*.  
 156 c. ii, st. 29. *him thither* (1590): 1596 drops *him*.  
 157 st. 40. *unweeing* (1590): 1596 = *unweening*.  
 163 c. iii, st. 34. *spurd* (1590): 1596 = *spurnd*.  
 166 c. iv, st. 12. *a queene* (1590): 1596 drops *a*. *realme* (1590): 1596 = *realmes*.  
 166 st. 16. *glitterand* (1590): 1596 = *glitter and*.  
 167 st. 20, l. 3. *From* (1590): 1596 = *For*.  
 171 c. v, st. 1. *did he* (1590): 1596 drops *he*.  
 176 st. 41. *nigh weary* (1590): 1596 = *high weary*.  
 180 c. vi, st. 15. *Or Bacchus* (1590): 1596 = *Of Bacchus*.  
 191 c. vii, st. 48. *ye* (1590): 1596 = *you*. A typical example of numerous variants in 1596. It is simply inconceivable that, having once written *ye*, Spenser should have substituted, deliberately, *you*, which half spoils the line.  
 195 c. viii, st. 21. *his forces* (Church). Old editions = *their forces*.  
 196 st. 27. *equall eye* (1590): 1596 = *equall eyes*. Cf. c. ix, st. 47.  
 198 st. 41. *and helmets* (1590): 1596 drops *and*.

## PAGE

- 198 st. 44. *dislike*. Old editions = *delight*, which spoils the obvious sense of the passage, and which was obviously caught from the preceding line. The substitute was suggested by Daniel's *Delia* liv: — 'Like as the lute delights or else dislikes, As is his art that plays upon the same, etc.'  
 201 c. ix, st. 18. *as pledges* (1590): 1596 = *the pledges*.  
 206 st. 53. *feeble* (1590): 1596 = *seely*.  
 209 c. x, st. 20. *Dry-shod . . . tway*. This line first appears in the folio of 1609.  
 211 st. 36. *Their gates* (1609): 1590, 1596 = *There gates*.  
*call in commers by*. 1590, 1596 = *call in commers by*.  
 213 st. 50. *quoth she* (1590): 1596 = *quoth he*.  
 214 st. 52. *Brings* (1609): 1590, 1596 = *Bring*.  
 215 st. 61. *peaceably thy* (1590): 1596 = *peaceably to thy*.  
 215 st. 62. *they' are* (1590): 1596 drops *they'*.  
 215 st. 64. *doen nominate* (1590): 1596 = *doen then nominate*.  
 217 c. xi, st. 8. *vaste* (1590): 1596 = *wast*.  
 220 st. 27. *vaunt* (1590): 1596 = *daunt*.  
 221 st. 37. *yelled* (1609): 1590, 1596 = *yelded*.  
 This and several other misprints have been recorded only because they are deliberately adopted by Dr. Grosart.  
 223 st. 51. *the deawy* (1590): 1596 = *her deawy*.  
 226 c. xii, st. 16. *pleasure* (1590): 1596 = *pleasures*.  
 227 st. 21. *that dawning day is drawing* (1590): 1596 = *the dawning day is dawning*.  
 227 st. 28. *her* (1590): 1596 = *his*.  
 229 st. 40. *His heart* (1590): 1596 = *Her heart*.  
 231 Bk. II, c. i, st. 8. *with faire* (1590): 1596 = *with a faire*.  
 234 st. 31. *handling* (1590): 1596 = *handing*.  
 236 st. 39. *dolour* (1590): 1596 = *labour*.  
 236 st. 40. *gore* (1590): 1596 = *gold*.  
 236 st. 44. *avenging* (1590): 1596 = *revenging*, a change that clogs the verse.  
 238 st. 59. *equall* (1590): 1596 = *evill*.  
 240 c. ii, st. 7. *pray* (Collier). Old editions = *chace*, caught from the line below.  
 240 st. 9. *whose* (1590): 1596 = *those*.  
 242 st. 21. *cald* (1590): 1596 = *calth*.  
 242 st. 23. *boldly* (1590): 1596 = *bloudy*.  
 243 st. 28. *their champions*. 1590 = *her champions*; 1596 = *their champion*.  
 244 st. 34. *thought her*. 1590 = *though ther*; 1596 = *thought their*.  
 244 st. 40. *peaceably* (1590): 1596 = *peaceable*.  
 245 st. 42. *hold*. For rhyme. Old editions = *make*.  
 245 st. 44. *enrold*. 1590 = *entroid*; 1596 = *introid*.  
 246 c. iii, st. 4. *glory he* (1590): 1596 = *glory vaine*.  
 246 st. 9. *From that* (1590): 1596 = *For that*.  
 249 st. 28. *sport*. For rhyme. Old editions = *play*.  
 257 c. iv, st. 36. *Falne into* (1590): 1596 = *Falne unto*.  
 259 c. v, st. 8. *hurtle* (1590): 1596 = *hurle*.  
 261 st. 19. *said shee* (1609): 1590, 1596 = *said hee*.

## PAGE

- 262 st. 27. *her Bowre* (1590): 1596 = *his Bowre*.  
 262 st. 29. *prickling* (1590): 1596 = *pricking*.  
 263 st. 34. *So' he* (Child). 1590, 1596 = *So, he*.  
 The apostrophe is an ordinary mark of elision.  
 264 c. vi, st. 1. *her victories* (1590): 1596 = *their victories*.  
 265 st. 14. *love lay* (1590): 1596 = *loud lay*.  
 266 st. 18. *griesy* (1590): 1596 = *griesly*. Cf. st. 20, 46.  
 267 st. 27. *there passage* (1609): 1590, 1596 = *their passage*.  
 268 st. 35. *shend* (1590): 1596 = *shent*.  
 270 st. 45. *Burning* (1590): 1596 = *But*.  
 270 st. 50. *liver*. Old editions = *livers*.  
 271 c. vii, st. 4. *Well yet* (1590): 1596 = *Well it*.  
*And covetous* (1590): 1596 = *A covetous*.  
 272 st. 11. *and throw* (1590): 1596 drops *and*.  
 273 st. 18. *that antique* (1590): 1596 drops *that*.  
 276 st. 37. *when an* (1590): 1596 = *when as*.  
 276 st. 40. *As if that*. 1590, 1596 = *As if the*; but in the list of errata appended to both, we are directed to change *the* to *that* on p. 283, which begins with this line and ends with the last of st. 43. The only other *the*'s that could be changed are those of st. 42, l. 8 and st. 43, l. 2.  
 276 st. 41. *his looke* (1590): 1596 = *to looke*.  
 278 st. 52. *With which*. Old editions = *Which with*.  
 279 st. 64. *his pray* (1590): 1596 = *the pray*.  
 284 c. viii, st. 29. *upheave* (Morris). For rhyme. Old editions = *upreare*. Cf. Bk. VI, c. viii, st. 10, l. 2.  
 285 st. 40. *well as he it* (1590): 1596 = *wisely as it*. The later reading seems too flat and inexpressive to be attributed to revision by the poet.  
 287 st. 48. *Prince Arthur* (1609): 1590, 1596 = *Sir Guyon*.  
 288 c. ix, arg. *flight* (1590): 1596 = *fight*.  
 289 st. 9. *weete*. Old editions = *wote*.  
 290 st. 16. *with blustring* (1590): 1596 drops *with*.  
 291 st. 21. *fensible* (1590): 1596 = *sensible*.  
 297 st. 7. *liveden* (1590): 1596 = *lived then*.  
 297 st. 9. *Assaracs* (1590): 1596 = *Assaraos*.  
 299 st. 20. *to sway* (1590): 1596 = *of sway*.  
 301 st. 34. *Then his* (1590): 1596 = *Till his*. *Till* probably caught from previous line.  
 301 st. 37. *stird with* (1590): 1596 = *stird up*.  
 302 st. 43. *sonne* (1590): 1596 = *sonnes*.  
*Sisillus*. Old editions = *Sifillus*.  
 302 st. 49. *defrayd* (1590): 1596 = *did defray*.  
 303 st. 51. *his armes* (1590): 1596 drops *his*.  
 304 st. 65. *have forst* (1590): 1596 = *enforst*.  
 305 st. 68. *seemed* (1590): 1596 = *seemeth*.  
 306 c. xi, st. 2. *and for* (1590): 1596 drops *for*.  
 307 st. 4. *And he* (1590): 1596 drops *he*.  
 308 st. 13. *is dreadfull* (1590): 1596 = *was dreadfull*.  
 308 st. 18. *therewithall* (1590): 1596 = *therewith all*, which may be a mere variant in word-division.  
 309 st. 23. *support* (1590): 1596 = *disport*.  
 315 c. xii, st. 20. *their bote* (1590): 1596 = *the bote*.

## PAGE

- 317 st. 32. *That art* (1590): 1596 = *Thou art*.  
 320 st. 52. *Or Eden selfe* (1590): 1596 = *Of Eden*.  
 320 st. 54. *hyacine* (1611): 1590, 1596, 1609 = *hyacint*.  
 320 st. 57. *nought* (1590): 1596 = *not*.  
 323 st. 81. *that same* (1590): 1596 = *the same*.  
 324 st. 83. *spoyle* (1590): 1596 = *spoyld*.  
 327 Bk. III, c. i, st. 14. *creature* (1590): 1596 = *creatures*.  
 329 st. 31. *and of many* (1590): 1596 drops *of*.  
 331 st. 41. *lightly* (1609): 1590, 1596 = *highly*.  
 332 st. 48. *loathly* (1590): 1596 = *loathy*.  
 332 st. 54. *be guiled*. 1590 = *be-guiled*; 1596 = *beguiled*; 1609 = *be 'guiled*.  
 333 st. 60. *wary* (1609): 1590, 1596 = *weary*.  
 339 c. ii, st. 36. *other* (1590): 1596 = *others*.  
 344 c. iii, st. 22. *Greece* (1590): 1596 = *Greece*.  
 345 st. 29. *With thee* (1590): 1596 = *Where thee*.  
 346 st. 35. *thy Britons* (1590): 1596 = *the Britons*.  
 346 st. 37. *their fatall* (1590): 1596 = *the fatall*.  
 347 st. 46. *outronne* (1590): 1596 = *overoune*.  
 348 st. 50. *as earst* (1609). Not in 1590 or 1596.  
 348 st. 51. *disguise* (1590): 1596 = *devise*.  
 349 st. 57. *unweeting* (1590): 1596 = *unmeeting*.  
 351 st. 13. *did into* (1590): 1596 drops *did*.  
 353 st. 33. *raynes* (1590): 1596 = *traines*.  
 359 c. v, st. 5. *A fayrer* (1590): 1596 = *And fairer*. *And* is caught from the following line.  
 359 st. 11. *may ye* (1590): 1596 = *may you*.  
 363 st. 37. *followd* (1590): 1596 = *follow*.  
 364 st. 44. *renew* (1590): 1596 = *renew*.  
 369 c. vi, st. 28. *thence* (1590): 1596 = *hence*.  
 371 st. 40. *saw*. For rhyme. Old editions = *spyde*.  
 372 st. 45. *And dearest love* (1609). Not in 1590, 1596.  
 374 c. vii, st. 9. *like to*. Old editions = *like two*.  
 375 st. 13. *hath gaz'd* (1590): 1596 = *had gazed*.  
 375 st. 18. *Might be by the witch or that*. 1590 = *Might by the witch or by*; 1596 = *Might be the witch or that*.  
 377 st. 34. *containe*. For rhyme. Old editions = *enclose*. Cf. Bk. V, c. xii, st. 1, Bk. III, c. ix, st. 46.  
 382 c. viii, st. 9. *whom* (1609): 1590, 1596 = *who*.  
 382 st. 11. *he was* (1590): 1596 drops *he*.  
 384 st. 23. *this same* (1590): 1596 = *the same*.  
 390 c. ix, st. 13. *And so defyde* (1590): 1596 drops *so*.  
 390 st. 14. *in kenell* (1590): 1596 = *to kenell*.  
 391 st. 22. *her speare* (1590): 1596 = *the speare*.  
 391 st. 24. *But most* (1590): 1596 drops *most*.  
 394 st. 48. *to sea* (1590): 1596 = *to the sea*.  
 397 c. x, st. 13. *did beare* (1590): 1596 = *would beare*.  
 399 st. 30. *rownded* (1590): 1596 = *grounded*.  
 399 st. 31. *vertues pay* (1609): 1590 = *vertuous pray*; 1596 = *vertues pray*.  
 402 st. 52. *day spring* (1590): 1596 = *day springs*.  
 404 c. xi, st. 4. *all that I ever* (1590): 1596 = *that I did ever*.  
*did him* (1590): 1596 = *him did*.  
 407 st. 27. *formost*. Old editions = *formest*.



## PAGE

- 408 st. 39. *stag* (Jortin). Old editions = *hag*.  
 409 st. 47. *hevens hight* (Upton). Old editions = *heaven bright*.  
 412 c. xii, st. 12. *too or froe* (1590): 1596 = *to and fro*.  
 413 st. 18. *hony-laden*. Old editions = *hony-lady*.  
 417 Bk. IV, Title. *Triamond* (1611): 1596, 1609 = *Telamond*.  
 439 c. iii, st. 43. *quietage*. Old editions = *quiet age*.  
 441 c. iv, st. 2. *Blandamour* (1679). Earlier editions = *Scudamour*. Here and in Bk. II, c. viii, st. 48, also in Bk. VI, c. vi, st. 17, the mistake can be corrected without injury to the verse. In Bk. III, c. ii, st. 4, the mistake must stand. All are due, probably, to some carelessness of the poet.  
 444 c. iv, st. 24. *beamlike* (1609): 1596 = *brave-like*.  
 444 st. 29. *cuffing* (1611): 1596, 1609 = *cuffling*.  
 446 st. 39. *queynt*. 1596 = *quyent*.  
 447 st. 45. *avenge* (1609): 1596 = *evenge*.  
 450 c. v, st. 25. *one* (1609): 1596 = *once*.  
 457 c. vi, st. 24. *turning feare* (1609): 1596 = *turning his feare*.  
 457 st. 28. *Him thus* (Upton and Church). 1596 = *Her thus*; 1609 = *He thus*.  
 460 c. vii, st. 1. *darts* (1609): 1596 = *dart*.  
 465 st. 34. *sad* (1609): 1596 = *said*.  
 468 c. viii, st. 12. *made her* (Church). Old editions = *made him*.  
 476 c. ix, st. 1. *vertuous* (1609): 1596 = *vertues*.  
 477 st. 11. *them did see* (Church). Old editions = *him did see*.  
 478 st. 17. *quest*. Old editions = *guest*.  
 479 st. 26. *Then* (Church). 1596 = *Their*; 1609 = *There*.  
 480 st. 30. *repayed* (1609): 1596 = *repayred*.  
 481 st. 37. *sir knights* (Upton). Old editions = *Sir knight*.  
 481 st. 39, l. 8. 1596 inserts, between *wretch* and *and I*, which may = *aye*. This is dropped by 1609.  
 484 c. x, st. 19. *meanest* (1609): 1596 = *nearest*.  
 492 c. xi, st. 17. *age*. For rhyme. Old editions = *times*.  
 494 st. 34. *Grant*. Old editions = *Guant*.  
 496 st. 48. *Eudore*. 1596, 1609 = *Endore*.  
 503 Bk. V, Prologue, st. 11. *stead* (1609): 1596 = *place*.  
 517 c. iii, st. 11, l. 7. *The other*. 1596 = *Th' other*.  
 l. 9. *the other*. 1596, 1609 = *th' other*.  
 526 c. iv, st. 36. *watchman* (1609): 1596 = *watchmen*.  
 529 c. v, st. 12, l. 2. 1596 has no comma after *saw*.  
 538 c. vi, st. 16. *thinge* (Collier). Old editions = *things*.  
 538 st. 19. *the even-tide* (1609): 1596 = *th' even-tide*.  
 540 st. 29. *armed*, 1596 = *arm'd*.  
 542 c. vii, st. 6, l. 9. *his*. Old editions = *her*; but v. st. 15, 16.

## PAGE

- 553 c. viii, st. 40. *well knowen* (1609): 1596 = *well knowne*.  
 557 c. ix, st. 18. *hard* (1609): 1596 = *hart*.  
 558 st. 26. *Bon font* (Church). 1596, 1609 = *Bon fons*.  
 559 st. 33. *rebellious* (1609): 1596 = *rebellions*.  
 562 c. x, st. 3. *Americke* (Todd). Old editions = *Armericke*, which may be meant for *Armerica*; but, in such a passage, Spenser would hardly ignore *Guiana* and *Virginia*.  
 562 st. 8. *idole*. Old editions = *idols*.  
 572 c. xi, st. 40. *shall sure aby* (1611): 1596, 1609 = *shall by*.  
 573 st. 41. *know* (Upton). Old editions = *knew*.  
 575 st. 61. *froward* (1609): 1596 = *forward*.  
 577 c. xii, st. 1. *enduren* (1609): 1596 = *endure*.  
 577 st. 6, l. 5. 1596 has no comma after *feare*.  
 578 st. 16. *sight*. 1596 = *fight*.  
 583 Bk. VI, Prologue, st. 6. *fame* (Jortin). 1596, 1609 = *name*.  
 590 c. ii, st. 3. *deed and word* (1609): 1596 = *act and deed*. In this stanza *eares* and *eyes* are, in the old editions, transposed.  
 600 c. iii, st. 30. *thorough* (1609): 1596 = *through*. Perhaps Spenser wrote *prepared through*.  
 605 c. iv, st. 13. *Where* (1609): 1596 = *There*.  
 608 c. v, arg. *Serena* (Hughes). Old editions = *Matilda*, probably by confusion with c. iv, st. 29.  
 613 st. 39. *gree* (1609): 1596 = *glee*.  
 616 c. vi, st. 16. *the other* (1609): 1596 = *th' other*.  
 616 st. 17. *Calepine* (Hughes). Old editions = *Calidore*.  
 619 st. 35. *fight* (1609): 1596 = *right*.  
 620 c. vii, st. 3. *armed* (1609): 1596 = *arm'd*.  
 634 c. viii, st. 47. *toyle* (1609): 1596 = *toyles*.  
 638 c. ix, st. 28. *the heavens*. 1596, 1609 = *th' heavens*.  
 641 st. 46. *did dwell* (1611): 1596, 1609 = *did well*.  
 641 c. x, st. 2, l. 9. *in* (1609): 1596 = *on*.  
 644 st. 24. *froward* (1611): 1596, 1609 = *forward*.  
 660 c. xii, st. 41. *cleanest*. Old editions = *clearest*, but the following *From* supports the emendation suggested by rhyme.  
 660 Bk. VII. For convenience of reference these cantos have been headed 'Book VII'.  
 661 c. vi, st. 7. *the empire*. 1609 = *th' empire*.  
 668 c. vii, st. 2. *feeble* (Hughes). Old editions = *sable*. Cf. Bk. I, c. xi, st. 6, *Hymn Love*.  
 27. *Hymn Beautie*, 3.  
 669 st. 9. *Kinde*. Old editions = *Kindes*, but Spenser probably knew Chaucer's verse well enough.  
 674 st. 41. *rade*. For rhyme. Old editions = *rode*. Cf. Bk. V, c. ii, st. 13.

## DAPHNAÏDA

Since the British Museum copy of the edition of 1591 lacks the letter of dedication, I have been obliged, for this letter, to follow the text of Morris.

683 391. *till*. Old editions = *tell*.



## COLIN CLOUDS COME HOME AGAINE

PAGE

- 687 1. *known* (1611): 1595 = *knowne*.  
 688 88. *lasse* (1611): 1595 = *losse*.  
 691 382. 1595 inserts *a* before *Corydon*.  
 693 487. *Urania* (1611): 1595 = *Uriana*.  
 694 601. *braunches* (Collier). 1595, 1611 = *bunches*.  
 697 861. *life*. 1595, 1611 = *like*.  
 698 884. *the* (1611): 1595 = *their*.

## ASTROPHEL, ETC.

- 700 50. *often* (1611): 1595 = *oft*.  
 703 35. *did see* (1611): 1595 omits *did*.  
 705 *The Mourning Muse of Thestylis* 20. *thy*.  
     1595, 1611 = *their*.  
 710 *An Elegie* 3. *glasse*. 1595, 1611 = *grasse*.  
 711 97. *downe* (1611): 1595 = *downe to*.  
 711 109. *never* (1611): 1595 = *ever*.  
 715 2. *An Epitaph* 25. *parallels* (1611): 1595 =  
     *parables*.

## AMORETTI AND EPITHALAMION

- 719 *Amoretti* x, 7. *captive*. 1595, 1611 = *captives*.  
 721 xxi, 6. *love* (1611): 1595 = *loves*.  
 727 xlviii, 10. *the* (1611): 1595 = *th'*.  
 733 lxxxiii. In 1595 and 1611 the eighty-third  
     sonnet is a mere reprint of the thirty-  
     fifth, with slight variants: *seeing* for  
     *having* (l. 6): *shewes* for *showes* (l. 14).  
 734 lxxxvii, 8. *the* (1611): 1595 = *th'*.  
 736 *Epithalamion* 67. *dere*. For sense and  
     rhyme. 1595, 1611 = *dore*.

PAGE

- 739 290. *nighes*. 1595 = *nights*; 1611 (in at-  
     tempted emendation of metre) = *nights*  
     *sad*. Legouis notes that the *s* of 1595  
     was probably meant to be sounded *es*.  
     Cf. readings of *Ruines of Time* 675 and  
     *Mother Hubberds Tale* 87.  
 739 341. *Pouke*. 1595, 1611 = *Ponke*.  
 740 359. *our*. 1595, 1611 = *your*, probably by con-  
     fusion with l. 356.

## FOWRE HYMNES

- 748 *Beautie*, 147. *deform'd*. 1595, 1611 = *per-*  
     *form'd*.  
 756 165. *And dampish*. 1596 = *The dark and*  
     *dampish* (*The dark* being repeated from  
     previous line); 1611 = *The dark, damp*.  
 756 *Heavenly Beautie* 170. *more bright* (1611).  
     Not in 1596.

## COMMENDATORY SONNETS

- 763 ii, 10. *then* (Child). Morris prints *them*.  
     Original = *thē*.

## VAN DER NOOT'S THEATRE

- 766 *Sonets* iii, 14. *flashe*. 1569 = *flushe*. *The*  
     French has *foudroyer*.

## LETTERS

- 770 233. *oblatum*. 1580 = *ablatum*

## NOTES

The system of reference is that used in the Glossary. The numbers go in pairs, in which the first (of heavier type) stands for the page, the second for the line, stanza, or sonnet number on that page. Thus, 97, 570 = p. 97, line 570 (in *Mother Hubberds Tale*); 326, 6 = p. 326, stanza vi (in *The Faerie Queene*, Bk. III, c. 1); 730, 67 = p. 730, sonnet LXVII (in the *Amoretti*). Occasionally, where there is no number, the title is given in brief. Thus, 141, *Grey* = the sonnet to Lord Grey prefixed to *The Faerie Queene* (on p. 141). One exception is to be remarked: in notes upon *The Faerie Queene* or any of the sonnet series, the number of the stanza or sonnet which contains the word or passage commented upon is given in Roman numerals, instead of Arabic.

The following abbreviations are used:—

*arg.* = argument.  
*Bk.* = Book.  
*c.* = canto.  
*cent.* = century.  
*cf.* = compare.  
*constr.* = construction.  
*f.* = and the following.  
*fig.* = figuratively.  
*Fr.* = French.  
*imper.* = imperative.  
*impers.* = impersonal.  
*infin.* = infinitive.  
*intrans.* = intransitive.  
*Ital.* = Italian.  
*l.* = line.  
*Lat.* = Latin.

*lit.* = literally.  
*M. E.* = Middle English.  
*N. E. D.* = New English Dictionary.  
*p.* = page.  
*plur.* = plural.  
*pp.* = past participle.  
*pres.* = present tense.  
*pret.* = preterite or past tense.  
*Prol.* = the prologue or introductory stanzas to each book of *The Faerie Queene*.  
*pron.* = pronoun.  
*q. v.* = which see.  
*reflex.* = reflexive.  
*st.* = stanza.  
*v.* = see.  
*v. n.* = see note on.

- 1, THE SHEPHEARDES CALENDER. Title. *Proportionable*: corresponding.
- 4, TO HIS BOOKE. 3. *president*: precedent, pattern. Cf. 521, 2.
10. *All as*: the use of *all* for a mere intensive is of the commonest in Spenser. Cf. 188, 28, 37, 81.
- 5, EPISTLE. 1. *Uncouth, unkiste*: v. *Troilus & Criseyde*, I, 809.
35. *the knitting . . . intricate*: the composition so compact and periodic.
- 6, 110. *the compasse of hys bent*: the extent of his purpose.
130. *other some*: some others. Cf. 292, 35.
158. *conne them thanke*: know, feel gratitude to them.
166. *leaste*: i. e. least educated.
174. *hunt the letter*: alliterate; the stock Elizabethan term.
- 7, 222. *wel sented*: gifted with keen scent.
224. *principals*: large wing feathers.
237. *be proportioned*: correspond.
240. *an olde name*: 'The Calendar of Shepherds,' an almanac enriched with doctrine on the health of the soul and of the body, astronomical data, etc. It was very popular in the first half of the sixteenth century.
259. *furre estraunged*: absent far abroad.
273. *voued*: devoted. Cf. 29 *arg.*
300. *envie of*: indignation at.
- 8, GENERALL ARGUMENT. 30. *sentence*: meaning.
- 9, 119. *minded*. v. n. 257, 40.
- JANUARYE. 9. *some care he tooke*: he was suffering some affliction. Cf. 342, 5.

- 10, 28. *wast*: wasted.
33. *hoary frost*. Cf. 'sunny beames,' 208, 12.
58. *cracknelles*: thin, crisp biscuits.
63. *deignes*: accepts, views with favor. Cf. 705, 21; also 'vouchsafe,' 607, 34.
65. *devise*: invention. Cf. 12, 95.
66. *laughes*: derides.
71. *the while aby*: expiate (the time of) their failure.
77. *sonned*: i. e. sunned.
- 11, JANUARYE GLOSSE. 10. *unlikelyhood*, etc.: i. e. Latin names would be incongruous in rustic English verse.
48. *Unico Aretino*: E. K. obviously means the infamous Pietro Aretino. The epithet *unico*, however, was properly the badge of another Aretine, Bernardo Accolti, famous for improvisation in verse.
78. *leaning on hope*: Cf. 208, 14. *Anchōra speme*, 'he still hopes,' gives a typical pun.
- FEBRUARIE *arg.* 6. *unhappy*: ill conditioned. v. n. 90, 49.
- FEBRUARIE. 4. *All as*: just as if.
8. *it auales*: each tail droops.
9. *Lewdly*: ignorantly. Cf. 14, 245.
- 12, 14. *fall*: course of decline.
17. *Selfe*: myself. v. n. 53, 76.
30. *like Good Fryday*: i. e. ruefully.
43. *chamfred*: a 'chamfer' is a groove or fluting cut in stone or wood.
52. *woulddest*: wouldst desire.
57. *lopp and top*: 'exuberant growth, that which is cut off in trimming a tree or bush' (Herford).

75. *venteth* : snuffeth.  
 85. *kenst little good* : knowest little of proper behavior. Cf. 16, 56.  
 90. *greevaunce* : suffering. Cf. 125, 3.  
 95. *novells* : stories (Ital. *novelle*).  
 13, 110. *larded* : fattened.  
 114. *honor* : foliage.  
 116. *thelement* : the air. Though earth, water and fire were equally elements, air was regarded as the element *par excellence*. When the others are mentioned, it is commonly with a distinguishing adjective, as in 390, 15, 271, 5.  
 131. *lusty* : pleasant, handsome.  
 133. *wast* : useless. Cf. 150, 42.  
 151. *Pleaseth you* : may it please you.  
 160. *painted* : false, plausible.  
 162. *colowred crime* : false accusation.  
 166. *primrose*. v. n. 693, 560.  
 14, 208. *sacred with* : consecrated by.  
 245. *lewd* : foolish.  
 FEBRUARIE GLOSSE. 16. *Chaucers verse* : v. *Hous of Fame*, III, 135 f.  
 15, 111. *startuppe* : 'a kind of rustic shoes with high tops, or half gaiters' (Nares).  
 129. *counterbuff* : counter (as in boxing).  
 16, MARCH. 2. *As weren overwent* : as if we were overcome.  
 13. *stude* : stem, stock. Cf. 80, 84.  
 30. *Or made* : or hast thou been made.  
 34. *utter* : put forth.  
 46. *sithens, etc.* : This is but the third morning since the time.  
 51. *dell* : a pit.  
 53. *Mought her . . . attones* : If only her neck might have been dislocated at the same time.  
 54. *neede* : needed.  
 55. *Thelf* : the elf, imp.  
 56. *can better good* : knows better what good conduct is. Cf. 12, 85.  
 74. *some quicke* : some living thing.  
 81. *lope* : leaped.  
 85. The comma after 'I' is the punctuation of the original. To place it, in accordance with modern usage, after 'seeing' is to destroy the cadence of the line. In Spenser the subject is very commonly connected with a preceding participial clause rather than with the main verb. Cf. 238, 56, 260, 12, 303, 54, 335, 5.  
 17, 92. *lepped* : i. e. leaped.  
 111. *peeretree* : pear tree.  
 MARCH GLOSS. 1. *This Æglogue . . . Theocritus* : It is after the second idyl of Bion.  
 18, APRILL. 10. *for* : because. Cf. 13, 126, 299, 1.  
 17. *What is he for a ladde* : what sort of a lad is he?  
 21. *the southerne shephearde* : commonly taken for Sidney, but perhaps more probably Leicester (v. 62, 225 ff.) or Bishop Young.  
 19, 25. *is starte* : has broken away. Cf. 594, 36.  
 67. *compare* : find a match for. Cf. 211, 30.  
 97. *plaine* : absolutely.  
 20, 126. *principall* : princely.  
 135. *tawdrie lace* : a band of lace-work bought at the fair of St. Audrey.  
 138 ff. *coronations* : carnations. *sops in wine* : a carnation mottled red and white. *pawnee* : pansy. *chevisaunce* : an unknown flower. *flowre delice* : the iris. Cf. 265, 16.  
 152. *damssines* : damsons, plums.  
 156. *taking* : a seizure, throe.  
 157. *naught caren . . . bent* : they who are so foolishly inclined heed nothing.  
 APRILL GLOSSE. 25. *glenne* : E. K.'s definition of *glen* is impossible. He evidently guesses at the poet's meaning.  
 122. *principall*. v. n. 20, 126.  
 22, 253. *poesye* : posy, motto.  
 23, MAYE. 4. *gawdy greene* : a yellowish green.  
 38. *fondnesse* : foolishness. Cf. 724, 37. *inly* : heartily.  
 48. *Of other* : by others. Cf. 19, 90, 426, 2.  
 49. *What fallen* : what troubles befall.  
 63. *What . . . tend* : wherefore should shepherds attend to, etc.  
 24, 69. *spent in cost* : expended.  
 75. *Algrind* : Grindal, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1575-83, friendly to the Puritans.  
 78. *impaire* : deteriorate. Cf. 522, 8.  
 80. *countenaunce* : social appearances. Cf. 101, 846.  
 83. *regard* : have care for.  
 99. *straight*. v. n. 731, 71.  
 102. *entent* : the particular endeavor as distinguished from the general end.  
 106. *fee in sufferance* : revenues allowed them.  
 131. *baile nor borrowe* : surety nor pledge.  
 146. *right* : absolutely.  
 25, 157. *beare of* : fend off.  
 158. *seemeth* : is seemly.  
 164. *none accordaunce* : no terms of agreement.  
 175. *too very* : too absolutely.  
 177. *dame* : i. e. dam.  
 184. *favour* : comeliness.  
 191. *as he mought me* : as may he (bless) me. Cf. 36, 13.  
 192. *jollitee* : prettiness.  
 196. *displaie* : spread out.  
 219. *collusion* : craft.  
 231. *amazed* : 'threw into confusion' (Herford).  
 26, 237. *be kend* : been recognized.  
 240. *babes* : dolls, puppets.  
 241. *biggen* : a close-fitting cap or hood.  
 251. *clinck* : keyhole, latch (?).  
 264. *lack of dead* : short of death.  
 265. *your beastlyhead* : your beasthood.  
 266. *donne* : dun.  
 299. *Of which . . . prise* : which her son had rated too high (i. e. at the price of his life).  
 309. *Sir John* : a stock term for a Roman Catholic priest.  
 312. *and if* : if, indeed. Cf. 36, 21.  
 29, JUNE arg. 1. *vowed* : devoted. Cf. 7, 272.  
 JUNE. 13. *boste* : display. Cf. 270, 50.  
 20. *winding* : either pliable, or bending, drooping. *wiche* : probably a variety of ash.  
 24. *elvish* : malicious.  
 27. *heydeguyes* : hays. The hay was 'a country dance having a winding or serpentine movement' (N. E. D.).  
 38. *stayed* : staid, sober. Cf. 258, 1, 317, 29.  
 39. *above* : on the surface.  
 43. *queene apples* : quinces.  
 30, 53. *lower spring* : undergrowth.



65. *conne no skill* : know (have) no understanding. Cf. 32, 45.  
 76. *falls hem best* : it best befalls them.  
 78. *frame* : express.  
 82. *homely as I can* : in such homely style as I am capable of.  
 95. *learne* : for similar use cf. 180, 12, 182, 25, 378, 36.  
 31, JUNE GLOSSE. 93. *staffe* : stave, stanza.  
 32, 123. *suggestion* : temptation.  
 JULY arg. 4. *Morrell* : perhaps Elmer or Aylmer, Bishop of London, 1577-94, a leader of the High Church party.  
 JULY e. 5. *swayne* : hired servant.  
 9. *God shield* : God forbid.  
 13. *fast* : sure.  
 28. *overture* : open or exposed place.  
 29. *thee lust* : it please thee.  
 31. *what* : thing, things. Cf. 635, 7.  
 34. *rekes*, etc. v. E. K. glosse (34, 47).  
 36. *blere myne eyes* : deceive, hoodwink me.  
 45. *con of Muses skill*. v. n. 30, 65.  
 33, 72. *hilles* : Final *e*, for the modern *s*, particularly in the genitive, is not infrequently used by Spenser as a distinct syllable. Cf. 63, 286, 94, 308; v. n. 77, 508.  
 74. *Our Ladyes Bovre* : the Holy House of Loreto. E. K. here manifestly misunderstands the poet.  
 78. *haunten rathe* : resort early.  
 85. *melampode* : black hellebore.  
 86. *teribinth* : the turpentine-tree.  
 119. *sample* : example.  
 131. *in eche degree* : in every point.  
 140. *shepheards kynd* : class of shepherds.  
 160. *in place* : in his very presence.  
 162. *first of all his cote* : chief in the fold, in care of the sheep.  
 171. *so nightly wore* : worn so nearly out.  
 173. *pall* : rich cloth.  
 34, 184. *misusage* : abuse, corrupt practice.  
 188. *chippes* : parings of bread-crust.  
 193. *thriftye* : abundant.  
 195. *What neede hem* : Wherefore is it necessary for them to.  
 199. *kernes*. v. 35, 158. *knaves* : menials.  
 215 ff. This seems to be an allegory of Grindal's (v. n. 24, 75) disgrace with the Queen for refusing to repress the Puritans. The Queen hoped to break them by him; the result was his own disaster. The name appears as both Algrind and Algrin, with inconsistency perhaps intentional.  
 35, JULY GLOSSE. 151. *Goore* : i. e. Gower.  
 166. *alludeth* : ascribeth.  
 36, AUGUST arg. 7. *proper* : comely. Cf. 52, 123.  
 7. What the devil has brought you to this state?  
 13. *mischief mought* : may mischief, etc. Cf. 25, 191.  
 24. *was dared* : was challenged (in vain).  
 37, 41. *in the playne field* : in open contest.  
 67. *saye*. v. n. 412, 8.  
 38, 130. *uprightly* : justly, truly. Cf. 39, 26.  
 134. *wroughten* : worked, carved.  
 148. *matter of his deede* : i. e. verse of his making, composition.  
 149. *listneth* : listen.  
 164. *voyd* : depart. Cf. 715, 35.  
 178. *yrksome* : grievous. v. n. 698, 906.  
 39, AUGUST GLOSSE. 26. *uprightly* : justly, exactly.  
 49. *Willye not yeelding* : 'vinto non vitto' may be rendered 'vanquished not subdued.'  
 SEPTEMBER. 10. *at mischiefe* : by misfortune.  
 40, 24. *astate* : condition.  
 41. *carven* : cut. Cf. 283, 22.  
 44. *bate* : baited.  
 45. *state* : stately.  
 58. *Wel-away the while* : alas the time. Cf. 9, 8.  
 63. *here by there* : here and there.  
 84. *the more* : the greater number.  
 93. *balk* : miss. v. n. 649, 16.  
 41, 103. *to mirke* : too, very obscure.  
 109. *blont* : blunt, rude.  
 113. *graseth* : makes ravage.  
 120. *in theyr steads* : 'in their abodes, among themselves' (Herford).  
 122. *pricke* : the peg that fastened the clout, or bull's eye, to the target.  
 124. *brace hem about* : encompass them.  
 130. *wagmotres overgrast* : quagmires overgrown with grass.  
 146. *they had be better* : A confusion of two est.; they had better, it would have been better for them to have.  
 169. *mayntenance* : decorum.  
 171. *Roffynn* : Dr. John Young, Master of Pembroke Hall during Spenser's residence; created Bishop of Rochester (Roffensis) in 1578. He then made Spenser his secretary.  
 175. *convenable* : consistent.  
 176. *selfe* : own. Cf. 53, 46.  
 42, 198. *weanell wast*. v. 143, 112.  
 232. *with shepheard sittes not* : (it) becomes not shepherd to. Cf. 149, 30.  
 240. *chaungeable rest* : intervals of rest.  
 246. *mought I thee praye Of* : let me beg you for.  
 43, SEPTEMBER GLOSSE. 16. *usurped of* : used by.  
 72. *christened* : Christian.  
 44, OCTOBER. 14. *fry* : young folk.  
 24. *trayned* : allured.  
 35. *sheddeth* : is shed, disperseth.  
 41. *doubted* : redoubted, feared. Cf. 53, 22.  
 45, 49 f. : i. e. When vigorous playing of more martial themes has relaxed the strings of your lyre, lowered its pitch. Cf. 217, 7.  
 68. *brought a bedde of* : was delivered of, as in childbirth, or, was brought to the couch of.  
 70. *put in preace* : to set forth for competition.  
 75. *fayne* : i. e. depict imaginatively.  
 78. *Tom Piper* : the piper who played for the morris-dancers.  
 87 f. *Her peeched . . . scanne* : Her patched feathers are not in condition for such an attempt : to mount to such a famous flight pertains to Colin.  
 105. *Let powre* : let him pour. *thriftie* : plentiful. Cf. 34, 193.  
 114. *quaint* : i. e. elegantly accoutred. *in her equipage* : in her retinue (cf. 104, 1118), or 'her' may mean Bellona's, and 'equipage' array.

- 46, 119. *shall han their bellies layd* : shall have been delivered of their young.  
OCTOBER GLOSSE. 23. *conspyre* : agree.
- 48, NOVEMBER *arg.* 3. *Dido* : apparently some lady of Leicester's family.  
5. *required* : requested. v. 213, 50.  
NOVEMBER. 16. *in Fishes haske* : The sun enters the constellation Pisces, not in November, but in February. v. 674, 43.  
23. *sike Poetes prayse* : praise as a poet of such verse.  
24. *Relieve* : take up again.  
26. *Before him, etc.* : in his presence it befits the hedge sparrow to be silent. Cf. 42, 232.  
39. *went* : walked. Cf. 167, 23.  
43. *rownde* : well turned.
- 49, 52. *as I conne, etc.* : as well as I know how, I will exert my knowledge or skill.  
91. *quale* : perish.  
96. *cracknells*. v. n. 10, 58.  
113. *Lobbin* : probably Leicester.
- 50, 131. *without remorse* : without relenting, intermission ; also l. 167.  
155. *marked scope* : target aimed at. Cf. 597, 5.  
171. *cease thy sorrowes sourse* : check the spring, or flow, of thy grief.  
183. *Unwise . . . to weete* : Lacking wisdom to know, and therefore wretched.
- 52, NOVEMBER GLOSSE. 79. *Gaskin* : George Gascoigne.  
DECEMBER *arg.* 3. *proportioneth* : compareth.  
DECEMBER. 15. *sonet* : a little poem or song. In the original of Marot, *chansonnettes*.
- 53, 17. *cabinet* : bower. v. 324, 83.  
22. *doubted*. v. n. 44, 41.  
23. *went* : walked, ranged. Cf. 48, 39.  
27. *pricket* : a buck in his second year.  
46. *Pan his owne selfe pype* : Pan's own pipe. Cf. 41, 176.  
68. *formall rowmes* : symmetrical compartments.  
75. *also* : even so.  
76. *selfe* : itself. Used as equivalent to the Latin *ipse* in various persons. Cf. 326, 6, 316, 23, 12, 17, 355, 38, 347, 46.  
78. *shame* : disaster.
- 54, 81. *sale* : sallow, a net of sallow withes.  
87. *soothe* : augury.  
98. *harvest* : autumn ; also l. 129.  
119. *loser* : too loose, fickle. The reference is, of course, to Rosalind.  
120. *One* : i. e. God.
- 55, DECEMBER GLOSSE. 25. *hath alwayes aspect to* : in strict astrological language, only a heavenly body can have aspect to a heavenly body. E. K. means that Venus governs and implies beauty.
- 56, EPILOGUE. 10. *the Pilgrim, etc.* : The author of the *Plowman's Tale*, a satire on the clergy, written nominally as one of the *Canterbury Tales* and, in sixteenth-century editions of Chaucer, added to the series. Spenser evidently did not accept the tale as Chaucer's. He may have thought it Langland's, as did Dryden (*Preface to Fables*).
- 59, THE RUINES OF TIME. *Letter* 1. *bountifull* : full of goodness, excellent. Cf. 115, *Letter*.
13. *disdeigned the world of* : deemed the world unworthy of.  
THE RUINES OF TIME. 1. *on* : one.  
3. *Verlame* : Verulamium, near St. Albans, one of the chief towns of Roman Britain.
- 61, 102. *Troynovant* : London.  
116. *prizde with* : rated at.
- 62, 163. *lamentable* : lamenting.  
169. *Cambden* : William Camden, the antiquarian. His *Britannia* appeared in 1586.  
184. *A mightie Prince* : Leicester, died 1588.  
189. *Right and loyall* : Leicester's motto, *Droit et loyall*.
190. *I saw him die* : Leicester having died at Cornbury Lodge in Oxfordshire, commentators have been puzzled by these words ; but Verlame (chosen, as a type of vanished greatness, to set forth the tragedy of the great house) is using no more than ordinary imaginative freedom.  
204. *oaker* : ochre.  
216. *the foze* : probably Burghley, as in 'Mother Hubbard's Tale.'
- 63, 233. *trie* : experience. v. 460, 2.  
239. *his brother* : Ambrose Dudley, Earl of Warwick, died 1589.  
245. *His noble spouse* : Anne Russell.  
260. *his sister* : Mary Dudley, wife of Sir Henry Sidney, mother of Sir Philip, died 1586. *thy father* : Francis, 2d Earl of Bedford, died 1585.  
267. *He, noble bud* : Edward Russell, grandson of the 2d Earl of Bedford, and himself the 3d Earl. 'His sonne' (l. 266) either is a slip or means his heir, descendant.  
274. *thy husbands sister*. v. n. l. 260.  
278-315. Sir Philip Sidney, died 1586.  
279. *brood* : offspring, child, as in l. 379.  
286. *worldes*. v. n. 33, 72. Cf. l. 620, 675.
- 64, 317. *thine owne sister* : Mary Sidney, Countess of Pembroke.  
328. *Arcadian pipe* : an allusion to the *Arcadia*, Sidney's pastoral romance.  
341. *heroes* : here and elsewhere, with few exceptions, pronounced he-ró-es. v. n. 33, 72.  
344. *of themselves* : themselves.  
370. *repose* : place, set.
- 65, 388. One of the abbreviated articles here was meant to count for a full syllable, *the*, not *th*'. Some editors fill out the line by making *dies* dissyllabic — an impossibility.  
408. *aspired* : raised up.  
429. *from to die* : Cf. 'from to wreak,' 284, 28.  
436. *Melibæ* : Sir Francis Walsingham, died April 6, 1590. His poet is Thomas Watson ; who in the same year published a Latin eclogue in his memory, entitled *Melibæus*.  
442-444. *Those two, etc.* : 'There be two things that grieve my heart . . . a man of war that suffereth poverty ; and men of understanding that are not set by.' Ecclesiasticus, 26, 28. In the sixteenth century this book was sometimes reckoned among the 'Books of Solomon.' *indignities* : stirrings of resentment. Cf. 465, 36.  
447-455. The allusion is to Burghley.
- 66, 490. *papeants* : tableaux, usually allegorical.

- exhibited on stages or moving cars as part of a public celebration.
- 491 ff.: The first group of six sonnets is concerning Leicester; the second group concerning Sidney.
- 67, 523-525. Apparently some unexecuted device for the *Faery Queen*. v. Bk. III, c. v. *staine*. v. n. 679, 112.
561. *two beares*: Leicester and his brother, the Earl of Warwick. v. 44, 48.
567. *compast*. v. n. 445, 30.
572. *opprese*: crush, smother.
- 68, 609. *Philisides*: Phil(i)p Sid(ney), 'lover of the star.' A name invented by Sidney for himself. 'Astrophel' and 'Stella' (his mistress) are derivatives.
611. *divin'd*. v. n. 681, 214.
616. *the Northern Beare*: Leicester.
- 69, 665. *Whether*. v. n. 157, 37.
70. THE TEARES OF THE MUSES. 9. *traversing*: turning aside.
22. *rebound*: reverberate. Cf. 179, 8, 411, 6, 651, 26.
- 71, 36. *like*: in like manner, likewise. *heavily*: grievously. v. n. 678, 12.
53. *crew*: used by Spenser without derogatory implication. Cf. 199, 50, 293, 40.
70. *type*. v. n. 560, 42.
- 72, 143. *event*: fate. Cf. 86, 534.
- 73, 204. *laughing game*: laughing stock.
207. *counter*: encounter.
208. *Willy*: The main question is whether or not 'that same gentle spirit' (l. 217) refers to 'our pleasant Willy.' It would certainly seem to, except that Willy is said (l. 208) to be 'dead of late' and the 'gentle spirit' (l. 221) to 'sit in idle cell.' If the two are different, Willy may be Richard Tarleton, the comic actor, died 1588. The 'gentle spirit' is almost certainly John Lyly, the author of court comedies, who from 1584 to about 1590 produced no plays.
232. *breaches of her singulfs*: the intervals of her sobbing. Cf. 354, 35.
- 74, 265. *stout*: arrogant. Cf. 494, 30.
- 76, 386. *devicefull*: full of imaginative possibilities.
436. *degenerate*: degrade.
- 77, 462. *the starris seaven*: the Great Bear, otherwise known as Charles' Wain.
466. *prize of value*: excellence of valor. Cf. 267, 29, 405, 14.
508. Apparently, *movement* is here of three syllables. Cf. *safety*, 315, 17, *avengement*, 119, 240.
- 512, 514. *viewe, vew*: For such repetition of a word in rhyme, with slightly different spelling to disguise the repetition, cf. *saints, sayncts* (33, 113, 115), *vade, fade* (112, 20); the converse of the old rule that words of like form might be rhymed, if of different sense.
519. *case*: chance, fortune.
- 78, 549. *diapase*: diapason.
585. *wordles*. v. n. 33, 72.
591. *savour*: relish.
79. VIRGILS GNAT. 16, *strong*: i. e. strung.
21. *brood*: brooding place, as in 272, 8.
- 80, 57. *roome*: place, station. Cf. 205, 41, 359, 11.
72. *befalls*: falls in their way, is to be found.
84. *stud*. v. n. 16, 13.
105. *whelky*: shelly (?).
- 81, 119. *neate*: clear.
141. *resolv'd*: relaxed.
149. *Ascræan bard*: Hesiod.
154. *batt*: staff, crook. v. 93, 217.
- 82, 196. *taking to hoste*: entertaining. 'hoste' = a place of entertainment.
197. *those trees*: poplars.
201. *that same tree*: the almond-tree.
220. *her brothers strokes*: the hot beams of the sun. *whose boughes she*, etc.: i. e. the ivy enfolds the poplar's boughs. The translation is considerably confused.
223. The myrtle tree is Myrrha. Cf. 340, 41.
- 83, 284. *rare*: with an interval, apart.
308. *tyre*: deck or gird. Cf. 670, 11.
- 84, 333. *in lieu of*: in return for.
353. *thanked*: service.
362. *safetie*. v. n. 77, 508. *tender*. v. n. 372, 51.
- 85, 396. *unkinde*. v. n. 340, 43.
417. *waladay*: welladay.
444. *Tartar*: Tartarus. v. l. 543.
448. *trespassed*: committed wrongfully.
- 86, 494. *coy*: disdainful.
497. *divorces*: i. e. deaths.
511. *Rhætean shore*: from Rhesus, one of the rivers flowing from Ida into the sea.
514. *thwarting*: interposing.
534. *event*: success. Cf. 72, 143.
- 87, 542. *gulphing*: eddying, swirling.
543. *Tartarie*: Tartarus. Cf. 191, 44.
557. *type*. v. n. 560, 42.
568. *clave*: i. e. cleft.
600. *vertue*. v. n. 109, 8.
- 88, 615. *vow'd*: devoted (to ruin), doomed.
616. *Trembling*: trembling at.
639. *heavily*: sorrowfully.
673. *Sabine flowre*: the savine.
90. MOTHER HUBBERDS TALE. 1-8. 'The righteous Maide' is Astræa, who, after leaving earth at the close of the Golden Age, became the constellation Virgo. The sun enters the sign of Virgo in August, in which month Sirius, the dog star, ('the hot Syrian dog') is near him. The sign of July is Leo, during part of which month Sirius has been with the sun; hence, when the sun enters Virgo, Sirius, attending him, leaves 'baiting the chafed Lion.' The sickness of the dog days was, of course, ascribed to Sirius. v. 32, 17-24 and E. K.'s note thereon. *upbraide*. v. n. 479, 28.
35. *seem'd*: beseeemed. Cf. 25, 158.
45. *civill*: civilized. Cf. 583, 1.
48. *lyeke*: like.
49. *unhappie*: mischievous.
53. *goship*: gossip, crony.
- 91, 60. *regard*: repute. Cf. l. 685.
85. *lymiler*: 'a friar licensed to beg within a certain district' (Tyrwhitt).
87. *wordles*. v. n. 33, 72.
106. *did neede*: was needful.
111. *a Gods name*: of, in God's name. Cf. 41, 100.
- 92, 188. *for . . . bruted*: be reported as branded cattle astray.



- 93, 217. *bat* : quarter-staff.  
 268. *that . . . balke* : which lay out of the way of his liking (N. E. D.) or (by reverse phrasing) which his taste balked at.  
 269. *handsomely* : dexterously.  
 94, 297. *meanly* : moderately.  
 308. *winges*. v. n. 33, 72.  
 309. *Expired*. v. n. 425, 54.  
 323. *acquite themselves unto* : clear themselves in the eyes of.  
 95, 361. *formall* : i. e. regularly ordained.  
 371. *squib* : flashy, pretentious fellow.  
 390. *Sir*. v. n. 26, 309.  
 394. *attend*. v. n. 235, 35. *playes* : sports, play. Cf. 682, 321.  
 400. *bootles boad* : abode, dwelt unprofitably.  
 96, 453. *trentals* : services of thirty masses for the dead.  
 454. *memories* : services for the dead.  
 486. *beneficiall* : a benefice, or, a letter presenting to a benefice.  
 501. *or* : ere.  
 502. *throng* : press, push. The *pret.* of M. E. 'thringen' used as *infin.* Cf. 372, 44.  
 505 f. After the rhymes in Ascham's *School-master* (ed. Arber, p. 54).  
 'To laughe, to lie, to flatter, to face:  
 Four waies in court to win men grace.'  
 'Face' = assume a lying countenance.  
 506. *companie* : play the good fellow.  
 507. *beetle stock* : the handle of a beetle, or large rammer, hence, fig., a tool.  
 511. *cast a figure* : make astrological calculations.  
 518. *primitias* : first year's reveuue.  
 97, 520. *in privitie* : secretly. Cf. 648, 8.  
 523. *compound a better penie* : make a cheaper bargain.  
 527. *cope* : bargain.  
 531. *franke* : free.  
 547. *discipline* : instruction.  
 552. *them sped* : succeeded.  
 579. *ocasion for their tourne* : opportunity that they could make use of.  
 98, 620-624. 'The Queen was so much pleased with the results of the Portugal expedition of 1589, that she honored the commanders, and Sir Walter Raleigh among the rest, with a gold chain' (Child).  
*Enchaste* : encircled or adorned.  
 625-630. A sudden break in the sense, due to the revision of 1590. In the text of 1579, the question 'Who now in court doth beare the greatest sway' (l. 616) was probably answered by an allusion to Leicester. In 1590 this was made over into the allusion to the commanders of the Portugal expedition (l. 620 ff.); yet not so carefully but that the original intent still showed (l. 625 ff.). *So wilde a beast* is Leicester; *his late chayne* is his marriage to the Countess of Essex, the revelation of which in 1579 brought him into deepest disgrace with the Queen.  
 631. *if fortune thee* : if it befall thee. Cf. 231, 5.  
 99, 685. *regard* : worth. Cf. 698, 933, 649, 13.  
 717. *the brave courtier* : commonly supposed to be modelled on Sidney.  
 742. *nigh aymed ring, etc.* : practice for steadiness in directing the spear. A ring was hung up, and the horseman, charging at it, endeavored to carry it off on his spear.  
 749. *gowned beast* : horses were sometimes decorated with drapery that nearly swept the ground.  
 100, 778. *In whatso, etc.* : in whatsoever affair it may please him (the prince) to employ his (the courtier's) person.  
 783. *policie*. v. n. 140, *Hatton*.  
 784. *courting* : attendance at court.  
 785. *strange* : foreign. Cf. l. 1121, 304, 64, 117, 78.  
 802. *mumming and masking* : masquerading.  
 803. *balliards* : i. e. billiards.  
 830. *kindly wise desire* : natural desire of wisdom.  
 840. *reach* : launch, aim.  
 101, 846. *countenance*. v. n. 24, 80.  
 857. *coosinage* : i. e. cozenage. *cleanly* : dexterous.  
 862. *cleanly coosined* : dexterously cozened.  
 883. *abuse* : beguile.  
 893. *had ywist* : 'had I know'n' an ejaculation of repentance. 'A wise man saith not, had I wist' (*Tottel's Misc.* ed. Arber, p. 244).  
 901 f. Spenser felt that what favor he had won with the Queen was rendered nugatory by the opposition of Burghley. The old story has it that Burghley delayed the grant of the pension as long as possible.  
 908. *tendance* : waiting.  
 910. *assurance* : security.  
 913. *himselſe will a daw trie* : will find himself by experience to be a fool. v. n. 517, 17.  
 102, 930. *uncased* : i. e. exposed.  
 989. *cofesmate* : confederate.  
 944. *hardnesse* : hardship. Cf. 470, 27.  
 997. *whither* : which of the two. v. n. 157, 37.  
 103, 1010. *For making* : lest he should make. Cf. 317, 35, 368, 18, 659, 34.  
 1015. *cleanly*. v. n. l. 857.  
 1036. *pollicie* : cunning. v. n. 166, 12.  
 104, 1086. *Thenceforth*. v. n. 465, 33.  
 1090. *corpse*. v. n. 748, 135. *invasion* : assault. v. n. 610, 17.  
 1124. *Beavers* : introduced solely as being of 'two kinds,' half fish, half flesh—for so our ancestors believed.  
 1137 ff. Apparently directed at Burghley.  
 1140. *counterpoint* : artifice. Cf. 23, *arg.*  
 1144. *fiavit* : fiat, warrant.  
 1160. *ferme* : farm, lease (as of the taxes).  
 105, 1188. *in place* : into the presence of the prince.  
 106, 1245. *stal'd* : 'Stalling' a debt was forbearing for a time to exact payment. The Fox's penalty should not be remitted or postponed.  
 1294. *tempereth* : controls.  
 1306. *rackt* : extorted.  
 107, 1334. *grating* : fretting, consuming. Cf. 390, 14, 238, 56, also 526, 37.  
 1380. *uncase* : strip.  
 108, RUINES OF ROME. Most of the obscurities

- in this series are due to misunderstanding or bungling of Du Bellay's French.
- II. *Olympus*. v. n. 378, 41.
- IV. *the Moor*: the Moor.
- stomacke*: i. e. breast. 16th cent. Fr. *estomac*.
- 109, VIII. *vertue*: manly worth, valor. Cf. 87, 600, 155, 19.
- vertuous*: manly, valorous. Cf. 171, 1.
- nephewes*: descendants. Cf. 284, 29.
- 111, XVIII. *yearely presidents*: the consuls.
- and six months greater*: and the rule of six months (i. e. the dictatorship) grew still greater.
- 112, XVIII. *opposing*: making opposition.
- XX. *compas*: a circle or sphere.
- vade, fade*: different forms of the same word, for nominal rhyme. Cf. 513, 40.
- XXII. *Byze*: Byzantium.
- 113, XXIII. *forborne*: spared.
- cancring*: cankering, corrupting.
- humours superfluitie*: Health was supposed to depend on the right proportion and distribution of the four bodily humors: blood, phlegm, yellow bile, black bile. The excess of any one would cause disease.
- XXIV. *equall*: of the same kind.
- 114, XXX. *by degree*: by degrees.
- XXXI. *Aemathian fields*: The reference is to the battle of Pharsalus.
- 115, ΜΥΙΟΠΟΤΜΟΣ. *Letter*. 7. *abandoned from my selfe*: put out of my own jurisdiction, i. e. as having renounced my independence.
8. *vowed*. v. n. 7, 273.
29. *take in worth*: accept indulgently. Cf. 141, Ormond, 143, Penbroke.
- 116, ΜΥΙΟΠΟΤΜΟΣ. 13. *detect*: reveal. Cf. 561, 48.
17. *flies*. v. n. 735, 20.
- 117, 78. *oricalche*: brass or some similar metal.
- strange*. v. n. 100, 785.
- 118, 148. *franke*: vigorous.
159. *choicfull*: fickle.
187. *saulge*: sage.
196. *setuale*: valerian.
199. *colworts*: plants of the cabbage kind.
- perseline*: purslain; 'comforting,' because it 'doth mitigate the great heat in al the inward parts of the bodye, semblably of the head and eyes' (Sir Thos. Elyot).
- 119, 229. *all and some*: one and all. Cf. 415, 30.
240. *avengement*. v. n. 77, 508.
271. *compare*: vie.
- 120, 292. *spring*: youth.
297. *empale*: inclose.
- 121, 380. *principall*. v. n. 20, 126.
414. *throw*: i. e. throe.
420. *on hed*: headlong.
428. *winges*. v. n. 33, 72.
- 124, VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE. IX. *wring*: compel, master.
- X. *dreadles*: secure from danger.
- 125, THE VISIONS OF BELLAY. II. of *Afrike golds* *enchase*: encased with, etc.
- parget*: a facing of ornamental plaster work, for walls or ceiling.
- jasp*: jasper.
- III. *level*: mark.
- grievance*. v. n. 12, 90.
- IV. *chapters*: capitals.
- 126, V. *A twinne of forked trees*: the Papacy and the Holy Roman Empire.
- VI. *nones*: i. e. nonce.
- soyle*: the mire caused by her blood.
- spoyle*: hide. Cf. 117, 68; also 435, 16.
- VII. *haughtie*: lofty.
- 127, IX. *creakie*: indented with creeks.
- X. *this Hydra*: the Papacy.
- XI. This sonnet allegorizes the corruption of Christianity by the donation of Constantine.
- XII. *roul*: crowd and jostle.
- XIII. *sad Florentine*: Petrarch. See *Visions of Petrarch* II, p. 128.
- 128, XIII. *rais'd againe*: the revival of the Empire by Charlemagne.
- XIV. *that same*: the new Jerusalem, Revelation 21. *Which saw*: The Fr. original makes 'which' the object of the verb.
- the messenger, etc.*: the Evangelist (St. John).
- XV. *Typhæus sister*: Du Bellay means Bellona. The genealogy might be explained from 379, 47 and 661, 2 and 3.
- 136, THE FAERIE QUEENE. *Letter*. 13. *by accidents*: side issues.
17. *plausible*: acceptable.
18. *coloured*: embellished.
39. *coloured*: depicted.
58. *accounted by*: valued according to.
60. *commune sence*: the senses as opposed to the reason.
- 137, 99. *deedes . . . applyable*: those deeds that are pertinent to, that illustrate.
154. *Presently*: immediately.
172. *The second day*: This account is at odds with 235, 35 ff.
197. *intendments*: things designed.
- 138 ff. COMMENDATORY VERSES. Of these poems the first two are by Raleigh, the third by Harvey, the others of unknown authorship.
- A VISION. *accesse*: coming.
- ANOTHER OF THE SAME. *of the same*: by the same author.
- Philumena*: Philomel, the nightingale. Cf. 684, 475.
- TO THE LEARNED SHEPEHEARD. *gave thee the bell*: awarded the prize, the supremacy. Cf. 644, 26.
- A low*: praise.
- 139, *ibid*. *warres*: makes war on.
- Let not conceipt, etc.*: let not fancy deceive your sober judgment.
- empyryng*: ruling absolutely, flaming — a characteristic pun.
- R. S. *Ludds . . . towne*: London.
- H. B. *Desertes findes dew*: merits find due recognition.
- 140, IONOTO. *Would raise . . . tend*: would raise a suspicion that the praiser felt some doubt as to the merit of the work, which doubt his elaborate praise would tend to manifest.
- set it forth*: praise it.
- 140 ff. DEDICATORY SONNETS.
- HATTON. *Policy*: statecraft.
- OXENFORD. *vele*. v. n. 145, 4.

141. *ibid.* *Heliconian ymps* : the Muses.  
*That* : him that.  
 NORTHUMBERLAND. *patronize* : protect.  
 ORMOND. *salvage soyl* : Ireland.  
*thy brave mansione* : at Kilkenny.  
*Receive . . . in worth.* v. n. 115, *Letter*.  
 HOWARD. *heroes.* v. n. 64, 341.  
*huge castles* : the galleons of the Armada.  
 GREY. *your endlesse debt* : my endless debt to you.  
*account* : render account of.
142. RALEIGH. *To tast* : If one taste.  
*thy poeme* : One canto of this has survived,  
*The 21st and Last Book of the Ocean to Cynthia*,  
 published by Archdeacon Hannah in 1870.  
 Cf. 325, 4 and 5.  
 BURLEIGH. *censure* : judgment.  
 CUMBERLAND. Cumberland had recently  
 been appointed (1589) Queen's champion.  
*late assaies* : probably the naval expedition  
 to the Azores, from which he returned in the  
 last days of 1589.  
 HUNSDON. Henry Carey, Lord Hunsdon,  
 was son of Anne Boleyn's sister. His victory  
 against odds at the battle of the Gelt in Cum-  
 berland (1570) ended the rebellion of the  
 northern earls.  
 BUCKHURST. v. n. 691, 380.
143. *ibid.* *unadvised* : unperceived.  
 COUNTESS OF PEMBROKE. Mary Sidney,  
 sister of Sir Philip, 'that most heroicke spirit.'  
*in good worth to take.* v. n. 115, *Letter*.
144. LADIES IN THE COURT. *The Chian peincter* :  
 Spenser seems to have in mind Apelles and  
 his Venus of Cos, for which various courtesans  
 of the city served as models. Perhaps he con-  
 fused this painting with Zeuxis' Helen of  
 Croton, in the painting of which the artist  
 had for models the five most beautiful maidens  
 of the city.  
 THE FIRST BOOKE, Prologue, I. *in lowly*  
*shephards weeds* : in the *Shepherd's Calendar*.  
 II. *O holy virgin* : Clio.  
*weaker* : too weak ; a very common use of  
 the comparative in Spenser.  
 III. *Mart* : Mars.  
 IV. *vile* : lowly.  
*that . . . type* : Gloriana, the Faery Queen.  
*afflicted* : lowly. Cf. 718, 2.
145. *Canto I*, III. *bond* : bound.  
*worshippe* : honor. Cf. 231, 6, 335, 8.  
 IV. *vele* : i. e. veil. Cf. 448, 10, 693, 495.  
*wimpled* : pleated.  
*Seemed* : it seemed. The omission of the im-  
 personal subject is very common.  
*in a line* : by a cord.  
 v. *compeld* : summoned (Lat. *compellare*).
146. x. *diverse.* v. n. 239, 3.  
 XI. *about* : out of.  
*by tract* : by following the track.  
 XII. *wade* : go, move.  
 XIV. *disdaine* : all that would excite disdain  
 or loathing.  
 XV. *bred* : were born.
147. XVI. *upstart* : started up.  
 XIX. *grate* : chafe. Cf. 526, 37, 107, 1334.  
*ariefe* : anger.
- XXI. *his later . . . avale* : his flood begins  
 later to subside.
148. XXIII. *cumbrous* : harassing. Cf. 290, 17.
- XXIV. *manly* : human.
- XXVI. *unkindly* : unnatural.  
*needeth him* : it is necessary for him. For  
 omission of the impers. pron. v. 154, 12, 161,  
 20.
- XXVII. *like succeed it may* : similar (i. e. suc-  
 cessful adventures) may follow it.
- XXVIII. *to frend* : as a friend, on his side, or per-  
 haps, to befriend him. Cf. 343, 14, 648, 6.
149. XXX. *as that* : as one who. Cf. 7, 224.  
*With holy ffather sits not* : it befits not a hermit.  
 Cf. 42, 232.
- XXXIV. *wyde.* v. n. 539, 22.
- XXXV. *and all things* : and (rest is equivalent to  
 having) all things.
- XXXVI. *sad humor* : heavy moisture. For the  
 connection between moistness of the brain  
 and sleep, v. n. 150, 42.  
*riddes* : sends off.
150. XLI. *ever . . . loft* : Spenser surely has in  
 mind the sound of rain on the roof.
- XLII. *waste.* v. n. 13, 133.  
*dryer braine* : too dry brain. It was believed  
 that what made old folk sleep lightly and little  
 was deficiency of moisture in the brain. That  
 is the reason given by Boccaccio in his *Ameto*  
 for the wakefulness of the old husband of  
 Agapas. Any condition of light, troubled  
 sleep, disturbed by dreams, seems to have  
 been ascribed to deficiency of moisture.  
*all* : altogether. Cf. 237, 46.
- XLIII. *sent* : sense.
- XLIV. *diverse* : perverse.  
*the yvorie dore* : that by which false dreams  
 go out.
151. XLVI. *borne without her dew* : brought into  
 being unduly, unnaturally.  
 L. *halfe enraged.* v. n. 651, 25.  
*despight* : indignation (not malicious).
152. LIV. *beguiled of* : disappointed in.  
 LV. *irkesome* : troubled.  
*Canto II, arg. ruth* : misery.  
 I. *northerne wagoner* : Boötes.  
*sevenfold teme* : Charles' Wain (i. e. the Great  
 Bear).  
*stedfast starre* : the pole star.
153. III. *misdeeming* : causing misconception, mis-  
 leading. Cf. 'misconceyving night,' 401, 47.  
 IV. *repest* : refreshment, repose. Cf. 199, 2,  
 520, 40.  
 v. *enbracement.* v. n. 77, 508.  
*And would* : 'he' omitted. Such omission  
 of pron., especially 'it,' is very common. Cf.  
 159, 6, l. 9.  
*hardly* : with difficulty. Cf. 160, 14, 188,  
 21, 681, 231.
- VI. *Yrkesome* : weary.
- VII. *Titan* : the sun ; the common Elizabethan  
 name.  
*baser* : too humble.
- x. *in seeming wise* : in the way of mere appear-  
 ance.
154. XII. *him chaunst* : it befell him. Cf. 'Him  
 booteth,' 161, 20.



- XIII. *like a Persian mitre* : something like (or, as it were) a Persian mitre. Cf. 185, 4.
- xv. *amazed* : bewildered, stupefied. Cf. 25, 231, 161, 22.
- xvii. *Each others . . . envies* : each envies the other's. v. Glossary.
- spies* : i. e. the eyes. Cf. 330, 36, 633, 43.
- repining* : indignant. Cf. 612, 26.
- 155, xviii. *bitter fit* : the throes of death.
- assured* : secure, firm.
- rigor* : violence. Cf. 194, 18, 361, 23.
- share* : slice. Cf. 456, 19.
- from blame . . . blest* : lit., preserved him from harm. Spenser means, failed to harm him. Cf. 455, 13.
- xix. *vertue*. v. n. 109, 8.
- haughty* : lofty. Cf. 126, 7, 296, 1, 740, 420.
- 156, xxvii. *dainty . . . maketh derth* : apparently a proverb = fastidiousness brings scarcity, poverty ; turned by play on words to mean, coyness makes dearness, preciousness.
- xxx. *purposes*. v. n. 335, 4.
- gory blood* : gore blood, clotted blood.
- xxxi. *that happened* : that which happened.
- xxxii. *dreadfull passion* : passion of dread. Cf. 'revenging will,' 161, 22.
- Limbo lake* : Limbo was properly a sort of outer room to Hell, for virtuous heathen, unhaptized infants, etc., a place, according to Dante, of 'grief without tortures,' where 'without hope we live in desire.' 'Limbo lake' was taken by Spenser from the *Mirror for Magistrates* as meaning the shores of the Styx, Hell generally. Cf. 261, 22, 402, 54.
- mistake* : mislead.
- rare* : thin, faint.
- 157, xxxvi. *take in hand* : maintain.
- dye* : hazard, chance. Cf. 260, 13.
- xxxvii. *Whether* : which (of the two). Cf. 422, 32, 476, 1, 69, 665.
- won*. v. n. 245, 44.
- xxxviii. *when . . . in place* : when none present was fair. v. n. 105, 1188.
- xxxix. *treen mould* : the form of a tree. Cf. 188, 26.
- 158, xliii. *well* : well being.
- suffised* : satisfied.
- xlv. *careless* : uncared for. Cf. 446, 38.
- Canto III, i. her brightnes* : i. e. beauty's. The reference may be to audiences with the Queen in 1579 (v. 769, 52). It may be to Rosalind.
- 159, ii. *touch* : the touchstone, by which gold was tested.
- deryv'd* : diverted. v. n. 560, 41.
- vi. *As he* : as if he.
- 160, xi. *her cast in deadly hew* : made her pale as death. 'Hew' in Spenser rarely means color ; but v. 493, 27.
- xiv. *hardly* : with difficulty. She had difficulty in dispelling their fear. Cf. 153, 5.
- xvi. *deadly* : deathlike. Cf. 149, 36.
- nightly . . . severall* : thefts by night and pillage in various places. v. n. 301, 39.
- 161, xix. *disdainfull* : indignant.
- suppress* : For this sense of physical pressing or keeping down cf. 183, 40, 629, 18.
- xxi. *that . . . Greeke* : Ulysses.
- xxii. *parted* : departed. Cf. 681, 226.
- amazed* : bewildered, frantic.
- revenging will* : desire of revenge.
- xxiii. *dishonesty* : unchastity.
- xxiv. *prevaille* : avail. Cf. 164, 43.
- 162, xxvi. *wyde* : to one side. v. n. 539, 22.
- by name* : especially, and no other. Cf. 'namely,' 675, 48.
- xxvii. *unto . . . light* : befall my sore heart.
- xxix. *that mote . . . accept* : which may it please you to accept.
- xxx. *Orions hound* : Sirius, the dog star.
- crownes with cups* : salutes with bumpers, cups crowned, filled to the brim.
- 163, xxxii. *her all that fell* : all that befell her.
- xxxiv. *bent* : levelled and aimed.
- xxxvii. *in place* : who art present. For a similar purely expletive use v. 185, 5.
- xxxviii. *in field . . . in round lists* : The distinction is between the open field, wherever foes may meet, and the *champ clos*, or enclosed ground, for set combats.
- 164, xl. *misfeigning* : feigning with evil intent.
- xliii. *will or nill*. v. n. 462, 16.
- xliv. *in beasly kind* : in the nature of a beast, as a beast by nature.
- 165, *Canto IV, iii. degree and place* : order and rank. Cf. 323, 79, 468, 14.
- scaped hard* : escaped with difficulty. Cf. 611, 21.
- bend his pace* : direct his steps.
- iv. *timely* : measured. Cf. 171, 3.
- viii. *Titans*. v. n. 153, 7.
- As envying* : The subject is 'throne.'
- x. *was layne* : was laid, lay.
- 166, xii. *pollicie* : in the sense of Macchiavelism.
- six wicards* : six wise men ; the other deadly sins, of which pride is leader.
- xiv. *prancke* : adjust for display. Cf. 246, 6.
- xvi. *hurlten* : hurtle, rush jostling.
- 167, xvii. *dispredden* : spread out. Cf. 244, 40.
- xviii. *Taught . . . applyde* : The beasts were taught to obey the counsellors' beast-like orders, which were accommodated ('applyde'), by reason of like qualities, to the beasts' natures ('kinde's') : i. e. each counsellor was of like nature to the beast that he rode.
- amis* : amice, a priestly vestment.
- xxi. *like a crane* : Alcibiades so represents Glutony in his 90th emblem.
- gorge* : what he had swallowed.
- xxii. *bouzing can* : a drinking-can.
- xxiii. *dry* : thirsty.
- go* : walk. Cf. 48, 39.
- 168, xxviii. *compare* : gather.
- xxx. *chaw* : chew. Cf. 80, 86, 256, 29.
- chaw* : jaw.
- xxx. *say*. v. n. 412, 8.
- 169, xxxiv. *car'd for* : was heedful of, shrank from. Cf. 650, 23. *avengement*. v. n. 77, 508.
- xxxv. *unthrifty scath* : wicked harm.
- Saint Fraunces fire* : probably St. Anthony's fire, or erysipelas.

- XXXIX. *envious* : which he begrudged him.  
*whach ought* : who owned.  
*wage* : gage, stake.
- XL. *hurlten* : hurtle, clash.
- 171, XLIX. *helplesse hap* : unavoidable chance.  
*dewties* : dues.
- LI. *that I* : when I. Cf. 221, 33.
- Canto V, I. *vertuous*. v. n. 109, 8.
- III. *timely* : measured. Cf. 165, 4.
- 172, v. *a paled greene* : a green enclosed by palings ; the *champ clos*. v. n. 163, 38.
- 173, XVI. *on hight* : on high, loudly. Cf. 617, 24, 642, 10, 527, 45.
- XVII. *woundes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- embalme* : anoint. Cf. 466, 40.
- divide* : to run a series of notes into many shorter ones to the same ground bass or harmony.
- 174, XIX. *as she . . . plight* : in the same condition in which she had left him.
- XXI. *unacquainted* : unwonted, strange.
- XXIII. *so evill heare* : are held in such ill repute, i. e. brought to such open disgrace.
- Nights* : a dissyllable. v. n. 33, 72.
- XXV. *excheat* : i. e. gain.
- 175, XXVIII. *the fine element* : the air. v. n. 13, 116.
- 176, XXXV. *reele* : roll.  
*gin* : engine of torture, rack.
- XXXVI. *forth* : on. Cf. 350, 62.
- redresse* : set to rights, heal. Cf. 344, 18, 364, 41, 453, 39.
- XXXIX. *smart* : agony.
- 177, XLIII. *els* : already.
- XLIV. *cure* : i. e. care.
- XLV. *to ryde* : for riding.
- XLVII. *king of Babylon* : Nebuchadnezzar.
- 178, XLVIII. *That name . . . upbrayd* : Alexander, by posing as son of Jupiter Ammon, dishonored the name of his real father Philip.  
*Canto VI, I. bewaile* : 'The suggestion that it was meant as a derivative of *wale*, to choose, is worthless' (N. E. D.).  
*foolhappie* : blindly lucky.
- II. *dreed* : object of reverence. Cf. 144, 4, 469, 17.
- 179, *ibid.* *one to other Ynd* : the East to the West Indies.
- III. *treatie* : diplomacy. Cf. 327, 11.
- IV. *diamond* : adamant, a more or less fictitious mineral or metal, supposed of supreme hardness. Cf. 201, 19.
- VI. *comfortlesse* : helpless. Cf. 336, 14.
- VIII. *rebownded*. v. n. 70, 22.
- IX. *blubbred* : used several times by Spenser, always seriously. 232, 13, 505, 13, 685, 551.
- 180, XI. *fearfull fit* : fit of fear v. n. 156, 32.  
*horror* : roughness. Cf. 'horrid,' 182, 25.  
*feare . . . obey* : to allay her fear, they teach their backward-bent knees to obey her humbly, i. e. kneel to her.
- XIII. *suspect of crime* : suspicion (i. e. fear) of reproach.
- XIV. *horned* : horny.
- XV. *intent* : attention, gaze.
- XVI. *bethinkes not* : cannot determine.
- 181, XVII. *pourtraiture* : image.
- XXIII. *aspyre* : grow up.
- XXIV. *bastard*. v. n. 251, 42.
- 182, XXV. *horrid vew* : savage appearance.
- XXX. *repaire* : return.  
*ofspring* : family, i. e. the Satyrs. Cf. 305, 69.
- XXXI. *compare* : gather, learn (?). Cf. 168, 28.
- XXXII. *thence arise* : rise and depart, get away thence. Cf. 'thence amounted,' 206, 54.
- 183, XXXV. *Jacobs staffe* : a pilgrim's staff. In religious art, St. James is distinguished by a pilgrim's staff and a scallop shell. Cf. 678, 41.
- XXXVII. *the further processe, etc.* : i. e. what remained to be known of the tragedy.
- XL. *supprest*. v. n. 161, 19.
- 184, XLII, II. 7-9. Sansloy refers to the events of 163, 33-39. 'Had the knight been with his arms, Archimago, who foolishly bore them, would not now be regretting the mistake he made in venturing to fight me. Your own experience, I hope, will soon confirm his mistake.' The last line is obscured by the word play of 'errorr' and 'proven true.'
- XLIII. *plate* : armor made of plates of metal, which encased the body like a shell.  
*maile* : armor made of interlinked rings of metal, which fitted the body like a garment. Mail was sometimes worn beneath plate. Cf. 259, 9.
- pitty*. v. n. 656, 9.
- XLIV. *entire* : with full vigor.
- XLV. *drery* : horrible.
- XLVII. *lovers token, etc.* : In tournaments a knight often bore his lady's token, a sleeve, a glove, upon his helmet. Sansloy is speaking of the blow that he aims at Satyrane's head.
- 185, XLVIII. *this battels end* : The outcome of the battle is never told. Sansloy reappears in 241, 18 ff. ; Satyrane in 377, 29 ff. Spenser did not follow the movements of his minor characters with the scrupulous care of Ariosto.  
*Canto VII, II. plate*. v. n. 184, 43.
- IV. *like a girlond* : as it were, a garland. Cf. 154, 13.
- V. *in place*. v. n. 163, 37.
- 186, IX. *expyre* : come to the end of their term. Cf. 283, 24.
- XI. *That when* : 'That' (= who) is redundant. Cf. 187, 20, 583, 4, 541, 37, 509, 11.  
*prounce* : stalk.
- XII. *so maynly merclesse* : with such merciless might.
- 187, XIII. *th'onely breath* : the mere breath.
- 188, XXI. *hardly*. v. n. 153, 5.
- XXIII. *seeled up* : To tame a hawk, the falconer 'seeled' its eyes, i. e. stitched the lid together.  
*deadly* : mortal, of death. Cf. 436, 20.
- XXVI, I. 9. The dwarf was in doubt whether the knight, having been made captive, were alive or dead.
- XXVII. *sorrowfull assay* : the assault of sorrow. v. n. 156, 32.
- XXVIII. *assynd* : pointed out.
- 189, XXXI. *horrid*. v. n. 409, 44.  
*couched on the bever* : The bever was the movable visor of a helmet. Except in fight, when

- it was lowered to protect the face, its position was on top of the helmet in front of the crest.
- 190, xxxvii. *rowels*: 'the rolling part of the canon-bit' (Child).
- xxxix. *helplesse*. v. n. 739, 340.
- xli. *paire*: impair, weaken.
- xlII. *That her perswaded*. . . . *And said*: The omission of 'they' and 'she' exemplifies a est. common in Spenser.
- 191, xliii. *equal destinies Did ronne about*: The destinies moved equably in their spheres. The reference seems to be to the influence of the stars.
- xliv. *Tartary*: Tartarus. Cf. 85, 444.
- xlV. *coast*: region. Cf. 342, 6.
- xlviII. *disaventurous deare*: unfortunate injury.
- xlIX. *despight*: contumelious treatment.  
L. *he himselve betooke*. v. n. 325, 2.
- 192, ibid. *onely foe*: especial, chief foe. Cf. 230, 2.
- LI. *dissolute*: unstrung, enfeebled.
- 194, *Canto VIII*, xv. *lightly*: at once.
- xvi. *scalpe*: i. e. skull.
- xvII. *grieved*: injured, hurt.
- xvIII. *rigor*. v. n. 155, 18.
- 195, xxII. *drift*: impetus.
- xxIII. *ruine*: fall.
- 196, xxvII. *And you*: the Squire.  
*equall*: impartial, just. Cf. 205, 47, 237, 50.  
*restore*: make return for, reward.  
*quite*: requite.
- xxIX. *car'd*: took pains.
- xxx. *unused rust*: the rust of disuse.
- 197, xxxiv. *doted*: imbecile.  
*without any breach*: without need of breaking or forcing it.
- xl. *nicer*: too dainty.
- 198, xli. *deceived of*. v. n. 423, 36.
- xlV. *avenge*: take vengeance on.
- xlvi. *tire*: head-dress. Cf. 290, 19.  
*call*: caul, a close-fitting, net-work cap, part of a woman's head-dress.
- 199, xlvII. *loathd*: disgusted.  
*Canto IX*, I. The 'chayne' is the quality which Arthur embodies, 'magnificence' (magnanimity) the virtue which 'is the perfection of all the rest, and containeth in it them all.' *safety*. Cf. 315, 17; v. n. 77, 508.
- I. *repat*: repose. Cf. 153, 4.  
*Them list*: it pleased them. Cf. 32, 29.
- 200, v. *tutors nouriture to oversee*: to supervise the training given me by my tutor.  
*in her just term*: in its due course. Cf. 'just time,' 201, 14.
- vII. *fatal*: prophetic.  
*Whilome*: ever. v. n. 327, 14.  
*forced fury*: violence of compulsion.  
*his*: its, i. e. the wound's.  
*find*: find heart to, choose to. Cf. 376, 26, 381, 1.
- x. *government*: self-control.
- 201, xII. *prouder*: over proud.
- xIV. *when*. . . . *expired*: in due course of time.
- xv. *devoyd*: empty.
- xvi. *hew*: expression.  
*on ground*: on earth.
- xvIII. *voyage*: journey. Cf. 235, 34.
- xIX. *sure*: genuine.  
*Embowd*: arched, rounded; or perhaps. set with bosses.
- 203, xxxI. *worldes*. v. n. 33, 72.  
*mealt'h melteth*. Cf. 'death,' 419, 6.
- xxxII. *deadly*: deathlike. Cf. 160, 16.
- 204, xxxvi. *wallowd*: rolled. Commonly used by Spenser for the modern 'wallowing.' Cf. 362, 26, 404, 7.
- 205, xli. *centonell*: i. e. sentinel.  
*roome*. v. n. 80, 57.
- xlIII. *I wote*: in the sense of 'I trow.'  
*avengement*. v. n. 77, 508.
- xlvi. *sinfull hire*: service to sin.
- xlviI. *equall*. v. n. 196, 27.
- 206, xlvIII. *inchaunted rimes*: incantations.
- xlIX. *amazement*: perplexity, distraction. Cf. 724, 35, 154, 15.  
*table*: picture.
- lIV. *thence amountd*: mounted and departed, departed thence. Cf. 'thence arise,' 182, 32.
- unbid*: i. e. unprayed for.  
*drest*: i. e. treated.
- 207, *Canto X*, II. *raw*: unstrung.  
*chearen*: refresh himself.
- IV. *spousd*: betrothed.
- VI. *francklin*: freeholder, 'a class of land-owners of free, but not noble, birth and ranking next below the gentry' (N. E. D.).
- vII. *knew his good to*, etc.: knew how to bear himself toward men of all classes, to show proper discrimination of rank. Cf. 589, 1, 613, 36, 608, 2.  
*courting nicetee*: courtier-like exquisiteness.
- 208, IX. *ever-dying dread*: perpetual fear of death. Cf. 248, 21.  
*long a day*: a long time, many a day.
- xII. *in place*: to the spot.  
*Like sunny beames*: as it were, sunbeams. Cf. 185, 4. 'Sunny beams' for 'sunbeams' is common in Spenser. Cf. 321, 63, 391, 20; also 'starry light,' 323, 78.
- xIV. *as befell*: as it fell out — merely expletive. Cf. 290, 17.
- xv. *encounters*: goes to meet.
- 209, xIX. *documents*: lessons.
- 210, xxiv. *intreat*: persuade.  
*passion*: suffering. Cf. 467, 3.
- xxv. *infected*: ingrained (like a dye).
- 211, xxx. *bounty*. v. n. 332, 49.  
*compare*. v. n. 19, 67.
- xxxI. *that joyd her to*: which it delighted her to.
- xxxII. *seeming meet*: seemly.
- xxxIII. *well to donne*: well-doing.
- xxxIV. *descryde*: declared, revealed. Cf. 622, 12.  
*worldes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- xxxvi. *bead-men*: men of prayer.  
*wayting*: watching. Cf. 406, 21.
- 212, xl. *bras*: Lat. *aes*, money.  
*He, that harrowd hell*: Christ, who 'despoiled' Hell, on his descent thither after his death, by breaking down its gates and leading out the souls of the patriarchs and prophets



- who till then had been, as it were, in captivity there. Cf. 730, 68.
- XLI. *throw* : i. e. throe.
- XLII. *engrave* : i. e. bury. Cf. 239, 60.
- feare* : make afraid. Cf. 662, 15.
- 213, XLVIII. *car'd* : took care of.
- XLIX. *more* : greatly.
- clomb* : climbed. Cf. 'clambe,' 661, 8.
- L. *require* : request. Cf. 481, 41, 48, *arg*.
- 214, LIV. *each where* : in every place. Cf. 694, 634.
- LV. *ditty* : theme. Cf. 303, 50.
- LVI. *commonly* : sociably, familiarly.
- empeopled* : settled.
- 215, LXI. *presage* : point out beforehand.
- signe* : signal cry, watchword.
- LXIII. *bequeathed* : entrusted.
- LXIV. *nominate* : i. e. call, set down for.
- LXV. *in place* : purely expletive, as in 163, 37, 185, 5.
- 216, LXVI. *Georgos* : Greek γεωργός, a husbandman.
- 217, Canto XI, v. *wyde*. v. n. 162, 26.
- Muse* : Clio, child ('ympe') of Phœbus and Mnemosyne (memory, hence 'aged').
- VII. *Till I of warres, etc.* : Spenser was apparently planning for his later books, or for his second part, some celebration of the war with Philip II. 'Bryton fieldes with Sarazin blood bedyde' suggests imitation of the war of the Saracens in France, as narrated in the *Orlando Furioso*.
- haughtie* : high pitched.
- second tenor* : melody of lower pitch. Cf. 45, 50.
- his* : The possessive 's.
- IX. *rouze* : raise, erect. Cf. 250, 35.
- 218, XIII, l. 1. *that* : that which, what.
- seare* : searing.
- XV. *pas* : pace.
- drest*. v. n. 411, 55.
- XVI. *rigorous* : violent. v. n. 155, 18.
- XIX. *subject* : underlying.
- 219, *ibid*. *flightes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- hagard hauke* : an untamed hawk.
- hable might* : the capacity of its strength. Cf. 373, 3.
- pounces* : talons. Cf. 526, 42.
- XX. *disseized of his gryping grosse* : dispossessed of his great gripful.
- XXI. *each other to avenge* : to take vengeance each on the other. Cf. 198, 45.
- XXII. *gory blood*. v. n. 156, 30.
- XXIV. *forsake* : shun. Cf. 687, 50, 266, 21.
- XXV. *pight in* : struck against.
- 220, XXVI. *cace* : condition, plight. Cf. 273, 16.
- XXX. *Silo* : the pool of Siloam.
- 221, XXXIII. *That* : when. Cf. 171, 51.
- safetly*. v. n. 77, 508.
- XXXIV. *As eagle* : Every ten years the eagle mounts to the circle of fire and thence plunges into the ocean, from which it emerges with fresh plumage.
- XXXVIII. *intended* : stretched forth.
- would . . . behott* : would have promised him life, expected him to live, believed he was alive. Cf. 446, 40.
- griefe* : pain.
- XL. *outrage* : clamor.
- 222, XLI. *For harder was, etc.* : The posthumous edition of 1609 changes *For* to *Nor*, which has been generally adopted by modern editors. The style of Spenser being above all continuous, *For*, though it confuses the sense, seems to me the more characteristic reading.
- XLIII. *minisht* : i. e. diminished.
- XLIV. *stew* : lit. a hot room for vapor baths.
- XLVI. *the crime . . . fall* : the standing reproach to Adam for having sinned.
- 223, XLVIII. *dainty deare* : exceedingly precious. Cf. 353, 23.
- appointed* : made ready.
- L. *vertuous* : having peculiar qualities or excellences, efficacious. Cf. 283, 22.
- LI. *for hast* : through haste.
- LII. *woundes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- LIII. *retgyrd* : withdrawn.
- LIV. *false* : treacherous, insecure.
- 224, Canto XII, v. *armes to sound* : to clash arms (as in 169, 40), hence to wage battle.
- 225, VII. *song* : i. e. sung.
- VIII. *her self-resemblance* : i. e. being crowned, she now resembled her real self, a king's daughter.
- XIII. *shaumes*. v. n. 528, 4.
- 226, *ibid*. *of great name* : noted, hence valuable. Cf. 182, 29.
- XVI. *passionate* : express.
- XVII. *seised* : got possession of, reached.
- XVIII. *that proud Paynim King*. v. n. 217, 7.
- XX. *In sort as* : according as.
- 227, XXII. *wimple* : the veil 'that wimpled was full low' (145, 4).
- woven neare* : close-woven.
- XXIII. *enchace* : serve as setting to. v. n. 449, 12.
- XXIV. *pretence* : importance.
- XXV. *unwary* : unexpected.
- passage right* : going straight on.
- fast* : close.
- disclosing* : unfolding. Cf. 449, 16, 351, 13.
- XXVII. *guilty heavens of* : heavens polluted by.
- 228, XXVIII. *well to fare* : farewell.
- XXXIII. *pardon me* : give me leave.
- XXXIV. *practicke paine* : artful pains.
- 229, XXXVI. *bains* : i. e. banns.
- XXXVII. *bushy teade* : a torch of white-thorn; used in Roman bridal processions.
- XXXIX. *trinall triplicities*. v. n. 751, 64.
- XLII. *spent* : worn out.
- 230, THE SECOND BOOKE, Prologue, iv. *inquire* : seek information.
- admyre* : wonder.
- v. *beames*. v. n. 33, 72.
- Canto I, II. *onely* : especial. Cf. 192, 50, 474, 57, 484, 21, 646, 40.
- 231, *ibid*. *late ygoe* : a short time since.
- III. *of all . . . end* : the object at which his whole purpose aimed. Cf. 153, 9, 322, 69.
- gayre fyled* : smooth. Cf. 149, 35.
- IV. *stales* : decoys, snares. Cf. 641, 3.
- v. *him fortun'd* : it befell him. Cf. 98, 631, 337, 22.
- VI. *demure* : sober (without affectation).

- worship. v. n. 145, 3.  
*Sir Huon*: Huon of Bordeaux, hero of a romance in which King Oberon of the Fairies is a main figure.
- VIII. *misers*: wretch's.
- IX. *languorous constraynt*: distressful affliction. *in place*: purely expletive. Cf. 429, 22. v. n. 163, 37.
- 232, XI. *looser*: too loose, dishevelled. Cf. 54, 119. v. n. 144, 2.
- XII. *chaleng*: track.
- 233, XVIII. *make*: devise. Cf. 153, 9.
- XX. *abyde*: pay the penalty (by confusion with *abye*).
- XXI. *semblant plaine*: honest appearance.
- 233, XXIV. *overplast*: placed, raised above.
- XXVI. *embrace*: brace, secure.  
*in the rest*: The rest was a projecting support, riveted to the cuirass, which served to steady the spear when levelled for the charge.  
*pace*: move. Cf. 218, 15.  
*abace*: lower. Cf. 618, 31, 628, 5.
- XXIX. *bevers*. v. n. 189, 31.  
*mote I weet*: I should like to know.
- XXXI. *of him* . . . *cognizaunce*: recognized him perfectly.
- 235, XXXIII. *pageant*. v. n. 66, 490.  
*mote yee thee*: may you prosper.
- XXXIV. *voyage*: journey. Cf. 201, 18.  
*steady*: i. e. steady.
- XXXV. *attend*: give heed to. Cf. 95, 394.
- XXXVI. *pageaunts*. v. n. 66, 490.  
*in lives despight*: hating life. Cf. 684, 442.  
*warne*: keep off.
- 236, XXXVIII. *seele*. v. n. 188, 23.
- XLIII. *hop*: 'formerly a general synonym for leap' (N. E. D.).
- 237, XLVII. *which*: that which. Cf. 'that,' 218, 13, l. 1.  
*L. equall*. v. n. 196, 27.
- 238, LIII. *forbare*: part with.
- LV. *him that death does give*: Mort-dant.  
*her that loves to live*: Ama-vi[t]a.  
*Bacchus* . . . *lincke*: this wine is mixed with water.
- LVI. *grate*. v. n. 107, 1334.  
*wreath*: turn away.
- LVIII. *squire*: the carpenter's square.  
*in the meane*: meanwhile.
- LIX. *doth buriall teene*: Child suggests 'do obsequious sorrow' (*Hamlet*, I, ii, 92). The sense requires 'doth grant burial.' There being no authority for 'teen' = grant or give or appoint, Mayhew suggests 'leene' = lend, give.
- 239, *ibid.* *For* . . . *beene*: 'For I think it as great a calamity to remain dishonorably unburied, as to die dishonorably' (Child).
- LX. *engrave*. v. n. 212, 42.  
*obsequy*: obsequies.  
*affection*: deep feeling (that may issue in revenge).  
*Canto II, arg. face*: appearance.
- II. *scattered*: let drop at random.
- III. *guiltie*: 'stained with the color of guilt' (Child).  
*diverse*: distracting.
- 240, v. *To prooffe of*: To the effecting of.
- VII. *Dan*. v. n. 669, 9.
- IX. *tryde*. v. n. 517, 17.
- X. *mind*: put him in mind of.  
*revengement*. v. n. 77, 508.
- XI. *barbes*: protective or ornamental trappings for the breast and flanks of a war-horse.
- 241, xv. *breaded tramels*: braided plaits. Cf. 391, 20.
- xvi. *fest*: festivity.  
*countenance*: make a show of.
- 242, XXII. *Lybicke ocean*: the Lybian desert.
- XXV. *forcing to invade*: putting forth his strength to attack. Cf. 277, 51, 610, 17.
- 243, XXVII. *heare*: listen.
- XXXIII. *grace to reconcile*: '*gratiam conciliare*, to regain each other's favor' (Church).
- 244, XXXIV. *utter*: outer. Cf. 483, 11.
- XXXV. *solace*: pleasure, mirth. Cf. 264, 3.  
*court*: due regard to his attentions, his court.
- XXXVII. *mineon*: darling, wanton.
- XXXVIII. *extremities of their outrage*: extremes of their (opposite) excesses.
- XXXIX. *attempered*: regulated.
- XL. *dispredden*: spread out.
- 245, XLIV. *wonne*: overcome. Cf. 157, 37, 565, 30.
- XLV. *purpose*. v. n. 335, 4.  
*Canto III, i. Titan*: the sun. Cf. 153, 7.
- 246, III. *Patience perforce*: a common proverbial phrasing of submission to circumstances. Cf. 395, 3.
- IV. *bountie*: manly virtue, valor. Cf. 336, 10, 332, 49.  
*kestrell*: 'a hawk of a base, unserviceable breed' (Nares).  
*kynd*: nature.
- v. *selfe-loved personage*: love of his own personal appearance. Cf. 338, 26.  
*But for*: But because. Cf. 18, 10.
- VI. *bravery*: bravado.
- VIII. *dead-doing*: death-dealing.  
*miser*. v. n. 231, 8.  
*to hold of him in fee*: i. e. to be his vassal.
- 247, XIII. *gin*: craft.
- XIV. *gagd*: left as pledges.
- xv, ll. 5, 8. *of*: with.
- 248, XVII. *on even coast*: on even terms (c. = ground?). Cf. 436, 24.
- XVIII. *that monster make*: effect that miracle.
- XXI. *dying dread*: dread of death.  
*worth*: dignity, rank.
- 249, XXVI. *aygulets*: 'an ornament consisting properly of a gold or silver tag or pendant attached to a fringe, whence . . . any metallic stud, plate, or spangle worn on the dress' (N. E. D.).
- XXVII. *antickes*: fantastic, grotesque figures. Cf. 410, 51.
- XXX. *inspyre*: breathe.  
*rude*: disordered.
- 250, XXXIV. *marke*: make a mark of.
- XXXV. *rowze*. v. n. 217, 9.
- XXXVII. *himselſe to vaunt*: to advance? or to swagger? or to exult?
- 251, XXXVIII. *praise*: excellence, virtue. Cf. 323, 80, 366, 55.

- XL. *Behaves* : disciplines. Cf. 531, 23.  
*mis* : err. Cf. 388, 2.
- XLII. *bastard* : mongrel, ignoble. Cf. 181, 24.
- XLIII. *pesaunt* : peasant, low fellow.  
*wayne* : uscles (to him).
- XLIV. *with such ghastlinesse* : so terrifyingly.
- 252, XLV. *on foote* : one foot. Cf. 59, 1.
- XLVI. *in dew degree* : i. e. in regulated gait. Cf. 413, 18.  
*Canto IV*, 1. *pretence* : design. Cf. 549, 10.  
*native influence* : influence of the stars at birth.
- III. *agree* : compose. Cf. 433, *arg*.
- IV. *Her other leg* : one of her legs. Cf. 530, 15, 581, 36.
- V. *walke* : go, move. Cf. 413, 15.
- VI. *remorse* : compassion. Cf. 159, 5, 379, 43.
- 253, *ibid*. *avengement*. v. n. 77, 508.
- VII. 1. 9. *nought* : not at all.
- VIII. *goodly menacing* : i. e. according to 'good form.'
- 254, XIV. *quaild* : overcome. Cf. 386, 34.
- XX. *partake* : make partaker of.  
*privitie* : secret.
- 255, XXVI. *staynd* : dimmed. v. n. 679, 12.
- 256, XXVIII. *Her proper face* : her own face, who she really was.  
*deathes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- XXXII. *enforst* : added vigor to.
- 257, XXXVI. *advauce* : boast.
- XXXVII. *varlet* : a manservant to a knight.
- XXXVIII. *word* : motto. Cf. 446, 39.  
*besemed* : seemed, or perhaps, was fit. Cf. 291, 26.  
*dight* : prepared, dipped.
- XXXIX. *to purpose* : *à propos*, fittingly.
- XL. *minde* : is minded. Cf. 641, 2.
- 258, XLIII. *streight* : strictly. Cf. 613, 35.
- XLVI. *intended*. v. n. 422, 27.  
*Canto V*, 1. *staied*. v. n. 29, 38.
- 259, V. *ment* : i. e. directed.
- IX. *plate* . . . *male*. v. n. 184, 43.  
*falsed* . . . *blowes* : fainted.
- 260, XI. *the saint* : i. e. the image of the Faery Queen. Cf. 288, 2-4.
- XII. *hye* : forcibly.  
*Ne deeme, etc.* : Nor estimate thy force by what is only an unjust award of Fortune.  
*maugre* : curse on.
- XIII. *maistring might on* : restraining the exercise of his power on.  
*die* : chance. Cf. 157, 36.
- XIV. *wondered* : wondered at.
- XV. 1. 5. *that* : that which.  
*Vaine* : In vain.
- 261, XXIII. *disdeignd* : was indignant at. Cf. 'disdainfull,' 161, 19.
- 262, XXVII. *sightes* : looks, appearance. Cf. 293, 36, 208, 14.  
XXXI. *the stately tree* : the poplar.
- XXXII. *meriment* : Spenser probably wrote *meriments*, as in 322, 68.
- 263, XXXV. *In which* : into which.
- XXXVI. *utmost grudging spright* : 'last reluctant breath' (Child).
- 264, *Canto VI*, 1. *maysteries* : achievements.  
11. *gondelay* : a gondola, shallop.
- III. *solace* : recreation. Cf. 169, 37, 244, 35.
- VI. *purpose*. v. n. 335, 4.
- VII. *leaves*. v. n. 33, 72.
- 265, X. *by ayme* : direct.  
*bourne* : stream.
- XI. *waste and voyd* : solitary and uninhabited. Cf. 394, 49.
- XV. *nothing envious* : *nihil invida*, in no way hostile.
- 266, XVI. *boure* : i. e. bower.  
*lets* : leaves. Cf. 435, 11.
- XIX. *to hond* : close up. Cf. 217, 18.
- XXI. *boinds* : bounds. Cf. 145, 3.  
*forsake* : refuse to have anything to do with.
- 267, XXVI. *part* : treatment. Cf. 613, 33.  
*impart* : accord.
- XXVI. *time the tide renewd* : time brought back the proper moment.
- XXIX. *valew* : worth, valor. Cf. 77, 466.  
*haberjeons dismayld* : cut asunder the links of their chain-armor coats.  
*giambeux* : steel leggings.
- 268, XXXII. *Wo worth* : woeful become, woe befall.  
*his owne* : i. e. human.
- XXXIV. *alarmes* : onsets. Cf. 445, 35.
- 269, XXXIX. *beastes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- XL. *gayrely* : peaceably.
- XLII. *stept* : steeped.
- XLIII. *Harrow* : 'a cry of distress or alarm, a call for succour' (N. E. D.). *Out and well-away* are much the same. Cf. 286, 46, 40, 58.
- XLIV. *After pursewing* : a compound adjective.  
*requyre* : call for.
- 270, XLVI. *Engrost*. v. n. 351, 13.
- XLVII. *arming sword* : a sword made for battle, as distinguished from a ceremonial or a tournament sword.
- L. *boste* : undertake boastfully. Cf. 29, 13.  
*thunder light* : lightning.
- 271, LI. *qualifyde* : assuaged.  
*Canto VII*, 1. *experiment* : experience.
- III. *uncivile* : uncivilized.
- V. *driven* : beaten (thin).  
*distent* : distended.  
*ingoves* : ingots.
- VI. *doubtfull* : fearful, afraid (qualifies *him*).
- 272, VIII. *brood*. v. n. 79, 21.
- X. *worldly mucke*. Cf. 388, 4, 511, 27.
- XIV. *Adrian gulf* : the Adriatic Sea.
- 273, XVI. *unreproved* : blameless.  
*cace*. v. n. 220, 26.
- XVIII. *wage* : let out on hire.
- XIX. *by unrighteous lott* : by the injustice of fate.
- 274, XXV. *spoil* : take as booty, plunder. Cf. 118, 186.  
*next to Death, etc.* : Sleep is to be likened most closely to Death.
- XXVI. *dismall day* : the Day of Doom. Cf. 287, 51, 524, 26.
- XXVIII. *breaches* : projections.  
*gifte* : quality.
- 276, XLIII. *deare* : precious. Cf. 223, 48.
- 277, L. *causelesse* : without cause.
- 278, LII. *tetra mad* : perhaps *tetrum solarum*;



deadly nightshade; 'mad,' as causing madness.

*Mortall samnitis*: possibly the savin-tree, supposed to produce abortion.

*cicuta*: hemlock.

*Socrates* . . . *Critias*: Spenser seems to be confusing Socrates and Crito with Tharmenes and Critias.

LIII. *entreat*: occupy herself in.

LIV. *but they, etc.*: unless they, etc.

LVIII. *liquour*: liquid. Cf. 292, 32.

279, LIX. *Of grace*: as a favor, for kindness' sake.

LXII. *in purity*: in disculpation.

280, *Canto VIII*, i. *serve to*: For this Latinism cf. 364, 47, 119, 230.

281, XII. *brutenesse*: unintelligence, stupidity.

*stile*: cognizance.

282, XVIII. *impreste*: make an impression, sink.

XX. *medawart*: meadow-sweet.

283, XXII. *vertuous*. v. n. 223, 50.

XXIV. *his life her, etc.*: his life's destined term; (her, for genitive of feminine *vita*.)

XXV. *Mote I beseech*: I would beseech. Cf. 234, 29.

*cace*. v. n. 220, 26.

XXVI. *ghost*: soul, being.

XXVII. *debate the chalenge*: dispute the claim. Cf. 420, 12.

284, XXVIII. *prolong*. v. n. 442, 12.

XXIX. *nepheves*: grandson's. Cf. 174, 22, 353, 22, 109, 8.

XXX. *Termagount*: according to the romances, one of the gods of the Saracens. Mahoune (i. e. Mahomet) was another. Cf. 284, 33, 627, 47.

285, XXXIV. *His single speare*: his spear alone.

*doe him* . . . *redresse*: help him. Cf. 526, 41.

XXXV. *his ground to traverse wyde*: to shift his ground repeatedly (like side-stepping in boxing). Cf. 456, 18.

XXXVI. *wyde*: out of position. Cf. 539, 22.

XXXVIII. *hacqueton*: a quilted jacket worn under armor.

XL. *as he it ought*: as he that owned it.

286, XLVI. *Harrow, etc.* v. n. 69, 43.

287, L. *bithur*: bitter.

LI. *dismall day*. v. n. 274, 26.

LII. *in despiht of*. v. n. 684, 443.

288, LVI. *done my dew in place*: done my duty on the spot, here.

*Canto IX*, II. *gentle court*: courteous address.

*mote I* . . . *read*: may I understand, by your courtesy, why, etc.

289, XIII. *villeins*: in the earlier sense of serfs or of base-born country rabble.

290, XV. *orders*: ranks.

*idle*: empty.

XVI. *fennes of Allan*: the great bog of Allen, a little west of Dublin.

XVII. *combrous*. v. n. 148, 23.

XIX. *Branched*: embroidered in sprigged patterns.

*sweete rosiere*: perhaps sweetbriar. (r. = rose-bush.)

291, XXII. The circle is the head; the triangle, the legs (the ground forming the base). The

circle includes the greatest, the triangle the least space, among plane figures; hence 'first and last.' The circle has, of course, been always used as a symbol of perfection, immortality, etc.; the triangle is here interpreted as the antithesis; the masculine, the nobler quality, is of the former, against the feminine of the latter. The 'quadrated,' or rectangle, is the body, in proportion nine long by seven broad. This length, nine, is equal to the circumference of the circle, the head.

*diapase*: diapason. Cf. 78, 549.

XXIV. *from Ireland*: 'Ireland yields excellent marble near Dublin, Kilkenny, and Cork' (Fynes Moryson).

*compasse*: proportion.

*compacture*: union of parts.

XXVI. *as besemed right*: as was right seemly. Cf. 196, 32.

XXVII. *Against*: in preparation for the time when.

XXVIII. *yeoman*: a gentleman attendant in a royal or noble household.

292, *ibid. bestow*: dispose. Cf. 541, 40.

XXIX. *Mongiball*: Ital. *Mongibello*, another name for *Ætna*.

XXIX, XXX. 'The air introduced by breathing served to regulate, to maintain, and at the same time to temper, to refrigerate the innate heat of the heart, that fire which, placed in the heart at the beginning, continued there all life and was the one source of the warmth of the body.' (Of the Galenic doctrine, in Foster's *Hist. of Physiology*.)

*inspyre*: breathe in. Cf. 743, 98.

XXXII. *nought*: valueless.

*Port Esquiline*: The Campus Esquilinus, near this gate of Rome, was where criminals were executed, the poor buried, refuse of all kinds dumped. It was notoriously unsanitary. Cf. 108, 4.

*avoided*: ejected.

XXXV. *other some*. v. n. 6, 130.

293, XXXVIII. *this word*: Collier suggests *mood*. Perhaps *this w.* = what you have just called attention to.

XLI. *castory*: a color (red?) derived from *castoreum*.

294, XLIII. *embrace*: cherish. Cf. 385, 29.

XLIV. *oversee*: overlook.

*sought*: invited.

XLVI. *sly*: subtle, thin.

XLVII. The three chief rooms are the three ventricles into which mediæval physiology divided the brain. The front ventricle receives sensations; these are passed on to the second, in the middle, where they become material for imagination, reason, etc.; the third, at the back, is that of memory. Spenser modifies the plan somewhat, to accommodate the three master faculties, imagination, judgment, memory.

XLVIII. *he, whom Greece*: Socrates.

*by many parts*: by many times.

*that sage Pylian syre*: Nestor.

*contrive*: wear away.

XLIX. *comprize*: understand.

295, *L. hippodames* : sea-horses. Cf. 408, 40.

LII. *house of agonyes* : 'The twelfth house is that of affliction, misery, and suffering, distress of every kind, grief, persecution, malice, secret enmity, anxiety, envy, imprisonment, treason, sedition, assassination, and suicide. . . . It is said to be the joy of Saturn, because he is the parent of malignity. . . . Saturn, being here, gives every evil, except death, that can afflict mankind' (Wilson, *Dict. of Astrology*).

LIII. *wittily* : intelligently, wisely.

296, LIX. *governements* : plural forced by rhyme. Cf. 'auncestryes,' 296, 1.

*Canto X, i. haughty*. v. n. 155, 19.

*needs me* : is needful to me.

III. *Maonian quill* : the pen or the pipe of Homer. These two meanings of 'quill' cannot always be distinguished. In 48, 35, and 682, 325, as generally in pastoral verse, 'quill' = pipe. Elsewhere it may = pen, as in 733, 84. *rote*. v. n. 476, 6.

297, v. *unmannurd* : untitled.

VI. *invade* : enter, penetrate. Cf. 371, 37.

VII. *liveden* : lived.

VIII. *companion* : companying, cohabiting. Cf. 615, 11.

IX. *fatal error* : fated wandering. Cf. 342, 2, 343, 15, 393, 41.

X. *The western Hogh* : the Hoe at Plymouth.

298, XII. *inquire* : call. Sense forced by rhyme.

XIII. *Britany* : Britain. Cf. 61, 100, 346, 32, 348, 52.

XIV. *Albania* . . . *Logris* : according to the chronicles, separated by the Humber; but in 495, 36, used of modern Scotland and England, separated by the Tweed.

XV. *a nation straung* : the Huns.

*Noyes* : Noah's.

*display* : spread out.

XVIII. *ordaind* : set in order.

299, XX, 1. 1. *for* : forasmuch as.

XXIII. *semblaunce* : resemblance.

XXIV. *Scaldis* : the Scheldt.

*Hania* : Hainault.

*Esthambruges* : Bruges.

*Henalois* : men of Hainault.

*scuith quiridh* : Welsh for 'green shield.'

*y scuith gogh* : the red shield.

XXV. *Cairleill* : ('cair' = city) Carlisle.

*Cairleon* : Chester.

XXVI. *Cairbadon* : Bath.

*quick* : live.

300, *ibid. through flight* : He imitated Icarus, and was dashed in pieces.

XXVII. *parentage* : parents, parent.

XXIX. *Celtica* : France.

XXX. *weeke* : i. e. wick.

XXXI. *leav'd* : levied.

301, XXXV. *opresse* : fall upon, surprise. Cf. 324, 81, 536, 4.

XXXVII. *stressed* : distressed. Cf. 405, 18.

*loose* : disunited.

XXXVIII. *miscreate* : i. e. unlawful ruler.

*Cambry* : Wales.

XXXIX. *stealth* : robbery, rapine.

XL. *That sacked Rome, etc.* : The Romans, hav-

ing sworn allegiance, treacherously attempted to destroy their conquerors, who thereupon sacked the city.

XLI. *Easterland* : vaguely, the country to the east.

*foy* : money paid as a mark of fealty.

302, XLII. *found* : devised. Cf. 691, 366. *layes* : laws.

XLIII. *carcas* : often used by Spenser for the human body, alive or dead, without implication of contempt. Cf. 284, 27, 311, 38, 312, 42.

XLV. *'reseized* : reinstated.

*successe* : succession.

XLVI. *Troynovant* : London.

303, L. *ditty*. v. n. 214, 55.

LI. *draught* : device, stratagem.

LIII. *Evangelij* : gospel.

LIV. *Bunduca* : Boadicea.

*besides* : by the side of.

LV. *on . . . serv'd* : delivered, hurled at.

LVI. *proper* : own.

304, LIX. *agreement*. v. n. 77, 508.

LXI. *with easy hand* : easily, quickly.

LXIII. *Easterlings* : men from the east, the pirates of the North Sea.

*scatterlings* : rovers.

LXIV. *gathering to feare* : deeming reason for alarm.

305, LXVIII. *Uther* : the father of Arthur.

*cesure* : formal stop.

*attend* : stay. Cf. 607, 31.

LXIX. *ofspring* : pedigree. Cf. 182, 30.

LXXI. *the gardins of Adonis*. v. Bk. III, c. vi.

306, LXXV. *Elficeos* : Henry VII.

*Elferon* : Arthur.

*Oberon* : Henry VIII.

LXXVI. *memoriall* : memory.

*Tanaquill* : Elizabeth.

*Canto XI, i. sinfull vellenage* : bondage to sin.

307, VIII. *beckes* : beaks.

*lynxes* : lynx's.

308, XI. *puttockes* : kites.

XII. *oystriges* : ostriches.

*faste* : i. e. faced.

XIII. *urchins* : hedgehogs.

XV. *pretend* : attempt. Cf. 549, 10.

309, XXII. *Thereto* : in addition to this, besides. Cf. 319, 51, 419, 7.

XXIII. *her other legge*. v. n. 252, 4.

XXIV. *quarrell* : properly, the square-headed, short, heavy arrow of a cross-bow.

*expell* : send forth.

310, XXVIII. *strew* : scattered.

XXIX. *lode upon him layd* : belabored him with blows. Cf. 618, 28.

*bane* : death, destruction.

XXX. *on ground* : on earth. Cf. 373, 52.

*nearely drive* : push hard.

XXXI. *invade*. v. n. 610, 17.

XXXII. *his native seat* : the region of fire between the air and the sphere of the moon.

The rising of fire was explained by its effort to return to its proper place, this region.

XXXIII. *quar'le*. v. n. 309, 24.

311, XXXIV. *fld his place* : i. e. 'measured his length.'

- xxxv. *sundry way* : the parting of ways.
- 312, XLII. *wrest* : wrench, twist.
- XLVI. *taking his full course* : to reckon the full distance.
- 313, Canto XII, i. *pricke* : point.
- III. *worldes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- up . . . *lay* : The common term for the modern 'throw up.'
- IV. *magnes stone* : loadstone.
- rift* : riven mass.
- VI. *Tartare*. v. n. 85, 444.
- 314, XI. *seeming now and than* : that appear here and there.
- 315, XVI. *purpose diversly* : talk of this and that. v. n. 335, 4.
- XVII. *safely*. v. n. 77, 508.
- XXI. *utmost sandy breach* : the broken water, mixed with sand, at the edge of the sandbank.
- fetch* : reach.
- 316, XXIII, XXIV. These sea monsters are of the natural history of Spenser's day. The recorded descriptions of them need not be given here.
- XXIII. *Spring-headed* : 'with heads springing or budding forth from their bodies' (Upton). *monoceros* : emended by some editors to 'monoceroses,' for the sake of the plural. But the word, as it stands, is plural. Cf. Puttenham's *Art of English Poesie* (ed. Arber, p. 52) : 'wild beasts, as elephants, rhinoceros, tigers, leopards, and others.'
- XXVII. *seemely* : comely. Cf. 468, 14.
- 317, XXIX. *embosome* : implant.
- bayt* : refresh with rest.
- XXX. *like* : as it were.
- an halfe theatre* : a semi-circular theatre as distinguished from an amphitheatre.
- XXXI. *fondly* : foolishly. Cf. 381, 61.
- Heliconian maides* : the Muses.
- XXXIII. *meane* : tenor or alto.
- XXXIV. *leveled* : directed, aimed. Cf. 125, 3.
- XXXVI. *unfortunate* : ill-omened.
- fatall* : boding ruin.
- strick* : the screech-owl.
- 318, XXXVII. *sacred* : cursed. Cf. 576, 1.
- XLIII. *Nought feard, etc.* : Their physical force (that of the knight and his guide) roused no fear (in the inmates) that they would capture that fortalice; what did rouse such fear was wisdom's power, etc., spiritual qualities.
- 319, XLIV. *wondred* : wonderful.
- XLVII. *Genius*. Cf. 370, 31 ff.
- XLIX. *charmed semblants sly* : raised by magic immaterial phantasms. Cf. 294, 46.
- L. *and goodly* : Possibly and is a slip for *was*.
- LI. *Thereto*. v. n. 309, 22.
- joviall* : propitious.
- spirit* : breath.
- 320, LIII. *forward right* : straight ahead. Cf. 350, 61.
- LIV. *hyacine* : hyacinth, probably the sapphire.
- LVI. *with daintie breach* : crushing them daintily.
- 322, LXIX. *drift* : design. Cf. 231, 3.
- LXXI. *discreet* : distinct.
- 323, LXXVI. *displaw* : deserv.
- LXXXI. *for that same* : 'occasion' understood. *formally*. Cf. 53, 68.
- 324, *ibid. oppress*. v. n. 301, 35.
- wrest* : twist, or wrestle
- LXXXIII. *cabinets* : summer-houses. Cf. 53, 17, 686, 558.
- LXXXV. *like monstrous* : similarly monstrous.
- 325, THE THIRDE BOOKE, Prologue, i. *It falls me* : It falls to me.
- Neede but behold* : It is necessary only that they should behold.
- IV. *that sweete verse*. v. n. 142, Raleigh.
- beames*. v. n. 33, 72.
- V. *If ought . . . abuse* : if any fault may chance to offend her taste.
- Canto I, i. procur'd* : entreated.
- II. *he him selfe betooke, etc.* : either 'he betook himself to' or 'he himself took,' as in 91, 69. Cf. 191, 50.
- 326, IV. *couch* : crouch, stoop.
- V. *spurne* : spur.
- VI. *crouper* : i. e. crupper.
- VIII. *Venus looking glas* : Cf. 337, 18 ff. One of the very many minor inconsistencies of the poem, due perhaps to change of plan.
- 327, XI. *like treaty handeled* : used similar diplomacy. Cf. 179, 3.
- XIV. *whylome* : at times.
- XV. *whales bone* : the tusks of the walrus, a common form of ivory in the Middle Ages. 'Whales' is a dissyllable. v. n. 33, 72.
- 328, XVIII. *envy . . . gealosy* : indignation . . . anger. Cf. 356, 47, 7, 300.
- XIX. *pace* : pass.
- XXI. *before . . . assay* : durst attack him in front.
- 329, XXV. *maistery* : superior force. Cf. 424, 46.
- XXX. *swords . . . mard* : marred the honor of, debased.
- 330, XXXIII. *meane degree* : medium rank.
- XXXIV. *Toure* : Tours.
- XXXVII. *Dreadfull* : fearful, afraid.
- XXXVIII. *lively* : in real life, actually. Cf. 407, 30.
- XXXIX. *worldes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- 331, XL. *looser* : over lax.
- XLI. *bed* : i. e. couch.
- XLII. *vented up her umbriere* : raised, as for air, the face-guard of her helmet.
- XLIII. *Breakes forth* : breaks a way for.
- discomfited* : dejected.
- XLIV. *tilt and tournament*. v. n. 548, 7.
- 332, XLVIII. *outrage* : intemperance. Cf. 244, 38.
- XLIX. *bounty* : goodness, virtue. Cf. 582, 3, 211, 30.
- bounteous* : good, virtuous. Cf. 336, 10, 404, 10.
- L. *dissembled it with ignoraunce* : i. e. feigned not to understand her meaning.
- LI. *Lycus* : Bacchus.
- spight or spare* : grudging or stint.
- LII. *loose* : i. e. relax.
- purport* : disguise.
- LIV. *perplexe* : torment. Cf. 581, 35.
- 333, LV. *rebuke* : reproach, shame.
- LVI. *basciamani* : hand-kissing.
- LVII. *moist daughters* : the Hyades.



- LVIII. *Avoided* : departed.  
*despoile* : disrobe.
- LXI. *with easy shifte* : moving softly.
- LXII. *leachour* : i. e. lecher.  
*ghastly* : terrified.
- 334, LXVII. *ungentle trade* : conduct, practice unbecoming gentlefolk.  
*Canto II*, i. *proper* : own. Cf. 303, 57.  
*indifferent* : impartial. Cf. 559, 36.  
*memoree* : record. Cf. 140, *Essex*.
- 335, IV. *Guyon* : not Guyon, but the Redcross Knight.  
*purpose* : Fr. *propos*, discourse. Cf. 419, 7, 264, 6, 245, 45, 156, 30.  
*inquest* : quest. Cf. 653, 42.
- V. *flake* : flash. Cf. 220, 26.
- VII. *The Greater Bryttayne* : 'To distinguish it from the Lesser Brittany in France. The reader will please to remember that, throughout this poem, the Britons (the people of Wales) are all along distinguished from the English and the Scotch; and that England alone (as divided from Scotland and Wales) is the scene of Faerie Land' (Church). Faery Land, however, has no geographical relations to existing lands. In the chronicle passages of the poem (Bk. II, c. x, Bk. III, c. iii, c. ix, st. 33-51) no attention is paid to Faery Land at all. In Bk. II, c. x, st. 70-76, it is treated as separate.
- VIII. *worth and worship* : dignity and honor. Cf. 248, 21.
- 336, IX. *borne the name* : been most famous.
- X. *bounteous* : virtuous, manly. Cf. 332, 49, 246, 4.  
*aware* : on your guard. Cf. 536, 1, 569, 13.
- XII. *occasion* : induce.  
*balke* : bandy words.
- XIII. *Whose provesse paragone* : the equal of whose prowess.
- XIV. *comfortlesse* : helpless.
- XVI. *vault* : probably, put forward, present to view. Cf. 441, 7.
- 337, XVIII. *solemniz'd* : celebrated.
- XXI. *convince* : convict, expose.
- XXII. *'it fortun'd, etc.* v. n. 231, 5.
- XXIII. *buxome . . . prone* : pliant . . . submissive.
- XXIV. *ventayle* : the movable face-guard of a helmet.
- 338, XXV. *ermilin* : ermine.
- XXVI. *personage* : personal appearance.
- 339, XXXII. *gryefe* : i. e. grief.
- XXXIV. *armes*. v. n. 33, 72.  
*streightly*. v. n. 731, 71.
- 340, XLII. *welfare*. Cf. 'farewell,' 565, 24.
- XLIII. *Beldame* : good mother (not yet a term of reproach). Cf. 344, 17, 374, 8.  
*unkinde* : unnatural. Cf. 85, 396.
- XLV. *houre*. v. n. 640, 39.  
*No shadow . . . poure* : There is no shadow that is not governed by a body.  
*cyphers* : astrological signs or figures.
- 341, XLVII. *displayd* : spread. Cf. 298, 15.  
*lamp . . . steepe* : She extinguished the lamp by submerging the wick in the oil. To blow it out would be unlucky.
- XLVIII. *appele* : address by way of appeal.  
*verse* : i. e. incantation, spell. Cf. 238, 55, 149, 37, 220, 27. Cf. also 'rimes,' 206, 48.
- XLIX. *colt wood* : coltsfoot.
- 342, *Canto III*, II. *fatall*. v. n. 297, 9.  
*descents* : lines of descent.  
*heroes*. v. n. 64, 341.  
*v. great care she tooke* : she endured great grief. Cf. 9, 9.
- VI. *coast*. v. n. 191, 45.  
*the Africk Ismael* : the Saracens or Moors, supposed descendants of Ishmael.
- VII. *counseld* : took counsel.
- 343, XIII. *coosen* : kinsman. Cf. 345, 29.
- XIV. *love to frend*. v. n. 148, 28.
- XV. *fatall end* : 'some purpose of the Fates' (Child).
- 344, XVIII. *redrest*. v. n. 176, 36.  
XXI. *of grace*. v. n. 279, 59.
- 345, XXV. *pertake* : to carry through? to impart?  
*constant terme* : fixed limit or end, outcome.
- XXVII. *closure* : bound, limit.
- 346, XXXII. *heroes*. v. n. 64, 341.  
*the six islands* : Ireland, Iceland, Gothland, the Orkneys, Norway, Dacia (Denmark).
- XXXIII. *Norweyses* : Norwegians.
- 347, XLIV. *notifide*. v. n. 416, 39.
- XLVI. *a Raven* : the Danes.
- 348, *ibid.* *faithlesse chickens* : the Danes being heathen.
- XLVII. *a Lion* : William the Conqueror.
- XLVIII. *a sparke, etc.* : In 1278 Llewellyn, the last British prince, gave up Wales and retired to Anglesey (Mona). Henry VII was born in Anglesey.
- XLIX. *a royall Virgin* : Elizabeth.  
*the great Castle* : the king of Castile. Cf. 141, Howard.
- LI. *Of all that . . . inquir'd* : Concerning everything about which they needed to make inquiry.  
*possesse* : i. e. achieve.
- LII. *armes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- 350, LXI. *forward right*. v. n. 320, 53.
- LXII. *affectionate* : disposed.  
*diverst* : turned aside.  
*forth* : straight on.
- 351, *Canto IV*, VI. *her blinded guest* : Love.  
X. *continent* : land. Cf. 354, 30.  
*table* : votive tablet. Cf. 249, 24.
- XII. *coosen* : kindred. v. n. 343, 13.
- XIII. *engroste* : thickened. Cf. 270, 46.  
*disclo'ste, etc.* : set free, let loose her affliction in a storm of anger.
- 352, XVI. *again* : on her part. Cf. 655, 5.  
*scuchin* : i. e. scutcheon, shield.  
*mayled* : made of chain armor. v. n. 184, 43. Cf. 362, 31, 528, 2.  
*on an heape* : in a heap.
- 353, XXI. *perswade* : entreat.  
XXIV. *deare* : dearly.  
*knife* : a stock term of the old romances for 'sword.' Cf. 183, 38.
- XXVIII. *vainely* : erroneously.
- 354, XXX. *continent* : ground. Cf. 351, 10.
- XXXI. *pensife* : used by Spenser only with the implication of sorrow. Cf. 10, 76.

- xxxiii. *abid* : abode, became.  
 xxxiii. *commaundement*. v. n. 77, 508.  
*rowndell* : a globule.  
 xxxiv. *temed* : harnesses teamwise.  
 xxxv. *her sobbing breaches* : the intervals of her sobbing. Cf. 73, 232.
- 355, xxxviii. *the grave self to engrosse* : to fill the grave oneself.  
 xxxix. *maligne* : view with malice. Cf. 662, 11.  
 xli. *lore* : teaching.  
 xlii. *clim* : i. e. climb.
- 356, xlv. *th' ensample, etc.* : 'i. e. who had given this specimen of her power' (Child).  
*brooke* : ply.  
 xlv. Here and in the argument of c. i we find traces of an early plan abandoned, according to which Archinago and Duessa were to be main agents of evil in Bk. III, as they had been in Bk. I and, to a lesser degree, in Bk. II. Archimago is here mentioned for the last time.
- xlvi. *howndes*. v. n. 33, 72.  
 xlix. *tassell gent* : the male goshawk.
- 357, lii. *scope* : a mark, i. e. object of desire.  
 lvi. *from Stygian . . . handmaide* : calls (i. e. summons) from Stygian deep thee, whom in his blind error he holds his goddess, and calls (i. e. names) thee great Dame Nature's handmaid.
- 358, lx. *beames*. v. n. 33, 72.  
 lxi. *intent* : mood. Cf. 201, 12.  
*Canto V, i. pageauits* : rôles, parts.  
*variable kindes* : various natures.  
 ii. *ungentlenessse* : conduct unbecoming a gentleman.
- 359, xi. *rowme*. v. n. 80, 57.  
*abide* : be in store for.
- 361, xix. *mayles* : the rings of which chain armor was composed. Cf. 528, 3.  
 xxi. *load upon him layd*. v. n. 310, 29.  
 xxiii. *rigor*. v. n. 155, 18.  
*ferme* : The sense lies in the idea of holding on lease, not absolutely.  
 xxv. *continent* : land. Cf. 351, 10.
- 362, xxviii. *persue* : perhaps some technical term of the chase = means of pursuing, trail. Perhaps a printer's slip for 'issue,' the *per* being caught from 'perceav'd.'  
 xxx. *Besides all hope* : contrary to all expectation.  
 xxxi. *light* : i. e. she relieved his head of, etc. Cf. 229, 42.  
 xxxii. *divine tobacco* : supposed by the early users of it to have medicinal properties.
- 363, xxxiii. *marbles ploine* : smooth stones.  
*handles*. v. n. 33, 72.  
 xxxiv. *hopelesse* : unhopd for.  
 xxxvi. *safety*. v. n. 77, 508.  
 xxxviii. *case*. v. n. 220, 26.
- 364, xli. *redrest*. v. n. 176, 36.  
*reduced* : brought back. Cf. 346, 32, 614, 3.  
 xlii. *rebound* : apparently no more than 'dart out.' Forced by rhyme.  
 xliii. *releast* : i. e. saved.  
 xlvi. *deathes*. v. n. 33, 72.  
 xlvii. l. 2. Suspected to be a reference to the scattering of the Armada by storms.
- 365, xlviii. *by art* : after its manner (?). Cf. 539, 24. Such phrases as this, forced by rhyme, usually carry some vague sense, not easily expressed.
- 366, *Canto VI, vi. beames*. v. n. 33, 72.  
 367, viii. *Informed* : formed.  
 xii. *her heavenly hous, etc.* Cf. 747, 29-59.
- 368, xviii. *lanck* : Used by Spenser where we should use 'slender.' Cf. 391, 21.  
*for hindring* : lest they should hinder. Cf. 103, 1010.  
 xix. *compriz'd* : gathered together.  
 xxi. *ill . . . apayd* : you must be afflicted.
- 369, xxiii. *let . . . envide* : 'do not grudge him that praise' (Child).
- 370, xxx. *account* : enumerate or recount.  
*weeds* : i. e. plants. Cf. 237, 52.  
*counted* : recounted.  
 xxxv. *sondry* : separate.
- 371, xxxviii. *conditioned* : bound (as by a contract).  
 xlii. *harvest* : autumn. Cf. 54, 98.  
*they clyme* : Who climb (unless the indwellers, after fruit) is not clear.
- 372, xlv. *caprifole* : honeysuckle or woodbine.  
 xlv. *Amintas* : probably Sir Philip Sidney, mortally wounded at Zutphen.  
 li. *tendered* : cared for. Cf. 84, 362, 569, 18.
- 373, lii, liii. This account of Scudamour's wooing of Amoret does not agree with that in Bk. IV, c. x.  
*worldes*. v. n. 33, 72.  
*Canto VII, iii. hable puissaunce* : strength sufficient for his need. Cf. 219, 19.  
 iv. *subject to* : lying beneath. Cf. 218, 19.  
*overcame* : overspread.
- 374, vii. *gin* : scheme.  
 viii. *while* : until. Cf. 727, 53.  
 xii. *for . . . donne* : good for doing nothing.
- 375, ibid. *lewd* : ignorant.  
 xiii. *at undertime* : in the latter part of the day.  
 xvi. *lovely semblaunces* : shows of love.  
*resemblaunces* : Todd quotes Barret's Dict., 1580, 'To resemble : to smile upon, to favour.'  
 xviii. *compast* : plotted.  
 xix. *kent* : kenned, became aware.
- 376, xxi. *to plight* : to good condition. Cf. 390, 19.  
 xxii. *misshapt* : misshapen.  
 xxiii. *sent* : scent. Cf. 670, 10.  
 xxiv. *wex areare* : fall behind, slacken.  
 xxvi. *fond*. v. n. 200, 7.
- 377, xxx. *unfilde* : unburnished. 'Filing' is a common term with Spenser for polishing. Cf. 149, 35.  
 xxxiv. *containe* : to confine. In the old editions, 'enclose.' *Containe* is the nearest equivalent that rhymes. Cf. 576, 1.  
 xxxv. *implacable* : irremediable.
- 378, xxxix. *stare* : glitter.  
*High God in peeces tare*. Cf. *Canterbury Tales* C. 474.  
 'It is grisly for to here hem swere ;  
 Our blisid lordes body they to-tere ;'  
 i. e. they swear by all the parts of God's body ;  
 a form of blasphemy long surviving in  
 'zounds,' 'sblood,' etc.

- XLII. *Mount Olympus*: In confusing Olympus and Olympia Spenser is accompanied by Sidney, who makes the same, to us almost inconceivable, blunder in his *Defence of Poesy*. Cf. 108, 2.
- 379, XLIII. *remorse*. v. n. 252, 6.
- XLVI. *along the lands*: a convenient expletive. Cf. 464, 25.
- 381, LVIII. *jane*: a small silver coin of Genoa. to chose: 'if you please.'
- LIX. *maintenaunce*: condition of life.
- LX. *handsome*: convenient.
- LXI. *fondly*. v. n. 317, 31.
- land*: place. Cf. 379, 46.
- Canto VIII*, I. *causelesse* . . . *accord*: without having consented to any action that might deserve such a fate.
- finde*. v. n. 200, 7.
- II. *fate*: i. e. her fated term of life.
- III. *riv'd* . . . *breast*: split his breast and torn his heart out. Cf. 436, 18, 566, 32.
- 382, v. *In hand* . . . *tooke*: undertook. Cf. 397, 19.
- VII. *thryse*: a third part.
- VIII. *Him needed not instruct*: it was not necessary to instruct him.
- X. *armes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- 383, XIII. *next to*: second to.
- XVI. *as he mote on high*: as loudly as he could.
- bide him batteill*: endure, undergo battle with him.
- treat*: parley. Cf. 594, 36.
- XVII. *els*. v. n. 451, 28.
- 384, XIX. *without abode*: without delay.
- XX. *queene*: i. e. Fortune.
- XXII. *drover*: a fishing hoat.
- 385, XXVII. *it may behove*: it behooves you to be active in her behalf.
- XXVIII. *presage*: have an inkling of.
- XXIX. *embrace*: to esteem. Cf. 583, 3.
- XXXI. *card*: compass-card or chart. Cf. 271, 1.
- yrkesome*: loathsome. v. n. 698, 906.
- frayle*: melting.
- XXXIII. *attached neare*: nearly seized or caught.
- XXXIV. *recomfort, and accourage*: cheer and encourage.
- 386, ihid. *quayld*. v. n. 254, 14.
- XL. *exprest*: manifested, showed. Cf. 302, 43, 615, 10.
- leman*: sweetheart.
- 387, XLIII. *yrkes*. v. n. 698, 906.
- XLVII, l. 7. *That*: which.
- repent*: grieve for.
- XLVIII. *That ye*: that which ye.
- of report*: from hearsay knowledge. Cf. 'depend of,' and 'proceed of,' 440, 1.
- 388, LI. *Mote not mislike you*: may it not displease you.
- relate*: hring back.
- Canto IX*, II. *mis*: err. Cf. 251, 40.
- III. *privitie*: seclusion.
- IV. *bounty*. v. n. 332, 49.
- 389, v. *his other blink'd eye*. v. n. 252, 4. One of his eyes is quite blind (392, 27), the other is hlinking, dim.
- VI. *misdeeme*: entertain to his discredit.
- VII. *misdonne*: misbehave.
- containe*: keep within bounds, restrain. Cf. 541, 1, 543, 11, 615, 7.
- XI. *ordered*: prepared.
- XII. *of courtesie*: i. e. of want of courtesy. The defect is implied in the verb.
- 390, XIII. *whyleave*: goes with 'full.' The shed was full since a while before.
- XIV. *grate*. v. n. 107, 1334.
- XVI. *counterchaunge to scorse*: give the return blow.
- XVIII. *him to beare with all*: to bear with him.
- XIX. *dissembled what they did not see*: feigned not to notice his want of hospitality.
- in plight*. v. n. 376, 21.
- 391, XX. *tramells*: plaits. Cf. 241, 15.
- XXVI. *late recourse*: recent retirement.
- 392, XXVII. *he him selfe*: Malhecco.
- sided*: was on the side towards.
- XXX. *Bacchus fruit* . . . *plate*: wine out of the silver patera or cup.
- XXXI, ll. 1-3. He pledges her in a cup of wine; she reaches to take the cup out of his hand, to pledge him in return, feigns to 'mistake' it, i. e. to grasp it carelessly, and spills, etc.
- the ape* . . . *cape*: 'Fools used formerly to carry apes on their shoulders; and to put the ape upon a man was a phrase equivalent to "make a fool of him"' (Upton).
- XXXII. *Purpose was moved*: proposition was made.
- XXXIII, l. 8 f. 'since the stain which has come upon thine ancient renown has disgraced the offspring of thy great ancestors, and sullied thy glory in later times' (Child).
- 393, XXXVIII. *extract*: descended.
- Troynovant*: London.
- XLI. *safegard*: safety.
- fatalerrour*: destined wandering. Cf. 297, 9.
- XLII. *contract*: ally himself by.
- contract*: contracted, a common form of the pp.
- 394, XLIII. *Into* . . . *convart*: each to have the title of sovereignty stand in its own name.
- remoud*: remov'd. One of the most ingenious of Spenser's distortions in rhyme, to be appreciated only in the old editions, in which *u* and *v*, in any but the initial position, are represented alike by *u*. The word could thus be pronounced to rhyme with *bloud*, and yet to the eye preserve its normal form. Cf. *recoure*, 479, 25.
- XLV. *Upon whose stubborne neck* . . . *her foot*: The reference is to London Bridge, between the close-set piers of which the water ran in rapids that were avoided by smaller hoats.
- XLVI. *scope*: tract.
- XLIX. *Which* . . . *abrode*: 'Which' is the object of 'seeking,' i. e. exploring.
- 395, LI. *Your countrey kin*: your kinsman by country, your countryman.
- Canto X*, III. *patience perforce*. v. n. 246, 3. Here the phrase may possibly be used half adverbially, for in neither 1590 nor 1596 is it separated from what follows by punctuation.
- 396, VI. *bord*: table.
- fortun'd*: chanced.
- ungentlenessse*. v. n. 358, 2.



- VIII. *Bransles*: songs to be danced to.  
*purposes*: the conversational game of cross-purposes, questions and answers.
- X. *dispurwayaunce*: lack of provisions.  
*reskewes*: attempts, by friends on the outside, to bring relief.
- 397, XIX. *takes in hond*: undertakes. Cf. 382, 5.
- 399, XXVIII. *albee I simple such*: though I be so simple.
- XXIX. *bouget*: budget, wallet.  
*war-monger*: a mercenary soldier.
- XXX. *stoupt . . . winde*: an image from falconry. He did not swoop on the prey, but remained poised above it.
- XXXIII. *jollity*: gallant appearance.
- 400, XXXV. *having filcht her bells*. v. n. 605, 19.
- 401, XLII. *safety*. v. n. 77, 508.
- XLIV. *redd*: declared, bestowed.
- XLV. *brouzes*: young shoots.
- XLVI. *shed*: besprinkle.
- XLVII. *his faire hornes*: the metaphorical horns of the cuckold are here suddenly become real.  
*misconceyving*. v. n. 153, 3.
- 402, LIV. *staring eyes dismay*: the dismay of staring eyes, eyes staring in dismay.
- 403, LIX. *pasture*: food.
- 404, Canto XI, iv. *all that I ever finde*: all (of his sex) that I ever heard of.
- VIII. *invade*: intrude on.
- X. *bounteous*. v. n. 332, 49.  
*day*: i. e. time.
- 405, XII. *drerinesse*: anguish.
- XIII. *Whereas . . . mistooke*: where he wrongly supposed there was, etc.
- XIV. *values*: valor's. Cf. 77, 466.
- XVIII. *stresse*: distress. Cf. 301, 37.
- 406, XIX. *that more . . . sought*: that is to be sought more than death is to be avoided.
- XX. *disprofesse*: renounce the profession of.  
*dressse*: adjust.
- XXI. *wait*. v. n. 211, 36.
- XXIV. *praise*: praiseworthy action.
- XXV. *with equall space*: equally.  
*revolt*: turn back.
- 407, XXVII. *utmost*: outermost. Cf. 658, 26, 756, 108.
- XXX. *lively*: really. Cf. 330, 38.
- 408, XXXV. *Thracian mayd*: Proserpina.
- XXXVII. *lusty*: handsome. Cf. 13, 131.
- XXXIX. *cowheard . . . cowheard*: a characteristic pun — herder of cows and coward.
- XL. *hippodames*: sea-horses.
- 409, XLIV. *horrid*: rough. Cf. 189, 31, 182, 25.
- 410, LI. *by many partes*: by a considerable proportion, by much.
- LIV. *intend*: signify. Cf. 28, 232.
- 411, LV. *welpointed*: well-appointed, in good condition.  
*dressse*: set in order. Cf. 218, 15.  
*Canto XII, arg. decayd*: wasted. Cf. 522, 8, 382, 4.
- II. *atwixt*: i. e. mingled with, accompanying the wind.
- persevered*: the Elizabethan form of the word was 'persever.'
- IV. *cyphered*: characterized, written.
- VI. *report*: response, echo.  
*rebound*. v. n. 70, 22.
- 412, VIII. *say*: a fine, thin woollen stuff. Cf. 168, 31, 37, 67.
- IX. *disguysed*: fashioned fantastically.
- X. *disguyse*: fantastic fashion.  
*Albanese-wyse*: in Albanian fashion.
- XIII. *sprinkle*: a brush for sprinkling holy water.
- 413, XV. *walkte*. v. n. 252, 5.  
*lattis*: 'The allusion is to the Italian name *Gelosia*: such blinds and lattices as they may see through, yet not be seen; such as suspicious and jealous persons use' (Upton).
- XVIII. *degree*: order. Cf. 252, 46.
- XX. *honour*: adornment, covering.
- 414, XXII. *in perfect kinde*: in perfect condition.  
i. e. with perfect clearness.
- XXIII. *winges*. v. n. 33, 72.
- XXIV. *each*: each other.
- XXVII. *rigorous*. v. n. 218, 16.
- 415, XXX. *all and some*: one and all. Cf. 113, 229.
- XXXII. *Not caring*. v. n. 109, 34.
- XXXIII. *ment*: intended, directed. Cf. 247, 11.  
*rashly he did wrest*: he quickly turned aside.
- 416, XXXVII. *Abode*: waited.
- XXXVIII. *safety*. v. n. 77, 508.
- XXXIX. *notifyde*: proclaimed, or perhaps, known. Cf. 347, 44.
- XLI, l. 7. The edition of 1590 contains a number of alexandrines out of place, i. e. in other positions than at the close of stanzas. In the edition of 1596 these are mostly reduced to ten syllable lines. In the poem as a whole there remain three: here, in 257, 41, and in 599, 24.
- XLIII. *fained*: sham. Cf. 695, 696, 758, 273.
- 417, THE FOURTH BOOKE, Prologue, I. *The rugged forehead*: Burghley.
- 418, III. *heroes*. v. n. 64, 341.  
v. *feare*: formidableness.  
*Canto I, i. unworthie*: undeserved. Cf. 499, 17, 607, 34.
- 419, VI. *health*: welfare. Cf. 121, 378.  
*dealth*: dealeth, bestoweth. Cf. 'mealt'b,' 203, 31.  
*stealth*. v. n. 301, 39.
- VII. *Thereto*. v. n. 309, 22.  
*doubtfull to be wayd*: doubtful to be weighed, judged, of doubtful significance.  
*purpos*. v. n. 335, 4.  
*other whiles . . . otherwhiles*: now . . . again.
- XI. *so far in dout*: of such doubtful consistency.
- 420, XII. *challenge*: claim. Cf. 283, 27, 450, 25.  
*quitted*: freed, reft.  
*of . . . fitted*: furnished with.
- XIII. *prodigious*: portentous.
- XVIII. *each degree*: people of all classes. Cf. 433, 2.
- 421, XXI. *Disshivered*: shivered into fragments.
- XXII. *signe*: memorial?  
*his princes five*: Cassander, Lysimachus, Ptolemy, Seleucus, and perhaps Antigonus.  
*to them*: among themselves.
- 422, XXVII. *intended*: directed. Cf. 258, 46.  
*comprehended*: contained.

- xxviii. *matchlesse* : i. e. not alike.  
*odde* : diverse. Cf. 711, 27.
- xxix. *handes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- xxxii. *descrie* : denote, express.  
*whether*. v. n. 157, 37.
- 423, xxxvi. *Him selfe* . . . *deceave* : He cheated himself out of, etc. Cf. 198, 41.
- xxxvii. *his other companie* : the rest of his party.
- 424, xlvi. *maisterdome* : masterfulness. Cf. 329, 25.
- xlvii. *a willow bough* : the badge of forlorn lovers.
- 425, xlix. *shivering* : i. e. quivering. Cf. 427, 14, 435, 10.
- l. *got* : gained. Cf. 568, 9, 580, 32.
- lii. *thine avenge* : vengeance on thee.
- liv. *expyred* : brought to an end. Cf. 460, 43, 94, 309.
- 426, Canto II, i. *ympes of Greece* : the Argonauts. Cf. 421, 23.
- ii. *that prudent Romane* : Menenius Agrippa.
- vi. *scoffed* : spoken in derision.  
*torne* : i. e. turn.
- 427, x. *draft* : attraction.  
*beraft* : bereft, despoiled.
- xii. *way'd* : journeyed.
- xv. *remorse* : 'biting or cutting force' (N. E. D.).
- 428, xvi. *stemme ech other* : collide, prow on.
- xix. *unfitting* : i. e. to their true natures.
- 429, xxvii. *prefard* : preferred, recommended.
- 430, xxx. *partake* : to share.
- xxxii. *Whylome, etc.* : With the change of 'oldē' to 'antique,' this is the opening verse of the Knight's Tale. The story that Spenser re-lives is, of course, the unfinished tale of the Squire. He chooses to regard this, not as 'left half told,' but as defaced by Time, i. e. in good part lost.
- Dan*. v. n. 669, 9.
- xxxiv. *Ne dare I like* : nor do I dare attempt the same.
- 431, xxxvii. *bethought* : took thought. Cf. 756, 107.
- xlvi. *curtaze* : properly a kind of short sword or cutlass, but used by Spenser for a battle-ax (short-handled?). v. 436, 17.
- 432, xlvii, l. 5. *went* : going, travel. Cf. 453, 46, 614, 3.
- 433, li. *free* : do away with.  
 Canto III, i. *Deathes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- ii. *each degree*. v. n. 420, 18.
- 434, iii. *define* : decide. Cf. 612, 28.
- vii. *harder* : harder, tougher.
- ix. *arresting* : stopping.  
*not* : i. e. 'note,' could not.
- 435, xi. *thy mischallenge and abet* : thy wrongful challenge and thy maintaining of it.  
*lei*. v. n. 266, 16.
- xii. *gorget* : a piece of armor for the throat.
- xiii. *traduction* : transmission.  
*derived* : transferred. v. n. 560, 41.  
*other brethren* : Church emends to 'second brother,' in accordance with 433, 52, and 436, 21 f., but Spenser, in such matters, is often unprecise.
- xvi. *spoyle* : dead body. Cf. 572, 33, 646, 35; v. n. 126, 6.
- 436, xviii. *stinted* : put an end to. Cf. 104, 1092, 351, 8.  
*gave way unto* : gave way before.
- xx. *deadly* : dead, in death. Cf. 188, 23.
- xxiv. *on equall cost* : on even terms. v. n. 248, 17.
- 437, xxv. *water-sprinkles* : sprinkled drops of water.
- xxvii. *the Shenan* : the river Shannon.
- 439, xlii. *in lovely lore* : in amorous fashion.
- xlvi. Rinaldo was cured of his mad passion for Angelica by drinking of a fountain in the forest of Ardenne. v. *Orlando Furioso*, I, 78, XLII, 60-67. Ariosto is referred to as Tuscan (he was a Lombard) because the literary language of Italy sprang from the dialect of Tuscany.
- xlvi. *listes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- 440, l. *Too weel . . . befel'd* : This curious locution, the 'happening' of 'news,' is to be found also in 183, 34.
- 441, Canto IV, ii. *descride* : examined.
- iv. *Disgracing* : reviling.  
*bore* : borne.
- v. *brode* : widely.
- vi. *folke-mote* : a meeting of people.
- vii. *vaunted* : thrust forward.
- 442, xix. *long* : distant.  
*prolong* : defer. Cf. 567, 1.
- 443, xvii. *maiden-headed* : He bore on his shield the cognizance of the Order of Maidenhead. Cf. 288, 2-6. On other occasions he bears his own cognizance, a Satyr's head. Cf. 377, 30.
- xviii. *wag* : For serious use v. 506, 22, 750, 24.
- 444, xxiii. *glode* : glided.
- xxv. *part* : party.
- xxvii. *misdid* : did aught amiss.
- xxix. *cuffing close* : dealing blows at close quarters. Cf. 154, 17.
- 445, xxx. *compast* : rounded. Cf. 67, 567.
- xxxi. *out of his pray* : from his preying, clutch. Cf. 646, 41.
- xxxiii. *There as* : There where.
- xxxv. *allarme* : onset. Cf. 268, 34.  
*husband farme* : tilled farm.
- all* : any.
- xxxvi. *relest* : released, surrendered.
- 446, xxxvii. *some while* : at times.
- xxxviii. *carelesse* : uncared for. Cf. 158, 45.
- xxxix. *descride* : i. e. interpreted.  
*word*. v. n. 257, 38.
- Salvagesse sans finesse* : 'wildness without art' (Church).
- xl. *charg'd* : levelled, aimed.  
*him life behote*. v. n. 221, 38.
- xli. *ere his hand he reard* : So long as his spear held, his hand would be down, aiming it.
- 447, xlviii. *beauties prize* : excellence of beauty. Cf. 77, 466.  
 Canto V, arg. *Doth sleepe, etc.* : One must supply Care as subject.
- i. *for reasons speciall privitie* : 'Because reason has to do with the special connection (between chivalry and beauty)' (Warren).
- 448, iii, l. 9. *usd* : practiced. Cf. 168, 32.

- 449, XII. *enchace*: give fitting expression to. Cf. 227, 23.  
*he that thought, etc.* v. n. 144, *Ladies*.  
 XVI. *disclos'd*: unfastened. Cf. 227, 25.
- 450, XVIII. *invest*: put on.  
 XXV. *challenge*. v. n. 420, 12.
- 451, *ibid.* *alone*: without being compelled.  
 XXVI. *befall*: fall.  
*alone*. v. n. 451, 25.  
 XXXVIII. *else*: elsewhere. Cf. 582, 43, 383, 17.
- 453, XXXIX. *redrest*: refreshed. v. n. 176, 36.  
*needed much . . . to desire*: must necessarily much desire.
- XLIII. *dayly*: of the daytime.  
 XLVI. *a went*. Cf. 432, 47.
- 454, *Canto VI*, III. *voide*: swerve from.  
 IV. *time yet serves*: time yet favors, it is yet desirable.  
 V. *have ye . . . shonne*: have you come to this forest for some special purpose? which seems more probable, seeing that you have shunned encounter with one whose arms you recognized.
- 455, VII. *that many . . . dread*: which makes many dread him.  
 IX. *when they*: It would seem as if 'they' should be 'he,' accidentally confused by the printer with the second 'they' of the line.  
 XIII. *blest*. v. n. 155, 18.
- 456, XIX. *ventayle*. v. n. 337, 24.  
*shard*: shared, cut. Cf. 428, 17, 529, 9.
- 457, XXII. *of his . . . religion*: 'turned his wonder into devotion' (Church).
- 458, XXXII. *empart*: assign.
- 460, XLIII. *expire*. v. n. 425, 54.  
 XLIV. *Ne wight him to attend*: He reappears in Bk. V, however, attended by Talus.  
 XLVI. *by her did set*: esteemed her. Cf. 666, 44.  
*Canto VII*, II. *tride*: experienced. Cf. 468, 9, 63, 233.
- 461, V. *rape*: robbery.  
 VII. *was . . . seene*: seemed (Lat. *videri*).
- 462, XII. *into darknesse drive*: i. e. will not suffer to be practiced in the light of day.  
 XV. *irkes*. v. n. 698, 906.  
 XVI. *willed or nilled*: was willing or was unwilling. Cf. *will or nill*, 164, 43.
- 463, XXII. *staies*: stays for.  
*Thracian Nymphes*: the Amazons.
- 464, XXV. *on the land*: on the ground, on his feet. Cf. 542, 7.  
 XXVII. *hazard neare*: put in great danger of being hurt. Cf. 121, 378.  
 XXX. *tynde*: kindled.  
 XXXI. *draught*: drawing (of the bow).  
*distraight*: lit. drawn asunder. Cf. 528, 2.
- 465, XXXII. *admir'd*: wondered at, gazed at with astonishment. Cf. 631, 27.  
 XXXIII. *Thenceforth*: From that place onward. Cf. 104, 1086, 572, 35.  
 XXXVI. *indignity*: indignation. Cf. 65, 444
- 466, XL. *embaulm'd*: anointed. Cf. 173, 17.  
*unshed*: unparted.  
 XLIV. *answere mum*: say nothing.  
 XLV. *usage*. v. n. 583, 3.

- 467, *Canto VIII*, I. *Well said the wiseman*: 'The king's displeasure is a messenger of death.' Proverbs 16, 14, Coverdale's version.  
 III. *passion*: suffering. Cf. 210, 24.  
 IV. *sensibly compyl'd*: feelingly composed.
- 468, IX. *tride*. v. n. 460, 2.  
*pertake*: partake of, endure.  
 XII. *glib*: 'a thick curled bush of haire, hanging downe over theyr eyes, and monstrosly disguising them.' (Of Irish customs, in Spenser's *View of the Present State of Ireland*).  
 XIV. *man of place*: man of rank.
- 469, XIX. *evill rate*: bad, poor supply.
- 470, XXV. *causelesse*: without foundation of truth.  
 XXVII. *hardnesse*. v. n. 102, 944.  
*endur'd*: hardened.
- 471, XXVIII. *all onely lent*: entirely gave up.  
*Regardless, of that, etc.*: The *of* must do double duty — regardless of being by that.
- XXXIX. *misregard*: distorted vision.
- XXXI. *the stronger pride*: the pride of greater strength.  
*warre old*: 'That is, worse old, the older form of world being *woruld* or *weorold*. This cynical derivation resembles that of *man* from the Saxon *mán*, sin, and is only a little more fantastic' (Child).
- XXXIV. *on footpace*: a combination, apparently, of *on foot* and *at a footpace*.
- 472, XXXVIII. *spare*: restrain.
- XL. *unredrest*: unsuccored, or past help.
- 473, XLIV. *Mahoune*: Mahomet.
- XLV. *his god*: 'Mahoune,' as above. In the old romances, he is a god of the Saracens. v. n. 284, 30.
- XLVI. *accident*: i. e. occurrence.
- XLVIII. *brought Unto his bay*: brought to bay before him.
- 474, LI. *merciesse*: without hope of mercy.  
 LIII. *freely set*: set free. Cf. 'freely wend,' 648, 6.  
 LIV. *restore . . . reserve*: apparently, let cut . . . keep in.  
 LV. *reveale*: discover, find out.  
 LVII. *onely*: especial. Cf. 230 (c. 1), 2.
- 475, LVIII. *to me agree*: assent to my proposal.  
 LXIII. *streight*. v. n. 731, 71.  
 LXIV. *merciesse*: obtaining no mercy.
- 476, *Canto IX*, arg. The only marriage specifically mentioned is that of Pœana, but she marries the 'trusty squire,' Placidus, not Amyas, the squire of low degree. Most editors change *Pœana* to *Æmylia*, which indeed assort the lovers properly, but none the less misrepresents Spenser's meaning. He had in mind to indicate the marriage of Pœana, and simply mistook her lover.
- I. *Whether*: which (properly, of two). v. n. 157, 37.  
 III. *refraine*: restrain. Cf. 486, 36.
- VI. *rote*: 'There appear to have been two kinds of *rotes*, one a sort of psaltery or harp played with a plectrum or quill, the other much the same as the fiddle' (Mayhew). Cf. 296, 3.
- 477, XI. *mazd*: marvelled.  
 XIV. *corsive*: i. e. corrosive.



474. *ibid.* *goodly ayde*: of goodly color, complexion.  
 xx. *beseeemed*: graced.
479. xxxiv. *upbraide*: scolding.  
*successe*: outcome.
- xxxviii. *upbraide*: disgrace. Cf. 573, 41, 90, 2.
480. xxx. *laid*: struck. Cf. 629, 13.
- xxxii. *would them faine*: desired them.
- xxxiii. *coast*: quarter, direction. Cf. 537, 7.
- xxxiv. *hartned*: encouraged.
- xxxv. *instantly*: urgently.
481. xxxvi. *challenge*: accusation.  
 xxxviii. l. 7. *sorrow*: afflict.  
*waide*: weighed, valued. Cf. 668, 55.
- xxxix. Scudamour has not yet perceived Amoret. In st. iv of the next canto he speaks of beholding her. Upton suggests that after the present stanza (481, 39) Spenser intended to make use of the original conclusion to Bk. III (v. Appendix II).
- xli. *require*: solicit. Cf. 213, 50.  
*Canto X, l. redound*: preponderate.
482. v. *spilt*: inlaid.  
 vi. *fare*: passage. Cf. 563, 16.  
*prepare*: provide.
- vii. *would it faine to force*: would desire to force it.
483. xi. *utter*. v. n. 244, 34.  
 xiii. *occasions*: pretexts.
484. xviii. *litle count did hold*: were held in light esteem.  
 xxi. *onely*: one absolutely. Cf. 230, 2.  
 xxiii. *to ghesse*: to the conception, one might think.
485. xxv. *balkt*: i. e. ceased.  
 xxvi. *aspire*: inspire.
- xxvii. *Hyllus*: i. e. Hylas.  
*Titus and Gesippus*: v. Boccaccio, *Decameron*, X, 8.
486. xxxi. *Danisk*: Danish.  
 xxxv. *hell them might*: hell requite them, all end in a hell of discord.
- xxxvi. *refrayned*. v. n. 476, 3.
487. xxxix. *masse*: substance. Cf. 388, 4.  
*to esteeme*: to be reckoned.
- xl. *Phidias, etc.*: It was with the Aphrodite of the Cnidians, by Praxiteles, that the youth fell in love.
- xliii. *paragons disdayning*: the disdain of their mistresses.
488. xlv. *dædale*: fertile in creations of beauty.
489. lii. *rate*: manner.  
 liii. *wade*: Cf. use in 146, 12.  
 liv. *drest*: ordered, performed.  
 lv. *warie*: Upton suggests *wearie*.  
 lvi. *like astonisht*: as it were confounded. Cf. 185, 4.
490. *Canto XI, iii. begor'd*: smeared with gore.  
 iv. *descride*: distinguished.
491. ix. *most and least*. v. n. 615, 12.  
 x. *O thou*: Clio.
492. xxi. *Oranochy*: Orinoco.  
*Of warlike Amazons*: The discoverer of the Amazon, Orellana, seeing some armed women on the banks, called it the river of the Amazons.
493. xxii. *this to you, O Britons*: evidently inspired by Raleigh's ambitions concerning Guiana. His first expedition thither was of 1595.
- xxiii. *spouse*: bridegroom.
- xxviii. *Troynovant*: London.
494. xxx. *stout*: haughty. Cf. 74, 265.
- xxxxi. *chockt*: choked.  
*adamants*: Bristol diamonds.
- xxxv. *Holland*: The southeastern part of Lincolnshire, where the Welland enters the sea, is called Holland.
495. xxxvi. *Gualsever*: Wall of Severus.  
*Logris land*: England.  
*Albany*: Scotland.
- xl. *The Irishe rivers*: See the delightful paper by P. W. Joyce in *Fraser's* for March, 1878.
496. xlii. *late staind with English blood*: in Glendalough, in Wicklow, where Lord Grey was defeated by the Irish, August, 1580.
- xlv. *water chamelot*: watered camlet.
- l. *hight of many heastes*: Spenser evidently takes the latter part of the name as coming from *vómos*, law.
497. lii. l. 7. The sense seems to be that these 'floods and fountains' are indeed born of the ocean, but through the agency of sun and air.
499. *Canto XII, xvii. unworthy*. v. n. 418, 1.  
*her bereaved cares*: her woeful bereavement.
- xviii. *short*: near at hand.
500. xx. *raw*: prominent ('rawboned').  
 xxiii. *lent*: given. v. n. 557, 18.  
 xxvi. *shrieve*: i. e. shrive.
501. xxxi. *replevie*: bail out.
502. xxxiv. *perfec-ti-ón . . . inspec-tion*: Such very archaic rhymes persist in Spenser's work to the end. Cf. 92, 213, 214; 119, 242, 244; 693, 544, 546.
- THE FIFTH BOOKE, Prologue, iii. *outhyred*: let out to hire.
- iv. *the heavens revolution*: 'In this and the succeeding stanza, the effects of the precession of the equinoxes are correctly stated. The points where the ecliptic cuts the equator have a retrograde motion from east to west of about fifty seconds in a year. The equinoctial points were first fixed in the time of Hipparchus, since which time they have gone back nearly thirty degrees, which is the space occupied by each sign in the zodiac, so that the sun is now in the constellation Aries at the period of the year when he was formerly in Taurus, in Taurus when he was formerly in Gemini, etc.' (Hillard).
503. vii. *He is declyned*: 'This refers to the diminution of the obliquity of the ecliptic, by which the sun recedes from the pole, and approaches the equator' (Hillard). Spenser or his printer has substituted thirty for thirteen.  
*the southerne lake*: the Southern Sea of Herodotus, bordering the country of the 'long-lived' Ethiopians.
- viii. *star-read*: interpretation, lore of the stars.  
 The record is from Herodotus, II, 142.
- ix. *divide*: dispense. Cf. 718, 6, 526, 39.
- x. *his cause to end*: to fulfil justice (which is His cause). Cf. 745, 211.
505. *Canto I, xi. The heavens . . . baudricke*: the

Zodiac, set with constellations as a baldric might be with jewels, and slung diagonally, like a baldric. Cf. 762, 174.

*sixt in her degree* : Virgo is the sign of August, which, the year beginning with March, was the sixth month.

*her righteous ballance* : the constellation Libra, the sign of September.

xv. *pranke* : act of malice.

506, *ibid.* *thanke* : cause for thankfulness.

xxi. *stones*. v. n. 33, 72.

507, xxiii. *his love* : i. e. the squire's.

*good* : property.

xxiv. *yield* : concede.

xxv. *by sacrament . . . fight* : The three early modes of determining guilt. (1) The accused took oath that he was not guilty, and brought twelve compurgators, who swore that his oath was true. (2) Failing to secure compurgators, he submitted to the ordeal of fire or water, or (3) in Norman times, to trial by combat. *condiscend* : assent.

xxvii. *cald in dread* : put in danger.

508, *Canto II*, i. *heroes*. v. n. 54, 341.

vi. *whose scalp is bare* : 'Most of the northern nations thought wearing the hair long a sign of freedom ; the contrary bewrayed bondage' (Upton).

509, xi. *Who as they . . . A villaine to them came* : Church suggests (for *Who*) *Tho* = Then; Morris prints *When*. But the construction with pleonastic *who* is very common in the poem. Cf. 541, 37 (l. 2), 583, 4 (l. 6), 187, 20 (l. 5), 186, 11 (l. 1).

xxiii. *bestrad* : bestrode.

510, xvi. *kandy* : i. e. by hand.

xvii. *experiment* : art.

512, xxix. *coasted*. v. n. 678, 39.

xxxi. *containe* : be contained.

xxxiii. *peoples traine* : people who followed him.

xxxiv. *equall* : equality.

*so much . . . to trow* : so much is to be held more than what is right. Cf. 'pretious to esteeme,' 487, 39.

xxxvi. *new in pound* : anew in the scales.

514, xlv. *weight* : scale.

xlvi. *For they doe nought but* : Church suggests (for *but*) 'boul'. Spenser seems to mean, however, that though the scales indicate what is right or what is wrong, the mind alone can weigh (estimate) the value of the right. The thought, at best, is difficult.

L. *timbered* : massive.

515, liv. *turn'd* : returned. Cf. 395, *arg*.

516, *Canto III*, vii. *morrow* : morning. Cf. 16, 3, 46.

517, xiv. *greet* : offer congratulations on. Cf. st. 15, also 569, 15.

xvi. *undertake* : maintain.

xvii. *tride* : proved, found to be. Cf. 240, 9, 680, 146, 101, 913.

519, xxix. *defame* : inflict disgrace on.

xxx. *deceived* : taken fraudulently.

520, xxxiv. *undertake* : take in, become aware of.

xxxv. *displayd* : exposed.

xxxvii. *and fowly shent* : i. e. to shave his beard was to disgrace it as a badge of dignity.

*baffuld* : to 'baffle' was to inflict open infamy upon a perjured knight. One set part of the punishment was hanging him up by the heels. Cf. Bk. VI, c. vii, *arg*. and st. 27.

*unherst* : lit., took off the 'herse,' or frame, on which they were hung. But Braggadochio was wearing his armor.

xl. *repast*. v. n. 153, 4.

521, *Canto IV*, ii. *impugne* : fight against, resist. *president* : precedent, pattern. Cf. 4, *To his Booke*.

vi. *thereby* : upon that point.

522, vii. *ere many yeares* : not many years ago.

viii. *emfaire*. v. n. 24, 78.

xiii. *ordained* : selected.

523, xv. *espiall* : identification.

524, xxi. *then* : a blunder for *them*?

xxvi. *dismall day*. v. n. 271, 26.

525, xxix. *hold of* : acknowledge allegiance to the order of.

*Maidenhead*. v. 289, 6.

xxxii. *observaunce* : ordinance.

*in lives despight* : in scorn of life. Cf. 684, 442.

xxxv. *deathes*. v. n. 33, 72.

526, xxxvi. *to harnesse* : to arms.

xxxvii. *neare . . . few* : The only blunder in rhyme which does not correct itself. In other cases, the word which the poet had in mind is evident on the face of the context. Church proposes *new*.

*grate* : chafe. Cf. 147, 19, 107, 1334.

xxxix. *doale* : dole, alms.

*divide* : dispense.

xl. *plaintiffe* : plaintive, as in 405, 12, but with legal sense involved.

xli. *redresse* : succor. Cf. 285, 34.

*distraught* : i. e. deprived.

xlvi. *pounce* : talon. Cf. 219, 19.

527, xlv. *on hight* : on high. v. n. 173, 16.

xlvi. *voided* : cleared. Cf. 626, 43.

*safety*. v. n. 77, 508.

528, li. *could weete* : knew how. By itself, *could* = knew how, as in 542, 5.

*Canto V*, *arg*. *wrought* : worked, practiced on.

ii. *Trayled* : Trimmed.

*diversly distraught* : drawn apart in divers directions.

iii. *Basted with bends* : Trimmed with bands, sewn on.

*mailes* : chain mail.

*cemitare* : scimitar.

iv. *shaumes* : a wind instrument consisting of a double reed-pipe set in a round mouthpiece. Cf. 225, 13.

530, xv. *Whose other wing* : One of whose wings. Cf. 252, 4.

xviii. *lucklesse* : shedding disastrous influence. *crooke* : gibbet (Lat. *cruz*).

xx. *curiels* : cuirass.

*bases* : a skirt of mail worn by knights on horseback.

531, xxiii. *behave* : regulate. Cf. 251, 40.

532, xxix. *looser* : too free.

- xxxiii. *streight* : rigorous. Cf. 613, 35.  
*pretence*. v. n. 549, 10.  
xxxv. *conceiving* : grasping, understanding.  
533, *ibid.* *markewhite* : The bull's eye of the old target was white.  
xxxviii. *And, though unlike, they, etc.* : And although (though that is unlikely) they, etc. So 1596, making *though* do double service. 1609 reads *And though (unlike) they, etc.* : i. e. and though (which is unlikely) they, etc. This later reading looks like an editor's attempt to emend a loose but characteristic construction.  
xl. *worne* : spent. Cf. 149, 31.  
xli. *Chiefely* : especially.  
534, xliii. *causelesse* : undeserved. Cf. 534, 43.  
535, xlix. *invade* : make an impression on. Cf. 297, 6.  
lvi. *find*. v. n. 200, 7.  
536, *Canto VI*, i. *aware*. v. n. 336, 10.  
ii. *character* : image.  
iii. In those passages of the *Orlando Furioso* (xxx, 84 ff., xxxii, 10 ff.) which Spenser imitates in this canto, Bradamante is awaiting Ruggiero at her home in the castle of Montalbano. It would be difficult to say where Spenser imagines Britomart to be. When she parts from Arthegall (Bk. IV, c. vi, st. 46) she joins Scudamour in his search for Amoret. She is present at their reunion (Bk. IV, c. ix), the last we hear of her till now. Now she is waiting for Arthegall—somewhere, in a castle, alone. It is part of the charm of Faery Land that we should not much care where she may be.  
iv. *oppress*. v. n. 301, 35.  
v. *For houres, etc.* : The confusion of this passage has been ascribed to the printer, but it may well be no more than careless writing. Cf. 222, 41, l. 4 ff. The simplest and most natural of the emendations suggested is to interchange *houres* with *dayes*, *weekes* with *moneths*.  
537, vii. *coast*. v. n. 480, 33.  
ix. *conscience* : consciousness.  
x. *intent* : meaning. Cf. 637, 20.  
538, xvi. *compact* : concerted.  
xix. *shot* : shot up, advanced.  
539, xxii. *wide* : distant, out of the way. Cf. 149, 34, 162, 26, 217, 5, 285, 36.  
xxiv. *by that art* : in that manner.  
540, xxxi. *practise* : conspiracy.  
xxxiii. *like fathers sonnes* : sons of a like father, sons like their father.  
541, xxxvi. *moutenance of a flight* : extent of an arrow-flight.  
*ledge* : ledge, edge.  
xl. *bestow* : dispose of. Cf. 292, 28.  
*Canto VII*, i. *containes* : controls, governs. Cf. 389, 7.  
542, iii. *shade* : represent figuratively. Cf. st. 2.  
iv. *portend* : signify.  
vii. *land* : ground. Cf. 464, 25.  
ix. *bake* : harden.  
543, xi. *containe*. v. n. 389, 7.  
xiii. *priestes*. v. n. 33, 72.  
544, xix. *adjur'd* : sworn.  
xxi. *hood* : i. e. mask.  
*brood* : extraction, as in 159, 8.  
xxii. *clemence* : clemency.  
545, xxv. *them forth to hold* : to keep them (Talus and Britomart) out.  
xxvii. *whilome* : some time before.  
546, xxxii. *depravest* : defamest.  
xxxviii. *And then too well beleev'd, etc.* : This can hardly mean more than that she now perceived how untrue her former jealous fears had been.  
xxxix. *his favours likeliness* : the likeness of his countenance ; i. e. she did not recognize him.  
548, *Canto VIII*, vii. *till and turnament* : The tilt was the combat of two knights charging each other with spears. The tournament was the contest of many knights with both spear and sword.  
viii. *mistooke* : seized disastrously.  
549, x. *pretence* : purpose. Cf. 532, 33, 252, 1.  
xiv. *shade* : veil. Cf. 556, 12.  
550, xviii. *maligne*. v. n. 662, 11.  
551, xxx. *sublime* : haughty.  
*avengement*. v. n. 77, 508.  
552, xxxiv. *lesse or more* : smaller or greater.  
*th'ayrie wyde* : 'Wyde' is a noun, as 'vast' in the 'vast of night,' *Tempest*, I, ii, 327.  
xxxv. *throe* : i. e. throw.  
553, xxxviii. *feare*. Cf. 202, 21, 651, 27.  
*mazed* : terrified. Cf. 161, 22.  
xxxix. *resty* : stubborn.  
554, xlix. *scath* : harmfulness.  
555, *Canto IX*, v. *face*. v. n. 96, 506.  
556, x. *breech* : i. e. breeches.  
xi. *in the compasse . . . tooke* : caught within reach of his clutch.  
xii. *Sardonian* : sardonic.  
xiii. *flow* : abound.  
557, xvi. *the base* : low ground.  
xvii. *wand* : bough.  
xviii. *lent* : gave, committed. Cf. 296, 58, 483, 12.  
xix. *the selfe deceiver* : the deceiver himself.  
558, xxv. *scriene* : 'In some mediæval . . . halls a partition extending across the lower end, forming a lobby within the main entrance doors and having a gallery above' (Century Dict.).  
xxvi. *Eyther for th' evill, etc.* : Spenser plays upon the double sense of *font*, (1) Fr. 'they do,' (2) a spring or 'welhed.'  
559, xxxvi. *indifferent* : impartial. Cf. 334, 1.  
xxxvii. *Her selfe . . . convert* : She immediately turned.  
560, xxxix. *charme* : tune. Cf. 46, 118.  
*To all assayes* : to every crisis, occasion.  
*appele* : accuse.  
xli. *aspred* : ambitioned, coveted.  
*deryve* : transfer. Cf. 159, 3, 435, 13.  
xlii. *Ere prooffe it tooke* : Ere it was put to trial, executed.  
*type* : mark, rank, dignity. Cf. 71, 70, 87, 557.  
xliv. *impute* : bring to bear as an argument.  
561, xlviii. *detect* : expose. Cf. 116, 13.  
l. *guiltie* : deserving.



562, *Canto X*, iv. *doome a rights*: give judgment rightfully.

viii. *by times*: at various times.

563, xv. *for his former feat*: i.e. for having rescued Samient and slain the Soudan.

xvi. *armours*: warlike accoutrements. For a similar specific use v. 349, 58.

*fare*: going. Cf. 482, 6.

564, *ibid.* *count*: consideration. Cf. 484, 18.

xviii. *fastnesse*: security. Cf. 555, 5.

xxi. *may hope for none of mee*: none may hope for of me.

565, xxiv. *farewell open field*: may it fare well with us in the open field. Cf. 'welfare,' 340, 42.

xxv. *without needing persuade*: 'without the necessity of persuasion; by force or violence' (Upton).

xxvi. *conjure*: conspire.

xxviii. *castle greene*: castle's green.

xxix, l. 7. *he*: In c. xi this monster is described as female.

xxx. *wonne*. v. n. 245, 44.

566, xxxiii. *restlesse*: unresting, not to be checked. Cf. 635, 2.

xxxiv. *enchace*: set, fix.

*culverings*: i. e. culverins; in the sixteenth century the largest cannon in ordinary use.

xxxvii. *skreene*. v. n. 558, 25.

567, *Canto XI*, l. *party*: adversary (Fr. *partie*). *dome*: decree.

*prolong*: defer. Cf. 284, 28, 442, 12.

ii. *principle*: beginning.

iii. *state*: estate, title.

568, v. *rive*: riven.

viii. *mall*: disable.

x. *buckled to his geare*: ready for the business.

xii. *it light*: the blow alighted. Cf. 681, 223.

569, xiii. *aware*: wary. Cf. 536, 1, 336, 10.

*him overstrooke*: struck too far.

*repaire*: draw back. Cf. 182, 30.

xv. *greet him*: offer him congratulations on. Cf. 517, 14.

*land*: country.

xviii. *tendred*. v. n. 372, 51.

570, 25. *that monster*: the Sphinx.

*the Theban knight*: Oedipus.

*loose*: solve.

*deadly doole*: the pangs of death.

571, xxvii. *stripe*: stroke.

xxxii. *wombe*: belly.

572, xxxiii. *spoyle*. v. n. 435, 16.

xxxv. *thenceforth*. v. n. 465, 33.

xl. *prefixt*. v. n. 726, 46.

xli. *too blame*: perhaps blame = blameworthy; more probably too = to.

573, *ibid.* *defraide*: made good.

*upbraide*. v. n. 479, 28.

*complishing*: fulfilling.

xlii. *lent*: granted. v. n. 557, 18.

xlvii. *diffused*: dispersed.

574, xlviii. *enquire*: One might expect *inquire*.

i. *to him for to accord*: to come to terms with, accept him.

li. *remedillesse*: hopeless. Cf. 192, 51.

liii. *bosse*: The centre of the shield often

bulged out in a rounded prominence, or was adorned with a smaller knob.

liv. *mis-trayned*: led astray.

lv. *light*: happen.

*stile*. v. n. 281, 12.

575, lvi. *terne*: misprinted for *terms*? Cf. *idols* for *idole*, c. x, st. 8.

*Of all things . . . befall*: 'May shame attend particularly on those who dissemble' (Church). Cf. 'faire befall' = good luck to, 139, *Hobynoll*.

lviii. *allarme*: tumult, din.

*inquire*: seek. Cf. 610, 11, 230, 4.

lxi. *meed*: Church suggests, for rhyme, *hyre*. This rhyme-emption is not as convincing as the others, adopted, since the rhyme *to meed* exists in ll. 1 and 3. Spenser, looking for the rhyme-sound, may well have slipped.

576, lxiii. *indignitie*: dishonorable action.

*Canto XII*, arg. The first two lines, it will be observed, concern events of the preceding canto.

i. *sacred*: cursed. Cf. 318, 37.

*impotent*: uncontrollable.

iv. *with the coast did fall*: reached the coast.

577, x. *streight*: strict.

*commandement*. v. n. 77, 508.

578, xiii. *farre day*: far on in the day.

xv. *sorts*: troops (?).

579, xxii. *loosing soone his shield*: That Arthegall, so soon after condemning Burbon sternly for abandoning his shield (c. xi, sts. 52-56), should abandon his own, is one of the grosser inconsistencies of the poem, due to the allegory. Burbon's shield has a meaning, Arthegall's not.

xxiii. *on his mother earth he fed*: i. e. he bit the dust.

580, xxviii. *to that*: besides that.

*disgraces*: ugliness.

xxx. *over raught*: reaching beyond the tips of her fingers.

581, xxxv. *perplext*. v. n. 332, 54.

xxxvi. *her other hand*: one of her hands. Cf. 252, 4.

*disprad*: spread abroad.

582, xliii. *else*. v. n. 451, 28.

THE SIXTE BOOKE, Prologue, ii. *doe well*: cause to well up or flow.

*fury*: inspiration. Cf. 138, *Learned Sh.*

*use*: resort habitually.

iii. *bounty*. v. n. 332, 49.

iv. *civilite*: civilized life. Cf. 586, 26.

583, *Canto I*, iii. *embrace*: have regard for. Cf. 385, 29.

*usage*: behavior. Cf. 466, 45.

584, x. *severall*: asunder, each to his own way.

585, xiii. *streight*: pass.

xviii. *hath it better justifyde*: 'has established a better claim to it' (Child).

586, xx. *shrinke, and come to ward*: relax his assault and take to defensive fighting.

xxiii. *win*: overtake.

587, xxx. *entreaty*: treatment.

xxxii. *basenet*: a small, light steel headpiece.

*band*: pledge.

588, xxxvi. *affright*: fearsomeness, terribleness.

- 589, *Canto II*, i. *know Their good*. v. n. 207, 7.  
 590, ii. *enforce themselves*: strive hard. Cf. 693, 481.  
*enforst*: achieved by effort.  
 v. *aglets*. v. n. 'aygulets,' 249, 26.  
 vi. *cordwayne*: Spanish leather (of Cordova).  
*Pinckt upon gold*: decorated with a punctured design, backed by gold.  
*paled part per part*: In heraldry, 'party per pale' means that the shield is divided by a vertical line into two equal parts of different color.  
 vii. *impugneth plaine*: is in plain violation of.  
 591, xiii. *occasion broke*: broke the peace and thereby occasioned the combat.  
 xiv. *quite clame*: declare free, acquit.  
 592, xviii. *taking odds*: taking advantage.  
 593, xxix. *where as no need, etc.*: where I should not necessarily give him occasion to feed his suspicious ('doubtfull,') humor on fears of danger.  
 xxx. *a wise man red*: a man reputed wise.  
 594, xxxi. *convenient*: fitting.  
*chace*: beasts of the chase, game.  
 xxxii. *mantleth*: To 'mantle' was to stretch wings and legs, for ease. Used of hawks at rest on the perch.  
 xxxv. *leaves*. v. n. 33, 72.  
 xxxvi. *treated*: conversed. Cf. 383, 16.  
*start*. v. n. 19, 25.  
 596, xlvii. *coportion*: an equal share.  
*Canto III*, i. *that good poet*: Chaucer, in the Wife of Bath's Tale, l. 253 ff., especially l. 314, 'he is gentil that doth gentil dedis.'  
*basenesse*: low station of life.  
 597, v. *aymed scope*: mark aimed at. Cf. 'marked scope,' 50, 55. That passage is the original of which this is a replica.  
 viii. *invade*: attack.  
*bethinking*. v. n. 431, 37.  
 ix. *Fain'd her to frolicke*: Tried to cheer her.  
 x. *dispacht*: relieved.  
 598, xi. *tendered*: held dear. Cf. 372, 51.  
 xiv. *overpasse*: enable him to ignore.  
 599, xxiv. *unaware*: i. e. unawares.  
 600, xxxiii. *unused*: i. e. he was unaccustomed to such a mode of fording.  
 xxxiv. *carriage*: burden.  
 601, xxxix. *as now at earst*: now immediately.  
 xlii. *move*: present, submit.  
 602, xlviii. *and all*: a blunder for *with all*?  
 603, l. *eschew'd*: evaded. Cf. 634, 49.  
*Canto IV*, i. *ground-hold*: ground-tackle; cables and anchor.  
 ii. *incessantly*: immediately.  
 604, vii. *straine*: i. e. grip. Cf. 274, 21.  
 viii. *nigh succeed*: get close in pursuit.  
 ix. *nere their utmost cast*: in extremities.  
 x. *pretended*: presented. Cf. 757, 221.  
 605, xvi. *knights*. v. n. 33, 72.  
 xix. *bels and jesses*: 'Jesses' were short straps, one on each leg of the hawk, to which was attached the leash that held her in restraint on the fist. The bells were also attached to the legs. Both jesses and bells were left on the hawk when the leash was slipped, as part of her constant harness. Hence the appro-

- priateness of the comparison: she ordinarily flies with this weight on her.  
 606, xxiii. *armes*. v. n. 33, 72.  
*sweathbands*: swaddling bands.  
 xxiv. *inquire*: search.  
*ayme*: conjecture.  
 xxvi. *womankynd*: i. e. womankind = woman; as in the old ballad:  
 'That every womankind should have  
 Their right breast cut away.'  
 [Dyce's *Peele*.]  
 607, xxxi. *In th' heritage . . . paine*: 'To inherit' our *unsuccessful labor*, the fruits of exertions which have been to no purpose since we are without children' (Child).  
*attend*: wait. Cf. 305, 68.  
 xxxiv. *unworthy*. v. n. 418, 1.  
*vouchsafe it*: vouchsafe to accept it. Cf. 'deignes,' 10, 63.  
 608, xxxvii. *livery and seisin*: delivery and possession.  
*Canto V*, ii. *good*: proper behavior. Cf. 207, 7.  
 609, ix. *uneven*: ill assorted.  
 610, xi. *inquire*. v. n. 575, 58.  
 xiv. *singled*: isolated.  
 xvi. *skilfull of*: aware of.  
*secure*: heedless.  
 xvii. *Securely*: heedlessly.  
*invade*: assault. Cf. 242, 25, 310, 31.  
 611, xx. *circumvent*: go round about.  
 xxi. *escaped hard*. v. n. 165, 3.  
 xxii. *overset*: overmatched.  
 612, xxvi. *repine*: be indignant. Cf. 154, 17.  
 xxvii. *traine*: series of occurrences.  
 xxviii. *define*: decide, be sure. Cf. 434, 3.  
 xxx. *tokens*: signs, gestures.  
 613, xxxiii. *parts*: acts. Cf. 267, 26.  
 xxxv. *streight*: i. e. strait, strict. Cf. 577, 10, 535, 50, 42, 236.  
*hoves . . . to bed*: to say (lit. pray) his prayers, i. e. those appointed for the seven set times of prayer.  
 xxxvi. *could his good*. v. n. 207, 7.  
*weene*: for 'weet,' know.  
 xxxviii. *For his owne turne*: Adapted to his needs.  
 xxxix. *suffraunce*: neglect.  
 614, xl. *one foote to frame*: to direct, take, one step. Cf. 196, 30.  
*Canto VI*, arg. *He*: i. e. Arthur.  
 iii. *went*: course. Cf. 453, 46.  
*enforme*: instruct.  
*reduce*: lead back. Cf. 364, 41.  
 615, vii. *in due termes containe*: restrain within proper bounds.  
 x. *professe*: present the appearance of.  
*expresse*: make manifest.  
 xi. *company*. v. n. 297, 8.  
 xii. *most and least*: highest and lowest in rank. Cf. 491, 9.  
 616, xviii. *token*: indication (for finding).  
*his attendement*: attendance on him. v. n. 77, 508.  
 617, xxi. *doing his worst assay*: exerting his utmost efforts.  
 xxiv. *on hight*. v. n. 173, 16.  
 xxvii. *avengement*. v. n. 77, 508.

- 618, XXVIII. *lode at him did lay*. v. n. 310, 29.  
 XXX. *him to bemone*: perhaps, to plead with or for him (Arthur or Turpine) with moans.  
*thwart*: athwart. Cf. 378, 43.  
 XXXI. *abase*. v. n. 234, 26.  
 619, XXXVI. *Hence*: Henceforward.  
 XLII. *fondlings*: simpletons.  
 620, XLIV. *whytest*. v. n. 727, 53.  
*Canto VII, III. agreeably*: similarly. Cf. 652, 36.  
 621, VI. *in timely tyde*: in seasonable time.  
 IX. *cast*: couple.  
 622, XII. *In lieu whercof*: In return for which.  
*descrie*. v. n. 211, 34.  
 XVI. *again*: in return.  
 624, XXVI. *repine*: repine at, disdain. Cf. 612, 26.  
*to him object*: to lay before him.  
*bannerail*: a small streamer or pennon on the spear of a knight.  
 XXVII. *baffuld*. v. n. 520, 37.  
*upon an asse*: Elsewhere, with characteristic looseness, her beast is imaged as a 'mangy jade,' a 'horse,' and a 'palfrey.'  
 XXIX. *weigh of*: estimate.  
 XXXII. *Saint Valenteide*: St. Valentine's season.  
 XXXIII. *roules*: i. e. rolls.  
 626, XLIII. *checklaton*: a 'kind of gilded leather with which they [the Anglo-Irish] embroider theyr Irish jackets [i. e. jackets]' (Spenser's *View of the Present State of Ireland*).  
*voyled*: cleared. Cf. 527, 46.  
 627, XLVII. *by Turmagant and Mahound swore*. v. n. 284, 30.  
 XLIX. *in a rope*. v. n. 'in a line,' 145, 4.  
 628, *Canto VIII, v. bashfulness*: sense of shame, mortification.  
*abase*. v. n. 234, 26.  
 VI. *of blame assoile*: deliver from their shameful plight.  
 VII. *Abide* (ll. 4 and 8): stop.  
*abide* (l. 9): await.  
 X. *in the middle fall*: in the middle of his stroke, as his sword came down. Cf. 'in the middle plaine,' 566, 32.  
*in selfe despight*: in spite of himself.  
 XI. *strayte*: tight. Cf. 731, 71.  
 629, XII. *the buzome yoke to beare*: to bear the yoke submissively.  
 XIII. *layd*: laid on, struck. Cf. 480, 30.  
 XIV. *discourse*: holding forth, fighting.  
 630, XX. *out on me*: probably an ejaculation of complaint. In most modern editions, it is italicized.  
 XXIV. *it full defrayd*: fully discharged the account.  
 XXV. *wisely*: considerably.  
*By meanes*: Because.  
 631, XXVI. *dispraized*: held in contempt.  
 XXVII. *admire*. v. n. 465, 32.  
 XXX. *A great adventure*: The poet never reached this part of his plan. Arthur now disappears finally.  
 XXXI. *to her inferd*: inflicted on her.  
 632, XXXIV. *safety*. v. n. 77, 508.  
 XXXV. *stealth*. v. n. 301, 39.  
*rode*: inroad.

- XXXVI. *order*: custom.  
 XXXVIII. *encomberment*: molestation.  
 633, XLIII. *tempted*: made trial of.  
*craftie spyas*: the eyes. Cf. 154, 17.  
*in measure*: within bounds.  
 XLIV. *nigh hand*: near at hand.  
 XLV. *met*: joined, united. Cf. 596, 1, 322, 71  
 634, XLVII. *feared of*: alarmed by.  
 XLIX. *hew*: hewing.  
*eschew*. v. n. 603, 50.  
 LI. *mood*: mode, manner.  
 635, *Canto IX, II. restlesse*: unresting. Cf. 566, 33.  
 IV. *heardes*: herdsmen.  
*seat*: i. e. rest, lie.  
 VII. *what*. v. n. 32, 31.  
 636, XI. *the bird*. v. n. 667, 47.  
 XVI. *clad with lome*: plastered with clay.  
 637, XVII. *himselfe to disattyre*: to doff his arms, take to dishabille.  
 XX. *intent*: sense. Cf. 537, 10.  
 638, XXIV. *to . . . sought*: proceeded to.  
 XXX. *doe by voves devise*: plan to obtain by vows and prayers.  
*fortunize*: control the fortunes of, or make fortunate.  
 639, XXXVI. *bethought On*: thought of. Cf. 597, 8.  
 640, XXXIX. *paramoure*: rival lover (by analogy to *paragone*).  
*houre*: perhaps from 16th century Fr. *heur* = fortune (good or bad). Cf. 340, 45.  
 XLIII. *maisteries*: contests of strength.  
 XLIV. *stiffe pight*: solidly put together, firmly knit.  
*His dearest joynt*: i. e. his neck.  
 XLV. *needs*: must needs.  
 641, *ibid. last*: at last.  
*Canto X, II. myndes*: purposes. Cf. 257, 40.  
*set his rest*: make his abode. A punning use (as in *Romeo and Juliet*, V, iii, 110) of the gaming phrase, 'to set up one's rest,' i. e. make one's wager.  
*saying . . . port*: waiting for favorable winds, kept by head-winds from getting under way.  
 III. *stales*. v. n. 231, 4.  
 IV. *can it compare*: can rival it. Cf. 19, 67.  
 642, VI. *towre*: perch high. Cf. 736, 68.  
 VIII. *bases*: in the game of prisoner's base.  
 X. *on hight*. v. n. 173, 16.  
 XII. *in compasse stemme*: stay, confine within bounds.  
 644, XXXIII. *entertainment*: manners.  
 XXIV. *That two of them, etc.* Cf. 22, 165 ff.  
 XXVI. *beare the bell*: take first place (as the leader in the flock of sheep carries a bell). Cf. 'give the bell,' 138, *Learned Sh.*  
 645, XXVII. *meane*: middle point, hence norm. Cf. 636, 11, 273, 16.  
*Divine resemblaunce*: likeness to the divine.  
*blemish*: asperse.  
 XXVIII. *minime*: in early music, the shortest note used.  
 XXIX. *yrketh*. v. n. 698, 906.  
 XXXIII. *frize*: i. e. freeze.



- 646, XXXIV. *surprize* : seize.  
*helpe her all too late* : For her Collier suggests ere, but the phrase, as it stands, is more characteristic.
- XXXV. *spoile* : body. Cf. 435, 16.  
*in which . . . prayde* : in which his own heart was the prey, i. e. to rend her body would be to rend his heart.
- XXXVII. *colour* : conceal.
- XL. *onely* : especial. Cf. 230 (c. i.), 2.
- XLI. *from their pray*. v. n. 445, 31.
- 647, XLII. *daily night* : night even by day. Cf. 453, 43.
- XLIV. *glade* : gladden. Cf. 401, 44.
- 648, *Canto XI*, VI. *to foe or frend* : to treat as foe or friend. Cf. 148, 28.  
*shadow* : subterfuge.  
*small* : slightly.  
*freely wend* : get free. Cf. 474, 53.
- VII. *her joyaunce* : the enjoyment of her.
- VIII. *in privy* : privately. Cf. 97, 520.
- IX. *blunt* : uncultivated, wild.  
*at the instant brunt* : at the very outset, immediately.
- X. *commodity* : profit.  
*not to be forestalled* : without reserve.
- 649, XII. *marchandise* : traffic.
- XIV. *prisd with measure* : offered at a moderate price.
- XVI. *balke* : a small ridge or strip of ground in ploughed field, which, through carelessness in ploughing, has escaped the share ; hence, fig., an omission, exception. Cf. 40, 93.
- XVII. *themselves assay* : attack each other.
- 650, XVIII. *wide* : extensively, in great numbers.
- XIX. *pretended* : stretched out.
- XXIII. *Ne cared she*. v. n. 169, 34.
- XXIV. *infestred* : festered.
- 651, XXV. *halfe enroged* : became half frantic. Cf. 151, 50.
- XXVI. *rebound*. v. n. 70, 22.
- 652, XXXV. *conduct* : guide.
- XXXVI. *agreeably*. v. n. 620, 3.
- XXXVII. *heards* : herdsman, here shepherds. Cf. 635, 4.
- 653, XXXVIII. *the thiefe* : i. e. the thieves.  
*gave them the time of day* : 'gave them the salutation appropriate to the time of day' (Child).
- XXXIX. *as did appertaine* : as was appropriate (to their disguise).
- XL. *evill* : bad, i. e. poor, inefficient.
- XLIII. *of new* : anew.
- 654, XLVI. *mand* : i. e. manned.
- 655, *Canto XII*, I. *borde* : tack.  
*bay* : bend.  
v. *again* : on his part. Cf. 352, 16.
- 656, IX. *pittie* : fill with pity. Cf. 184, 43.
- 657, XVII. *thro* : emotion.  
*chylde* : gave birth to.
- XVIII. *likely hew* : similar complexion.  
*Matched with equall yeares* : 'corresponding with the distance of time' (Church).
- XIX. *armes*. v. n. 33, 72.
- XX. *monuments* : i. e. records, relics.
- XXI. *fylde* : i. e. recorded.  
*contrive* : i. e. imagine.
- XXIII. *estates* : classes of society.
- 658, XXIV. *dortours* : bed-chambers.  
*yrkesome* : loathsome. v. n. 698, 906.
- XXVI. *utmost*. v. n. 407, 27.
- XXIX. *former* : fore.  
*on hight* : aloft. Cf. 379, 47.
- 659, XXXIV. *For never more defaming* : that it might never more defame. Cf. 715, 27, 103, 1010.
- 660, XL. *bate* : i. e. bait, worry.
- XLI. *a mighty peres* : Burghley's. It is noticeable that this second part of the *Faery Queen* begins and ends with reference to the poet's being out of favor with the great minister. The change in tone from the sonnet to Burghley which accompanies the first part is unmistakable. In the interval had occurred the delay over the pension and the publication of the satiric references in the 'Ruins of Time' and 'Mother Hubbard's Tale.'  
*That never . . . endite* : which (i. e. my former writs) never deserved to be indicted, accused, of such offence.  
Two CANTOS OF MUTABILITEE. To facilitate reference, this incomplete book has commonly been numbered continuously with the preceding.
- 661, *Canto VI*, VIII. *clambe* : climbed.  
*stage* : floor.
- 662, IX. *intend* : designate as.
- XI. *wend* : weened.  
*maligne* : envy. Cf. 550, 18, 355, 39.  
*her need* : she must.  
*condigne* : deserving.
- XIV. *unpurvaide* of : unprovided with.
- XV. *feard* : made afraid.
- 663, XVII. *discharge* : exonerate, justify.
- XIX. *estate* : pavilion of state. Cf. 'states'; 669, 8.
- XX. *since* : the time (past) when.  
*which doth us yet despite* : which (the earth) still bears us a grudge.
- XXII. *beck* : a gesture of command with hand or head.
- XXIII. *extasie* : bewilderment.
- 664, XXV. *what . . . make?* : what is your present business here ?
- 665, XXXIII. *challenge . . . interesse* : claim any interest (i. e. title, right) in heaven.
- XXXVI. *Arlo-hill . . . old father Mole* : North of Kilcolman lie the Ballahoura Mountains ; east of these, with a lower stretch between, the Galties, of which the highest peak is Galtymore. Both ranges are included by Spenser in the name 'old father Mole.' Galtymore rises directly above the forest valley of Aherlo or Arlo, whence the name that Spenser gives it, 'Arlo-hill.'
- XXXVII. *this file* : the course of this story.
- 666, XL. *Molanna* : A small stream, the Behanna, which, flowing from a double source high up in the Galties, runs a precipitous course to join the Funsheon, a larger stream, about sixteen miles east of Kilcolman. The lower course of the Behanna is cumbered with rocks carried down by winter floods (st. 53).  
*That Shepheard Colin, etc.* v. 688, 104 ff.  
*condole* : bewail.

- XLIV. *by nought did set her*: cared nought for her. Cf. 460, 46.
- 667, XLV. *for his hire . . . dew*: for his reward, well deserved by one so foolhardy.
- XLVII. *darred larke*: Larks were caught by being terrified or fascinated into quiescence. 'Like unto men that dare larks, which hold up an hoby [small hawk] that the larks' eyes, being ever on the hoby, should not see the net that is laid on their heads' (Cranmer, 1556). On sunshiny days larks were sometimes 'dared' with small mirrors.
- XLIX. *baile*: custody, power.
- 668, LI. *close consort*: secret associate.  
*short*: shortly, soon.
- LIV. *may else be rid*: may be read, i. e. seen, elsewhere, i. e. anywhere.
- LV. *way*: i. e. weigh, esteem.  
*Canto VII, l. thou greater Muse*: Clio, who, in st. 37 of the previous canto, 'lent Calliope her quill,' and who now resumes it.
- 669, III. *feare*: keep in awe.  
v. *wimpled every where*: covered every part as with a wimple.
- VIII. *equall*: symmetrical.  
*states*. v. n. 663, 19.
- IX. *Dan*: Master. Cf. 240, 7, 430, 32. The reference is to Chaucer's *Parlement of Foules*, ll. 316-318.  
'And right as Aleyn, in the Pleynt of Kinde,  
Devyseth Nature of aray and face,  
In swieh aray men mighten hir ther finde.'
- The author to whom the task of describing Nature is thus 'transferr'd' is a certain Alanus de Insulis, of the 12th century; his book bears the title, *De Planctu Nature*.
- 670, x, l. 7. Most modern editions reject *which* (the reading of both 1609 and 1611) as superfluous. It does indeed confuse the thought, but no more than is characteristic of Spenser's occasional haste. v. n. 536, 5. To omit it, and begin a fresh sentence or division with l. 3, seems merely to substitute the difficulty of unnaturalness for that of confusion.
- XIV. *indifferently*: impartially.  
*unequally*: unjustly.
- XVII. *most regiment*: chief government.  
*inholders*: tenants.  
*convent*: convene.
- 672, XXV. *themselves*: each other. Cf. 649, 17.
- XXVIII. *morion*: a helmet without face-guard.
- XXXI. *bill*: beak, nose.
- 673, XXXV. *that ungracious crew*: Warton thinks this a slur on the Puritans; Child, on an 'affected manner of retiring from a room without turning the back.'
- XXXVII. *the righteous virgin*: Astræa. Cf. 504, 5 ff.  
*ertold*: carried up.
- XXXVIII. *A paire of waightes*: Libra, the zodiacal sign of September.
- XXXIX. *wine-fats*: wine-vat's. *see*: sea?
- XL. *lard*: bacon.
- 674, XLII. *earth-pot steane*: large earthen jar. 'Stean' was first a stone jar; then a jar of either stone or earth. The constellation Aquarius.
- XLIII. *harnesse*: gear.  
*burgein*: burgeon, bud.
- XLIV. *beames*. v. n. 33, 72.
- 675, XLVIII. *namely wee*: we and no other. Cf. 'by name,' 162, 26.
- XLIX. *perswade*: convince of.
- LIII. *comment*: devise, feign.
- 676, LVII. *affixt*: fixed, set. Cf. 336, 11.
- 677, *Canto VIII, ll. that Sabaoth's sight*: 'Spenser confounds Sabaoth (hosts) with Sabbath (rest). He obviously means the latter only: all things are to "rest eternally with him that is the God of Rest"' (Child).  
DAPHNAÏDA, Letter. *the White Lyon*: the badge of the Howards.
- 678, 12. *heavilie*: sorrowfully. Cf. 88, 639, 71, 36.
30. *weaker*: too weak. v. n. 144, 2.
39. *cost*: coast, approach, move. Cf. 12, 29.
41. *Jaakob staffe*. v. n. 183, 35.
- 679, 108. *the chaunge, etc.*: Natalis Comes relates that Venus, hastening to help Adonis, was wounded in the foot by the thorn of a rose, from which time the rose, till then white, was red with her blood.
112. *staine*: eclipse, excel. Cf. 67, 525, 255, 26.
- 680, 116. *bring to hand*: capture.  
146. *tri'de*. v. n. 517, 17.
156. *A cruek Satyre*: an adaptation of Death to the pastoral mode.
178. *rare it seemes . . . skand*: it seems strange in the eye of reason.
- 681, 214. *new divinde*: newly made divine.  
Cf. 68, 610.
226. *parted*: departed. Cf. 161, 22.
231. *full hardly*. v. n. 153, 5.
- 682, 265. *that ill mote him behove*: which should become him ill.
321. *playes*. v. n. 95, 394.
- 683, 346. *astrofell*. v. n. 702, 196.
- 684, 442. *in lifes despight*: in scorn of, hating, life. Cf. 525, 32, 235, 36.
443. *in despight of*: in scorn of. Cf. 287, 52.
470. *harbenger*: one who goes before to provide lodging.
475. *Philumene*: Philomel, the nightingale.
- 685, 521. *succeed*: befall.
529. *cypresse*: cypress.
- 686, 558. *cabinet*: little cabin.
564. *dismall lookes dismay*. v. n. 'staring eyes dismay,' 402, 54.
- 687, COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAINE, 2.  
*Tityrus*: Chaucer, as in the *Calendar*.
19. *turning backe*: return.
32. *painfull*: troublesome.
40. *that Angels*: Elizabeth's.
50. *forsake*: evade, shun. Cf. 219, 24.
66. *The Shepheard of the Ocean*. v. n. 142, Raleigh.
69. *fit*: air.
74. *that skill he cond*: he knew that art.
- 688, 80. *bonie*: i. e. bonny, as in l. 96.
96. *Of fellowship*: for good fellowship' sake.
104. *Old Father Mole*. v. n. 665, 36.
- 108 ff. *Mulla*: the Awbeg, a stream which, rising to the north of Kilcolman in the Balla-

- houra Mountains, sweeps a wide course to the west and south and east past Buttevant (whose old name was Kilnemullah), till, to the south of Kilcolman, it joins the Bregoge, which flows down from the same mountains, in the north-east, to meet it. Between them they almost describe a rough circle about Kilcolman. After the junction, the Awbeg turns south and empties into the Blackwater, in Spenser's day commonly called Broadwater.
118. *So hight, etc.*: 'Bregog' is Irish for 'false, deceitful.'
- 689, 156. *Thestylis*: Spenser's friend in the Irish civil service, Lodowick Bryskett.
159. *of friendship*. v. n. 688, 96.
- 690, 245. *Triton*: This line supplied the conclusion to Wordsworth's famous sonnet 'The world is too much with us.' Craik suggests that Triton is meant for Howard of Effingham, Proteus (l. 248) for Hawkins.
274. *mightie white rocks*: Spenser attributes to the west coast the more celebrated cliffs of the south and east.
282. *Like to an horne, etc.*: Cornwall. Spenser and Raleigh sailed, probably from Cork, around Land's End, to Penzance or perhaps Plymouth.
284. *a loftie mount*: probably St. Michael's Mount near Penzance; possibly the Hoe at Plymouth.
301. *thy Funchins*. v. n. 666, 40.
- 691, 322. *to rest upon her*: to rest herself upon.
339. *golds*: marigolds.
340. *the circlet of a turtle*: the iridescent band about a dove's neck.
342. *Phebes garland*: the moon-rainbow.
351. *humane*: human.
366. *fynd*: invent. Cf. 302, 42.
380. *There is, etc.*: The reference of almost every pastoral name in this list has been disputed. *Harpalus*: perhaps Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, author of the noble *Induction* to the *Mirror for Magistrates*. After the sonnet prefixed to the *Faery Queen* (p. 142), Spenser would hardly omit Buckhurst from the list, and his social eminence would naturally entitle him to first place. In 1591 he was fifty-five years old (for poetical purposes age began earlier in those days), and had served the Queen most actively in various distinguished offices for over twenty years.
382. *Corydon*: Fleay suggests Sir Edward Dyer, founder, with Sidney, of the Areopagus. Spenser could hardly omit him, and his eminence might well place him next to Buckhurst. 'Meanly waged,' then, would signify 'indifferently rewarded'—as by not being yet knighted, an honor which he did not receive till 1596.
384. *Alcyon*: Sir Arthur Gorges, for whom *Daphnaïda* was written. His verse, for the most part, has remained in manuscript.
- 692, 392. *Pakn*: Thomas Challoner, a writer of pastorals (?).
394. *Alcon*: Thomas Watson, the Petrarchist (?).
396. *old Palemon*: Thomas Churchyard, born about 1520, a voluminous and dull poet of the pre-Spenserian era.
400. *Alabaster*: William Alabaster. His *Elise's* was a Latin poem meant to extend to twelve books, but never finished. The manuscript is extant at Emmanuel College, Cambridge.
416. *a new shepherd*: Samuel Daniel, who about 1590 became tutor to the son of the Countess of Pembroke, Spenser's friend and patroness. 'That well tuned song' is *Delia*, of which some sonnets appeared surreptitiously in 1591, the authorized edition in 1592. In 1592 appeared also *The Complaint of Rosamond*, alluded to in l. 427.
434. *Amyntas*: Ferdinando Stanley, Lord Strange, who in 1593 became fifth Earl of Derby and who died early in 1594. v. *Amaryllis*, l. 564 ff. and note.
444. *Action*: Formerly accepted as Shakespeare, but now more commonly as Michael Drayton, who in 1593 published *Idea, Rowland's Sacrifice to the Nine Muses*, inspired largely by the *Shepherd's Calendar*, also the *Legend of Pierce Gaveston*. Line 447 would then refer to his heroic pseudonym, Rowland.
449. *Astrofell*: Sidney.
473. *martyrize*: devote as martyr.
- 693, 481. *enforce*: strive. Cf. 590, 2.
487. *Urania*: the Countess of Pembroke.
492. *Theana*: Anne Russell, widow of Ambrose Dudley, Earl of Warwick, who died in 1589.
495. *vale*: i. e. veil.
505. *Faire Marian*: Margaret, Countess of Cumberland.
508. *Mansilia*: the Marchioness of Northampton.
516. *Galathea*: not yet identified.
524. *Neæra*: also unidentified.
532. *Stella*: Lady Rich, celebrated by Sidney in *Astrophel and Stella*.
540. *Phyllis, Charillis, . . . Amaryllis*: Elizabeth, Anne, and Alice Spencer, daughters of Sir John Spencer of Althorpe. To them respectively the poet dedicated 'Muipotmcs,' 'Mother Hubberd's Tale,' and 'The Tears of the Muses.'
560. *primrose*: the first or chief rose, the paragon.
- 564 ff. The husband of Alice Spencer (v. n. *Amyntas*, l. 434) died in 1594. She remained a widow till 1600, when she married Sir Thomas Egerton, the patron of Donne. It was in her honor that Milton composed his *Arcades*, about 1633.
- 694, 572. *Flavia*: not yet identified.
574. *Candida*: also unidentified.
580. *closure*: enclosure.
622. *furios insolence*: inspired ecstasy.
634. *each where*: everywhere. Cf. 214, 54.
- 695, 696. *fained forgerie*: false invention.
702. *schoolery*: school-learning.
705. *there*: probably a blunder for *their*; 'those who profess them.' Cf. l. 746.



718. *noughts* : to match *bladders*.  
 696, 724. *painting on a wall* : Cf. 'Painting thy outward walls so costly gay.' Shakespeare, Sonnet 146.  
 736. *Lobbin* : Leicester, as in 49, 113.  
 745. *sciences* : branches of knowledge.  
 797. *make religion* : feel conscientious scruples.  
 800. *couples* : coupling, union.  
 801. *soly couples* : individually a couple.  
 697, 818. *dignifie* : make worthy.  
 836. *of . . . define* : determine.  
 844. *of them* : among them. The enemies are 'hot, cold, moist and dry, four champions fierce,' the four elements.  
 862. *formall feature* : the mould of form.  
 866. *dolphinet* : female dolphin.  
 698, 884. *saw* : decree.  
 906. *yrkes* : pains, grieves (stronger than the modern sense). Cf. 387, 43, 462, 15, 645, 29.  
 910. *her bright glorie else* : her glory else bright.  
 933. *regard*. v. n. 99, 685.  
 700, ASTROPHEL, 1. *borne in Arcady* : in allusion to Sidney's pastoral romance, the *Arcadia*.  
 22. *weetingly* : i. e. those who were beguiled were aware of the beguilement, and yet were beguiled.  
 55. *Stella* : Sidney's titular mistress, Lady Rich.  
 701, 91. From this point on, the reference is to Sidney's service in the Netherlands.  
 96. *Ardeyn* : the forest of Ardennes, famous in romance. Cf. 439, 45.  
*Arlo*. v. n. 665, 36.  
 119. *his thigh* : Sidney's wound was in the thigh.  
 702, 196. *Astrophel* : perhaps the sea starwort, *aster tripolium*. Cf. 683, 346.  
 703 (Verses by the Countess of Pembroke), 12. *warne* : prevent or forbid.  
 704, THE MOURNING MUSE OF THESTYLIS, 4. *Liffes* : the river Liffey, at whose mouth is Dublin.  
 7. *clap* : stroke of ill fortune.  
 705, 21. *deignest not* : deignest not to favor, viewest with disfavor. Cf. 10, 63.  
 34. *Reyne* : Rhene or Rhine.  
*Mose* : Meuse.  
 35. *Danow* : Danube.  
 706, 75. *shred* : lopped.  
 707, 171. *respect* : heed. Cf. 21, 53.  
 176. *one* : unchangingly.  
 708, A PASTORALL AEGLOQUE, 4. *the Orown* : presumably some Irish river.  
 8. *Phillisides*. v. n. 68, 609.  
 709, 77. *bourdon* : burden, accompaniment.  
 84 ff. Bryskett was Sidney's companion upon his Continental tour of 1572-75.  
 710, AN ELEGIE, 9. *maiden unicorne* : 'The unicorn was the symbol of chivalry in the Middle Ages, and it was fabled that the creature became tame in presence of a virgin' (Child).  
 711, 27. *od* : different. Cf. 422, 28.  
 52. *tend* : stretched.  
 712, 131. *acquainted* : became acquainted.  
 174. *set Mars by* : oust Mars from.  
 713, 206. *creatures* : a trisyllable.  
*Kinde* : Nature.  
 AN EPITAPH, 5-8. This stanza defies grammatical analysis and interpretation. The original has no comma after *death*.  
 12. *timelesse* : untimely.  
 715, ANOTHER, 25. *only I* : I left alone.  
 27. *for not wronging* : lest I wrong.  
 35. *Let all . . . voyd* : a quotation from 38, 164.  
 716, AMORETTI, Letter. *sweete conceited* : sweetly conceived. Cf. 773, 62.  
 718, II, 11. *afflicted*. v. n. 144, 4.  
 VI, 7. *divide* : dispense. Cf. 503, 9.  
 720, XIII, 4. *temperature* : mixture.  
 721, XVIII, 3. *redound* : overflow. Cf. 159, 8, 182, 30.  
 XXI, 9. *termes* : extremes (?).  
 722, XXII, 1. *This holy season* : not Lent but some saint's day.  
 XXVI, 13. *account of* : take into account.  
 723, XXVIII, 3. *the badg which I doe beare* : as a poet. The office of poet laureate was not yet in existence.  
 XXXIX, 1. *deprave* : misinterpret.  
 3. *bay* : laurel.  
 XXXII, 4. *to what . . . apply* : to whatever he chooses to use it for.  
 724, XXXIII, 5. *Lodwick* : Bryskett, his friend in the Irish civil service. From its position in the series one would judge this sonnet to be of 1593.  
 XXXIV, 10. *Helice* : the Great Bear ; but perhaps Spenser means 'Cynosure,' the Lesser Bear, in which constellation is the pole star.  
 XXXV, 7. *amazement* : stupefaction, hence infatuation. Cf. 206, 49 ; v. n. 154, 15.  
 XXXVII, 13. *Fondnesse* : Foolishness. Cf. 23, 38.  
 726, XLVI, 1. *prefixed* : fixed, settled beforehand. Cf. 572, 40.  
 727, LII, 11. *dumps* : a word common in the poetry of the mid-sixteenth century, but soon to pass out of serious use.  
 LIII, 4. *whylest* : until (Lat. *dum*). Cf. 620, 44, 374, 8.  
 728, LVIII. *By her, etc.* : This heading probably belongs to LIX, which is a retort to LVIII.  
 729, LX, 1-4. The planetary 'yeare' to which Spenser refers is apparently the period of 'restitution,' that during which a planet, leaving a given position with regard to the sun, will return to that same position ; the period, in other words, during which the revolutions of the planet in its epicycle and of the sun in its orbit will bring both back to the same relative position (of course, only approximate). For Mars, Ptolemy reckons this period at 79 years. Had Spenser, then, written 'four score,' he would have been exact enough for his purpose ; but at Kilcolman he was not likely to have access to astronomical tables.  
 730, LXIV, 7. *bellamoures* : a flower unidentified.  
 LXV, 1. *misdeeme* : conceive amiss. Cf. 224, 55.  
 LXVIII, 1. *this day* : Easter.  
 3. *having harrowd hell*. v. n. 212, 40.

- 731, LXX, 2. *cote-armour* : a herald's tabard.  
12. *amearst* : amerced, punished.  
LXXI, 7. *streight* : close, firm. Cf. 24, 99, 475, 63, 628, 11.  
9. *is woven all about* : Most modern editions change *about* (the reading of all the early texts) to *above*, for the sake of rhyme ; but the sense requires *about*. Morris conjectures 'is all about ywove.'  
LXXII, 10. *mantleth*. v. n. 594, 32.  
732, LXXV, 1. *the strand* : the beach at Youghal (?)  
9. *quod* : the older form of 'quothe.' Cf. 735, 35.  
LXXVII, 6. *unvalewd* : invaluable.  
LXXVIII, 5. *synd* : signed, marked.  
LXXX. From its position in the series, this sonnet would seem to be of the late spring of 1594, not long before his marriage.  
733, *ibid.* 9. *mew* : retreat ; lit., the cage in which hawks were put for the moulting season.  
LXXXIV, 3. *mavis*. v. n. 736, 81.  
LXXXV, 2. *selfe* : same, very. Cf. 753, 198.  
734, LXXXVIII, 14. *lively* : vital. Cf. 74, 254.  
(Epigrams) II, 5. *close convey* : secretly transfer.  
735, IV, 20. *fly* : used of any winged insect. Cf. 116, 17.  
EPITHALAMION, 8. *wreck* : violence.  
736, 39. *that neighbours* : Her home was at Kilcoran, on the bay of Youghal.  
68. *towre* : a term of falconry = to soar in a spiral, or to sail far aloft in circles (cf. 594, 32). Here applied somewhat fantastically to deer far up on the mountain. Cf. 642, 6.  
81. *mavis* : song thrush.  
*descant* : the melody or counterpoint sung to the *cantus* or plainsong.  
82. *ouzell* : blackbird.  
*ruddock* : redbreast.  
83 f. *agree . . . To* : accord with. *consent* : harmony.  
737, 131. *croud* : viol.  
738, 239. *band* : i. e. tie.  
265 ff. *This day, etc.* : June 11, St. Barnabas' day, which (the old calendar being at that time ten days out) was also the day of the summer solstice.  
739, 290. *nights* : For this word as a dissyllable cf. 174, 23.  
340. *helplesse* : irremediable. Cf. 171, 49, 190, 39.  
341. *the Pouke* : Robin Goodfellow.  
740, 376. *envy* : be indignant, or begrudge.  
420. *haughty*. v. n. 155, 19.  
429. *hasty accidents* : the accidents of haste ; i. e. the marriage day was probably changed at short notice to a date earlier than that originally set.  
430. *expect* : await.  
431. *both* : both us lovers.  
433. *for* : instead of.  
743, HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOVE, 53. *Begot of, etc.* : According to Diotima's account (in the *Symposium*), Love is born of Poros (Plenty) and Penia (Poverty). How Spenser adapted this fancy to the common myth, which he gives in the previous line, is not clear, perhaps is not meant to be.  
106. *deducted* : derived. Cf. 748, 106 ff.  
744, 122. *with countenance coy* : Warton suggests, for *with, from* ; but perhaps Spenser means that the darts of love enter in at the eyes simultaneously with the image of the fair one.  
149. *ennoble* : exalt.  
169. *enfyred* : hardened in the fire.  
170. *As things, etc.* : a parenthesis ; as things divine are least impressed by passion.  
745, 211. *win his wish to end* : succeed in achieving his wish. Cf. 503, 10.  
217. *Whose sole aspect* : The mere sight of whom.  
746, 263. *unassured foes* : foes not to be trusted, or foes who he is not sure are foes.  
285. *arayd* : ranged.  
HYMNE IN HONOUR OF BEAUTIE, 23. *her* : Rosalind.  
747, 88. *the like assayes to ken* : to make the same tests.  
748, 97. *That golden wyre, etc.* Cf. 382, 1.  
135. *corpe* : Frequent in Spenser for the living body. Cf. 104, 1090, 117, 60, 159, 5, 164, 42, 198, 40, 232, 10.  
749, 167. *informed* : imparted.  
192. *sympathize* : be in accord with.  
194. *respect* : heed. Cf. 579, 21.  
198. *Of likely . . . concent* : Of similar hearts combined by harmony of the stars.  
235. *beames*. v. n. 33, 72.  
750, 251. *embassade* : on embassy.  
252. *lends* : affords. v. n. 557, 18.  
HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE, 13. *tenor*. v. n. 45, 50.  
751, 39. *Spright* : Spirit. Cf. 197, 36.  
47. *with . . . embrew* : saturate with sweet infusion.  
64. *trinall triplicities* : Cf. 229, 39. The hierarchy of the nine heavenly orders, grouped in three trines, first systematized by Dionysius the Areopagite. v. Dante, *Paradiso* XXVIII. In the order of nearness to God they stand : I, 1. Seraphim ; 2. Cherubim ; 3. Thrones. II, 1. Dominations ; 2. Virtues ; 3. Powers. III, 1. Princedoms ; 2. Archangels ; 3. Angels. In 755, 85 ff. Spenser gives an imperfect and confused list of them, a list purely fanciful.  
83. *Child of Light* : Lucifer.  
100. *flowing* : pouring.  
752, 130. *despeyred* : hopeless.  
138. *sinnes deadly hyre* : 'The wages of sin is death.'  
753, 192. *fared had amisse* : had gone astray.  
198. *selfe*. v. n. 733, 85.  
754, 264. *displace* : banish.  
284. *idee* : idea. Cf. 755, 82.  
286. *enragement* : madness, rapture.  
HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE, 5. *high conceipt* : high minded.  
26. *soare faulcon* : a young falcon yet in its first plumage, which is sorrel.  
755, 34. *respect* : consideration. Cf. 749, 194.  
52. *gods* : Most modern editions change this reading of the oldest texts to *God*. Spenser is

- contrasting the material heavens, which he chooses to call the house of the gods, with the immaterial heavens of the empyrean (l. 64 ff.), the peculiar abode of God. Such mingling of pagan and Christian elements is surely natural enough in a neo-Platonic poem.
72. *first movers* : the *primum mobile*, which, in the Ptolemaic system, is the outermost of the heavenly spheres and imparts motion to each.
75. *redound* : transcend. Cf. 481, 1.
99. *faire* : beauty.
- 756, 107. *bethinke*. v. n. 431, 37.
108. *utmost*. v. n. 407, 27.
134. *speculation* : sight.
166. *marvelled* : wondered at.
- 757, 211. *that painter*. v. n. 144, *Ladies*.
212. *quill* : i. e. brush.
214. *maistring* : superior.
219. *Teian poet* : Anacreon.
221. *pretend* : present. Cf. 604, 10.
- 758, 273. *faigned* : unreal.
- 759, PROTHALAMION, 12. *rutty* : rooty.
13. *variable* : various. Cf. 358, 1.
- 760, 17. *long* : distant. Cf. 442, 12.
23. It was the custom of weddings that the bride should let her hair hang free.
67. *Somers-heat* : i. e. Somerset.
- 761, 110. *redoubled* : re-echoed.
132. *those bricky towres* : the Temple. Formerly the abode of the Knights Templar; after the dissolution of their order, granted to the Knights of St. John, and by them leased to the students of the Common Law, who have remained there ever since.
137. *a stately place* : Leicester House, where, in the poet's London days of 1578-80, dwelt his chief patron, the Earl of Leicester. In 1596 it was in occupation of the Earl of Essex and called Essex House.
- 147 ff. The reference is to the brilliant exploit of 1596, when the Spanish fleet was burned in Cadiz harbor and the town captured and sacked. Essex commanded the land forces. *Hercules two pillors* : the rocks on either side the strait of Gibraltar.
- 153 f. This seems to be a pun on *Devereux*, the Earl's family name, as = *devenir heureux* or simply *heureux*.
- 762, 173 f. *the twins of Jove* : Castor and Pollux, who were made the constellation Gemini.
- bauldricke*. v. n. 505, 11.
- COMMENDATORY SONNETS. I, 4. *dislikes* : grievances.
12. *damning* : sentencing. Cf. 530, 17.
- 763, III, 12. *meere* : absolute.
- IV, 3. *second Babel* : Rome.
- 766 (The Theatre of 1569), VII, 1. *nightly* : nocturnal.
- 767, XI, 14. *start* : awoke with a start.
- 768 (Letters) 18. *uttering* : publishing, not necessarily in print.
23. *the work* : evidently the *Calendar*. *his excellent lordship* : Leicester, to whom apparently, at this time, the *Calendar* was meant to be dedicated.
- 769, 69. *one, that* : Stephen Gosson.
82. *dam Aschamo* : It was Roger Ascham who, in his *Schoolmaster*, began the crusade for the recovery of classic measures.
103. *Maister Drants rules* : Archdeacon Thomas Drant (died 1578) would have subjected English prosody strictly to classic law.
- 771, 285. *presently* : at present.
313. *this* 5 [16?] of October. v. 769, 90 f.
- 773, 62. *jollyest conceived* : most finely conceived. v. n. 716, Letter.
78. *Petrarches Visions* : presumably the *canzone* (*Standomi un giorno solo alla finestra*) translated by Marot as *Des Visions de Pétrarque*, and from him by Spenser.



A CATALOGUE OF  
PERSONS, PLACES, ANIMALS, AND THINGS  
CONCERNED IN OR CONNECTED WITH  
THE ACTION OF THE *FAERY QUEEN*  
ACCOMPANIED BY BRIEF ALLEGORICAL EXPLANATIONS

[This catalogue is not meant to include all heralds, men-at-arms, attendants, etc., who merely fill the back stage of the poem, nor all romance 'properties' used in the staging. Neither does it take account of the 'chronicle of Briton kings' in canto x of Book II, and similar passages. It is meant to include whoever and whatever in the story proper has a name, function, or definite meaning.

The allegorical explanations are necessarily short, scattering, and more or less incomplete. They cannot pretend to vie with connected and systematic schemes of interpretation.

The system of reference is as follows: Roman numbers in capitals (e. g. VI) refer to book; Roman numbers in small letters (e. g. vi) refer to canto; Arabic numbers refer to stanza.]

**Abessa.** Superstition, child of blindness of heart. I, iii, 10 ff.

**Acheron.** I, v, 33.

**Acidale Mount.** VI, x, 5-9; IV, v, 5.

**Acrasia.** Self-indulgence in the pleasures of the senses. In II, i, *arg.* and xii, 1 termed 'pleasure.' II, i, 51-55, v, 27, xii, 72 ff.; III, i, 2.

**Acrates v. Pyrochles.**

**Actea.** IV, xi, 50.

**Adlela.** Injustice, 'wrong.' V, viii, 20 ff., ix, 1.

**Adonls.** III, vi, 46-49. **Garden of —.** III, vi, 29 ff.

**Adulterle.** V, ix, 48.

**Æmylla.** IV, vii, viii, 19 ff., ix, 1-16.

**Aesculapius.** I, v, 36 ff.

**Aeternltle.** II, iv, 41.

**Agape.** The name means 'love.' IV, ii, 41 ff.

**Agave.** IV, xi, 49.

**Agdistes v. Genius.**

**Agenor.** IV, xi, 15.

**Aglala.** VI, x, 12-15, 22-24.

**Aladlne, Aldlne.** VI, ii, 16-21, iii, 1-16.

**Albion.** IV, xi, 15 f.

**Aldus.** VI, iii, 2-9.

**Aleblus.** IV, xi, 14.

**Allmeda.** IV, xi, 51.

**Allo.** IV, xi, 41.

**Alna.** The soul. II, ix, xi; III, i, 1. **v. Temperance, House of.**

**Alpheus.** IV, xi, 21.

**Amavia.** She 'that loves to live.' II, i, *arg.*, 35 ff.

**Amazons.** V, iv, 21 ff., v, vii, 24 ff. **Rlver of the —.** IV, xi, 21.

**Ambitlon.** II, vii, 46.

**Amendment.** I, x, 26.

**Amidas.** V, iv, 4 ff.

**Amoret.** III, vi, xi, xii; IV, i, v, 13, 19, 20, 29, vi, 34-38, 46 f., vii, viii, 19 ff., ix, 17 ff., x, v. **Timias.**

**Amphisa.** III, vi, 4.

**Amphitrlte.** IV, xi, 11, 49.

**Amyas.** The Squire of Low Degree. IV, vii, 15-18, viii, 50 ff., ix, 1 ff.

**Anamnestes.** The faculty of summoning up memories. II, ix, 58.

**Angel.** II, viii, 1-8.

**Angela.** III, iii, 55-58.

**Anger.** III, xii, 25.

**Antiquitee of Faery Lond.** II, ix, 60, x, 70 ff.

**Aon.** IV, xi, 15.

**Apollo.** III, iv, 41; IV, xii, 25 f.

**Appetlte.** II, ix, 28.

**Aprill.** VII, vii, 33.

**Archimago.** Designated as 'hypocrisy' (I, i, *arg.*), but, in his miscellaneous activities as enchanter and agent of deceit, not to be fully described by any one label. In Bk. I, a type of the Jesuits. I, i, 29 ff., ii, 1-11, iii, 24 ff., vi, 34 ff., xii, 24 ff.; II, i, 1-25, iii, 11-19, vi, 47 ff., viii, 10, 11, 19-22, 56; III, iv, 45.

**Argante.** III, vii, 37, xi, 3 f.

**Arlon.** IV, xi, 23.

**Arlo Hill.** v. Notes. VII, vi, 36 ff., vii, 3 ff.

**Armeddan.** V, iii, 5.

**Arras.** III, i, 34-38, xi, 28-46.

**Artegall, Arthegall.** The champion of Justice; Arthur, Lord Grey of Wilton. III, ii, iii; IV, iv, 39 ff., v, 9, 21, vi; V, VI, i, 4-10.

**Arthur.** Magnificence (or magnanimity), the virtue which is the perfection of and contains all the rest. As the deliverer in Bk. I and perhaps also in Bk. II, Heavenly Grace (I, viii, 1). Perhaps intended originally to represent the Earl of Leicester. In V, x and xi, Leicester. I, vii, 29 ff., viii, ix, 1-20; II, viii, ix, x, xi; III, i, 1-18, iv, 45 ff., v, 1-12; IV, vii, 42 ff., viii, ix; V, viii, ix, x, xi, 1-35; VI, v, 11 ff., vi, 17 ff., vii, 1-27, viii, 4-30. His shield, I, vii, 33-36, viii, 19-21; V, viii, 37 ff., xi, 10. His horn, I, viii, 3-5; II, ix, 11. His sword, v. **Morddure.** His horse, v. **Spumador.**

**Asopus.** IV, xi, 14.

**Astræa.** V, i, 5-12.

**Astræus.** IV, xi, 13.

**Ate.** The goddess of mischief. IV, i, 17 ff., ii, iv, 3, 9-12, v, 22 ff., ix, 24; V, ix, 47.

- Atin.** Strife. II, iv, *arg.*, 37 ff., v, 25 ff., vi, 1-4, 38 ff., viii, 10 f., 56.
- Atropos.** IV, ii, 47 ff.
- Aubrian.** IV, xi, 41.
- August.** VII, vii, 37.
- Authority.** V, ix, 44.
- Autonoe.** IV, xi, 50.
- Autumne.** VII, vii, 30.
- Avarice.** I, iv, 27-29.
- Avernus.** I, v, 31 ff. **v. Heli-gate.**
- Aveugle.** Spiritual blindness. I, v, 23.
- Avon.** IV, xi, 31.
- Awe.** V, ix, 22 f.
- Awniduff.** IV, xi, 41.
- Bacchante.** Wine-bibbing. III, i, 45.
- Ban.** IV, xi, 41.
- Bandon.** IV, xi, 44.
- Barow.** IV, xi, 42 f.
- Barry.** III, iii, 8.
- Basciante.** Kissing. III, i, 45.
- Beadmen, Seven.** The seven kinds of good works distinguished in Catholic doctrine. I, x, 36 ff.
- Bear.** VI, iv, 17-22.
- Beast (Duessas's).** The beast of Revelation 17, 3 ff., then interpreted by Protestants as a prophecy of the 'abominations' of the Roman Church. I, vii, 16-18, viii, 6, 12-17, 20. (The **Wlitch's.**) If this monster has any allegorical significance at all, it stands perhaps for calumny. III, vii, 22-38, 61, viii, 2.
- Beasts (Acrasla's).** The degrading effects of over-indulgence of the appetites. II, xii, 39 f., 84 ff.
- Belgæ.** The Netherlands. Her seventeen sons, the seventeen provinces; the surviving five, Holland, Guelders, Zeeland, Utrecht, Groningen, which by the Union of 1579 virtually declared independence of Spain. Her late husband, the House of Burgundy, to which the Netherlands belonged till, after the death of the last duke, they passed by marriage to the House of Austria. Her city, Antwerp. V, x, xi, 1-35.
- Belgard v. Castle.**
- Bellamoure.** VI, xii.
- Bellisont.** V, iii, 5.
- Bellodant.** V, iv, 30.
- Belphœbe.** Queen Elizabeth, in her aspect of 'a most virtuous and beautifull lady.' II, iii, 20 ff.; III, v, 27 ff., vi; IV, vii, 23 ff., viii, 1-18; VI, v, 12.
- Beius.** IV, xi, 15.
- Birds in the fog.** II, xii, 35-37.
- Bladud.** III, iii, 60.
- Blandamour.** In V, ix, 41, he and Paridell represent the earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland. If any significance attaches to the epithet 'hot-spurre,' given him in IV, i, 35, he may represent the former specifically. In most of his action he is no more than a type of inconstancy. IV, i, ii, iv, v, ix, 20 ff.; V, ix, 41.
- Blandina.** VI, iii, 30 ff., v, 33, vi, 30 ff.
- Blatant Beast.** Infamy (VI, vi, 1), more commonly slanderous. V, xii, 37 ff.; VI, i, 7-10, iii, 24-26, v, vi, 1-15, ix, 2-6, x, 1, xii.
- Biomlus.** IV, xi, 42.
- Boteman v. Ferryman.**
- Bower of Bliss.** II, i, 51. v, 27 ff., xii, 42 ff.
- Boyne.** IV, xi, 41.
- Bracldas.** V, iv, 4-20.
- Braggadocchio.** Perhaps a caricature of the Duke of Alençon, who in 1580 was the favored aspirant to Elizabeth's hand. II, iii; III, viii, 11-24, x, 20-43; IV, iv, v; V, iii. **v. also Brigador.**
- Breane.** IV, xi, 29.
- Bregog.** VII, vi, 40.
- Brlana.** VI, i.
- Brlanor.** IV, iv, 40.
- Brigador.** 'Bridle of gold,' Guyon's horse, the stealing of which and of Guyon's spear by Braggadocchio symbolizes the assumption of manly attributes by cowardice. II, ii, 11, iii, 3 f., 46; V, iii, 29 ff.
- Brigants.** VI, x, 39 ff., xi.
- Britain, The Greater.** I, x, 65; III, ii, iii; VI, ii, 27 ff.
- Britomart.** The champion of Chastity. The power of that virtue is symbolized in her irresistible spear. As mate of Artegall, she perhaps represents 'that part of justice which is equity.' III, i, ii, iii, iv, ix, x, 1, xi, xii; IV, i, iv, 43 ff., v, vi, vii, 1-4, ix, 20 ff.; V, vi, vii.
- Britonesse v. Britomart.**
- Briton Monuments.** II, ix, 59, x.
- Brontes.** IV, xi, 13.
- Bruin.** VI, iv, 29 ff.
- Bruncheval.** IV, iv, 17 f.
- Brunell.** V, iii, 5.
- Burbon.** Henry of Navarre. His shield, Protestantism. V, xi, 43 ff., xii, 1 f.
- Busirane.** He and his 'house' symbolize amorous passion as an evil. III, xi, xii; IV, i, 1-4.
- Cador.** III, iii, 27.
- Cælla v. Cœlia.**
- Cæicus.** IV, xi, 14.
- Calepine.** VI, iii, 20 ff., iv, viii, 46 ff.
- Cailldore.** The champion of Courtesy; Sir Philip Sidney. III, viii, 28; VI, i, ii, iii, 1-26, ix, x, xi, xii.
- Cambell.** One of the two champions of Friendship. IV, ii, 30 ff., iii, iv, v, 7, 10.
- Camblna.** IV, ii, 30 f., iii, 37 ff., iv, 5, v, 10.
- Canace.** IV, ii, 30 ff., iii, iv, 1-6, v, 10.
- Carados.** III, iii, 55.
- Care.** Personified under various guises. I, i, 40; II, vii, 25; III, xii, 25; IV, v, 32 ff. The blacksmith and his six servants, perhaps, the seven days of the week.
- Castle of Belgard.** VI, xii, 3.
- Castle Joyeous.** III, i, 20 ff.
- Castle of the Strond.** V, ii, 4, iii.
- Cayr-Merdl'n v. Maridunum.**
- Cayr Verolame.** III, iii, 52.
- Celeno.** II, vii, 23.
- Cerberus.** I, v, 34; VI, i, 8.
- Cestus v. Venus.**
- Charissa.** Charity. I, x, 4, 16, 29-33.
- Charwell.** IV, xi, 25.
- Chauge.** III, xii, 25.
- Cherefulness.** IV, x, 50.
- Children.** I, xii, 7, 11.
- Chlmæra.** VI, i, 8.
- Chrysaor.** A sea-god, IV, xi, 14. The sword of Artegall, V, i, 9 f., etc.

- Chrysogone.** III, vi.  
**Churne.** IV, xi, 25.  
**Clarbell.** Three persons. II, iv, 19 ff.; IV, ix, 20 ff.; VI, xii, 3 ff.  
**Clarinda, Clarin.** V, iv, 48 ff., v, 29 ff.  
**Cleopolls.** 'The city of glory.' One must not confuse this capital of Faery Land with Troynovant, the historic London, which lies outside the domain of Gloriana. I, vii, 46, x, 58 f.; II, x, 72; III, ix, 51.  
**Clotho.** IV, ii, 47 ff.  
**Cocytus.** II, vii, 56.  
**Cœlia.** Knowledge of holiness. I, x.  
**Coic.** IV, xi, 29.  
**Colin Clout.** Spenser. His 'lasse,' Elizabeth Boyle. VI, ix, 35, 41, x, 1-32.  
**Columbell.** III, vii, 51.  
**Commons Sute.** V, ix, 44.  
**Concoctlon.** II, ix, 31.  
**Concord.** IV, x, 31-35.  
**Conway.** IV, xi, 39.  
**Coradin.** II, iv, 36.  
**Coreeca.** 'Blind devotion,' or blindness of heart, mother of superstition (Abessa). I, iii, *arg.*, 10 ff.  
**Corflambo.** One type of amorous passion. IV, viii, 38 ff., ix, 4 ff.  
**Coridon.** VI, ix, 15, 38 ff., x, 33 ff., xi, 11, 18, 27 ff.  
**Cormoraunt.** VI, iv, 29 ff.  
**Courtiers.** I, iv.  
**Crane.** IV, xi, 47.  
**Creatures, All.** VII, vii, 4, 57.  
**Crocodile.** V, vii.  
**Crudor.** VI, i.  
**Cruelty.** III, xii, 19.  
**Cteatus.** IV, xi, 14.  
**Cupld.** III, vi, 11 ff., 49 f., xii, 22 f.; VI, vii, 32-37.  
**Curtisie.** IV, x, 51.  
**Cymo.** IV, xi, 51.  
**Cymochles.** Passion fierce and fickle as the sea waves (*κύμα*), whence the name; characterized by long fits of sensual indolence. **v.** *Pyrochles*. II, iv, 41, v, 25 ff., vi, viii.  
**Cymodoce, Cymoent.** III, iv, 19 ff.; IV, xi, 6 f., 50, 53, xii.  
**Cymothoe.** IV, xi, 49.  
**Cynthla v. Dlana.**
- Dæmogorgon.** I, v, 22.  
**Damon.** IV, x, 27.  
**Damsel.** VI, i.  
**Damsels, (Acrasia's) II, xii, 63-69. (Belphœbe's) III, v, 37 ff. (Venus') VI, x, 10 ff. v. Malden.**  
**Danaides.** I, v, 35.  
**Darent.** IV, xi, 29.  
**Darknesse.** VII, vii, 44.  
**Dart.** IV, xi, 31.  
**Daunger.** Disdain, IV, x, 16-20; danger, III, xii, 11; V, ix, 45.  
**David.** IV, x, 27.  
**Day.** I, v, 25, 34; VII, vii, 44.  
**Death.** II, vii, 25; VII, vii, 46.  
**Death with Infamy.** III, xii, 25.  
**Decay, Whirlepoole of.** II, xii, 20.  
**December.** VII, vii, 41.  
**Decetto. Deceit.** VI, v, 13-22.  
**Dec.** I, ix, 4; IV, xi, 39.  
**Defetto. Detraction.** VI, v, 13-22.
- Deheubarth.** III, ii, 18.  
**Delay.** IV, x, 13-15.  
**Despair.** I, ix, 21 ff.  
**Despetto. Malice.** VI, v, 13-22.  
**Despight. Malice.** II, iv, 41, vii, 22; III, xii, 19; IV, x, 20; VI, vii, 34.  
**Desyre.** III, xii, 9.  
**Detraction.** V, xii, 28 ff.  
**Devon.** IV, iv, 21.  
**Diamond.** IV, ii, 41 ff., iii.  
**Dlana (Cynthla, Phœbe).** III, vi, 16 ff.; VII, vi, vii, 50.  
**Dice. Justice.** V, ix, 32 f.  
**Diet.** II, ix, 27.  
**Digestion.** II, ix, 31.  
**Disdaln.** In two distinct forms. II, vii, 40-43; VI, vi, 16, vii, 27 ff., viii, 1-30.  
**Disloyalty.** III, xii, 25.  
**Displeasure.** III, xii, 18.  
**Dlssemblance.** III, xii, 14 f.  
**Dolon.** That is, 'the deceiver.' V, vi, 19 ff.  
**Dony.** Florimell's dwarf. III, v, 3-12; V, ii, 2 ff.  
**Dorls.** IV, xi, 48, 49.  
**Dot.** IV, xi, 48.  
**Doubt.** In two distinct forms. III, xii, 10; IV, x, 11-14.  
**Douglas.** IV, iv, 21.  
**Doune.** IV, xi, 47.  
**Dove.** IV, viii, 3-12.  
**Dragon.** The Devil. I, i, 3, vii, 44, xi.  
**Dread of Heavenly Vengeance.** III, xii, 25.  
**Dream.** I, i, 44 ff.  
**Druon.** IV, ix, 20 ff.  
**Duess.** 'Falsehood' (I, ii, *arg.*); in Bk. I the Roman Church, Roman Catholicism (masquerading as Fidesa, 'the Faith'). I, ii, iv, v, vii, 1-18, viii, xii, 24 ff.; II, i, 8-25; III, i, *arg.*; IV, i, 17 ff., ii, 3, 19 f., v, 11, ix, 24. Mary Queen of Scots, V, ix, 36 ff., x, 1-4.  
**Dumarin.** III, iv, 19.  
**Dwarf.** (Una's) Common sense (?). I, i, 6, 13, ii, 6, v, 45, 52, vii, 19-28, 52, viii, 2. (Pœana's) IV, viii, 38 ff., ix, 5, 8. (Brlana's) VI, i, 29 ff. (Florimell's) **v.** *Dony*.  
**Dynamene.** IV, xi, 49.  
**Dynevowre.** III, iii, 8.
- Earth.** I, vii, 9; III, vii, 47; VII, vi, 26.  
**Ease.** III, xii, 3 f.  
**Ecator.** V, iii, 5.  
**Echidna.** V, x, 10, xi, 23; VI, vi, 9-12.  
**Eden.** IV, xi, 36.  
**Eione.** IV, xi, 50.  
**Eirena v. Irena.**  
**Eirene.** Peace. V, ix, 31 f.  
**Elferon.** Prince Arthur, eldest son of Henry VII. II, x, 75.  
**Elficleos.** Henry VII. II, x, 75.  
**Elissa.** One extreme of the temperamental and moral scale: sullenness and stinginess as opposed to exuberance of spirits and prodigality (Perissa). II, ii, **v.** *Medina*.  
**Emllinc.** VI, ii, 29 f.  
**Enlas.** VI, vii, 3-27, viii, 4-30.  
**Envy.** In two distinct forms. I, iv, 30-32; V, xii, 28 ff.  
**Erato.** IV, xi, 49.



- Erlvan.** IV, v, 24.  
**Error.** That error which results from the exercise of private judgment, to the increasing of sects and disputations, the infirmity of the Puritans. I, i.  
**Eryx.** IV, xi, 14.  
**Eucrate.** IV, xi, 48.  
**Eudore.** IV, xi, 48.  
**Eulimene.** IV, xi, 49.  
**Eumenias.** V, v, 34.  
**Eumnestes.** The memory. II, ix, 55 ff.  
**Eunlca.** IV, xi, 49.  
**Eunoinle.** Good rule. V, ix, 31 f.  
**Euphœmus.** IV, xi, 14.  
**Euphrates.** I, vii, 43; IV, xi, 21.  
**Euphrosyne.** VI, x, 12-15, 22-24.  
**Eupompe.** IV, xi, 51.  
**Eurypulus.** IV, xi, 14.  
**Eurytus.** IV, xi, 14.  
**Evagore.** IV, xi, 50.  
**Evarna.** IV, xi, 51.  
**Excesse.** II, xii, 55-57.
- Faery Land.** II, *Prologue*, ix, 70 ff.  
**Faery Queen v. Gloriana.**  
**Fanehin.** v. note on VII, vi, 44, 53.  
**Fansy.** III, xii, 7 f.  
**Faunus.** II, ii, 7 f.; VII, vi, 42 ff.  
**Feare.** II, vii, 22; III, xii, 12.  
**February.** VII, vii, 43.  
**Feend v. Flend.**  
**Ferramont.** IV, iv, 19 f., v, 11.  
**Ferrau, Ferraugh.** III, vii, 15-19; IV, ii, 4-7, iv, 8.  
**Ferryman.** Experience (?). II, xi, 4, xii, 1-38.  
**Fldella.** Faith. I, x, 4, 12 f., 18-20.  
**Fldessa.** 'The Faith,' the assumed name of Duessa. I, ii, 26, iv, 2, xii, 28.  
**Flend.** II, vii, 26 f., 34, 64.  
**Flends.** II, vii, 35-37.  
**Flsher.** III, vii, 27, viii, 20-36.  
**Florimell, 'the fair.'** III, i, 15-18, iv, 45 ff., v, 4-11, vii, viii; IV, v, 5, xi, 1-4, xii; V, iii. Her girdle, III, vii, 31, 36, 61, viii, 2, 49; IV, ii, 25-27, iv, 15 f., v; V, iii, 24, 27 f. Her palfrey, III, i, 15, vii, 2 f., 18, 24, 28.  
**Florimell, 'the snowy.'** The false Florimell. III, viii, 5-19; IV, ii, iv, 7-12, v; V, iii.  
**Flourdells.** The French crown. V, xi, 44 ff.  
**Force.** II, vii, 25.  
**Foster.** III, i, 17 f., and his brothers, v, 13-25.  
**Fountain.** Spiritual sloth, I, vii, 2-6. Moral purity, II, i, 40, 55, ii, 3-10. In the Bower of Bliss, II, xii, 60 ff. v. *Life, Well of*.  
**Frabubio.** Halting between two faiths. I, ii, 28 ff.  
**Fræliissa.** Such true faith as is possible to a doubter. I, ii, 35 ff.  
**Fraud.** II, vii, 25.  
**Frlendshlp.** IV, x, 34.  
**Frlth.** IV, xi, 47.  
**Furor.** Specifically, the headlong wrath that is kindled by definite offences, by 'occasions.' II, iv, v, 17-24.  
**Fury.** III, xii, 17.
- Galathæa.** IV, xi, 49.  
**Galene.** IV, xi, 48.
- Ganges.** IV, xi, 21.  
**Gardante.** Ogling. III, i, 45, 65.  
**Gealosy.** II, vii, 22.  
**Gehon.** I, vii, 43.  
**Genlus.** Two distinct personages. II, xii, 46-48; III, vi, 31 ff.  
**Georgos.** I, x, 66.  
**Geryon.** V, x, 9-11.  
**Geryoneo.** The Spanish Rule in the Netherlands His idol, the Roman Catholic faith. The monster beneath it, the Inquisition. Geryoneo's seneschal, the Prince of Parma. V, x, xi, 1-35.  
**Geslppus.** IV, x, 27.  
**Glant.** Revolutionary systems of political and social justice. V, ii, 29 ff. v. also *Argante, Ollyphaunt, Orgoglo*.  
**Glauce.** Britomart's nurse and squire. III, i, 4, ii, 30 ff., iii, iv, 7, 11, xii, 44 f.; IV, i, 50 ff., ii, 3, v, 31, 39, 46, vi, 25, 30-32, 37. One of the Nereides. IV, xi, 48.  
**Glaconome.** IV, xi, 50.  
**Glaucus.** IV, xi, 13.  
**Gloriana.** Glory, the proper goal of magnanimity (Arthur); Queen Elizabeth. I, i, 3, vii, 46, ix, 13-15, x, 58 f., xii, 18-41; II, ii, 40-44, ix, 2-8; III, i, 2; V, i, 4, xi, 37; VI, x, 1, 28. Her ancestry, II, x, 70 ff.  
**Gluttony.** I, iv, 21-23, 43.  
**Gods, Assembly of.** VII, vi, vii.  
**Good Desert, Gate of.** IV, x, 16-20.  
**Gorlois.** III, iii, 27.  
**Grantorto.** Spain, as an abettor of rebellion — in France, by the assistance given to the Catholic League against Henry IV; in Ireland, by the occupation of Fort del Oro, etc. V, i, 3, xi, 38-43, 50 f., xii.  
**Greedinesse, Gulfe of.** II, xii, 3 ff.  
**Griefe.** III, xii, 16; V, ix, 45.  
**Groom.** (Pollente's) The rapacity of petty officials. V, ii, 6, 11. (Turpine's) VI, vi, 20-22.  
**Grylle.** II, xii, 86 f. v. *Beasts*.  
**Gulle v. Malengin.**  
**Gulzor.** Perhaps a reference to the Duke of Guise and the Catholic League. V, vi, 33.  
**Guyon.** The champion of Temperance. II, i, ii, iii, 1-3, iv, v, 1-25, vi, 19-40, vii, viii, ix, x, 70 ff., xi, 3 f., xii; III, i, 1-18, iv, 45 f.; V, iii, 29-36. v. *Brlgador*.
- Hag.** IV, vii, 13, 19, 34. v. also *Ate*.  
**Hamadryades.** I, vi, 18.  
**Hate, Hatred.** II, vii, 22; IV, x, 32-36; IV, x, 20.  
**Heavenly Contemplation.** I, x, 46 ff.  
**Hellenore.** III, ix, x.  
**Hell-gate.** II, vii, 24 f. v. *Avernus*.  
**Hereules.** IV, x, 27.  
**Herebus.** II, iv, 41.  
**Hermit.** VI, v, 34 ff., vi, 1-15.  
**Hlppothoe.** IV, xi, 50.  
**Hollness, House of.** I, x.  
**Hope.** III, xii, 13.  
**Horror.** II, vii, 23.  
**Hours.** VII, vii, 45.  
**Huddibras.** The male counterpart of *Elissa*, q. v. II, ii, 17, 37.  
**Humber.** IV, xi, 30.

**Humilitā.** Humility. I, x, 5.

**Huon.** II, i, 6.

**Hyllus.** Hylas. IV, x, 27.

**Hyponco.** IV, xi, 51.

**Idle Lake.** The approach to sensual excess is by way of idleness. II, vi, xii.

**Idleness.** I, iv, 18-20, 36, 43.

**Ignaro.** Ignorance. I, viii, 30-34.

**Impatience.** II, xi, 23 ff.

**Impictle.** V, ix, 48.

**Impotence.** II, xi, 23 ff.

**Inachus.** IV, xi, 15.

**Incontinence of Lyfe.** V, ix, 48.

**Indus.** IV, xi, 21.

**Infamie.** VI, vii, 34.

**Infant.** VI, iv, 17-38. v. also **Ruddymane.**

**Infirmity.** III, xii, 25.

**Ino.** IV, xi, 13.

**Irena, Eircna.** Ireland. V, i, 3 f., xi, 38-43, xii.

**Isis Church.** V, vii, 1-24.

**Ister.** IV, xi, 20.

**Ixlon.** I, v, 35.

**January.** VII, vii, 42.

**Jarre v. Pyrochles.**

**Jocante.** Jestng. III, i, 45.

**Jonathan.** IV, x, 27.

**Jove.** VII, vi, vii.

**Joyeous v. Castle.**

**July.** VII, vii, 36.

**June.** VII, vii, 35.

**Justice.** V, ix, 44.

**Kenet.** IV, xi, 29.

**Kingdoms Care, The.** Lord Burghley. V, ix, 43.

**Kirkrapine.** Plunder of the Church by the upper clergy, who amassed benefices and who inclined to the superstitions of Rome. Cf. the *Shepherd's Calendar*. Or perhaps, the wealthy monastic clergy, suppressed by Henry VIII. I, iii, 16-20.

**Knight.** Unhorsed by Britomart, IV, i, 9-15; slain by Tristram, VI, ii, iii, 17 f.; companion of Enias, VI, vii, 3-8.

**Knights.** Adicia's, V, viii, 4-23; Geryoneo's, V, x, 34-37; in Radegund's prison, V, v, 22 f., vii, 43.

**Labryde v. Satyrane.**

**Lachesis.** IV, ii, 47 ff.

**Lady.** Slain by Sangliere, V, i, 14 ff.; carried off by Sangliere, V, i, 16 ff.; rescued by Tristram, VI, ii. v. also **Temperance, House of.**

**Lamb v. Una.**

**Lamoracke.** VI, xii, 39.

**Lansack.** V, iii, 5.

**Laomedea.** IV, xi, 51.

**Law of Nations, The.** V, ix, 44.

**Lechery.** I, iv, 24-26.

**Lee.** IV, xi, 29; IV, xi, 44.

**Liagore.** III, iv, 41; IV, xi, 51.

**Life.** VII, vii, 46. **Well of — and Tree of —**, the two sacraments, 'as generally necessary to salvation,' baptism and the supper of the Lord. I, xi, 29-36, 46-50.

**Liffar.** IV, xi, 41.

**Liffy.** IV, xi, 41.

**Lindus.** IV, xi, 39.

**Llon.** Reason (?). The killing of Kirkrapine, perhaps, the suppression of the monasteries by Henry VIII. I, iii. Another, of even more doubtful significance, V, ix, 33.

**Llonesse.** VI, ii, 30.

**Lislanassa.** IV, xi, 50.

**Lltæ.** Prayers, petitions. V, ix, 31 f.

**Lonc.** IV, xi, 39.

**Losse of Time.** III, xii, 25.

**Love.** IV, x, 32-36.

**Luclda.** IV, v, 11.

**Luclfera.** Pride, chief of the seven deadly sins. The other six counsel and serve Pride. Her house, then, is, in the larger sense, the life of sin, to which a false religion naturally leads. I, iv, v.

**Lucy.** V, iv, 4-20.

**Lust.** IV, vii.

**Mæander.** IV, xi, 21.

**Maldens.** I, xii, 6-8; II, xii, 27-29. v. **Damself.**

**Maldenhead, Order of.** II, ii, 42, ix, 2-6; IV, iv, 17, 22, 38, 48; V, iv, 29.

**Malbecco.** 'The cuckold;' in the end a mere embodiment of Jealousy. III, ix, x.

**Malecasta.** Unchastity. III, i, 20 ff.

**Maleffort.** VI, i.

**Malegr.** The life of the evil desires and passions. His twelve troops, the seven deadly sins and the sins of the five senses. II, xi.

**Malengin.** 'Evil ingenuity,' guile. V, ix, *arg.*, 4-19.

**Malfont.** v. Notes. V, ix, 25 f.

**Malvenū.** 'Ill come.' I, iv, 6.

**Mammon.** 'The care of this world and the deceitfulness of riches.' II, vii.

**Many Ilands, Lord of.** VI, xii, 4 ff.

**March.** VII, vii, 32.

**Maridunum.** III, iii, 7.

**Marlnell.** III, iv; IV, xi, xii; V, ii, 2-4, iii.

**Mars.** VII, vii, 52.

**Matllda.** III, iii, 13.

**Matilde.** VI, iv, 26 ff.

**May.** VII, vii, 34.

**Mayre.** IV, xi, 44.

**Medina.** The 'golden mean' of Aristotelian ethics, virtue conceived as a mean between extremes of defect and excess. The 'mothers three,' perhaps, the three elements of the soul, (according to Plato,) the reasonable, the appetitive, the passionate. II, ii, iii, 1 f. v. **Elissa.**

**Medway.** IV, xi.

**Mellbæ.** Sir Francis Walsingham, father-in-law of Sidney. VI, ix, x, 40 ff., xi, 11, 18, xii, 9. His wife. VI, ix, 17, xi, 18, xii, 9.

**Mellogras.** VI, ii, 28.

**Mclissa.** VI, xii.

**Mellte.** IV, xi, 49.

**Menevia.** III, iii, 55.

**Menippe.** IV, xi, 51.

**Merchants.** VI, xi, 9 ff.

**Mercilla.** Queen Elizabeth, as an exponent of mercy and also (V, viii, 20, x, 1) of justice. V, viii, 16-23, ix, 20 ff., x, 1-17.

**Mercury.** VII, vi, 14 ff., vii, 51.

**Mercy.** I, x, 34 f, 45-50.

**Merlin.** I, ix, 5; III, ii, 18-21, iii.

**Mermalds.** II, xii, 17, 30-34.

**Millesio.** V, iv, 7.

**Mirabella.** Possibly Rosalind; possibly the disdainful mistress of the *Amoretti*, eventually his wife. VI, vi, 16, vii, 27 ff., viii, 1-30.

**Mnemon.** 'The remembrancer.' III, ix, 47.

**Modestle.** IV, x, 51.

**Molanna.** v. Notes. VII, vi, 40 ff.

**Mole, Old Father.** v. Notes. VII, vi, 36 ff., vii, 11. The river. IV, xi, 32.

**Monster v. Geryoneo, or Beast.**

**Monsters, Sea.** II, xii, 22-26.

**Mordant, Mortant.** An example, at the outset of Guyon's enterprise, of the evil that he has undertaken to end, incontinence in the pleasures of the senses. Some critics narrow the allegory to the vice of heavy drinking. The name has two forms, mainly for the sake of the pun in st. 55. II, i, *arg.*, 35 ff.

**Morddure.** 'Hard-biting,' Arthur's sword. II, iii, 15-18, vi, 47, viii, 19 ff., ix, 2, xi, 41.

**Morpheus.** I, i, 39 ff.

**Mortant v. Mordant.**

**Mulla.** v. Notes 688, 108. IV, xi, 41; VII, vi, 40.

**Multitude.** I, xii, 9-12; V, ii, 29 ff.

**Munera.** Bribery. V, ii, 4-28.

**Murder, Murther.** IV, x, 20; V, ix, 48.

**Mutability.** VII, vi, vii, viii.

**Nalades.** I, vi, 18.

**Nature.** VII, vi, vii.

**Neleus.** IV, xi, 14.

**Nemertea.** IV, xi, 51.

**Nene.** IV, xi, 35.

**Nepenthe.** IV, iii, 42-45.

**Neptune.** III, iv, 32; IV, xi, 11, xii, 29-32.

**Nereus.** III, iv, 19, 21 f.; IV, xi, 18 f.

**Nesæa.** IV, xi, 49.

**Neso.** IV, xi, 50.

**New Hlerusalem.** I, x, 55 ff.

**Newre.** IV, xi, 42 f.

**Nlde.** IV, xi, 37.

**Nlght.** I, v, 20 ff.; II, iv, 41; VII, vii, 44.

**Nile.** IV, xi, 20.

**Nobilltie of Blrth.** V, ix, 45.

**Noctante.** Revelry by night. III, i, 45.

**November.** VII, vii, 40.

**Nymphs (Diana's)** III, vi, 19 ff.; VII, vi, 38 ff. (of the sea) III, iv, 29 ff.; IV, xi.

**Obedlence.** I, x, 17; IV, x, 51.

**Oberon.** Henry VIII. II, x, 75 f.

**Occasion.** Cause of wrath. Spenser slightly confuses 'cause' and 'opportunity': the hair of Occasion, growing 'all afore' (II, iv, 4), is borrowed from the old allegory of Opportunity. II, iv, v, 17-24.

**Ocean.** IV, xi, 18.

**Octa.** III, iii, 52.

**October.** VII, vii, 39.

**Ogyges.** IV, xi, 15.

**Ollyphant.** III, vii, 47-49, xi, 3-6.

**Ooraxes.** IV, xi, 21.

**Oranochy.** IV, xi, 21.

**Order.** V, ix, 23; VII, vii, 4, 27.

**Orestes.** IV, x, 27.

**Orgoglio.** 'Orgueil or Carnal Pride; not the pride of life, spiritual and subtle, but the common and vulgar pride in the power of this world; . . . the temporal power of corrupt churches, especially of the Church of Rome' (Ruskin). Child of the Earth and Æolus, materialism and vanity. The episode of Orgoglio represents historically the relapse of England into Roman Catholicism under Philip and Mary, marked by bloody persecution. VI, vii, 41.

**Orlmont.** V, iii, 5.

**Orion.** IV, xi, 13.

**Oure.** IV, xi, 44.

**Ouse.** IV, xi, 34.

**Ouze (or Isis).** IV, xi, 24.

**Oza.** III, iii, 52.

**Oze.** IV, xi, 37.

**Pactolus.** IV, xi, 20.

**Pæon.** III, iv, 41.

**Palemon.** IV, xi, 13.

**Pallumord.** IV, iv, 21.

**Palladine.** 'The virgin.' III, vii, 37 ff.

**Palmer.** Wisdom (II, xii, 43). His 'vertuous staffe' (II, xii, 26, 40 f., 86), the power of wisdom. II, i, ii, 1-12, iv, v, 24, vi, 19, viii, xi, 3 f., xii; III, i, 9-11.

**Panope.** III, viii, 37 f.; IV, xi, 49.

**Panthea.** I, x, 58; II, x, 73.

**Parldell (v. Blandamour).** III, viii, 44 ff., ix, x; IV, i, 17 ff., ii, 1-31, iv, 1-14, v, 11, 22-28, ix, 20 ff.; V, ix, 41.

**Parlante.** Talking. III, i, 45.

**Paslthee.** IV, xi, 49.

**Pastorella.** Sidney's wife, Frances Walsingham, later Lady Essex. The pastoral disguise was suggested by the fame of Sidney's *Arcadia*. VI, ix, x, 32 ff., xi, xii.

**Patience.** I, x, 23-29.

**Payne.** Punishment. II, vii, 21.

**Peace.** IV, x, 34.

**Pelasmus.** IV, xi, 15.

**Pellias.** IV, xi, 14.

**Pelleas.** VI, xii, 39.

**Penaunce.** I, x, 27.

**Peneus.** IV, xi, 21.

**Penslfenese.** IV, v, 38.

**Peoples Cry, The.** V, ix, 44.

**Perldure.** III, viii, 28.

**Perlssa (v. Ellssa).** II, ii.

**Phædria.** 'Immodest Merth' (II, vi, *arg.*). II, vi, xii, 14-17.

**Phantastes.** The imagination. II, ix, 49-52.

**Phao.** IV, xi, 49.

**Phasides.** IV, xi, 21.

**Phedon.** An example of headlong wrath, stimulated by an 'occasion' to crime. II, iv.

**Pherusa.** IV, xi, 49.

**Philemon.** II, iv, 18-30.

**Philotime.** Love of honor. Her chain, ambition. Her being thrust from heaven refers to the fall of Lucifer. II, vii, 43-50.

**Phlson.** I, vii, 43.

**Phlltera.** V, iv, 4-20.

**Phlegeton.** I, v, 33. v. *Pyrochles*.

**Phœax.** IV, xi, 15.



- Phœbe v. Dlana.**  
**Phœbus.** VII, vi, 35, vii, 51.  
**Phœnix.** IV, xi, 15.  
**Phorcys.** IV, xi, 13.  
**Pleteland, Prince of.** VI, xii, 4.  
**Pllate.** II, vii, 61 f.  
**Plrithous.** IV, x, 27.  
**Plttle.** V, ix, 45.  
**Plaeldas.** IV, viii, 38 ff., ix, 1-16.  
**Pleasaunce.** III, xii, 18.  
**Pleasure.** III, vi, 50.  
**Pluto.** I, iv, 11; VII, vii, 3. His 'house,' I, v, 32.  
**Pœana.** IV, viii, 49 ff., ix, 1-16.  
**Pollente.** 'The powerful'; the rapacity of high officials. His bridge with its trap-falls, etc., the difficult course of those who have necessary business with such officials. V, ii, 4-28.  
**Polynome.** IV, xi, 50.  
**Pontoporea.** IV, xi, 50.  
**Porls.** IV, xi, 49.  
**Portamore.** VI, vii, 35.  
**Porter.** VI, iii, 38-43; the tongue, II, ix, 25.  
**Port Esquiline.** II, ix, 32.  
**Poverty.** III, xii, 25.  
**Prays-desire.** Desire of praise. II, ix, 36-39. Her poplar branch, the emblem of Hercules.  
**Prlamond.** IV, ii, 41 ff., iii.  
**Pride, House of (v. Luelfera).** I, iv, v, 45 ff.  
**Prlest v. Isis Church, or Salvage Nation.**  
**Priscilla.** VI, ii, 16-21, 41 ff., iii, 1-19.  
**Pronæa.** IV, xi, 50.  
**Proserplna.** I, iv, 11; VII, vii, 3. **Garden of —.** Worldly success. II, vii, 51 ff.  
**Proteus.** III, iv, 25, viii, 29-41; IV, xi, 2, 9, xii.  
**Proto.** IV, xi, 48.  
**Protomedæa.** IV, xi, 49.  
**Pryenc.** II, iv, 25-32.  
**Psamathe.** IV, xi, 51.  
**Psyche.** III, vi, 50.  
**Pyldas.** IV, x, 27.  
**Pyrochles.** (πῦρ, fire, ὀχλέω, to move, disturb.) One manifestation of the irascible, contentious, or passionate element in the soul: the wrath that burns without cause, that wilfully seeks 'occasions.' Child of self-indulgence (Acrates) and malice (Despight): Acrates, son of Phlegeton (the river of fire) and Jarre (discord). II, iv, 41-45, v, 1-25, vi, 41 ff., viii.  
**Pythias.** IV, x, 27.  
**Quiet.** I, i, 41.  
**Radigund.** An early form of the doctrine of woman's rights. V, iv, 29 ff., v, vii, 25 ff. Her city, **Radegone**, V, iv, 35.  
**Rauran.** I, ix, 4.  
**Redcross Knight, The.** The champion of Holiness; the individual soul striving to attain holiness. Also, as 'St. George' (I, ii, 12, x, 61), the English Church. I, i, ii, iv, v, vii, 1-15, viii, 37 ff., ix, x, xi, xii; II, i, 1-34; III, i, 20 ff., ii, 4-16, iii, 62; V, xi, 53.  
**Regard of Womanhead.** V, ix, 45.  
**Religion.** V, ix, 44.  
**Remorse.** I, x, 27.  
**Repentance.** I, x, 27, 29; III, xii, 24.  
**Reproch.** III, xii, 24. **Rocke of Vile —.** II, xii, 4, 7-9.  
**Revenge.** II, vii, 22.  
**Reverence.** In two distinct forms. I, x, 7; V, ix, 32.  
**Rhene.** IV, xi, 21.  
**Rheusa.** IV, xi, 42.  
**Rhodanus.** IV, xi, 20.  
**Richesse, House of.** II, vii, 24 ff.  
**Rich Strond.** III, iv.  
**Riotlse.** III, xii, 25.  
**Rother.** IV, xi, 33.  
**Ruddymane.** 'Red-hand.' His hands, perhaps, a symbol of the visiting of the sins of the fathers upon the children. II, i, 35 ff., ii, 1-11, iii, 2.  
**Ryence.** III, ii, 18-22, iii, 59.  
**Salvage Island, The.** Ireland. V, xi, 39; VI, i, 9.  
**Salvage Knight, The.** Artegall. IV, iv, 39 ff., vi.  
**Salvage Man.** VI, iv, 1-16, v, vi, 18 ff., vii, 19-27, viii, 28 f.  
**Salvage Nation.** VI, viii, 35 ff.  
**Samlent.** V, viii, ix.  
**Sangler, Sangliere.** Perhaps two knights. IV, iv, 40; V, i, 16 ff.  
**Sansfoy.** Infidelity, irreligion, born of spiritual blindness (Aveugle). I, ii, 12-19, 25, v, 23.  
**Sansjoy.** Spiritual joylessness. Perhaps meant for the *accidia* of Catholic theology. (Cf. Dante, *Inferno*, VII, 118 ff.) I, ii, 25, iv, 38 ff., v.  
**Sansloy.** Lawlessness. I, ii, 25, iii, 33 ff., vi, 2-8, 36 ff.; II, ii.  
**Sao.** IV, xi, 48.  
**Sathan.** I, iv, 36.  
**Saturn.** VII, vii, 52.  
**Satyrane.** In Bk. I, natural morality, not educated in revealed truth; in the later books, a mere type of chivalric manhood. By some thought to represent Sir John Perrot. I, vi, 20 ff.; III, vii, 29 ff., viii, 44 ff., ix, x, 1 f., xi, 3-6; IV, ii, 25-27, iv, v. His mother Thyamis, perhaps from θυμός, passion; daughter of Labryde, perhaps from λάβρος, greedy. Her husband Therion, a 'wild beast.'  
**Satys. (Hellenore's)** III, x, 36 f., 43-53. (**Una's**) Natural, unenlightened man, I, vi.  
**Saxons.** I, x, 65; III, iii, 52 ff.  
**Scamander.** IV, xi, 20.  
**Selaunder.** IV, viii, 23-36.  
**Scorne.** VI, vi, 16, vii, 27 ff., viii, 1-30.  
**Scudamore, Scudamour.** 'The shield of love,' a name derived from his initial adventure (IV, x). III, vi, 53, xi, 7-27, xii, 44 f.; IV, i, 2-4, 38 ff., v, 30 ff., vi, ix, 22 ff., x.  
**Seditlon.** V, ix, 48.  
**Seneschall.** IV, i, 12. v. also **Geryoneo**.  
**September.** VII, vii, 38.  
**Serena.** VI, iii, 20 ff., iv, 1-16, v, vi, 1-17, vii, 39 ff., viii, 31 ff.  
**Sergls.** V, xi, 37 ff., xii, 3-10.  
**Severne.** IV, xi, 30.  
**Shame.** III, xii, 24.  
**Shamefastnesse.** Modesty. II, ix, 40-43.  
**Shenan.** IV, xi, 41.  
**Shepherds.** VI, ix, x, xi.  
**Shield of Love.** IV, x.

**Shure.** IV, xi, 42 f.; VII, vi, 54.  
**Silence.** IV, x, 51.  
**Sisyphus.** I, v, 35.  
**Skeff.** IV, xi, 37.  
**Slane.** IV, xi, 41.  
**Sleep.** VII, vii, 44. **House of —.** II, vii, 25. v. **Morpheus.**  
**Slowness.** v. **Idleness.**  
**Sophy.** II, ix, 6.  
**Sorrow.** II, vii, 22; III, xii, 25.  
**Souldan, The.** Spain. His overthrow on 'the greene' by the power of the magic shield, the defeat of the Armada at sea by interposition of God, in storms. V, viii.  
**Speranza.** Hope. I, x, 4, 12, 14, 22.  
**Spio.** IV, xi, 48.  
**Sprights.** I, i, 38 ff., ii, 2-5; II, vii, 32; III, viii, 4 f.  
**Spring.** VII, vii, 28.  
**Spumador.** 'The foamer.' II, viii, 17, xi, 19; III, iv, 61; IV, viii, 22, 37; V, viii, 36, xi, 8 f.; VI, v, 21.  
**Squle.** Righted by Artegall, V, i, 13-30; righted by Calidore, VI, i; Arthur's squire v. **Timlas**; Squire of Low Degree v. **Amyas.**  
**Squire of Dames.** III, vii, 37 ff., viii, 44 ff., ix; IV, ii, 20-31, iv, 2 f., v, 18.  
**Stoure.** IV, xi, 32.  
**Strife.** II, vii, 21; III, xii, 25.  
**Strond v. Castle.**  
**Sture.** IV, xi, 33.  
**Summer.** VII, vii, 29.  
**Suspect.** III, xii, 14 f.  
**Swale.** IV, xi, 37.  
**Sylvanus.** I, vi, 14-17, 33.  
**Talus.** Power, as the servant and executor of Justice. V, i, 12 ff., ii, iii, 37 ff., iv, v, 19, vi, vii, 26, 35 f., viii, 29, ix, xi, 47 ff., xii.  
**Tamar.** IV, xi, 31.  
**Tanaquill.** II, x, 76. v. **Gloriana.**  
**Tantalus.** I, v, 35; II, vii, 57-60.  
**Temperance.** V, ix, 32. **House of —.** 'Man's body,' the habitation of the soul (Alma). The anatomical details hardly need elucidation. See, however, the Notes. The ladies and their paramours (ix, 34 ff.) are the tastes, sentiments, etc. II, ix, xi.  
**Terpin.** V, iv, 21 ff., v, 18.  
**Terwin.** I, ix, 27 ff.  
**Tethys.** IV, xi, 18.  
**Thalia.** The Nereid, IV, xi, 49; the Grace, VI, x, 12-15, 22-24.  
**Thame.** IV, xi, 24-26.  
**Thamis.** IV, xi.  
**Thaise.** IV, xi, 47.  
**Themiste.** IV, xi, 51.  
**Therion v. Satyrane.**  
**Theseus.** I, v, 35; IV, x, 27.  
**Thetis.** The river, IV, xi, 29; the Nereid, IV, xi, 48.  
**Thyamis v. Satyrane.**  
**Tiger.** II, xi, 20-33; VI, x, 34-36.  
**Time.** III, vi, 39-41; VII, vi, 8, vii, 47 f.  
**Timias.** In his relations with Belphebe, taken by most critics to represent Raleigh, and the Amoret episode (IV, vii, viii). Raleigh's affair with

Elizabeth Throgmorton, the Queen's maid of honor, whom he seduced and then married, to the Queen's exceeding wrath. Others see a reference to Leicester and his secret marriage with the Countess of Essex; but when Bk. IV was written, that affair was ancient history. I, vii, 37, viii; II, viii, 17, ix, 11, xi, 17, 29-31, 48; III, i, 18, iv, 47, v; IV, vii, 23 ff., viii, 1-18; VI, v, 11 ff., vi, 1-16, vii, 39 ff., viii, 1-30.  
**Timon.** I, ix, 4.  
**Titan.** VII, vi, 27.  
**Titus.** IV, x, 27.  
**Tityus.** I, v, 35.  
**Treason.** II, vii, 22; IV, x, 20.  
**Tree of Life v. Life.**  
**Trent.** IV, xi, 35.  
**Trevisan.** I, ix, 21 ff.  
**Triamond.** One of the two champions of Friendship. IV, ii, 30 ff., iii, iv, v.  
**Tristram.** VI, ii.  
**Triton.** III, iv, 33; IV, xi, 12.  
**Trompart.** 'The deceiver.' Perhaps Simier, Alençon's envoy. II, iii; III, viii, 13, 19, x, 20-43, 54; V, iii, 38.  
**Trowls.** IV, xi, 41.  
**Tryphon.** III, iv, 43; IV, xi, 6 f., xii, 22-24.  
**Turpine.** VI, iii, 30 ff., iv, 1-9, v, 33 f., vi, 17 ff., vii, 1-27. v. also **Terpin.**  
**Twede.** IV, xi, 36.  
**Tybris.** IV, xi, 21.  
**Tygris.** IV, xi, 20.  
**Tyne.** IV, xi, 36.  
**Typhaon.** V, x, 10; VI, vi, 11 f.  
**Typhæus.** I, v, 35; III, vii, 47.  
**Ulfen.** III, iii, 55.  
**Una.** Truth. I, i, ii, 1-8, iii, vi, vii, 20 ff., viii, ix, x, xi, xii; II, i, 19; III, i, 24. Her ass, at first a symbol of humility, then a mere beast. I, i, 4, iii, 4, 44, vi, 19, etc. Her lamb (which, being inconvenient to the action, at once disappears), a symbol of innocence, I, i, 4. Her parents, variously interpreted: the Old and New Testaments, denied by the Roman Church to the laity, or Adam and Eve, as representatives of the human race. I, i, 5, vii, 43 ff., xi, 3, xii.  
**Unthriftyhead.** III, xii, 25. **Quicksand of —.** II, xii, 18 f.  
**Ure.** IV, xi, 37.  
**Uther Pendragon.** II, x, 68; III, iii, 52.  
**Vanitie.** I, iv, 13.  
**Venus.** III, vi; VII, vii, 51. Her girdle, IV, v, 2-6. Her temple and image, IV, x.  
**Verdant.** II, xii, 72 ff.  
**Vesper.** VII, vi, 9.  
**Villeins.** (Maleger's) II, ix, 12-17, xi. (Grantorto's) V, xi, 44 ff.  
**Wandring Islands.** II, xii, 10-14.  
**Warders.** The teeth. II, ix, 26.  
**Watchman.** I, xii, 2; II, ix, 11 f.; IV, ix, 5; V, iv, 36.  
**Well v. Fountain.**  
**Well of Life v. Life.**  
**Welland.** IV, xi, 35.  
**Werfe.** IV, xi, 37.

**Winter.** VII, vii, 31.

**Witch.** III, vii, 6-23, viii, 2-9. Her son. III, vii, 12-21, viii, 2-13. v. also **Duessa, Acrasia.**

**Womanhood.** IV, x, 49 ff.

**Wrath.** I, iv, 33-35.

**Wyllbourne.** IV, xi, 32

**Yar.** IV, xi, 33.

**Yeomen.** VI, vi, 25 ff.

**Young men.** I, xii, 5 f.

**Zele.** In two distinct forms. I, x, 6; V, in 39 ff.



## GLOSSARY

[For the system of reference, etc., see the heading of *Notes*.]

- Aband:** to abandon, 304, 65.  
**Abashment:** dismay, panic, 383, 16, 386, 34.  
**Abeare:** to comport (oneself), 579, 19, 640, 45.  
**Able v. Abye.**  
**Abject:** to cast down, 556, 9.  
**Abord, aboard:** adrift (for abroad?), 111, 14, 94, 324; on or along the surface of, 80, 46; lay a., to bring one's ship alongside of, for fight, 396, 6.  
**Abouts:** about, 204, 36.  
**Abrade, abrayd:** to arouse, startle out of sleep, 333, 61, 404, 8.  
**Abray** (*pret.* **abraid, abrayd**): to start out of sleep or a swoon, to awake, 459, 36, 443, 22.  
**Abusion:** abuse, 581, 40; deception, fraud, 419, 7, 107, 1363; turne to a., to abuse, 93, 220.  
**Abye:** to pay the penalty for, 284, 33, 369, 24; to suffer, endure, 745, 242; to endure, last, 373, 3; to abide, face, 257, 40.  
**Accloy:** to clog, 273, 15; to cumber, 13, 135.  
**Accoast v. Accoste.**  
**Accompt:** to account, 636, 14.  
**Accorage:** to encourage, 244, 38, 385, 34.  
**According:** according to, in accordance with, 683, 370, 629, 18; accordingly, 305, 71.  
**Accoste:** to be adjacent, 573, 42; to move close to the ground, 594, 32.  
**Accourage v. Accorage.**  
**Account:** to pay court to, 241, 16.  
**Accoy:** to soothe, 475, 59; to daunt, 12, 47.  
**Accoyl:** to gather together, 292, 30.  
**Accrewe:** to increase, 111, 15; to collect, 456, 18.  
**Accustom:** to be wont, 327, 13.  
**Achates:** provisions bought, 292, 31.  
**Acquight, acquite** (*pp.* **acquit**): to deliver, release, 192, 1, 313, 3, 526, 39.  
**Adaw:** to subdue, daunt, appall, 559, 35, 375, 13, 544, 20; to lose vigor, wane, 457, 26.  
**Adayes:** daily, 16, 42.  
**Addeeme:** to adjudge, 517, 15.  
**Addoome:** to adjudge, 676, 56.  
**Address:** to prepare, make ready, adjust, 435, 14, 195, 22, 193, 6, 326, 4; to set up, erect, 126, 5, 693, 562; to equip, attire, 154, 11, 639, 36; to direct, 234, 25, 218, 17, 208, 11; (*reflex.*) to direct one's course, 351, 6, 539, 22, 400, 40.  
**Admiraunce:** admiration, 567, 39.  
**Adore:** to adorn, 496, 46.  
**Adorne:** adornment, 413, 20.  
**Adrad, adred:** terrified, afraid, 506, 22, 334, 62, 437, 25, 83, 304.  
**Advance** (*pret.*, *pp.* **advauunst**): to lift up, 311, 34, 737, 145; to extol, 44, 47, 387, 43; to stimulate, impel, 232, 10.  
**Advengement:** revenge, 434, 8.  
**Adventer:** to adventure, take the chance of, 528, 5, 103, 1005.  
**Adventure:** hap, chance, 117, 67, 181, 21, 428, 20; opportunity, 436, 20; venture, risk, 327, 10, 694, 567.  
**Advew:** to view, 518, 20.  
**Advise, advise:** to look at, examine, perceive, observe, consider, reflect on, 384, 23, 429, 22, 296, 59, 476, 4, 293, 38, 176, 40, 749, 190; to recognize, 466, 43; to purpose, resolve, 310, 27; (*reflex.*) to bethink (oneself), take thought, consider, resolve, 93, 281, 270, 46, 342, 6, 400, 40, 414, 28; well avisd, ill avisd (of persons), discreet, indiscreet, 316, 26, 321, 61, 380, 57.  
**Advizement:** reflection, 260, 13; counsel, 289, 9.  
**Adward:** an award, 484, 17; to award, 501, 30.  
**Aemuling, -ed:** emulating, -ed, 687, 72, 73.  
**Afarrrs:** afar, 712, 167.  
**Afeard v. Affeard.**  
**Affamisht:** famished, 734, 87.  
**Affeard:** frightened, afraid, 252, 45, 402, 52.  
**Affect:** feeling, affection, appetite, passion, 589, 45, 611, 24, 719, 6, 744, 180.  
**Affection:** emotion, 124, 12, 597, 4; passion, appetite, 615, 7, 256, 34, 375, 15; inclination, bias, 458, 33.  
**Affide v. Affy.**  
**Affoord, afford:** to yield, grant, consent, 282, 19, 266, 19; to attribute, 586, 26.  
**Affrap:** to strike, 234, 26, 335, 6.  
**Affray:** to alarm, terrify, scare away, 172, 8, 287, 48, 484, 16 — assault, 583, 2; rout, panic, 443, 22; fear, terror, 564, 19, 160, 12.  
**Affrended:** made friends, 440, 50.  
**Affret:** impetuous onset, 390, 16, 428, 15.  
**Affright:** frightened, 263, 37.  
**Affront:** to confront, oppose, attack, 436, 22, 351, 7, 261, 20.  
**Affy:** to confide, 535, 53; to betroth, 597, 7, 515, 2.  
**Aflot:** afloat, overflowed, 127, 9.  
**Aggrace:** to favor, 209, 18; to give or add grace to, 320, 58 — goodwill, graciousness, 288, 56.  
**Aggrate:** to please, gratify, 263, 33, 76, 406; to thank, pay acknowledgments, 429, 23.  
**Aggreeve v. Agreeve.**  
**Aghast** (*pret.*): frightened, terrified, 280, 4, 358, 3, 668, 52.  
**Agone:** ago, 84, 359.  
**Agraste:** *pret.* of **aggrace**, q. v.  
**Agreeve, agrieve:** to afflict, grieve, vex, 129, 4, 60, 91, 465, 37, 213, 49.  
**Agrise, agrize:** to horrify, terrify, 337, 24, 565, 28, 669, 6; to make horrible or terrible (?), 270, 46, 468, 12.  
**Aguisle:** to attira, array; 98: 656. 264: 7. 335: 31; to fashion, 337, 16.

**Alabaster:** alabaster, 633, 42.  
**Albe, albee:** although, 10, 67, 748, 149; despite, 548, 3. **Albe** is a contraction of **albeit** = although it be (that). In the phrases, **albe he, albe it**, etc., with a following verb, **albe** is resolved into its elements (**al** + **be**), and the phrases = although (or whether) he be, etc., 26, 266, 508, 6, 660, 40. [Cf. **All were**.]  
**Alegge, allegge:** to alleviate, 16, 5, 336, 15.  
**Aleggeaunce:** alleviation, 364, 42.  
**Alew:** halloo, howling, 537, 13.  
**Algate, algates:** in any way, in any case, by all means, at all events, 639, 33, 519, 30, 261, 20; altogether, 230, 2, 332, 53; for all that, nevertheless, 240, 12, 460, 44, 48, 21.  
**Alienate (pp.):** estranged, 18 arg.  
**Alight (pp.):** lighted, fallen, 161, 20.  
**All were:** in phrases, **a. w. he, a. w. it**, etc. Here **all** = although: the phrases = although he were, etc., 240, 12, 325, *Prol.*, 2, 40, 64. [Cf. **Albe**.]  
**Allegge v. Alegge.**  
**Als, alls:** also, 140, *Ignoto*, 201, 18; als . . . as, so . . . as, 202, 21; als . . . and, both . . . and, 32, 8.  
**Also:** even so, 53, 75.  
**Alsoone:** as soon, 33, 101.  
**Amate:** to dishearten, dismay, subdue, 205, 45, 231, 6, 377, 35 — to bear company, 292, 34.  
**Amenage:** to domesticate, tame, or to manage, handle, 253, 11.  
**Amenance:** bearing, conduct, 434, 5, 288, 5.  
**Amend (pp.):** amended, 33, 170.  
**Amlddes:** amid, 149, 36.  
**Among:** here and there, 685, 530; between-whiles, every now and then, 582, 42, 54, 112.  
**Amove, amove:** to stir, stir up, excite, rouse, 405, 13, 232, 12, 170, 45, 201, 18, 218, 16, 685, 545; to remove, 268, 37, 395, 1; a. of, to question about, 391, 24.  
**Annoy:** vexation, grief, anguish, 293, 35, 181, 17, 597, 4; anger, 369, 24; **annoyes**, mischievous, injurious acts, 245, 43 — to afflict, grieve, 768, 44.  
**Anon, anone:** immediately, forthwith, 329, 25, 572, 37.  
**Apall v. Appall.**  
**Apay:** always with well or ill and usually as *pp.* (*apayd*). Two root meanings: — (1) to satisfy, please (well or ill), 576, 64, 341, 47, 453, 42. **Ill a**, sometimes = to afflict, 679, 70, 316, 28. (2) to repay, requite, 532, 33, 481, 40, 363, 36. [*v. Ypaid*.]  
**Appall, apall:** to fade, languish, decay, 457, 26; to cause to fade or decay, to enfeeble, to quell, 243, 32, 331, 46.  
**Apparaunce:** appearance, 332, 52.  
**Appeach:** to impeach, accuse, inform against, 286, 44, 311, 40, 396, 6, 533, 37, 561, 47.  
**Appellation:** appeal, 665, 35.  
**Apply:** to join (to), 331, 40, 63, 236; to prosecute, *ply*, 213, 46, 307, 7, 404, 6; to accommodate, adapt, 358, 61, 376, 24, 46, 9; to direct (one's course), 264, 5, 524, 21; to address, 317, 32.  
**Appose:** to confront with questions, examine, 560, 44.  
**Approvance:** approval, 737, 144; maintenance, 319, 35.  
**Approve:** to prove, demonstrate, 255, 24, 329,

27, 672, 27; to put to proof, test, 621, 5, 247, 15; to experience, feel, 391, 24, 182, 26.  
**Arayd v. Array.**  
**Arborett:** a little tree, a shrub, 265, 12.  
**Arck, arke:** an arch, 113, 27, 125, 4.  
**Aread, arede, areed (pp. aredd):** to declare, make known, utter, tell, speak, 196, 31, 200, 6, 203, 28, 209, 17, 247, 14, 71, 52, 687, 15; to guess, conjecture, perceive, 375, 16, 520, 35, 537, 8; to interpret, unriddle, 231, 7, 449, 15; to counsel, 144, 1, 227, 28, 383, 17; to decree, appoint, adjudge, 577, 9, 639, 33.  
**Arear, arrear, arere:** backward, 311, 36, 86, 468; behind, 630, 23, **wex a.**, to fall off, slacken, 376, 24.  
**Aredd, arede, arced v. Aread.**  
**Arere v. Arear.**  
**Arew:** in a row, 580, 29; in succession, 708, 186.  
**Arlights:** in accordance with right, 562, 4.  
**Arlive:** to come to shore, 112, 21.  
**Arke:** a coffer, chest, 442, 15. [*v. also Arck*.]  
**Armory:** armor, a suit of armor, 148, 27, 349, 59.  
**Arraught:** seized, snatched, 301, 34.  
**Array:** to put in (sorry) plight, treat (ill), 202, 23, 511, 25, 595, 42.  
**Arrear v. Arear.**  
**Arret:** to commit, entrust, assign, 281, 8, 307, 7, 382, 7; to adjudge, 450, 21.  
**As:** as if, 159, 6, 220, 31, 223, 48; as then, at that time, 17, 113, 559, 36.  
**Aslake:** to assuage, appease, 726, 44, 163, 36.  
**Aspy:** to espy, 403, 3.  
**Assay:** proof, test, trial, 425, 50, 275, 34, 747, 88, 142, *Cumberland*, 235, 35, 247, 12; attempt, endeavor, 617, 21; hostile attempt, assault, 524, 23, 193, 8, 285, 36; approved quality, value, 154, 13, 352, 18, 552, 37 — to put to proof, try, examine, 192, 2, 221, 34, 527, 47, 225, 9; to experience, 301, 40; to afflict, 36, 5; to assail, 253, 6, 328, 21; to endeavor, 165, 8.  
**Assieged:** besieged, 308, 15.  
**Assize:** measurement, 125, 2.  
**Assolle:** to set free, deliver, 681, 259, 435, 13, 261, 19, 385, 32; to solve, determine, 673, 38; to acquit oneself of, 481, 36, 685, 535, 733, 80; to remove, put away, 768, 47, 761, 100, 720, 11, 333, 58, 457, 25.  
**Assott (pp. assotted, assott):** to infatuate, be-fool, 297, 8, 384, 22, 16, 25.  
**Astart, astert:** to start up, 338, 29; to disturb, 51, 187.  
**Astolned:** confounded, 127, 9.  
**Astond v. Astound.**  
**Astonied v. Astony.**  
**Astonish:** to stun, 473, 43, 568, 9, 268, 31; to bewilder, 524, 27.  
**Astonishment:** stupor, 386, 35; loss of wits, frenzy, 270, 49; consternation, 383, 12.  
**Astony:** to stun, 34, 227, 154, 15, 16; to confound, 515, 54.  
**Astound, astond:** stunned, 204, 35, 352, 17; confounded, appalled, 156, 31, 193, 5, 469, 19.  
**Aswage:** to grow less violent, 159, 5.  
**Attach:** to seize, 385, 33, 310, 28, 597, 10, 614, 4.  
**Attaint:** to taint, sully, dim, 419, 5, 189, 34.

**Attempt:** to tempt, 576, 63.  
**Attent:** attention, 395, 52, 639, 37 — attentive, 638, 26.

**Attone, at one:** in a body, together, 236, 42, 292, 28, 388, 2, 76, 418; at once, once for all, 498, 9, 514, 48 — agreement, 697, 843.

**Attonement:** concord, 550, 21.

**Attones, attons:** at once, 16, 53, 334, 63.

**Attrapt:** furnished with trappings, 446, 39.

**Aumayld:** enamelled, 249, 27.

**Avale, availle:** to descend, 289, 10, 439, 46; to subside, droop, 147, 21, 338, 27, 11, 8; to lower, bring down, 484, 19, 10, 73.

**Avault:** to advance, 246, 6; to depart, 617, 21.

**Avenge:** vengeance, 348, 46, 427, 15.

**Aventer:** used only of spears: to level or set in rest (?), 455, 11; to thrust (?), 329, 28, 434, 9.

**Avise, avize v. Advise.**

**Avizefull:** observing, 457, 26.

**Avoud:** *pret.* of avow, q. v.

**Avoure:** avowal, 602, 48.

**Avow:** to vow, 269, 40, 341, 46, 359, 11, 613, 34; to vow to, swear by, 289, 7.

**Avyze v. Advise.**

**Awaiite:** ambush, 360, 17, 483, 14.

**Awarned:** warned, 401, 46.

**Awayes:** away, 85, 430.

**Awshape:** to dismay, terrify, 91, 72, 461, 5, 571, 32.

**Bace v. Base.**

**Bancket v. Banket.**

**Band:** to banish, interdict, 340, 41.

**Banket:** a banquet, 306, 2, 369, 22.

**Base:** the game of prisoner's base, 548, 5; one of the bases or 'homes,' 642, 8; *bid b.*, to challenge a player to leave his base or 'home' and come out into the field for a race, 44, 5; hence, fig., to challenge, or to pursue, 404, 5 — low, 175, 31, 322, 71, 341, 50; lowly, humble, 240, 6, 90, 44, 4, *To His Booke*, 143, *Buckhurst*, 531, 25, 601, 38.

**Basen:** extended, staring, 98, 670.

**Bash:** to flinch, quail, 257, 37.

**Bate:** strife, discord, 766, 8 — (*pret.*): bit, 259, 7.

**Battallous:** warlike, 171, 2, 283, 22.

**Battellant:** engaged in battle, 124, 8.

**Battill:** to grow fat, 632, 38.

**Batton:** a club, 626, 46.

**Bayes:** bathes, 185, 3.

**Be, bee:** been, 26, 237, 41, 146, 436, 21; are, 751, 96.

**Beades:** prayers (with or without the use of the rosary), 149, 30, 207, 3, 208, 8; a rosary, 160, 13. [*v. Bid.*]

**Beare, bere:** a stretcher, a bier, 596, 48, 317, 36; a funeral monument, 343, 11 — a burden, 702, 149.

**Beath:** to heat green wood for straightening or hardening, 461, 7.

**Beauperes:** companions, 330, 35.

**Become:** to go to, 209, 16, 350, 1; happen, 392, 32; as became, as was fitting, 292, 28, 391, 26, 208, 11.

**Bed:** bid, 205, 41, 355, 39. [*v. further Bid.*]

**Bedes v. Beades.**

**Bedlght** (*infin.* and *pp.*): to equip, dress, adorn,

609, 7, 309, 22, 371, 43, 227, 21; to order, dispose, 503, 10; to treat, to maltreat, 270, 50, 45, 89; ill b., disfigured, marred, 232, 14, 271, 3.

**Bee v. Be.**

**Beene, bene, bin:** be, 237, 52, 239, 59; are, 39, 10, 239, 3, 5, 138, *Another, etc.*

**Befeld:** befallen, 440, 50.

**Beforme:** before (of place), 25, 160, 243, 27.

**Beginne:** beginning, 344, 21.

**Behalve:** behalf, 444, 27.

**Behappen:** to happen, 574, 52.

**Beheast:** behest, e. g. 167, 18.

**Behight** (*pret.*, *pp.* *behight* or *behote*, *behott*): to vow, promise, 245, 1, 490, 6, 221, 38; to deliver, entrust, grant, adjudge, 213, 50, 281, 9, 448, 7, 763, 2; to command, ordain, 307, 4, 308, 17, 119, 241; to name, pronounce, deem, 53, 54, 379, 47, 665, 35, 215, 64, 437, 31, 424, 44; to speak, address, 429, 23, 544, 20.

**Belaccoyle:** fair greeting, 457, 25.

**Belamoure:** a sweetheart, 266, 16.

**Belamy:** a fair friend, 278, 52.

**Belay:** to trim, 590, 5; to beleaguer, 720, 14.

**Belgardes:** amorous or lovely looks, 395, 52, 750, 256.

**Belive, bilive, bylive, blive:** in lively manner, quickly, promptly, eagerly, 42, 227, 175, 32, 328, 18, 360, 16, 248, 18.

**Bellibone:** *belle et bonne*, a fair maid, 19, 92.

**Belove:** to love, 11, 31.

**Belyde:** counterfeited, 396, 7.

**Bend:** a band, fillet, stripe, 275, 30, 249, 27; a troop, 23, 32.

**Bene v. Beene.**

**Bent:** compliant, 41, 149.

**Bereave:** to take away, as by force, 77, 489, 67, 577, 645, 29, 536, 2, 533, 37, 284, 29, 152, 52. **Beseeke:** to beseech, 440, 47, 601, 37.

**Beseen:** provided, 564, 17; equipped, arrayed, 670, 11; as adjective with *well*, *gay*, *rich*, etc., *well* ordered, *well* arrayed, *comely*, *accomplished*, *gay* to look upon, etc., 88, 651, 73, 180, 331, 45, 224, 5, 565, 28, 723, 27.

**Besit:** to befit, become, 272, 10, 428, 19.

**Bespeak:** to utter, 12, 97; to speak, say, 340, 42, 283, 27; to address, 231, 8.

**Besprent, besprint:** besprinkled, 54, 135, 49, 111.

**Bested, bestad:** beset, 361, 22, 437, 25; with ill, sorely, strangely, etc., brought to evil plight, in sorry, strange plight, sorely put to it, etc., 616, 18, 234, 30, 237, 52, 402, 54, 148, 24, 501, 33.

**Bestedded:** assisted, 418, 3.

**Bet v. Bett.**

**Betake:** to commit, deliver, deliver to, 376, 25, 369, 28, 227, 25, 654, 51; to betake oneself, take (to), 175, 28, 205, 44; to take, 91, 69.

**Beteeme:** to grant, 282, 19.

**Betid, betide:** betided, happened, 360, 13, 498, 4, 234, 26, 609, 3.

**Betight** (*pp.* *betight*): to betide, 41, 73, 50, 174.

**Bett:** beat, beaten, 321, 63, 242, 22, 179, 5, 189, 28 — better, 34, 230, 44, 15.

**Bewray:** to betray, reveal, tell, 169, 39, 175, 30, 337, 21, 341, *arg.*, 518, 25, 38, 176; to discover, 479, 28.



- Blckermert:** altercation, 521, 6.  
**Bid, bed:** (always with beads, howres, etc.), to pray, to perform rites, 149, 30, 207, 3, 613, 35.  
**Billive v. Belive.**  
**Bin v. Becne.**  
**Bit:** bite, 554, 49, 80, 83, 117, 62.  
**Blame:** to bring reproach upon, to disgrace, 282, 16, 598, 11, 487, 41 — blemish, harm, 248, 22, 388, 1, 326, 9, 155, 18.  
**Bland:** to cajole, 749, 171.  
**Blaze:** to depict heraldically, 517, 14; to depict, 5, 87.  
**Blend (pp. blent):** to blind, daze, 253, 7, 323, 80, 438, 35, 83, 311 — to disturb, dim, stain, pollute, 729, 62, 388, 1, 392, 33, 259, 5, 537, 13, 107, 1330.  
**Blesse:** bliss, 207, *arg.*, 484, 23 — to protect, preserve, 155, 18, 186, 12, 203, 28, 310, 30, 455, 13 — to brandish, 172, 6, 195, 22.  
**Blin:** to cease from, 361, 22.  
**Blist:** blessed, 466, 46, 33, 174 — brandished, 629, 13. [*v. Blesse.*]  
**Blive v. Belive.**  
**Blonckct:** gray, gray-blue, light blue, 23, 5.  
**Blont v. Blunt.**  
**Bloosme:** blossom, 582, 4 — to blossom, 630, 20, 669, 8.  
**Bodrags:** forays, 691, 315. [*v. Bordragings.*]  
**Bonibell:** same as bellibone, *q. v.*, 37, 62.  
**Bonilasse:** a bonny lass, 37, 77, 689, 172.  
**Boone:** a prayer, 377, 34.  
**Boord v. Bord.**  
**Boot:** profit, 406, 19; booty, 556, 10, 673, 38.  
**Bord, boord:** to accost, address, 239, 5, 255, 24, 315, 16; to border on, skirt, 495, 43 — jesting, 442, 13; a flam, fib, 344, 19.  
**Bordragings:** forays, 304, 63. [*v. Bodrags.*]  
**Borrell:** of the laity, unlearned, 33, 95.  
**Borrowe, borowe:** a pledge, surety, 24, 131, 25, 150, 40, 96; borrowing, 101, 852.  
**Boughtes:** coils, 146, 15, 217, 11, 83, 255.  
**Bounce, bounce:** to beat, knock, 407, 27, 510, 21.  
**Bountiest:** most virtuous, 359, 8.  
**Bountyhed:** virtue, goodness, worth, 313, 1, 366, 3, 331, 41; generosity, 348, 47; excellence, 296, 2.  
**Bownd:** to go, lead, 216, 67.  
**Bowre:** to lodge, dwell, 642, 6, 582, 4.  
**Bowrs:** muscles, 198, 41.  
**Boystrous:** massive, 193, 10.  
**Brag, -ly:** ostentatious, -ly, finely, 12, 71, 16, 14.  
**Brame:** longing, 341, 52.  
**Brast:** burst, 192, 4, 202, 21.  
**Brave:** fine, handsome, splendid, 189, 32, 202, 19, 212, 42, 325, 83, 748, 122; admirable, excellent, 342, 3, 246, 4, 249, 24, 692, 411, 115, *Letter*; finely, 165, 8 — to brag, swagger, 546, 32, 111, 14 — -ly: finely, gallantly, 249, 27, 265, 13.  
**Brawnnd:** brawny, 198, 41.  
**Bray:** a harsh cry, 475, 62 — to cry out, or sound, harshly or shrilly, 147, 17, 161, 23, 179, 7, 411, 6.  
**Breare v. Brere.**  
**Breme, breem:** fierce, bitter, 12, 43, 674, 40.  
**Bren (pret., pp. brent):** to burn, 346, 34, 439, 45, 200, 10, 220, 28.  
**Brere:** a briar, 13, 115, 211, 35.  
**Brickie:** brittle, fragile, 487, 39, 66, 499.  
**Brize:** a gadfly, 123, 2, 586, 24.  
**Brocege:** pandering, 5, 13, 101, 851.  
**Brondiron:** a sword, 445, 32, 628, 10.  
**Brust:** to burst, 22, 261, 344, 19, 332, 48, 446, 41.  
**Bryze v. Brize.**  
**Buegie:** bead-work, 12, 66.  
**Buffe:** a blow, 154, 17, 219, 24.  
**Bug:** a bugbear, 248, 20, 316, 25.  
**Bugle:** wild ox, 192, 3.  
**Burdenous:** heavy, grievous, 579, 19, 24, 132.  
**Buskets:** bushes, 23, 10.  
**But:** unless, 337, 17, 388, 50.  
**But if:** unless, 332, 53, 383, 17, 463, 23, 41, 143; if only, 37, 112.  
**Buxome:** yielding, compliant, submissive, 221, 37, 354, 32, 337, 23, 41, 149, 98, 626.  
**By and by:** immediately, forthwith, 192, 2, 264, 5, 500, 25, 104, 1108.  
**Bylive v. Belive.**  
**Bynempt:** uttered (a vow), 239, 60; promised, 48, 46; named, 34, 214.  
**Cærule:** azure, 81, 163.  
**Caltive v. Caytive.**  
**Camis, camus:** a light, loose robe or tunic (*Fr. chemise*), 528, 2, 249, 26.  
**Can:** know, knows, 12, 77, 16, 56; could, knew, knew how, 613, 36, 542, 5. [*v. Con.*] — (*aux.*) did, 156, 29, 170, 46, 315, 15, 568, 10; do, does, 29, 26, 173, 17.  
**Cancerd:** cankered, malignant, 695, 680, 230, 1.  
**Cantion:** a song, 46, 13.  
**Capitaine:** captain, 290, 15, 647, 3.  
**Captivaunce:** captivity, 379, 45, 538, 17.  
**Capuccio:** a hood, 412, 10.  
**Care:** grief, distress, 467, 5, 498, 12, 599, 24; take *c.*, feel grief, be afflicted, 342, 5, 9, 9.  
**Carefull:** sorrowful, afflicted, 201, 15, 179, 6; careworn, anxious, 140, *Halton*, 270, 47; painful, 190, 39, 54, 133 — -ly: woefully, 382, 4.  
**Carie:** used rather miscellaneous for a man of unchivalrous, rude, villainous or mean nature and manners, 600, 34, 381, *arg.*, 453, 44, 276, 43, 206, 54, 388, 3.  
**Cast:** to deliberate, 680, 115, 41, 114; to plan, 237, 48, 157, 38; to resolve, 173, 12, 201, 15, 375, 15, 591, 12; to arrange, 185, 1; (*reflex.*) to resolve, 13, 125, 189 — a bout, 400, 35; occasion, 634, 51.  
**Causen:** to give reasons, 391, 26.  
**Caytive:** captive, 177, 45, 196, 32, 200, 11; mean, ignoble, 250, 35, 289, 13, 375, 16, 397, 17 — a menial, wretch, villain, 230, 1, 254, 16, 285, 37, 586, 19.  
**Cesse:** to cease, 476, 2.  
**Chaire v. Chayre.**  
**Champlan, champion:** level open country, a plain, 510, 15, 606, 26, 114, 31.  
**Charet:** a chariot, 174, 20, 438, 38.  
**Charme:** to tune, play, 46, 118, 687, 5, 556, 13 — a song, 74, 244, 700, 46.  
**Chaufe, chauff:** to heat, 163, 33; to chafe, rub, vex, fume, 188, 21, 218, 15, 514, 46 — chafe, 592, 21.

**Chayre:** a chariot, car, 166, 17, 169, 37, 126, 4  
 — chary, 365, 51.  
**Cherry:** to cheer, 644, 22.  
**Chevisaunce:** enterprise, achievement, 289, 8, 379, 45, 406, 24; a bargain, 24, 92.  
**Chiefe:** a head, 50, 115.  
**Childe:** a youth of gentle birth, not yet knighted, 594, 36; a knight in the prime of manhood, 473, 44, 568, 8; a 'faire young man,' 281, 7. [Cf. *Infant*.]  
**Chose:** to choose, 64, 371, 563, 12.  
**Chusd:** chosen, 240, 5.  
**Chyld v. Childe.**  
**Clad:** to clothe, 603, 4.  
**Clame:** a shout, 483, 11 — to declare, 591, 14, 486, 30.  
**Clarkes v. Clerkes.**  
**Cleped, cleped:** called, named, 246, 8, 296, 58, 642, 8, 688, 113.  
**Clerkes:** men of learning, scholars, 561, 1, 676, 55, 75, 335.  
**Clift:** a cliff, 195, 22, 351, 7; a cleft, 479, 27.  
**Cllnk:** a latch (?), 26, 251.  
**Clip:** to clasp, embrace, 768, 45, 382, 10.  
**Close, -ly:** secret, -ly, 263, 34, 292, 32, 333, 57, 338, 28.  
**Clouted:** clotted, 49, 99 — bandaged, 16, 50.  
**Cloyd:** 'a term used among farriers when a horse is pricked by a nail' (Church), 372, 48.  
**Common, commen:** to commune, 293, 41, 555, 4.  
**Commune:** common, 366, 5.  
**Compile v. Compyle.**  
**Complement:** completion, completeness, 94, 338, 366, 55; a crowning work, 722, 24; proficiency, 99, 692; an embellishment, 78, 542, 696, 790; an accomplishment, 644, 23.  
**Complexion:** physical constitution, or temperament, 367, 8, 371, 38, 403, 59; (*plur.*) colors (of the complexion), 248, 22, 747, 67.  
**Complot:** a scheme, 551, 25, 92, 178.  
**Comportaunce:** behavior, 234, 29.  
**Compyle:** to compose, indite, 558, 25, 467, 4, 76, 432; to heap up, 336, 12, 366, 1; to construct, frame, 113, 25, 343, 10, 377, 30; to constitute, 732, 80; to settle, 478, 17.  
**Con, kon:** to know, 41, 90, 687, 74, 690, 294, 541, 35; to know how, be able, 49, 52 [v. *Can*, *Couth*.] — to learn, 12, 92, 42, 215.  
**Conceipt, conceit:** a conception, idea, device, fancy, 136, 5, 91, 138, 205, 100, 827; understanding, imagination, judgment, 89, *Letter*, 686, *Letter*.  
**Conceiptfull:** clever, quick, 657, 16.  
**Concent:** harmony, concord, 411, 5, 82, 225, 736, 83, 749, 198.  
**Concented:** harmonized, 426, 2.  
**Concrew:** to become matted, 466, 40.  
**Cond v. Con.**  
**Condition:** quality, temper (generally in *plur.*), 495, 38, 470, 24, 388, 4, 308, 11, 167, 18.  
**Confound (pp.):** confounded, 30, 63.  
**Congregate (pp.):** congregated, 663, 19.  
**Conne v. Con.**  
**Conqueresse:** a woman conqueror, 546, 36.  
**Consent v. Convent.**  
**Consort:** a company, fellowship, 274, 22; accord, 224, 4; the musical accord of instruments

or voices, a concert, 292, 35, 262, 31 331, 40 71, 28.  
**Constraine:** to reduce to straits, distress, 530, 15, 293, 36, 91, 56; to strive, 402, 49.  
**Constraint:** distress, affliction, 152, 53, 231, 9, 393, 40, 466, 45.  
**Contecke:** strife, discord, 334, 64, 25, 163.  
**Contempt (pp.):** contemned, 49, 48.  
**Contract (pp.):** contracted, 393, 42.  
**Contraire:** opposed, 677, 2 — the contrary, 96, 494 — to withstand, 661, 7.  
**Controverse:** a controversy, 447, 2.  
**Convey:** to carry off, to steal, 155, 24, 240, 11, 292, 32, 460, 47, 475, 61.  
**Convycance:** theft, 101, 856.  
**Corage, courage:** heart, spirit, nature, mind, 178, 1, 360, 15, 336, 10, 327, 11, 252, 46, 318, 40, 317, 29; lustiness, 157, 35; appetite, 322, 68; anger, 399, 30.  
**Corbe:** crooked, 12, 56 — a corbel, 482, 6.  
**Corrupt (pp.):** corrupted, 748, 158.  
**Coste:** side, 94, 294.  
**Cott:** a little boat, 265, 9.  
**Countercastr:** a counterplot, 598, 16.  
**Counterchange:** repayment in kind, 390, 16.  
**Counterfesaunce:** counterfeiting, imposture, 199, 49, 382, 8; mimicry, 73, 197.  
**Counterfet, -fetted, -fect:** counterfeited, counterfeit, 477, 11, 277, 45, 42, 206.  
**Counterpelse:** to counterbalance, 514, 46.  
**Countervayle:** compensation, 768, 47.  
**Courage v. Corage.**  
**Coure:** to cherish, brood on (as a hen her eggs or chickens), 126, 8, 281, 9.  
**Courtelse, courtesly:** courteous, courteously, 375, 15, 405, 13.  
**Couth:** knew how to, could, 9, 10, 13, 190, 29, 41, 279, 58 [v. *Con*, *Can*]; (*aux.*) did, 33, 138. [v. *Can*.]  
**Coverture:** shelter, 32, 26; deceit, 99, 683.  
**Covetise:** covetousness, 40, 82, 168, 29, 272, 12.  
**Cowardrec:** cowardice, 102, 986.  
**Cowheard, cowherd:** a coward, cowardly, 587, 28, 563, 15.  
**Cowherdize, cowardize:** cowardice, 646, 37, 442, 11.  
**Crag:** the neck, 40, 45, 12, 82.  
**Crake:** to utter arrogantly, 517, 16; to brag, 675, 50 — a brag, 307, 10.  
**Cranck:** vaingloriously, 40, 46.  
**Cranks:** windings, 675, 52.  
**Craples:** grapples, claws, 553, 40.  
**Crased:** weak, infirm, 391, 26.  
**Cratch:** the manger (at Bethlehem), 753, 226.  
**Cremosln, cremsln:** crimson, 19, 59, 13, 130.  
**Crewe:** a pot, 14, 209.  
**Crime:** an accusation, matter of accusation, 13, 162, 451, 31, 470, 25; reproach, blame, 222, 46, 180, 13.  
**Croupe:** crupper, 352, 16.  
**Cruddle:** to curdle, congeal, 12, 46, 11, *arg*, 206, 52.  
**Cruddy:** clotted, 175, 29, 348, 47.  
**Crudle v. Cruddle.**  
**Crumenali:** a purse, 41, 119.

- Culver:** a dove, 378, 39, 734, 88.  
**Curat, eurats, curllets:** a cuirass, 609, 8, 552, 34, 530, 20.  
**Custom:** to be wont, 509, 7.
- Daint:** dainty, 207, 2, 318, 42, 325, *Prol.*, 2.  
**Damnify:** to injure, hurt, 223, 52, 269, 43.  
**Darrayne:** to order, manage, 476, 4; *d. battle*, *d. war*, to maintain battle, wage war, to fight, 169, 40, 242, 26, 328, 20, 444, 26.  
**Darre:** to dare, 572, 44, 325, *Prol.*, 2.  
**Date:** duration, 372, 45; term of life, 205, 45, 283, 24, 415, 35; the limit or end of life, death, 236, 44; decree, doom, 495, 38.  
**Daunt:** to discomfit, overthrow, vanquish, 17, 114, 285, 34, 336, 16; to daze, stun, 147, 18, 154, 15, 195, 21.  
**Dayes-man:** an umpire, 284, 28.  
**Daynt v. Daint.**  
**Dead:** to die, die away, 500, 20; to kill, paralyze, 623, 25, 652, 33.  
**Deare:** loving, 162, 27, 417, 1; heartfelt, earnest, 353, 22, 124, 12; earnestly, 240, 8, 244, 39, 326, 5 — grievous, sore, 310, 34, 731, 71; grievously, 263, 38, 353, 24 — injury, 191, 48.  
**Dearely:** earnestly, 353, 21; grievously, sorely, 66, 504.  
**Dearnly, dearnelie v. Dernly.**  
**Debate:** contention, 417, 1; fighting, a combat, 772, 12, 287, 54 — to fight, contend, 231, 6, 390, 14, 607, 30.  
**Debatefull:** contentious, 268, 35.  
**Debatement:** contention, 269, 39.  
**Decay:** destruction, ruin, death, 158, 41, 185, 48, 247, 15, 287, 51; (*plur.*) ruins, 115, *Envoy*.  
**Decease:** decease, 563, 11.  
**Decrew:** to decrease, 456, 18.  
**Deeme** (*pret. dempt*): to judge, sit in judgment on, 38, 137, 419, 12, 434, 4, 448, 6; to decide, determine, 38, 131, 278, 55, 498, 11; to adjudge, award, 498, 9, 428, 17; to estimate, appraise, 260, 12, 505, 8, 744, 168.  
**Deene:** din, 142, *Hunsdon*.  
**Deface:** to lay waste, destroy, 76, 399, 254, 14, 415, 32; to violate (a law), 284, 31; to disgrace, put to shame, 141, *Howard*, 162, 29, 174, 24; to defame, disparage, 441, 4, 124, 11; to abash, 283, 25; to eclipse, 255, 25.  
**Defaleted:** defeated, 31, 66.  
**Defame:** disgrace, infamy, 262, 26, 329, 27, 507, 28, 610, 15.  
**Defaste v. Deface.**  
**Defesaunce:** defeat, 225, 12.  
**Defeature:** defeat, undoing, 456, 17.  
**Defend:** to fend off, repel, 321, 63, 438, 32, 550, 19, 86, 523.  
**Deffly:** deftly, daintily, 20, 111.  
**Deflore:** to deflower, desecrate, 747, 39.  
**Deforme:** misshapen, ugly, 226, 20, 316, 24.  
**Defould, defowled:** defiled, 212, 42, 363, 38.  
**Degendered, -ing:** degenerated, -ing, 502, 2, 751, 94.  
**Delay:** to soften, smooth, 140, *Hatton*; to alay, mitigate, quench, 467, 1, 269, 40, 292, 30, 416, 42, 20, 7; to get rid of, 257, 35.  
**Delices:** delights, 262, 28, 482, 6.  
**Deliver:** nimble, 17, 76.  
**Delve:** a cavern, 342, 7, 421, 20; a dell, ravine, 271, *arg.*, 280, 4.  
**Demeane, demayne:** to treat, 695, 681, 625, 39 — demeanor, behavior, 293, 40, 283, 23, 535, 51; treatment, 616, 18.  
**Demerite:** to deserve, 712, 130.  
**Dennisse:** humble, 752, 136.  
**Dempt v. Deeme.**  
**Denay:** to deny, disown, 404, 11; to refuse, 380, 57, 649, 15.  
**Dent:** a stroke, 399, 32, 456, 15. [*v. Dint.*]  
**Depaint, depeinet:** to depict, 260, 11, 404, 7; to indicate, 19, 69.  
**Depart:** to separate, 590, 4, 298, 14; to remove, do away with, 351, 6 — departure, 375, 20.  
**Depasture:** to devour, 322, 73.  
**Depeinet v. Depaint.**  
**Deprive:** to take away, 729, 63.  
**Derdoing:** doing daring deeds, 272, 10. [*Cf. Derring doe.*]  
**Dernfull:** dismal, 706, 90.  
**Dernly, dearnly:** dismally, grievously, 235, 35, 327, 14, 415, 34, 681, 196.  
**Derring doe:** daring deeds, daring, intrepidity, 45, 65, 53, 43, 257, 42.  
**Derring doers:** doers of daring deeds, 431, 38.  
**Deserve:** to describe, 657, 21.  
**Desine:** to denote, express, 438, 37, 542, 8, 731, 74; to point, aim, 464, 30.  
**Despiteous, dispitous:** malicious, pitiless, 279, 62, 154, 15, 385, 28; piteous, 548, 8 — -ly, pitilessly, 267, 29.  
**Desse:** a desk, 488, 50.  
**Desslgment:** undertaking, 307, 10.  
**Desynde v. Desine.**  
**Detaine:** detention, 538, 15.  
**Devise:** to depict, 235, 31; to resolve, 267, 30; to conjecture, guess, 294, 42, 330, 33, 398, 21; to think, deliberate, 226, 18, 621, 6, 607, 34; to describe, recount, to tell (of), 25, 174, 137, 126, 331, 42, 467, 3, 226, 14, 296, 59; to discourse, converse, 266, 21.  
**Devoyr:** duty, 42, 227.  
**Devyse v. Devise.**  
**Dewfull:** due, fitting, 665, 35, 496, 44.  
**Dight** (*pret., pp., dight*): to deal with, treat, 39, 7, 505, 14; to dispose, 338, 30; to compose (poetry), 19, 29; to frame, 29, 45; to do, 510, 18; to set in order, arrange, 166, 14; to dress, array, deck, 656, 15, 308, 17, 233, 18, 165, 6; to put on (armor, etc.), 186, 8, 595, 39; 'fowly d.,' to defile, 199, 48, 259, 4; to prepare, make ready, 280, 6, 276, 42, 201, 13, 93, 233; to betake (oneself to), to direct (oneself towards), 420, 16, 527, 43; to proffer, 306, 2; to raise, 194, 18.  
**Dillate:** to spread out, 320, 53.  
**Dint:** a stroke, 147, 18, 191, 47, 285, 38, 49, 104. [*Cf. Dent*] — to wound, 645, 31.  
**Dirke:** dark, darkly, 39, 6, 41, 102 — to darken, obscure, 13, 134.  
**Disadvaunee, dislavaunce:** to draw back, 441, 7, 434, 8; to stop short in, retreat from, 406, 24.  
**Disaventure, disaventure:** misfortune, 205, 45, 315, 19; at d., at random, blindly, 357, 53.  
**Disaventurous, disaventerous, disadventrous:** unfortunate, unhappy, 191, 48, 200, 11, 527, 47, 91, 100.



**Disceid:** cut in two, 422, 27.  
**Discipled:** trained, 417, 1.  
**Discolour:** many-colored, 168, 31, 398, 21, 407, 28, 409, 47, 736, 51.  
**Discounsel:** to dissuade, 317, 34, 327, 11.  
**Discoure, disoure:** to discover, find out, 337, 20; to reveal, 294, 42, 348, 50.  
**Discourteise:** discourteous, 333, 55.  
**Disoure v. Discoure.**  
**Discust:** shaken off, 332, 48.  
**Disease:** uneasiness, discomfort, distress, 539, 26, 614, 40, 361, 19, 423, 38 — to disturb, incommode, distress, 33, 124, 240, 12, 242, 24, 221, 38, 600, 32.  
**Disentrayle:** to beat out, draw forth, 557, 19, 456, 16, 437, 28.  
**Dishable:** to disparage, 261, 21.  
**Disherit:** to disinherit, 6, 117.  
**Disleall:** disloyal, 259, 5.  
**Dislikefull:** distasteful, 481, 40.  
**Disloignd:** remote, 485, 24.  
**Dismay:** assault (?), 734, 87; disaster, overthrow, 440, 50, 514, 50, 729, 63 — to stagger, discomfit, overthrow, defeat (in fight), 259, 7, 509, 8, 530, 19, 353, 25, 418, 2, 642, 13; to overpower, vanquish, 251, 42, 364, 43, 449, 13; (*reflex.*) to be distressed, 423, 40; dismayd, dejected, afflicted, 293, 37, 369, 28, 423, 37 — misshaped, deformed (?), 307, 11.  
**Dispace:** (*intrans.* and *reflex.*) to roam about, 83, 265, 119, 250.  
**Dispainted:** painted diversely, 295, 50.  
**Disparage:** an unequal match, 474, 50 — to discourage, 296, 2.  
**Disparagement:** an unequal match, inequality in marriage, 383, 12, 462, 16, 646, 37.  
**Dispence:** expenditure, liberality, 292, 29, 318, 42, 573, 45 — to make amends (for), 162, 30.  
**Dispiteous v. Despiteous.**  
**Disple:** to discipline, 210, 27.  
**Displeasance:** displeasure, 300, 28.  
**Dispost:** regulated, 283, 26.  
**Disthronize:** to dethrone, 302, 44.  
**Distort:** distorted, 422, 28, 581, 36.  
**Distracte:** torn asunder, 31, 50.  
**Distraine:** to distress, 190, 38; to rend, 324, 82.  
**Distraughted:** distracted, 754, 14.  
**Distroubled:** greatly troubled, 351, 12.  
**Dite v. Dight.**  
**Ditt:** a ditty, 265, 13.  
**Do, doe, dooe, doen, done, donne, doon:** (a) to put, to do on, do off, 103, 1062, 596, 48; do away, 164, 39, 339, 33, 356, 48, 651, 29; (b) to make, cause to: do him rew, do him fall, etc., 234, 25, 279, 64, 247, 12; do to die, done be dead, etc., 90, 10, 187, 14, 197, 36, 198, 45, 206, 54, 525, 29; to cause, or procure, 365, 50; (c) to act, 383, 13.  
**Dolour:** physical pain, 364, 41, 377, 35.  
**Dome v. Doome.**  
**Done, donne, dooe, doon v. Do.**  
**Doole:** pain, grief, lamentation, 405, 17, 397, 17, 467, 3 — full: doleful, 268, 34.  
**Doome, dome:** judgment, opinion, 139, *Hoby-noll*, 139, *H. B.*, 141, *Gray*, 484, 21 — to give judgment, 562, 4.  
**Doubt, dout:** to hesitate, 374, 11, 424, 48, 27,

42; to be afraid, fear, 387, 47, 48; to fear for, 432, 46 — hesitation (to act), 34, 232; apprehension, fear, 419, 8, 416, 37, 403, 59, 360, 12, 569, 18; danger, 573, 47; make d., to hesitate, 343, 14; be out of d., to be convinced, 51, 22.

**Doucperre:** (i. e. one of the twelve peers of Charlemagne) a champion, 399, 31.

**Doure:** a dower, 522, 8.

**Dout v. Doubt.**

**Drad:** dreaded, dread, 413, 18, 571, 32; feared for, 38, 50.

**Drapets:** cloths, 291, 27.

**Dreare, drere:** gloom, sadness, sorrow, 198, 40, 566, 35, 596, 46, 597, 4; horribleness (?), 472, 42.

**Drearing:** sorrowing, 680, 189.

**Drearyhead, drerihedd, dryrihedd:** sorrow, horror, dismalness, 327, 16, 333, 62, 338, 30, 121, 347.

**Dreed:** dread, 238, 52.

**Dreeriment v. Dreriment.**

**Drenched, drent:** submerged, 221, 34, 279, 61; drowned, 495, 38, 48, 37.

**Drere, drerihedd v. Dreare, drearyhead.**

**Dreriment:** gloom, 193, 9, 271, 1; torpor (?), 267, 27; anguish, 48, 36, 220, 32, 232, 15; horror, terror, 158, 44, 256, 31, 464, 29.

**Drevill:** a sloven, 426, 3.

**Drive, driv'd:** drove, struck, pushed, 204, 38, 355, 37, 378, 40, 568, 5, 639, 32; driven, 667, 50; hastened, 238, 55.

**Drousyhed:** drowsiness, 153, 7.

**Droyle:** to drudge, 92, 157.

**Dryrihed v. Drearyhead.**

**Duefull v. Dewfull.**

**Dumpish:** heavy, spiritless, 718, 4, 426, 5.

**Durefull:** enduring, durable, 487, 39, 718, 6.

**Each:** each other, 414, 24; e. other, e. others, each the other, each the other's, 172, 6, 219, 21, 154, 17, 166, 14.

**Earne, erne:** to yearn, 145, 3, 201, 18, 252, 46, 398, 21.

**Earst, erst:** first, 33, 164, 250, 33; previously, formerly, a while before or ago, 183, 40, 184, 42, 194, 18, 230, 2, 250, 32 — at earst, at first, 234, 29; at length, already, 254, 14, 502, 2, 39, 6, 54, 105; instantly, suddenly, 257, 39, 270, 49.

**Eath, ethc:** easy, 40, 17, 33, 90, 251, 40, 253, 11; ready, apt, 459, 40.

**Edify:** to build, 67, 551, 149, 34, 328, 20; settle (a country), 327, 14.

**Ekke, eke:** to increase, 40, 30, 177, 42, 339, 35, 581, 35.

**Efflerce:** to make fierce, 407, 27. [Cf. *Enflerce.*]

**Efforce:** to force, force open, carry by force, 275, 30, 389, 9; to violate, 179, 4; to constrain, compel, 318, 43, 416, 43; to intensify, emphasize, 336, 15, 561, 47 — efforced: strained, 280, 4.

**Effray:** to frighten, scare, 147, 16.

**Eft:** again, 436, 21; now . . . eft, now . . . then, 286, 41; (as frequent connective in narration) then, forthwith, 202, 25, 248, 21, 311, 36, 460, 45, 506, 21, 519, 27; moreover, likewise, 634, 1, 665, 30, 42, 191; afterwards, 254, 18.

**Eftsoone, eftsoones:** soon after, presently, forthwith, 233, 17, 137, 167, 152, 3, 210, 24, 216, 4.

**Elne v. Eyen.**

- Elles:** else, 387, 48.  
**Embrace v. Embase.**  
**Embar:** to confine, imprison, 156, 31, 191, 44, 405, 16.  
**Embase:** to lower, 720, 13; to humble, degrade, 733, 82, 375, 15, 583, 3, 616, 20, 99, 732; to discredit, disgrace, 327, 12, 392, 33.  
**Embattelled:** armed for battle, 258, 2.  
**Embay:** to bathe, steep, imbrue, 768, 44, 367, 7, 210, 27, 236, 40, 321, 60, 413, 21, 119, 206; to pervade, suffuse, 287, 55, 201, 13.  
**Embayld:** enclosed, 249, 27.  
**Embleme:** a motto, e. g. 10.  
**Embosse:** to encase, sheathe, 161, 24, 334, 64, 608, 40, 219, 20.  
**Embost:** (of a hunted animal) driven to extremity, exhausted, 328, 22, 413, 17, 203, 29.  
**Emboyl:** to boil, 220, 28, 253, 9.  
**Embrave:** to beautify, adorn, 114, 29, 49, 109, 239, 60.  
**Embreaded:** braided, 368, 18.  
**Embrew, imbrew:** to stain, to stain with blood, 742, 13, 727, 53, 633, 40, 368, 17; (of a weapon) to shed blood, to stain itself (in blood), 183, 38, 221, 36; to steep, plunge (a weapon in), 415, 32, 113, 24; to saturate (with), 751, 47; to shed (blood, etc.), 346, 38, 504, *arg.*, 263, 33.  
**Embusled:** busied, 464, 29.  
**Eme:** uncle, 302, 47.  
**Emeraudes:** emeralds, 320, 54.  
**Emmove, enmove:** to affect, agitate, stir up, 155, 21, 190, 38, 205, 48, 237, 50; to be moved, 467, 3.  
**Emong, emongst:** among, amongst, 315, 10, 295, 52.  
**Empare:** to impair, 215, 63.  
**Emparlanee:** parley, 480, 31, 528, 50.  
**Empassionate (pp.):** impassioned, 681, 193, 561, 46.  
**Empeach, impeach:** to hinder, impede, 87, 576, 197, 34, 305, 68, 405, 12, 486, 36; to impair, mar, 273, 15 — obstruction or impairment, 320, 56.  
**Emperlished:** enfeebled, ruined, 12, 53, 376, 20.  
**Emperee, empierce:** to pierce, transfix, 239, 1, 286, 45, 361, 19, 393, 39.  
**Empight:** implanted, 361, 20, 562, 8; fixed itself (in), 258, 46, 434, 10.  
**Emplonged:** plunged (into), 397, 17.  
**-en:** a very frequent termination to verbal forms, e. g. 184, 42, 215, 64, 555, 4, 41, 114.  
**Enaunter:** lest, 14, 200, 24, 78.  
**Encheare:** to cheer, 664, 24.  
**Encheason:** cause, reason, motive, 24, 147, 41, 116, 234, 30.  
**Endevourment:** endeavor, 94, 298.  
**Endew, indew:** to take in, 'inwardly digest,' 396, 9; to endow, 171, 51.  
**Endlong:** from end to end, continuously, 395, 51, 397, 19.  
**Endosse:** to inscribe, 694, 632, 574, 53.  
**Ene:** any, 54, 93.  
**Enfelon'd:** made furious, 554, 48.  
**Enfested:** embittered, 121, 354.  
**Enfleree:** to make fierce, 253, 8. [Cf. *Effierce*.]  
**Enfoldred:** thunderous, 221, 40.  
**Enfrosen:** congealed, 744, 146.  
**Enfyred:** hardened as by fire, 744, 169.  
**Engine:** a device, plot, wiles, 233, 23, 255, 27, 195, 23, 333, 57, 396, 7.  
**Engore:** to gore, wound, 330, 38, 621, 9, 362, 28; to goad, 286, 42; to shed (blood), 387, 48.  
**Engrafted, engraft:** ingrafted, implanted, 337, 17, 344, 18, 427, 10.  
**Engrained:** dyed in grain, 13, 131, 88, 666.  
**Engrieved, engreeved:** grieved, afflicted, 255, 23, 333, 59, 369, 21, 632, 34.  
**Enhance:** to raise, exalt, 147, 17, 177, 47, 268, 31, 277, 44, 691, 359.  
**Enlumne:** to illuminate, give light to, 288, 4, 503, 7, 730, 66, 5, 98.  
**Enmove v. Emmove.**  
**Enraice:** to implant, 365, 52, 644, 25, 748, 114.  
**Enrange:** to dispose, draw up, 761, 122, 411, 5, 218, 13, 242, 21; to rove, 591, 9.  
**Enrackle:** to envenom, 381, 2.  
**Enriven:** riven, 552, 34.  
**Ensamle:** to give an example of, 136, 30, 753, 213.  
**Enseame:** to bring together (in), 494, 35.  
**Ensew, enseven, ensue:** to follow, pursue, 63, 266, 476, 5, 404, 5, 143, *Norris*, 174, 25; to persecute, afflict, 205, 44, 732, 79; to imitate, 320, 59; to follow after, succeed, 752, 121; to result from, 169, 34; to appertain to, 245, 2.  
**Ensnarle:** to ensnare, 556, 9.  
**Entayld:** carved, cut, 249, 27, 267, 29.  
**Entayle:** carving, 271, 4.  
**Enterdeale:** mutual dealing, negotiation, 100, 735, 550, 21.  
**Enterprls, enterprize:** to undertake, 191, 45, 233, 19, 400, 40, 406, 24, 501, 28 — to receive as guest, 241, 14.  
**Entertalne:** to maintain, 95, 398; to treat (well or ill), 164, 43; to engage the attention of, hence, to hoodwink, 483, 13, 638, 25, 181, 1; to receive, welcome, accept, 388, 3, 393, 42, 382, 4, 211, 32, 225, 12, 289, 6, 563, 12; to encounter, 87, 563; to take, enter upon, 606, 24, 720, 12 — entertainment, reception, 470, 27, 559, 37, 104, 1085.  
**Entertake:** to receive, 559, 35.  
**Entertayne v. Entertain.**  
**Entre:** pure, absolute, 340, 44; sincere, 477, 13; inner, inward, secret, 719, 6, 470, 23, 473, 48, 332, 47, 375, 16 — wholly, completely, 282, 15; heart and soul, 259, 8 — -ly: earnestly, 220, 32, 395, 51, 623, 22.  
**Entitle, entitule:** to dedicate (a book), 1, *title*, 769, 76.  
**Entraille:** coiling, a coil, 147, 16.  
**Entrall:** entrails, 313, 6, 316, 25.  
**Entrayld, entrailled:** entwined, interlaced, 249, 27, 409, 46, 36, 30, 760, 25.  
**Entreat, intrcat:** to treat (a person well or ill), 207, 7, 483, 10, 588, 40; to treat (of a subject), 407, 29, 504, 1, 762, 1; to persuade, 210, 24.  
**Entyre v. Entire.**  
**Enure, lnure:** to put in practice, to use, exercise, 735, 53, 721, 21, 771, 26, 430, 29; to commit (a crime), 560, 39; enured with, accustomed to, 629, 14.  
**Envy:** hatred, indignation, 393, 38, 356, 47, 328, 18, 7, 300 — to be indignant, 740, 376; to begrudge, 199, 1, 272, 8, 289, 7, 365, 50 — to vie with, emulate, 154, 17, 327, 13.

**Enwallowed** (*pp.*): rolled or tumbled (in), 354, 34, 569, 14.

**Equalize**: to be equal to, to rival, 113, 26, 394, 44.

**Erne v. Earne.**

**Erst v. Earst.**

**Esloyne**: (*reflex.*) to keep aloof (from), 167, 20.

**Essoyne**: excuse, 167, 20.

**Eugh**: yew, 146, 9.

**Eughen**: yewen, of yew, 99, 747, 218, 19.

**Every**: any, 637, 23; every one, 262, 32, 263, 33.

**Ewftes**: efts, newts, 564, 23.

**Ewghen v. Eughen.**

**Expert**: to experience, 50, 186.

**Extent** (*pp.*): extended, 279, 61.

**Extinet** (*pp.*): cut off, killed, 408, 37.

**Extirpe**: to root out, 310, 25.

**Extort** (*pp.*): extorted, 508, 5, 519, 30.

**Extreate**: extraction, 561, 1.

**Exul**: an exile, 698, 894.

**Eyas**: (of hawks) newly fledged, 221, 34, 750, 24.

**Eyen, eyne, eïne**: eyes, 138, *Another*, 165, 204.

**Eyght**: eighth, 46, 12.

**Fact**: a deed, especially an evil deed, 169, 34, 204, 37, 385, 32, 393, 38.

**Fade, vade**: to decay, fall off, etc., 727, 51, 112, 20 (*bis*), 513, 40 (*bis*), 185, 4; to attenuate, 391, 20.

**Falne, fayne**: glad, 12, 67, 180, 12; eager, 458, 33; well-disposed, 589, 46 — gladly, 470, 27; eagerly, heartily, 99, 116; of necessity, perforce, 85, 419 — to take pleasure, to delight, 581, 36, 322, 74; to desire, 754, 6, 391, 24, 447, 47, 535, 53; to attempt, 506, 22, 597, 9 — [= feign] to fashion, 633, 44; to plan, 551, 24; to imagine, to imagine falsely, to err, 740, 414, 745, 210, 216, 657, 19, 462, 15; to conceal, dissemble, 225, 10, 248, 20, 337, 17.

**Faitour v. Faytour.**

**Fall**: fallen, 41, 147.

**False**: to forge, 230, 1; to break (faith), 29, 241, 205, 46, 319, 44; to deceive, 156, 30, 332, 47; f. blows, to feint, 259, 9.

**Falser**: a deceiver, a cheat, 26, 305, 56, *Epi-logue*.

**Falshedd**: treachery, 83, 246.

**Farforth**: to a great extent, 395, 53.

**Fault**: to sin, 307, 9; to be in error, 8, 58; to be deficient, 6, 205.

**Favourlesse**: unpropitious, 289, 7.

**Fay**: faith, 41, 107, 550, 19.

**Fayl**: to default in (a trust), 500, 23; to deceive, 260, 11, 409, 46.

**Fayne v. Falne.**

**Faytour, faytor**: a fortune-telling vagabond, an impostor, cheat, villain, 23, 39, 228, 35, 234, 30, 336, 13, 424, 44, 603, 1.

**Feare**: to make afraid, 212, 42, 316, 25, 352, 15, 662, 15; to impel by fear, 729, 59. [*v. also Fere.*]

**Feateously**: deftly, 760, 27.

**Feature**: make, form, character, 199, 49, 391, 21, 529, 12, 432, 44.

**Fee**: property, revenue, 24, 106, 547, 43, 477, 13, 212, 43; employment, service, 691, 370, 644, 21; a prize, a reward, 272, 9, 278, 56, 423, 35, 482, 3.

**Feebled**: weakened, 195, 23.

**Feeblesse**: feebleness, 472, 37.

**Fell**: to prostrate (oneself), 268, 32; be feld, to prostrate oneself, to let fall, to fall, 670, 13, 318, 40, 199, 47 — gall, rancor, 403, 2.

**Felon**: a villain, 162, 29, 284, 30.

**Felonous**: fierce, cruel, wicked, 13, 156, 83, 295, 334, 65, 486, 33.

**Fensible**: capable of being defended, strong, 291, 21, 396, 10.

**Feree, -ly**: fierce, fiercely, 163, 35, 241, 19.

**Fere, feare, pheere**: a companion, a mate, 139, 6, 630, 25, 440, 52, 207, 4, 706, 100.

**Fett** (*pret., pp. fet*): to fetch, 326, 8, 517, 11, 117, 77.

**Fewter, feuter**: to put (a spear) in rest, 455, 10, 447, 45.

**Fifte**: fifth, 168, 32.

**Fine**: end, 438, 37; result, 321, 59.

**Finesse**: fineness, 20, 135.

**Firme**: to fix, 271, 1.

**Fit**: a seizure, throe, impulse, 68, 598, 183, 37, 220, 27, 342, 1, 371, 41, 458, 30; furious f., merry f., an access of fury, of mirth, etc., 169, 34, 180, 11, 254, 14, 266, 21; a mood, 170, 45, 217, 7 — to be suitable, 728, 54, 45, 88, 240, 11; f. with, to harmonize with, be becoming to, 593, 24, 197, 33.

**Flag**: (of wings) to beat weakly, 140, *Essex*, 754, 27.

**Flaggy**: sagging, perhaps also pliant, 217, 10, 371, 39, 354, 33, 123, 5.

**Flame**: to set on fire, inflame, 390, 18, 505, 14, 264, 8.

**Flasket**: a long, shallow basket, 760, 26.

**Fleet**: to float, 272, 14, 315, 14, 480, 33, 690, 286; to flow, 694, 596; to run away, 389, 7.

**Flex**: flax, 332, 47.

**Flit**: fleet, 140, *Essex*, 257, 38, 266, 20; light, unsubstantial, 333, 56, 403, 57 — to shift, 728, 54, 165, 5 — flitted, departed, 725, 40, 319, 44.

**Flitting**: fleeting, moving, 750, 24, 280, 2; shifting, unstable, 218, 18.

**Flore, floure, flowre**: a floor, 292, 34; the ground, 286, 42, 297, 10, 609, 5, 621, 8, 721, 20.

**Flourdelice**: the heraldic fleur-de-lis, 558, 27.

**Floure**: to flower, 393, 39. [*v. also Flore.*]

**Flowre v. Flore.**

**Foen v. Fone.**

**Foltring**: faltering, 237, 47, 405, 12.

**Fon**: a foolish fellow, 12, 69, 40, 68, 690, 292.

**Fond**: found, e. g. 288, 56.

**Fone, foen**: foes, 155, 23, 247, 13, 283, 8, 297, 10.

**Fonly**: foolishly, 23, 58.

**Food**: feud, enmity, 193, 9, 231, 3.

**Foolhardize**: foolhardiness, 241, 17, 258, 42, 346, 35.

**Forby v. Foreby.**

**Force**: to strive, 242, 25, 277, 51, 384, 26, 19, 24.

**Fordo**: to overthrow, ruin, 576, 3, 237, 51, 211, 33.



- Fordonne:** reduced to extremes, exhausted, 177, 41, 346, 34, 732, 80 — ruin, 448, 7.
- Foreby, forby:** beside, hard by, 183, 39, 211, 36, 515, 54; past, 327, 15; by, 569, 17.
- Forelend v. Forlend.**
- Forelie:** to lie before, 249, 29.
- Forelift:** to raise in front, 218, 15.
- Forepast:** gone by, by-gone, 67, 576, 72, 104, 137, 121, 550, 21.
- Forercad:** to presage, 116, 29.
- Foresay:** to renounce, 24, 82; to exclude, 32, 69.
- Foreshew:** to prescribe, 674, 45.
- Forespent:** already spent, past, 205, 43.
- Forestall v. Forstall.**
- Foretaught:** taught aforetime, 187, 18.
- Forewent:** gone before, 33, 117.
- Forgery:** deceit, fraud, 317, 28, 332, 53, 520, 39, 575, 56.
- Forgive:** to grant, 619, 36, 622, 12; to give over (to), 637, 22.
- Forgo:** to forsake, 702, 174, 90, 22, 359, 10, 553, 40; to fall away from, 421, 24; to lose, let slip, 247, 12, 455, 11, 601, 39.
- Forhalle:** to harass, 42, 243.
- Forhent:** overtaken, 356, 49.
- Forlend, forelend:** to relinquish, give over (to), 356, 47, 434, 6.
- Forlore:** lost, 250, 31; abandoned, deserted, 320, 52, 373, 53, 395, 52, 487, 40; perverse, depraved, 575, 61, 209, 21; undone, 197, 39.
- Forlorne:** brought to naught, undone, ruined, 245, *arg.*, 263, 35, 174, 23, 469, 15, 123, 6.
- Former:** fore, front, 484, 20, 615, 10, 658, 29, 625, 40.
- Formerly:** first, beforehand, 313, 1, 588, 38, 601, 38.
- Forpass:** to pass along, pass by, 398, 20, 97, 519.
- Forpined:** wasted away, 403, 57.
- Forslack:** to neglect, 576, 3, 635, 3, 656, 12; to cause neglect of, 674, 45.
- Forslow:** to delay, impede, 483, 15, 662, 16, 31, 119.
- Forspent:** wasted, 452, 34.
- Forstall, forestall:** to beset (a way), bar (entrance), 289, 11, 331, 46, 484, 17; to obstruct, hinder, prevent, 478, 19, 652, 31, 26, 273; *f. of*, to deprive of, hinder in, 448, 9, 534, 47, 42, 231; to pre-occupy, pre-engage, 577, 4, 257, 39.
- Forswatt:** covered with sweat, 19, 99.
- Forswonck:** exhausted with labor, 19, 99.
- Forthinke:** to think better of, 499, 14; to deplore, 607, 32.
- Forthy:** therefore, 25, 221, 329, 30, 279, 65; therefor, because of that, 16, 37, 33, 71, 378, 38.
- Fortillage:** a fortalice, 318, 43.
- Fortunesse:** unlucky, 470, 27, 91, 100.
- Forwander:** to wander aimlessly or astray, 183, 34, 406, 20.
- Forwarn:** to forfend, 155, 18, 359, 9.
- Forwaste:** to lay utterly waste, 145, 5, 216, 1, 303, 52.
- Forwearied:** exhausted with fatigue, 149, 32, 201, 13, 209, 17.
- Forwhy:** for the reason that, because, 341, 49, 499, 15, 512, 32, 602, 4, 617, 21.
- Forworne:** worn out, 183, 35.
- Foster:** a forester, 327, 17, 358, *arg.*, 360, 13.
- Mouldring:** thunderous, 242, 20.
- Fowle:** ugly, hideous, 180, 15, 175, 30, 307, 5; shamefully, 178, 48.
- Fowly:** foully, severely, 185, 5, 698, 908.
- Foyle:** to trample, 572, 33.
- Foyn:** to thrust or lunge, 259, 9, 286, 47, 437, 25.
- Foyson:** abundance, 706, 98.
- Fraight:** fraught, 40, 84, 228, 35.
- Frame:** to train, discipline, 680, 124, 213, 45; to direct, steady (one's steps), 328, 20, 196, 30; (*reflex.*) to apply oneself, 241, 16; to be in harmony (with), 708, 35 — order, condition, 44, 25, 36, 3.
- Franchisement:** liberation, 572, 36.
- Franton:** a free-living gallant, 244, 37; a quean, 518, 22.
- Fray:** to make afraid, 343, 12, 150, 38, 152, 52, 161, 19, 318, 40.
- Free:** of gentle birth and breeding, noble, generous, gracious, 331, 44, 482, 3.
- Frenne:** a stranger, 19, 28.
- Fresh:** to refresh, 534, 45, 678, 26.
- Frett:** to gnaw, to rend, 244, 34, 184, 44.
- Fro:** from, 237, 48.
- Fromwarde:** turned away, 22, 169.
- Fronne:** frozen, 14, 243.
- Froxy:** frosty, 386, 35.
- Froward:** turned away, 644, 24.
- Frowy:** 'musty or mossy' (*E. K.*), 33, 111, 385, 30.
- Fry:** to burn, be tormented (in fire, or in passion), 176, 33, 238, 58, 723, 32; to boil, foam, 319, 45, 510, 15.
- Funerall:** death, 155, 20, 262, 25; a monument, 108, 3.
- Furniment:** equipment, 438, 38.
- Furnitures:** accoutrements, trappings, 116, 56, 137, 164, 327, 11, 375, 18.
- Furre:** far, 7, 259.
- Fyne:** to sift out, 54, 125.
- Gainstrive:** to resist, 254, 14, 462, 12.
- Galage:** a wooden shoe, 14, 244, 41, 131.
- Gallimaufrey:** an utter jumble, 6, 129.
- Gan v. Gin.**
- Gang:** to walk, go, 16, 57, 41, 100.
- Garre:** to make, cause to, 18, 1, 41, 106.
- Gastfull:** ghastly, 38, 170.
- Gate:** a way, path, 146, 13, 315, 17, 56, *Epi-logue*; a going, course, steps, 354, 32, 196, 30, 97, 600, 388, 51; gait, manner of walking, 194, 12, 103, 1084 — a goat, 25, 177 — got, 730, 66.
- Gazefull:** absorbed in gazing, 485, 28, 746, 12.
- Geare, gere:** material, matter, 496, 45, 658, 28; business, an affair, 597, 6, 568, 10, 551, 30.
- Geason:** uncommon, 90, 12; extravagant, 608, 37.
- Gelly blood:** clotted blood, 355, 40.
- Gelt:** a lunatic, 463, 21 — gold or gilt metal, 12, 65.
- Gemmes:** buds, 759, 14.
- Gent:** of gentle or high birth; hence, of knights, brave, courteous, etc., of ladies, gracious, gentle, etc., 203, 27, 356, 45, 331, 44, 308, 17, 200, 6, 234, 30, 303, 52.

**Gentlesse:** gentleness, 603, 3.  
**Gere v. Geare.**  
**German:** a brother, 172, 10, 173, 13, 286, 46.  
**Gerne:** to bare the teeth, snarl, 578, 15.  
**Gest:** a deed, exploit, 102, 978, 482, 4, 334, 1 — bearing, carriage, 338, 24, 27, 382, 8; a gesture, 291, 26, 605, 14.  
**Gether:** to gather, 20, 152.  
**Ghost:** spirit, soul, 172, 11, 236, 42, 286, 45, 682, 265, 84, 337 — *-ly*: spiritual, 93, 280, 96, 479.  
**Gleft:** gift, giving, 563, 14.  
**Gllden:** golden, 16, 82; gilded, 673, 33, 594, 33, 595, 44.  
**Gln, glhne, gynne** (*pret. gan*): to begin (usually followed by *infin.* with or without *to*), 11, 2, 12, 39, 44, 25, 10, 73, 75, 179, 9, 227, 24, 429, 24. **gan** (auxiliary followed by *infin.* without *to*) = did, 208, 12, 202, 21, 154, 15, 282, 15. **gln** = do (?), 219, 21. [*Cf. Can.*]  
**Glpsen:** a gipsy, 91, 86.  
**Glrland, glrlond:** a garland, e.g. 167, 22, 172, 5.  
**Glust:** a joust, tilt, 145, 1, 44, 39 — to joust, 419, 11.  
**Glaive, glave:** a kind of halbert, a blade fixed to a staff, 575, 58; a spear, a sword, used also of a club, 745, 233, 484, 19, 464, 28.  
**Glee:** cheer, welcome, 209, 15, 602, 43, 619, 41, 26, 282.  
**Gllms:** a glimpse, 757, 221; gleams, glimmering, 540, 29, 634, 48.  
**Glltterand:** glittering, 33, 177, 166, 16, 189, 29.  
**Gnarre:** to snarl, 176, 34.  
**Goe:** gone, 33, 118.  
**Goodllhead:** goodness, comeliness, 593, 25, 339, 38; (as a form of address,) 250, 33, 13, 184, 26, 270.  
**Gore blood:** clotted blood, 236, 39, 600, 27; gore bloody, 658, 28.  
**Gored:** bloodied, 284, 32.  
**Gourmandlze:** gluttony, 632, 38, 645, 34.  
**Governall:** management, 319, 48.  
**Governaunce:** order, 301, 38; self-control, behavior, 253, 7, 234, 29, 63, 270, 121, 384.  
**Grace:** to be gracious to, 215, 64, 638, 28, 644, 26, 657, 16, 748, 116.  
**Gracelesse:** lacking favor, 37, 113; merciless, cruel, 434, 8, 578, 18.  
**Grafted:** grafted, 14, 242.  
**Graft:** grafted, 698, 918.  
**Gralle:** gravel, 185, 6, 557, 19, 127, 12.  
**Gramercy:** many thanks, 277, 50, 289, 9.  
**Gramplement:** grappling, 310, 29.  
**Graste:** *pret.* of **Grace**, q. v.  
**Grayle v. Gralle.**  
**Greave:** a thicket, 595, 43; a tree, 401, 42.  
**Gree:** rank, 34, 215 — favor, 173, 16, 246, 5; take (or receive) *in gree*, to accept with good will, take in good part, 140, *Oxford*, 613, 39, 539, 21.  
**Greete:** to weep, mourn, 18, 1 — mourning, weeping, 37, 66.  
**Grelsly v. Grlesly.**  
**Grin:** to grin, show the teeth, 180, 11, 463, 24, 658, 27.  
**Grilde v. Gryde.**  
**Grlefull:** sorrowful, 420, 16.

**Grlesly, grelsly, grlsely, gryesly:** grisly, horrible, grim, 202, 21, 310, 29, 313, 6, 317, 35, 73, 185, 84, 326.

**Grlesy, gryse, gryesy:** horrible, hideous, grim, 204, 35, 266, 18, 308, 12, 334, 67, 413, 19.

**Grpice:** griping, grasping, 604, 6, 168, 31 — a grip, 509, 14.

**Grlsely v. Grlesly.**

**Gronfull:** lugubrious, 312, 42.

**Groome:** a stock term for shepherds and their men, 687, 12, 16, 62, 653, 40; a serving-man, retainer, 209, 17, 229, 37, 505, 12.

**Groyn:** to growl, 658, 27.

**Grudge:** to murmur, be discontented, chafe, 155, 19, 236, 42, 665, 35; to chafe at, 267, 30 — resentment, 480, 32, 358, 61.

**Grudgefull:** resentful, 470, 28.

**Grutch:** to murmur, repine, 244, 34.

**Gryde** (*pp. gryde*): to pierce, transfix, 285, 36, 333, 62, 339, 37, 392, 29, 11, 4.

**Gryesly v. Grlesly.**

**Gryesy, gryse v. Grlesy.**

**Guarish:** to cure, 364, 41, 437, 29.

**Gulle, guyen:** to deceive, 332, 54, 389, 7.

**Guller:** a deceiver, 400, 37, 279, 64.

**Gulse:** style, 482, 6, 538, 20; custom, habit, 590, 6, 316, 21; mode of life, conduct, comportment, 330, 33, 570, 19, 167, 20, 182, 25, 226, 14, 608, 2; external appearance, 321, 66.

**Gulfe:** maw, 41, 185.

**Gurmandlze v. Gourmandlze.**

**Guylen, guylar v. Guile, guller.**

**Gyeld:** a guild-hall, 276, 43.

**Gylden v. Gllden.**

**Gynne, gynst v. Gln.**

**Habergeon:** a sleeveless jacket of mail armor, 267, 29, 349, 57, 361, 19, 362, 31, 427, 15, 528, 2.

**Habillty:** wealth, means, 597, 7.

**Habtaunce:** dwelling-place, 271, 7.

**Halle v. Hayle.**

**Hale:** health, welfare, 701, 103.

**Halfen:** half, imperfect, 396, 5.

**Halfendeale:** half, 395, 53.

**Han:** have, 46, 119, 23, 49.

**Happely, happly:** by chance, haply, 16, 31, 523, 21, 230, 3, 138, 207.

**Harbrough:** a place of shelter, 29, 19.

**Hard:** heard, 93, 267, 291, 25.

**Hardyhed:** hardihood, 4, *To His Booke*, 116, 27.

**Haske:** a wicker basket for fish, 48, 16.

**Hastly, hastely:** hastily, 156, 29, 398, 23.

**Hauberck, haubergh, hauberque:** a long coat of chain mail, 286, 44, 352, 16, 437, 30.

**Haught, hault:** lofty, 182, 29; haughty, 593, 23.

**Haulst:** embraced, 440, 49.

**Hault v. Haught.**

**Haviour, haveour:** 'the whole deportment of a man, physical and moral, as controlled by the mind' (Herford), 19, 66, 41, 106, 373, 52; bearing, 241, 15, 411, 3.

**Hayle:** to hale, drag, 253, 8, 385, 31, 553, 39.

**Haynous:** odious, 585, 18.

**Hazardlze:** peril, 315, 19.

**Hazardry:** dicing, gaming, 333, 57; rashness, 260, 13.

- Headlessehood:** heedlessness, 12, 86.  
**Heame:** home, 49, 98.  
**Heard:** a herdsman, keeper of cattle or sheep, 635, 4, 636, 10, 652, 37.  
**Heardgroom:** a keeper of cattle or sheep, 12, 35, 653, 39.  
**Heare:** hair, 161, 22, 154, 11, 189, 32.  
**Hearie:** hairy, 327, 16.  
**Hearse v. Herse.**  
**Heast:** a hest, command, 187, 18; a vow, 658, 24.  
**Heaviness:** animosity, 172, 6; grief, misery, 272, 12, 547, 44, 75, 366, 678, 32.  
**Heben:** ebony, 128, 2; of ebony, ebon, 144, 3, 190, 37, 454, 6.  
**Heednesse:** heedfulness, 540, 34, 617, 26.  
**Heedy:** heedful, 41, 167, 556, 13.  
**Hefte** (*pret.* of heave): lifted, 221, 39; hurled, 435, 12.  
**Hem:** them, 24, 147, 26, 304.  
**Hend:** to grasp, 571, 27.  
**Henge:** a hinge, 219, 21.  
**Hent:** took, seized, held, 308, 17, 253, 12, 270, 49, 673, 32, 14, 195; lifted (up), borne away (into), 239, 1, 50, 169; h. in hand, undertook, undertaken, 32, 37, 381, 61.  
**Hept:** heaped, 377, 33.  
**Her:** their, 25, 160, 41, 112; he, him, 39, 1, 2, 3, 4; its, 240, 7; for genitive's of a noun whose gender in Lat. is feminine, 283, 24.  
**Herbars:** shrubs trained on trellises, 294, 46.  
**Herce v. Herse.**  
**Herehence:** from this, 17, 53.  
**Herneshaw:** a heron, 621, 9.  
**Herry v. Hery.**  
**Hersall:** rehearsal, 405, 18.  
**Herse, herce, hearse:** a bier, (vaguely) a tomb, 282, 16, 350, 1, 69, 679, 685, 528 — rehearsal, ceremonial, 341, 48; refrain, 49, 60.  
**Hery, herry:** to praise, worship, honor, 12, 62, 48, 10, 331, 43, 314, 13.  
**Hether:** hither, e. g. 463, 18.  
**Hetherward:** hitherward, 37, 46.  
**Hew:** form, shape, feature, appearance, aspect, 667, 45, 317, 31, 262, 27, 189, 35, 197, 38, 157, 40, 183, 38, 647, 2, 117, 120.  
**Hidder and shidder:** male and female sheep, 42, 211.  
**Hight** (*pret.* hote, hot, *pp.* hight): to decree, determine, appoint, 624, 31, 463, 17; to direct (a blow), 568, 8; to summon, 678, 11; to assign, grant, 165, 6, 487, 38, 474, 54; to call (by name), to name, 636, 9, 448, 6, 454, 4, 191, 46, 207, 5; to be called (hight = is called, hote = was called), 233, 18, 214, 55, 220, 29, 446, 40, 42, 194; to mention by name, 33, 164; to purport, 41, 172.  
**Hlld:** held, 439, 42, 492, 17.  
**His:** its, 194, 19, 349, 60; for genitive's, 202, 21, 369, 24, 391, 27, 668, 1, 53, 46.  
**Holpen:** helped, 630, 25.  
**Hoord:** to hoard, heap up, 388, 4, 88, 657.  
**Hoove v. Hove.**  
**Hosptage:** the duties of the guest, 396, 6.  
**Hospitale:** a lodging-place, 289, 10.  
**Host:** to entertain as guest, 388, *arg.*, 470, 27; to be a guest, lodge (with), 634, *arg.*; take to h., to entertain, 82, 196.  
**Hostlesse:** inhospitable, 403, 3.  
**Hostry:** an inn, lodging-place, 565, 23.  
**Hot, hote v. Hight.**  
**Housling:** sacramental, 229, 37.  
**Hove, hoove:** to be poised, to float, 376, 27; to hover about, wait, abide, 398, 20, 695, 666, 734, 88 — to rise, 156, 31.  
**Howbe:** howbeit, 614, 2.  
**Hububs:** confused cries or noise, 401, 43.  
**Hugger mugger:** secrecy, 92, 139.  
**Humblesse:** humbleness, humility, 155, 21, 162, 26, 225, 8, 227, 25.  
**Humour:** moisture, 367, 9; according to the older physiology, any fluid or vapor of the body, 72, 112, 362, 29, 403, 59, 149, 36, 201, 13, 113, 23.  
**Hundreth:** a hundred, 125, 2.  
**Hurtle:** to brandish, 276, 42; h. round, to skirmish about, 259, 8, 444, 29.  
**Husband:** a husbandman, 437, 29, 93, 266.  
**Hylding:** vile, worthless, 612, 25.  
**Idole, Idoll:** an image, 109, 5, 723, 27, 244, 41; a counterfeit, 382, 11, 449, 15.  
**Imbrew v. Embrew.**  
**Imp v. Impe.**  
**Impacable:** unappeasable, 65, 395, 479, 22.  
**Impe:** a young shoot of a tree, hence a scion of a noble house, child, young man, etc., 493, 26, 144, 3, 181, 24, 200, 6, 217, 5, 365, 53 — to graft, to strengthen or repair a hawk's wings by engrafting feathers, 476, 4, 756, 135.  
**Impeach v. Empeach.**  
**Imperceable:** unpierceable, 218, 17.  
**Implore:** supplication, 263, 37.  
**Imply:** to enfold, involve, envelope, 168, 31, 179, 6, 219, 23, 543, 12, 370, 34.  
**Importable:** unbearable, 285, 35.  
**Importune:** grievous, 226, 16, 347, 44; vehement, impetuous, 223, 53, 267, 29, 298, 15; importunate, 648, 6 — to portend, 327, 16.  
**Importunely:** importunately, 280, 4.  
**Improvided:** unforeseen, 228, 34.  
**In, Inne, ynne:** an abode, quarters, resting place, 149, 33, 48, 16, 53, 72, 345, 30, 600, 29, 317, 32.  
**Incompared:** peerless, 143, *Walsingham*.  
**Incontinent:** immediately, 179, 8, 288, 1, 436, 18.  
**Indew v. Endew.**  
**Indlgnauce:** indignation, 405, 13.  
**Indlgne:** unworthy, 422, 30.  
**Indlgnlfy:** to treat with indignity, to disgrace, 587, 30, 694, 583.  
**Infant:** a youth of gentle or high birth, a knight in the prime of manhood (Arthur), 418, *Prol.*, 5, 630, 25, 288, 56, 309, 25; applied to Britomart, 341, 49, 349, 56. [Cf. *Childe*.]  
**Infest:** hostile, 603, 5, 619, 41 — to assail, afflict, 66, 460, 615, 12; to infect, 217, 6.  
**Ingate:** entrance, 483, 12, 60, 47.  
**Inne v. In.**  
**Inquere** (*pret.* inquerd): to inquire, 149, 31, 161, 25, 183, 36.  
**Intendiment:** understanding, 72, 144, 362, 32; intention, purpose, 411, 5; attentive consideration, 228, 31.  
**Intentive:** attentive, 556, 14.



**Interesse:** interest, title, 665, 33.  
**Intermedle:** to intermingle, 137, 196.  
**Intreat v. Entreat.**  
**Intuse:** a contusion, 363, 33.  
**Inure v. Enure.**  
**Invent:** to find, to find out, 733, 82, 180, 15, 359, 10, 510, 20, 574, 50; to compose, 70, 12.  
**Irrenowned:** inglorious, 233, 23.

**Javel:** a low rascal, 94, 309.  
**Jolliment:** merriment, joyfulness, 264, 3, 491, 12, 592, 16.  
**Jolly:** courageous, 145, 1, 154, 11; comely, goodly, gallant, 292, 34, 331, 45, 49, 47, 139, *Hobynoll*; 'fine,' 'nice,' etc., 41, 165.  
**Jollyhead:** mirth, gaiety, 652, 32.  
**Jouisaunce:** joyousness, festivity, 48, 2, 23, 25.  
**Journal:** daily, 220, 31.  
**Juncates:** sweetmeats, delicacies, 527, 49, 732, 77.

**Kales:** keys, 484, 18.  
**Keasars v. Kesars.**  
**Keep:** a charge, 33, 133. take k., take k. of, to pay heed, take notice of, give thought to, 556, 13, 150, 40, 82, 241; to take care of, take charge of, concern oneself with, 52, 8, 93, 290, 680, 133, 400, 38.  
**Keight:** caught, 338, 36, 540, 29.  
**Kemd:** combed, 540, 4.  
**Kerve:** to cut, 418, 4.  
**Kesars, keasars:** kaisers, emperors, 271, 5, 460, 1.  
**Kest:** cast, 312, 42, 220, 31.  
**Ketch:** to catch, 371, 37.  
**Kilt:** killed, 175, 26, 214, 57.  
**Klnd, kynd:** nature, 713, 206, 158, 43, 164, 44, 358, 1, 370, 30, 669, 9; sex, 335, 4; race, kin, 142, *Cumberland*, 497, 52, 181, 18.  
**Kindly:** natural, 193, 11, 200, 9; innate, native, 162, 28, 76, 383; characteristically, 104, 1137.  
**Klnred:** kindred, kinship, 301, 35, 26, 271.  
**Knghltlesse:** unknownly, 184, 41, 591, 14.  
**Knowe:** known, 41, 161.  
**Kon v. Con.**  
**Kydst:** knewest, 54, 92, 93.  
**Kynd v. Kind.**  
**Kynded:** sprung, begotten, 533, 40.

**Labourous:** toilsome, 93, 266.  
**Lad:** led, 145, 4, 467, 2.  
**Lalre, lare:** pasture, 471, 29; ground, 474, 51.  
**Latch:** to catch, 17, 93.  
**Launce:** a scale, balance, 373, 4.  
**Launch:** to pierce, transfix, 188, 25, 236, 38; to inflict (a wound), 339, 37, 50, 139 — a piercing, 752, 162.  
**Lay v. Laye.**  
**Layd:** prostrated, faint, 44, 12.  
**Laye, lay:** laity, 24, 76 — a lea, meadow, field, 51, 188, 80, 110; the ground, 398, 23, 383, 15 — a stall (?), 48, 15.  
**Layes:** laws, 302, 42 — the ground, 768, 44.  
**Lazar:** a leper, 165, 3.  
**Leake, leke:** leaky, 176, 35, 630, 24.

**Leames:** gleams, 767, 9.  
**Leany:** lean, 34, 199.  
**Leape:** a kind of basket-like net to catch fish in, 55, 41.  
**Leare v. Lere.**  
**Leasng, lesinge:** lying, a lie, 688, 102, 26, 285, 99, 699, 185, 48, 295, 51.  
**Least:** lest, e. g. 156, 31, 231, 7.  
**Ledden:** language, form of speech, 492, 19, 696, 744.  
**Lee:** lea, plain, 61, 135; hence often the surface of a river, the stream (cf. 428, 16), 68, 603, 760, 38, 761, 115, 510, 19.  
**Leeffe v. Liefe.**  
**Leese:** to lose, 41, 135.  
**Leke v. Leake.**  
**Lengd:** longed, 26, 250.  
**Lenger:** longer, e. g. 174, 19, 203, 30, 23, 19.  
**Lere, leare:** to learn, 52, 4 — learning, lore, 696, 783, 405, 16, 439, 40; a lesson, 26, 262, 594, 31, 376, 21.  
**Lesnge v. Leasing.**  
**Lest:** to listen, 585, 17.  
**Let:** to hinder, impede, 187, 20, 284, 28, 360, 17, 555, 7, 605, 19, 655, 1 — hindrance, an impediment, 194, 13, 592, 17, 310, 31.  
**Lever v. Liefe.**  
**Levin:** lightning, 37, 87, 365, 48, 541, 40.  
**Levln-brond:** the thunderbolt, 665, 30.  
**Lewd:** ignorant, unskillful, foolish, 375, 12, 351, 9, 14, 245; vile, base, 471, 35, 520, 36 — -ly: ignorantly, foolishly, 11, 9; ill, vilely, 594, 31, 616, 17, 546, 32, 470, 24 — -nesse: baseness, wickedness, 520, 38, 358, 58.  
**Libbard:** a leopard, 60, 68, 463, 23.  
**Llch:** like, 377, 29.  
**Lldge:** a ledge, edge, 541, 36.  
**Llefe, leefe:** (a) dear, dearly, 40, 11, 243, 30, 440, 52, 478, 15. (b) more llefe, llefer, lever (than), more precious, acceptable (than), 386, 42, 328, 24, 359, 7, 256, 28; me lever were, I had lever, I had rather, 335, 6, 203, 32, 25, 167. (c) willing, desirous, 390, 13, 14, 661, 8; devoted, 33, 165 — a love, 201, 17, 328, 24.  
**Llfull, lyfull:** lifeful, vitalizing, 737, 119, 654, 45.  
**Llg, llggen:** to lie, 608, 40, 24, 125, 42, 234.  
**Lignage, llnage:** lineage, 305, 71, 544, 21, 145, 5.  
**Llike:** to please, 768, 30, 91, 94, 95, 274, 27, 528, 1.  
**Lill:** to loll, 176, 34.  
**Lln:** to cease, cease from, 148, 24, 176, 35, 344, 21, 345, 30, 384, 24, 684, 467.  
**Llnage v. Lignage.**  
**Llne:** linen, 542, 6, 121, 364.  
**Llst (pres. and pret.):** is, are, was, were pleased, 389, 7, 155, 22, 209, 20, 305, 66, 630, 21; me llst, hlm llst, us llsteth, etc., it pleases, pleased me, etc., 273, 19, 630, 21, 189, 35, 199, 2, 92, 169.  
**Live:** life, 419, 6, 434, 4.  
**Livelod, llvelood:** livelihood, 522, 9, 597, 7.  
**Livelyhed:** living form, 288, 3; life, 623, 20; livelihood, 239, 2.  
**Loast v. Lose.**  
**Loft:** a roof (?), 150, 41; a ceiling (or floor), 539, 27.

- Long:** to belong, 170, 48, 349, 58.  
**Loord:** a lubber, 32, 33, 374, 12.  
**Loos:** praise, 656, 12.  
**Lore:** left, 417, 44, 567, 38.  
**Loring:** teaching, 547, 42.  
**Lorne:** lost, 53, 52; deserted, 40, 57, 10, 62, 164, 2.  
**Lorrell:** a worthless fellow, 33, 93.  
**Lose, losen** (*pp.* *loast*, *lo'ste*): to loosen, release, etc., 127, 9, 321, 67, 411, 2, 388, 51, 372, 48, 631, 29; to dissolve, 351, 13; to become loose, 519, 28 — wanton, inconstant, 323, 76, 54, 119.  
**Losel:** a worthless fellow, a scoundrel, 75, 324, 246, 4, 604, 10.  
**Lo'ste v. Lose.**  
**Lovely:** affectionate, 162, 30; of love, amatory, amorous, 459, 40, 516, 5, 407, 32, 723, 28 — amorously, 179, 4.  
**Lover:** a louver, a lantern-like opening in the roof, 647, 42.  
**Low:** lowly, 33, 165.  
**Lozeil v. Losel.**  
**Lug:** a rod, 297, 11.  
**Lumlne:** to give light to, 754, 280.  
**Luskishnesse:** sluggishness, 588, 35.  
**Lust:** pleasure, delight, 673, 39, 571, 31; inclination, appetite, 423, 34, 497, 51, 279, 64 — to desire, choose, 48, 21, 32, 29, 272, 11, 277, 49; (*pret.*) *iust*, 516, 6, 550, 22.  
**Lustful:** lusty, 10, 37, 116, 34.  
**Lustihede v. Lustyhed.**  
**Lustlesse:** feeble, languid, 167, 20, 357, 56, 588, 35.  
**Lustyhed:** pleasure, enjoyment, gay living, 401, 45, 152, 3, 23, 42; lustiness, vigor, 25, 204, 116, 54, 236, 41.  
**Lyfuli v. Lifuli.**  
**Lynage v. Lignage.**  
**Lyne v. Line.**  
**Maine:** strength, force, 186, 11, 193, 7, 290, 14, 308, 15, 568, 10 — *ly*: mightily, violently, 328, 21, 186, 12.  
**Maister:** a master, 269, 38; to master, 253, 10, 260, 14. [*Also* in compounds.]  
**Malstresse:** a mistress, 185, 1.  
**Make:** a mate, companion, 186, 7, 187, 15, 403, 2, 702, 178 — to compose poetry, compose, 18, 19, 30, 82, 73, 215, 688, 99, 689, 188; *maked*, made, 409, 44.  
**Making:** the composition of poetry, 5, 3.  
**Malefice:** an evil deed, 104, 1154.  
**Malengine:** guile, 332, 53.  
**Malice:** to envy, hate, 640, 39, 119, 257, 753, 238.  
**Maltalent:** resentment, 358, 61.  
**Many:** a retinue, 414, 23, 499, 18; a band, company, 389, 11, 23, 23.  
**Mart:** trade, traffic, 158, *arg.*, 40, 37, 712, 172.  
**Martelled:** hammered, 378, 42.  
**Maske:** to masquerade, to go disguised (in gay or strange attire), 9, 24, 348, 51, 144, 1, 185, 1.  
**Masking:** masquerading, 100, 802.  
**Mate:** to confound, overcome, 200, 12, 469, 17.  
**Maugre, mauger, maugre:** in spite of, despite, 352, 15, 255, 39, 425, 48, 670, 17 — in spite of oneself, against one's will, 407, 26, 507, 29; resentfully, 608, 40 — curse on, 260, 12; curse on it, 359, 7.  
**May:** a maid, 48, 39.  
**Mayne, -ly v. Maine.**  
**Mayster v. Maister.**  
**Mazeful:** confounding, 737, 190.  
**Mazer, mazer-bowle:** a large drinking bowl, 36, 26, 319, 49.  
**Meanc, mene:** means, 416, 40, 514, 45, 560, 42, 625, 39.  
**Mear:** to bound, 112, 22.  
**Medie:** to mingle, mix, 19, 68, 26, 263, 239, 61.  
**Meint, ment:** mixed, mingled, 51, 203, 33, 84, 80, 75, 153, 5, 408, 36, 529, 12, 617, 27.  
**Melli:** to meddle, have to do (with), 34, 208, 581, 35, 149, 30, 669, 9, 555, 1.  
**Memorize:** to preserve or perpetuate or celebrate the memory of, 64, 364, 142, *Buckhurst*, 76, 440.  
**Menage:** management, 142, *Burleigh*, 414, 22 — to control, wield, 190, 37, 241, 18, 291, 27; to husband, 641, 46; m. arms, to fight, 139, *W. L.*  
**Mendes:** amends, 233, 20.  
**Mene v. Meane.**  
**Ment v. Meint.**  
**Merciable:** merciful, 41, 174.  
**Merelfy:** to pity, 624, 32.  
**Merimake, merrymake:** merry-making, sport, 23, 15, 48, 9, 266, 21, 643, 19.  
**Merveil:** to marvel, 383, 12.  
**Merveilous:** marvelous, 343, 13.  
**Mesprise, misprize:** a blunder, 315, 19, 480, 35 — contempt, 276, 39, 389, 9, 442, 11, 534, 48.  
**Mew:** a cage or cell, 262, 27; a hiding-place or retreat, 273, 19, 382, 4, 174, 20, 556, 14, 733, 80.  
**Meynt v. Meint.**  
**Miekie, miekeli:** great, much, 231, 6, 253, 7, 528, 3, 511, 29. [*v.* *Muchell*.]  
**Mid:** middle, 432, 48.  
**Middest:** midmost, 166, 15 — the midst, 447, 44; the middle one (of three), 241, 13.  
**Mieve:** to move, 501, 26.  
**Miniments:** memorials, 467, 6.  
**Mirkesome:** murky, dark, 175, 28.  
**Mlsavised:** ill-advised, 336, 9.  
**Miscall:** to revile, 324, 86, 470, 24.  
**Misconeeipt:** misconception, 454, 2.  
**Miscraunce:** misbelief, 24, 91, 287, 51.  
**Miscraunt:** a misbeliever, infidel, 173, 13, 184, 41, 284, 31.  
**Misdempt:** misdeemed, misjudged, 399, 29.  
**Misdesert:** ill desert, 585, 12.  
**Mlsdight:** ill clad, 546, 37.  
**Misdoubt:** to suspect, fear, 483, 12, 429, 23, 602, 47.  
**Misfall:** to befall unluckily, 529, 10.  
**Misfare:** deviation, 675, 53; misfortune, 574, 48; affliction, sorrow, 451, 30, 454, 2, 467, 5, 498, 12, 656, 14.  
**Misfaring:** misbehavior, 696, 758.  
**Mlsget:** to obtain wrongfully, 585, 18.  
**Mlsgo:** to go wrong, 34, 201. [*Cf.* *Miswend*.]  
**Mlsgovernance:** misgovernment, 48, 4.  
**Mlsguyde:** trespass, sin, 752, 144.  
**Mishappen:** to happen disastrously, 161, 20.  
**Mislke, mlsleek:** to displease, 388, 51; m. ot, to dislike, take exception to, 514, 49, 25, 162.

- Misprize v. Mesprise.**  
**Misregard:** heedlessness, 471, 29.  
**Missay:** to say needlessly, 655, 2; to speak falsely, 39, 2; to scold, 457, 27; to speak ill (of), 41, 106.  
**Misseeeme:** to misbecome, 100, 804, 348, 53, 384, 26.  
**Misseeming:** unseemly, 202, 23, 243, 31 — simulation, 192, 50.  
**Mls-shape:** deformity, 580, 29.  
**Mister:** kind of, 41, 103, 202, 23, 359, 5, 500, 22.  
**Misthought:** misperception, 475, 58.  
**Mistreth:** is necessary, 380, 51.  
**Mlsweene:** to misjudge, mistake, 701, 101, 230, 3, 554, 46.  
**Misweening:** misjudgment, 164, 1.  
**Miswend** (*pp.* *mlswend*): to go astray, go wrong, come to grief, 451, 30, 36, 16, 91, 128. [Cf. *Mlsgo*.]  
**Mizzie:** to drizzle, 51, 208.  
**Mo, moe:** more, 23, 68, 205, 44.  
**Mochell v. Muchell.**  
**Mold:** a mole, 655, 7.  
**Moldwarpe:** a mole, 696, 763, 744, 182.  
**Molt:** melted, 259, 8.  
**Molting:** melting, 713, 231.  
**Mome:** a buffoon, blockhead, 667, 49.  
**Monastere:** a monastery, 658, 23.  
**Monefull:** mournful, 537, 12.  
**Monlment, monument:** a relic, record, 553, 43, 323, 80, 296, 59, 657, 20; a distinctive mark, stamp, 271, 5.  
**Monstruous:** monstrous, 324, 85, 626, 41.  
**More:** a plant, 670, 10.  
**Morlish:** marshy, 493, 29.  
**Most-what:** for the most part, generally, 32, 46, 41, 104, 696, 757.  
**Mote, mot:** must, 40, 14, 240, 12, 267, 24, 284, 33; may, 235, 33, 201, 17; might, 427, 8, 156, 29, 157, 37, 195, 19 — moten, 370, 31. [Cf. *Mought*.]  
**Mott:** measured, 691, 365.  
**Mought:** might, could, 150, 42, 397, 18, 559, 34, 627, 50, 631, 32; may, 138, *Hobynoll*, 25, 191, 36, 13; must, 12, 24, 25, 157, 42, 241. [Used interchangeably with *mote*, *q. v.*, another word.]  
**Mountenance:** amount, extent, 383, 18, 406, 20, 541, 36.  
**Mowes:** grimaces, 627, 49.  
**Moylty:** a half, 317, 31.  
**Muchell:** great, much, 170, 46, 181, 20, 377, 32, 13, 109; greatly, much, 399, 31, 36, 23.  
**Mummlng:** masquerading, 100, 802.  
**Munflcence:** fortification, 298, 15.  
**Mure:** to wall, close, 659, 34.  
**Muse:** to wonder, 233, 19, 450, 21, 622, 13.  
**Muscall:** music, 23, 28.  
**Mutine:** to mutiny, 514, 51.  
**Myster v. Mister.**  
**Napron:** an apron, 530, 20.  
**Narre:** nearer, 33, 97, 111, 16.  
**Nas:** has not, 23, 61.  
**Nathelesse, nathiesse, nath'lesse, nethelesse:** nevertheless, none the less, 206, 54, 233, 20, 333, 55, 450, 20, 583, 2, 6, 186.  
**Nathemore, nathemoe:** none the more, 202, 25, 253, 8, 450, 20.  
**Ne:** nor, 12, 21, 143, *Carew*, 174, 19, 179, 2 — not, 25, 152, 178, 1, 336, 14.  
**Neglect** (*pp.*): neglected, 706, 96.  
**Nempt:** named, 399, 29.  
**Net:** pure, clean, 413, 20, 633, 45.  
**Nethelesse v. Nathelesse.**  
**Newell:** a novelty, 26, 276.  
**Nigardlse:** niggardliness, 469, 15.  
**Nlgh, nye:** to draw near, 16, 4, 26, 316, 39, 195.  
**Nill, n'lll:** will not, 359, 11, 201, 15, 164, 43; desire not, 275, 33 — nilled, was unwilling, 462, 16.  
**Nimblesse:** nimbleness, 558, 29, 568, 6.  
**Nis:** is not, 29, 19, 24, 144.  
**Noblesse, noblesse:** nobleness, 4, *To His Booke*, 196, 26, 282, 18.  
**Noriture v. Nourlture.**  
**Nosethril, nostrhil:** nostril, 219, 22, 391, 22, 124, 8.  
**Note, no'te, not:** (*ne wol*) know not, 41, 110, 226, 17; know or knows not how to, cannot, 230, 4, 384, 23, 414, 26; (*ne mote ?*) might not, could not, 348, 50, 252, 4, 254, 13, 434, 9.  
**Nould, n'ould:** would not, 625, 36, 284, 30.  
**Noule:** noddle, 673, 39.  
**Nourlce:** a nurse, 62, 169.  
**Nourlture, noriture, nourture:** nourishment, 743, 39, 535, 53; bringing up, training, 200, 5, 245, 2, 305, 69.  
**Noursle v. Nousle.**  
**Nourtred:** nurtured, 701, 71.  
**Nousle, nouseil, nousle:** to foster, train, rear, 181, 23, 504, 6, 607, 35, 31, 45; to burrow, 494, 32, 696, 763.  
**Noy:** to vex, afflict, 210, 24, 222, 45.  
**Noyance:** annoyance, grievousness, 148, 23, 411, 2.  
**Noyous:** vexatious, tedious, 734, 86, 223, 50; grievous, harmful, 290, 16, 292, 32, 197, 40, 177, 45.  
**Nye v. Nlgh.**  
**Nys v. Nls.**  
**Obeysaunce:** obedience, 24, 120, 532, 28.  
**Obllquid:** directed obliquely, 676, 54.  
**Offend:** to assail, 307, 6, 224, 1; to harm, 231, 3, 281, 8; to incommode, 321, 63, 606, 25.  
**Ordinaunce:** arrangement, device, 292, 30, 434, 5, 92, 173; ordinance, 308, 14.  
**Ought:** owned, 169, 39, 285, 40, 596, 2, 622, 16; owed, 331, 44, 721, 19.  
**Our:** ours, 33, 76.  
**Outgo:** to go out, 23, 20; to pass through, complete, 729, 60, 367, 9.  
**Outlaunce:** to thrust out, 117, 82.  
**Outlearne:** to find out, 470, 22.  
**Outward:** to keep out, 505, 10.  
**Outwell:** to pour out, 147, 21, 86, 502.  
**Outwin:** to get out from, 421, 20.  
**Outwind:** to extricate, 516, 9.  
**Outwrest:** to extort, 255, 23.  
**Outwrought:** completed, 279, 65.  
**Over all:** everywhere, 211, 34, 222, 46; all over, 251, 44.  
**Overcatch:** to overtake, 464, 31.



**Overcraw:** to triumph over, 206, 50.  
**Overdight:** overspread, covered, 278, 53, 471, 34, 693, 493.  
**Overgive:** to give over, abandon, 93, 249.  
**Overgo:** to overcome, overwhelm, 508, 7, 118, 134; (*pp.*) overwent, overcome, 16, 2, 548, 7.  
**Overhalle:** to draw over, 10, 75.  
**Overhent:** overtook, overtaken, 298, 18, 361, 25, 375, 19, 548, 4.  
**Overkcest:** overcast, 367, 10, 66, 457.  
**Overlay:** to overmatch, overpower, 574, 51, 33, 151, 120, 337.  
**Overraught:** extended beyond, 580, 30; overtook, 603, 50.  
**Overren:** to overrun, oppress, 510, 19.  
**Overthwart:** opposite, 489, 51.  
**Owch:** a brooch, 154, 13, 211, 31, 353, 23.  
**Owre:** ore, 271, 5, 352, 18.

**Paddock:** a toad, 53, 70.  
**Paine:** punishment, penalty, 498, 11, 103, 1072, 273, 21; pains taken, care, labor, 261, 24, 364, 42, 582, 3, 183, 33, 188, 24, 228, 34, 595, 38; difficulty, 628, 9; with easie p., at one's ease, 106, 1264 — (*reflex.*) to take pains, exert oneself, 38, 133, 166, 15, 459, 40, 493, 25, 577, 10, 582, 41.  
**Paire:** to impair, 190, 41.  
**Pail:** to make pale, 702, 163; to enfeeble, 521, 5.  
**Pannikeli:** the brain pan, 361, 23.  
**Paragon, paragone:** a match, an equal, 477, 11, 141, *Ormond*, 336, 13; a mate, mistress, 400, 35, 422, 33, 426, 8, 636, 11; a rival, 745, 251; a contest, 448, 9, 119, 274; excellence, 730, 66; comparison, 691, 344, 388, 2, 518, 24; rivalry, 349, 54, 103, 1026.  
**Paravant, paravaunt:** face to face, 336, 16; preëminently, 643, 15, 698, 941.  
**Pardale:** a pard, 182, 26.  
**Parture:** departure, 387, 46.  
**Pas, passe:** to surpass, exceed, excel, 241, 17, 267, 25, 426, 2, 427, 10; to care, 104, 1150; *p. by*, *p. of*, to care for, esteem, 475, 63, 268, 37.  
**Pastor:** a shepherd, 700, 9, 139, *Hobyroll*.  
**Patrone:** a pattern, 145, *arg.*  
**Paunce, pawnce:** pansy, 330, 36, 408, 37, 20, 142.  
**Pavone:** peacock, 409, 47.  
**Payne v. Paine.**  
**Payse v. Peise.**  
**Peal:** to appeal, 668, *arg.*  
**Peare, peere, pere:** [besides modern senses] a companion, 563, 15, 504, 6, 254, 18, 176, 37; a champion, 193, 7, 344, 22, 398, 26; a prince, 226, 17.  
**Peaze v. Poyse.**  
**Pece:** a structure, 214, 59; a castle, 308, 14, 396, 10, 510, 21, 720, 14; a ship, 319, 44.  
**Peere v. Peare.**  
**Peinct:** to paint, 13, 121.  
**Peise, pelze, payse:** to weigh down, to sink, 514, 46, 697, 849; to poise, 297, 5.  
**Penne:** a quill, 217, 10.  
**Perce, percen:** to pierce, 154, 17, 189, 33, 205, 48, 158, 1, 451, 31.  
**Perceable:** pierceable, 145, 7.  
**Perdy, perdie, perdee:** *Fr. pardieu*, literally 'by God,' 184, 42, 266, 22, 398, 27.

**Pere v. Peare.**  
**Peregall:** quite equal, 36, 8.  
**Perlous:** perilous, 266, 19.  
**Persant:** piercing, 213, 47, 248, 23.  
**Perse v. Perce.**  
**Persever:** to persevere, 411, 2.  
**Perst v. Perce.**  
**Perswade:** persuasion, 565, 25.  
**Pert:** open, plain, 41, 162.  
**Pheere v. Fere.**  
**Phocas:** seals, 385, 30.  
**Physnomy, visnomy:** physiognomy, visage, 120, 310, 522, 11, 669, 5.  
**Pictural:** a picture, 295, 53.  
**Pight:** pitched, set, placed, 364, 40, 485, 25, 158, 42, 197, 37; hurled, struck, 219, 25; plunged, 548, 8.  
**Pili:** peel, rind, 722, 26 — to plunder, 105, 1198, 508, 6, 641, 5.  
**Pine:** pain, wasting, 40, 65, 204, 35, 531, 22; death, 612, 28 — to afflict, waste, 341, 52, 213, 48, 198, 40.  
**Pinnoed:** pinioned, 524, 22.  
**Place:** rank, 165, 3, 323, 79, 468, 14 — *in p.* on the spot, present, 157, 38, 176, 36, 227, 23; to the spot, into presence, 208, 12, 376, 23, 100, 834.  
**P'lace:** palace, 78, 580.  
**Pleasaunce, pleasauns, plesaunce:** *com.* *plaisance*, 156, 30, 100, 799, 721, 21; pleasantness, 734, 88, 319, 50, 23, 7; pleasure, 16, *arg.* 725, 39, 321, 65.  
**Piesh:** a splash, pool, 285, 36.  
**Plight:** a plait, fold, 249, 26, 293, 40, 558, 22 — to plait, fold, 264, 7, 626, 43, 391, 21.  
**Poëtresse:** a poetess, 78, 576.  
**Point:** to appoint, 205, 41, 498, 11, 70, 10 — to *p.*, completely, exactly, 147, 16, 154, 12, 336, 16.  
**Poise, peaze:** weight, force, momentum, 512, 34, 579, 21, 223, 54, 111, 16; a blow, 337, 20.  
**Pol:** to plunder, 508, 6.  
**Porepiscs:** porpoises, 690, 249.  
**Portance:** bearing, 246, 5, 248, 21, 338, 27, 610, 11.  
**Portesse:** a breviary, 167, 19.  
**Portracture:** a picture, 98, 611.  
**Potshare:** a potsherd, 588, 37.  
**Pouldred:** pulverized, 186, 12, 114, 27; sprinkled or whitened, 338, 25.  
**Pourtrahed:** portrayed, 197, 33, 292, 33, 330, 34.  
**Pourtraict, pourtract:** a portrait, picture, 236, 39, 248, 22, 286, 43 — to portray, picture, 144, *Ladies*, 136, 42.  
**Pousse:** pulse, 37, 46.  
**Poynant:** piercing, keen, 187, 19, 285, 36, 326, 5.  
**Poyse v. Poise.**  
**Practice:** practiced, skillful, 114, 29, 588, 36, 545, 29, 434, 7, 246, 9, 231, 3, 228, 34.  
**Practise, practize:** to plot, conspire, 637, 23, 412, 11, 560, 41 — knavery, treachery, conspiracy, 42, 202, 345, 28, 561, 47.  
**Pray:** to make prey of, ravage, 523, 14, 646, 40, 202, 20, 728, 58 — *prayer:* plunder, spoils, 410, 52.

**Preace, preasse:** to press, throng, 277, 44, 540, 29; to insist, 226, 19 — thronging, 159, 3; a press, crowd, 328, 23, 277, 46.

**Preeve v. Prieve.**

**Priefe v. Priefe.**

**Prejudize:** forejudgment, 295, 49.

**Prepense:** to consider beforehand, 405, 14.

**Prest:** ready, 284, 28, 472, 41, 545, 27, 620, 44; assiduous, 452, 36, 623, 19; promptly, 663, 16 — **readyp.**, fully prepared, 436, 22, 548, 9.

**Prevent:** to outstrip, anticipate, 423, 41, 588, 38, 101, 881, 94, 332; to frustrate, 484, 20.

**Previe:** privy, 16, 35 — **prevelle**, privily, 26, 252.

**Price:** to pay the price of, 175, 26, 204, 37. [v. also **Prise.**]

**Priefe, preife:** trial, examination, demonstration, 95, 408, 547, 44, 270, 51, 201, 17; experience, 198, 43, 237, 48, 727, 50; efficacy, 210, 24.

**Prieve, preeve:** to prove, 525, 33, 657, 18, 107, 1366.

**Prise, prize:** a contest (?), 630, 25 — price, estimation, excellence, 480, 35, 95, 420, 77, 466 — to pay the price of, 752, 175, 490, 5; to rate, 649, 14, 61, 116.

**Prive:** privy, 41, 162.

**Prize v. Prise.**

**Proil:** to prowl, 41, 160.

**Prostrate (pp.):** prostrated, 87, 558.

**Protense:** extension, 342, 4.

**Protract:** protraction, 734, 86.

**Provokement:** provocation, 441, 4.

**Prow:** hardy, valiant, 345, 28, 247, 15, 263, 36.

**Proyne:** to preen, 707, 137.

**Prnye v. Prise.**

**Pumy:** pumice (?), 15, 89, 262, 30, 363, 39.

**Purchase:** to acquire, win, 104, 1148, 37, 41, 551, 25, 554, 51, 248, 18 — acquisition, 160, 16, 475, 62; booty, plunder, 649, 12, 87, 591.

**Purfled:** embroidered or decorated along the edge, 154, 13, 249, 26.

**Puttocke:** a kite, 308, 11, 530, 15.

**Pyne v. Pine.**

**Pyoning:** digging of intrenchments, 304, 63.

**Quaint v. Queint.**

**Quart:** a quarter, 298, 14.

**Quayd:** subdued, 194, 14.

**Queint, quaint:** elaborate, elegant, 639, 35, 484, 22, 45, 114; strange, 544, 21; fastidious, prim, 374, 10, 419, 5 — skillfully, 376, 22 — quenched, 260, 11.

**Quell:** to kill, destroy, 646, 36, 651, 29, 377, 35, 242, 20; to fail, perish, 16, 8, 674, 42.

**Queme:** to please, 23, 15.

**Quich:** to stir, 559, 33.

**Quietage:** quiet, 439, 43.

**Quight, quite:** free, clear, 109, 8, 591, 14. [v. also **Quilt.**]

**Quire:** a company, 634, 48.

**Quit, quitten, quite, quight:** to free, rescue, redeem, 215, 63, 179, 6, 193, 10, 571, 27, 627, arg., 14, 213; to rid (oneself of), to get rid of, 62, 230, 24, 131; to clear or acquit, 233, 20; to requite, repay, to make a return for, 695, 681, 666, 44, 212, 37, 216, 67, 154, 17; to salute in return, 149, 30, 209, 15. [v. also **Quight.**]

**Quod:** quoth, 732, 75, 735, 35.

**Quooke:** quaked, 398, 24, 623, 24.

**Racc (raced, ra'st, rast, raste):** to scratch, 323, 80; to erase, 558, 26, 347, 43; to raze, 324, 83, 346, 34, 511, 28, 74, 268; to cut off, 529, 11.

**Rad, rade:** rode, 509, 13, 674, 41. [v. also **Read.**]

**Raft:** reft, 148, 24.

**Raile:** to gush, flow, 184, 43, 285, 37, 409, 46, 59, 12, 127, 12.

**Raine:** realm, region, 273, 21, 356, 49, 591, 9, 743, 88.

**Ranke, ranke:** proud, froward, 11, 1, 254, 15; abundant, 34, 211 — violently, 452, 33, 246, 6.

**Randon, at:** impetuously, with headlong force, 253, 7; at liberty, uncontrolled, 400, 36, 23, 46; at random, 75, 321.

**Rase:** to scratch, 334, 65. [v. **Race.**]

**Rash:** to cut, slash, 428, 17; to tear (off), 516, 8 — swiftly, hastily, 249, 30, 105, 1214 — **-ly:** swiftly, hastily, 415, 33, 334, 62.

**Raskali:** of the rabble, vulgar, base (r. routes, r. many), 189, 35, 225, 9, 290, 15, 515, 54, 575, 59.

**Ra'st, rast, raste v. Race.**

**Rathe:** quickly, soon, early, 345, 28, 54, 98, 33, 78; rather, earlier, sooner, 12, 83, 537, 9, 430, 34.

**Raught:** reached, 245, 2, 182, 29, 187, 18, 568, 10; took in hand, seized, 326, 5; took or snatched (away), 443, 20; to him r., took, taken in hand, 206, 51, 309, 25, 96, 441.

**Raunch:** to pull, 37, 97.

**Ray:** array, 572, 34, 514, 50, 68, 640 — to soil, defile, 385, 32, 606, 23, 236, 40.

**Rayle:** railing, 424, 43. [v. also **Raile.**]

**Rayne v. Raine.**

**Rayon:** a ray, 125, 2.

**Read, reede (pret. pp. rad, red, rid):** to declare, make known, tell, 36, 15, 230, *Prol.*, 2, 233, 18, 234, 30, 537, 10; to name, call, 191, 46, 265, 9; to guess, recognize, perceive, see, 322, 70, 583, 4, 195, 21, 196, 33, 147, 21, 668, 54, 737, 189; to deem, consider, regard, 600, 31, 233, 17, 271, 2, 272, 7, 272, 12; to advise, 146, 13, 209, 17 — language, 486, 34; a declaration or saying, 483, 10, 501, 27, 32, 11; a precept, 753, 211; a decision, 507, 26; advice, 594, 30; a theme, 503, 11.

**Readifye:** to rebuild, 302, 46.

**Re-allie:** to rally, recompose, 663, 23.

**Reame:** a realm, 365, 53, 473, 45.

**Reare:** to lift, raise, bring up, 240, 11, 446, 41, 595, 42, 593, 26, 266, 21, 308, 17, 304, 64, 577, 6; to establish, 585, 14; to carry off, take away, tear away, 402, 53, 384, 19, 454, 6, 472, 42; to get rid of, 367, 10; to rouse, bring on, 334, 64, 322, 68, 423, 34, 326, 9.

**Rebut:** to drive back, repel, 223, 53, 242, 23, 382, 10, 756, 122; to recoil, 154, 15.

**Rechiesse:** reckless, 102, 950.

**Reclame, reclayne:** to call back, 577, 9; to retreat, 602, 43 — recall, 397, 16.

**Recomfortlesse:** comfortless, 539, 24.

**Record:** to remember, 499, 19, 114, 28, 682, 295; to recite, 19, 30, 688, 97.

**Recoure, recower:** to recover, regain, 436, 20, 479, 25, 489, 58. [v. **Recure.**]

**Recourse:** return, retirement, 458, 29, 508, 2, 544, 20, 391, 26 — to return, 137, 120.

**Recower v. Recoure.**

**Recoyle, recuille, recule:** to retreat, retire, 586, 20, 556, 9, 573, 47, 576, 65, 209, 17, 99, 754; to push or drag back, 315, 19.

**Recure:** to remedy, reinvigorate, restore, 13, 154, 214, 52, 199, 2, 177, 44, 210, 24, 238, 54 — to recover, regain, 314, 12, 315, 19, 363, 34; to attain, 746, 298. [v. **Recoure.**]

**Redd, Reede v. Read.**

**Regiment:** government, rule, control, 347, 40, 471, 30, 551, 30, 661, 2, 670, 17; a kingdom, 296, 59, 508, 30, 689, 233.

**Release:** to relax, 588, 36, 226, 19; to remit, 239, 60; to abandon, 428, 19, 589, 43.

**Relent:** to abate, slacken, 426, 2, 310, 27, 356, 49; to relax effort, 428, 18; to give way, 611, 20, 437, 26; to soften, qualify, 371, 39, 40, 84, 368, 743, 84; to repent, 369, 25 — slackening of speed, 544, 24.

**Relide:** rallied, joined forces, 479, 26.

**Relive:** to bring back to life, revive, 650, 24, 354, 35, 206, 52; to cheer, 381, 3.

**Remercy:** to thank, 308, 16.

**Remoud:** removed, 394, 43.

**Renfierce:** to make more fierce, 286, 45.

**Renforce, re'nforce:** to make fresh efforts, 254, 14; to compel again, 302, 48.

**Renne:** to run, 20, 118, 30, 61, 36, 3; (pp.) 42, 224.

**Renowme:** renown, 359, 11.

**Renowned:** renowned, e. g. 216, 2, 207, 3.

**Rent:** to rend, 706, 88; to hurl, 566, 34.

**Renverse:** to turn upside down, 170, 41, 520, 37.

**Repent:** repentance, 414, 24.

**Reprife:** reproof, reproach, 381, 1, 342, 5, 256, 28, 203, 29.

**Reprive:** to reprove, 539, 24.

**Reprive:** to relieve, rescue, 521, *arg.*, 525, 35, 501, 31, 238, 55.

**Reprize:** to take again, 312, 44, 442, 8.

**Repryve v. Reprive.**

**Requere:** to request, 160, 12; to demand, 182, 27, 551, 27.

**Requite, requight** (*pret. requit*): to salute in return, 97, 587, 213, 49, 440, 47, 454, 4, 538, 20.

**Reslant:** resident, 493, 28.

**Respire:** to take breath, enjoy a respite, 184, 44, 200, 8, 220, 28, 269, 44.

**Restore:** restitution, 360, 18; refreshment, 715, 34.

**Retraite, retrate:** retreat, 577, 9, 489, 57 — to retreat, 146, 13, 194, 12.

**Retrait, retrate:** a portrait, 288, 4; expression, 249, 25.

**Retyre:** retirement, retreat, 638, 27, 745, 235.

**Revengement:** revenge, 445, 35.

**Reverse:** to drive away, get rid of, 341, 48, 451, 31; to bring back, 206, 48; to return, 350, 1, 112, 22.

**Revoke:** to call back, withdraw, 580, 27, 182, 28, 146, 12, 406, 21; to restrain, 243, 28.

**Rew:** a row, order, 368, 17, 370, 35, 531, 22, 73, 173.

**Rew, rue:** to afflict, 155, 21; to pity, compassionate, 151, 51, 156, 26, 469, 20, 562, 4, 647, 2; to grieve, 692, 397.

**Rewardfull:** liberal in rewards, 689, 187.

**Richesse:** wealth, 165, 7, 177, 47.

**Rid v. Read.**

**Ridd:** rode, 360, 13.

**Rifte:** riven, 274, 23, 223, 54.

**Rine:** rind, bark, 13, 111.

**Riotise:** 'riotous, extravagant living, 167, 20, 330, 33, 414, 25.

**Rocke:** a distaff, 432, 48.

**Rontes:** young bullocks, 11, 5.

**Rove:** to shoot an arrow with an elevation, not point blank, 144, 3, 332, 50, 533, 35, 37, 79.

**Rowme:** room, e. g. 407, 27.

**Rownd:** to whisper to, 399, 30.

**Royne:** to growl, 559, 33.

**Rubine:** a ruby, 249, 24, 320, 54.

**Rudded:** made ruddy, 737, 173.

**Rue v. Rew.**

**Ruff:** to ruffle, 338, 27, 407, 32, 76, 402.

**Ruffin:** disordered, 169, 34.

**Ruinate** (*pp. ruinate*): to throw down, bring to ruin, 314, 7, 385, 28, 565, 26, 728, 56, 103, 1040.

**Rulesse:** lawless, 85, 431.

**Rybaudrye:** ribaldry, 45, 76.

**Sacrify:** to sacrifice, 319, 49.

**Sad:** heavy, 284, 30, 236, 45, 149, 36; firm, steady, 160, 10; sober, grave, sedate, 226, 15, 224, 5, 207, 7, 148, 29, 145, 2, 738, 234, 23, 5 — -ly: heavily, 352, 16.

**Safe:** save, 381, 60.

**Saine v. Sayne.**

**Salewd v. Salued.**

**Sallaunce:** onslaught, 234, 29.

**Salued:** saluted, 283, 23, 457, 25.

**Salvage:** savage, wild, 159, 5, 180, 11, 286, 42.

**Salve:** to heal, remedy, help, 299, 21, 444, 27, 534, 43, 597, 8, 6, 122; to bring about (by way of help), 419, 11.

**Sam:** together, 25, 168, 214, 57. [v. **Ysame.**]

**Saufgard:** safeguard, 259, 8.

**Say:** proof, quality, 654, 47.

**Sayne:** say, 32, 32, 394, 48, 393, 40, 676, 55.

**Scan:** to climb, mount to, 661, 8, 45, 88.

**Scarmoges:** skirmishes, 268, 34.

**Scerne:** to discern, 398, 22.

**Sclaunder:** slander, 467, *arg.*, 558, 26.

**Slave:** a slave, 275, 33.

**Slender:** slender, fine, 511, 27, 332, 47.

**Scorse:** exchange, 295, 55 — to exchange, 390, 16 — to chase (?), 635, 3.

**Srike:** to screech, 605, 18.

**Serine:** a chest for papers, 144, 2, 295, 56.

**Seruze:** to crush, squeeze, 312, 46, 320, 56, 363, 33.

**Sery:** to descry, 581, 38.

**Seryne v. Serine.**

**Sdaine, sdeigne:** disdain, 535, 51, 718, 5 — to disdain, 140, *Essex*, 331, 40, 333, 55, 534, 44.

**Sdeignfull:** disdainful, 527, 43, 374, 10 — -ly: disdainfully, 105, 1234.



- Sease v. Selze.**  
**See:** a seat (of dignity, or authority), 102, 980, 366, 2, 486, 30, 676, 59.  
**Seeld:** seldom, 713, 11 — rare, 712, 171.  
**Seely v. Silly.**  
**Seemelesse:** unseemly, 511, 25.  
**Seemlyhed:** comeliness, 468, 14.  
**Seen:** skilled, experienced, 6, 131, 54, 82, 430, 35, 516, 5.  
**Seew v. Sew.**  
**Selze:** to fasten, fix, 161, 19, 194, 15, 519, 29, 526, 40; to fix itself (in), 221, 38.  
**Selcouth:** strange, 468, 14.  
**Sell:** a saddle, 240, 11, 349, 60.  
**Selve:** self, 732, 75.  
**Semblably:** in like manner, 141, *Howard*.  
**Semblant:** appearance, aspect, mien, 154, 12, 339, 38, 288, 2, 293, 39, 486, 31, 644, 23, 80, 93; a phantasm, 319, 49, 357, 54.  
**Sens:** since, 450, 23.  
**Sensefull:** reasonable, 608, 37, 638, 26.  
**Sew:** to follow, pursue, 357, 50, 393, 37, 241, 17, 272, 9, 479, 26, 641, 2; s. to, to entreat, woo, 501, 29, 364, 47, 533, 41.  
**Shamefast:** modest, bashful, 531, 25, 156, 27, 208, 15 — nesse: modesty, 518, 23.  
**Shard:** a boundary, 269, 38.  
**Sheare v. Shcere.**  
**Sheave:** a sheaf, 54, 123.  
**Sheene:** bright, fair, 244, 40, 48, 38, 297, 8, 232, 10.  
**Sheere:** pure, clear, 672, 25, 456, 20, 340, 44, 404, 7.  
**Shend** (*pret. pp. shent*): to put to shame, disgrace, 33, 172, 761, 121, 232, 11, 234, 27, 268, 35, 388, 1; to reproach, revile, 152, 53, 259, 5.  
**Shene v. Sheene.**  
**Shere v. Sheere.**  
**Shldder v. Hldder.**  
**Shlne:** shining, 434, 3.  
**Shlt:** shut, 695, 709.  
**Shoke:** shook, 218, 15.  
**Shope:** shaped, 533, 39.  
**Short:** to shorten, 729, 60.  
**Shrleeh:** a screech, 605, 18.  
**Shrlech-owle, shrlek-o:** the screech-owl, 739, 345, 61, 130, 74, 283.  
**Shrlight:** a shriek, 278, 57, 603, 2 — shrieked, 385, 32.  
**Sib:** a kinsman, or of kin (to), 626, 41, 345, 26, 26, 269.  
**Slch:** such, 377, 29, 40, 79, 41, 178.  
**Slicker, syker:** assured, 95, 430 — surely, 12, 55, 32, 33, 33, 93 — nesse: safety, 376, 25; self-reliance, 411, 55.  
**Slide:** loose, trailing, 127, 9, 766, 7.  
**Siege:** a seat, 244, 39.  
**Sleld:** hung (with), 531, 21.  
**Slent:** a scion, 504, 1.  
**Slight:** sighed, 595, 42, 700, 53.  
**Slke:** such, 14, 211, 24, 82, 44, 35.  
**Silly, seely:** simple, harmless, helpless, 'poor,' 149, 30, 155, 21, 180, 10, 183, 35, 246, 6, 374, 8, 32, 30, 34, 190, 729, 63.  
**Simplesse:** simplicity, foolishness, 33, 172.  
**Sln:** since, 653, 44.  
**Singulf:** a sob, 405, 12, 537, 13, 73, 232, 689, 168.  
**Slt, slt with:** (*impers.*) to befit, to be incumbent on, 48, 26, 149, 30, 42, 232, 769, 40.  
**Slte, sited:** placed, situated, 768, 46, 370, 31.  
**Sith:** since the time when, 326, 7, 344, 16; since, because, for, 177, 43, 337, 17.  
**Slthe, slth:** time, times, 687, 23, 399, 33, 10, 49.  
**Slthence, sithens:** since that time, 16, 46, 32, 69, 335, 6, 339, 39; afterwards, 522, 13 — since, because, 171, 51, 200, 8.  
**Sltx:** sixth, 212, 42, 411, 2.  
**Skill:** to understand, 95, 381; s. of, to be versed in, to understand, 733, 84, 608, 38, 332, 50; (*impers.*) to matter, 523, 14 — power of discernment, understanding, knowledge, 238, 54, 347, 45, 353, 25, 372, 46, 388, 3, 432, 44, 646, 37, 30, 65.  
**Sklppet:** a skiff, 315, 14.  
**Slake:** to slacken, 172, 10, 343, 10, 548, 5.  
**Slight:** craft, cunning, 598, 16, 610, 13; a device, 189, 30.  
**Silppcr:** slippery, 50, 153.  
**Slombred:** stunned, insensible, 187, 15, 281, 11.  
**Slombry:** drowsy, 369, 26.  
**Slug:** to dawdle, vegetate, 375, 12, 233, 23.  
**Smirke:** smart, 12, 72.  
**Smit:** smote, 155, 18, 568, 7.  
**Smot:** smote, smitten, 195, 24, 219, 25, 340, 46.  
**Smouldring, smouldry:** suffocating, 187, 13, 259, 3, 406, 21.  
**Snar:** to snarl, 658, 27.  
**Snebhe, snlb:** to chide, snub, 13, 126, 95, 372.  
**Snubbe:** a snag, 193, 7.  
**Soft:** to soften, 723, 32.  
**Softly:** easy, quiet, 621, 6.  
**Solle v. Soyle.**  
**Sold:** pay, 289, 6.  
**Soleln, solleln:** sullen, gloomy, 48, 17, 25, 213.  
**Solemnize:** solemnization, 207, 4.  
**Soly:** solely, singly, 696, 801, 478, 18.  
**Somd:** fledged, 7, 217.  
**Somedeles:** somewhat, 23, 56.  
**Soote:** sweetly, 20, 111, 45, 90.  
**Soothlleh, soothly:** truly, in truth, 336, 14, 591, 13, 613, 37.  
**Soothsay:** a prediction, 295, 51, 430, 35, 491, 13; an omen, 388, 50.  
**Sort:** a company, band, swarm, etc., 702, 139, 635, 5, 487, 43, 331, 40, 526, 36 — to consort (with), 713, 20.  
**Souce v. Souse.**  
**Sound:** a swoon, 588, 34, 444, 24, 358, *arg.* [Cf. *Swound.*]  
**Souse:** to swoop, 172, 8; to fall violently, 352, 16; to deal sweeping blows, 437, 25; to strike violently, 445, 30; to cast to ground, 461, 9 — the swoop of a bird of prey, 311, 36, 436, 19; sweeping blows, 524, 24.  
**Southsaye v. Soothsay.**  
**Sovenaunce:** remembrance, 264, 8, 287, 51, 24, 82, 48, 5.  
**Sowee v. Souse.**  
**Sownd v. Sound.**  
**Sowne:** a sound, 139, *R. S.*, 150, 41, 270, 47, 354, 30.  
**Sowse v. Souse.**

**Soyle:** the slough in which a wild boar has wallowed, or the marshy ground or water to which a hunted boar or deer takes for refuge, 753, 218, 126, 6, 768, 44, 489, 55; the prey, 435, 16.

**Space:** to roam, 432, 44, 474, 54, 505, 11, 668, 55.

**Spalles:** shoulders, 267, 29.

**Spangs:** spangles, 496, 45.

**Sparke:** to sparkle, 733, 81.

**Sparre:** a bar or bolt, 567, 4 — to bar, bolt, 566, 37, 25, 224.

**Spend** (*pp.*): spent, 24, 71.

**Sperre v. Sparre.**

**Sperse:** to scatter, diffuse, 520, 37, 170, 48, 150, 39.

**Spight:** injury, shame, 335, 8; grudging, stinting, 332, 51 — to begrudge, envy, 25, 198, 77, 523, 166, 14, 359, 7, 532, 29, 536, 6, 665, 32.

**Spill:** to destroy, 380, 54, 164, 43; to mar, ruin, 293, 37, 384, 26, 536, 1, 12, 52, 32, 68; to perish, 37, 60.

**Spire:** to shoot or put forth, 365, 52, 59, *Letter*.

**Sprad:** spread, 558, 25.

**Sprent:** sprinkled, 319, 45, 428, 18, 119, 239.

**Spright:** breath, spirits, 599, 26, 610, 17, 263, 36, 174, 19; the mind, 253, 7, 665, 35.

**Springal:** a youth, 562, 6.

**Spyal:** a spy, 231, 4.

**Spyre v. Spire.**

**Stadle:** a support, staff, 180, 14.

**Stanck:** weary, 40, 47.

**Stead, sted, steed:** place, a place, 138, *Vision*, 205, 41, 242, 21, 258, 42; a space of time, 626, 40; a steading, farm (?), 23, 43; an abode, 41, 120; a situation, condition, plight, 101, 861, 612, 29, 579, 23, 444, 22, 336, 16.

**Steale:** a handle, 578, 14.

**Steane:** a large jar, 674, 42.

**Sted, steed, v. Stead.**

**Steem:** to esteem, 448, 3, 646, 35.

**Stent:** to stint, stop, 253, 12.

**Sterve:** to die, perish, 268, 34, 418, 4; to starve, 745, 200.

**Steven:** a sound, 42, 224.

**Stie v. Sty.**

**Still:** to fall in drops, 338, 29, 465, 35.

**Stltre:** to steer, govern, 231, 7 — to move, stir, incite, 379, 45, 292, 30, 258, 2.

**Stomachous:** haughty or resentful, 283, 23.

**Stomacke:** arrogance, 104, 1103, 276, 41.

**Stonied:** confounded, dismayed, 571, 30.

**Stonishment:** insensibility, swoon, 352, 19.

**Stonlsht:** dismayed, 417, 44.

**Stoond, stound:** stunned, 186, 12, 571, 29.

**Stound, stownd:** [apparently several distinct words.] (1) the state of being stunned, 600, 30; a stunning effect, 459, 37; a stunning blow, 444, 24; a disconcerting sight, 374, 7; a loud sound, 343, 9, 334, 63. (2) a throe, pang, pain, 538, 17, 75, 373, 26, 257. (3) a moment, a time, 40, 56, 90, 26, 197, 38, 221, 36; a crisis, peril, calamity, harm, 193, 12, 195, 25, 309, 25, 368, 38, 518, 22; a period of effort, 55, 140.

**Stoup:** to swoop down, 106, 1262, 218, 18, 378, 39, 399, 30 — a swoop, 530, 15.

**Stovre, stoure:** [the most flexible of Spenser's words: most examples can be interpreted vari-

ously.] turmoil, disturbance, strife, 747, 73, 193, 5, 518, 21, 142, *Raleigh*, 266, 16; a combat, encounter, an assault, onset, force or violence (in attack), 655, 3, 191, 48, 186, 12, 285, 35, 286, 43, 259, 10, 603, 3, 621, 8; distress, an affliction, a misfortune, 561, 45, 153, 7, 162, 30, 170, 46, 178, 51; a paroxysm, 348, 50; a storm, the blast or violence of a storm, 390, 13, 287, 48, 10, 27; a moment, a crisis, 10, 51, 250, 34.

**Stralnt:** gripe, 509, 14.

**Strake:** a streak, 254, 15. [v. also *Strolæ*.]

**Strene:** strain, race, 559, 32, 615, 9.

**Strifull v. Stryfull.**

**Stroke, strooke, strake** (*pret.*): struck, 155, 19, 172, 11, 173, 12, 250, 32, 253, 7; **stroken** (*pp.*), 590, 7.

**Strond:** a stream, 266, 19.

**Strooke v. Stroke.**

**Stryfull:** full of strife, contentious, 241, 13, 336, 12, 450, 24, 103, 1021.

**Sty:** to mount, ascend, soar, 140, *Essex*, 219, 25, 277, 46, 116, 42; to float in the air, 480, 33.

**Submisse:** humble, 489, 51.

**Subverse:** to subvert, destroy, 105, 1234, 416, 42.

**Suffisaunce:** contentment, 119, 207.

**Sult:** following, pursuit, 548, 3, 215, 60, 357, 52, 404, 5.

**Surbate** (*pp.* *surbet*): to bruise or chafe (the feet), 354, 34, 242, 22.

**Surcease:** to desist, 105, 1221, 428, 19; to come to an end, 616, 14, 20, 125; to desist from, 328, 23, 354, 31, 357, 52; to put an end to, 513, 37, 720, 11.

**Surquedry:** presumption, arrogance, 512, 30, 327, 13, 317, 31, 318, 39.

**Survey:** to view from above, 294, 45, 82, 221; to look over, 13, 145.

**Suspect:** suspicion, 180, 13, 412, 14, 546, 38.

**Suspence:** suspended, 458, 34.

**Swarve:** to swerve, 208, 14, 251, 42.

**Swat** (*pret.*): sweat, 358, 3, 514, 46.

**Swelt:** fainted, died, 657, 21, 461, 9; burned, 186, 6, 407, 27.

**Sword, sward:** a sword, 217, 9, 437, 31.

**Swinck, swlnke:** to toil, 272, 8, 607, 32, 41, 132 — toil, 23, 36, 32, 34.

**Swlnge:** to singe, 220, 26.

**Swlnke v. Swinck.**

**Swound, swowne, swone:** a swoon, 609, 6, 618, 30, 424, 43, 150, 41, 206, 52. [Cf. *Sound*.]

**Sybbe v. Sib.**

**Syker v. Slicker.**

**Syrlye:** 'stately and prowde' (E. K.), 34, 203.

**Sythe v. Slthe.**

**Tabrere:** a tabor-player, 23, 22.

**Talants:** talons, 199, 48, 222, 41.

**Tapet:** a piece of tapestry, 119, 276, 407, 29.

**Tarras:** terraces, 557, 21.

**Teade:** a torch, 229, 37, 120, 293, 735, 27.

**Teene:** grief, woe, 48, 41, 204, 34, 232, 15, 233, 21, 364, 40; harm, 226, 18, 562, 7. [v. *Tine*.]

**Teld:** told, 589, 44, 664, 27.

**Tene v. Teene.**

**Thee:** to prosper, 235, 33, 308, 17.

**Then:** than, e. g. 23, 64, 695, 674, 156, 26.

- Thetch:** to thatch, 93, 264.  
**Thether:** thither, e. g. 165, 2, 469, 21.  
**Thewed:** mannered, conditioned (well or ill), 267, 26, 12, 96, 748, 137.  
**Thewes:** mental and moral qualities, manners, behavior, 594, 31, 199, 3, 207, 4, 478, 14.  
**Thick:** a thicket, 236, 39, 248, 21.  
**Thlike:** this same, that same, this, that, 10, 61, 16, 13, 16, 49, 23, 1.  
**Tho, thoe:** then, e. g. 147, 18, 151, 50, 24, 109 — those, 40, 32.  
**Thorough:** through, e. g. 149, 32, 168, 28.  
**Threasury:** treasure, 280, 4.  
**Threttie:** thirty, 12, 17.  
**Thrid:** a thread, 432, 48.  
**Thril:** to pierce, 209, 19, 183, 37, 464, 31.  
**Thrillant, thrilling:** piercing, keen, 219, 20, 164, 42, 258, 46.  
**Thrist:** thirst, 266, 17 — to thirst, 183, 38. [v. Thrust.]  
**Thristy:** thirsty, 18, 8, 212, 38.  
**Thrive:** thriven, 42, 226.  
**Throughly:** thoroughly, 177, 45, 206, 50; through, 505, 10.  
**Throw:** to strike, 390, 16 — a stroke, a thrust, 259, 9, 286, 41, 361, 21, 392, 29, 72, 134 — a while, 357, 53.  
**Thrust:** thirst, 379, 50 — to thirst, 243, 29. [v. Thrist.]  
**Tickle:** unstable, uncertain, 353, 28, 597, 5, 671, 22, 129, 7.  
**Tlde:** a time, season, 156, 29, 369, 21, 392, 32, 460, 47, 46, 117.  
**Tight:** tied, 524, 22, 659, 34.  
**Tine:** grief, 201, 15, 438, 37, 70, 3; wrath, malice, 502, 34, 403, 1; harm, 505, 13 [v. Tcene] — to kindle, 84, 394, 281, 11, 349, 57, 375, 15; to inflame, 309, 21.  
**Tire:** a train or series, 169, 35.  
**To-:** a prefix to verbs which intensifies their meaning. v. **To-brusd**, etc.  
**To-brusd:** battered exceedingly, 553, 44.  
**Tofore:** formerly, 441, 7, 672, 30.  
**Toot:** to look about, 16, 66.  
**To-perishe:** to perish utterly, 64, 361.  
**Toren:** torn, 705, 26.  
**To-rent:** tattered, torn to pieces, 461, 8, 548, 4, 553, 43.  
**Tort:** wrong (inflicted), 224, 4, 336, 12, 471, 31, 62, 167.  
**Tortious:** unjust, wrongfully injurious, 477, 12, 241, 18.  
**To-torne:** tattered, 556, 10.  
**Totty:** unsteady, 12, 55, 673, 39.  
**Tour:** a tower, 393, 35 — to tower, 317, 30.  
**Touze:** to harass, worry, 310, 33.  
**Toward:** approaching, imminent, 682, 280, 255, 22, 326, 9; promising, 116, 26.  
**To-worne:** worn out, 556, 10.  
**Trace:** to tread, 143, *Walsingham*; to walk, go, 196, 31, 281, 10, 471, 34, 600, 29; to move about, 456, 18; to step (in dance), 640, 42; (of a road) to 'go,' 273, 21; to rush, 420, 13 — a step, pace, 29, 27.  
**Tract:** to trace, track, 232, 12, 269, 39, 620, 3, 622, 17 — a track, trace, 83, 279, 95, 406, 657, 22, 606, 24, 159, 10; the course, lapse (of time), 636, 14, 522, 8.  
**Trade:** tread, trail, 74, 275, 269, 39; conduct, a practice, dealings, 334, 67, 646, 39, 29, 45, 407, 32; sojourn, abode, 317, 30 — to dwell, 491, 9.  
**Traine:** the tail, 26, 281, 147, 18, 221, 37; proceedings, 510, 15; a draw-net, 147, 18; guile, an artifice, 343, 11, 203, 31, 184, 41, 179, 3, 471, 31, 688, 118.  
**Transard:** transformed, 407, 31.  
**Transmew:** to transform, change, 189, 35, 330, 38, 250, 37.  
**Transmove:** to transform, 409, 43.  
**Trasforme:** to transform, 262, 27.  
**Travel:** travail, labor, 94, 310, 312, 44.  
**Traveled, travelled:** tormented, harassed, 9, *arg.*, 6, 183.  
**Trayne v. Traine.**  
**Treachetour:** a traitor, 303, 51, 628, 7.  
**Treachour:** a traitor, 170, 41, 203, 32.  
**Treague:** a truce, 243, 33.  
**Trenchand:** cutting, keen, 219, 24.  
**Trode, troad:** tread, footing, 394, 49, 641, 5, 32, 14; a path, 40, 92, 95, 406.  
**Truncked:** truncated, 193, 10, 259, 4.  
**Trye:** tried, proved, 511, 26.  
**Turribant:** a turban, 493, 28.  
**Tway:** two, 33, 152, 23, 18, 525, 35, 404, 11.  
**Twayne:** atwain, asunder, 595, 38.  
**Twight:** to twit, upbraid, 537, 12.  
**Twyfold:** twofold, 175, 28.  
**Tyne:** to perish, 495, 36. [v. also Tine.]  
**Tyran:** a tyrant, 208, 9, 45, 98.  
**Tyrannesse:** a female tyrant, 177, 46.  
**Tyranning:** tyrannizing, 460, 1.  
**Tyreling:** tired, jaded or mean, meagre (?), 327, 17, 626, 40.  
**Uncouth:** unknown, 5, 1, 40, 60; unusual, strange, 147, 15, 179, 9.  
**Uncruded:** uncured, 737, 175.  
**Underfong:** to get, 48, 22; to entrap, beguile, 30, 103, 509, 7.  
**Underkeep:** to keep under, 71, 77, 377, 33.  
**Underlay:** to surpass, 80, 99.  
**Underminde:** to undermine, 540, 32, 32, 122.  
**Undersaye:** to assert in contradiction, 40, 91.  
**Undersong:** a burden, refrain, 38, 128, 681, 245, 689, 169, 761, 110.  
**Undlight:** to doff, 547, 41, 390, 19, 159, 4 — (*pp.*) undressed, 315, 15.  
**Uneath, uneth, uneathes, unnethes:** difficult, 360, 17, 211, 31 — with difficulty, scarcely, 234, 27, 237, 49, 263, 1, 9, 6, 40, 48; almost (?), 216, 4; in distress, 204, 38.  
**Unheedfly:** by heedlessness, 483, 13.  
**Unhele, unheale:** to uncover, 321, 64, 449, 10.  
**Unkend, unkent:** unknown, 491, 13, 4, *To His Booke*.  
**Unlich:** unlike, 175, 28.  
**Unnethes v. Uneath.**  
**Unperfite:** imperfect, 676, *Title*.  
**Unreave:** to unravel, 722, 23.  
**Unred:** untold of, 497, 2.  
**Unruilment:** unruliness, 479, 23.  
**Unsoote:** unsweet, 54, 118.  
**Unthriftyhead:** unthriftiness, 414, 25.



- Until:** unto, 50, 185, 216, 4.  
**Unware:** unaware, 254, 17 — **-ly:** unawares, 434, 8.  
**Unwares:** unawares, 182, 27, 231, 4, 628, 8; unknown (to), 444, 27; unsuspiciously, 26, 275.  
**Unweeting:** ignorant, unconscious, 185, 6, 215, 65, 254, 17 — by accident, 208, 9; unknown (to), 349, 57, 463, 17; unawares, 694, 598, 98, 606 — **-ly:** by accident, 549, 15.  
**Unweldy:** unwieldy, 290, 13.  
**Unwist:** unknown, 338, 26 — without knowing how, 506, 22.  
**Upbrast:** burst open, 653, 43.  
**Upbray:** to chide, 424, 42; to disgrace, 258, 45 — a rebuke, an invective, 372, 50.  
**Upcheare:** to comfort, 589, 44.  
**Uphlld:** upheld, 650, 21.  
**Uphoord:** to heap up, 78, 553.  
**Uplean:** to lean (on), 81, 154.  
**Upryst:** uprisen, 16, 18.  
**Upstay:** to support, 413, 21.  
**Usaunce:** use, 271, 7.
- Vade v. Fade.**  
**Vall:** to lower, 391, 20.  
**Valnesse:** vanity, 125, 2.  
**Valiance:** worth, 64, 324; valor, 247, 14.  
**Vantage:** to profit, avail, 171, 49.  
**Vaunce:** to advance, 443, 17.  
**Vaute, vawte:** a vault, 292, 29, 85, 444 — to vault, 99, 693.  
**Vellet:** velvet, 25, 185.  
**Vengeable:** deserving, revenge, or revengeful, 256, 30, 258, 46.  
**Vengement:** avengement, 598, 18.  
**Venger:** an avenger, 161, 20.  
**Ventre:** to venture, 464, 31.  
**Ventrous:** venturous, 429, 27, 454, 4.  
**Verdt:** a verdict, 672, 27.  
**Vermeill, vermell, vermill, vermilly:** vermilion, 248, 22, 299, 24, 382, 6, 738, 227.  
**Vestlment:** a garment, clothing, 415, 29, 538, 19.  
**Vild:** vile, 158, *arg.*, 205, 46, 569, 18; low, vulgar, 375, 15; lowly, 375, 17 — vilely, 583, *arg.* — **-ly:** vilely, 164, 43.  
**Vlsnomy v. Physnomy.**  
**Vyide v. Vlld.**
- Wae:** woe, 40, 25.  
**Wagmolre:** a quagmire, 41, 130.  
**Waide v. Way.**  
**Walft:** a waif, 501, 31.  
**Waillefull:** lamenting, mournful, lamentable, 12, 82, 38, 162, 355, 38.  
**Waine:** to draw, sway (?), 662, 10. [*v. also Wayne.*]  
**Wake:** awake, 30, 87.  
**Wan:** won, 241, 17, 247, 16.  
**War v. Warre.**  
**Ware:** wary, cautious, 185, 1, 198, 44.  
**Warelesse:** heedless, 484, 20, 530, 17; unaware, 426, 3; unfelt, unconscious, 506, 22.  
**Warely:** warily, 207, 5.  
**War-hable:** fit for war, 304, 62.  
**Warlment:** wariness, 435, 17.  
**Warke, werk:** work, 24 145. 235. 32, 95, 416.
- Warray, warrey:** to harry with war, wage war on, 726, 44, 177, 48, 303, 50; to wage war, 365, 48.  
**Warre:** worse, 471, 31, 41, 108 — a ware, 36, 26.  
**Wast:** waste, 743, 70; waist, 562, 8.  
**Wastefull, wastfull:** devastating, 9, 2; uninhabited, desolate, 38, 151, 149, 32, 271, 2.  
**Wastnes:** desolation, waste places, 159, 3.  
**Watchet:** pale blue, 355, 40, 493, 27, 710, 3.  
**Wawes:** waves, 313, 4.  
**Way:** to weigh, judge, value, 419, 7, 668, 55, 29, 47; to experience (?), 481, 38.  
**Waylefull v. Waillefull.**  
**Wayment:** to lament, wail, 75, 355, 232, 16 — lamentation, 354, 35, 65, 390.  
**Wayne:** a chariot, 165, 9, 176, 41, 358, 60.  
**Weanell:** a weanling, 42, 198.  
**Wearish:** wizened, 452, 34.  
**Weave** (*pret. pp. weft*): to toss, waft, 611, 23; to be wafted, float, 522, 10, 266, 18.  
**Weeldlesse:** unwieldy, 436, 19.  
**Weet, weeten:** to know, learn, understand, 50, 183, 159, 6, 160, 11, 183, 34, 335, 6, 359, 7; to know how, be able, 528, 51 — to w., to wit, that is, to be specific, etc., 305, 71, 561, 1, 452, 34, 596, 3. [*v. Wist, Wot.*] — to wet, 480, 33.  
**Weeting:** knowledge, 567, 39.  
**Weetingly:** deliberately, 597, 11.  
**Weetiesse:** ignorant, 263, 36; unperceived, 338, 26; senseless, 32, 35 — ignorantly, 629, 17; at random, 393, 41.  
**Weft:** a waif, 400, 36, 426, 4 — (*pp.*): waived, shunned, 355, 36. [*v. also Weave.*]  
**Weld:** to govern, manage, 105, 1232, 417, 1, 556, 11; to move, swing, wave, 423, 37, 628, 11, 672, 31, 220, 28, 59, 14; to wear, bear, 44, 40, 25, 206.  
**Welke:** to fade, grow dim, 148, 23; to make dim, 48, 13, 10, 73.  
**Weren, werne:** were, 254, 14, 431, 41.  
**Wex:** wax, 382, 6 — to wax, grow, become, 299, 20, 236, 42, 168, 30; to make greater, 433, 52 — **wexen:** waxen, 53, 68; grown, become, 66, 472. [*v. Woxe.*]  
**Whally:** discolored (as in wall-eyes), 167, 24.  
**Wheare v. Where.**  
**When as:** when, 156, 32, 204, 37, 206, 51, 254, 16.  
**Whenceforth:** forth from which place, 120, 316.  
**When so:** whenever, when, 342, 7.  
**Where, wheare:** a place, spct, part, 352, 19, 396, 9, 669, 5, 23, 9.  
**Whereas:** where, e. g. 682, 283, 160, 12, 175, 29.  
**Where so:** wheresoever, 233, 18, 442, 13.  
**Whether:** whither, 690, 251, 53, 63, 458, 35.  
**Whillere v. Whyleare.**  
**Whilles:** while, 200, 9, 206, 49, 256, 34 — the whilles: while, 200, 8; meanwhile, 252, 2, 293, 40, 328, 19, 411, 6; the w. . . the w., while . . . at the same time, 279, 62.  
**Whist:** silenced, 676, 59.  
**Whither:** whether, 44, 45; which one, 102, 997.  
**Whott:** hot, e. g. 210, 26.

**Whyleare, whillere:** some time ago or before, lately, 367, 13, 369, 26, 280, 3, 240, 11, 203, 28.

**Whyles v. Whilles.**

**Widder:** wider, 42, 210.

**Wldowhead:** widowhood, 74, 240.

**Wight:** active, nimble, 17, 91 — **-ly:** quickly, 39, 5. [v. also **Wlte.**]

**Wimble:** nimble, 17, 91.

**Wlsard:** a wise man, a sage, 295, 53, 497, 2, 676, 55.

**Wlst** (*pret.* of **Weet**): knew, 175, 27, 253, 6; supposed, 592, 20.

**Wlte, wltén, wight:** to blame, chide, 315, 16, 357, 52, 698, 916, 25, 159 — censure, blame, 30, 100, 598, 16.

**Wltelesse:** blameless, 38, 136.

**Wlthhault:** withheld, 307, 9.

**Wlthouten:** without, 182, 27, 511, 25.

**Wlvehood:** wifehood, 448, 3.

**Wlvely:** wifely, 448, 3.

**Wlzard v. Wlsard.**

**Woe:** sorrowful, 287, 53, 423, 38.

**Womanhed:** womanhood, 369, 28.

**Won v. Wonne.**

**Wonderous:** wondrous, 117, 74.

**Wonne, wone, woon:** a dwelling, 273, 20, 470, 22 — to dwell, abide, 690, 307, 696, 774, 79, 18, 277, 49, 549, 16, 394, 48 — to be wont, 391, 21, 13, 119.

**Wont:** was wont, wert wont, 149, 34, 194, 18, 44, 4; are wont, 11, 7, 157, 40; **wonts,** is wont, 251, 41, 245, 42 — wonted, customary, 24, 80, 515, 1; made use of, 527, 44.

**Wontlesse:** unwonted, 746, 2.

**Wood:** mad, frantic, 169, 34, 174, 20, 253, 11, 651, 25 — **-nes:** madness, 407, 27.

**Woon:** won, 714, 41. [v. also **Wonne.**]

**Wot, wote** (*pres.* of **Weet**): know, 146, 13, 149, 32, 203, 31, 247, 16, 389, 7.

**Wowe:** to woo, 648, 4, 701, 67.

**Woxe:** waxed, grew, became, 104, 1103, 281, 9; **woxen,** grown, become, 141, *Howard*, 169, 34. [v. **Wex.**]

**Wrack:** violence, 456, 21, 592, 21, 11, 10, 725, 38 — to wreck, 726, 46.

**Wrackfull:** destructive, 638, 27.

**Wrast:** to wrest, 579, 21.

**Wrate:** wrote, 415, 31.

**Wrath:** wroth, 473, 43.

**Wrawl:** to waul (as a cat), 658, 27.

**Wreake:** malicious injury, an act of malice, 379, 48, 198, 43, 226, 16, 65, 397; wreck, a wreck, 108, 3, 72, 124.

**Wreakfull:** avenging, 505, 8.

**Wreke:** to wreak, 524, 24.

**Wrest:** the wrist, 242, 21, 497, 51.

**Wrlgle:** wriggling, 'wiggling,' 11, 7.

**Wrlzled:** wrinkled, 199, 47.

**Wroke, wroken:** wreaked, 428, 21, 464, 26, 514, 47, 591, 13.

**Wroth:** wrath, 260, 13.

**Wuil:** will, 738, 252.

**Wyte v. Wlte.**

**Y-:** a common prefix to the *pp.* of verbs, sometimes to the *pret.* (as **yglauunst**, 268, 31) and to the *infin.* (as **yshend**, 38, 139).

**Yate:** a gate, 25, 224.

**Ybet:** beaten, 442, 9.

**Yblent:** blinded, obscured, 20, 155, 153, 5, 271, 1. [v. **Blend.**]

**Ybore:** born, 353, 21.

**Yeled:** clad, 169, 38.

**Yelepe:** to call, name, 687, 65; **ycleped**, called, 359, 8. [v. **Cleped.**]

**Ycond:** learned, 26, 262. [v. **Con.**]

**Ydlesse:** idleness, 594, 31.

**Ydrad:** dreaded, 145, 2; afraid, 701, 87.

**Ydred:** afraid, 318, 38, 411, 2.

**Yearne:** to earn, 588, 40, 622, 15.

**Yede, yeed** (*pret.* **yode, yod**): to go, 214, 53, 216, 5, 252, 2, 422, 28, 33, 109, 709, 88.

**Yeld:** to yield, 127, 11.

**Yeven:** given, 20, 114.

**Yfere:** in company, together, 19, 68, 199, 1, 235, 35, 327, 12.

**Yfostered:** brought up, 372, 51.

**Ygoe:** gone, 23, 67 — ago, e. g. 41, 171, 359, 9.

**Ygone:** ago, 495, 39, 669, 2.

**Yirk:** to lash, 626, 44.

**Ylt:** yet, e. g. 295, 50.

**Yllke:** alike, 53, 36, 16, 39, 168, 27.

**Ylke:** the same, 38, 142.

**Ymoit:** melted, 406, 25.

**Ymp v. Impe.**

**Ynne v. In.**

**Yod, yode v. Yede.**

**Yold:** yielded, 406, 25, 405, 17, 672, 30.

**Yond:** mad, furious, outrageous, 285, 40, 376, 26.

**Yongth, youngth:** youth, 116, 34, 12, 87, 48, 20.

**Youghthly, youngthly, youthly:** of youth; youthful, 53, 75, 122, 431, 200, 9 — youthfully, 221, 34.

**Ypaid:** satisfied, pleased (well or ill), 398, 25. [v. **Apay.**]

**Ypent:** pent up, 9, 4.

**Ypight:** placed, situated, 203, 33. [v. **Plght.**]

**Yplight:** plighted, 245, 1, 277, 50.

**Yrent** (*pret.*): rent, 354, 30.

**Ysame:** together, 673, 32. [v. **Sam.**]

**Yshend:** to disgrace, 38, 139. [v. **Shend.**]

**Yshrilled** (*pret.*): sounded shrilly, 687, 62.

**Ytake:** taken, 30, 84.

**Ythundered:** smitten with the thunderbolt, 70, 8.

**Ytost:** harassed, 29, 12.

**Ywls:** surely, certainly, etc., 233, 19, 355, 37, 380, 53.

**Ywrake, ywroke, ywroken:** wreaked, 469, 14, 457, 23, 698, 921.





## INDEX OF FIRST LINES

- After, at sea a tall ship did appeare, 128, 765.  
 After long stormes and tempests overblowne,  
 515.  
 After long stormes and tempests sad assay, 729.  
 After so long a race as I have run, 732.  
 A gentle knight was pricking on the plaine, 145.  
 A gentle shepheard borne in Arcady, 700.  
 A harder lesson to learne continence, 263.  
 Ah! Colin, whether on the lowly plaine, 717.  
 Ah for pittie! wil rancke winters rage, 11.  
 Ah! whither doost thou now, thou greater  
 Muse, 668.  
 Ah! whither, Love, wilt thou now carrie mee?  
 746.  
 Ah! why hath Nature to so hard a hart, 723.  
 All that is perfect, which th' heaven beaute-  
 fies, 112.  
 All that which Aegypt whilome did devise, 114.  
 A mighty lyon, lord of all the wood, 124.  
 And is there care in heaven? And is there love,  
 280.  
 And ye, brave Lord, whose goodly personage,  
 141.  
 An hideous dragon, dreadfull to behold, 123.  
 Arion, when, through tempests cruel wracke,  
 725.  
 As Diane hunted on a day, 734.  
 A Shepheards boye (no better doe him call), 9.  
 As men in summer fearles passe the foord, 111.  
 As pilot well expert in perilous wave, 271.  
 As that brave sonne of Aeson, which by charmes,  
 110.  
 As then, no winde at all there blew, 710.  
 As when a ship, that flyes fayre under sayle,  
 178.  
 At last she came unto the place, where late, 768.  
 At last, so faire a ladie did I spie, 129, 765.  
 At length, even at the time when Morpheus,  
 128, 767.  
 Ay me! how many perils doe enfold, 192.  
 Ay me! to whom shall I my case complaine,  
 703.  
 Behold! I see the haven nigh at hand, 224.  
 Being my selfe captvyed here in care, 731.  
 Being one day at my window all alone, 128, 765.  
 Bellay, first garland of free poësie, 115.  
 Be nought dismayd that her unmoved mind,  
 718.  
 Beside the fruitfull shore of muddie Nile, 123.  
 But ah for pittie that I have thus long, 490.  
 By this the northerne wagoner had set, 152.  
 Calme was the day, and through the trembling  
 ayre, 759.  
 Colin, my deare, when shall it please thee sing,  
 48.  
 Colin, well fits thy sad cheare this sad stownd,  
 708.  
 Collyn, I see by thy new taken taske, 138.  
 Come forth, ye Nymphes, come forth, forsake  
 your watry bowres, 704.  
 Comming to kisse her lyps, (such grace I found),  
 729.  
 Cuddie, for shame! hold up thy heavye head,  
 44.  
 Darke is the day, when Phœbusface is shrowded,  
 717.  
 Dayly when I do seeke and sew for peace, 719.  
 Diggon Davie, I bidde her god day, 39.  
 Doe I not see that fayrest ymages, 727.  
 Faire proud! now tell me, why should faire be  
 proud, 722.  
 Fayre bosome, fraught with vertues richest  
 trespure, 732.  
 Fayre cruell, why are ye so fierce and cruell?  
 727.  
 Fayre eyes, the myrrour of my mazed hart, 719.  
 Fayre is my love, when her fayre golden heares,  
 733.  
 Fayre Themis streame, that from Ludds stately  
 towne, 139.  
 Fayre ye be sure, but cruell and unkind, 728.  
 Firebrand of hell, first tynd in Phlegeton, 425.  
 Fresh Spring, the herald of loves mighty king,  
 731.  
 Goe, little booke: thy selfe present, 4.  
 Grave Muses, march in triumph and with  
 prayses, 139.  
 Great Babylon her haughtie walls will praise,  
 108.  
 Great God of Love, that with thy cruell darts,  
 460.  
 Great wrong I doe, I can it not deny, 724.  
 Happy ye leaves! when as those lilly hands, 717.  
 Hard by a rivers side a virgin faire, 127.  
 Hard by a rivers side, a wailing nimphe, 766.  
 Hard is the doubt, and difficult to deeme, 476.  
 Harvey, the happy above happiest men, 762.  
 Here have I cause in men just blame to find,  
 334.  
 He that hath seene a great oke drie and dead,  
 114.  
 High on a hill a goodly cedar grewe, 124.  
 High time now gan it wex for Una fayre, 216.  
 Hope ye, my verses, that posteritie, 114.  
 How long shall this lyke dying lyfe endure, 722.  
 If the blinde Furie, which warres breedeth oft,  
 113.  
 I joy to see how, in your drawn work, 731.  
 Immortall spirite of Philisides, 69.  
 In brave poursuitt of honorable deed, 252.  
 Innocent paper, whom too cruell hand, 726.  
 In summers day, when Phœbus fairly shone,  
 123.

- In that proud port which her so goodly graceth, 720.  
 In vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace, 721.  
 In vain I thinke, right honourable Lord, 142.  
 In youth, before I waxed old, 734.  
 I saw a fresh spring rise out of a rocke, 767.  
 I saw an image, all of massie gold, 66.  
 I saw an ugly beast come from the sea, 767.  
 I saw a phoenix in the wood alone, 129, 765.  
 I saw a river swift, whose fomy billowes, 126.  
 I saw a spring out of a rocke forth rayle, 127.  
 I saw a wolfe under a rockie cave, 126.  
 I saw a woman sitting on a beast, 767.  
 I saw, in secret to my dame, 734.  
 I saw new Earth, new Heaven, sayde Saint John, 767.  
 I saw raise up on pillars of ivorie, 766.  
 I saw raysde up on yvorie pillours tall, 125.  
 I saw the bird that can the sun endure, 126.  
 I saw the birde that dares beholde the sunne, 766.  
 I saw two beares, as white as anie milke, 67.  
 I sing of deadly dolorous debate, 116.  
 Is it her nature, or is it her will, 725.  
 Is not thilke same a gotheard prowde, 32.  
 Is not thilke the mery moneth of May, 23.  
 It chaunced me on day beside the shore, 59.  
 It falls me here to write of Chastity, 325.  
 It hath bene through all ages ever seene, 447.  
 It often fals, (as here it earst befell), 440.  
 It often fals in course of commou life, 567.  
 It was the month in which the righteous Maide, 90.  
 It was the time when rest, soft sliding downe, 125.  
 It was the time when rest, the gift of gods, 765.  
 Joy of my life, full oft for loving you, 733.  
 Lackyng my love, I go from place to place, 732.  
 Lastly, I saw an arke of purest golde, 69.  
 Leave, lady, in your glasse of christall clene, 726.  
 Let not one sparke of filthy lustfull fyre, 733.  
 Like as an hynd forth singled from the heard, 373.  
 Like as a ship, that through the ocean wyde, 654.  
 Like as a ship with dreadfull storme long tost, 603.  
 Like as the gentle hart it selfe bewrayes, 620.  
 Like as the seeded field greene grasse first shoves, 114.  
 Like as whilome the children of the earth, 110.  
 Like as ye see the wrathfull sea from farre, 111.  
 Lo, Collin, here the place whose pleasaunt syte, 29.  
 Loe ! I have made a Calender for every yeare, 56.  
 Lo ! I the man, whose Muse whylome did maske, 144.  
 Long having deeply gron'd these visions sad, 128.  
 Long languishing in double malady, 727.  
 Long-while I sought to what I might compare, 719.  
 Looking aside I saw a stately bed, 68.  
 Looking far foorth into the ocean wide, 124.  
 Love, lift me up upon thy golden wings, 750.  
 Love, that long since hast to thy mighty powre, 742.  
 Lyke as a huntsman, after weary chace, 730.  
 Lyke as a ship, that through the ocean wyde, 724.  
 Lyke as the culver on the bared bough, 734.  
 Magnificke Lord, whose vertues excellent, 140.  
 Mark when she smiles with amiable cheare, 725.  
 Mars, shaming to have given so great head, 110.  
 Men call you fayre, and you doe credit it, 732.  
 Me thought I saw the grave where Laura lay, 138.  
 More then most faire, full of the living fire, 719.  
 Most glorious Lord of lyfe, that on this day, 730.  
 Most happy letters ! fram'd by skilfull trade, 731.  
 Most noble Lord, the pillor of my life, 141.  
 Most sacred fyre, that burnest mightily, 341.  
 Much richer then that vessell seem'd to bee, 127.  
 My hungry eyes, through greedy covetize, 724.  
 My love is lyke to yse, and I to fyre, 723.  
 My song, thus now in thy conclusions, 765.  
 Ne may I, without blot of endlesse blame, 143.  
 New Yeaere, forth looking out of Janus gate, 718.  
 Next unto this a statelie towre appeared, 66.  
 No otherwise than raynie cloud, first fed, 112.  
 Nor the swift furie of the flames aspiring, 110.  
 Nought is more honorable to a knight, 508.  
 Nought is on earth more sacred or divine, 541.  
 Nought is there under heav'ns wide hollownesse, 158.  
 Nought under heaven so strongly doth allure, 547.  
 Now ginnes this goodly frame of Temperaunce, 313.  
 No wound, which warlike hand of enemy, 614.  
 Now turne againe my teme, thou jolly swayne, 634.  
 Of all Gods workes, which doe this world adorne, 288.  
 Of Court, it seemes, men Courtesie doe call, 583.  
 Of lovers sad calamities of old, 418.  
 Of this worlds theatre in which we stay, 728.  
 Oft when my spirit doth spred her bolder winges, 731.  
 O goodly golden chayne ! wherewith yfere, 199.  
 O hatefull hellish snake ! what Furie furst, 403.  
 One day as I unwarily did gaze, 720.  
 One day I sought with her hart-thrilling eies, 720.  
 One day I wrote her name upon the strand, 732.  
 One day, whiles that my daylie cares did sleepe, 122.  
 On high hills top I saw a stately frame, 125.  
 On hill, a frame an hundred cubites hie, 766.  
 O sacred hunger of ambitious mindes, 576.  
 O that I had the Thracian poets harpe, 113.  
 O warie wisdom of the man that would, 113.  
 O what an easie thing is to desery, 608.  
 O what an endlesse worke have I in hand, 497.  
 O why doe wretched men so much desire, 433.

Penelope, for her Ulisses sake, 722.

Rapt with the rage of mine own ravisht thought,  
754.

Receive, most noble Lord, a simple taste, 141.  
Receive, most noble Lord, in gentle gree, 140.  
Redoubted knights, and honorable dames, 388.  
Redoubted Lord, in whose courageous mind, 142.  
Rehearse to me, ye sacred sisters nine, 70.  
Remembraunce of that most heroicke spirit,  
143.

Renowned Lord, that for your worthinesse,  
142.

Retourne agayne, my forces late dismayd, 720.  
Right well I wote, most mighty Soveraine, 230.  
Rudely thou wrongest my deare harts desire,  
718.

See how the stubborne damzell doth deprave,  
723.

Shall I then silent be, or shall I speake? 725.  
Shepherds, that wont on pipes of oaten reed,  
699.

She, whose high top above the starres did sore,  
108.

Silence augmenteth grief, writing encreaseth  
rage, 714.

Since I did leave the presence of my love, 734.  
Since I have lackt the comfort of that light,  
734.

So long as Joves great bird did make his flight,  
111.

Some clarkes doe doubt in their devicefull art,  
561.

Some men, I wote, will deeme in Arte gall, 536.  
So oft as homeward I from her depart, 727.

So oft as I her beauty doe behold, 728.  
So oft as I this history record, 381.

So oft as I with state of present time, 502.  
Soone after this a giaunt came in place, 67.

Soone after this I saw an elephant, 124.  
Soone after this I saw on th' other side, 68.

Soone as the morrow fayre with purple beames,  
245.

So soone as day forth dawning from the East,  
528.

Still as I gazed, I beheld where stood, 68.  
Such as the Berecynthian goddess bright, 109.

Sweet is the rose, but growes upon a brere, 722.  
Sweet smile, the daughter of the Queene of  
Love, 725.

Sweet warriour, when shall I have peace with  
you? 728.

Tell me, good Hobbinoll, what garres thee  
greete? 18.

Tell me, Perigot, what shalbe the game, 36.  
Tell me, when shall these wearie woes have end,  
724.

That conning architect of cancred guyle, 230.  
That Mantuane poetes incompared spirit, 143.

That same is now nought but a champion wide,  
114.

The antique Babel, emprise of the East, 763.  
The Chian peincter, when he was requirde, 144.

The doubt which ye misdeeme, fayre love, is  
vaine, 730.

The famous Briton Prince and Faery knight,  
325.

The famous warriors of the anticke world, 730.  
The gentle sheheard satte beside a springe, 52.

The glorious image of the Makers beautie, 729.  
The glorious pourtraict of that angels face, 721.

The joyes of love, if they should ever last, 647.  
The kingly bird, that beares Joves thunderclap,  
123.

The laurel leafe which you this day doe weare,  
723.

The love which me so cruelly tormenteth, 725.  
The merry cuckow, messenger of Spring, 721.

The morow next, so soone as Phœbus lamp,  
395.

Then all astained with this mighty ghost, 127.  
Then all astained with this nightly ghost, 766.

Then did appeare to me a sharped spire, 766.  
Then did a sharped spyre of diamond bright,  
125.

Then did I see a bridge, made all of golde, 67.  
Then did I see a pleasant paradize, 67.

Then heavenly branches did I see arise, 128,  
765.

Then I behelde the faire Dodonian tree, 766.  
Then might I see upon a white horse set, 767.

The noble hart, that harbours vertuous thought,  
171.

Then was the faire Dodonian tree far seene, 126.  
The panther, knowing that his spotted hyde,  
727.

The paynefull smith with force of fervent heat,  
723.

The prayse of meaner wits this worke like profit  
brings, 138.

The rolling wheele, that runneth often round,  
721.

The rugged forehead that with grave foresight,  
417.

The sacred Muses have made alwaies clame,  
141.

The same which Pyrrhus and the puissaunce,  
112.

These heapes of stones, these old wals which ye  
see, 111.

The shepherds boy (best knowen by that  
name), 687.

The soverayne beauty which I doo admyre, 718.  
The waies, through which my weary steps I  
guyde, 582.

The weary yeare his race now having run, 729.  
The world, that cannot deeme of worthy things,  
733.

They that in course of heavenly spheares are  
skild, 729.

This holy season, fit to fast and pray, 722.  
Thomalin, why sytten we soe, 16.

Those prudent heads, that with their counsels  
wise, 140.

Though vertue then were held in highest price,  
504.

Thou stranger, which for Rome in Rome here  
seekest, 108.

Thou that at Rome astonisht dost behold, 113.  
Tho, when as chearelesse night ycovered had,  
411.

Thrise happie she that is so well assured, 729.



Through armes and vassals Rome the world  
subdu'd, 109.

Thus when Sir Guyon, with his faithful guyde,  
239.

To all those happy blessings which ye have, 730.

To looke upon a worke of rare devise, 140.

To praise thy life, or waile thy worthie death,  
713.

To thee that art the sommers Nightingale, 142.

Toward the sea turning my troubled eye, 123.

To you, right noble Lord, whose carefull brest,  
142.

True he it said, what ever man it sayd, 481.

True is, that whilome that good poet sayd, 596.

Trust not the treason of those smyling lookes,  
726.

Unquiet thought, whom at the first I bred, 718.

Unrighteous Lord of Love, what law is this,  
719.

Upon a day, as Love lay sweetly slumbring, 734.

Upon a hill I saw a kindled flame, 766.

Upon an hill a bright flame I did see, 127.

Upon that famous rivers further shore, 68.

Venemous tounge, tipt with vile adders sting,  
733.

Was it a dreame, or did I see it playne? 732.

Was it the worke of Nature or of Art, 721.

Weake is th'assurance that weake flesh re-  
poseth, 728.

Well may I weene, faire ladies, all this while,  
366.

Well said the wiseman, now prov'd true by this,  
467.

We now have playde (Augustus) wantonly, 79.

What equall torment to the griefe of mind, 454.

What ever man he be, whose heavie minde, 678.

What guyle is this, that those her golden tresses,  
724.

What man is he, that boasts of fleshly might,  
207.

What man so wise, what earthly witt so ware,  
185.

What man that sees the ever-whirling wheele,  
660.

What time the Romaine Empire bore the raine,  
124.

What tygre, or what other salvage wight, 554.

What vertue is so fitting for a knight, 589.

What warre so cruel, or what siege so sore, 306.

When I behold that beauties wonderment, 722.

When I behold this tickle trustles state, 129.

When I bethinke me on that speech whyleare,  
676.

When my abodes prefixed time is spent, 726.

When stout Achilles heard of Helens rape, 139.

When that brave honour of the Latine name,  
112.

When these sad sights were overpast and gone,  
124.

When those renouned noble peres of Greece,  
726.

Wherefore doth vaine Antiquitie so vaunt, 763.

Where is the antique glory now become, 350.

Whilst thus I looked, loe! adowne the lee,  
68.

Who ever doth to temperaunce apply, 258.

Who ever gave more honourable prize, 143.

Who lists to see what ever nature, arte, 109.

Who list the Romane greatnes forth to figure,  
113.

Who now does follow the foule Blatant Beast,  
641.

Who now shall give unto me words and sound,  
296.

Who so upon him selfe will take the skill, 521.

Who so wil seeke by right deserts t' attaine,  
762.

Within this wood, out of a rocke did rise, 129.

Within this wood, out of the rocke did rise,  
765.

Wonder it is to see in diverse mindes, 358.

Wrong'd, yet not daring to expresse my paine,  
79.

Ye cruell starres, and eke ye gods unkinde, 109.

Ye gentle ladies, in whose souveraine powre, 627.

Ye heavenly spirites, whose ashie cinders lie,  
108.

Ye learned sisters, which have oftentimes, 735.

Ye pallid spirits, and ye ashie ghoads, 111.

Ye sacred ruines, and ye tragick sights, 109.

Ye tradefull merchants, that with weary toyle,  
720.

Young knight what ever, that dost armes pro-  
fesse, 164.

## INDEX OF TITLES

- Amoretto, 716.  
 Another of the Same, 138, 714.  
 Aprill, 18.  
 Artegall, The Legend of, 502.  
 Astrophel, 699.  
 Astrophill, An Elegie, or Friends Passion, for his, 710.  
 August, 36.  
  
 Beautie, An Hymne in Honour of, 746.  
 Beautie, An Hymne of Heavenly, 754.  
 Bellay, The Visions of, 125.  
 Booke, To his, 4.  
 Britomartis, The Legend of, 325.  
 Buckhurst, To the Lord of, 142.  
 Burleigh, To the Lord, 142.  
 Butterflie, The Fate of the, 115.  
  
 Calender, The Shepherdes, 1.  
 Calidore, The Legend of Sir, 582.  
 Cambel and Triamond, The Legend of, 417.  
 Cantos of Mutabilitie, Two, 660.  
 Carew, To the Lady, 143.  
 Chastity, The Legend of Britomartis or of, 325.  
 Colin Clouts Come Home Againe, 686.  
 Commendatory Sonnets, 762.  
 Commendatory Verses, 138.  
 Complaints, 57.  
 Constancie, The Legend of, 660.  
 Court, To All the Ladies in the, 144.  
 Courtesie, The Legend of Sir Calidore or of, 582.  
 Cumberland, To the Earle of, 142.  
  
 Daphnaïda, 677.  
 December, 52.  
 Dedicatorie Sonnets, 140.  
  
 Elegie, or Friends Passion, for his Astrophill, An, 710.  
 Epigrams, 734, 765.  
 Epistle, 5.  
 Epitaph upon the Right Honourable Sir Phillip Sidney, Knight, An, 713.  
 Epithalamion, 735.  
 Essex, To the Earle of, 140.  
  
 Faerie Queene, The, 130.  
 Fate of the Butterflie, The, 115.  
 Februarie, 11.  
 Fowre Hymnes, 741.  
 Friendship, The Legend of Cambel and Triamond or of, 417.  
 Friends Passion for his Astrophill, An Elegie or, 710.  
  
 Generall Argument of the Whole Booke, The, 8.  
 Glosse, 10, 14, 17, 20, 26, 31, 34, 39, 42, 46, 51, 55.  
 Gnat, Virgils, 79.  
 Grey of Wilton, To the Lord, 141.  
 Guyon, The Legend of Sir, 230.  
  
 Harvey, Letters from Spenser to Gabriel, 768.  
 Harvey, To Master Gabriell, 5, 762.  
 Hatton, To Sir Christopher, 140.  
 Heavenly Beautie, An Hymne of, 754.  
 Heavenly Love, An Hymne of, 750.  
 Holinesse, The Legend of the Knight of the Red Crosse or of, 144.  
 Howard, To the Lord Ch., 141.  
 Hubberds Tale, Mother, 89.  
 Hunsdon, To the Lord of, 142.  
 Hymne in Honour of Beautie, An, 746.  
 Hymne in Honour of Love, An, 742.  
 Hymne of Heavenly Beautie, An, 754.  
 Hymne of Heavenly Love, An, 750.  
 Hymnes, Fowre, 741.  
  
 Januarye, 9.  
 June, 29.  
 Julye, 32.  
 Justice, The Legend of Artegall or of, 502.  
  
 Ladies in the Court, To All the, 144.  
 Learned Shepeheard, To the, 138.  
 Legend of Artegall or of Justice, The, 502.  
 Legend of Britomartis or of Chastity, The, 325.  
 Legend of Cambel and Triamond or of Friendship, The, 417.  
 Legend of Sir Calidore or of Courtesie, The, 582.  
 Legend of Sir Guyon or of Temperaunce, The, 230.  
 Legend of the Knight of the Red Crosse or of Holinesse, The, 144.  
 Letter of the Authors, A, 136.  
 Letters from Spenser to Gabriel Harvey, 768.  
 Love, An Hymne in Honour of, 742.  
 Love, An Hymne of Heavenly, 750.  
  
 March, 16.  
 Maye, 23.  
 Mother Hubberds Tale, 89.  
 Mourning Muse of Thestylis, The, 704.  
 Muiopotmos, or the Fate of the Butterflie, 115.  
 Muses, The Teares of the, 69.  
 Mutabilitie, Two Cantos of, 660.  
  
 Norris, To Sir John, 143.  
 Northumberland, To the Earle of, 141.  
 November, 48.  
  
 October, 44.  
 Original Conclusion to Book III of *The Faery Queen*, The, 767.  
 Ormond and Ossory, To the Earle of, 141.  
 Oxenford, To the Earle of, 140.  
  
 Pastorall Æglogue upon the Death of Sir Phillip Sidney, Knight, A, 708.  
 Penbroke, To the Countesse of, 143.

Petrarch, The Visions of, 128.  
 Prosopopoeia or Mother Hubberds Tale, 89.  
 Prothalamion, 759.

Queene, The Faerie, 130.

Raleigh, To Sir Walter, 142.  
 Red Crosse, The Legend of the Knight of the,  
 144.  
 Ruines of Rome, 108.  
 Ruines of Time, The, 59.

September, 39.  
 Shepheheard, To the Learned, 138.  
 Shepheardes Calender, The, 1.  
 Sidney, An Epitaph upon the Right Honourable  
 Sir Phillip, 713.  
 Sidney, A Pastorall Æglogue upon the Death of  
 Sir Phillip, 708.  
 Sonets, 765.  
 Sonnets, Commendatory, 762.  
 Sonnets, Dedicatory, 140.

Teares of the Muses, The, 69.  
 Temperaunce, The Legend of Sir Guyon or of,  
 230.

*Theatre* of 1569, Verses from the, 764.  
 Thestylis, The Mourning Muse of, 704.  
 Time, The Ruines of, 59.  
 Triamond, The Legend of Cambel and, 417.  
 Two Cantos of Mutabilitie, 660.

Vanitie, Visions of the Worlds, 122.  
 Verses, Commendatory, 138.  
 Verses from the *Theatre* of 1569, 764.  
 Virgils Gnat, 79.  
 Visions of Bellay, The, 125.  
 Visions of Petrarch, The, 128.  
 Visions of the Worlds Vanitie, 122.  
 Vision upon this Concept of the Faery Queene,  
 A, 138.

Walsingham, To Sir Fr., 143.  
 Wilton, To the Lord Grey of, 141.  
 Worlds Vanitie, Visions of the, 122.















## DATE DUE

JA	3 '67	MR 18 '69
JA	24 '67	
NO	13 '67	
FE	26 '68	
OC	2 '68	
NO	10 '68	
EE	3 '69	
MR	1 '69	
MR	31 '71	
GAYLORD		PRINTED IN U.S.A.



MARYGROVE COLLEGE



3 1927 00069492 4

828  
Sp35  
D6

